



E2579





A TREATISE  
ON  
HINDU LAW AND USAGE.



A TREATISE  
ON  
HINDU LAW AND USAGE.

BY  
JOHN D. MAYNE,

OF THE INNER TEMPLE, ESQ., BARRISTER-AT-LAW,  
FORMERLY OFFICIATING ADVOCATE GENERAL OF MADRAS,  
AUTHOR OF "A TREATISE ON DAMAGES," "COMMENTARIES ON THE INDIAN PENAL CODE," ETC.

FIFTH EDITION.  
REVISED AND ENLARGED.

MADRAS: HIGGINBOTHAM AND CO.  
By Appointment in India to His Royal Highness the Prince of Wales.  
LONDON: STEVENS AND HAYNES,  
BELL YARD, TEMPLE BAR.

1892.

[*All rights reserved.*]

**M A D R A S :**  
**PRINTED BY HIGGINBOTHAM & CO.**  
**1/164, 2/164 & 165, MOUNT ROAD.**

## PREFACE TO THE FIFTH EDITION.

IN preparing this edition the whole of the text has been carefully reconsidered, with reference to later decisions. The most important of these is the ruling of the Privy Council, which establishes that under the Mitakshara law the holder of an impartible Zemindary possesses absolute powers of alienation, which cannot be controlled by his sons. The same tribunal has also enlarged and explained its former decisions in reference to the liability of sons for the debts of their father.

I have again to thank my publishers, Messrs. HIGGINBOTHAM & Co., for the great care with which they have passed the sheets through the press. To save trouble to those who consult the work I have added a list of cases bearing on the subjects discussed; which have appeared while the edition was passing through the press.

JOHN D. MAYNE.

*October, 1892.*

## PREFACE TO THE THIRD EDITION.

SINCE the publication of the last edition of this work, many new materials for the study of Hindu law have been placed within the reach of those, who, like myself, are unable to examine the authorities in their original Sanskrit. Professor Max Müller's Series of the Sacred Books of the East has given us translations of the entire texts of Apastamba, Gautama, and Vishnu, by Dr. Bühler and Dr. Jolly. Mr. Narayen Mandlik has supplied us with a translation of the whole of Yajnavalkya, and a new rendering of the Mayukha ; while the Sarasvati Vilasa and the Viramitrodaya have been rendered accessible by the labours of Mr. Foulkes and of Golapchandra Sarkar.

Judging from an examination of these works, I doubt whether we need expect to receive much more light upon the existing Hindu law from the works of the purely legal writers. They seem to me merely to reproduce with slavish fidelity the same texts of the ancient writers, and then to criticise them, as if they were algebraic formulas, without any attempt to show what relation, if any, they have to the actual facts of life. When, for instance, so modern a work as the Viramitrodaya gravely discusses marriages between persons of different castes, or the twelve species of sons, it is impossible to imagine that the author is talking of anything which really existed in his time. Yet he dilates upon all these distinctions with as much apparent faith in their value, as would be exhibited by an English Lawyer in expounding the peculiarities of a bill of exchange. From the extracts given by Mr. Narayen Mandlik, I imagine that the modern writers of Western India are more

willing to recognise realities and those of Bengal and Benares. Probably, much that is useful and interesting might be found (amid an infinity of rubbish) in the works on ceremonial law. But what we really want is that well informed Natives of India should take a law book in their hands, and tell us frankly, under each head, how much of the written text is actually recognised and practised as the rule of every-day life. The great value of Mr. Narayen Mandlik's work consists in the extent to which he has adopted this course. His forthcoming work will be looked for with the greatest interest by every student of Hindu Law.

I feel a natural timidity in entering upon the region of volcanic controversy which has sprung up around the works of Mr. J. H. Nelson. It seems a pity that amid so much with which every one must agree, there should be so much more with which no one can agree. When he denies that Manu, Yajnavalkya, and the Mitakshara form the recognised guides of Dravidian, or even of Sudra life, one is willing to accept the statement. But when he goes on to assert that Manu, Yajnavalkya, and the Mitakshara are themselves without authority among Sanskrit lawyers, or have authority only among obscure and limited sects, one is tempted to ask what possible amount of evidence he would consider sufficient to establish the contrary? Can Mr. Nelson put his finger upon any single law book subsequent to the probable dates of Manu and Yajnavalkya in which those sages are not referred to, not only with respect and reverence, but with absolute submission? If the Mitakshara is a work of no authority, how does it happen that every pundit in every part of India except Bengal invariably cites Vijnanesvara in support of his opinion? Mr. Nelson's grotesque suggestion that the Mitakshara dates from the 17th or 18th century is dismissed by *M. Barth*,\* one of the greatest of living Sanskrit scholars, with the summary remark ;—"Every Orientalist who has read Colebrooke will answer, that if that admirable inquirer had found nothing better to write about

---

\* *Revue Critique*, 1882, p. 165; the article contains a thorough examination of Mr. Nelson's views, and seems to me to be a model of acute, candid, and courteous criticism.



the Mitakshara, he would not have written a line upon the subject." His proposal that every law suit should commence with an exhaustive enquiry as to the legal usages, if any, by which the respective parties considered they were bound, is a sly stroke of humour which cannot be too much admired. Coming from an opponent it might have been considered malicious. I fancy that Mr. Nelson, as a Judge, would be the first to resist the application of his own proposal.

An unusual number of important decisions have been recorded since the publication of the last edition, and it will be seen that several portions of this work have been re-written in consequence. The law as to the liability of a son for his father's debts, and as to the father's power of dealing with family property to liquidate such debts, seems at last to be settling down into an intelligible, if not a very satisfactory, shape. The controversies arising out of the text of the Mitakshara defining stridhanum appear also to be quieted by direct decision, and the conflicting view of woman's rights taken by the Bombay High Court has at last been restricted and defined, and made to rest upon inveterate usage, rather than upon written law. A single decision of the Privy Council has established the heritable right of female Sapindas in Bombay, and recognised the all-important principle, that succession under the Mitakshara law is based upon propinquity, and not upon degrees of religious merit.

JOHN D. MAYNE.

INNER TEMPLE,  
*January, 1883.*

## P R E F A C E.

I HAVE endeavoured in this Work to show, not only what the Hindu Law is, but how it came to be what it is. Probably many of my professional readers may think that the latter part of the enquiry is only a waste of time and trouble, and that in pursuing it I have added to the bulk of the volume without increasing its utility. It might be sufficient to say, that I have aimed at writing a book which should be something different from a mere practitioner's manual.

Hindu Law has the oldest pedigree of any known system of jurisprudence, and even now it shows no signs of decrepitude. At this day it governs races of men, extending from Cashmere to Cape Comorin, who agree in nothing else except their submission to it. No time or trouble can be wasted, which is spent in investigating the origin and development of such a system, and the causes of its influence. I cannot but indulge a hope, that the very parts of this Work which seem of least value to a practising lawyer, may be read with interest by some who never intend to enter a Court. I also hope that the same discussions which appear to have only an antiquarian and theoretical interest, may be found of real service, if not to the counsel who has to win a case, at all events to the judge who has to decide it.

The great difficulty which meets a judge is to choose between the conflicting texts which can be presented to him on almost

every question. This difficulty is constantly increased by the labours of those scholars who are yearly opening up fresh sources of information. The works which they have made accessible are, naturally, the works of the very early writers, who had passed into oblivion because the substance of their teaching was embodied in more modern treatises. Many of these early texts are in conflict with each other, and still more are in conflict with the general body of law as it has been administered in our Courts.

An opinion seems to be growing up that we have been going all wrong; that we have been mistaken in taking the law from its more recent interpreters, and that our only safe course is to revert to antiquity, and, wherever it may be necessary, to correct the Mitakshara or the Daya Bhaga by Manu, Gautama, or Vasishtha. Such a view omits to notice that some of these authors are perhaps two thousand years old, and that even the East does change, though slowly. The real task of the lawyer is not to reconcile these contradictions, which is impossible, but to account for them. He will best help a Judge who is pressed, for instance, by a text which forbids a partition, or which makes a father the absolute despot of his family, by showing him that these texts were once literally true, but that the state of society in which they were true has long since passed away. This has been done to a considerable extent by Dr. Mayr in his most valuable work, *Das Indische Erbrecht*. He seems, however, not to have been acquainted with the writers of the Bengal school, and of course had no knowledge of the developments which the law has received through nearly a century of Judicial decisions. I have tried to follow in the course marked out by him, and by Sir H. S. Maine in his well-known writings. It would be presumption to hope that I have done so with complete, or even with any considerable success. But I hope the attempt may lead the way to criticism, which will end in the discovery of truth.

Another, and completely different current of opinion, is that of those who think that Hindu Law, as represented in the

Sanskrit writings, has little application to any but Brāhmans, or those who accept the ministrations of Brahmans, and that it has no bearing upon the life of the inferior castes, and of the non-Aryan races. This view has been put forward by Mr. Nelson in his "View of the Hindu Law as administered by the Madras High Court." In much that he says I thoroughly agree with him. I quite agree with him in thinking that rules, founded on the religious doctrines of Brahmanism, cannot be properly applied to tribes who have never received those doctrines, merely upon evidence that they are contained in a Sanskrit law-book. But it seems to me that the influence of Brahmanism upon even the Sanskrit writers has been greatly exaggerated, and that those parts of the Sanskrit law which are of any practical importance are mainly based upon usage, which in substance, though not in detail, is common both to Aryan and non-Aryan tribes. Much of the present Work is devoted to the elucidation of this view. I also think that he has under-estimated the influence which the Sanskrit law has exercised, in moulding to its own model the somewhat similar usages even of non-Aryan races. This influence has been exercised throughout the whole of Southern India during the present century by means of our Courts and Pandits, by Vakils, and officials, both judicial and revenue, almost all of whom till very lately were Brahmans.

That the Dravidian races have any conscious belief that they are following the Mitakshara, I do not at all suppose. Nor has an Englishman any conscious belief that his life is guided by Lord Coke and Lord Mansfield. But it is quite possible that these races may be trying unconsciously to follow the course of life which is adopted by the most respectable, the most intellectual, and the best educated among their neighbours. The result would be exactly the same as if they studied the Mitakshara for themselves. That this really is the case is an opinion which I arrived at, after fifteen years' acquaintance with the litigation of every part of the Madras Presidency. Even in Malabar I have witnessed continued efforts on the part of the natives to cast off their own customs

and to deal with their property by partition, alienation, and devise, as if it were governed by the ordinary Hindu Law. These efforts were constantly successful in the provincial Courts, but were invariably foiled on appeal to the Sudder Court at Madras, the objection being frequently taken for the first time by an English barrister. It so happened that during the whole time of this silent revolt the Sudder Court possessed one or more Judges, who were thoroughly acquainted with Malabar customs, and by whom cases from that district were invariably heard. Had the Court been without such special experience, the process would probably have gone on with such rapidity, that by this time every Malabar *tarwad* would have been broken up. The revolt would have been a revolution. •

A third class of opinion is that of the common-sense Englishman, whose views are very ably represented by Mr. Cunningham—now a Judge of the Bengal High Court—in the preface to his recent “Digest of Hindu Law.” He appears to look upon the entire law with a mixture of wonder and pity. He is amused at the absurdity of the rule which forbids an orphan to be adopted. He is shocked at finding that a man’s great-grandson is his immediate heir, while the son of that great-grandson is a very remote heir, and his own sister is hardly an heir at all. He thinks everything would be set right by a short and simple code, which would please everybody, and upon the meaning of which the Judges are not expected to differ. These of course are questions for the legislator, not for the lawyer. I have attempted to offer materials for the discussion by showing how the rules in question originated, and how much would have to be removed if they were altered. The age of miracles has passed, and I hardly expect to see a code of Hindu Law which shall satisfy the trader and the agriculturist, the Punjabi and the Bengali, the pandits of Benares and Ramaiswaram, of Umritsur and of Poona. But I can easily imagine a very beautiful and specious code, which should produce much more dissatisfaction and expense than the law as at present administered.



I cannot conclude without expressing my painful consciousness of the disadvantage under which I have laboured from my ignorance of Sanskrit. This has made me completely dependent on translated works. A really satisfactory treatise on Hindu Law would require its author to be equally learned as a lawyer and an Orientalist. Such a work could have been produced by Mr. Colebrooke, or by the editors of the Bombay Digest, if the Government had not restricted the scope of their labours. Hitherto, unfortunately, those who have possessed the necessary qualifications have wanted either the inclination or the time. The lawyers have not been Orientalists, and the Orientalists have not been lawyers. For the correction of the many mistakes into which my ignorance has led me, I can only most cordially say,—*Exoriate aliquis nostris ex ossibus ultor.*

• JOHN D. MAYNE.

INNER TEMPLE.

July, 1878.



## ABBREVIATIONS AND REFERENCES.

Agra.	North-West Province High Court, 3 vols., [1866-1868.]
All.	Indian Law Reports, Allahabad Series, [from 1876.]
Amb.	Ambler's Reports, Chancery.
Apast.	Apastamba, Translated by Bühler.
Ap. Ca.	English Law Reports, Appeal Cases.
Atk.	Atkyn's Reports, Chancery, <i>tempore</i> Lord Hardwicke, [1736-1754.]
Atsi.	Quoted in Sutherland's Dattaka Mimamsa.
B. and Ald.	Barnewall and Alderson, [King's Bench, 1817-1822.]
B. L. R.	Bengal Law Reports, High Court, [1868-1875.]
B. L. R. (Sup. Vol.)	Bengal Law Reports, Supplemental Volume, Full Bench Rulings, in 2 parts, [1862-1868.]
———— a. c. j.	„ „ Appellate Civil Jurisdiction.
———— app.	„ „ Appendix.
———— f. b.	„ „ Full Bench.
———— o. c. j.	„ „ Original Civil Jurisdiction.
———— p. c.	„ „ Privy Council.
Baudh.	Baudhayana, cited from translation, by Bühler.
Beav.	Beavan's Reports, Rolls Court, <i>tempore</i> Lord Langdale and Sir John Romilly, [1838-1863.]
Bellasis.	Bombay Sudder Dewany Adawlut Reports.
Bom.	Bombay Series of the Indian Law Reports, [from 1876.]
Bom. H. C.	Bombay High Court Reports, [1863-1875.]
———— a. c. j.	„ „ „ Appellate Civil Jurisdiction.
———— - o. c. j.	„ „ „ Original „
Bom. Sel. Rep.	Bombay Select Reports, Sudder Dewany Adawlut.
Bor.	Borrodaile's Reports, (Bombay Sudder Adawlut) Folio, 1825. [The references in brackets are to the paging of the edition of 1862.]
Boul.	Boulnois, Calcutta Supreme Court, [1856-1859.]
Bourke.	Calcutta High Court, Original side, 1 vol., [1865.]
Breeks.	Primitive Tribes of the Nilaghiris, by J. W. Breeks, Esq.



Cal.	Indian Law Reports, Calcutta Series, [from 1876.]
C. L. R.	Calcutta Law Reports [from 1877.]
Ch. D.	English Law Reports, Chancery Division.
Cole. Pref.	Colebrook's Prefaces to the Daya Bhaga and the Digest.
——— Essays.	Colebrook's Essays.
Coop. Geo.	Cooper's (George) Reports, Chancery, <i>tempore</i> Lord Eldon, (1815.)
Coryton.	Calcutta Reports, High Court, Original side, 1 vol., [1864.]
D. Bh.	Daya Bhaga, by Jimuta Vahana. (Colebrooke.)
D. Ch.	Dattaka Chandrika. (Sutherland.)
Dig.	Jagannatha's Digest. (Colebrooke.) 3 vols., [1801.]
D. K. S.	Daya Krama Sangraha. (Wynch.)
D. M.	Dattaka Mimamsa. (Sutherland.)
Domat.	Domat's Civil Law.
Elb.	Elberling on Inheritance, &c., [1844.]
F. MacN.	Sir F. MacNaghten's Considerations on Hindu Law, [1829.]
Fult.	Fulton's Reports, Supreme Court, Calcutta, [1842-1844.]
Gaut.	Gautama, cited from translation, by Bühler.
Gib.	Gibelin. Etudes sur le Droit civil des Hindous, [1846.]
Goldst.	Goldstücker's Present Administration of Hindu Law, [1871.]
Hay.	Calcutta High Court, Appellate side, 2 vols., [1862-1863.]
Hyde.	Calcutta Reports, High Court, Original side, 2 vols., [1864-1865.]
I. A.	English Law Reports. Indian Appeals, [from 1873]
I. A. Sup. Vol.	English Reports. Indian Appeals. Supplemental Volume, [1872-1873.]
<i>Ib.</i> or <i>Ibid.</i>	The same reference as the one immediately preceding.
In. Jur.	Indian Jurist, 1 vol., Calcutta High Court, Original side, [1860-1863.]
In. Jur.	Indian Jurist, continuation of the Madras Jurist, [from 1877.]
In. Jus. N. S.	Calcutta High Court, Original side, 2 vols., [1866-1867.]
Ind. Wis.	Monier Williams' Indian Wisdom.
Jac. and W.	Jacob and Walker's Reports, Chancery, <i>tempore</i> Lord Eldon, [1819-1823.]
John.	Johnson's Reports, Chancery, <i>before</i> Sir Page Wood, [1858-1860.]

Jolly. Lect.	Dr. Jolly's Tagore Lectures, 1883.
Kn.	Knapp's Privy Council Cases, [1831-1836.]
Lewin.	Lewin on Trusts, 6th ed., 1875.
L. R. (P. and D.)	English Law Reports, Probate and Divorce.
Mad.	Madras Series of the Indian Law Reports, [from 1876 ]
Mad. Dec.	Decisions of the Madras Sudder Court. The selected decisions from 1805-1847 are cited by volumes : the subsequent reports, by years.
Mad. H. C.	Madras High Court Reports, [1862-1876.]
Madhav.	Madhava's Daya Vibhaga. (Burnell,) [1868.]
Mad. Jur.	Madras Jurist, 11 vols , [1866-1876.]
Mad. Law. Rep.	The Madras Law Reporter, one Volume, High Court,
———Rev. Reg.	Madras Revenue Register, [1867-1874.]
Manu.	Cited from translation, by Sir William Jones.
Marsh.	Marshall's Cases on Appeal to the High Court of Bengal, [1864.]
Max Müller A. S. L.	} Ancient Sanskrit Literature.
Mayr.	Das Indische Erbrecht, [1873.]
McLennan.	Studies in Ancient History. [1876]
Mit.	Mitakshara. (Colebrooke.)
M. Dig.	Morley's Digest, 2 vols., Calcutta, [1850.]
M. I. A.	Moore's Indian Appeals, [1836-1872.]
Morton.	Decisions of late Supreme Court, Calcutta, 1 vol., [1774-1848.]
Montr.	Montrieu's Hindu Law Cases, Calcutta Supreme Court, [1780-1801.]
Morris.	Bombay Sudder Adawlut Reports.
Nar.	Narada, cited from translation, by Bühler, or by Jolly. [London, 1876.]
N. C.	Sir Thomas Strange's Notes of Cases, Madras, [1816.]
Nelson's View.	View of the Hindu Law as administered by High Court of Madras, Nelson, Madras. [1877.]
„ Scientific Study.	} A Prospectus of the Scientific Study of the Hindu Law, Nelson, Madras, [1881.]
N.-W. P.	Decisions of the High Court of the N.-W. Provinces, Allahabad, [1869-1875.]
N.-W. P. (S. D.)	Sudder Reports of North-West-Provinces.
P. C.	Privy Council.
Perry, O. C.	Sir Erskine Perry's Oriental Cases, Bombay Supreme Court, [1853.]

Punjab ' Customs.	} Notes on Customary Law as administered in the Courts of the Punjab. Boulnois and Rattigan, 1876.
Punjab Customary Law.	} Three Volumes, edited by C. L. Tupper, C. S., Calcutta, [1881.]
P. Williams.	Peere Williams' Reports, Chancery, [1695-1735]
Raghunandana.	} The Daya Tattwa of Raghunandana, translated by Golap Chandra Sarkar, Sastry, Calcutta, 1874.
	} Mr. Rajkumar Sarvadhikari's Tagore Lectures, 1880.
S. C.	Same Case.
S D.	Decisions of the Bengal Sudder Court. The selected decisions from 1791-1848 are cited by volumes, with a double paging, which refers to the original edition, and to that recently published in Calcutta. The subsequent reports are referred to by years.
Sev.	Cases on Appeal to High Court of Bengal in continuation of Marshall, by Sevestre, [1869]
Sm. Ch.	Smriti Chandrika. (Kristnasawmy Iyer), Madras, [1867.]
Spencer.	Principles of Sociology.
Stokes, H. L. B.	Stokes' Hindu Law Books, Vyavahara Mayukha, by Borrodaile; Daya Bhaga and Mitakshara, by Colebrooke; Dattaka Mimamsa, and Dattaka Chandrika, by Sutherland, [Madras, 1865.]
Story.	Equity Jurisprudence.
Stra. H. L.	Sir Thomas Strange's Hindu Law, [1830.]
Stra. Man.	Mr. T. L. Strange's Manual of Hindu Law, 1863.
Suth.	Weekly Reporter, [Calcutta. 1864-1877.]
Suth. A. O. J.)	" " Appeals from the Original Jurisdiction.
Suth. Mis.	" " Miscellaneous Appeals.
Suth. (P. C.)	" " Privy Council Rulings.
Suth. Sp. No.	" " Special Number. Full Bench Rulings, July 1862 to July 1864.
Suth. Syn.	Mr. Sutherland's Synopsis of the Law of Adoption. The paging refers to this work as printed in Mr. Stokes' Hindu Law-Books, Madras, 1865.
T. & B.	Taylor and Bell. (Supreme Court of Calcutta.)
Teulon.	La Mère. Par A. Girard Teulon. 1867.
Thesawal.	The Thesawaleme; or, Laws and Customs of Jaffna. (H. F. Mutukisna) 1862.
Varad.	Varadrajah's Vyavahara Nirnaya. (Burnell.) 1872.
Vas.	Vasishtha, cited from translation, by Bühler.
V. Darp.	Vyavastha Darpana, by Shamachurn Sircar, 1867.
Ves.	Vesey's (Junior) Reports, Chancery, [1789-1817.]

Ves. Sen.	Vesey's (Senior) Reports, Chancery, <i>tempore</i> Lord Hardwicke, [1746-1755.]
Vill. Com.	Maine's Village Communities, [1871.]
Viramit.	The Law of Inheritance as in the Viramitrodaya, of Mitra, by Gopalchandra Misra Sarkar Sastri, Calcutta, 1879.
Vish.	Vishnu, cited from translation by Bühler, or by Jolly.
Viv. Chint.	Vivada Chintamani, by Vachespati Misra. (Prosonno Coomar Tagore.) 1865.
V. May.	Vyavahara Mayukha. (Borrodaile.)
V. N. Mandlik.	The Vyavahara Mayukha and Yajnavalkya, with Introduction and Appendix, by Rao Saheb Vishvanath Narayan Mandlik, Bombay, 1880.
W. & B.	West and Bühler's Digest, Bombay, 3rd ed., 1884.
W. R.	Sutherland's Weekly Reporter. [A few cases have been accidentally cited from these reports under this designation instead of "Suth."]
W. MacN.	W. MacNaghten's Hindu Law, 1829.
Wym.	Wyman's Civil and Criminal Reports, Calcutta.
Yaj.	Yajnavalkya, cited from translation, by Dr. Roer, or Professor Stenzler.



# CONTENTS.

*The references throughout are to paragraphs.*

## CHAPTER I.

### ON THE NATURE AND ORIGIN OF HINDU LAW.

Conflicting views as to the authority of the Sanskrit writers, 1—3. Law is based on immemorial usage, 5. Later growth of Brahmanical influence, 7. Unconnected with system of joint family, 8. Subsequently introduced into law of inheritance, 9, and law of adoption, 10. Mode in which it has exercised an indirect influence, 12. Practical conclusions, 13.

## SOURCES OF HINDU LAW.

## CHAPTER II.

### TEXTS AND DECISIONS.

The Smritis, 15. Sutras, 17. Works in verse more recent, 19. Mann, 20, Yajnavalkya, 22. Narada, 23. Secondary works, 24. The commentators. 25. Mitakshara, 26. Smriti Chandrika and works of authority in Southern India, 27. Mayukha and Viramitrodaya, 28. Mithila and its authorities, 29. Treatises on adoption, 30. Daya Bhaga, 31. Halhed's Code and Jagannatha's Digest, 32. Different schools of law, 33. Characteristic doctrines of Jimuta Vahana, 35. Differences as to female rights, 36, and law of adoption, 37. Judicial decisions, 38.

## CHAPTER III.

### CUSTOMARY LAW.

Validity of customs, 40. Recorded instances, 42. Races which do not accept religious principles, 44. Law follows the person, 45; till abandoned,

46. Origin and evidence of binding custom, 47. Onus of proof, 48. Must be ancient, 49, and continuous, 50. Family custom valid, 51. Must not be opposed to morality or public policy, 52. Result of conversion to Muhammedanism, 54, or Christianity, 56. Illegitimate offspring of European, 57.

## FAMILY RELATIONS.

### CHAPTER IV.

#### MARRIAGE AND SONSHIP.

Anomalies in early family law, 58. Polyandry among non-Aryan races, 59; among Aryans, 60—63. Explanation of anomalies, 63. Different sorts of sons, 64. Necessity for sons, 65. Hindu notion of paternity, 66. Theory and practice of *niyoga*, 67; not a survival of polyandry, 69. Marriage with brother's widow, 70. Application of principle to other sons, 71. Adopted sons, 74. All but two now obsolete, 75. Eight forms of marriage, 76. Their relative antiquity, 77. Modifications of marriage by purchase, 78. The approved forms, 79. Only two survive, 80. Who may dispose of bride, 81. Exogamy and endogamy, 83. Mixed marriages, 85. Capacity for marriage, 86. Polygamy, 87. Second marriages of women and divorce, 88. Betrothal and marriage ceremonies, 90. Results of marriage, 91.

### CHAPTER V.

#### ADOPTION.

Its importance, of recent growth, 92. Diminution in number of adopted sons, 94. Not founded exclusively on religious motives, nor limited to Aryan tribes, 95. Early texts, 96. Who may adopt. Persons without issue, 97. Bachelors and widowers, 98. Disqualified heirs, 99. Minors, 100. Wife or widow, 101. Nature of authority to widow, 102; its effect, 103. Adoption by minor or unchaste widow, 105; several widows, 106. Widow's discretion, 107. Assent of *sapindas* in Southern India, 108. Punjab, 110. Religious motive for adoption, 115. Power of widow in Western India, 118; among Jains, 119. Only parents can give away son, 120. Consent of Government, 122. Restrictions on selection of son, 123; of Brahmanical origin, 124, 130. Caste, 126. Age, 128. Previous performance of ceremonies, 129. Only or eldest son, 131. Necessary ceremonies, 140; intentional omission, 144. Evidence of adoption, 145. *Res judicata*, 146. Effect of lapse of time as evidence, 147. Estoppel, 148. Statutory bar, 149. Results of adoption, 152. Lineal and collateral succession, 153. Succession *ex parte materno*, 154. To *stridhanum* of adoptive mother, *ib.* where legitimate son afterwards born, 155. Where adopted son competes with collaterals, 156, 157. Removal from natural family, 159; case of *dwyamushyayana*, 160; in Punjab and

Pondicherry, 162. Where adoption is invalid, 163; validity of gift to person falsely supposed to be adopted, 167. Cases in which an estate is divested by adoption, 171. Postponement of son's rights, 180; how far bound by acts of widow, 181, or previous male holder, 182. Woman cannot adopt to herself, unless in case of dancing girls, or in Kritrima form, 183. Kritrima adoption, 184, peculiarities, 186; results, 188; woman may adopt to herself, 189; no ceremonies, 190; resembles usage of Jaffna, *ib.*

## CHAPTER VI.

### MINORITY AND GUARDIANSHIP.

Period of minority, 191. Who may be guardian, 192. Effect of conversion on right to custody of minor, 193. Case of illegitimate child, 195. Minor bound by contracts, 196, and decrees, 197. Suits against guardian, *ib.*

## FAMILY PROPERTY.

## CHAPTER VII.

### EARLY LAW OF PROPERTY.

Peculiarities of Hindu Law, 198. Three forms of corporate property, 199. Village Communities in the Panjab, 200; in Southern India, 201. Fiction of common descent, 202. Nairs, Kaudhs, 203; Hill Tribes, 204. The Patriarchal Family, 205. The Joint Family, 207. Mr. McLennan on the Family, 208. Evolution of private property, 210. Traces of village rights in Sanskrit law, 212. Self-acquisition, its origin, 215, restrictions, 216, and rights, 217. Partition, 218; its rise, 219; growth of sons's right, 220; decay of parents' rights, 221—223; Bengal law, 224. Alienation, 227. Right of sons by birth, 229. Power of father over moveable, 231, and self-acquired land, 233. Contrary doctrines of the Daya Bhaga, 235. Brahmanical influence, 237. Unequal partition, 240. Interest of coparceners in their shares, 241. Rights of women, 242.

## CHAPTER VIII.

### THE JOINT FAMILY.

Presumption of union, 244. Survivorship, 246. The coparcenary, 247. Obstructed and unobstructed property, 253. Ancestral property, 251; effect of partition, gift or devise, 252. Jointly acquired property, 253. Impartible property, 255. Self-acquisition, 257. Gains of science, 258. Savings of impartible property, 262. Recovery of ancestral property, 263. Acquisitions aided by family funds, 264. Burthen of proof as to character of property, 265. Mode of enjoyment of joint property, 268. Right to an account, 270;



to an allotment of a portion of the income, 272. Members must unite in transactions affecting the property, 274. Cannot infringe on each other's rights, 275.

## CHAPTER IX.

### DEBTS.

Three sources of liability, 277. Sons bound to pay father's debts without assets, 278. Obligation now limited to extent of assets, 280. Evidence of assets, 281. Not till after father's death, 283. Not immoral debts, 279. No benefit necessary, 284. Family property may be alienated or taken in execution to satisfy ancestral debts, 285—296A. How far decree binds sons, 297—299. Apportionment of liability, 301. Heir liable to extent of assets, 302. Debts not a charge upon estate, 304; nor upon share which has passed by survivorship, 305. Cases of agency, 308.

## CHAPTER X.

### ALIENATION.

**MITAKSHARA LAW.**—Father's power over ancestral moveables, 310; as head of the family, 311. When only tenant for life, 312. Impartible Zemindary, 313. Who have a right by birth, 316. Father's power over self acquired land, 318. Consent, 319. Necessity, 320. Father's right to sell to pay his own debt, 322. Burthen of proof of necessity, 323; in case of decrees, 324. Powers of manager, 320—326. Right of coparcener to sell his share, 327; of creditor to seize it, 329. Power of gift or devise, 335. Sale enforced by partition, 332—338. Remedies against illegal alienation, 340. Equities on setting it aside, 341. **BENGAL LAW,** 346. Power of father, 347; of coparcener, 348. Law of gifts, 350. Necessity for possession, 351. What constitutes possession, 353. Gift to a class of whom some cannot take, 354. Completed gift, 357. Possession in case of sale, 358, or mortgage, 362. Priorities arising from registration, 363. Writing or technical words unnecessary, 365. Provisions of Transfer of Property Act, 366.

## CHAPTER XI.

### WILLS.

Origin of testamentary power, 367. History of its growth in Bengal, 369; in Southern India, 371; in Bombay, 379. Wills of minors and married women, 370. Extent of power, 375. Not co-extensive with power of gift, 380. Shifting estate, 382. Tagore case, 383. Devise in trust, 384. Only for an estate recognized by law, 385, and to a devisee actually in existence, 386. Accumulations and restrictions, 387. Form and construction of will, 388. Possession unnecessary. Disqualified heir may take as devisee, 389. Extension to Hindu Wills of Indian Succession Act, 390. Probate and Administration Act, 391. Position of Executors and Administrators, 392.

## CHAPTER XII.

## RELIGIOUS AND CHARITABLE ENDOWMENTS.

Favoured by early law, 393. Sanctioned by Courts, 395. Different sorts of trust, 396. Powers of trustee, 397. Devolution of trust, 398. Founder's rights, 399.

## CHAPTER XIII.

## BENAMI TRANSACTIONS.

Origin, 400, and principles of Benami, 401. Effect given to real title, 402 ; unless third parties defrauded, 403. Frauds on creditors, 404. Effect of decrees, 407.

## CHAPTER XIV.

## MAINTENANCE.

Who are entitled, 408. Extent of the right in case of parents and widow, 409 ; children, 412 ; wife, 413. Who are liable, 416. Amount, 429. Not a lien on the estate against purchaser without notice, 419 ; until decreed, 420. Liability of volunteer, 424 ; in general resumable at death, 425.

## CHAPTER XV.

## PARTITION.

What property is divisible, 426. Impartible Raj, 428. Mode of taking account, 429. Right of issue to sue ancestor, 430. Passes to their issue, 432. Right of son born after division, 431. Bengal law differs, 433. Rights of illegitimate sons, 434 ; of minors or absent co-parceners, 436 ; of women, 436 ; under Mitakshara, 437 ; of widow in Bengal, 438 ; of mother and grandmother, 439 ; daughter, 441 ; strangers, 442 ; disqualified heirs and their issue, 443 ; how far barred by fraud 444, or agreement, 445. Special and unequal shares obsolete, 447. Unequal distribution of self-acquisition, 448, or by father in Bengal, 449. Partition by some members only, 450, or of only part, 452. When stranger is in possession, 453. Evidence of intention, 454. Reunion, 455.

## LAW OF INHERITANCE.

## CHAPTER XVI.

## PRINCIPLES OF SUCCESSION IN CASE OF MALES.

Succession applies to separate property only, 457 ; never in abeyance, 458. Bengal system based on religious offerings, 460. How applied to sapindas,

463 ; to bandhus, 464 ; *ex parte paternâ*, 464 ; *ex parte maternâ*, 465 ; to female ancestors, 462. Rules for precedence among heirs, 467. Mitakshara based on affinity only, 468. Meaning of term sapinda, 469. Postpones cognates, 471. Religious principle inapplicable to bandhus, 472. Examination of earlier law, 473 ; based on survivorship, 474 ; how far connected with system of offerings, 475.

## CHAPTER XVII.

### PRINCIPLES OF SUCCESSION IN CASE OF FEMALES.

Position of women depends on family system, 476. Their rights at first only to maintenance, 477. Heritable rights of daughter, 478 ; mother, 480 ; widow, 481, except in Bengal, 486 ; only extend to separate property, 485—487 ; left by her own husband, 488. Sister not an heir, 493. Madras decision in her favour, 494 ; discussed, 495.

## CHAPTER XVIII.

### ORDER OF SUCCESSION.

Issue, 498. Primogeniture, 499. Illegitimate sons, 503 ; their share, 506. Widow, 509 ; obligation to chastity, 511 ; effect of her marrying again, 512. Daughters, 513 ; precedence between, 514. Exclusion of females in Northern India, 518. Daughters's son, 518 ; several take *per capita*, 519. Parents : their precedence, 521 ; stepmother not an heir, 522. Brothers, 523. Nephews, 525. Grandnephews, 527. Ascendants, 522. Sakulyas and samanodakas, 530. Bandhus : sister's son, 531 ; grand-uncles' daughter's son, 534. Precedence among bandhus by Mitakshara, 535 ; Bengal laws, 536 ; their priority as regards sapindas, 537, or sakulyas, 539. Bandhu, *ex parte maternâ*, 540. Laxity as to female succession in Bombay, 541. Reunion, 542. Succession of strangers, 544. Escheat, 545. Hermit's property, 546.

## CHAPTER XIX.

### EXCLUSION FROM INHERITANCE.

Principle of exclusion, 547 ; mitigated by expiation, 548. Outcasts, 549. Mental and bodily defects, 550. Vicious conduct, 553. Disability is personal, and does not divest estate, 554 ; lets in next heirs at once, 555. Effect of removal of disability, or birth of qualified son, 556. Entrance into religious order, 559. Whether rules applicable to non-Aryan races, *ib.*

## WOMAN'S ESTATE.

## CHAPTER XX.

## PROPERTY INHERITED FROM MALES.

Meaning of stridhanum, 560. Peculiarities of property inherited from a male, 561. Their reason and origin, 563. Text of the Mitakshara as to stridhanum discussed, 566. Restrictions on estate of widow and mother, 567, and daughter, 568. Contrary rule in Bombay as to daughter, 569, and sister, 574. Stridhanum only makes one descent, 570. Special rule for its descent when inherited in Bombay, 571; discussed, 572; under Mitakshara, 573. Property obtained by partition, 576. Nature and extent of a woman's estate, 578; her power of enjoyment, 579; right to accumulations, 580; to property purchased with savings, 582; power of disposition, 586; enlarged by consent of reversioners, 591; evidence of consent, 593; of facts authorizing transfer, 594; executions against her estate, 595; her power over the self-acquired, 597, or moveable property of last holder, 598. Remedies: persons who may sue, 599; to restrain waste, 600; Specific Relief Act, 602; suits to set aside adoptions, 603, or alienations, 604. Effect of declaratory decree, 605. Equities on setting aside acts of heiress, 606.

## CHAPTER XXI.

## PROPERTY NOT INHERITED FROM MALES.

Origin and growth of woman's special property, 609. Texts which define it, 611. The Sulka, 612. Meaning of Yautaka and Saudayika, 613. Property absolutely under woman's control, 615; subject to husband's control, 616; in which her right is limited, 617. Succession to property of a Maiden, 618; of a married woman, 619. Devolution of Sulka, 620; Yautaka, 621; by Benares law, 622; in Bengal, 623; of Ayautaka by Benares law, 624; in Bengal, 625; property given by a father, 626, or inherited from a female, 627. Chastity not essential, *ib.*



## TABLE OF CASES.

*N.B.—In the citation of cases, prefixes, such as Stri, Rajah, Rani, Maharajah, Maharani, and Baboo are omitted and where the name is long, the latter part is left out. The spelling of the Report from which the case is quoted has always been followed, so that the same name is often spelt in different ways. The references are to paragraphs.*

- |   |   |
|---|---|
| ABADI v. Ash, 420                                       | Ahmedbhoy v. Cassumbhoy, 55, 261            |
| Abalady v. Mt. Lukhymonee, 417                          | Ajei v. Girdharee, 325                      |
| Abasi v. Dunne, 192                                     | Ajit Singh v. Bijai, 341                    |
| Abdul Cader v. Turner, 55                               | Ajoodhia v. Kashee Gir, 251, 268            |
| — Hye v. Mir Muhammed, 402                              | — v. Kashee, 318                            |
| Abbachari v. Ramachendrayya, 167, 357                   | Ajudhia Baksh v. Mt. Rukmin Kuari, 350, 390 |
| Abhaychandra v. Pyari, 269, 271, 273                    | Akhoy Chunder v. Kalapar Haji, 97           |
| Abhassi Begam v. Rajroop Koonwar, 192                   | Akoba Dada v. Sakharam, 596                 |
| Abhay Churn v. Kally Prasad, 602                        | Akora v. Boreani, 512, 523                  |
| Abilak Roy v. Rubbi Roy, 324                            | Alagappa v. Ramasamy, 201                   |
| Abool Hossein v. Raghunath, 363                         | Alami v. Komu, 380                          |
| Abraham v. Abraham, 49, 50, 54, 56, 57                  | Alangamonjori v. Souainoni, 354, 390        |
| Achal Ram v. Udai Pertab, 499, 501                      | Alank Manjari v. Fakir Chand, 120, 143      |
| Adhiranee v. Shona Malee, 419, 420, 422                 | Alhadmoni v. Gokulmoni, 522                 |
| Adibai v. Cursandas, 411, 417                           | Alimelu v. Rengasami, 442                   |
| Adi Dev v. Dukharan, 454, 599                           | Alimelammal v. Arunachellam, 192, 435       |
| Administrator-General of Madras v. Ananda Chari, 87, 90 | Ali Hasan v. Dhirja, 349, 353               |
| Administrator-General of Bengal v. Apcar, 388           | Alim Buksh v. Jhalo Bibi, 197               |
| Adrishappa v. Gurushidappa, 428                         | Alladinee v. Sreenath, 276                  |
| Adurmoni v. Chowdhry, 252, 286                          | Aloksoondry v. Horo, 404                    |
| Advocate General v. Fatima, 399                         | Alukinonee v. Banee Madhub, 596             |
| Advaya v. Rudrava, 513, 522, 553                        | Alum v. Ashad, 274                          |
| Aga Hajee v. Juggut, 280                                | Alwar v. Ramasamy, 142                      |
| Agar Ellis, in re 193                                   | Alymalummaul v. Vencatoovien, 428           |
|   | Amauchi v. Munchiraz, 303                   |
|   | Ambawow v. Rutton, 488                      |
|   | Ambika v. Sukhmani, 454                     |

- Ameena v. Radhabinode, 546  
 Amir Singh v. Mouzzim, 274  
 Amirthayyan v. Ketharamayyan, 103  
 Amiruddania v. Nateri, 350  
 Amjad Ali v. Moniram, 589  
 Ammakannu v. Appu, 409, 412  
 Amnur v. Mardun, 599  
 Amrita v. Lakhinarayan, 459, 460, 466,  
 468, 471, 494, 531, 532  
 Amrut v. Trimbeck, 283  
 Anand v. Court of Wards, 699  
 — v. Prankisto, 442, 445  
 Ananda Bibi v. Nownit Lal, 472, 488  
 Anandrav v. Ganesh, 147  
 Anandayyan v. Devarajayyan, 201  
 Ananta v. Ramabai, 550  
 Anant Balacharya v. Damodhar, 454  
 Anantaiya v. Savitramma, 415  
 Anantha v. Nagamuthu, 350,  
 Anath v. Mackintosh, 450  
 Andrews v. Joakim, 395  
 Annamah v. Mabbu Bali Reddy, 176  
 Annoda v. Kally Coomar, 274  
 Annundo Mohun v. Lamb, 266  
 Anooragee v. Bhugobutty, 324  
 Antamma v. Kaveri, 217  
 Anunda Rai v. Kalipersad, 313  
 Anund Chandra v. Nilmoni, 581  
 Anundchund v. Kishen, 348  
 Anund Chunder v. Teetoram, 491  
 — v. Court of Wards, 603  
 — v. Dheraj, 51, 314  
 — Moyee v. Mohendro, 589  
 Anundee v. Khedoo, 454, 485  
 Anundmoyee v. Boykantnath, 398  
 — v. Sheebchunder, 100  
 Apaji v. Gangabai, 408, 411  
 — Bapuji v. Keshav Shumrav, 313  
 — Narhav v. Ramchandra, 432  
 Appapillay v. Rungapillay, 454  
 Appasami v. Nagappa, 398  
 Appovier v. Rama Subbaiyan, 246, 275,  
 452, 454  
 Appuaiyyan v. Rama Subbaiyan, 146  
 Ardasir v. Hirabai, 392  
 Arumugam v. Sabapathi, 324  
 Aruachellum v. Iyasamy, 120, 135, 371  
 Arumuga v. Ramasami, 319  
 Arumugam v. Ammi Ammal, 386, 388  
 Arunachela v. Munisawmi, 286  
 — v. Vythialinga, 274  
 Arundadi v. Kappammal, 111  
 Arruth v. Juggernath, 397  
 Ashabai v. Haji Tyeb, 55, 401, 454,  
 621, 624  
 Ashgar v. Delroos, 397  
 Ashimullah v. Kali Kinkur, 427  
 Ashutosh v. Doorga Churn, 378, 387  
 — v. Lukhimoni, 417  
 Assar Purshotam v. Ratanbai, 107  
 Attorney-General v. Brodie, 399  
 Audh Kumari v. Chandra, 514  
 Aunjona Dasi v. Prahlad Chandra, 81a  
 Aulim v. Bejai, 459  
 Aulock v. Anlock, 360  
 Aumirtolall v. Rajoneekant, 515, 519,  
 605  
 Ayabuttee v. Rajkissen, 488  
 Ayma Ram v. Madho Rao, 143  
 Ayyavu v. Niladatchi, 155, 163  
 Azimut v. Hurdwaree, 401, 404  
  
 BABAJI v. Bhagirthibai, 123  
 — v. Kashibai, 454  
 — v. Krishnaji, 321  
 — v. Vasudev, 329  
 Babu v. Timma, 310, 332  
 — Valad v. Bhikaji, 605  
 Bachha Jha v. Jugmon, 622  
 Bachebi v. Makhan, 44, 391  
 Bachiraju v. Venkatappadu, 507  
 Bada v. Hussa Bhai, 428  
 Badul v. Chutterdharee, 267  
 Bae Gunga v. Bae Sheekoovur, 123  
 — Rutton v. Lalla Munnohur, 89  
 — Rulyat v. Jeychund, 81, 91  
 — v. Lukmeedass, 411  
 — Sheo v. Ruttonjee, 89, 191  
 — Umrut v. Bae Koosul, 488  
 Bahur Ali v. Sookee, 196  
 Bai Amrit v. Bai Manik, 488  
 — Daya v. Natha Govindhal, 409  
 — Devkore v. Amritram, 380, 530  
 — v. Sanmukhram, 428



- Bai Jamna v. Bais Nanker**, 598  
 — *v. Bai Jadav*, 411  
 — *Kesar v. Bai Ganga*, 196  
 — *Kushal v. Lakshma Mana*, 353  
 — *Mamubai v. Dossa Moraji*, 353, 365  
 — *Manigavri v. Narondas*, 357  
     *Manchha v. Narotamdas*, 258  
 — *Narmada v. Bhagwantrai*, 574, 624  
 — *Suraj v. Dulpatram*, 361  
**Baijnath v. Mahabir**, 519  
**Baijun v. Brij Bhokun**, 290, 291, 589, 595  
**Bailur Krishna v. Lakshmana**, 307  
**Baisni v. Rup Singh**, 417  
**Bajee v. Pandurang**, 334  
**Bakubai v. Manchhabai**, 513, 514  
**Balaji v. Gopal**, 274  
 — *v. Ramchandra*, 362  
**Bala Krishna v. Chintamani**, 267  
**Balarami v. Pera**, 159, 190A  
**Balbadar v. Bisheswar**, 306  
**Balgobind v. Ramkumar**, 599  
**Balgovind v. Pertab**, 550  
 — *v. Lal Bahadoor*, 554  
**Balinath v. Dachman Das**, 363  
**Balkrishna v. Savitribai**, 468, 454, 456, 509  
 — *v. Lakshman*, 28, 521  
**Ballabh v. Sunder**, 329  
**Ballojee v. Venkapa**, 334  
**Balvantrav v. Bayabai**, 120  
**Bamasoondree v. Rajkrishto**, 463, 491  
**Bamasoondree v. Anund**, 458  
 — *v. Bamasoonduree*, 599  
**Bamasunderi v. Krishna Chandra**, 363  
     *v. Puddomonee*, 415  
**Bamundoss v. Mt. Tarinee**, 107, 181  
**Banarsi Das v. Maharani Kuar**, 274  
**Banee Pershad v. Moonsee Syud**, 100, 144  
**Bank of Hindustan v. Premchand**, 353  
**Bannoo v. Kashee Ram**, 267  
**Banymadhob v. Juggodamba**, 526  
**Bappan v. Makki**, 408  
**Bapuji v. Pandurang**, 557  
**Bapuji v. Satyabhamabai**, 362  
**Basamal v. Maharaj Singh**, 287  
**Basdeo v. Gopal**, 150  
**Bashetiappa v. Shivlingappa**, 94, 120  
**Basoo v. Basoo**, 97  
 — *v. Kishen*, 397  
**Basoo Kooer v. Hurry Dass**, 286  
**Basvantrav v. Mantappa**, 51  
**Bawani v. Ambabay**, 166  
**Bayabai v. Bala Venkatesh**, 107, 118  
**Bebee Muttra, re.**, 367  
**Bechu Lal v. Olinullah**, 274  
**Bechur v. Bae Lukmee**, 688  
**Behari Lal v. Indramani**, 142  
 — *v. Madho Lal*, 591  
**Behary v. Madho**, 604  
**Bemola v. Mohun**, 319  
**Bepin Behari v. Brojonath**, 180  
 — *v. Lal Mohun*, 442  
**Beresford v. Ruma Subba**, 315  
**Berhampore : the case of ; see Raghunadha v. Brozo Kishore ?**  
**Berjessory v. Ramconny**, 505  
**Berogah v. Nubokissen**, 458  
**Beebee Nyamut v. Fuzl Hossein**, 401  
 — *Sowlatoonissa v. Robt. Savi*, 196  
**Beer Pertab v. Maharajah Rajender**, 347, 51, 262, 310, 315, 318, 380  
**Bhaba Pershad v. Secretary of State**, 197  
**Bhagabati v. Kanailal**, 388, 419, 423  
**Bhagavatamma v. Pampanna**, 588  
**Bhagbut Pershad v. Girja Koer**, 279, 289, 292, 299, 324  
**Bhagbutti v. Chowdhry Bholanath**, 539, 581, 584  
 — *v. Chowdry*, 388  
**Bhagirthi Bhai v. Kahnunjirav**, 28, 570  
     *v. Radhabai*, 123  
     *v. Baya*, 490  
 — *v. Kahnun Jirav*, 570  
**Bhagvandas v. Rajmal**, 44, 107, 118  
**Bhagwant Singh v. Kalla**, 549  
**Bhaira v. Parmeshri**, 353  
**Bhala Nahana v. Parbhu**, 95  
**Bhalu Roy v. Jhaku Roy**, 363  
**Bhaoni v. Maharaj Singh**, 80, 503



- Bharmangavda v. Rudrapgavda**, 567, 570  
**Bhasker Bhachajee v. Narro Ragonath**, 122  
     — *v. Narro Ragoonath*, 107  
     — *Trimbak v. Mahadev Ramji*, 136, 138, 567, 571, 573, 688, 627  
**Bhau Babaji v. Gopala**, 587  
     — *Nauaji v. Sundrabai*, 47, 51, 481, 513  
**Bhavanamma v. Ramasami**, 425  
**Bhawani v. Mahtab**, 511  
**Bhikham v. Pura**, 423  
**Bhimana v. Tayappa**, 167  
**Bhimul Doss v. Choonee Lall**, 245  
**Bhobanny v. Teerpurachurn**, 196  
**Bhobosoondree v. Issurchnnder**, 359  
**Bholai v. Kali**, 602  
**Bholanath v. Ajoodhin**, 265, 266.  
     — *v. Mt. Sabitra*, 548, 553  
     — *v. Rakhal Dass*, 532  
**Bhowabul v. Rajendro**, 407  
**Bhowaneel v. Mt. Taramunee**, 347  
**Bhowanny Churn v. Ramkannt**, 347, 353, 369, 449, 450  
     *v. Purem*, 404  
**Bhowna v. Roopkishore**, 324  
**Bhoobum Moyee v. Ram Kishore**, 102, 104, 104A, 129, 172, 173, 174, 181, 375, 382, 384, 388, 556  
**Bhoobun v. Hurriah**, 365, 382  
     — *v. Muddan Mohun*, 615  
**Bhoobunesuree v. Gouree Doss**, 548  
**Bhoobunmoyee v. Ramkissore**, 424  
**Bhubaneswari v. Niloomul**, 179  
**Bhugwan v. Upooch**, 403  
     — *v. Bindoo*, 417  
**Bhugwandeem v. Myna Bae**, 329, 509, 510, 567, 576, 698  
**Bhujangrav v. Malojirav**, 47, 499  
**Bhujjun v. Gya**, 549  
**Bhupal Ram v. Lachina Kuar**, 592  
**Bhupendro Narayan v. Nemye Chand**, 196  
**Bhuwani v. Solukhna**, 591  
**Bhyah Ram v. Bhyah Ugr**, 471, 473, 496  
**Bhyrobee v. Nubkissen**, 488, 522, 567  
**Bhyrochund v. Russomunee**, 447  
**Bhyro Pershad v. Basisto**, 329, 330  
**Bhyrnb Chunder v. Kalee Kishwur**, 150  
     — *v. Gogaram* 274  
**Bibee Solomon v. Abdul Azeez**, 197  
**Bibi Sahodra v. Rai Jang**, 588  
**Bidhoomookhi v. Echamoe**, 526  
**Bijaya v. Shama**, 107  
**Bijia Debia v. Mt. Unnapoorna**, 516  
**Bijya v. Unpoorna**, 567  
**Biku v. Lachman**, 324  
**Bikan v. Parbatty**, 360  
**Bilasmoni v. Sheo Pershad**, 365  
**Bilaso v. Dina Nath**, 437, 438, 439  
**Bimola v. Dango**, 514  
**Binda v. Kaunsilia**, 91  
**Bindoo v. Bolie**, 600  
     — *v. Pearee*, 401  
**Binode v. Purdhan**, 514  
**Birajan Kooer v. Lachmi Narain**, 598  
**Birch v. Blagrove**, 405  
**Birjmohun Lal v. Rndra Perkash**, 191  
**Bishambhur v. Sudasheeb**, 320, 321  
**Bishen Chand v. Syed Nadir**, 397  
     — *Perkash v. Bawa*, 318  
**Bishenpirea v. Soogunda**, 11, 522  
**Bisheswar v. Shital**, 263  
**Bishonath v. Chunder**, 360  
**Bisnath Singh v. Ramchurn**, 48  
**Bistobehuri v. Lala Biajunath**, 604  
**Bistoo v. Radha Soonder**, 577, 611, 623  
**Biswanath v. Collector of Mymensing**, 274  
     — *v. Khantomani*, 579  
**Bisnessur v. Seeta**, 263  
     — *v. Luchmessur*, 267, 296, 324, 401, 596  
     — *v. Joy Kishore*, 360  
     — *v. Ram Joy*, 581  
**Bissonauth v. Doorgapersad**, 192  
**Boddington, in re**, 168, 169  
**Bodh Singh v. Ganesb**, 265, 267, 402  
**Bodhwarain v. Omrao**, 443, 550, 555  
**Bodhrao v. Nursing Rao**, 428  
**Bogaraz v. Tanjore Venkatarav**, 377  
**Boiddonath v. Ramkishore**, 196

- Bolje Chund v. Khetterpaul, 576  
 Boodhun v. Mt. Lnteefun, 360  
 Boologum v. Swornum, 258  
 Boolchand v. Janokee, 90  
 Booloka v. Comarasawmy, 428  
 Brackenbury v. Brackenbury, 405  
 Brahmappa v. Papanna, 622  
 Brahmavarapu v. Venkamma, 375, 409  
 Brajakishor v. Radha Gobind, 464  
 Bramamayi v. Jages, 354, 386, 387, 388  
 Brammoye v. Kristomohun, 605  
 Brijhookunjee v. Gokoolootsaojee, 107, 130  
 Brijindar v. Janki Koer, 262  
 Brij Indar v. Janki, 616  
 — Mohan v. Ram Nursingh, 404  
 Brimho v. Ram Dolab, 404  
 Brinda v. Pearce, 604  
 Brindaban v. Chandra Karmokar, 81A, 90  
 Brindavana v. Radhamani, 80, 504  
 Brohmo v. Anund, 605  
 Brojo v. Gouree, 526  
 — v. Sreenath Bose, 526, 536, 603, 605  
 Brojokishcree v. Sreenath Bose, 609  
 Brojomohun v. Hurrololl, 399  
 Brojonath v. Koylash, 403  
 Brojosoondery v. Luchmee Koonwaree, 395, 397  
 Broughton v. Pogose, 388  
 Buchi Ramaya v. Jagapathi, 598  
 Budree Lall v. Kantee, 279, 324  
 Buhnus v. Lalla Buhoree, 402  
 Bukshun v. Doolhin, 196, 321  
 Bulakhidas v. Keshavlal, 509, 515, 570  
 Buldeo v. Sham Lal, 311  
 Bullabakant v. Kishenprea, 129, 142  
 Bullimore v. Wynter, 169  
 Bungsee v. Soodist, 274  
 Bunsee Lall v. Shaikh Aoladh, 337  
 Bunwaree v. Mudden, 397  
 Buraik v. Greedharee, 319  
 Burham v. Panchoo, 525  
 Burtoo v. Ram Parmessar, 324  
 Busant v. Kummul, 414  
 Buzrung v. Mt. Mantora, 197  
 Byari v. Puttanna, 332  
 Byjnath v. Ramoodeen, 339  
 — v. Kopilmon, 45  
 Bykunt v. Goboollah, 403  
 — v. Grish Chunder, 604  
 CALLYCHURN v. Bhuggobutty, 191  
 — v. Jonava, 439  
 Callynath v. Chundernath, 387  
 Canacumma v. Narasimma, 444  
 Canaka v. Cottavappah, 196  
 Cassumbhoy v. Ahmedbhoy, 430  
 Cauminany v. Perumma, 196  
 Caval Vencata v. Collector of Masulipatam, 325, 545, 594  
 Cecil v. Butcher, 405  
 Chalakonda v. Ratnachalam, 52, 262  
 Chalayil Kandotha v. Chathu, 220  
 Chamaili v. Ram Prasad, 337  
 Chandra v. Ganga, 324  
 — v. Gojrabai, 172, 176  
 Chandrabhagabai v. Kashinath, 411, 417  
 Chandramula v. Muktamala, 143  
 Chandu v. Raman, 408  
 — v. Subba, 547  
 Chandrasekharudu v. Bramhanna, 98  
 Charn Chunder v. Nobo Sundari, 514, 550  
 Chaudhri Ujagar v. Chaudhri Pitam, 316  
 Chaplin v. Chaplin, 405  
 Chatterbhooj v. Daramsi, 252, 253, 310  
 Chekkutti v. Pakki, 408  
 Chelikani v. Suraneni, 458, 492, 493, 494, 532  
 Chellamanama v. Subamma, 353  
 Chella Papi v. Chella Koti, 190A  
 Chellaperoomall v. Veeraperoomall, 259  
 Chellayamal v. Muttialamal, 254  
 Chemmanthatti v. Meyene, 397  
 Chendrabhan v. Chingooram, 504  
 — Reddi v. Venkata Reddi, 197  
 Chennappa v. Chellamanna, 283  
 Chenvirappa v. Puttappa, 405, 407  
 Chetty Colum Prinsunna v. Chetty Colum Moodoo, 129

- Chetty Colum v. Rajah Rungasawmy, 196, 587  
 Cheyt Narain v. Bunwaree, 274  
 Chhabila v. Jadavbai, 454  
 Chidambaram v. Gonri, 454  
 Chimnaji v. Dinkar, 587  
 Chiuna Gaundan v. Kumara, 132, 135, 138  
   — Kimedy case : see Raghunadha v. Brozo Kishoro.  
   — Nagayya v. Pedda Nagayya, 124  
   — Ramakristna v. Minatchi, 154  
   — Sunnyasi v. Surya, 453  
   — Ummayi v. Tegarai, 52  
 Chinnapiel v. Chocken, 331  
 Chinnaya v. Gurnatham, 320, 587  
   — v. Gurnathan, 587  
   — v. Perumal, 311  
 Chinnasamien v. Koottoor,  
 Chintamanrav v. Kashinath, 279  
   — v. Moro Lakshman, 388  
   — v. Shiram, 361, 362  
 Chitko Raghunath v. Janaki, 120, 180  
 Chocalinga v. Iyah, 377  
 Chocummal v. Surathy, 135  
 Choondoor v. Narasimma, 553  
 Choonee v. Prosunno, 269  
   — Lall v. Jussoo, 370, 586  
 Chotay v. Chunno, 496  
   — Lall v. Chunno Lall, 39, 568, 627  
 Chotiram v. Narayandas, 320  
 Chowdhrani v. Tariney, 401  
 Chowdhry Bholanath v. Mt. Bhagabutti, 581  
   Chintaman v. Mt. Nowlukho, 485  
   v. Nowlukho, 51, 255  
 Chowdhry Chuttersal v. Government, 196  
   — Padum v. Koer Oodey, 101, 103, 183  
 Chowdree v. Hanooman, 183, 187  
 Chowdry v. Russomoyee, 586  
 Chuckun v. Poran, 268, 270, 271, 275  
 Chundee v. MacNaghten, 274  
 Chunder v. Dwarkanath, 603  
   — v. Hurbuns Sahai, 337, 403  
 Chundernath v. Bhoynub Chunder, 363, 364  
   — v. Kristo, 401  
 Chundi Churn v. Sidheswari, 386  
 Chundrabulee v. Brody, 579, 581  
 Chundrabullee's case : see Bhoobum Moyee v. Ram Kishore  
 Chundrakaminee v. Ramrutton, 402  
 Chundro v. Nobin Chunder, 46  
 Chuoturya v. Sahub Purnulad, 407, 434  
 Churaman v. Balli, 363, 365  
 Chutter v. Bikao, 340  
   — Sein's case, 398  
 Clarke, *in re*, 193  
 Cochrane v. Moore, 351  
   v. Pogose, 364  
 Coleman, *re*, 356  
 Collector of Madura v. Mootoo Ramalinga, 26, 27, 28, 30, 33, 37, 41, 47, 101, 109, 110, 177  
   — Masulipatam v. Canaly Venkata, 561, 563, 567, 578  
   — Surat v. Dhisringji, 120  
 Thana v. Hari, 397  
 Tirhoot v. Hur 189  
 Trichinopoly v. Lekkaman, 75  
 Collychnd v. Moore, 591  
 Collydoss v. Sibchunder, 362  
 Comulmonee v. Rammannath, 424  
 Comarasawmy v. Sellumman, 409  
 Commula, *re*, 367  
 Cooppa v. Sashappien, 598  
 Coopummal v. Rookmany, 408  
 Cossarat v. Sudaburt, 337  
 Cossinaut Bynack v. Hur 347, 370, 576, 579, 586, 587, 598  
 Cottington v. Fletcher, 405  
 Court of Wards v. Mohossur, 623  
 Crowdee v. Bhokdaree, 275  
 Culloor Narainsawmy, *in re*, 194

- Cunjhunnee v. Gopee, 415  
 Cunniah Chetty v. Lutchmenarasoo, 387  
  
 DARO MISSEK v. Srinavas, 398  
 Dabychurn v. Radachurn, 86  
 Dadaji v. Rukmabai, 91, 414  
 Dadjee v. Wittal, 274, 452, 552  
 Dagai Dabee v. Mothura Nath, 366  
 Dagumbaree v. Taramonee, 125  
 Dalip v. Ganpat, 505  
 Dalpat Narotam v. Bhugvan, 570, 574, 576  
 Dalsukhram v. Lallubhai, 423  
 Damodur v. Purmanandas, 598, 615  
     — v. Senabutty, 435, 437  
 Damoodhur v. Birjo, 325  
 Damoodur v. Mohee Kant, 604  
 Danasha v. Ismalsha, 365  
 Danno v. Darbo, 514  
 Dantuluri v. Mallapudi, 616  
 Darsu v. Bikarnajit, 286  
 Dasari v. Dasari, 452  
 Das Mercedes v. Cones, 395  
 Datti Parisi v. Datti Bangaru, 504, 505  
 Davies v. Otty, 405  
 Dawson, re, 354  
 Debee Dial v. Hur Hor Singh, 120, 138  
 Debendra v. Brojendra, 424  
     — v. Brojendra Coomar, 347  
 Debi Dutt v. Subodra, 196  
     — Parshad v. Thakur Dial, 246, 250  
 Debnath v. Gudadhur, 400  
 Deendyal v. Jugdeep, 290, 296, 296A, 324, 329, 330, 338, 340, 442  
 Deep Chund v. Hurdeal, 591  
 Deepo Debia v. Gobindo Deb, 11  
 Deepoo v. Gowreeshunker, 188  
 Delroos v. Nawab Syud, 397  
 Denonath v. Hurrynarrain, 266  
 Deo Baee v. Wan Baee, 379  
     — Bunsee v. Dwarkanath, 435  
     — Pershad v. Lujoo, 568  
 Deokee v. Sookhdeo, 513, 522  
 Deokishen v. Budh Prakash, 550, 554, 556  
 Deotaree v. Damoodhur, 320  
  
 Deowanti v. Dwarkanath, 435  
 Deva v. Ram Manohar, 324  
 Devaraja v. Venayaga, 387  
 Devu v. Daji, 476  
 Dewakur v. Naroo, 274  
 Dewcooverbaee's case, see Pranjeevandas v. Dewcooverbaee  
 Deyanath v. Muthoor, 465, 539  
 Dhadphale v. Gurav, 399  
 Dhaji Himat v. Dhirajram, 197  
 Dharam Chand v. Janki, 421  
 Dharani Kant v. Kristo Kumari, 401  
 Dharma Dagu v. Ramkrishna, 123, 130, 144B  
 Dharmadas v. Nistarini, 366  
 Dharup Nath v. Gobind Saran, 520  
 Dhondo v. Balkrishna, 578  
 Dhondu v. Gangabai, 490, 567  
     — Gurav v. Gangabai, 28  
 Dhoolubh v. Jeevee, 370  
 Dhunookdaree v. Gunput, 256, 259  
 Dhurbunga v. Coomar, 295A  
 Dhurin Das Pandey v. Mt. Shama Soondri, 171, 265  
     — v. Mt. Shama Soondri, 438  
 Dialchand v. Kissory, 369  
 Digumber v. Moti Lall, 467, 527, 539  
 Dinkar Sitaram v. Ganesh, 118, 177  
 Dinanath v. Aulockmonee, 360  
 Dinesh Chunder v. Golam Mostappa, 197  
 Dinomonee v. Gyrutoolah, 360  
 Dinobundhoo v. Dinonath, 274  
 Divi Virasalingam v. Alaturti, 90  
 Deo v. Ganpat, 520  
     — v. Roberts, 405  
 Dondee v. Suntram, 362  
 Donzelle v. Kedarnath, 366, 400  
 Doobomoyee v. Shama Churn, 176  
 Doolar Chand v. Lalla Chabeel, 324  
 Doorga v. Jampa, 274  
     — v. Mt. Pejoo, 613  
     — v. Poorun, 598  
     — Bibee v. Janaki, 463  
     — Churn v. Ram Narain, 196  
     — Persad v. Kesho Persad, 196  
     — Pershad v. Mt. Kundun, 44, 454

- Doorga Soonduree v. Goureepersad*, 181  
 — *Sundari v. Surendra Keshav*, 97, 168  
*Doorasamy v. Ramamaul*, 514  
*Doorgopershad v. Kesho Pershad*, 197, 301  
*Doorputtee v. Haradhun*, 264  
*Dorasami v. Alirutra*, 324  
*Dosibai v. Ishwardas*, 365  
*Douglas v. Collector of Benares*, 589  
*Dowlut Kooer v. Burma Deo*, 515, 516  
*Daulet Ram v. Mehr Chand*, 293, 308  
*Duke of Bedford v. Coke*, 405  
*Dukharam v. Luchmun*, 546  
*Dukhina v. Rash Beharee*, 107  
*Dundaya v. Chenbasappa*, 361, 363  
*Duneshwur v. Doeshunker*, 536  
*Dunpat Singh v. Shoobadra*, 196  
*Durbhunga v. Coomar*, 295A, 551, 596  
*Dugdale ; re*, 350  
*Durga v. Chanchal*, 398  
 — *Prasad v. Nawazish*, 345  
*Durgopal v. Roopun*, 186, 191  
*Durma v. Coomara*, 343, 317, 376  
*Duttnarain v. Ajeet*, 473  
*Dwarkanath v. Gopeenath*, 275  
 — *v. Denobundoo*, 550, 555  
 — *v. Mahendranath*, 550, 555  
 — *v. Tara Prosunno*, 274  
*Dyamonee v. Brindabun*, 277, 280  
*Dyamoyee v. Rasbeharee*, 107, 142  
*Dyaram v. Bae Umba*, 89
- EMPRESS v. Umi*, 89  
*Eshauchund v. Eshorchund*, 354, 369  
*Eshan Chunder v. Nundanoni*, 197  
 — *v. Nund Coomar*, 271, 274, 329  
 — *Kishor v. Haris Chandra*, 94, 166
- FAEZ BUKSH v. Fukeeroodeen*, 401  
*Fakir Chand v. Moti Chand*, 286, 306  
 — *Muhammad v. Tirumala Chariar*,
- Fakirapa v. Chanapa*, 334  
*Fanendra Deb v. Rajeswar*, 48, 95, 168  
*Fatma Bibi v. Advocate General of Bombay*, 395  
*Fazludeen v. Fakir Mahomed*, 363  
*Fegredo v. Mahomed*, 397  
*Futtu v. Bhurrut*, 363, 397
- GADGEPPA v. Apaji*, 196, 590  
 — *v. Gajapathy*, 434, 454, 487  
*Galdharat Singh v. Luchman*, 605  
*Ganga Bisheshar v. Pirthi*, 311  
 — *v. Ghasita*, 513, 522, 627  
 — *v. Saroda*, 274  
 — *v. Hira*, 547  
*Gangabai v. Anant*, 183  
 — *v. Vamanaji*, 318, 319, 341  
*Gangaduraiya v. Parmeswaramma*, 613, 617  
*Ganga Sahai v. Lekhraj*, 16, 33, 128, 129, 144A, 144B  
*Gangaya v. Mahalakshmi*, 602  
*Gangbai v. Thavur*, 55  
*Gangooly v. Suibo Mongola*, 627  
*Gangopadhya v. Maheschandra*, 603  
 — *v. Sarbmangala*, 570, 627  
*Gangubai v. Ramanna*, 347, 335, 380  
*Gangulu v. Ancha*, 286, 324 ]  
*Ganpat Rao v. Ramchander*, 585  
*Ganraj v. Sheozore*, 349, 337  
*Gan Savant v. Narayen Dhond*, 197  
*Garikapati v. Sudam*, 454  
*Gatha Ram v. Moolita Kochin*, 90  
*Gauri v. Chandramani*, 423  
 — *v. Gur Sahai*, 599, 604  
 — *v. Rukko*, 476, 488  
*Gaya v. Raj Bansi*, 324  
*Genda v. Chater*, 398  
*Ghansham v. Govind*, 251  
*Ghirdharee v. Koolahul*, 51  
*Girdhar v. Daji*, 361  
 — *Lal v. Bai Shiv*, 280  
*Girdharee Lall v. Kantoo Lall*, 279, 285, 296A, 322, 339  
*Girdwardharee v. Kulahul*, 249  
*Girianna v. Honamma*, 415  
*Giriowa v. Bhimaji*, 107, 118



- Girish Chunder v. Abdul Selam, 191  
 Girraj Baksh v. Kasi Hamed, 196  
 Guanabhai v. Srinivasa, 304, 357, 406  
 Goberdhun v. Shamchand, 385  
 Gobind v. Dulmeer, 581  
     — v. Mohesh, 459, 464, 467, 529, 537  
     — Chunder v. Doorgapersad, 266  
     — — v. Ram Coomar, 274, 276  
 Gobind Lal v. Hemendra, 365  
 Gobindmani v. Shamlal, 588, 600, 604  
 Gobindo v. Woomesh, 466, 537  
 Gobindonath v. Ramkanay, 181  
 Goburdhun v. Singessur, 284, 285, 306  
 Gocoolanund v. Wooma Dae, 123, 130, 514  
 Gogunchunder v. Joy Durga, 599  
 Gokebai v. Lakhmidas, 415, 417  
 Gokool v. Etwaree, 274  
     — Nath v. Issur Lochun, 350, 387  
 Golab Koonwur v. Collector of Benares, 416, 420  
 Golaub Konwuree v. Eshan Chunder, 196  
 Golla v. Kali, 362  
 Goluck v. Ohilla, 420, 422  
     v. Mahomed Rohim, 581  
 Golakmonee v. Kishenpersad, 600  
 Gonda Kooer v. Kooer Oodey, 581  
 Goolab v. Phool, 379, 485  
 Gooroo v. Kylash, 526  
 Goorobuksh v. Lutchman, 576, 579, 598  
 Gooroochurn v. Goluckmoney, 261, 264  
 Gooroodoss v. Bejoy, 275  
 Gooropersad v. Muddun, 196  
 Gooropershad v. Rasbehary, 153  
     — v. Seebchunder, 577  
 Gooropersaud v. Seebchunder, 439, 576  
 Goor Pershad v. Sheodeen, 306, 307, 329  
 Gooroova v. Narrainsawmy, 380  
 Gopal v. Dhungazee, 512  
     — v. Kenaram, 456, 542  
     — v. Krishnappa, 362  
     — v. MacNaghten, 274  
 Gopal Anant v. Narayan, 98  
     — Chand v. Babu Kunwar, 393  
     — Dass v. Nurotum, 50  
     — Dutt v. Gopal Lall, 251  
     — Narhar v. Hanmant, 123,  
     — Singh v. Bheeknall, 248, 251  
 Gopalayyan v. Raghupatiayyan, 47, 123, 124, 146, 148  
 Gopalrav v. Trimbakrav, 428  
 Gopalsami v. Chinnasami, 254, 519  
 Gopaula v. Narraina, 565, 586, 598  
 Gopee v. Rajkristna, 369  
     — v. Ryland, 274  
     — Lal v. Mt. Chundraolee, 102  
 Gopeekrist v. Gungapersaud, 267, 310, 318, 384, 401  
 Gopeenath v. Jadoo, 374  
     — v. Kallydoss, 592  
     — v. Ranjeewun, 196, 197  
 Gopi v. Markande, 402  
     — Chand v. Sujan Kuar, 604  
 Gopinath v. Bhagvat, 407  
 Gosaien v. Mt. Kishemunnee, 463,  
  
 Gosavi Shivgar v. Rivett-Carnac, 350  
 Gosling v. Gosling, 387  
 Gossain v. Bissessur, 398  
 Gossamee v. Ruman Lolljee, 399  
 Gourahkoeri v. Gujadhur, 191  
 Gourbullub v. Juggenoth, 153  
 Gouree Kanth v. Bhugobutty, 600  
 Goureenath v. Collector of Monghyr, 320  
     — v. Modhoomonee, 52  
 Goureepershad v. Mt. Jymala, 97  
 Gourhurree v. Mt. Rutnasuree, 153  
 Gourmonee v. Bamasoonderee, 191  
 Gournath v. Arnapoorna, 103  
 Gouri Shunker v. Maharajah of Bularampore, 2  
 Government of Bombay v. Ganga, 89  
 Govinddas v. Muhalukshumee, 485  
 Govindayyar v. Dorasami, 143  
 Govindji v. Lakmidas, 615  
 Govindnath v. Gulalchund, 130  
 Great Berlin Steam Boat Co., 405  
 Greedharee v. Nundkishore, 398

- Greeman v. Wahari, 601, 602  
 Greender v. Mackintosh, 304  
 Gregson v. Aditya Deb, 196  
 Gridhari v. Bengal Government, 465, 466, 494, 531, 545, 546  
 Grish Chunder v. Broughton, 582  
 Grose v. Amirtamayi, 580, 600, 604  
 Gudadhur v. Ajoodhearam, 264  
 Gudimella v. Venkamma, 413  
 Gulabdas v. Collector of Surat, 262, 365  
 Guman v. Srikanth, 493  
 — v. Srikanth Neogi, 531  
 Gunesh v. Moheshur, 51  
 — v. Nil Komul, 463, 535  
 Gunga v. Jeevee, 416  
 Gungadharudu v. Narasammah, 258  
 Gungadhur v. Ayimuddin, 365  
 Gungahurry v. Raghubram, 360  
 Gungama v. Chendrappa, 191  
 Gunga Mya v. Kishen Kishore, 154, 568  
 Gunganarain v. Bulram, 348, 588  
 Gungapersad v. Brijessuree, 154  
 Gunga Prasad v. Ajudhia, 251, 286  
 — v. Shumbhoonath, 479  
 Gungaram v. Kallipodo, 363  
 — v. Tappee, 379  
 Gungoo Mull v. Bunseedhur, 251  
 Guni v. Moran, 274  
 Gun Joshee v. Sugoona, 485  
 Gunnappa v. Sankappa, 96, 98  
 Gunput Narain Singh, *re*, 90  
 Guntur Case, see Vellanki v. Venkata Rama, 459, 460, 461, 463, 466, 467, 473  
 Gur Dial v. Kaunsila, 422  
 Gurivi Reddy v. Chiunamma, 380  
 Guru v. Anand, 476, 491, 536, 537, 539  
 — Dass v. Bijaya, 275, 311  
 — Gobind v. Anand Lal, 153  
 — v. Nafur, 584  
 Gurunarain v. Unund, 51  
 Gurunath v. Krishnaji, 578  
 Gurusami v. Chinna Mannar, 283  
 — v. Ganapathya, 311, 323  
 Guruvappa v. Thimma, 308, 324  
 Gya Prasad v. Hutnarain, 605  
 Gyan v. Dookhurn, 568  
 HADJEE MUSTAPHA, *re*, 367  
 Haidar Ali v. Tasadduk, 388  
 Haji Abdul v. Munshi Amir, 390  
 — Ismail's will, 55  
 Haigh v. Kaye, 405  
 Haiman v. Koomar Gunsheam, 101, 145  
 Hait Singh v. Dabee Singh, 266  
 Hakeem v. Beejoy, 403  
 Hakim Khan v. Gool Khan, 54  
 Hanmant Lakshman v. Jayarao, 196  
 — Ramchandra v. Bhimacharya, 98, 380  
 Hanuman v. Chirai, 135  
 — Kamat v. Dowlut Munder, 286  
 Hanumantamma v. Rami Reddy, 155, 158, 190A  
 Haradhun v. Ram Newaz, 270  
 Harbhaj v. Gumani, 42  
 Hardeo Bux v. Jawahir, 262  
 Harendranarayan's goods, 579  
 Harendra Narain v. Moran, 196  
 Hargobind v. Dharam, 408, 504  
 Hari v. Mahadaji, 362  
 — v. Narayan, 197  
 Haribhat v. Damodarbhat, 570  
 Haridas v. Prannath, 452  
 Hari Gobind v. Akhoy Kumar, 407  
 Hari Gopal v. Gokaldas, 274  
 Harihar v. Uman Pershad, 365  
 Harilal v. Pranvalasdas, 598  
 Hari Narayan v. Ganpatrav, 452  
 Hari Saran Moitra v. Bhubaneswari, 181, 197, 324, 596  
 Harjivan v. Naran, 352  
 Harjivandas v. Pranvalabdas, 567  
 Har Saran Das v. Nandi, 512  
 Haroon Mahomed, *re*, 55, 319  
 Harvey, *re*, 354A  
 Hasha v. Ragho, 361, 364  
 Hassan Ali v. Nagamal, 124  
 Hathi Singh v. Kuverji, 363  
 Haunman v. Baboo Kishen, 338, 340, 341  
 Heera Lal v. Mt. Kousillah, 420



- Hema Kooeree v. Ajoodhya**, 409  
**Hemanginee v. Jogendro**, 402  
**Hemangini Dasi v. Kedarnath**, 415, 439, 576  
     — **v. Nobin Chand**, 398  
**Hemchund v. Taramunnee**, 591  
**Hemlata v. Goluck Chunder**, 521, 567  
**Hencower v. Hanscower**, 183  
**Hendry v. Mutty Lall**, 593  
**Himalaya v. Simla Bank**, 363  
**Himmatsing v. Ganpatsing**, 416  
**Himnauth Bose, in re**, 194  
**Himulta v. Mt. Pudomonee**, 488  
**Hiranath v. Baboo Ram**, 47  
     — **v. Baboo Ram Narayan**, 485  
**Hira Singh v. Gunga Sahai**, 550  
**Hirbai v. Jan Mahomed**, 352  
**Holloway v. Mahomed**, 275  
     — **v. Sheikh Wahed**, 275  
**Honamma v. Timannabhat**, 408, 414, 549  
**Honooman v. Bhagbut**, 338  
**Hoogly v. Kishanund**, 398  
**Hori Dasi v. Secretary of State**, 399  
**Hormusji v. Dhanbaiji**, 392  
**Howard v. Pestonji**, 47, 397  
**Huebut Rao v. Govindrav**, 124, 136, 143  
**Hujmu Chul v. Ranee Chadoorn**, 80  
**Hulodhur v. Gooroo**, 274  
**Hulodhur v. Ramnauth**, 427  
**Hunoomanpersaud, v. Mtt. Babooee**, 196, 279, 297, 320, 323, 588, 589, 594  
**Hunsapore, case of the Zemindary of**, see **Beer Pertab v. Maharajah Rajender**  
**Hunsbutti v. Ishri**, 582  
**Huradhun v. Muthoranath**, 145  
**Harbojee v. Hurgovind**, 280  
**Hur Dyal Nag v. Roy Krishto**, 145  
     — **Kishore v. Joogul**, 274  
**Hurdey Narain v. Rooder Perkash**, 287, 291, 292, 294, 340  
**Huree Bhaee v. Nuthoo**, 87, 89, 417  
**Hureewnubh v. Keshowram**, 379  
**Huri Das Bandopadhyaya v. Rama Churn**, 464  
**Hurish Chunder v. Mokhoda**, 454  
**Hurkoonwur v. Ruttun Bae**, 89, 512  
**Hurlall v. Jorawan**, 428  
**Hurodoot v. Beer Narain**, 316  
**Huromohun v. Auluckmonee**, 586  
**Huro Soondree v. Chundermoney**, 120  
**Hurpurshad v. Sheo Dyal**, 47, 254, 262, 365, 388  
**Hurronath Roy v. Randhir Singh**, 321  
**Hurrosoondery v. Cowar**, 388  
     — **v. Rajessuree**, 488  
**Hurry Churn v. Nimai Chand**, 89, 90  
**Hurrydoss v. Rungunmoney**, 565, 578, 579, 581, 600  
     — **v. Uppoornah**, 579, 600  
**Hurymohun v. Gonesh Chunder**, 589  
     — **v. Shonaton**, 613, 625  
**Hurry Sunker v. Kali**, 404  
**Hurst v. Mussoorie Bank**, 613  
**Hussain Beebee v. Hussain Sherif**, 398  
**Hyde v. Hyde**, 55  
**ICHHARAM v. Prumanund**, 379  
**Ilata v. Narayanan**, 414  
**Ilias v. Agund**, 520  
**Imambandi v. Kumleswari**, 403  
**Indar Kuar v. Lalta Prasad**, 589  
**Inderdeonarain v. Toolseenarain**, 275, 311  
**Inderun v. Ramasawmy**, 2, 504  
**Indromonee v. Suroop**, 274  
**Indromoni v. Behari Lall**, 142  
**Ishan v. Buksh Ali**, 596  
**Ishri Singh v. Buldeo Singh**, 499  
**Ismail v. Fidayat**, 51  
**Isri Dut v. Hunsbatti**, 580, 581, 582, 603  
     — **Singh v. Gauga**, 42  
**Isserchunder v. Rasbeharee**, 144  
**Issur Chunder v. Ragab**, 197  
     — **v. Ranee Dossee**, 551  
**Iyagaree v. Sashamma**, 413  
**Iyavoo v. Sengen**, 565  
**JAAFAR v. Aji**, 398  
**Jado v. Mt. Ranee**, 316  
**Jadoo v. Kadumbinee**, 274

- Jadomonee v. Gangadhar**, 261, 264  
**Jadu v. Sutherland**, 274  
**Jadumani v. Kheytra Mohan**, 417  
**Jagabai v. Vijbhokundas**, 299  
**Jagadamba v. Dakhina Mohun**, 150  
**Jagadumba v. Camachemma**, 565  
**Jagannath v. Bidyanand**, 546  
**Jaganath Prasad v. Sitaram**, 306  
**Jagat Narain v. Sheodas**, 476, 493  
**Jaggamoni v. Nilmoni**, 397  
**Jaggernath v. Pershad Surmah**, 398  
**Jagjivandas v. Imdad**, 313  
**Jagunnadha v. Konda**, 328  
**Jai Bansi v. Chattar** 399  
— **Ram v. Musan Dhami**, 99, 102  
**Jairam v. Atmaram**, 452  
— **Babaja Shet v. Joma Kondia**,  
— — — **v. Ruverhai**, 354  
**Jalaluddanla v. Samsamuddaula**, 274  
**Jallidar v. Ramlal**, 329  
**James v. Lord Wynford**, 354A  
**Jamiyatram v. Bai Jamna**, 519, 567, 598  
— **v. Parbhudas**, 304  
**Jamna v. Machul**, 424  
**Jamnabai v. Khimji**, 514  
— **v. Raichand**, 181, 171, 174  
**Jamona v. Mudden**, 277, 280  
**Jankee v. Bukhooree**, 275, 311  
**Janki Bai v. Sundra**, 28, 570  
**Janki Dibeh v. Suda Sheo**, 101  
**Janki v. Nandram**, 251, 409  
**Janokee v. Gopaul**, 131, 138, 398  
— **v. Kisto**, 267  
**Janokinath v. Muthuranath**, 438, 442, 510  
**Jarman's Estate**, 388  
**Jasoda Koer v. Sheo Pershad**, 250, 251, 487, 519  
**Jatha Naik v. Venkatappa**, 596  
**Jaudubchunder v. Benodbeharry**, 451, 524  
**Jawahir v. Gnyan**, 251  
**Jeebum v. Romanath**, 445  
**Jeewun v. Mt. Sona**, 388, 613, 617  
**Jeo Lal Singh v. Ganga Pershad**, 324  
**Jethee v. Mt. Sheo**, 488  
**Jewun v. Shah Kuberoodeen**, 395  
**Jhabboo v. Khoob Lall**, 442  
**Jhula v. Kanta Prasad**, 599  
**Jijoyiamba v. Kamakshi**, 509, 510  
**Jivan v. Ram Govind**, 337  
**Jivandas v. Framji**, 362, 365  
**Jivani v. Jivn**, 193  
**Jivi v. Ramji**, 417  
**Jodoonath v. Brojonath**, 439  
**Jogdamba Koer v. Secretary of State**, 488  
**Jogendro Deb v. Funindro**, 80, 146  
— **Nath v. Jugobundhu**, 452  
— **v. Nittyunand**, 51  
— **v. Nobinchunder**  
**Jogendronundini v. Hurry Doss**,  
**Jogi Singh v. Behari**  
**Jogmurut v. Seetulpersad**, 492  
**Jogul Kishore v. Shib Sahai**, 430, 432  
**Johurra Bibee v. Strigopal**, 308  
— **v. Sreegopal**, 308, 422  
**Joogul v. Kalee**, 281  
**Jotendro v. Jogul**, 597  
**Jowahir v. Mt. Kailassoo**, 531  
**Jowala v. Dharam**, 54  
**Joychandro v. Bhyrub**, 103  
**Joy Chundro v. Bhyrub Chundro**, 153  
— **Deb Surmah v. Huroputty**, 398  
— **Narain v. Grish Chunder**, 454  
**Joymonee v. Sibosoondry**, 132, 138, 142  
**Joymooruth v. Buldeo**, 600  
**Joytara v. Ramhari**, 424  
**Judah v. Judah**, 395  
**Judoonath v. Bishonath**, 437, 438  
— **v. Bussunt Coomar**, 80, 612, 615, 620, 625, 626  
**Jugdeep v. Deendial**, 290, 296A, 329, 340  
**Jugjeevun v. Deosankur**, 393, 542, 586  
**Jugomohan v. Sarodamoyee**, 439  
**Juggernath v. Odhiranee**, 420  
**Juggessur v. Roodro**, 397  
**Juggodumba v. Haran**, 274  
**Juggomohun v. Neemo**, 347  
— **v. Sauncoomar**, 44  
**Juggurnath v. Doobo**, 320

- Juggutmohini v. Mt. Sokheemoney**, 395, 399  
**Jugmohundas v. Munguldas**, 251, 252, 263, 269, 318, 429, 430  
**Jugol Kishore v. Jotindro**, 296, 596  
**Jullessur v. Ugger Roy**, 493  
**Jumona v. Bamasoonderai**, 100, 146, 599, 603, 605  
**Junaruddeen v. Nobin Chunder**, 46  
**Jungee Lall v. Sham Lall**, 197  
**Juswant v. Doolee**, 188  
**Jussoda v. Lallah Nettya**, 192  
**Juvav v. Jaki**, 318  
**Jye Koonwur v. Bhikari**, 553  
**Jymunee v. Ramjoy**, 488, 525  
  
**KACHAR v. Bai Ruthore**, 599  
**Kachu v. Kachoba**, 361  
**Kachwain v. Sarup Chand**, 425  
**Kadarsa v. Raviah**, 361  
**Kagal Ganpaya v. Manjappa**, 292  
**Kahandas, in re**, 402  
**Kaihav v. Roop Singh**, 321  
**Kaipreta v. Makkaivil**, 593  
**Kaithi v. Kulladas**, 80  
**Kaleechund v. Moore**, 591  
**Kalee v. Choitun**, 329  
     — **Chunder v. Sheep Chunder**, 94  
     — **Churn v. Bungshee**, 397  
     — **Pershad v. Bhoirabee**, 491  
     — **Sunkur v. Denendro**, 435  
**Kaleenath v. Doyal Kristo**, 404  
**Kali v. Dhununjoy**, 446  
**Kalian v. Sanival**, 388  
     — **Singh v. Sanwal Singh**, 604  
**Kalichandra v. Raj Kishore**, 274  
**Kalidas v. Kanhya Lall**, 352, 359, 365  
     — **v. Krishan**, 431, 443, 458, 555  
     — **v. Nathu Bhagvan**, 274  
**Kalka v. Budree**, 444, 553  
**Kaliparshad v. Ramcharan**, 430  
**Kallati v. Palat**, 217  
**Kallapa v. Venkatesh**, 329  
**Kalliyani v. Narayana**, 326, 353, 593  
**Kally Churn v. Dukhee**, 87, 90  
     — **Doss v. Gobind**, 403  
**Kally Prosonno v. Gocool Chunder**, 172, 179, 181  
**Kalova v. Padapa**, 603  
**Kalu v. Kashibai**, 411  
**Kamakshi v. Chidambara**, 435  
     — **v. Nagarathnam**, 52  
**Kamala v. Pitchacooty**, 359  
**Kamalam v. Sadagopa**, 52  
**Kamaraju v. Secretary of State**, 197  
**Kamavadhani v. Joysa**, 579, 588, 600  
**Kameswar v. Run Bahadoor**, 320, 588, 593  
**Kamikhaprasad v. Jagadamba**, 576, 606  
**Kamini Dossee v. Chandra Pode**, 409  
**Kanahi v. Biddya**, 86, 192  
**Kanakamma v. Venkataratnam**, 303  
**Kanakasabhaiya v. Seshachala**, 331  
**Kandasani v. Akkammal**, 599  
     — **v. Doraisami**, 451, 452  
**Kanhya v. Radha Churn**, 146  
**Kanno Pishardi v. Kombi Achen**, 349  
**Kannan v. Nilakanden**, 398  
**Kanth Narain v. Prem Lall**, 340  
**Kannkurty v. Venkataramdass**, 332, 340  
**Karmali v. Rahimbhoy**, 197  
**Karnathaka Hanamantha v. Hanumayya**, 306  
**Karsandas v. Ladkavahu**, 107, 168  
**Karuna v. Jai Chandra**, 491, 536  
**Karunabddhi v. Ratnamaiyar**, 114, 117  
**Karuppa v. Alagu**, 578  
**Karrappan v. Veriyal**, 280, 282  
**Kasale v. Palaniayi**, 377  
**Kasee Dhoollabh v. Rutton Bae**, 89  
**Kaseram v. Umbaram**, 89  
**Kashee v. Gour Kishore**, 613  
     — **v. Mohun v. Raj Gobind**, 463, 466, 492, 498, 536, 539  
**Kasheepershad v. Bunseedhur**, 159  
**Kashibai v. Tatia**, 131, 136  
**Kasi v. Buchireddi**, 280  
**Kassee v. Goluckchunder**, 465  
**Kastur v. Appa**, 286  
**Kasturbai v. Shivajiram**, 415  
**Katama Natchiar v. Rajah of Shiva-gunga**, 146, 255, 262, 426, 428, 459, 485, 487, 605

- Katohekaleyana v. Kachivijaya**, 416  
**Kateeran v. Mt. Gendhenee**, 91  
**Kathaperumal v. Venkabai**, 469, 510  
**Kattama Nachiar v. Dorasinga Tevar**,  
 89, 340, 515, 516, 519, 566, 567, 601,  
 608  
**Kattusheri v. Vallotil**, 210  
**Keernt v. Koolahnl**, 567  
**Kennell v. Abbott**, 169  
**Kerutnaraen v. Mt. Bhobinesree**, 129  
**Kery Kolutany v. Moneeram**, 32, 105,  
 408, 511, 512, 513, 549, 561, 579  
**Kesabram v. Nand Kishore**, 451, 524  
**Kesava v. Unikkanda**, 408  
**Keshav Ramakristna v. Govind Ganesh**,  
 104, 176  
**Keshoor v. Mt. Ramkoonwar**, 393  
**Keshow Rao v. Naro**, 80, 279  
**Keshub v. Vyasmonnee**, 404  
**Kesserbai v. Valab**, 489, 522, 541  
**Kesub v. Bishnopersand**, 454, 491  
**Keval Bhagvan v. Ganpati**, 280  
**Khatu v. Madhram**, 363  
**Khemkor v. Umiashankar**, 52, 408  
**Kherodemoney v. Doorganoney**, 354  
**Khetramani v. Kashinath**, 408, 410  
**Khettur v. Poorno**, 467, 498  
 — **Chunder v. Hari Das**, 399  
**Khodabai v. Bahdar**, 521  
**Khojah's case**, 47, 55  
**Khodeeram v. Rookhinee**, 546  
**Khooshal v. Bhugwan Motee**, 91  
**Khudiram v. Bonwari**, 192  
**Khuggender v. Sharupgir**, 546  
**Khursadji v. Pestonji**, 353  
**Khushal Chand v. Bai Mani**, 81, 81A  
 — **v. Mahadevgiri**, 395, 397  
**Khushali v. Rani**, 512  
**Khwahish v. Surju**, 191  
**Kirpal Narain v. Suknrmoni**, 504  
**Kisensingh v. Moreshvar**, 324  
**Kishen v. Tarini**, 536  
**Kishenath v. Hurreegobind**, 153  
**Kishenmunee v. Oodwunt**, 181  
**Kishnee v. Khealee**, 600  
**Kishoree v. Chummun**, 266  
**Kishori v. Moni Mohn**, 437  
**Kishto Soondery v. Kishto Motee**, 352  
**Kishundass v. Keshow Wulnd**, 304  
**Kissen v. Javallah**, 463, 466, 493, 534  
**Kistnomonee v. Collector of Moor-**  
**shedabad**, 146  
**Kisto Moyee v. Prosunno**, 595  
**Koduthi v. Madu**, 512  
**Koer Hasmat v. Soonder Dasa**, 286,  
 342, 353  
**Koernarain v. Dhormidhur**, 428  
**Kojiyadu v. Lakshmi**, 513, 522  
**Kokilmoni v. Manick Chandra**, 605  
**Koldeep v. Runjeet**, 324  
**Kollany v. Luchmee**, 388, 540, 584  
**Kollury Nagabhushanam v. Ammanna**,  
 363  
**Komala v. Gangadhera**, 318  
**Kombi v. Lakshmi**, 324, 326  
**Kondappa v. Subba**, 587  
**Kondayya v. Guruvappa**, 363  
**Kondi Menon v. Sranginreagatta**, 593  
**Konerrav v. Gurrav**, 429  
**Konwur v. Ram Chunder**, 344  
 — **v. Ramchunder**, 397  
**Kooer Goolah v. Rao Kurun**, 493, 533,  
 550, 592, 599  
 — **Odey v. Phool Chund**, 581  
**Kooldebharain v. Mt. Wooma**, 389  
**Kooldeep v. Rajbunsee**, 192  
**Koomarasawmy v. Ragava**, 201  
**Koonjbehari v. Premchand**, 617  
**Koonjee v. Jankee**, 404  
**Koonwaree v. Damoodhur**, 491  
**Koonwur v. Shama Soonduree**, 329  
**Koopookonan v. Chinnayan**, 306  
**Koraga v. Reg**, 52  
**Kora Shunko v. Bebee Munnee**, 123  
**Koroonamoyee v. Gobindnath**, 600  
**Koshul v. Radhanath**, 260, 264  
**Kotarbasapa v. Chanverova**, 617  
**Kotomarti v. Vardhanamma**, 603  
**Kotta Ramasami v. Bangari**, 262  
**Kottala v. Shangara**, 281  
**Kounla v. Ram Huree**, 348  
 — **Kant v. Ram Huree**, 396  
**Koyiloth v. Puthenpurayil**, 593  
**Kripa Sindhu v. Kanhaya**, 264

- Krishna v. Rayappa, 365  
   — v. Sami, 430, 443, 458, 557  
   — v. Subbanna, 429  
   — Kinkur v. Panchuram, 392  
   — — v. Rai Mohun, 392  
 Krishnaji v. Govind, 362  
   — v. Pandurang, 26, 28, 523  
   — Lakshman v. Vithal Ravji, 298  
   — Mahadev v. Moro Mahadev, 260  
 Krishnamma v. Papa, 504  
   — v. Perumal, 287, 300  
 Krishanath v. Atmaram, 354A  
 Krishnaram v. Mt. Bheekce, 570  
 Krishnaramani v. Ananda, 357, 361, 367, 384, 386, 387, 395  
 Krishnavrav v. Govind, 274  
 Krishnaya v. Chinnaya, 281  
   — v. Pichamma, 520  
 Krishnayan v. Muttusami, 504, 508  
 Kristna v. Balarama, 359  
 Kristnappa v. Ramasawmy, 251, 267, 454  
 Kristniengar v. Vanamamalay, 123  
 Kristo Gobind v. Hem Chunder, 595  
 Kristoromoney v. Narendro, 382, 385  
 Kundoomee v. Joteeram, 87  
 Kullammal v. Kuppu, 531, 615  
 Kullar v. Modho Dhyal, 321  
 Kullean v. Kirpa, 190  
 Kullyanessuree v. Dwarkanath, 414  
 Kumara v. Srinivasa, 401  
 Kumaran v. Narayan, 73, 75  
 Kumar Tarakeswar v. Shoshi, 354, 382, 385, 387  
 Kumara Asima v. Kumara Krishna, 384, 385, 386, 387, 388, 395  
 Kumarasami v. Ramalinga, 398  
 Kumaravelu v. Virana, 497, 522  
 Kumla Baboo v. Muneeshunkur, 81  
   — v. Gooroo, 347  
 Kumulmoney v. Bodhnarain, 375, 419  
 Kumurooddeen v. Shaikh Bhadho, 196, 360  
 Kundoojee v. Ballajee, 362  
 Kunhammata v. Kunhi Kutti, 408  
 Kanria v. Mahilal, 617  
 Kunhya v. Bukhtawar, 280  
 Kunigaratu v. Arrangaden, 220, 275  
 Kuppa v. Dorasami, 398  
   — v. Singaravelu, 498, 505  
 Kupurchund v. Dadabhoy, 303  
 Kupoor v. Sevukram, 393, 586  
 Kureem v. Oodung, 527  
 Kurreemonissa v. Mohabut, 407  
 Kuta Bully v. Kuta Chudappa, 476  
 Kutti v. Radakristna, 494, 496, 567  
 Kuvarji v. Mote Haridas, 196  
 Kylash v. Gooroo, 524, 525  
 LACHCHANNA v. Bapanamma, 419  
 Lachman v. Rupchand, 191  
   — v. Akbar, 47  
   — v. Lanwall, 452  
   — v. Patniram, 407  
 Lachmin v. Koteswar, 349  
 Lakhi v. Bhairab, 458, 522, 536, 551  
 Lakhmi v. Tori, 349  
 Lakmi Chand v. Gatto Bai, 118, 124, 144  
 Lakshmana Rau, v. Lakshmi, 180, 181  
 Lakshmanammal v. Tiruvengada, 497, 532  
 Lakshman v. Dipchand, 363  
   — v. Jannabai, 260, 267  
   — v. Ramchandra, 252, 310, 335, 380, 426, 429, 447  
   — v. Sarasvatibai, 304, 419, 422  
   — v. Satyabhambai, 286, 419, 420, 422, 437, 486, 587  
   — Bhau v. Radhabai, 181, 589  
   — Venkatesh v. Kashinath, 308  
 Lakshmandas v. Dasrat, 361, 362  
 Lakshmappa v. Ramappa, 120, 130, 136, 144A, 163  
 Lakshmi v. Subramanya, 180  
   — v. Tulsi, 551  
 Lakshmibai v. Bapuji, 417  
   — v. Ganpat Moroba, 252, 388, 451, 453, 519, 567, 598  
   — v. Hirabai, 388, 585



- Lakshuibai v. Jayram**, 501, 488, 541  
 — **v. Shridar**, 192  
**Lakshminarayana v. Dasu**, 586  
**Lakshmy v. Narasimha**, 358, 452  
**Lala v. Hira**, 47  
 — **Biswambhar v. Rajaram**, 275  
 — **Joti v. Mt. Durani**, 522  
 — **Parbhu Lal v. Mylne**, 101, 148, 150, 296, 590  
 — **Amarnath v. Achan Kuar**, 320, 589  
 — **Muddun Gopal v. Khikhinda Koer**, 254, 547  
**Lal Das v. Nekunjo**, 195  
 — **Singh v. Deo Narain**, 286, 323  
**Laljee v. Fakeer**, 286  
**Laljeet v. Rajcoomar**, 430, 437, 452  
**Lallu Bhagvan v. Tribhuvan Motiram**, 280  
 — **Banseedhur v. Koonwur Bindeseree**, 196, 323  
 — **Byjnath v. Bissen**, 588, 589  
 — **Chuttur v. Mt. Wooma**, 604  
 — **Futteh v. Mt. Pranputtee**, 558, 604  
 — **Gobind v. Dowlut**, 414  
 — **Gunput v. Mt. Tooran**, 543, 587  
 — **Mohabeer v. Mt. Kundun**, 44  
**Lallah Rawuth v. Chadee**, 196  
**Lallubhai v. Cassibai**, 472, 476, 488, 541, 569  
 — **v. Mankuvarbai**, 28, 388, 392, 462, 468, 469, 472, 476, 480, 488, 490, 492, 541, 569  
**Lall Jah v. Juma**, 329  
 — **v. Shaikh Juma**, 442  
**Lalti Kuar v. Ganga**, 311, 337, 340, 409  
**Lalubhai v. Bai Amrit**, 361  
**Lamb v. Mt. Govindmoney**, 581  
**Leake v. Robinson**, 354  
**Lekhraj v. Kunhya**, 335, 365  
**Lekraj Kuar v. Mahpal Singh**, 42  
 — **v. Mahtab**, 197  
**Lelanund v. Government of Bengal**, 428  
**Limji v. Bapaji**, 395  
**Lochun v. Nemdbaree**, 251  
**Lodhoomona v. Gunneschunder**, 600  
**Lokenath v. Shamasoonduree**, 153  
**Lookhee v. Kalypuddo**, 402  
**Loki v. Aghoree**, 324  
**Lootfulbuck v. Gopee**, 274  
**Luchmi v. Asman**, 279, 324  
**Luchmun v. Kalli Churn**, 403, 613, 615  
 — **v. Giridhur**, 286  
 — **v. Mohun**, 143, 186  
 — **Dass v. Giridhur Chowdhry**, 299  
**Luckhee v. Taramonee**, 404  
**Luggah v. Trimbuck**, 304  
**Lukhee v. Gokool**, 388, 586, 591, 594, 599  
**Lukmee v. Umurchund**, 192  
**Lukmeeram v. Khooshalee**, 586  
**Lulleet v. Sreedhur**, 606  
**Lulloobhoy v. Cassibai**, 472, 476, 488, 541, 569  
**Lutchmana Row v. Terimul Row**, 262, 452  
**Lutchmee v. Rookmanee**, 399  
**Luximon Row v. Mullar Row**, 265, 267  
  
**MACCUNDAS v. Ganpatrao**, 452  
**Macdonald v. Lalla Shib**, 348  
**Madan Mohun v. Puran Mull**, 592  
**Madari v. Malki**, 599  
**Madar Sahib v. Subbarayulu**, 363  
**Madavarayya v. Tritha Sami**, 616  
**Madha Sookh v. Budree**, 318  
**Madhavray Manohar v. Atmarain**, 254, 428  
 — **v. Gangabai**, 414  
 — **v. Balkrishna**, 51  
**Madho v. Kamta**, 398  
 — **Pershad v. Mehrban Singh**, 338, 339  
**Madhowrao v. Ynsawuda**, 437  
**Madhub Chunder v. Bamasoondree**, 350  
 — **v. Gobind**, 591  
**Mahabalaya v. Timaya**, 329  
**Mahabeer Persad v. Ranyad**, 338, 437  
**Mahabir Pershad v. Moheswar Nath**, 293, 299  
 — **Prasad v. Basdeo Sing**, 279, 300  
**Mahadaji v. Vittil Ballal**, 405

- Mahalakshamma v. Venkataratnam-**  
**ma, 421**  
**Mahalinga v. Mariammah, 476**  
**Mahamed Arif v. Saraswati Debya, 197**  
**Maharajulungaru v. Rajah Row Pan-**  
**tal, 262**  
**Maharani v. Nanda Lal, 600**  
**Mahashoya Shosinath v. Srimati**  
**Krishna, 141, 143, 144**  
**Mahatab v. Mirdad, 397**  
**Mahoda v. Kuleani, 529**  
**Mahomed v. Hosseini Bibi, 352, 359**  
**— v. Krishnan, 599**  
**— Sidick v. Haji Ahmed, 55**  
**Makbul v. Srimati Masnad, 196**  
**Makundi v. Surabsukh, 323, 341**  
**Mammali v. Pakki, 220**  
**Manahar Das v. Manzar Ali, 274**  
**Man Bae v. Krishnee, 379**  
**Mancharam v. Pranshanker, 398**  
**Mancharji v. Kongseoo, 403**  
**Mangala v. Dinanath, 236, 423**  
**Mangaldas v. Krishnabai, 386**  
**— v. Ranchhodas, 387**  
**— v. Tribhoovandas, 356**  
**Manik Chand v. Jagat Settani, 45,**  
**104A, 119, 138, 461**  
**Manickchunder v. Bhuggobutty, 138**  
**Manikmulla v. Parbuttee, 181**  
**Manishankar v. Bai Muli, 196**  
**Manjamma v. Padmanabhayya, 356**  
**Manjanatha v. Narayana, 432**  
**Manji Ram v. Tara Singh, 196**  
**Manjunadhaya v. Tangamma, 352**  
**Mankoonwur Bhugoo, 485**  
**Manning v. Gill, 405**  
**Manohur Ganesh v. Lakhmiram, 396**  
**Mari v. Chinnammal, 522**  
**Maruti Narayan v. Lilachand, 290, 308,**  
**324, 329**  
**Mata v. Bhageeruthee, 589**  
**Matangini v. Jaykali, 549**  
**— Gupta v. Ram Rutton Roy,**  
**512**  
**Mathammal v. Kamakshi, 414**  
**Mathura v. Esu, 47, 52, 183, 406, 441**  
**Mayna Bai v. Uttaram, 508**
- Mayor of Lyons v. Advocate-General**  
**of Bengal, 399**  
**Meenatchee v. Chetumbra, 260, 318**  
**437, 448**  
**Meenakshi Naidoo v. Immudikanaka,**  
**289, 292, 299**  
**Mehdee v. Anjud, 275**  
**Melaram v. Thanooram, 85**  
**Melgirappa v. Shivapa, 587, 588**  
**Mirangi Zamindar v. Satrucharla, 51**  
**Meyajee v. Metha, 353**  
**Mehirwanjee v. Poonjea, 553**  
**Miller v. Runganath, 319**  
**Minakshi v. Ramanada, 123**  
**— v. Virappa, 316**  
**Mirali Rahimbhoy v. Rehmoobhoy, 197**  
**Mirza Jehan v. Badshoo Bahoo, 262**  
**— v. Nawab Afsur Bahu,**  
**262**  
**— Pana v. Saiad Sadik, 196**  
**Mitta Kunth v. Neerunjan, 398**  
**Mittibhayi v. Kottekorati, 195**  
**Modhoo v. Kolbur, 341, 245**  
**— Dyal v. Kolbur, 319**  
**Modhoosoodhun v. Jadub Chunder,**  
**81A**  
**— v. Prithee Bullub, 197**  
**Modun Mohun v. Futturunnissa, 360**  
**Mohabeer Kooer v. Joobah, 252, 320**  
**Mohadeay v. Harnknarain, 438, 578**  
**Mohandas v. Krishnabai, 465, 535,**  
**541**  
**Mohendro Lall v. Rookinny, 103**  
**Mohesh v. Chunder Mohun, 550**  
**— v. Koylash, 399**  
**— v. Ugra, 593**  
**Mohima v. Ram Kishore, 584, 595**  
**Mohun v. Chumun, 503**  
**— v. Lutchmun, 399**  
**— v. Siroomunee, 591**  
**— Geer v. Mt. Jota, 415**  
**— Singh v. Chaman Rai, 75**  
**Mohunt v. Busgeet, 591**  
**— Burm v. Khashee, 397**  
**— Gopal v. Kerparam, 398**  
**— Kishen v. Hurdeal, 589**  
**Mokoondo v. Gonesh, 387, 445**



- Mokrund Deb v. Ranee Bissessuree, 192
- Mokundo v. Bykunt, 153
- Mondakini v. Adinath, 105, 106, 172
- Monee Mohun v. Dhun Monee, 488
- Mongooney v. Goorooopersad, 196
- Moniram v. Kerry Kolutany, 414
- Mon Mohinee v. Baluck, 412
- Moodookrishna v. Tandavaroy, 192
- Mookta Keshee v. Oomabutty, 454
- Moolobund v. Krishna, 279
- Moolji v. Lilla Gokuldas, 267
- Moonea v. Dhurma, 531
- Moore, re, 350
- Moothia v. Uppen, 123
- Mootoopermall v. Tondaven, 201
- Mootoovizia Raghoonadha Satooputty v. Sevagamy Nachiar, 129
- Moottia Moodelly v. Uppen, 159
- Moottoo Coomarappa v. Hinno,\* 308
- Meenatchy v. Viloo, 398
- Moottoosamy v. Lutchmeedavummah, 120, 123
- Moottoovencata v. Munarsawmy, 428
- Moottoovengada v. Toombayasamy, 372, 428, 432
- Moreswar v. Dattu, 363
- Moro Vishvanath v. Ganesh, 244, 248, 430, 452
- Morrison, re, 169
- Morun Moe v. Bejoy, 123, 154
- Motee Lall v. Bhoop Singh, 603
- v. Mitterjeet, 311, 347
- Mothoormohun v. Surendro, 191
- Moulvi Muhammed v. Mt. Fatima Bibi, 365
- Moulvie Mahomed v. Shewukram, 584
- Sayyud v. Mt. Bebee, 401
- Mrinamoyi v. Jogodishuri, 197
- Mriumoyee v. Bhoobunmoyee, 603
- Mt. Battas v. Lachman Singh, 125
- Bhugobutty v. Chowdhry Bhola-nath, 180
- Dullabh v. Manu, 129, 138
- Para Mune v. Dev Narayun, 101, 120, 180
- Pearee v. Mt. Hurbunsee, 100, 107
- Mt. Roopna v. Ray Restee, 337
- Ruliyat v. Madhowjee, 81
- Solukna v. Ramdolal, 97, 102, 458, 519
- Subudra v. Goluknath, 107
- Sundar v. Mt. Parbati, 510, 578
- Thakoor v. Rai Baluk Ram, 80, 567, 597
- Thakro v. Ganga Pershad, 401
- Muckleston v. Brown, 405
- Muddun Gopal v. Mt. Gowurbutty, 442
- v. Mt. Gowrunbutty, 286
- v. Ram Buksh, 252, 257, 318, 341, 345
- Muddun Thakoor v. Kantoo Lall, see Girdharee Lall v. Kantoo Lall
- Thakoor v. Kantoo Lall, 288, 296, 296A, 297, 324
- Mudhoobun v. Huri, 546
- Muhalukmee v. Kripashookul, 393, 488
- Mubashankur v. Mt. Oottum, 87, 89
- Muhtaboo v. Gunesh, 192
- Mujavar v. Hussain, 398
- Mukkanni v. Manan Bhatta, 350
- Mulbai, in the Goods of, 55
- Mulhana v. Alibeg, 363
- Mulji Baishanker v. Bai Ujam, 415
- Thakersey v. Gomti, 90
- Mulka Jahan v. Deputy Commissioner of Lucknow, 262
- Mulkah Do v. Mirza Jehan, 44
- Mullakkal v. Mada Chetty, 588
- Mulrauze Vencata v. Mulranze Lutch-miah, 371, 375
- v. Chellakany, 371, 375
- Mulraz v. Chalekany, 318, 375
- Munda Chetty v. Timmaju, 218 440, 476
- Mungniram v. Mohunt Gursahai, 191
- Munia v. Puran, 615
- Muniappa v. Kasturi, 201, 202
- Munnoo v. Gopee, 369
- Muppidi Papaya v. Ramaya, 313
- Murari v. Mukund Shivaji, 267, 454
- Murarji v. Parvatibai, 550, 552

- Murugayi v. Viramakali**, 89, 512  
**Musaden v. Meerza**, 402  
**Muteecollah v. Radhabinode**, 588, 589, 591, 593  
**Muthoora v. Bootun**, 300, 301, 286, 320, 321  
**Muthu Vaduganadha v. Dorasinga Tevar**, 263  
**Muttammal v. Kamakshy**, 408  
 — **v. Vengalakshmi**, 522  
**Muttayan Chetti v. Sangili**, 251, 257, 279, 282, 284  
**Mutteeram v. Gopaul**, 344, 586, 606  
**Muttia v. Virammal**, 420  
**Muttu v. Annavaiyangar**, 377  
**Muttukannu v. Paramasami**, 52, 183  
 — **Ramalinga v. Perianayagum**, 398  
 — **Vaduganadha v. Dorasinga Tevar**, 51, 519, 568  
 — **Tizia v. Dorasinga Tevar**, 11  
**Muttumaram v. Lakshmi**, 311, 318  
**Muttusamy v. Venkatasubha**, 408, 504  
**Muttusawmy v. Vencataswara**, 416  
**Muttusvami v. Subbiramaniya**, 274, 429  
**Myna Boyee v. Ootaram**, 49, 57, 508
- NABAKUMAR v. Bhabasundari**, 589  
**Nagabhushanam v. Seshamma**, 98  
**Nagalinga v. Vellusamy**, 430  
 — **v. Subbiramaniya**, 430  
**Nagalutchmee v. Gopoo**, 317, 318, 369, 375  
**Nagalutchmy v. Nadaraja**, 373, 377, 378  
**Nagappa v. Subba Sastry**, 98  
**Naginbhai v. Abdulla**, 401  
**Nahalchand v. Bai Shiva**, 615  
 — **v. Hemchand**, 488, 541  
**Naigalinga v. Vaidilinga**, 531  
**Naikram v. Soorjubuns**, 599  
**Najban v. Chand Bibi**, 425  
**Nallanna v. Pounal**, 497  
**Nallatambi v. Mukunda**, 310  
**Nalliappa v. Ibrahim**, 363  
**Namasevayam v. Annamal**, 81  
**Nam Narain v. Ramoon**, 400  
**Nanabhai v. Achratbai**, 251, 252
- Nanabhai v. Janardhan**, 81  
 — **v. Shriman Goswami**, 398  
**Nanack v. Teluckdye**, 362  
**Nana Nurain v. Huree Panth**, 318  
 — **Tooljaram v. Wulubdas**, 329  
**Nandkumar v. Radha Kuari**, 605  
**Nanhak v. Jaimangal**, 324  
**Nani Dibee v. Hafizullah**, 363  
**Nanomi Babuasin v. Modhun Mohun**, 252, 293, 296, 299  
**Naraganti v. Venkatachulapati**, 263, 499, 500  
**Naragunty v. Vengama**, 265  
**Narain v. Brindabun**, 398  
 — **v. Lokenath**, 314, 317  
**Narainah v. Savoobhady**, 180  
**Narain Chunder v. Dataram**, 360, 363  
 — **Dhara v. Rakhal**, 85, 504  
 — **Mal v. Kooer Narain**, 181  
**Narainee v. Hurkishor**, 522  
**Naraini Kuar v. Chandi Din**, 471  
**Narasammal v. Balaramacharu**, 33, 46, 123  
**Narasanna v. Gangu**, 508  
 — **v. Gurappa**, 293  
**Narasimha v. Venkatadri**, 598  
**Narasimharav. v. Antaji**, 280  
**Narasimma v. Anantha**, 398  
 — **v. Mangammal**, 497  
**Narasimulu v. Somanna**, 363  
**Narayan v. Chintaman**, 397  
 — **v. Govinda**, 220  
 — **v. Krishna**, 401  
 — **v. Lakshmi**, 451, 422, 487  
 — **v. Laving**, 52  
 — **v. Nann Manohur**, 118, 144b, 452  
 — **v. Pandurang**, 452  
 — **v. Vasudeo**, 428  
**Narayana v. Chengalamma**, 262  
 — **v. Narso**, 286  
 — **v. Ranga**, 398  
 — **v. Rayappa**, 307  
 — **v. Vedachala**, 98  
**Narayanasami v. Kuppasami**, 120, 135  
 — **v. Ramasami**, 180  
 — **v. Samidas**, 279

- Narayanan v. Kannen**, 353  
**Narbadabai v. Mahadev**, 416, 424  
**Narhar Govind v. Narayan**, 122  
**Narotam v. Nanka**, 615  
**Narottam v. Narsandas**, 347, 318, 379  
 380  
**Narraina v. Veeraraghava**, 454  
**Narrainsamy v. Arnachella**, 371  
**Narsappa v. Sakharan**, 567  
**Narsinbhat v. Chenapa**, 306  
**Narsimha v. Ramchendra**, 451  
**Nasir v. Mata**, 353  
**Natchiarammal v. Gopalakrishna**, 422  
**Natesvayyan v. Narasimmayyar**, 197  
**Natha v. Jamni**, 596, 605  
**Nathaji v. Hari**, 130  
**Nathibai, in the Goods of**, 78, 80  
**Nathu v. Chadi**, 338, 344  
**Nathuni v. Manraj**, 274  
**Nathuram v. Shoma Chhagon**, 196  
**Navalram v. Nandkishor**, 531, 570, 573  
**Nawab v. Bhugwan**, 431  
 — **v. Syud Ashrufooddeen v. Mt. Shama Soonderee**, 196  
**Neelkaant v. Anundmoyee**, 100  
 — **v. Munee**, 447  
**Neelkisto Deb v. Beerchunder**, 51, 262, 265, 454, 459, 499, 523  
**Nehalo v. Kishen**, 511  
**Nellaikumar v. Marakathammal**, 584  
**Nhanee v. Hureeram**, 279  
**Nidhee v. Bisso**, 403  
**Nidhoomani v. Saroda Pershad**, 167  
**Nilakunden v. Madhavan**, 278  
**Nilamani v. Radhamani**, 509, 510  
**Nilmadhub v. Bishumber**, 132, 138  
 — **v. Narattam**, 350  
**Nilmoney v. Baneshur**, 412  
**Nilmoni v. Bakranath**, 313  
 — **v. Umanath**, 392  
 — **v. Singh v. Bakranath**, 314  
**Nilmony v. Kally Churn**, 604  
 — **Singh v. Hingoo**, 417  
**Nimbalkar v. Jayavantrav**, 107, 130  
**Nirvanaya v. Nirvanaya**, 196  
**Nissar v. Kowar**, 508  
**Nistarini v. Makhanlal**, 420  
**Nitai Charan v. Ganga**, 387  
**Nitradayee v. Bholanath**, 129  
**Nittianand v. Krishna Dyal**, 142, 145  
**Nittokissoree v. Jogendro**, 415, 417  
**Nittyannund v. Shama Churn**, 360  
**Nitye v. Soondaree**, 414  
**Nobin Chunder v. Dokhobala**, 401  
**Nobinchunder v. Gurn Persad**, 605  
**Nobin Chunder v. Mohesh Chunder**, 275  
**Nobinkishory v. Gobind**, 603  
**Nobokishen v. Harinath**, 592  
**Noferdoss v. Modha**, 592  
**Nowbut v. Mt. Lad Kooer**, 90  
**Nowrutton v. Baboo Gouree**, 320  
**Nubkissen v. Harrishchunder**, 387, 398, 445  
**Nubkoomar v. Jye Deo**, 274  
**Nubokishen v. Kalleepersad**, 196  
**Nuddea, case of Zemindar of, see Esh-anchund v. Eshorchund**  
**Nufur v. Ram Koomar**, 567  
**Nugender Chunder v. Kaminee Dossee**, 290, 291, 589, 595  
**Nund Coomar Lall v. Ruzziooddeen**, 250, 251  
**Nundkomar v. Rughoonundun**, 591  
**Nundlal v. Bolakee**, 600  
 — **v. Tapeedas**, 80, 81  
**Nundram v. Kashee Pande**, 138, 337  
**Nundun v. Tayler**, 403  
 — **v. Lloyd**, 274, 275  
**Nannu Meah v. Krishnasami**, 585  
**Nursing v. Mohunt**, 352  
 — **Das v. Narain Das**, 266  
**Nuthoo v. Chedee**, 338, 344  
**Nuzeerum v. Moulvie Ameeroodeen**, 596  
**Nuzvid, case of the Zemindary of**, 51  
**OBHOY v. Panchann**, 401, 408  
 — **Chunder v. Pearee**, 270, 271, 273  
**Obhoychurn v. Gobind Chunder**, 267  
 — **Churn v. Treelochun**, 408  
**Obunnessurree v. Kishen**, 46

- Ojoodhya v. Ramsarun, 318**  
**Omrit v. Luckhee Narain, 459, 460**  
**Ondy Kadarun v. Aroonachella, 145**  
**Oodoy v. Dhunmonee, 604**  
**Oodoychurn's case, 537**  
**Ooman Dut v. Kunhia, 123, 186, 187**  
**Oorcad, case of the Zemindary of, 47**  
**Oorhyakooer v. Rajoo Nye, 527**  
**Oosulmoney v. Sagormoney, 599**  
**Opendur Lall v. Bromo Moyee, 138**
- PADABATH v. Rajaram, 338**  
**Padmaker Vinayek v. Mahadev Krishna, 197**  
**Padmamani v. Jagadamba, 452**  
**Padmavati, ex parte, 52**  
**Pahaladh v. Mt. Luchmunbutty, 451**  
**Paigi v. Sheonarrain, 91**  
**Pakhandu v. Manki, 91**  
**Palanivelappa v. Mannaru, 311, 332**  
**Palaniyappa v. Arumugam, 401**  
**Panchanadayen v. Nilakandayen, 428**  
**Panchcowrie v. Chumsoolall, 399**  
**Pandaiya Talaver v. Puli Talaver, 85, 504, 508**  
**Pandurang v. Bhasker, 329**  
**Param v. Lalji, 404**  
**Paran Chandra v. Karunamayi, 196**  
**Parasara v. Rangaraja, 111, 114, 117, 527**  
**Paras Ram v. Sherjit, 275**  
**Parbati v. Sundar, 123**  
**Pareshmani v. Dinanath, 550, 556**  
**Pareyasami v. Salukai Tevar, 304, 324**
- Parichat v. Zalim, 316**  
**Parmaya v. Sonde, 362**  
**Parmeshar Das v. Bela, 179**  
**Parooma v. Valayooda, 274**  
**Parvati v. Bhiku, 511**  
**— v. Kamaran, 408**  
**— v. Tirumalai, 452, 507**
- Patel Vandravan v. Manilal, 100, 116, 118, 168, 177**  
**Patil Hari v. Hakam Chand, 326, 329**  
**Patni Mal v. Ray Manohar, 452, 487**  
**Pattaravy v. Audimula, 452**
- Pauliem Valloo v. Pauliem Sooryah, 259, 310**  
**Peddammattu v. Appu Rau, 488**  
**Peddammattulaty v. N. Timma Reddy, 148, 332**  
**Pedda Ramappa v. Bangari, 499**  
**Pedru v. Domingo, 267**  
**Pearks v. Mosley, 354**  
**Peddaya v. Ramalinga, 220, 332**  
**Peet Koonwar v. Chuttur, 399**  
**Perhlad Sein v. Baboo Budhoo, 359**  
**Periasami v. Periasami, 391, 255, 426, 454, 487, 499**  
**Periya Gaundan v. Tirumala, 588**  
**Perkash Chunder v. Dhun Monnee, 142, 145**  
**Permaul Naicken v. Pottée Ammal, 131, 132, 135**  
**Permeswar v. Padmanand, 365**  
**Pershad v. Muesree, 503**  
**Pertab v. Chitpal Singh, 320**  
**— v. Subhao, 388**  
**— v. Narain v. Trilokinath, 605**
- Peru Nayar v. Ayyappan, 220**  
**Petambur v. Hurish Chunder, 451**  
**Pettachi Chetty v. Sangili Vira, 287, 295, 296A**  
**Phate v. Damodar, 395, 400**  
**Phoolbas Kooer v. Lall Juggessur, 274, 337, 340, 596**  
**— Koonwar v. Lalla Jogeshur 274, 339**
- Phoolchand v. Rughoobans, 344, 589, 606**  
**Phukar v. Ranjit, 567**  
**Phulchand v. Man Singh, 286**  
**Pichuvayyan v. Subbayyan, 129**  
**Pillari Setti v. Rama Lakshmama, 148**
- Pirthee Singh v. Mt. Sheo, 46**  
**— v. Rani Rajkooer, 415, 417**  
**Pirthi Pal v. Jewahir Singh, 262**  
**Pitam v. Ujagar, 251**  
**Platamone v. Staple, 405**  
**Poli v. Narotum, 514**  
**Ponambilath Kunhamod v. Ponambilath Kuttiath, 220**



- Ponnappa v. Poppuvayyengar**, 280,  
 282, 283, 284, 286, 287, 310, 320,  
 322  
**Ponnusami v. Dorasami**, 56  
 — **v. Thatha**, 332  
**Poonjea v. Prankoonwnr**, 570  
**Poovathay v. Peroomal**, 432  
**Pradamuthulaty v. Timma Reddy**, 384  
**Prag Das v. Hari Kishn**, 588  
**Pranjeevandas v. Dewcooverbaee**, 525,  
 567, 569, 570, 598  
**Pranjivan v. Bai Reva**, 513  
**Prankishen v. Mt. Bhagwutee**, 627  
 — **v. Mothooramohun**, 456  
**Prankissen v. Noyanmoney**, 615, 627  
**Prankrishna v. Biswambhar**, 360  
**Prankristo v. Bhagerutee**, 261, 267  
**Prannath v. Calishunkur**, 348  
 — **v. Surrut**, 463, 467  
**Pran Nath v. Rajah Govind**, 458  
**Pranputtee v. Mt. Poorn**, 604  
**Pranputty v. Lallah Futteh**, 601  
**Pranvullubh v. Deocristin**, 159, 280  
**Pratabnarayan v. Court of Wards**, 31  
**Prawnkissen v. Muttoosoondery**, 439  
**Premchand v. Hulashchand**, 412  
**Prithee Singh v. Court of Wards**, 46,  
 525  
**Promotho v. Radhika**, 381, 388, 395  
**Prosunno v. Barbosa**, 420  
**Prosunnomoyee v. Ramsoonder**, 180  
**Prosunno v. Golab**, 397  
 — **v. Tarrucknath**, 388, 617  
 — **v. Tripoora**, 604  
**Protap Narain v. Court of Wards**, 311  
**Pubitra v. Damoodur**, 584  
**Puddo Kumaree v. Juggutkishore**, 64,  
 104, 154, 174  
 — **Monee v. Dwarkanath**, 580, 581  
**Pudma Coomari v. Court of Wards**,  
 104, 153  
**Pudmanabiah v. Moonemmah**, 414  
**Pudmavatai v. Baboo Doolar**, 485  
**Pullen v. Ramalinga**, 406  
**Punchanun Mullick v. Sib Chunder**, 452  
**Punchanund v. Lalshan**, 525, 567  
**Panchoomaney v. Troyluckoo**, 388  
**Puran Dai v. Jai Narain**, 586  
**Purikheet v. Radha Kishen**, 404  
**Purmanund v. Oomakunt**, 103  
**Purmessur v. Mt. Goolbee**, 321  
**Pursid v. Honooman**, 286, 324, 437  
**Purtab Bahandnr v. Tilukdharee**, 264  
**Putanvital Teyan v. Putanvital Raga-**  
**van**, 408  
**R. v. Bezonji**, 198  
 — **v. Fletcher**, 195  
 — **v. Jaili**, 52  
 — **v. Karsan**, 52, 89  
 — **v. Manohar**, 52  
 — **v. Marimuttu**, 408  
 — **v. Nesbitt**, 194  
     **v. Sambhu**, 89  
**Rabutti v. Sibchunder**, 388, 580, 584  
**Rackhaldoss v. Bindoo**, 403  
**Radha v. Biseshur**, 613, 615  
 — **Bhurn v. Kripa**, 417, 267, 452  
 — **Kishen v. Bachhaman**, 324  
 — **Mohun v. Ram Dass**, 600  
 — **Pearee v. Doorga Monee**, 492  
 — **Proshad v. Esuf**, 274  
 — **Shyan v. Joy Ram**, 592  
**Radhabai v. Anantrav**, 313  
 — **v. Chinnaji**, 399  
 — **v. Ganesh**, 388  
 — **v. Nanarav**, 253  
**Radhabullubh v. Juggutchunder**, 397  
 — **Tagore v. Gopeemohun**  
     **Tagore**, 394  
**Radhamohun v. Girdhareelal**, 589  
**Radhamonee v. Jadubnarain**, 180  
**Radhi, re**, 592  
**Raghober v. Mt. Tulashee**, 567  
**Raghubanand v. Sadho Churn**, 156  
**Raghuber Dyal v. Bhikya Lal**, 197  
**Raghunadha v. Booze Kishoro**, 11, 95,  
 113, 145, 172, 557  
**Raghunath v. Gobind**, 393  
 — **v. Thakuri**, 599  
**Raghunundana v. Gopeenath**, 622  
**Ragunada v. Chinappa**, 398  
**Rahi v. Govind**, 89, 408, 504, 505, 506  
**Rahinatbai v. Hirbai**, 55

- Rahimbai, in the Goods of, 55  
 Rai Balkishen v. Sitaram, 307  
 — Balkrishna v. Mt. Masuma, 196  
 — Bishen Chand v. Asmaida Koer, 304, 355, 357  
 Raicharan v. Pyari Mani, 599  
 Rai Kishori v. Debendranath, 354A  
 — Narain v. Nownit, 329  
 — Nursingh v. Rai Narain, 261  
 — Sham Bullubh v. Prankishen, 488  
 Raja v. Subbaraya, 155  
 Rajagopal v. Muttupalem, 197  
 Rajah Row Boochee v. Vencata Neeladry, 414  
 — Vurmah v. Ravi Vurmah, 52, 398  
 Rajan v. Basuva Chetti, 148  
 Rajani Kanth v. Ram Nath, 442  
 Rajaram Tewary v. Luchmun, 274, 311, 316, 318, 340, 344  
 Raj Bahadur v. Achumbit Lal, 150  
 — v. Bishen Dyal, 13  
 — Ballubh v. Oomesh, 591  
 Rajbulubh v. Mt. Buneta, 348  
 Rajchunder v. Goculchund, 46, 531, 536  
 — v. Mt. Dhunmunee, 514  
 — v. Sheeshoo, 586  
 — v. Bulloram, 587  
 Raj Coomar v. Bissessur, 124  
 Rajcoomaree v. Gopal, 427  
 Rajender v. Sham Chund, 386, 387, 445  
 Rajendro Narain v. Saroda, 100, 145  
 — Nath v. Jogendro Nath, 145, 147, 148,  
 — v. Shama Churn, 275  
 Rajkishen v. Ramjoy, 50  
 Rajkishore v. Gobind, 542  
 — v. Gobind Chunder, 524  
 Raj Kishore v. Hurrosoondery, 488  
 Rajkoonwaree v. Golabee, 511  
 Rajkristo v. Kishoree, 146, 181, 591  
 Rajnarain v. Heeralal, 246  
 — v. Jugunnath, 404  
 Rajo Nimbalkar v. Jayavantrav, 130, 136  
 Bakhal v. Mahtab, 274  
 Rakhmabai v. Radhabai, 105, 117, 171, 177  
 Rama v. Runga, 586  
 Ram Antar v. Danauri, 363  
 Ramabai v. Trimbak, 409, 413, 417  
 Ramakrishna v. Sabbakka 190A  
 Ramakutti v. Kallaturaiayan, 331  
 Ramalakshmi v. Sivananthai, 47, 499  
 Ramalinga v. Sadasiva, 123  
 Ramamani v. Kulanthai, 85  
 Ramanaden v. Rangammal, 423  
 Ramanand v. Gobind Singh, 337  
 Ramangavda v. Shivaji, 82  
 Ramanna v. Venkata, 252, 332  
 Ramanooja v. Peetayen, 201  
 Ramanugra v. Mahasundur, 402  
 Ramanuja v. Virappa, 274  
 Ramanund v. Raghunath, 262  
 — v. Ramkissen, 393, 588, 591  
 Ramanurga v. Mahasundur, 404  
 Ramappa v. Sithammal, 509  
 Ramaraja v. Arunachella, 361  
 Rama Rau v. Raja Rau, 148  
 Ramasami v. Marimuttu, 359  
 — v. Sellattammal, 590  
 — v. Virasami, 613  
 Ramasamy v. Sashachella, 331  
 Ramasashien v. Akylandummal, 598  
 Ramasawmi v. Vencataramaiyan, 180  
 Ramaseshaiya v. Bhagavat, 253  
 Ramaswami Iyen v. Bhagaty Ammal, 112, 129  
 Rama Varma v. Ramen Nair, 398  
 Rambhat v. Lakshman, 181, 317  
 Rambromo v. Kamiee, 46  
 Ram Bunsee v. Soobh Koonwaree, 81, 192  
 Ramchandra v. Bhimrav, 588, 589  
 — v. Brojonath, 192  
 — v. Krishna, 363  
 — v. Mahadev, 310, 426, 430  
 — v. Nanaji, 122  
 — v. Sagunabai, 415  
 — v. Sakharam, 412  
 — v. Savitribai, 420  
 — v. Venkatrao, 865, 428  
 Ramchunder v. Haridas, 593

- Ramchurn v. Nunhoo*, 587  
*Ram Churn v. Mungul*, 197  
*Ramcoomar v. Ichamoyi*, 410, 586, 590  
— *v. McQueen*, 361, 403  
*Ram Coomar v. Jogender*, 397  
*Ramdan v. Beharee*, 519  
*Ramdebul v. Mitterjeet*, 275  
*Ram Debul v. Mitterjeet*, 348  
*Ramdhun v. Kishenkanth*, 519  
*Kamadhin v. Mathura Singh*, 591  
*Ramdolal v. Joymoney*, 615, 616  
*Ramguttee v. Kristo*, 386  
*Ramien v. Conduumal*, 413  
*Ramindur v. Roopnarain*, 404  
*Ramji v. Ghaman*, 118, 177  
*Ramjoy v. Tarrachund*, 520  
*Ramkishen v. Mt. Sri Mutee*, 171  
— *v. Mt. Strimuttee*, 106, 181, 317  
*Ramkishor v. Bhoobun*, 129, 347  
*Ramkishore v. Kallykantoo*, 596  
*Ramkoomar v. Kishenkunker*, 347  
*Ramkunhaee v. Bung Chund*, 348  
*Ram Kannye v. Meernomoyee*, 509  
— *Khelawan v. Mt. Oudh*, 360  
— *Kissen v. Sheouundun*, 454  
— *Kumari, re*, 85  
— *Koonwar v. Ummur*, 488  
— *Lal v. Secretary of State*, 365, 382  
— *Lall Sett v. Kanai Lall*, 356, 388  
— *Lall v. Debi Dat*, 454  
— *v. Kishen*, 404  
— *Lochun v. Runghoobur*, 452  
*Ramlinga v. Virupakshi*, 445  
*Ramnad Case*, see *Collector of Madura v. Mootoo Ramalinga*  
*Ramnath v. Durga*, 513, 523  
*Ram Narain v. Bhawani*, 324  
— *Singh v. Pertum Singh*, 244, 247, 251  
— *Narayun v. Mt. Sut Bunsee*, 350  
— *Nirunjun v. Prayag*, 447  
*Rampershad v. Chaineram*, 576  
— *v. Jhokoo Roy*, 604  
— *v. Sheochurn*, 253, 254, 265, 485  
*Rampertab v. Gopeekishen*, 303  
*Ram Pershad v. Mt. Nagbungshee*, 594  
*Ramphul Rai v. Tula Kuari*, 592  
— *Singh v. Deg Narain*, 286, 287, 299  
*Rampiari v. Mulchand*, 510  
*Ramprasad v. Radhaprasad*, 251  
*Ramrao v. Yeshvantrao*, 428  
*Ramsahoy v. Mohabeer*, 324  
*Ram Sarup v. Mt. Bela*, 350  
*Ramsoonder v. Annudnath*, 404  
— *v. Ram Sahye*, 338  
*Ramsoondur v. Taruck*, 398  
*Ram Sahye v. Lalla Laljee*, 443, 550  
— *Sevak v. Raghubar*, 324  
— *Soondur v. Surbanee Dossee*, 104A, 178  
*Ramtonoo v. Ishurchunder*, 329  
— *v. Ramgopal*, 393  
*Ramtoonoo v. Ramgopal*, 369, 373  
*Ran Bijai v. Jagatpal*, 550  
*Rangachariar v. Yegna Dikshatur*, 398  
*Ranganayakamma v. Alwar Setti*, 105, 107, 141, 143  
*Rangasami v. Krishnayan*, 336  
*Rangilbai v. Vinayak*, 587  
*Rangubai v. Bhagirthibai*, 120, 121, 122, 136, 144B  
*Rangaiyan v. Kaliyani*, 413  
*Ranganmani v. Kisanath*, 271  
*Rango Vinayak v. Yamunabai*, 415, 417  
*Ranojee v. Kandojee*, 508  
*Rao Kurun v. Nawab Mahomed*, 555, 594, 600  
*Raol Gorain v. Teza Gorain*, 246  
*Ratna Subbu v. Ponnappa*, 466  
*Ratnam v. Govindarajulu*, 320  
*Ranjisno v. Taraneychurn*, 347  
*Ravji v. Gangadharbhat*, 340  
*Ravji v. Lakshmibai*, 99, 143, 148, 174, 180  
*Rawut Urjun v. Rawut Ghunsiam*, 51  
*Rayacharl v. Venkataramaniah*, 310, 311, 332  
*Rayadur Nallatambi v. Mukunda*, 251  
*Rayan v. Kuppanayyengar*, 159  
*Rayappa v. Ali Sahib*, 280



- Rayee v. Puddum, 439  
 Reade v. Krishna, 191, 194  
 Reasut v. Abbot, 399  
     — v. Chorwar, 274  
 Reg. v. Barnardo, 194  
     — v. Ramanna, 52  
 Reneau v. Tourangeau, 328, 350  
 Rennie v. Gunganarain, 196  
 Reotee v. Ramjeet, 324  
 Retoo v. Lalljee, 554, 340, 599  
 Rewun Persad v. Radha Beeby, 384,  
     452, 454, 487, 488  
 Rhamdhone v. Anund, 445  
 Rindabai v. Anacharya, 572  
 Rindamma v. Venkataramappa, 615  
 Rithcurn v. Soojun, 130  
 Rivett Carnac v. Jivibai, 583  
 Rohee v. Dindyal, 401  
 Roma Nath v. Rajonimoni, 408  
 Rooder v. Sumboo, 525  
 Rookho v. Madho, 365  
 Roopchurn v. Anund, 465  
 Rooploll v. Mohima, 388  
 Roshan Singh v. Har Kishan, 196  
 Roushun v. Coll. of Mymensingh, 404  
 Rudr v. Rup Knar, 617  
 Rudra Prokash v. Bholanath, 191  
 Rughonath v. Hurrehur, 499  
 Rukabai v. Gandabai, 417  
 Rukhmabai v. Tukharam, 541  
 Rukkini v. Kadarnath, 491  
 Rumea v. Bhagee, 509  
 Rungama v. Atchama, 97, 101, 318  
 Runganaigum v. Namasevoya, 123  
 Runganayakamma v. Bulli Ramaya,  
     255, 428  
     — v. Ramaya, 499, 500  
 Runjeet v. Kooer, 454  
     — v. Mahomed Waris, 586  
     — Singh v. Obhya, 123, 187  
 Rupan v. Hukmi, 512  
 Rupa Jagshet v. Krishnaji, 395  
 Rupohund v. Daolatrav, 363  
     — v. Latu Chowdhry, 54  
     — v. Rakhmabai, 118, 177  
 Rup Singh v. Baisni, 485  
 Russic v. Purnah, 518  
 Russick v. Choitun, 369  
 Rustam Ali v. Abbasi, 42  
 Rutcheputty v. Rajunder, 29, 44, 45,  
     465, 471, 498  
 Ruttun Monee v. Brojo Mohun, 452  
 Ruvee Bhadr v. Roopshunker, 123, 180  
 Ryrappen Numbiar v. Keln Kurup, 217  
  
 SABAPATY v. Panyandy, 357  
 Sabitreea v. Suttur Ghun, 142, 145  
 Sabo Bewa v. Nuboghun, 145  
 Sacaram v. Luxumabai, 321  
 Sadabarat Prasad v. Foolbash Koer,  
     246, 306, 327, 337, 596  
 Sadagopah v. Ruthna, 362  
 Sadashiv v. Dhakubai, 321, 322, 323,  
     341, 344, 587, 594; 607  
     — v. Hari Moneshwar, 130, 148  
     — Dinker v. Dinker Narayen,  
         286, 287  
 Sadu v. Baiza, 434, 504, 506, 507  
 Sakharam v. Govind, 280  
     — v. Hari Krishna, 452, 454  
     — v. Sitabai, 28, 490, 567  
     — Shet v. Sitaram Shet, 294  
 Sakhawwat v. Trilok, 348  
 Sakwarbai v. Bhavanjee, 417  
 Salehoonissa v. Mohesh, 274  
 Samalbhai v. Someshvar, 319  
 Sambasiven v. Kristnien, 196  
 Saminadien v. Durmarajien, 350  
 Saminatha v. Rangathammal, 420  
 Saminathaiyan v. Saminathaiyan, 201  
 Samy Josyen v. Ramien, 377  
 Sandial v. Maitland, 388  
 Sankarappa v. Kamayya, 406  
 Sant Kumar v. Deo Saran, 519  
     — v. Sukh Nidhan, 604  
 Sarasuti v. Mannu, 504  
 Sarat Chunder v. Gopal Chunder, 403  
 Saravana v. Muttayi, 321, 323, 324  
 Sarkies v. Prosonnomoyee, 56  
 Saroda v. Tincowry, 102  
 Sartaj Kuari v. Rani Deoraj, 315  
 Sarupi v. Mukh Ram, 49  
 Sashachella v. Ramasamy, 328  
 Sastri v. Vengu Ammal, 519

- Savitribai v. Luximibai, 408, 409, 411, 417  
 Sayamalal v. Sandamini, 99, 105  
 Seebkisto v. East India Co., 365  
 Seedee Nazeer v. Ojoodhya, 384  
 Seenevullala v. Tungama, 509  
 Seeta Ram v. Fnkeer, 536  
 Sengamalathammal v. Valayuda, 515, 568, 627  
 Senkul v. Aurulananda, 520  
 Seth Jaidial v. Seth Siteeram, 262  
 — Mulchand v. Bai Mancha, 617  
 Sethurama v. Ponnammal, 472  
 Sevacawmy v. Vaneyummal, 372  
 Sevachetumbara v. Parasucty, 99, 443, 556  
 Shaik v. Doup Singh, 275  
 — Moosa v. Shaik Essa, 392  
 Shama Soonduree v. Jumona, 599, 600  
 Shamavahoo v. Dwarkadas, 107, 168  
 Shamchunder v. Narayni, 102, 153  
 Shamlal v. Banna, 420, 422  
 Sham Narain v. Court of Wards, 254, 542  
 — v. Raghoobur, 251  
 — Kuar v. Gaya, 156  
 — Singh v. Mt. Umraotee, 301, 352  
 Shankar Baksh v. Hardeo Baksh, 254, 429  
 — Bharati v. Venkappa Naik, 397  
 Sheik Ibrahim v. Sheik Suleman, 353  
 Sheikh Azeemooddeen v. Moonshee Athur, 197  
 — Mahomed v. Amarchand, 397  
 — Muhummed v. Zubaida Jan, 352  
 Sheo Buksh v. Futteb, 447  
 — Churn v. Chukraree, 274  
 — v. Jummum, 337  
 — Das v. Kunwul, 347, 353  
 — Dyal v. Judoonath, 264  
 — Gobind v. Sham Narain, 257  
 — Golam v. Burra, 266  
 — Lochun Singh v. Babu Saheb Singh, 582  
 — Nath v. Mt. Dayamyee, 548  
 Sheo Persad v. Leelah, 275, 311  
 — Pershad v. Kally Dass, 365  
 — v. Kalunder, 261  
 — v. Soorjbunsee, 324  
 — Proshad v. Jung Bahadur, 282  
 Sheoraj v. Nuckhedee, 320, 321, 324  
 Sheo Singh v. Mt. Dakho, 438  
 — Singh Rai v. Mt. Dakho, 39, 44, 95, 119, 124, 130, 438, 485, 597  
 — Soondary v. Pirthee, 524  
 — Suhaye v. Sreekishen, 337  
 — Surrin v. Sheo Sohi, 337  
 — Sehai v. Omed, 520  
 Sheogiri v. Girewa, 507  
 Shewak v. Syad Mohammed, 604  
 Shibessouree v. Mothooranath, 397  
 Shibnarain v. Ram Nidhee, 524  
 Shibo Koeree v. Joogun, 186, 188, 189  
 Shib Pershad v. Gungamonee, 261  
 — Dayee v. Doorga Pershadi, 310, 417, 422  
 — Pershad v. Gunga Monee, 438  
 Shida v. Sunshidapa, 52  
 Shidhojirav v. Naikojirav, 47, 425  
 Shi Golam v. Baran, 266  
 Shivaganga, The case of : see Katama, Natchier v. Rajah of Shivaganga  
 Shivji v. Datu, 191  
 Shivram v. Genu, 361, 363  
 — v. Saya, 363  
 Shookmoy v. Monohari, 385, 387  
 Shoshi v. Tarokessur, 385  
 Shridhar v. Hiralal, 81  
 Shri Ganesh v. Keshavray, 397  
 Shudanund v. Bonomalee, 251, 270, 311, 585  
 Shumsher v. Dilraj, 101, 132, 138, 160  
 Shumsool v. Shewukram, 388, 604, 607  
 Shurut v. Bholanath, 344  
 Shushee Mohun v. Ankhil, 266  
 Sibbosoondery v. Bussomutty, 439  
 Sibchunder v. Russick, 362  
 — v. Sreemutty Treepoorah, 519  
 Sibta v. Badri, 520  
 Sidapa v. Pooneakooty, 266  
 Siddhessur v. Sham Chand, 608

- Sid Dasi v. Gur Sahai*, 591, 592  
*Sidlingapa v. Sidava*, 408, 414  
*Sikher Chund v. Dulputty*, 196, 320, 323  
*Sikki v. Venkatasamy*, 418  
*Simbhu Nath v. Golab Singh*, 287, 294, 296A  
*Simmani v. Muttammal*, 515  
*Singamma v. Venkatacharln*, 141, 143  
*Sinammal v. Administrator-General*, 488  
*Sinthayee v. Thanakapudayen*, 408, 414  
*Sital v. Madho*, 318  
*Sitaram v. Zalim Singh*, 279  
*Sitaramayya v. Venkatramanna*, 279  
*Sitarambhat v. Sitaram*, 398  
*Sittiramiyer v. Alagri*, 201  
*Sivagiri, The case of : see Muttayan Chetti v. Sangili*  
*Sivagiri v. Alwar*, 306  
     — *v. Tiruvengada*, 282  
*Sivagunga v. Lakshmana*, 251  
*Sivanananja v. Muttu Ramalinga*, 47  
*Sivarama v. Bagavan*, 80  
*Sivasungu v. Minal*, 52, 508  
*Siavsankara v. Parvati*, 304, 324  
*Skinner v. Orde*, 192, 193  
*Sobhagchand v. Bhaichand*, 361  
*Sobharam v. Gunga*, 270, 274  
*Somasekhara v. Subadra Maji*, 120, 136  
*Sonatun v. Ruttun*, 46  
     — *Bysack v. Juggutsoondree*, 381, 385, 387, 395, 397, 424, 454  
*Sonet v. Mirza*, 545  
*Soobha Moodelly v. Anchalay*, 513  
*Soobhaputten v. Jungameeah*, 316  
*Soobheddur v. Boloram*, 266  
*Soobramaneya v. Aroomooga*, 398  
*Soonder Narain v. Bennud Ram*, 196  
*Soondur Koomaree v. Gudadhur*, 102, 145  
*Sooranamy v. Venataroyen*, 513  
*Sooranany v. Sooranany*, 371  
*Soorendro v. Nundun*, 320  
*Soorendrouath v. Mt. Heeramonee*, 46, 488  
*Soorja Koer v. Natha Baksh*, 420  
*Soorjeemoney Dossee v. Denobundo*, 247, 264, 268, 269, 270, 350, 382, 385, 388, 441, 580, 581  
*Soorjomonee v. Suddannnd*, 251  
*Sootrogun v. Sabitra*, 141, 142  
*Sorolah Dossee v. Bhoobun Mohun Neoghy*, 577  
*Sondaminey v. Broughton*, 582  
     — *v. Jogesh*, 354, 386, 388, 438  
*Sree Chand v. Nim Chand*, 274  
*Sreemanchunder v. Gopaulchunder*, 401  
*Sree Misser v. Crowdy*, 274  
     — *Motee Jeemoney v. Attaram*, 439  
*Sreemutty Debia v. Bimola*, 374  
     — *Rajcoomaree v. Nobocoomer*, 107, 164  
*Sreenarain v. Bhya Jha*, 698  
     — *v. Gooro Pershad*, 264  
     — *Mitter v. Sreemutty Kishen*, 142, 144  
     — *Rai v. Bhya Jha*, 188, 189, 369, 623  
     — *v. Sreemutty*, 603, 604  
*Sreenath Gangooly v. MoheshChunder*, 150  
     — *Roy v. Ruttunmulla*, 181, 589  
*Sreenevassien v. Sashyummal*, 129  
*Srikant Surma v. Radha Kant*, 184  
*Srinati Kuar v. Prosonno Kumar*, 605  
*Srimutty Dibeah v. Rany Koond*, 465, 471, 592  
*Srinarain Mitter v. Srimati Kishen*, 197  
*Srinath Gangopadhya v. Mahes Chandra*, 150  
     — *Serma v. Radhakannt*, 188  
*Srinavasa v. Dandayudapani*, 520  
*Srinivasa v. Rengasami*, 532  
     — *v. Yelaya*, 287  
*Srinivasammal v. Vijayammal*, 365  
*Sriram v. Bhagirath*, 363  
*Sriramulu v. Ramayya*, 123, 125  
*Stalkartt v. Gopal*, 275, 311  
*Standen v. Standen*, 167  
*Standing v. Bowring*, 352, 401  
*Subbaiyan v. Akhilandammal*, 587

- Subbaluvammal v. Ammakutti, 120**  
**Subbu Rau v. Rama Rau, 452**  
**Subbanna v. Venkata Krishnan, 596**  
**Subbarayana v. Subbakka, 409**  
**Subbarayudu v. Gopavajjulu, 329**  
**Subbaya v. Suraya, 261, 318**  
**Subbramaniemi v. Subbramaniemi, 324**  
**Subramaniya v. Ponnasami, 344**  
     — v. Sadasiva, 311, 323  
**Subbu Hegadi v. Tongu, 220, 275**  
**Suboodra v. Bikromadit, 406**  
**Sudanund v. Bonomallee, 310**  
     — v. Soorjoo Monee, 251, 261,  
     317, 318, 585  
**Suddurtonnessa v. Majada, 55**  
**Sudisht v. Mt. Sheobarat, 594**  
**Sugeeram v. Jughoqbuns, 606**  
**Sukhbasi v. Guman, 148**  
**Sukhimani v. Mahendranath, 404**  
**Sumbhoodutt v. Jhotee, 527**  
**Sumbochunder v. Gunga, 458, 536**  
**Sumrun v. Chunder Mnn, 437**  
     — v. Khedun, 432  
**Sundar v. Khuman Singh, 41**  
**Sundara v. Tegaraja, 331**  
**Sundaraja v. Jagannada, 287**  
**Sundarayan v. Sitaramayan, 320**  
**Sundraraja v. Jaganada, 324**  
**Sunker Lall v. Juddoobuns, 594**  
**Suntosh Ram v. Gera Pattuck, 91**  
**Suppammal v. Collector of Tanjore, 397**  
**Surub v. Shew Gobind, 344**  
**Suraj Bansi Kunwar v. Mahipat, 600**  
     — Bnsi Koer v. Sheo Proshad,  
     279, 284, 285, 287, 289, 291, 298,  
     307, 329, 311, 339, 430  
**Suraneni v. Suraneni, 454, 487**  
**Suraya Bhnkta v. Lakshmi Narasam-**  
     **ma, 527**  
**Surut v. Ashootosh, 344**  
**Surbonarain v. Maharaj, 360**  
**Surendra Nandan v. Sailaka Kant, 103,**  
     **172**  
**Suresh Chunder v. Jogal Chunder, 197**  
**Surja Kumari v. Gandhrap, 518**  
**Surjo Kant Nandi v. Mohesh Chunder,**  
**Sursutty v. Poorno, 388**  
**Surya Row, Gungadhara, 385, 387**  
**Sutao v. Hurreeram, 52**  
**Sutputtee v. Indranund, 184, 186**  
**Svamiyar v. Chokkalingam, 435**  
**Symes v. Hughes, 405**  
**Synd Tasoowar v. Koonj Beharee, 323**  
     — Tuffuzzool v. Rughoonath, 329  
**TABHOONISSA v. Koomar, 397**  
**Tagore v. Tagore, 350, 353, 365, 367,**  
     **369, 382, 383, 384, 385, 386, 388,**  
     **395, 398, 417, 424, 458, 459, 556,**  
     **558**  
**Talemand v. Rukmina, 423**  
**Taliwar v. Pnblwan, 447**  
**Tallapragadah v. Crovedy, 372**  
**Tammirazu v. Pantina, 95**  
**Tandavaraya v. Valli, 320, 323**  
     — v. Pudum, 542  
**Tara Chand v. Nobin Chunder, 388**  
     — v. Reeb Ram, 51, 252, 269,  
     301, 318, 509  
     — Munnée v. Motee, 52, 508  
     — Mohun v. Kripa Moyee, 153, 155  
     — Soondaree v. Collector of My-  
     mensingh, 360  
     — Sooduree v. Oojul, 402  
**Tara Churn v. Suresh Chunder, 104**  
**Taramonee v. Shibnath, 401**  
**Tara Naikin v. Nana Lakshman, 52,**  
     **318**  
**Taranee Churn v. Mt. Dasee, 347**  
**Tarinee Churn v. Watson, 197**  
**Tarini Charan v. Saroda Sundari, 145**  
**Tarnck Chunder v. Huro Sunknr, 148**  
     — v. Jodeshur, 266  
**Tarucknath v. Prosono, 388**  
**Taynmana v. Pernmal, 318**  
**Teeluck v. Chama Churn, 559**  
**Teeluk v. Ramjus, 274**  
**Teencowree v. Dinonath, 154, 370**  
**Teertaruppa v. Soonderajien, 399**  
**Tej Chund v. Srikanth Ghose, 365**  
     — Protab v. Champakalie, 454  
**Tekaet v. Tekatnee, 428**  
**Tekait v. Tekaitni, 487**



- Tekait Kali v. Anund Roy**, 318  
**Telnok v. Muddun**, 589  
**Tenimakal v. Subbammal**, 186  
**Tennent v. Tennent**, 405  
**Teramath v. Lakshmi**, 398  
**Thakoorain v. Mohun**, 489, 496, 531  
**Thakoor Jeebnath v. Court of Wards**,  
     471, 518  
     — **Kapilnauth v. The Govern-**  
         **ment**, 314, 350  
     — **Oomrao v. Thakooranee Mah-**  
         **tab Koonwar**, 129, 143  
**Thakur Darriao v. Thakur Davi**, 446  
     — **Shere v. Thakurain**, 262  
**Thangam Pillai v. Suppa Pillai**, 434,  
     486  
**Thanguuni v. Ramu Mudali**, 142  
**Thaya v. Shungunni**, 220  
**Thayammal v. Venkatramien**, 104  
**Thakoo v. Ruma**, 105  
**Thukrain v. Government**, 262, 402  
**Tillakchand v. Jitamal**, 406  
**Tilock v. Ram Luckhee**, 524  
**Timmappa v. Mahalinga**, 218, 476  
     — **v. Parmeshriamma**, 411  
**Timmi Reddy v. Achamma**, 487  
**Timmoni v. Nibarun**, 517  
**Tipperah; the case of the : see Neel-**  
     **kisto Deb v. Beerchunder**  
**Tirumamagal v. Ramasvami**, 550  
**Tod v. Kunhamod**, 268  
**Tooljaram v. Meean**, 362  
     — **v. Nurbheram**, 379  
**Torit v. Taraprosunno**, 439  
**Travancore; case of : see Ramaswami**  
     **Iyen v. Bhagati Ammal**  
**Treekumjee v. Mt. Laroo**, 89, 512  
**Trimbak v. Narayan**, 274, 452  
     — **Balkrishnav v. Narayen**, 287,  
         299  
**Trimbakpuri v. Gangabai**, 398  
**Tukaram v. Gunaji**, 615  
     — **v. Ramchandra**, 335  
**Tuljaram v. Mathuradas**, 567, 569, 570,  
     588, 578, 598  
**Tulski Ram v. Behari Lal**, 101  
**Tundun v. Pokh Narain**, 402  
**Udaram v. Ranu**, 280, 284, 306, 329,  
     335, 388, 380  
**Udaram v. Sonkaboi**, 411  
**Uddoy v. Jadublal**, 314, 347, 425  
**Ugarchund v. Madapa Somana**, 361  
**Ujagar v. Pitam**, 316  
**Uji v. Hathi**, 52  
**Umabai v. Bhavn**, 550  
**Uma Deyi v. Gokoolanund**, 123, 130,  
     144A, 144B, 514  
**Umamaheswara v. Singaraperumal**, 300  
     — **Sundari v. Dwarkanath**, 264, 426  
     — **Sunduri v. Sourobinee**, 107  
     — **Sunker v. Kali Komul**, 154  
**Umaid v. Udoi**, 472  
**Uman Parshad v. Gandharp Singh**, 42,  
     401  
**Umbasunker v. Tooljaram**, 393  
**Umed v. Nagindas**, 90  
**Umritnath v. Goureenath**, 49, 251  
     265  
**Unroot v. Kulyandas**, 370, 530  
**Unnoda v. Erskine**, 274  
**Unnopoorua v. Gunga**, 280, 304  
**Upendra v. Thanda**, 488  
     — **Lall v. Rani Prasanna Mayi**,  
         133, 138  
     — **Narain v. Gopeenath**, 267, 451,  
         608  
**Upoma Kuchain v. Bholaram**, 85  
**Upooroop v. Lalla Bandhjee**, 286, 294  
**Ushruf v. Brojessuree**, 542, 586  
  
**VADALI v. Manda**, 323  
**Vadreja v. Wuppuluri**, 488  
**Valia Tamburatti v. Vira Rayyan**, 488  
**Vallabhram v. Bai Hariganga**, 550  
**Vallinayagam v. Pachche**, 371, 377,  
     378  
**Valu v. Gunga**, 414  
**Varanakot v. Varanakot**, 220  
**Varden v. Luckpathy**, 362  
**Varjivan v. Ghelji**, 591  
**Vasudeva Bhatlu v. Narasamma**, 359  
     — **Singaro v. Rani of**  
         **gram**, 510  
**Vasudev Hari v. Tatia Narayan**, 361  
     h

- Vayidinada v. Appu**, 124  
**Vasudev v. Venkatesh**, 359, 334  
**Vedapurath v. Vallabha**, 398  
**Vedavalli v. Narayana**, 266  
**Veerapermall v. Narain Pillay**, 103, 107, 129, 133, 141, 371  
**Vejayah v. Anjalummaul**, 414  
**Velayuda v. Sivarama**, 359  
**Vellanki v. Venkata Rama**, 102, 104, 115, 174, 493, 567  
**Velliyammal v. Katpa Chetty**, 286  
**Vencata v. Venkummal**, 488  
**Vencatachella v. Parvatham**, 505  
**Vencatapathy v. Lutchmee**, 332, 333, 335  
**Venkamma v. Savitramma**, 195  
**Venkanna v. Aitamma**, 417  
**Venkata v. Narayana**, 51, 429  
     — **v. Rajagopala**, 429  
     — **v. Subadra**, 120, 123, 143  
     — **v. Suriya**, 313, 613, 614, 615  
**Venkatacharyulu v. Rangacharyulu**, 81A  
**Venkatachella v. Chinnaiya**, 332, 340  
     — **v. Thathammal**, 352  
**Venkatachellamiah v. P. Narainapah**, 397, 398  
**Venkatachallapati v. Subbarayadu**, 512  
**Venkatachellum v. Venkatasawmy**, 183  
**Venkatalakshamma v. Narasayya**, 114  
**Venkatammal v. Andiappa**, 423, 437  
**Venkatapetty v. Ramachendra**, 427  
**Venkataram v. Venkata Lutchmee**, 50  
**Venkatarama v. Meera Labai**, 329  
     — **v. Senthivelu**, 284  
**Venkataramayyan v. Venkatasubramania**, 324, 329, 595  
**Venkatasami v. Kuppaiyan**, 308, 324  
**Venkatesaiya v. Venkata Charlu**, 129  
**Venkatramanua v. Brammanna**, 350, 445  
**Venkopadhyaya v. Kavari**, 417  
**Venku v. Mahalinga**, 52  
**Violet Nevin, re**, 193  
**Vijaya v. Sripati**, 417  
**Vijiarangam v. Lakshuman**, 120, 468, 570, 573, 574, 575
- Vinayek Narayan v. Govindrav Chintaman**, 180  
     — **v. Luzumeebaee**, 490, 567, 569  
**Virabadrachari v. Kuppammal**, 409  
**Virabhadra v. Hari Rama**, 359  
**Virakumara v. Gopalu**, 377  
**Viraragava v. Ramalinga**, 129  
**Viraragavamma v. Samudrala**, 324  
**Vira Rayen v. Valia Rani**, 217  
**Viraramuthi v. Singaravelu**, 408  
**Virasami v. Varada**, 319  
**Virasangappa v. Rudrapa**, 89  
**Virasvami v. Appasvami**, 87, 414  
     — **v. Ayyasvami**, 329, 331  
**Visalatchmi v. Subbu**, 350  
**Visalatchy v. Annasamy**, 252, 263, 409, 415  
**Vishnu v. Krishnen**, 124, 148, 278  
     — **Keshav v. Ramchandra**, 197  
     — **Shambhog v. Mariyamma**, 414  
**Visvanathan v. Saminathan**, 80  
**Vishvanath v. Kristnaji**, 455  
**Viswanadha v. Bungaroo**, 428  
     — **v. Moottoo Moodely**, 201  
**Vithaldas v. Jeshubai**, 488, 541  
**Vithoba v. Bapu**, 109, 116  
**Vitta Batten v. Yemenamma**, 333, 316, 336, 380  
**Vittal v. Ananta**, 319  
**Vrandavandas v. Yamuna**, 408  
**Vrandivandas v. Yamana Bai**, 171  
**Vudda v. Venkumma**, 409  
**Vullubhdas v. Thucker Gordhandas**, 388  
**Vutsavoy v. Vutsavoy**, 509  
**Vyankataroya v. Shivrambhat**, 353  
**Vythilinga v. Vijiathammal**, 82, 129
- WAGHELA RAJ SANJI v. Shekh Mas. Indin**, 196  
**Wajed Hossein v. Nankoo**, 279, 324  
**Waman Raghupati v. Krishnaji**, 30, 136  
**Wannathan v. Keyakadath**, 353  
**Watson v. Ram Chand Dutt**, 275  
     — **v. Sham Lall Mitter**, 196  
**Wenlock v. River, Dec. Co.**, 341

<b>Wilkinson v. Joughin, 169</b>	<b>Yashvantrav v. Kashibai, 414</b>
<b>Woodoyaditto v. Mukoond, 425</b>	<b>Yejnamoorty v. Chavaly, 371</b>
<b>Wooma Pershad v. Girish Chunder, 550</b>	<b>Yekeyamian v. Angiswarian, 316, 431</b>
<b>Wopendro v. Thanda, 488</b>	<b>Yeknath v. Warabai, 191</b>
<b>Wulubhram v. Bijlee, 615</b>	<b>Yenumula v. Ramandora, 249, 255, 461, 499</b>
<b>YANUMULA v. Boochia, 258, 255, 262</b>	<b>Yetiraj v. Tayammal, 488</b>
<b>Yarakalamma v. Anakala, 146</b>	<b>Yetteyapooram Zemindary : see Mut-</b>
<b>Yarlagadda Mallikarjuna v. Y. Durga, 51</b>	<b>tusamy v. Venkatasubha</b>
	<b>Young v. Peachey, 405</b>





## A D D E N D A.

Cases upon the following subjects have been decided while this edition was passing through the press.

**ADOPTION.**—*Shankaran v. Kesavan*, 15 Mad. 6; *Virayya v. Hanumanta*, 14 Mad. 459; *Chamsukh v. Parbat*, 14 All. 53; *Beni Prasad v. Hardai Bibi*, 14 All. 67; *Rukhab v. Chunlal*, 16 Bom. 347; *Surendra Keshav v. Doorgasunderi*, 19 I. A. 108.

**ALIENATION** by one member of a joint family, *Rangayana v. Ganapabhatta*, 15 Bom. 673; *Pem Singh v. Partab Singh*, 14 All. 179; *Muhammad Husain v. Dip Chand*, *ibid.* 190.

**GUARDIAN AND WARD.**—*Jwala Dei v. Pirbhu*, 14 All. 35; *re Saithri*, 16 Bom. 307; *Sham Kuar v. Mohanunda Sahoy*, 19 Cal. 301; *Indur Chunder v. Radhakishore*, 19 I. A. 90.

**MAINTENANCE.**—*Re Gulabdas Bhaidas*, 16 Bom. 269.

**NON-JOINDER OF CO-OWNER.**—*Parameswaran v. Shangaran*, 14 Mad. 489; *Paramasiva v. Krishna*, *ibid.* 498.

**PERSONA DESIGNATA.**—*Bireswar v. Ardha Chunder*, 19 I. A. 101; *Surendra Keshav v. Doorgasunderi*, *ib.* 108.

**WIFE, Custody of**—*Re Dhuronidhur Ghose*, 17 Cal. 298.



# HINDU LAW AND USAGE

## CHAPTER I.

### ON THE NATURE AND ORIGIN OF HINDU LAW.

§ 1. UNTIL very lately, writers upon Hindu Law have assumed, not only that it was recorded exclusively in the Sanskrit texts of the early sages, and the commentaries upon them, but that those sages were the actual originators and founders of that law. The earliest work which attracted European attention was that which is known as the Institutes of Manu. People talk of this as the legislation of Manu; as if it was something which came into force on a particular day, like the Indian Penal Code, and which derived all its authority from being promulgated by him. Even those who are aware that it never had any legislative authority, and that it only described what its author believed to be, or wished to be, the law, seem to imagine that those rules which govern civil rights among Hindus, and which we roughly speak of as Hindu law, are solely of Brahmanical origin. They admit that conflicting customs exist, and must be respected. But these are looked on as local violations of a law which is of general obligation, and which ought to be universally observed; as something to be checked and put down, if possible, and to be apologised for, if the existence of the usage is proved beyond dispute.

§ 2. On the other hand, those who derived their knowledge of law not from books, but from acquaintance with Hindus in their own homes, did not admit that the Brahma-

Authority  
Sanskrit]

not univer

nical law had any such universal sway. Mr. Ellis, speaking of Southern India, says: "The law of the Smritis, unless under various modifications, has never been the law of the Tamil and cognate nations" (a). The same opinion is stated in equally strong terms by Dr. Burnell and by Mr. Nelson in recent works (b). And Sir H. S. Maine, writing with special reference to the North-West of India, says: "The conclusion arrived at by the persons who seem to me of highest authority is, *first*, that the codified law—Manu and his glossators—embraced originally a much smaller body of usage than had been imagined, and, *next*, that the customary rules, reduced to writing, have been very greatly altered by Brahmanical expositors, constantly in spirit, sometimes in tenor. Indian law may be in fact affirmed to consist of a very great number of local bodies of usage, and of one set of customs reduced to writing, pretending to a diviner authority than the rest, exercising consequently a great influence over them, and tending, if not checked, to absorb them. You must not understand that these bodies of custom are fundamentally distinct. They are all marked by the same general features, but there are considerable differences of detail" (c).

ritten and  
written law  
bstantially  
nilar.

§ 3. I believe that even those who hold to their full extent the opinions stated by Mr. Ellis and Mr. Nelson, would admit that the earliest Sanskrit writings evidence a state of law which, allowing for the lapse of time, is the natural antecedent of that which now exists. Also, that the later commentators describe a state of things, which, in its general features, though not in all its details, corresponds fairly enough with the broad facts of Hindu life; for instance, in reference to the condition of the undivided family, the order of inheritance, the practice of adoption, and the like. The proof of the latter assertion seems to me to be ample. As

---

(a) 2 Strm. H. L. 163. See the fatwas of the pundits, *Inderum v. Ramasawmy*, 13 M. 1. A. 149, S. C. 3 B. L. R. 1; S. C. 12 Suth. (P. C.) 41.

(b) Introduction to the *Daya-Vibhaga*, 13; *Varadarajah*, 7; *Nelson's View of Hindu Law*, Preface and chap. i; *Nelson's Scientific Study of Hindu Law*, (1881.)

(c) *Village Communities*, 52.

regards Western India, we have a body of customs, which cover the whole surface of domestic law, laboriously ascertained by local inquiry, and recorded by Mr. Steele; whilst many of the most important decisions in Borrodaile's Reports were also passed upon the testimony of living witnesses. As regards the North-West Provinces and the Punjab, we have similar evidence of the existing usages of Hindus proper, Jains, Jats, and Sikhs, in the decisions of the Courts of those provinces. As regards other parts of India the evidence is much more scanty. But it is a matter of every-day experience, that where there exists a local usage opposed to the recognised law-books, it is unhesitatingly set up, and readily accepted. As for instance, the exclusion of women from inheritance in Sholapur, and the practice of divorce and second marriages of females among the Maravers in Southern India. No attempt has ever been made to administer the law of the Mitakshara to the castes which follow the Marumakatayem law in Malabar, and the Alya Santana law in Canara, because it was perfectly well known that their usages were distinct. Elsewhere that law is administered by native Judges, with the assistance of native pleaders, to native suitors, who seek for and accept it. If this law was not substantially in accordance with popular feeling, it seems inconceivable that those who are most interested in disclosing the fact, should unite in a conspiracy to conceal it. That there is such an accordance appears to me to be borne out by the remarkable similarity of this law to the usages of the Tamil inhabitants of the north of Ceylon, as stated in the Thesawaleme (d). But the question remains, whether these usages are of Brahmanical, or of local, origin? Whether the flavour of Brahmanism which pervades them is a matter of substance, or of accident? Where usage and Brahmanism differ, which is the more ancient of the two?

§ 4. It is evident that this question is one of the greatest practical importance, and is one which a judge must fre-

Priority  
or Brah  
importa

(d) See as to this work, post, § 42.

quently, though perhaps unconsciously, answer, before he can decide a case. For instance, it is quite certain that religious efficacy is the test of succession according to Brahmanical principles. If, then, one of two rival claimants appears to be preferable in every respect except that of religious efficacy, the judge will have to determine, whether the system which he is administering is based on Brahmanical principles at all. So as regards adoption. A Brahman tests its necessity and its validity, solely by religious motives. If an adoption is made with an utter absence of religious necessity or motive, a judge would have to decide whether religion was an essential element in the transaction or not.

script law  
based on usage :

§ 5. My view is, that Hindu law is based upon immemorial customs, which existed prior to and independent of Brahmanism. That when the Aryans penetrated into India, they found there a number of usages either the same as, or not wholly unlike, their own. That they accepted these, with or without modifications, rejecting only those which were incapable of being assimilated, such as polyandry, incestuous marriages, and the like. That the latter lived on a merely local life, while the former became incorporated among the customs of the ruling race. That when Brahmanism arose, and the Brahman writers turned their attention to law, they at first simply stated the facts as they found them, without attaching to them any religious significance. That the religious element subsequently grew up, and entwined itself with legal conceptions, and then distorted them in three ways. *First*, by attributing a pious purpose to acts of a purely secular nature. *Secondly*, by clogging those acts with rules and restrictions, suitable to the assumed pious purpose. And, *Thirdly*, by gradually altering the customs themselves, so as to further the special objects of religion, or policy, favoured by Brahmanism.

on direct  
authority.

§ 6. I think it is impossible to imagine that any body of usage could have obtained general acceptance throughout



India, merely because it was inculcated by Brahman writers, or even because it was held by the Aryan tribes. In Southern India, at all events, it seems clear that neither Aryans nor Brahmans ever settled in sufficient numbers to produce any such result (*e*). We know the tenacity with which Eastern races cling to their customs, unaffected by the example of those who live near them. We have no reason to suppose that the Aryans in India ever attempted to force their usages upon the conquered races, or that they could have succeeded in doing so, if they had tried. The Brahman treatises themselves negative any such idea. There is not an atom of dogmatism, or controversy, among the old Sutra writers. They appear to be simply recording the usages they observed, and occasionally stop to remark that the practices of some districts, or the opinions of other persons are different (*f*). The greater part of Manu is exclusively addressed to Brahmans, but he takes pains to point out that the laws and customs of districts, classes, and even of families ought to be observed (*g*). Example and influence, coupled with the general progress of society, have largely modified ancient usages; but a wholesale substitution of one set of usages for another appears to me to be equally opposed to philosophy and to facts.

§ 7. The most distinctive features of the Hindu law are the undivided family system, the order of succession, and the practice of adoption. The two latter are at present thoroughly saturated with Brahmanism. Its influence upon the family has only been exerted for the purpose of breaking it up. But in all cases, I think it will be satisfactorily shown, that Brahmanism has had nothing whatever to do with the early history of those branches of the law; that

Distincti-  
tures no  
manical.

---

(*e*) See Hunter's Orissa, i. 241-265; Nelson's View, chaps. i. & ii.; Madura Manual, Pt. II., p. 11, Pt. III., chap. ii.

(*f*) See Apast., ii. vi. 14, § 6-9; Gaut., xxviii. § 26, 40. Dr. Jolly, referring to the differences of doctrine among the Sutra writers, says "It is hardly possible to trace this diversity of doctrine to another cause than the difference of popular usage subsisting between the divers times and countries in which the existing Dharmasutras had originated." (Jolly, § 40.)

(*g*) See *post*, § 40; see M. Müller, A. S. L. 50.



these existed independently of Brahmanism, or even of Aryanism; and that where the religious element has entered into, and remodelled them, the change in this direction has been absolutely modern. This view will be developed at length in the course of the present work. It will be sufficient here briefly to indicate the nature of the argument.

Joint Family  
system.

§ 8. The Joint Family is only one phase of that tendency to hold property in community, which, it is now proved, was once the ordinary mode of tenure. The attention of scholars was first drawn to this point by the Slavonian Village Communities. But it is now placed beyond doubt that joint ownership of a similar character is not limited to Slavonian, or even to Aryan, races, but is to be found in every part of the world where men have once settled down to an agricultural life (*h*). In India such a corporate system is universally found, either in the shape of Village Communities, or of the simple Joint Family. So far from the system owing its origin to Brahmanism, or even to Aryanism, its most striking instances are found precisely in those provinces where the Brahman and Aryan influence was weakest. As regards the Village Communities, the Punjab and the adjoining districts are the region in which alone they flourish in their primitive vigour. This is the tract which the Aryans must have first traversed on entering India. Yet it seems to have been there that Brahmanism most completely failed to take root. Dr. Muir cites various passages from the *Mahabharata* which establish this. The inhabitants "who dwell between the five rivers which are associated with the Sindhu (Indus) as the sixth," are described as "those impure *Bahikas*, who are outcasts from righteousness." "Let no Arya dwell there even for two days. There dwell degraded Brahmans, contemporary with Prajapati. They have no Veda, no Vedic ceremony, nor any sacrifice." "There a *Bahika*, born a Brahman, becomes afterwards a Kshatriya, a Vaiciya, or a Sudra, and eventually a barber. And again the barber becomes a Brah-

---

(*h*) See Laveleye *Propriété*, and Sir H. S. Maine's *Works*, *passim*.

man. And once again the Brahman there is born a slave. One Brahman alone is born in a family. The other brothers act as they will without restraint" (i). And they retain this character to the present day, as we shall see that with them the religious element has never entered into their secular law. Next to the Punjab the strongest traces of the Village Community are found among the Dravidian races of the South. Similarly as regards the Joint Family. It still flourishes in its purest form, not only undivided but indivisible, among the polyandrous castes of Malabar and Canara, over whom Brahmanism has never attempted to cast even the hem of its garment. Next to them, probably, the strictest survival of the undivided family is to be found in Northern Ceylon, among the Tamil emigrants from the South of India. It is only when the family system begins to break up that we can trace the influence of Brahmanism, and then the break up proceeds in the direct ratio of that influence (k).

§ 9. The case of inheritance is even more strongly in favour of the same view. The principle that "the right of inheritance, according to Hindu law, is wholly regulated with reference to the spiritual benefits to be conferred on the deceased proprietor," has been laid down on the highest judicial authority as an article of the legal creed, which is universally true, and which it would be heresy to doubt. It is strictly and absolutely true in Bengal. It is not so elsewhere (l). Among the Hindus of the Punjab, the order of succession is determined by custom, and not by spiritual considerations (m). Throughout the Presidency of Bombay, numerous relations, and especially females, inherit, to whom no ingenuity can ascribe the slightest religious merit. According to the Mitakshara, consanguinity in the male line is the test of heirship, not religious merit. All those

Law of  
ance.

(i) Muir, S. T., ii. 482.

(k) See *post*, chap. vii., § 237.

(l) This was long since pointed out by Professor Wilson. See his Works, v. 14. Sir H. S. Maine has also had the hardihood to hint a disbelief of the doctrine. Village Communities, 53.

(m) Punjab Customs, 11. Punjab Customary law, ii. 100-142.

who follow its authority accept agnates to the fourteenth degree, whose religious efficacy is infinitesimal, in preference to cognates, such as a sister's son, whose capacity for offering sacrifices ranks very high. The doctrine that heirs are to be placed in the direct order of their spiritual merit, was announced for the first time by Jimuta Vahana, and has been expanded by his successors. But it rendered necessary a complete remodelling of the order of succession. Cognates are now shuffled in among the agnates, instead of coming after them; and the very definition of cognates is altered, so as to exclude those who are actually named as such by the Mitakshara. The result is a system, whose essence is Brahmanism, and whose logic is faultless, but which is no more the system of early India, or of the rest of India, than the English Statute of Distributions (*n*). In Bengal the inheritance follows the duty of offering sacrifices. Elsewhere the duty follows the inheritance.

Law of adoption.

§ 10. The law of adoption has been even more successfully appropriated by the Brahmans, and in this instance they have almost succeeded in blotting out all trace of a usage existing previous to their own. There can be no doubt that among those Aryan races who have practised ancestor-worship, the existence of a son to offer up the religious rites has always been a matter of primary importance. Where no natural-born son exists, a substituted son takes his place. This naturally leads to the practice of adoption. But apart from all religious considerations, the advantages of having a son to assist a father in his life, to protect him in his old age, and to step into his property after his death, would be equally felt, and are equally felt, by other races. We know that the Sudras practised adoption, for even the Brahmanical writers provide special rules for their case. The inhabitants of the Punjab and North-West Provinces, whether Hindus proper, Jains, Jats, Sikhs, or even Muhammedans, practise adoption, without religious rites, or the slightest reference to religious purposes. The

---

(*n*) As to the whole of this, see chap. xvi. § 459, *et seq.*

same may be said of the Tamils in Ceylon. Even the Brahmanical works admit that the celebration of the name, and the perpetuation of the lineage, were sufficient reasons for affiliation, without reference to the rescue of the adopter's soul from Hell. In fact some of the very earliest instances mentioned are of the adoption of daughters. This latter practice is followed to the present day by the Bheels, certainly from no motives of piety, and by the Tamils of Ceylon. There can, I think, be no doubt that if the Aryans brought the habit of adoption with them into India, they also found it there already; and that the non-Aryan races, at all events, derive it from their own immemorial usage, and not from Brahmanical invention. There seems, also, every reason to believe, that even among the Aryan Hindus the importance now ascribed to adoption is comparatively recent. Little is to be found on the subject in the works of any but the most modern writers, and the majority of the ancient authors rank the adopted son very low among the subsidiary sons. The series of elaborate rules, which now limit the choice of a boy, are all the offspring of a metaphor; that he must be the reflection of a son. These rules may be appropriate enough to a system which requires the fiction of actual sonship for the proper performance of religious rites; but they have no bearing whatever upon affiliation, which has not this object in view, and, as we shall find, they are disregarded in many parts of India where the practice of adoption is strongly rooted. Yet the Brahmans have created the belief, that every adoption is intended to rescue the soul of a progenitor from Put, and that it must be judged of solely by its tendency to do so. And our tribunals gravely weigh the amount of religious conviction present to the minds of persons, not one of whom probably connects the idea of religion with the act of adoption, more than with that of procreation (o).

(o) Manu gives a preference to the eldest son, on the ground that he alone has been begotten from a sense of duty, ix. § 106, 107. See this subject discussed at length, post, ch. v. § 92—95.



Limited applicability of Sanskrit law.

§ 11. If I am right in the above views, it would follow that races who are Hindu by name, or even Hindu by religion (*p*), are not necessarily governed by any of the written treatises on law, which are founded upon, and developed from, the *Smritis*. Their usages may be very similar, but may be based on principles so different as to make the developments wholly inapplicable. Possibly all Brahmans, however doubtful their pedigree, may be precluded, by a sort of estoppel, from denying the authority of the Brahmanical writings which are current in their district (*q*). But there can be no pretence for any such estoppel with regard to persons who are not only not Brahmans, but not Aryans. In one instance, a very learned judge, after discussing a question of inheritance among Tamil litigants, on the most technical principles of Sanskrit law, wound up his judgment by saying, "I must be allowed to add that I feel the grotesque absurdity of applying to these *Maravers* the doctrine of Hindu Law. It would be just as reasonable to give them the benefit of the Feudal Law of real property. At this late day it is however impossible to act upon one's consciousness of the absurdity" (*r*). I must own I cannot see the impossibility. In Northern and Western India, the Courts have never considered themselves bound to apply these principles to sects who did not profess submission to the *Smritis*. In the case of the Jains, for instance, research has established that their usages, while closely resembling those of orthodox Hinduism, diverge exactly where they might be expected to do, from being based on secular, and not on religious, principles (*s*). The Bengal Court, as might be anticipated, is less tolerant of heresy. But it is certainly rather startling to find it assumed as a matter of course that the natives of Assam, the rudest of our provinces, are governed by the Hindu law as modified by Jimuta Vahana (*t*). It would be

---

(*p*) Many of the Dravidian races, who are called Hindus, are worshippers of snakes and devils, and are as indifferent to Vishnu and Siva as are the inhabitants of Whitechapel.

(*q*) See *Gopalayyan v. Raghupatiayyan*, 7 Mad. H. C. 255.

(*r*) *Holloway, J., Muttu Vizia v. Dorasinga*, 6 Mad. H. C. 841.

(*s*) *Post*, § 44.

(*t*) *Deopo Debia v. Gobindo Deb*, 16 Suth., 42; S. C. 11 B. L. R. 131.

curious to inquire whether there was any reason whatever for this belief, except the fact that appeals lay to the High Court of Bengal. It is a singular and suggestive circumstance that the Oriya chieftains of Orissa and Ganjam, who are identical in origin, language and religion, are supposed to follow different systems of law ; the system ascribed to each being precisely that which is most familiar to the Courts to which they are judicially subject (u)

§ 12. On the other hand, while I think that Brahmanical law has been principally founded on non-Brahmanical customs, so I have little doubt that those customs have been largely modified and supplemented by that law. Where two sets of usage, not wholly reconcilable, are found side by side, that which claims a divine origin has a great advantage in the struggle for existence over the other (v). Further, a more highly developed system of law has always a tendency to supplant one which is less developed. A very little law satisfies the wants of rude communities. As they advance in civilization, and new causes of dispute arise, they feel the necessity for new rules. If they have none of their own, they naturally borrow from their neighbours. Where evidence of custom is being given, it is not uncommon to find a native saying, " We observe our own rules. In a case where there is no rule we ask the pundits." Of course the pundit, with much complacency, produces from his Shasters an answer which solves the difficulty. This is first adopted on his authority, and then becomes an accretion to the body of village usage. This process would, of course, be aided by the influence which the Brahmans always carry with them, by means of their intellectual superiority. Dr. Jolly points out that a large number of law Commentaries and Digests have been written either by Indian

Brahmanism has modified usage.

---

(u) See as to Orissa, note to *Bishenpirea v. Soogunda*, 1 S. D. 37 (49, 51). But in a case reported by Mr. MacNaghten from Orissa, in 1818, the futwah was certainly given according to Mitakshara law. 2 W. MacN. 306. As to Ganjam, see *Raghunadha v. Brozo Kishoro*, 3 I. A. 154; S.C. 1 Mad. 69; S.C. 25 Suth., 291.

(v) See Maine's Vill. Com. 52.



Kings and Prime Ministers themselves, or under their auspices and by their order (Jolly, Sect. 27). The Hindu Judges were also Brahmans. Both writers and judges would naturally tinge native usages with their own views, and supplement them by their own doctrines. The change must have gone on with great rapidity during the last century, when so many disputes were referred to the decision of our Courts, and settled in those Courts solely in accordance with the opinions of the pundits (*w*).

Practical inferences.

§ 13. The practical result of this discussion, so far as it may turn out to be well founded, seems to be—*First*, that we should be very careful before we apply all the so-called Hindu Law to all the so-called Hindus. *Secondly*, that in considering the applicability of that law, we should not be too strongly influenced by an undoubted similarity of usage. *Thirdly*, that we should be prepared to find that rules, such as rules of inheritance, adoption, and the like, may have been accepted from the Brahmans by classes of persons who never accepted the principles, or motives, from which these rules originally sprung; and, therefore, *lastly*, that we should not rashly infer that a usage which leads to necessary developments, when practised by Brahmans, will lead to the same developments when practised by alien races. It will not do so, unless they have adopted the principle as well as the practice. Without both, the usage is merely a branch severed from the trunk. The sap is wanting, which can alone produce growth (*x*).

---

(*w*) See *post*, § 38.

(*x*) For a full discussion as to the cases in which Hindu law is made the rule of decision in the Courts of British India, see W. & B. (3rd ed.) 1—7. Where a person fails to establish that he conforms to any religion which carries with it any special form of law, his rights will be dealt with according to "justice, equity and good conscience." *Raj Bahadur v. Bishen Dyal*, 4 All. 343.

## CHAPTER II.

### THE SOURCES OF HINDU LAW.

1. *The Smritis*, § 15.
2. *The Commentators*, § 25.
3. *Schools of Law*, § 33.
4. *Judicial Decisions*, § 38.

§ 14. I PROPOSE in this chapter to examine the sources of Hindu Law, so far as they are to be found in the writings of the early Sanskrit sages and their commentators. A general reference to the accessible authorities on this branch of the subject is given below (a). I have not thought it necessary to give special references, unless where the statement in the text was still a matter of controversy; nor have I attempted to make a show of learning, which I do not possess, by referring at length to the works of Hindu writers of whom I know nothing but their names. Under this branch of the subject I shall offer some observations upon those differences of opinion which are generally spoken of as constituting various “schools of law.” I shall conclude by making some remarks upon the influence which our judicial system has exercised upon the natural development of Hindu Law. The important subject of Custom will be reserved for the next chapter.

§ 15. I. THE SMRITIS.—The great difficulty which meets us

(a) See M. Müller's *Ancient Sanskrit Literature*; Dr. Bühler's *Introduction to the Digest of Hindu Law* by West and Bühler; Colebrooke's *Prefaces to the Daya Bhaga and the Digest*, and his note, 1 *Stras. H. L.* 315; the *Preface to Sir Thomas Strange's Hindu Law*; Dr. Burnell's *Prefaces to his translations of the Daya Vibhaga and Varadrajah*, and the introduction to the first volume of Morley's *Digest*; Stenzler's *Preface to his translation of Yajnavalkya*; Dr. Jolly's *Preface to Narada*; Mayr. *Ind. Erbrecht*, 1—10, where the conclusions of Professor M. Müller and Dr. Bühler are adopted; Professor Monier Williams' *Indian Wisdom*. N. Mandlik. *Introduction and Appendix I.* Dr. Bühler's *Introductions to Apastamba and Gautama, Vasishttha and Baudhayana, and Manu*; Dr. Jolly's *Introduction to Vishnu*. *Sacred Books of the East*, Vols. II, VII, XIV and XXV. R. Sarvadhikari, § 4; Jolly, § 2 and 3.

Chronology  
non-existent.

in the study of Hindu Law, is to ascertain the date to which any particular statements should be referred. Chronology has absolutely no existence among Hindu writers. They deal in a vast, general, way with cycles of fabulous length, which, of course, have no relation to anything real. It is impossible to ascertain when the earliest sages lived, or whether they ever lived. Most of the recorded names are probably purely mythical. Tradition is of no value when it has a fable for its source. Names of indefinite antiquity are assumed by comparatively recent writers, or editors, or collectors, of texts. Even when we can ascertain the sequence of certain works, it is unsafe to assume that any statement of law represented an existing fact. To a Hindu writer every sacred text is equally true. Maxims which have long since ceased to correspond with actual life are reproduced, either without comment, or with a non-natural interpretation. Extinct usages are detailed without a suggestion that they are extinct, from an idea that it is sacrilegious to omit anything that has once found a place in Holy Writ. In short we have exactly the same difficulty in dealing with our materials as a palæontologist would find, if all the archaic organisms which he compares had been discovered, not reposing in their successive strata, but jumbled together in a museum.

*Sruti* and  
*Smriti*.

§ 16. The two great categories of primeval authority are the *Sruti* and the *Smriti*. Somewhere in the order of precedence either in between the *Srutis* and the *Smritis*, or more probably after them, come the Puranas, which, according to Colebrooke, "are reckoned as a supplement to the Scripture, and as such constitute a fifth Veda" (b). The *Sruti* is that which was seen or perceived, in a revelation, and includes the four Vedas. The *Smriti* is the recollection handed down by the Rishis, or sages of antiquity (c). The former is of divine, the latter of human, origin. Where the two conflict, if such a conflict is conceivable, the latter

---

(b) *Per Mahmood, J., Ganga Sahai v. Lekhraj Singh*, 9 All., p. 289.  
(c) *Manu*, ii. § 9, 10; W. & B. 25.

must give away. Practically, however, the *Sruti* has little, or no, legal value. It contains no statements of law, as such, though its statements of facts are occasionally referred to as conclusive evidence of a legal usage. Rules, as distinct from instances, of conduct are for the first time embodied in the *Smriti*. The *Smriti*, again, are found on examination to fall under two heads, *viz.*, works written in prose, or in prose and verse mixed, and works written wholly in verse. The latter class of writings, being fuller and clearer, are generally meant when the term *Smriti* is used, but it properly includes both classes. To Professor Max Müller we owe the important generalisation, that the former, as a rule, are older than the latter. His views may be summarised as follows (d).

§ 17. The first duty of a Brahman was to study the *Sutras*. Vedas. These were orally transmitted for many ages before they were committed to writing, and orally taught, as they are even at the present time (e). Naturally many various versions of the same Veda arose, and sects, or schools, were formed, headed by distinguished teachers who taught from these various versions. To facilitate their teaching they framed *Sutras* or strings of rules, chiefly in prose, which formed rather a *memoria technica* by which the substance of the oral lessons might be recalled, than a regular treatise on the subject. Every department of the Vedas had its own *Sutras*. Those which related to the rules of practical life, or law, were known as the *Dharma-Sutras*, and these last again were as varied as the sects, or *Charanas*, from which they originated, and bore the names of the teachers by whom they were actually composed, or whose views they were supposed to embody. Thus the *Dharma-Sutras* which bear the name of Apastamba, Baudhayana, Gautama and the like, contain the substance of the rules of law imparted in the *Charanas* which recognized

(d) See his letter to Mr. Morley, 1 M. Dig. Introd. 196; A. S. Lit., pp. 125—134, 260, 377; W. & B. 31.

(e) See as to the introduction of writing, A. S. Lit. 497; Ind. Wisdom, 252.

those teachers as their heads, or which had adopted those names. Works of this class are known to have existed more than two hundred years before our era. Professor Max Müller places the *Sutra* period roughly as ranging from B.C. 600-200. But the composition of these works may have continued longer, and it cannot be asserted of any particular *Sutra* now in existence that it is of the age above specified.

Relative age of  
the *Sutras*.

§ 18. The *Dharma-Sutras* which bear the names of Gautama, Baudhayana, Apastamba, Vasishtha and Vishnu have been translated, the last named by Dr. Jolly and the others by Dr. Bühler (*f*). As to their relative antiquity Gautama is the oldest of all, being quoted by Baudhayana who ranks next in order of time. He belonged to the school of the Sama Veda. His use of the word Yavana, a term applied in very early Indian parlance to the Greeks, has been supposed to mark his period as not earlier than 300 B.C. The word, however, appears to have had other applications, and Dr. Bühler considers that it would be unsafe to found any opinion upon its use. At present nothing else is known by which the date of Gautama can be even approximately fixed (*g*). Next in point of time is Baudhayana. His *Sutras* were originally studied by the followers of the Black Yajurveda alone, but subsequently were accepted by all Brahmans as an authority on the Sacred Law. He was probably of Southern origin. Dr. Bühler considers that a period counted by centuries elapsed between his date and that of Apastamba, whom he places before the first century B.C. (*h*). Apastamba was also an inhabitant of Southern India, probably of the Andhra district, and a follower of the same Veda as Baudhayana. He is remarkable for the uncompromising vigour with which he rejects certain practices recognised by the early Hindu law, such as the various species of sons, the Niyoga and the Paisacha form of marriage (*i*).

(*f*) Sacred Books of the East, Vols. II, VII, and XIV.

(*g*) Bühler's Introduction to Gautama, 45, 49, 56.

(*h*) Bühler's Introduction to Baudhayana, 29, 35, and to Apastamba, 18, 22, 40.

(*i*) Bühler's Introduction to Apastamba, 16, 18, 30, 34.



Except from quotations contained in his work there is nothing to show the date of Vasishtha. He knew of Yama, Gautama, Harita, and a Manu, the author of the Manava Sutras. He may perhaps be supposed to have known Baudhayana. Dr. Jolly considers that he quoted from Vishnu, but in this opinion Dr. Bühler differs from him. Vasishtha appears to have been a native of the Northern part of India (*k*). No tradition exists as to the authorship of the Vishnu-Sutra. Dr. Bühler and Dr. Jolly agree in thinking that in its present form it has been recast with additions by those who, ignorant of its origin, wished to attribute it to the God Vishnu. Much of the work, both in style and substance, bears the mark of extreme antiquity, and portions of it are thought by Dr. Jolly to have been borrowed by Vasishtha or even by Baudhayana. He, like Vasishtha, was a follower, of the Black Yajur-veda (*l*). Harita, Hiranyakesin, Upanas, Yama, Kaçyapa and Çankha, all of whom are quoted in Colebrooke's Digest and by the commentators, are also of the Sutra period. Of these Harita is earlier than Baudhayana, and Hiranyakesin is later than Apastamba (*m*).

19. The Dharma-Sastras, which are wholly in verse, Professor Max Müller considers to be merely metrical versions of previously-existing Dharma-Sutras. Dr. Bühler, after pointing out "that almost in every branch of Hindu science, where we find text books in prose and in verse, the latter are only recent redactions of works of the former class," proceeds to say, "This view may be supported by some other general reasons. *Firstly*, if we take off the above-mentioned Introductions, the contents of the poetical Dharma-Sastras agree entirely with those of the Dharma-Sutras, whilst the arrangement of the subject-matter differs only slightly, not more than the Dharma-Sutras differ amongst each other. *Secondly*, the language of the poeti-

*Dharma-Sastras*  
generally more  
recent.

(*k*) Bühler's Introduction to Vasishtha, 16, 17, 21, 25.

(*l*) Dr. Jolly's Introduction to Vishnu. Lecture, 38. W. & B. 35.

(*m*) Bühler's Introduction to Apastamba, 23, 27.



cal Dharma-Sutras and Dharma-Sastras is nearly the same. Both show archaic forms, and in many instances the same. *Thirdly*, the poetical Dharma-Sastras contain many of the Slokas or Gathas given in the Dharma-Sutras, and some in an apparently modified form. Instances of the former kind are exceedingly numerous. A comparison of the Gathas from Vasishtha, Baudhayana, Apastamba and Hiranyakesin with the Manu Smriti, shows that more than a hundred of the former are incorporated in the latter." And he goes on to point out other instances in which passages of Manu are only modernised versions of passages now existing in Vasishtha's Sutra. In one case Manu (viii. § 140) quotes Vasishtha on a question of lawful interest, and the passage so quoted is still extant in the Sutras of that author. The result in Dr. Bühler's opinion is that "it would seem probable that Dharma-Sastras, like that ascribed to Manu and Yajnavalkya, are versifications of older Sutras, though they, in their turn, may be older than some of the Sutra works which have come down to our times" (n). A third work of a similar class is that known by the name of Narada. All of these are now accessible to English readers (o). As to relative age they rank in the order in which they are named. Their actual age is a matter upon which even proximate certainty is unattainable.

Manu.

§ 20. The Code of Manu has always been treated by Hindu sages and commentators, from the earliest times, as being of paramount authority; an opinion, however, which does not prevent them from treating it as obsolete whenever occasion requires (p). No better proof could be given of its antiquity. Whether it gained its reputation from its

---

(n) W. & B. 42.

(o) Yajnavalkya has been wholly translated in German by Professor Stenzler (1849). An English translation of the whole of the 2nd book, and of part of the 1st, has been made by Dr. Roer (Calcutta, 1859). The entire work has lately been translated by Mr. V. N. Mandlik (Bombay, 1880). Vrihaspati, whom Dr. Bühler classes in the same category, is only known by fragments cited by the commentators, and by Jagannatha in his Digest.

(p) See Preface by Sir W. Jones, p. 11, and general note at the end, p. 263 (London, 1796). V. N. Maudlik Introduction, 46. *Per curiam*, 14 M. I. A.

intrinsic merits, or from its alleged sacred origin ; or whether its sacred origin was ascribed to it in consequence of its age and reputation, we cannot determine. The personality of its author, as described in the work itself, is upon its face mythical. The sages implore Manu to inform them of the sacred laws, and he, after relating his own birth from Brahma, and giving an account of the creation of the world, states that he received the Code from Brahma, and communicated it to the ten sages, and requests Bhrigu, one of the ten, to repeat it to the other nine, who had apparently forgotten it. The rest of the work is then admittedly recited, not by Manu but by Bhrigu (*q*). Manu, the ancestor of mankind, was not an individual, but simply the impersonal and representative man. What is certain is, that among the Brahmanical schools was one known as the School of the Manavas, and that they used as their text for teaching a series of Sutras, entitled the Manava-Sutras. The Dharma-Sutras of this series are unfortunately lost, but it may be supposed that they were the concentrated essence from which the Manava Dharma-Sastras were distilled. Whether the sect took its name from a real teacher called Manu, or from the mythical being, cannot now be known (*r*).

§ 21. The age of the work in its present form is placed by His age. Sir W. Jones at 1280 B.C. ; by Schlegel at about 1000 B.C. ; by Mr. Elphinstone at about 900 B.C. ; and by Professor M. Williams at about the 5th century B.C., (*s*). Professor Max Müller would apparently place it as a post-Vedic work, at a date not earlier than 200 B.C., (*t*). One of his reasons for this view, *viz.*, that the continuous slokas in which it is written did not come into use until after that date, has been shown not to be beyond doubt, as Professor Goldstücker has established their existence at an earlier period (*u*). In order

---

(*q*) Manu, i. § 1—60, 119, iii. § 16, viii. § 204, xii. § 1. This fiction of recital by an early sage is a sort of common form in Hindu works of no great antiquity, W. & B. Introd. 24, (2nd ed).

(*r*) A. S. Lit. 532 ; 1 M. Dig. Introd. 197 ; Ind. Wiss. 213. Jolly, § 47. Bühler's Introduction to Manu, 14, 40, 91, 57, 63.

(*s*) Ind. Wiss. 215 ; Elphinstone, 227 ; Stenz., Pref. to Yajñavalkya, 10.

(*t*) A. S. Lit. 61, 244.

(*u*) W. & B. 42.

Various ver-  
sions.

to determine the question of age, it is necessary to settle whether the present rescension of Manu is the earliest or the latest of the many which undoubtedly existed. The introduction to Narada states that the work of Manu originally consisted of 1,000 chapters and 100,000 slokas. Narada abridged it to 12,000 slokas, and Sumati again reduced it to 4,000. The treatise which we possess has been supposed to be a third abridgment, as it only extends to 2,685. We also find a *Vridhha*, or old, Manu quoted, as well as a *Brihant*, or great, Manu (v). Further, while the existing Manu quotes from Vasishtha a rule which is actually found in his treatise, Vasishtha in turn quotes from Manu verses, two of which are found still, and two of which are not found, one of these latter being in a metre unknown to our Manu. Obviously, the interval between the Manu quoted by Vasishtha, and the Manu who quotes Vasishtha, must be very considerable. Further, Baudhayana quotes Manu for a proposition exactly the reverse of that now stated by him (ix. § 89). Even in a work so late as the 6th century A.D., verses are cited from Manu which can only be found in part in the existing work. The same fact would be apparent, as a matter of internal evidence, from the contradictions in the code itself. For instance, it is impossible to reconcile the precepts as to eating flesh meat (w), or as to the second marriage of women (x). Even as regards men, some passages seem to indicate that a man could not marry again during the life of his first wife, while in others second marriages are expressly recognized and regulated (y). So the texts which refer to the marriage of a Brahman with a Sudra woman (z), and to the procreation of children upon a widow for the benefit of the husband (a), are evidently of different periods. In former treatises Dr. Bühler had been disposed

---

(v) Dr. Jolly shows that these epithets have no historical significance, and that in general the authors to whose names they are appended are more recent than those with the same names and without the epithet, § 65.

(w) Manu, iv. § 230, v. § 7-57, xi. § 156-159.

(x) Manu, v. § 157, § 160-165, ix. § 65, 76, 175, 176, 191.

(y) Manu, v. § 167, viii. § 204, ix. § 77-87, 101, 102.

(z) Manu, iii. § 13-19, ix., § 148-155, 178, x. § 64-67.

(a) Manu, ix. § 56-66, 120, 143, 162-165, 167, 190, 191, 203.

to accept the view that the *Manu* which we possess was the most recent form of the work. In the introduction to his present translation, he has examined the whole question again, and has reached a different result. While admitting that the *Manava-Smriti* was based on materials of very much greater antiquity, he arrives at the conclusion "that *Bhrigu's Samhita* is the first and most ancient recast of a *Dharma-Sastra*, attributed to *Manu*, which latter must be identified with the *Manava Dharma-Sutra*." The age of this version he places between the 2nd century B.C., and the 2nd century A.D. (b).

§ 22. Next to *Manu* in date and authority is *Yajnavalkya*. Yajnavalkya.  
No *Sutras* corresponding to it have been discovered, and the work is considered by Professor Stenzler to have been founded on that of *Manu*. It has been the subject of numerous commentaries, the most celebrated of which is the *Mitakshara*, and is practically the starting point of Hindu law for those provinces which are governed by the latter. Of the actual author nothing is known. A *Yajnavalkya* is mentioned as the person who received the *White Yajur-veda* from the Sun, and this mythical personage is apparently put forward as the author of the law-book. Of course the two works are widely distant in point of time, but Dr. Bühler is disposed to think that the *Dharma-Sastras*, known by the name of *Yajnavalkya*, may have been based on *Sutras* which proceeded from the school which followed the Vedic author, or perhaps even from that author himself (c). This, of course, is mere conjecture. As in the case of *Manu*, an "old" and a "great" *Yajnavalkya* are spoken of, evidencing the existence of several editions of the same work. Its date can only be determined approximately within wide limits. It is undoubtedly much later than *Manu*, as is shown by references to the worship of *Ganesa* and the planets, to the use of deeds on metal plates, and the endowment of monasteries, while other pas-

---

(b) Bühler's Introduction to *Manu*, 92-117. Introduction to *Vasishtha*, —20.

(c) *Yaj.*, i. § 1, iii. § 140; A. S. Lit. 329; W. & B. 47.



His age.

sages, speaking of bald heads and yellow robes, are supposed to be allusions to the Buddhists (*d*). Professor Wilson points out that "passages taken from it have been found on inscriptions in every part of India, dated in the tenth and eleventh centuries. To have been so widely diffused, and to have then attained a general character as an authority, a considerable time must have elapsed, and the work must date therefore long prior to those inscriptions." He considers that the mention of a coin, Nanaka, which occurs in Yajnavalkya, refers to one of the coins of Kanerki, and therefore establishes a date later than 200 A.D. This inference, however, is considered by Professor Max Müller to be very doubtful. Passages from Yajnavalkya are found in the Panchatantra, which cannot be more modern than the end of the fifth century (*e*), and it is quoted wholesale in the Agni Purana, which is supposed to be earlier than the eighth century (*f*). It seems therefore tolerably certain that the work is more than 1,400 years old, but how much older it is impossible to state (*g*).

Narada.

§ 23. The last of the complete metrical Dharma-Sastras which we possess is the Narada-Smriti, which has been recently translated by Dr. Jolly. The work, as usual, is ascribed to the divine sage Narada, and purports to have been abstracted by him from the second abridgment of

---

(*d*) Yaj., i. § 270, 271, 272, 284, 318, ii. § 185.

(*e*) Wilson's Works, iv. 89.

(*f*) Wilson's Works, iii. 87, 90. See Stenzler's Preface, 10; A. S. Lit. 330.

(*g*) The above conclusions are substantially the same as those arrived at by Mr. V. N. Mandlik, in his Introduction, pp. 48—59. He says, (p. 51) "From an examination of the Yajnavalkya Smriti and its comparison with others, I may roughly state that I consider it to be later than Manu, Vasishtha, Gautama, Çankha, Likhita, and Harita, nearly contemporaneous with Vishnu and prior to Parasara and others. It does not seem to have at any one time formed the distinct basis of the Aryan law, like Manu, Gautama, Çankha, Likhita, and Parasara; but as bearing the impress of the leading exponent of the doctrines of the White Yajur-veda, it formed the principal guide of the fifteen Sakhas of that Veda. These Sakhas, as we find from the Charana Vyasa and other authorities, have chiefly predominated in the countries to the North of the Narmada." At p. 49 he says, "Yajnavalkya himself is only one of the numerous Smritikars, and his authority outside his own Sakha is of no peculiar importance." This latter statement seems inconsistent with the fact that the commentators of every district of India refer to, and rely on, his authority. Dr. Jolly says, "The composition of the metrical Smriti of Yajnavalkya cannot be referred to an earlier date than the first centuries A.D." § 49.

Manu in 4,000 slokas. It differs from Manu, however, in many most important respects, which are enumerated by Dr. Bühler and Dr. Jolly. One point of even greater importance than any mentioned by them, is the rank he gives to the adopted son. Manu places him third in the order of sons, and Narada places him ninth, thereby excluding him from the list of collateral heirs (*h*). It is, of course, possible (and I think probable) that in this respect Narada may be really following what was the original and genuine text of Manu. With this exception, if it be one, the whole of Narada is marked by a modern air as compared with Manu. Some of his rules for procedure in particular, seem to anticipate the English principles of special pleading (*i*). The same mode of comparison also establishes that Narada is more recent than Yajnavalkya. On the other hand, his age is so much greater than that of the Mitakshara, that he is not only quoted throughout that work, but quoted as one of the inspired writers. His views also appear to be of a more ancient character than those announced by Katyayana, Vrihaspati, Yama, and other Smritis referred to by the commentators. The result, according to Dr. Jolly, is, that the Narada-Smriti should be placed about the 5th or 6th century, or perhaps a little later; that is to say, about mid-way between Yajnavalkya and the time when the Smritis ceased to be composed. Dr. Bühler has recently made the interesting discovery of a fragment of a larger rescension of Narada than the one translated by Dr. Jolly. It is evidently the edition which was used by the earliest commentators, as it contains texts ascribed by them to Narada which are not found in the existing and abridged form of the work. Unfortunately the fragment does not extend beyond v. 19. (*k*).

His age.

24. Of still later date than Narada, is a class of Smritis, which are described by Dr. Bühler as "secondary redactions

Secondary Smritis.

Manu, ix. § 159; Nar xiii. § 48.  
 (i) See Nar., i. § 50—57.  
 Jolly, § 54.



of metrical Dharma-Sastras." Under this head he enumerates "the various Smritis which go under the names of Angiras, Atri, Daksha, Devala, Prajapati, Yama, Likhita, Vyasa, Sankha, Sankha Likhita, Vriddha-Satatapa. All these works are very small and of little significance. That they are really extracts from, or modern versions of, more extensive treatises, and not simply forgeries, as has been supposed, seems to follow from this, that some of the verses quoted by the older commentators of Yajnavalkya and Manu, such as Vijnanesvara, are actually found in them, whilst they cannot be the original works which those lawyers had before them, because other verses quoted are not found in them. In the case of the Vriddha-Satatapa-Smriti, the author himself states in the beginning that he only gives an extract from the larger work" (l). Of course, the texts contained in these works may be very ancient, though the editions which contain them are comparatively modern. Many of the names in the above list are actually enumerated by Yajnavalkya as original sources of law (m). They must, therefore, have existed, though not in their present shape, long before his time.

Authority of  
Smritis.

§ 25. II. THE COMMENTATORS.—All the works which come under the head of Smritis agree in this—that they claim, and are admitted to possess, an independent authority. One Smriti occasionally quotes another, as one Judge cites the opinion of another Judge, but every part of the work has the same weight, and is regarded as the utterance of infallible truth. No doubt these Smritis exhibit the greatest difference in their statements, owing to the lapse of time, and, probably, in part to local peculiarities. Parasara, one of the latest of this class, recognized this difference, and its cause, and is recorded as laying down that the Institutes

(l) W. & B. 50. For complete list of the Smritis, see *ibid.* 13; 1 Morl. Dig. 198; Stokes, H. L. B. 5; Ind. Wied. 211. V. N. Mandlik, xiv. Jolly, § 51.

(m) "Manu, Atri, Vishnu, Harita, Yajnavalkya, Usanas, Angiras, Yama, Apastamba, Samvarta, Katyayana, Vrihaspati, Parasara, Vyasa, Sankha Likhita, Daksha, Gautama, Satatapa, and Vasishtha, are they who have promulgated Dharma-Sastras." Yaj., i. § 4, 5. See an elaborate examination of these works. V. N. Mandlik, Appx. I.

of Manu were appropriate to the *Krita Yuga*, or first age; those of Gautama to the *Treta*, or second age; those of Sankha and Likhita to the *Dvapara*, or third age; and his own to the *Kali*, or sinful age, which still continues (*n*). Unhappily, the legal portion of his work, which we may imagine was founded on some attempt at historical principles, has disappeared. Later writers assume that the *Smritis* constitute a single body of law, one part of which supplements the other, and every part of which, if properly understood, is capable of being reconciled with the other (*o*). To a certain extent this may, perhaps, be true, as none of the *Dharma-Sutras*, or *Dharma-Sastras*, purport to cover the whole body of law (*p*). But the variances between them are not, and could not in the nature of things be, reconcilable. The unquestioning acceptance of the whole mass of *Smritis* in bulk, could only arise—*first* when their antiquity had become so great that the real facts which they represented had been forgotten, and that a halo of semi-divinity had encircled their authors; and, *secondly*, when the existing law had come to rest on an independent foundation of belief, so as to be able to maintain itself in defiance of the authorities on which it was based. A direct analogy may be found in modern theology, where systems of the most conflicting nature are all referred to the same documents, which are equally at variance with each other and with the dogmas which they are made to support.

Their antiquity.

§ 26. Far the weightiest of all the commentaries is that by Vijnanesvara, known as the *Mitakshara* (*q*). Its authority is supreme in the City and Province of Benares, and it stands at the head of the works referred to as settling the

*Mitakshara.*

(*n*) 1 Stra. H. L. Pref. 12. Manu, as we now possess it, mentions all four ages. i. § 81—86.

(*o*) It seems doubtful whether Manu considered that any texts except those of the Vedas were necessarily true, and therefore reconcilable. See ii. § 14, 15.

(*p*) W. & B. (2nd ed.) Introd. 3, 32; Stenz. Preface, 6.

(*q*) The portion of this work which treats of Inheritance is familiar to students by Mr. Colebrooke's translation. The portion on Judicial Procedure has been translated by Mr. W. MacNaghten, and forms the latter part of the first volume of his work on Hindu law. A table of contents of the entire work will be found at the end of the first volume of Borrodaile's Reports (folio, 1825.)

law in the South and West of India. It is the basis of the works which set out the law in Mithila. In Bengal alone it is to a certain extent superseded by the writings of Jimuta Vahana and his followers, while in Guzerat the Mayukha is accepted in preference to it, in the very few points on which they differ (r). The age of Vijnanesvara has been fixed by recent research to be the latter part of the eleventh century (s). His work is followed, with occasional though slight variances, by the writers to whom special weight is attributed in the other provinces.

#### Apararka.

Another commentator of little later date than Vijnanesvara, is Apararka, a Sovereign who reigned in the Konkan between 1140 and 1186. His views are very similar to those of the Mitakshara, which, however, he never mentions by name. His work is of paramount authority in Kashmir, and is referred to with respect by many of the later Digests. A portion of it, stating the order of succession, has been translated by Mr. Rajkumar Sarvadhikari (t).

#### Authorities in Southern India.

§ 27. The principal of the supplementary works in Southern India are the Smriti Chandrika, the Daya-Vibhaga, the Sarasvati Vilasa, and the Vyavahara Nirnaya (u). The Smriti Chandrika was written by Devanda Bhatta, during the existence of the Vijayanagara dynasty in the Deccan, and his date is stated by Dr. Burnell and by Dr. Jolly, to have been about the middle of the 13th century. Rajkumar Sarvadhikari places him a century earlier. The only translation as yet published is that by Kristnasawmy Iyer; Madras, 1867. Dr. Goldstücker is stated by Dr. Burnell (v) to have left an edition and translation ready for the press, but it appears never to have been printed. The Sarasvati-Vilasa was written in the beginning of the 16th, or,

(r) Colebrooke's note, 1 Stra. H. L. 817; W. & B. 10, *Krishnaji v. Pandurang*, 12 Bom. H. C. 65, *Collector of Madura v. Moottoo Ramalinga*, 12 M. 1. A. 487, S. C. 10 Sath. (P. C.) 17; S. C. 1 B. L. R. (P. C.) 1.

(s) W. & B. 17.

(t) Sarvadhikari, 426. W. & B. 18. Jolly, § 13.

(u) See *Collector of Madura v. Moottoo Ramalinga*, ante, § 26, note (r).

(v) Pref. to Varadaja.

according to Mr. Rajkumar Sarvadhikari, early in the 14th century by Pratapa Ruda Deva one of the kings of Orissa. It has recently been translated by the Rev. Mr. Foulkes (w). To Dr. Burnell we owe translations of the two other works above mentioned. The Daya-Vibhaga was written by Madhaviya, who was prime minister of several kings of the Vijayanagara dynasty, and who flourished during the latter half of the 14th century. The Vyavahara-Nirnaya was written by Varadaraja, of whom his editor remarks, "it is impossible to say any more than that he was probably a native of the Tamil country, and lived at the end of the 16th or beginning of the 17th century."

§ 28. The works which supplement the Mitakshara in Western India are the Vyavahara Mayukha, and the Viramirodaya. Of these, the Mitakshara ranks first and paramount in the Maratha country and in northern Kanara, and Ratnagiri while in Guzerat, and apparently also in the Island of Bombay, the Mayukha is considered as the overruling authority when there is a different of opinion (x). In Ahmednagar, Poona and Khandesh the Mayukha appears to be an authority equal to though not capable of over-ruling the Mitakshara (y). The Mayukha has been translated by Mr. Borrodaile, and quite recently by Mr. V. N. Mandlik. It is written by Nilakantha, whose family appears to have been of Maharatta origin, but settled in Benares. He lived about 1600 A.D., and his works came into general use about 1700. The Viramirodaya was written by Mitra Misra, and, like the Mayukha, follows the Mitakshara in most points. Its composition may be assigned to the beginning of the 17th century (z). It has lately (1879) been translated by Golapchandra Sarkar Sastri.

(w) Foulkes' Preface to *Sarasvati Vilasa*, vii.

(x) W. & B. 39, 11, 19, *Krishnaji v. Pandurang*, ante, § 26, note (r); *Lallubhai v. Mankuvarbai*, 2 Bom. 418. *Balkrishna v. Lakshman*, 14 Bom. 605. *Janki Bai v. Sundra*, ib. 612, 623. The Mayukha is also said to be an authority Paramount to the Mitakshara in the North Konkan. *Sakharam v. Sitabai*, 8 Bom. 858; *Jankibai v. Sundra*, 14 Bom. 624.

(y) *Bhagirthi Bhai v. Kahnujirav*, 11 Bom. 285, 294.

(z) W. & B. 22.



It is rather a Benares than a Bombay authority, and of inferior weight to the Mayukha in Western India (a). Other works of authority in Western India are mentioned by Dr. Bühler in his Introduction, but being untranslated I have not referred to them any further.

#### Mithila.

§ 29. In Mithila (or Tirhut and North Behar) the Mitakshara is also an authority, though the Pundits of that district appear to be in the habit rather of referring to the Vivada Chintamani and Vyavahara Chintamani of Vachaspati Misra, whose laws they say "are to this day venerated above all others by the Mithilas," and the Retnakara and the Vivada Chandra (b). The date of the first named work is put by Mr. Colebrooke, writing in 1796, as ten or twelve generations previously, that is about the middle of the 15th century. The Vivada Chintamani has been translated by Prossonno Coomar Tagore. Of the other works I only know the name.

#### Treatises on Adoption

§ 30. The two special works on adoption, viz., the Dattaka Chandrika and the Dattaka Mimamsa, possess at present an authority over other works on the same subject, which is, perhaps, attributable to the fact that they became early accessible to English lawyers and Judges from being translated by Mr. Sutherland. Mr. W. H. MacNaghten says of them (c). "In questions relative to the law of adoption, the Dattaka Mimamsa and Dattaka Chandrika are equally respected all over India; and where they differ, the doctrine of the latter is adhered to in Bengal and by the Southern jurists, while the former is held to be the infallible guide in the provinces of Mithila and Benares." This statement was accepted by the Judicial Committee in the Ramnad case (d), and has no doubt largely added to the weight which the works would otherwise have possessed. On the other

(a) *Collector of Madura v. Moottoo Ramalinga*, 12 M. I. A. 438, 466, *ante*, § 26, note (r), *Dhondu Gurav v. Gangabai*, 3 Bom. 369.

(b) *Rutheputty v. Rajunder*, 2 M. I. A. 134, 146; Coleb. Pref. to Dig. 19.

(c) W. MacN. Preface xxiii. and p. 74.

(d) *Collector of Madura v. Moottoo Ramalinga*, 12 M. A. 437, S. O. 10 Suth. (P. O.) 17; S. O. 1 B. L. R. (P. O.) 1.

hand, Mr. V. N. Mandlik states positively as to the Bombay Presidency, that the Dattaka Mimamsa "was not even known to the people in original for many years after the publication of its translation under the auspices of Government. And now the people are guided by the Nirnaya Sindhu, the Viramitrodaya, the Kaustubha, the Dharma Sindhu, the Mayukhas, and not by the Mimamsa or the Chandrika" (e). Mr. W. H. MacNaghten had no special knowledge of Southern India. It is possible that he was equally mistaken as to the acceptance of these works in the Madras Presidency (f). Probably his belief that the Dattaka Chandrika was an authority in Southern India arose from his supposing that it was written by Devanda Bhatta, the author of the great southern work the Smriti Chandrika. But there seems strong reason to doubt this. The last verse of the original work expressly states that the author's name was Kuvera, but because the author avowed himself to be the writer of the Smriti Chandrika, which was supposed to be the well known production of Devanda Bhatta, the latter name was substituted by Mr. Sutherland in his translation (g). Now Mr. V. N. Mandlik points out (h) that there were several works named Smriti Chandrika by different authors, and that there is strong internal evidence for supposing that the Dattaka Chandrika and the Smriti Chandrika of Devanda Bhatta were by different writers, while the influence possessed by the former work in Bengal could only be accounted for by supposing that it was really written by Kuvera, who was a Bengal author.

Nanda Pandita, the author of the Dattaka Mimamsa, was

---

(e) V. N. Mandlik, Introduction 73. See *per Mahmood, J.*, 9 All. 322. West and Bühler (11) say that the D. M. & D. Ch. are now treated in Bombay as supplementary, but inferior, authorities. In a Full Bench decision of the Bombay High Court, however, the judges stated that the Dattaka Mimamsa and Dattaka Chandrika were regarded by the Court as the leading authorities on adoption, and they declined to allow the reasonings of Mr. Mandlik to alter the usage of the Court in that respect. *Waman Raghupati v. Krishnaji*, 14 Bom., 259.

(f) See Nelson's Scientific Study, 87. n. citing a native of Madras on this point.

(g) Stokes, H. L. B. 662.

(h) V. N. Mandlik, Introduction 73. In this opinion he is supported by Dr. Bühler (W. & B. 10. n.) and by Dr. Jolly, (§ 22).



a member of a Benares family, whose descendants of the ninth generation are stated by Mr. V. N. Mandlik to be still flourishing in upper India. He must, therefore, have lived about 250 or 300 years ago (i).

Authorities  
Bengal.

§ 31. In Bengal, the Mitakshara and the works which follow it have no authority, except upon points where the law of that province is in harmony with the rest of India. In respect to all the points on which they disagree, the treatise of Jimuta Vahana is the starting point, just as that of Vijnanesvara is elsewhere. Little is known either of his identity or of his age. Many portions of his work are supposed to be a refutation of the Mitakshara, and he is expressly named and followed by Raghunandana, who lived in the beginning of the 16th century. On the other hand he quotes the Commentary of Govindaraja which was written in the 12th century. His date must lie between the 13th and 15th century (k). His authority must have been overpowering, as no attempt seems ever to have been made to question his views except in minute details; and the principal works of the Bengal lawyers since his time have consisted in commentaries on his treatise. Particulars of these works will be found in Mr. Colebrooke's Prefaces to the *Daya Bhaga* and to *Jagannatha's Digest*. The *Dayatatwa* by Raghunandana has been translated by Golap Chandra Sarkar. The only other work of the Bengal school which I know of in an English form, is the *Daya-Krama-Sangraha* by Sri Krishna Tarkalankara, translated by Mr. Wynch. It is very modern, its author having lived in the beginning of the last century, but it is considered as of high authority. It follows, and develops, the peculiarly Brahmanical views of the *Daya Bhaga*.

§ 32. Before quitting this part of the subject, a few words should be said as regards two digests made under European influence. I mean the *Vivadarnava Setu*, compiled at the

(i) V. N. Mandlik, Introduction 72 and p. 488.  
(k) Jolly, § 22. *Sarvadhikari* (408).

request of Warren Hastings, and commonly known as Halhed's Gentoo Code, from the name of its translator; Halhed's Code. and the *Vivada Bhagavata*, compiled at the instance of Sir William Jones by Jagannatha Terkapunchanana, and translated by Mr. Colebrooke, which is generally spoken of as Jagannatha's, or Colebrooke's, Digest. The former work, in its English garb, is quite worthless. It was translated by Mr. Halhed, not from the original Sanskrit, of which he was ignorant, but from a Persian version supplied to him by his interpreter, which Sir W. Jones describes as "a loose, injudicious, epitome of the original Sanskrit, in which abstract many essential passages are omitted, though several notes of little consequence are interpolated, from a vain idea of elucidating, or improving, the text" (l). No such drawback exists in the case of the latter work, which was translated by one who was not only the greatest Sanskrit scholar, but the greatest Sanskrit lawyer, whom England has ever produced. But Mr. Colebrooke himself early hinted a disapproval of Jagannatha's labours as abounding with frivolous disquisitions, and as discussing together the discordant opinions maintained by the lawyers of the several schools, without distinguishing which of them is the received doctrine of each school, or whether any of them actually prevail at present. This feature drew down upon the Digest the criticism of being "the best law-book for a Counsel and the worst for a Judge" (m). On the other hand, Mr. Justice Dwarkanath Mitter, who was of the greatest eminence as a Bengal lawyer, lately pronounced a high eulogium upon Jagannatha and his work, of whom he says: "I venture to affirm that, with the exception of the three leading writers of the Bengal school,—namely, the author of the *Daya Bhaga*, the author of the *Dayatatwa*, and the author of the *Daya-kramasangraha*,—the authority of Jagannatha Terkapunchanana, is, so far as that school is concerned, higher

Jaganatha's  
Digest.

(l) Pref. to Colebrooke's Digest, 10.

(m) Pref. to Digest, 11; Pref. to *Daya Bhaga*; 2 Stra. H. L. 176; Pref. to Stra. H. L. 18.

than that of any other writer on Hindu law, living or dead, not even excluding Mr. Colebrooke himself"<sup>(n)</sup>. It certainly seems to me that Jagannatha's work has fallen into rather undeserved odium. As a repertory of ancient texts, many of which are nowhere else accessible to the English reader, it is simply invaluable. His own Commentary is marked by the minute balancing of conflicting views which is common to all Hindu lawyers. But as he always gives the names of his authorities, a very little trouble will enable the reader to ascertain to what school of law they belong. His own opinion, whenever it can be ascertained, may generally be relied on as representing the orthodox view of the Bengal school.

Only two  
schools of law.

§ 33. III. DIFFERENT SCHOOLS OF LAW.—The term "school of law," as applied to the different legal opinions prevalent in different parts of India, seems to have been first used by Mr. Colebrooke <sup>(o)</sup>. He points out that there really are only two schools marked by a vital difference of opinion, *viz.*, those who follow the Mitakshara, and those who follow the Daya Bhaga. Those who fall under the former head are again divided by minor differences of opinion, but are in principle substantially the same. Of course in every part of India, though governed by practically the same law, the pundits refer by preference to the writers who lived nearest to, and are best known to, themselves; just as English, Irish, and American lawyers refer to their own authorities, when attainable, on any point of general jurisprudence. This has given rise to the idea that there are as many schools of law as there are sets of local writers, and the subdivision has been carried to an extent for which it is impossible to suggest any reason or foundation. For instance, Mr. Morley speaks of a Bengal, a Mithila, a Benares, a Maharashtra, and a Dravida School, and sub-

<sup>(n)</sup> *Kery Kolutany v. Moneeram*, 13 B. L. R. 50, S. C. 19 Suth. 394.

<sup>(o)</sup> 1 Stra. H. L. 315. As to the mode in which such divergences sprung up, see the remarks of the Judicial Committee in the *Ramnada case*, *Collector of Madura v. Moottoo Ramalinga*, 12 M. I. A. 435; S. C. 10 Suth. (P. O.) 17; S. C. 1 B. L. R. (P. O.) 1.

divides the latter into a Dravida, a Karnataka and an Andhra division (*p*). So the Madras High Court and the Judicial Committee distinguish between the Benares and the Dravida schools of law (*q*), and a distinction between an Andhra and a Dravida School has also received a sort of quasi-recognition (*r*). On the other hand, Dr. Burnell ridicules the use of the terms Karnataka and Andhra, which he declares to be wholly destitute of meaning, while the term Dravidian has a very good philological sense, but no legal significance whatever. Practically he agrees with Mr. Colebrooke in thinking that the only distinction of real importance is between the followers of the Mitakshara and the followers of the Daya Bhaga (*s*).

§ 34. In discussing this subject, it seems to me that we must distinguish between differences of law arising from differences of opinion among the Sanskrit writers, and differences of law arising from the fact that their opinions have never been received at all, or only to a limited extent. In the former case there are really different schools of law; in the latter case there are simply no schools. I think it will be found that the differences between the law of Bengal and Benares come under the former head, while the local variances which exist in the Punjab, in Western, and in Southern, India, come under the latter head.

Causes of  
variance.

§ 35. Any one who compares the Daya Bhaga with the Mitakshara will observe that the two works differ in the most vital points, and that they do so from the conscious application of completely different principles. These will be discussed in their appropriate places through this work, but may be shortly summarised here.

The Daya  
Bhaga.

(*p*) 1 M. Dig. Introd. 221. In this he is supported by Mr. Rajkumar Sarva-  
dhikari (p. 409), who (p. 334) traces the origin of divergent opinions on questions  
of law to the teaching of Srikara in the 11th century.

(*q*) See the *Ramnád adoption suit*, 2 Mad. H. C. 206; 12 M. I. A. 397, *supra*  
note (o).

(*r*) *Narasammal v. Balaramacharlu*, 1 Mad. H. C. 420.

(*s*) Pref. to Varadrajah, 5; Nelson's View of Hindu Law, 21: V. N. Mand-  
lik. Introduction, 70. See the remarks of Mahmood, J. in *Ganga Sahai v.*  
*Lekhraj Singh*, 9 All., p. 290.



*First* ; the Daya Bhaga lays down the principle of religious efficacy as the ruling canon in determining the order of succession ; consequently it rejects the preference of agnates to cognates, which distinguishes the other systems, and arranges and limits the cognates upon principles peculiar to itself (t).

*Secondly* ; it wholly denies the doctrine that property is by birth, which is the corner-stone of the joint family system. Hence it treats the father as the absolute owner of the property, and authorises him to dispose of it at his pleasure. It also refuses to recognize any right in the son to a partition during his father's life (u).

*Thirdly* ; it considers the brothers, or other collateral members of the joint family, as holding their shares in quasi-severalty, and consequently recognizes their right to dispose of them at their pleasure, while still undivided (v).

*Fourthly* ; whether as a result of the last principle, or upon independent grounds, it recognizes the right of a widow in an undivided family to succeed to her husband's share, if he dies without issue, and to enforce a partition on her own account (w).

*Factum valet.*

It is usual to speak of the doctrine *factum valet* as one of universal application in the Bengal school. But this is a mistake. When it suits Jimuta Vahana, he uses it as a means of getting over a distinct prohibition against alienation by a father without the permission of his sons (x). I am not aware of his applying the doctrine in any other case. No Bengal lawyer would admit of any such subterfuge as sanctioning, for instance, the right of an undivided brother to dispose of more than his own share in the family property for his private benefit, or as authorising a widow to adopt without her husband's consent, or a boy to be adopted

(t) See post, § 459, et seq.

(u) See post, § 224, 235.

(v) See post, § 241.

(w) See post, § 242, 438.

(x) Daya Bhaga, ii. § 80.



after *upanayana*, or marriage. The principle is only applied where a legal precept has been already reduced by independent reasoning to a moral suggestion.

§ 36. Now, in all the above points the remaining parts of India agree with each other in disagreeing with Jimuta Vahana and his followers. Their variances *inter se* are comparatively few and slight. Far the most important is the difference which exists between Western India and the other provinces which follow the Mitakshara, as to the right of females to inherit. A sister, for instance, who is nowhere else recognized as an heir, ranks very high in the order of succession in the Bombay Presidency, and many other heiresses are admitted, who would have no *locus standi* elsewhere (y). Any reader of Indian history will have observed the public and prominent position assumed by Mahratta Princesses, and it seems probable that the doctrine which prevails in other districts, that women are incapable of inheriting without a special text, has never been received at all in Western India. Women inherit there, not by reason, but in defiance, of the rules which regulate their admission elsewhere. In their case, written law has never superseded immemorial custom (z.)

Females in  
Western India.

§ 37. Another matter as to which there is much variance is the law of adoption. For instance, as regards the right of a widow to adopt a son to her deceased husband. In Mithila no widow can adopt. In Bengal and Benares she can, with her husband's permission. In Southern India, and in the Punjab, she can adopt, even without his permission, by the consent of his sapindas. In Western India she can adopt without any consent (a). So as regards the person to be adopted. The adoption of a daughter's, or a sister's, son is forbidden to the higher classes by the Sanskrit writers. It is legal in the Punjab. It is commonly

Law of adoption.

(y) Vyavahara Mayukha, iv. 8, § 19; W. & B. 127—132.

(z) See post, § 472, 488—490, 513, 541.

(a) See post, § 101.

practised in the South of India (b). In all these cases we may probably trace a survival of ancient practices which existed before adoption had any religious significance, unfettered by the rules which were introduced when it became a religious rite. The similarity of usage on these points between the Punjab and the South of India seems to me strongly to confirm this view. It is quite certain that neither borrowed from the other. It is also certain that in the Punjab adoption is a purely secular arrangement. There seems strong reason to suppose that in Southern India it is nothing more (c). But what is of importance with regard to the present discussion is, that these differences find no support in the writings of the early sages, or even of the early commentators. They appear for the first time in treatises which are absolutely modern, or merely in recorded customs. To speak of such variances as arising from different schools of law, would be to invert the relation of cause and effect. We might just as well invent different schools of law for Kent and Middlesex, to account for Gavelkind and the Customs of London. Even Hindu lawyers cannot alter facts. In some instances they try to wrest some holy precept into conformity with the facts (d); but in other cases, and especially in Western India, the facts are too stubborn. The more closely we study the works of the different so-called schools of law, other than those of Bengal, the more shall we be convinced that the principles of all are precisely the same. The local usages of the different districts vary. Some of these usages the writers struggle to bring within their rules; others they silently abandon as hopeless. What they cannot account for, they simply ignore (e).

(b) See *post*, § 123, 124.

(c) See *post*, § 95.

(d) See, for instance, the mode in which four conflicting views as to the right of a widow to adopt have been deduced from a single text of Vasishtha, *Collector of Madura v. Mootoo Ramalinga*, 12 M. I. A. 485; S. C. 10 Suth. (P. O.) 17; S. C. 1 B. L. R. (P. O.) 1.

(e) For instance, second marriages of widows or wives, which are equally practised in the North, the West, and the South of India, see *post*, § 89.

§ 38. IV. JUDICIAL DECISIONS.—A great deal has been said, often by no means in a flattering spirit, of the decisions upon Native Law of our Courts, whether presided over by civilian, or by professional, Judges. It seems to be supposed that they imported European notions into the questions discussed before them, and that the divergences between the law which they administered and that which is to be found in the Sanskrit law-books, are to be ascribed to their influence. In one or two remarkable instances, no doubt, this was the case ; but those instances are rare. My belief is that their influence was exerted in the opposite direction, and that it rather showed itself in the pedantic maintenance of doctrines whose letter was still existing, but whose spirit was dying away. It could hardly have been otherwise. It seems to be forgotten that upon all disputed points of law, the English Judges were merely the mouthpieces of the pundits who were attached to their Courts, and whom they were bound to consult (*f*). The slightest examination of the earliest reports at a time when all points of law were treated as open questions, will show that the pundits were invariably consulted, wherever a doubt arose, and that their opinions were for a long time implicitly followed. If, then, the decisions were not in accordance with Hindu law, the fault rested with the pundits, and not with the Judges. The tendency of the pundits would naturally be to magnify the authority of their own law-books ; and accordingly we find that they invariably quote some text in support of their opinion, even when the text had no bearing whatever upon the point. The tendency of the Judges was even more strongly in the same direction. The pundit, however bigoted he might be, was at all events a Hindu, living amongst Hindus, and advising upon a law which actually governed the every-day lives of himself and his family and his friends. He would torture a sacred text into an authority for his opinion ; but his

Influence of  
English Judges.

The Pundits.

---

(*f*) The pundits, as official referees of the Courts, were only abolished by Act XI of 1864.

opinion would probably be right, though unsustained by, or even opposed to, his text. With the English Judge there was no such restraining influence. He was sworn to administer Hindu law to the Hindus, and he was determined to do so, however strange or unreasonable it might appear. At first he accepted his law unhesitatingly from the lips of the pundits; and so long as he did so, probably no great harm was done. But knowledge increased, and the fountains were opened up, and he began to enquire into the matter for himself. The pundits were made to quote chapter and verse for their opinions, and it was found that their premises did not warrant their conclusions. Or their opinions upon one point were compared with their opinions upon an analogous point, and found not to harmonise, and logic demanded that they should be brought into conformity with each other. Sometimes the variance between the *futwabs* and the texts was so great that it was ascribed to ignorance, or to corruption. The fact really was that the law had outgrown the authorities. Native Judges would have recognized the fact. English Judges were unable to do so, or else remarked (to use a phrase which I have often heard from the Bench), "that they were bound to maintain the integrity of the law." This was a matter of less importance in Bengal, where Jimuta Vahana had already burst the fetters. But in Southern India it came to be accepted, that *Mitakshara* was the last word that could be listened to on Hindu law. The consequence was a state of arrested progress, in which no voices were heard unless they came from the tomb. It was as if a German were to administer English law from the resources of a library furnished with *Fleta*, *Glanville* and *Bracton*, and terminating with Lord Coke (g).

Force of usage.

§ 39. In Western and Northern India the differences between the written and the unwritten law were too palpa-

---

(g) The substance of this paragraph was written by me in an Indian journal so long ago as 1863. I mention the fact, lest it should be supposed that I have borrowed, without acknowledgment, from a very interesting passage in Sir H. S. Maine's *Village Communities*, p. 44.

ble to be passed over. Accordingly in many important cases in Borrodaile's Reports, we find that the Court did not merely ask the opinion of their pundits, but took the evidence of the heads of the castes concerned as to their actual usage. The collection of laws and customs of the Hindu castes, made by Mr. Steele under the orders of Government, was another step in the same direction. It is probable that the laxity, which has been remarked as the characteristic of Hindu law in the Bombay Presidency, would be found equally to exist in many other districts, if the Courts had taken the trouble to look for it. In quite recent times the Courts of the N.-W. Provinces and of the Punjab have acted on the same principle of taking nothing for granted. The result has been the discovery, that while the actual usages existing in those districts are remarkably similar to those which are declared in the Mitakshara and the kindred works, there is a complete absence of those religious principles which are so prominent in Brahmanical law. Consequently the usages themselves have diverged, exactly at the points where they might have been expected to do so (*h*). *Absente causâ, abest et lex.*

---

(*h*) See Punjab Customs, 5, 11, 78; *Sheo Singh Rai v. Mt. Dakho*, 5 N.-W. P. 382; *affd.* 5 I. A. 87; S. C. 1 All. 688; *Chotay Lall v. Chunno Lall*, 6 I. A. 15; S. O. 4 Cal. 744.



## CHAPTER III.

### THE SOURCES OF HINDU LAW.

#### *Custom.*

#### **Custom binding.**

§ 40. IF I am right in supposing that the great body of existing law consists of ancient usages, more or less modified by Aryan or Brahmanical influence, it would follow that the mere fact that a custom was not in accordance with written law, that is with the Brahmanical code, would be no reason whatever why it should not be binding upon those by whom it was shown to be observed. This is admitted in the strongest terms by the Brahmanical writers themselves. Manu says that "immemorial usage is transcendant law," and that "holy sages, well knowing that law is grounded on immemorial custom, embraced, as the root of all piety, good usages long established" (a). And he lays it down that "a king who knows the revealed law, must enquire into the particular laws of classes, the laws or usages of districts, the customs of traders, and the rules of certain families, and establish their peculiar laws" (b); to which Kulluka Bhatta adds, as his gloss, "If they (that is, the laws) be not repugnant to the law of God," by which no doubt he means the text of the Vedas as interpreted by the Brahmans. But that Manu contemplated no such restriction is evident by what follows a little after the above passage. "What has been practised by good men and by virtuous Brahmans, if it be not inconsistent with the legal customs of provinces or districts, of classes or families, let

---

(a) Manu, i. § 108, 110.

(b) Manu, viii. § 41. See, too, Vrihaspati, cited Vyavahara Mayukha, i. 1, § 13, and Vasishtha and other authorities, cited M. Müller, A. S. Lit. 50.

him establish" (c). So Yajnavalkya says (d), "Of a newly-subjugated territory, the monarch shall preserve the social and religious usages, also the judicial system, and the state of classes, as they already obtained." And the Mitakshara quotes texts to the effect, that even practices expressly inculcated by the sacred ordinances may become obsolete, and should be abandoned if opposed to public opinion (e).

§ 41. The fullest effect is given to custom both by our Courts and by legislation. The Judicial Committee in the Ramnad case said, "Under the Hindu system of law, clear proof of usage will outweigh the written text of the law" (f). And all the recent Acts which provide for the administration of the law dictate a similar reference to usage, unless it is contrary to justice, equity or good conscience, or has been actually declared to be void (g).

Recognized by  
modern law.

§ 42. It is much to be regretted that so little has been done in the way of collecting authentic records of local customs. The belief that Brahmanism was the law of India was so much fostered by the pundits and Judges, that it came to be admitted conventionally, even by those who knew better. The revenue authorities, who were in daily intercourse with the people, were aware that many rules which were held sacred in the Court, had never been heard of in the cottage. But their local knowledge appears rarely to have been made accessible to, or valued by, the Judicial department. I have already mentioned, as an exception, Mr. Steele's collection of customs in force in the Deccan. In the Punjab and in Oudh most valuable records of village and tribal customs, relating to the succession to, and disposition of, land have been collected under the authority of

Records of local  
customs.

(c) Manu, viii. § 46.

(d) Yajnavalkya, i. § 342.

(e) Mitakshara, i. 3, § 4. See V. N. Mandlik. Introduction, 43, 70. Raghunandana, i. 83.

(f) *Collector of Madura v. Mootoo Ramalinga*, 12 M. L. A. 436; S. C. 10 Suth. (P. C.) 17; S. C. 1 B. L. R. (P. C.) 1.

(g) See, as to Bombay, Bom. Reg. IV of 1827, s. 26; Act II of 1864, s. 15. As to Burmah, Act XVII of 1875, s. 5. Central Provinces, Act XX of 1875, s. 5. Madras, Act III of 1873, s. 16. Oudh, Act XVIII of 1876, s. 3. Punjab, Act XII of 1878, s. 1. See *Sundar v. Khuman Singh*, 1 All. 618.

the settlement officers, and these have been brought into relation with the Judicial system by an enactment that the entries contained in them should be presumed to be true (*h*). Many most interesting peculiarities of Punjab Law will be found in a book to which I shall frequently refer, which gives the substance of these customs, and of the decisions of the Chief Court of Lahore upon them, and in three volumes issued under the authority of the Punjab Government on the same subject (*i*). The special interest of these customs arises from the fact, already noticed (*k*), that Brahmanism seems never to have succeeded in the Punjab. Accordingly, when we find a particular usage common to the Punjab and to Sanskrit law, we may infer that there is nothing necessarily Brahmanical in its origin (*l*). Another work of the greatest interest, which I believe no writer has ever noticed, is the Thesawaleme, or description of the customs of the Tamil inhabitants of Jaffna, on the island of Ceylon. The collection was made in 1707, under the orders of the Dutch Government, and was then submitted to, and approved by, twelve Moodelliars, or leading Natives, and finally promulgated as an authoritative exposition of their usages (*m*). Now, we know that from the earliest times there

Thesawaleme.

(*h*) These records are known by the terms, *Wajib-ul-arz* (a written representation or petition) and *Riwaz-i-am* (common practice or custom). See Punjab Customs, 19; Act XXXIII of 1871, s. 61. XVII of 1876, s. 17. *Lekraj Kuar v. Mahpal Singh*, 7 I. A. 63; S. C. 5 Cal. 744; *Hurbhaj v. Gumani*, 2 All. 493; *Isri Singh v. Ganga*, *ib.* 876. In the case of *Uman Parshad v. Gandharp Singh*, 14 I. A. 127, C. S. 15 Cal. 20, the Judicial Committee called attention to a practice which had grown up in Oudh, of allowing the proprietor to enter his own views upon the *Wajib-ul-arz*, whereas it ought to be an official record of customs, arrived at by the inquiries of an impartial officer. See too *per curiam*, 12 All. 835. A *Wajib-ul-arz* which has long stood on record, and been unquestioned by the parties who would be affected by it, is *prima facie* evidence of custom, though not signed by any landholder in the village. *Rustam Ali v. Abbasi*, 13 All. 407.

(*i*) Notes on Customary Law, as administered in the Courts of the Punjab, by Charles Boulnois, Esq., Judge of the Chief Court, and W. H. Rattigan, Esq., Lahore, 1876. I cite it shortly as Punjab Customs. Punjab Customary Law. Edited by C. L. Tupper, C. S. Calcutta, 1881.

(*k*) *Ante*, § 8.

(*l*) Mr. C. L. Tupper says of the Punjab, "The Brahmans are not in the Punjab the depositaries of Customary law. To ascertain it, we must go to the Tribal Council, if there be one, or to the elders of the tribe." "It is not, I think, the custom which has modified the law. It is the Brahmanical law occasionally, and the Muhammedan law more often, which has modified the custom." Punjab Customary Law, II. 82, 86.

(*m*) The edition which I possess was published in 1862, with the decisions of the English Courts, by Mr. H. F. Mutukistna, who gave it to me.

has been a constant stream of emigration of Tamulians into Ceylon, formerly for conquest, and latterly for purposes of commerce. We also know that the influence of Brahmans, or even of Aryans, among the Dravidian races of the South has been of the very slightest, at all events until the English officials introduced their Brahman advisers (n). The customs recorded in the Thesawaleme may, therefore, be taken as very strong evidence of the usages of the Tamil inhabitants of the South of India two or three centuries ago, at a time when it is certain that those usages could not be traced to the Sanskrit writers. Undoubted evidence of the condition of Hindu law at a very much earlier period may also be found in the usages of the Nambudry Brahmans on the West Coast in the Madras Presidency. The tradition is that they were introduced into Malabar as an organised community by king Parasurama, and the evidence tends to show that they must have been settled there about 1200 or 1500 years ago. As they took their place among a community which was governed by a totally different system, it may safely be assumed that the form of Hindu law which prevails among the Nambudries of the present day is that which was universal among the Brahmans of Eastern India at the time of their emigration. Its archaic character exactly accords with such a conclusion (o). Many very interesting customs still existing in Southern India will be found in the Madura Manual by Mr. Nelson, and in the Madras Census Report of 1871 by Dr. Cornish. These show what rich materials are available, if they were only sought for.

§ 43. Questions of usage arise in four different ways in India. *First*; as regards races to whom the so-called Hindu law has never been applied; for instance, the aboriginal Hill tribes, and those who follow the *Marumakatayem* law of Malabar, or the *Alya Santana* law of Canara. *Secondly*; as regards those who profess to follow the Hindu law generally, but who do not admit its theological developments.

Various applications of Hindu law.

(n) See ante, § 6.

(o) *Vasudevan v. Secy. of State*, 11 Mad. 160, 181.



*Thirdly* ; as regards races who profess submission to it as a whole ; and, *fourthly*, as regards persons formerly bound by Hindu law, but to whom it has become inapplicable.

Cases where religious principles are ignored.

§ 44. The first of the above cases, of course, does not come within the scope of this work at all. The distinction between the second and third classes is most important, as the deceptive similarity between the two is likely to lead to erroneous conclusions in cases where they really differ. For instance, in an old case in Calcutta, where a question of heirship to a Sikh was concerned, this question again turning upon the validity of a Sikh marriage, the Court laid it down generally that "the Sikhs, being a sect of Hindus, must be governed by Hindu law" (*p*). Numerous cases in the Punjab show that the law of the Sikhs differs materially from the Hindu law, in the very points, such as adoption and the like, in which the difference of religion might be expected to cause a difference of usage. Similar differences are found among the Jats (*q*), and even among the orthodox Hindus of the extreme north-west of India (*r*). So, as regards the Jains, it is now well recognized that, though of Hindu origin, and generally adhering to Hindu law, they recognize no divine authority in the Vedas, and do not practise the *Shradhs*, or ceremony for the dead, which is the religious element in the Sanskrit law. Consequently, that the principles which arise out of this element do not bind them, and, therefore, that their usages in many respects are completely different (*s*). I strongly suspect that most of the Dravidian tribes of Southern India come under the same head (*t*).

---

(*p*) *Juggomohun v. Saumcoomar*, 2 M. Dig. 43.

(*q*) The Jats (Sanskrit, Yadava) are the descendants of an aboriginal race. Manning's Ancient India, i. 66.

(*r*) See Punjab Customs, *passim*. As to the effect of the introduction of the Punjab code as creating a *lex loci*, see *Mulkah Do v. Mirza Jehan*, 10 M. I. A. 252 ; S. C. 2 Suth. (P. C.) 55.

(*s*) *Bhagvandas v. Rajmal*, 10 Bom. H. C. 241 ; *Sheo Singh Rai v. Mt. Dakho*, 6 N.-W. P. 382, *affd.* 5 I. A. 87 ; S. C. 1 All. 688. See cases where such difference of usage was held not to be made out, *Lalla Mohabeer v. Mt. Kundun*, 8 Suth. 116 ; *affd. Sub nomine Doorga Pershad v. Mt. Kundun*, 1 I. A. 55 ; S. C. 21 Suth. 214 ; S. C. 13 B. L. R. 235. *Bachebi v. Makhan*, 8 All. 55.

(*t*) See *ante*, § 2, 11.



§ 45. As regards those who profess submission to the Hindu Law as a whole, questions of usage arise, *first*, with a view to determine the particular principles of that law by which they should be governed; and, *secondly*, to determine the validity of any local, tribal, or family exceptions to that law. *Primâ facie*, any Hindu residing in a particular province of India is held to be subject to the particular doctrines of Hindu Law recognized in that province. He would be governed by the Daya Bhaga in Bengal; by the Vivada Chintamani in North Behar and Tirhut; by the Mayukha in Guzerat; and generally by the Mitakshara elsewhere (*u*). But this law is not merely a local law. It becomes the personal law, and a part of the *status* of every family which is governed by it. Consequently, where any such family migrates to another province, governed by another law, it carries its own law with it (*v*). For instance, a family migrating from a part of India where the Mitakshara, or the Mithila, system prevailed, to Bengal, would not come under the Bengal law from the mere fact of its having taken Bengal as its domicil. And this rule would apply as much to matters of succession to land as to the purely personal relations of the members of the family. In this respect the rule seems an exception to the usual principles, that the *lex loci* governs matters relating to land, and that the law of the domicil governs personal relations. The reason is, that in India there is no *lex loci*, every person being governed by the law of his personal status. The same rule as above would apply to any family which, by legal usage, had acquired any special custom of succession, or the like, peculiar to itself, though differing from that either of its original, or acquired, domicil (*w*).

Disputed applicability of local law.

(*u*) See *ante*, § 26—31. As to Assam and Orissa, which are supposed to be governed by Bengal law, and Ganjam by the law of Madras, see *ante*, § 11.

(*v*) This law will not necessarily be the law now prevailing in the domicil of origin, but that which did prevail there at the time of emigration. *Vasudevan v. Secy. of State*, 11 Mad. 157, 162.

(*w*) *Rutcheputty v. Rajunder*, 2 M. I. A. 132; *Byjnath v. Kopilmon*, 24 Suth. 95, and *per curiam*. *Soorendronath v. Mt. Heeramonee*, 12 M. I. A. 91, *infra*. note (*x*.) *Manik Chand v. Jagat Settani*, 17 Cal. 518.

Change of personal law.

§ 46. When such an original variance of law is once established, the presumption arises that it continues; and the *onus* of making out their contention lies upon those who assert that it has ceased by conformity to the law of the new domicile (*x*). But this presumption may be rebutted, by showing that the family has conformed in its religious or social usages to the locality in which it has settled; or that, while retaining its religious rites, it has acquiesced in a course of devolution of property, according to the common course of descent of property in that district, among persons of the same class (*y*).

Act of Government.

Of course the mere fact that, by the act of Government, a district which is governed by one system of law is annexed to one which is governed by a different system, cannot raise any presumption that the inhabitants of either district have adopted the usages of the other (*z*).

Evidence of valid custom.

§ 47. The next question is as to the validity of customs differing from the general Hindu law, when practised by persons who admit that they are subject to that law. According to the view of customary law taken by Mr. Austin (*a*), a custom can never be considered binding until it has become a law by some act, legislative or judicial, of the sovereign power. Language pointing to the same view is to be found in one judgment of the Madras High Court (*b*). But such a view cannot now be sustained. It is open to the obvious objection, that, in the absence of legislation, no custom could ever be judicially recognized for the first time. A decision in its favour would assume that it was already binding. The sounder view appears to be that law

(*x*) *Soorendronath v. Mt. Heeramonee*, 12 M. I. A. 81; S. C. 1 B. L. R. (P. C.) 26; S. C. 10 Suth. (P. C.) 35; *Obunnessurree v. Kishen*, 4 Wym. 226; *Sonatum v. Ruttun*, Suth. Sp. 95; *Pirthee Singh v. Mt. Sheo*, 8 Suth. 261.

(*y*) *Rajchunder v. Goculchund*, 1 S. D. 48 (56); *Chundro v. Nobin Soondur*, 2 Suth. 197; *Rambromo v. Kaminee*, 6 Suth. 295; S. C. 3 Wym. 3; *Junaruddeen v. Nobin Chunder*, Marsh. 232; *per curiam*, *Soorendronath v. Mt. Heeramonee*, 12 M. I. A. 96; *Supra*. note (*x*).

(*z*) *Prithee Singh v. Court of Wards*, 23 Suth. 272.

(*a*) Austin, i. 148, ii. 229.

(*b*) *Narasammal v. Balaramacharlu*, 1 Mad. H. C. 424.

and usage act, and re-act, upon each other. A belief in the propriety, or the imperative nature, of a particular course of conduct, produces a uniformity of behaviour in following it; and a uniformity of behaviour in following a particular course of conduct, produces a belief that it is imperative, or proper, to do so. When from either cause, or from both causes, a uniform and persistent usage has moulded the life, and regulated the dealings, of a particular class of the community, it becomes a custom, which is a part of their personal law. Such a custom deserves to be recognized and enforced by the Courts, unless it is injurious to the public interests, or is in conflict with any express law of the ruling power (c). Hence, where a special usage of succession was set up, the High Court of Madras said, "What the law requires before an alleged custom can receive the recognition of the Court, and so acquire legal force, is satisfactory proof of usage, so long and invariably acted upon in practice, as to show that it has, by common consent, been submitted to as the established governing rule of the particular family, class, or district of country; and the course of practice upon which the custom rests must not be left in doubt, but be proved with certainty" (d). This decision was affirmed on appeal, and the Judicial Committee observed (e): "Their Lordships are fully sensible of the importance and justice of giving effect to long established usages existing in particular districts and families in India, but it is of the essence of special usages, modifying the ordinary law of succession, that they should be ancient and invariable; and it is further essential that they should be established to be so by clear and unambiguous evidence. It is only by means of

---

(c) See the subject discussed, *Khojah's case*, Perry, O. C. 110; *Howard v. Pestonji*, *ib.* 585; *Tara Chand v. Reeb Ram*, 3 Mad. H. C. 56; *Bhau Nanaji v. Sundrabai*, 11 Bom. H. C. 249; *Mathura v. Esu*, 4 Bom. 545; Savigny, *Droit Rom.* i. 88—36, 165—175; Introduction to Punjab Customs.

(d) *Sivanananja v. Muttu Ramalinga*, 3 Mad. H. C. 75, 77; affirmed on appeal, *Sub nomine, Ramalakshmi v. Sivanantha*, the *Oorcad case*, 14 M. I. A., 570; S. C. 12 B. L. R. 896, S. C. 17 Suth. 553. Approved by the Bombay High Court, *Shidhojirav v. Naikojirav*, 10 Bom. H. C. 234. See also *Bhujangrav v. Malojirav*, 5 Bom. H. C. (A. C. J.) 161.

(e) 14 M. I. A. 585.

such evidence that the Courts can be assured of their existence, and that they possess the conditions of antiquity and certainty on which alone their legal title to recognition depends." Accordingly, the Madras High Court, when directing an inquiry as to an alleged custom in the south of India that Brahmans should adopt their sisters' sons, laid it down that: "I. The evidence should be such as to prove the uniformity and continuity of the usage, and the conviction of those following it that they were acting in accordance with law, and this conviction must be inferred from the evidence; II. Evidence of acts of the kind; acquiescence in those acts; decisions of Courts, or even of punchayets, upholding such acts; the statements of experienced and competent persons of their belief that such acts were legal and valid, will all be admissible; but it is obvious that although admissible, evidence of this latter kind will be of little weight if unsupported by actual examples of the usage asserted" (*f*). Finally, the custom set up must be definite, so that its application in any given instance may be clear and certain, and reasonable. (*g*)

§ 48. Where a tribe or family are admittedly governed by Hindu law, but assert the existence of a special custom in derogation of that law, the *onus* of course rests upon those who assert the custom to make it out. For instance, a custom forbidding adoption, or barring inheritance by adoption, might be established, though in a family otherwise subject to Hindu law it would probably require very strong evidence to support it (*h*). But if the tribe or family had been originally non-Hindu, and only adopted Hindu usages in part, the *onus* would be shifted, and the burthen of proof would rest upon the side which alleged that any particular doctrine had become part of the personal law. A case of

---

(*f*) *Gopalayyan v. Raghupatiayyan* 7 Mnd. H. C. 250, 254. See, too, *per Markby, J.*, *Hiranath v. Baboo Ram*, 9 B. L. R. 294; S. C. 17 Suth. 816; *Collector of Madura v. Moottoo Ramalinga*, 12 M. I. A., 486, S. C. 10 Suth. (P. C.) 17; S. C. 1 B. L. R. (P. C.) 1 and *Hurpurshad v. Sheo Dyal*, 8 I. A. 285, S. C. 26 Suth. 55. *Vishnu v. Krishnan*, 7 Mnd. 3.

(*g*) *Lachman v. Akbar*, 1 All. 440; *Lala v. Hira*, 2 All. 49.

(*h*) *Bishnath Singh v. Ram Churn Mujmodar*, S. D. of 1850, 20.



this sort arose in regard to the Baikantpur family, who were not originally Hindus, but who had in part, though not entirely, adopted Hindu customs. On a question of succession, when the estate was claimed by an adopted son, it was held by the Judicial Committee that the *onus* rested upon those who relied on the adoption to show that this was one of the Hindu customs which had been taken into the family law. If the family was generally governed by Hindu law the claimant might rely on that, and then the *onus* of proving a family custom would be on him who asserted it (*i*).

§ 49. It follows from the very nature of the case, that a mere agreement among certain persons to adopt a particular rule, cannot create a new custom binding on others, whatever its effect may be upon themselves (*k*). Nor can a family custom ever be binding where the family, or estate, to which it attaches is so modern as to preclude the very idea of immemorial usage (*l*). Nor does a custom, such as that of primogeniture, which has governed the devolution of an estate in the hands of a particular family, follow it into the hands of another family, by whom it may have been purchased. In other words, it does not run with the land (*m*).

Custom cannot  
be created by  
agreement.

§ 50. Continuity is an essential to the validity of a custom as antiquity. In the case of a widely-spread local custom, want of continuity would be evidence that it had never had a legal existence; but it is difficult to imagine that such a custom, once thoroughly established, should come to a sudden end. It is different, however, in the case of family usage, which is founded on the consent of a smaller number of persons. Therefore, where it appeared

Continuity  
essential.

(*i*) *Fanindra Deb v. Rajeswar*, 12 I. A. 72, S. C. 11 Cal. 463.

(*k*) *Per cur.*, *Mynna Boyee v. Ootaram*, 8 M. I. A. 420, S. C. 2 Suth. (P. C.) 4; *Abraham v. Abraham*, 9 M. I. A. 242; S. C. 1 Suth. (P. C.) 1; *Sarupi v. Mukh Ram*, 2 N.-W. P. 227. *Bhaoni v. Maharaj Singh*, 3 All. 738

(*l*) *Umritnath v. Goureenath*, 13 M. I. A. 542, 549, S. C. 15 Suth. (P. C.) 10.

(*m*) *Gopal Dass v. Nurotum*, 7 S. D. 195 (230).



May be discontinued.

that the members of a family, interested in an estate in the nature of a Raj, had for twenty years dealt with it as joint family property, as if the ordinary laws of succession governed the descent, the Privy Council held that any impartible character which it had originally possessed, was determined. They said: "Their Lordships cannot find any principle, or authority, for holding that in point of law a manner of descent of an ordinary estate, depending solely on family usage, may not be discontinued, so as to let in the ordinary law of succession. Such family usages are in their nature different from a territorial custom, which is the *lex loci* binding all persons within the local limits in which it prevails. It is of the essence of family usages that they should be certain, invariable, and continuous; and well established discontinuance must be held to destroy them. This would be so when the discontinuance has arisen from accidental causes; and the effect cannot be less when it has been intentionally brought about by the concurrent will of the family. It would lead to much confusion, and abundant litigation, if the law attempted to revive and give effect to usages of this kind after they had been clearly abandoned, and the abandonment had been, as in this case, long acted upon" (n).

Usage of single family.

§ 51. The above cases settle a question, as to which there was at first some doubt entertained, *viz.*, whether a particular family could have a usage differing from the law of the surrounding district applicable to similar persons (o). There is nothing to prevent proof of such a family usage. But in the case of a single family, and especially a family of no great importance, there will of course be very great difficulty in proving that the usage possesses the antiquity and continuousness, and arises from the sense of legal necessity as distinguished from conventional arrangement,

(n) *Rajkishen v. Ramjoy*, 1 Cal. 186, S. C. 19 Suth. 8. See, also, *per cur.*, *Abraham v. Abraham*, 9 M. I. A. 243, S. C. 1 Suth. (P. C.) 1.

(o) See *Basvantrav v. Mantappa*, 1 Bom. H. C. Appx. 42 (2nd ed.); *per cur.*, *Tara Chand v. Reeb Ram*, 3 Mad. H. C. 58; *Mudhavray v. Balkrishna*, 4 Bom. H. C. (A. C. J.) 113.

that is required to make out a binding usage (*p*). Where the family is a very great one, whose records are capable of being verified for a number of generations, the difficulty disappears. In the case of the Tipperah Raj, a usage has been repeatedly established by which the Raja nominates from amongst the members of his family the Jobraj (young sovereign) and the Bara Thakoor (chief lord), of whom the former succeeds to the Raj on a demise of the Raja, and the second takes the place of Jobraj (*q*). Also a custom in the Raj of Tirhoot, by which the Raja in possession abdicates during his lifetime, and assigns the Raj to his eldest son, or nearest male heir (*r*). Many of the cases of estates descending by primogeniture appear to rest on the nature of the estate itself, as being a sort of sovereignty, which from its constitution is impartible (*s*). But family custom alone will be sufficient, even if the estate is not of the nature of a Raj, provided it is made out (*t*). And where an impartible Raj has been confiscated by government, and then granted out again, either to a stranger, or to a member of the same family, the presumption is that it has been granted with its incidents as a Raj, of which the most prominent are impartibility and descent by primogeniture (*u*). This presumption, however, will not prevail, when the mode of dealing with the Raj after its confiscation, and the mode of its regrant are consistent with an intention that it should for the future possess the ordinary incidents of partibility

(*p*) See the subject discussed, *Bhau Nanaji v. Sunbdrabai*, 11 Bom. H. C. 269; *Ismail v. Fidayat*, 3 All. 723.

(*q*) *Neelkisto Deb v. Beerchunder*, 12 M. I. A. 523, S. C. 12 Suth. (P. C.) 21; S. C. 3 B. L. R. (P. C.) 13.

(*r*) *Gunesh v. Moheshur*, 6 M. I. A. 164, which see in the Court below, 7 S. D. 228 (271); see the *Pachete Raj*, *Gurundnarain v. Unund*, 5 S. D. 282 (354), *affd. Sub. nomine*, *Anund v. Dheraj*, 5 M. I. A. 82.

(*s*) There may, however, be a partible Raj. See *Ghirdharee v. Koolahul*, 2 M. I. A. 344, S. C. 6 Suth. (P. C.) 1.

(*t*) *Rawut Urjun v. Rawut Ghunsiam*, 5 M. I. A. 169; *Chowdhry Chintamun v. Nowlukho*, 2 I. A. 263, S. C. 24 Suth. 255; *Yarlagadda Mallikarjuna v. Y. Durga*, 17 I. A. 134, S. C. 13 Mad. 406.

(*u*) *Beer Pertab v. Maharajah Rajender*, (*Hunsapore case*), 12 M. I. A. 1, S. C. 9 Suth. (P. C.) 15; *Mutta Vaduganatha v. Dorasinga*, 8 I. A. 99, S. C. 3 Mad. 290.

(*v*) *Venkata Narasimha v. Narayya*, (*Nuzvid case*), 7 I. A. 38, S. C. 2 Mad. 128. *Mirangi Zamindar v. Satrucharla Ramabhadra*, 18 I. A. 45, S. C., 14 Mad. ---

Immoral usages.

§ 52. Customs which are immoral, or contrary to public policy, will neither be enforced, nor sanctioned (*w*). For instance, prostitution is not only recognized by Indian usage, and honoured in the class of dancing girls, but the relations between the prostitute and her paramour were regulated by law, just as any other species of contract (*x*). Even under English law prostitution is, of course, not illegal, in the sense of being either prohibited, or punishable; and I conceive there can be no reason why the existence of a distinct class of prostitutes in India, with special rules of descent *inter se*, should not be recognized now, and those rules acted on (*y*). But prostitution even according to Hindu views is immoral, and entails degradation from caste (*z*). It is quite clear, therefore, that no English Court would look upon prostitution as a consideration that would support a contract; and it has been held that the English rule will also be enforced to the extent of defeating an action against a prostitute for lodgings, or the like, supplied to her for the express purpose of enabling her to carry on her trade (*a*). So it has been held that the procuring of a minor to be a dancing girl at a pagoda, or the disposing of her as such, is punishable under ss. 372 & 373 of the Indian Penal Code (*b*), and the Bombay High Court went so far as to hold that the adoption of a girl by persons of this class, to be brought up in their profession, cannot be recognised as conferring any rights (*c*). The soundness of any such general rule seems, however, to have been doubted by the

---

(*w*) Manu, viii. § 41; M. Müller, A. S. L. 50. See statutes cited, *ante*, § 41, note (*g*).

(*y*) See Viv. Chint. 101.

(*a*) *Munoo v. Motee*, 7 S. D. 273 (325); *Shida v. Sunshidapa, Morris*, 5 Mad. H. C. 161; and see *per cur.*, *Chalakonda v. Ratnachalam*, 2 Mad. H. C. 10. See also *Munoo v. Motee*, 132 S. D. 132; *Sivasunqu v. Minal*, 12 Mad. 277; *Tara Naikin v. Muttu*, 1356; *Muttu*, 1356; *Muttu*, 1356.

Suth. 445, S. C. 9 B. L. R. appx. 37.

See *Sutao v. Hurreeram*, Bellasis, 1.

(*b*) *Emm Padmanati*, 5 Mad. H. C. 415; *R. v. Jaili*, 6 Bom. H. C. (C. C.) 1, 1 Mad. 168. See, however, *Emm Padmanati*, 5 Mad. 273.

19 Mad. 273.

*Mathura v. Esu*, 4 Bom. 545.

Bombay Court in a more recent case, and was expressly denied in Madras (*d*). So it has been held in Bombay that caste customs authorising a woman to abandon her husband, and marry again without his consent, were void for immorality (*e*). And it was doubted whether a custom authorising her to marry again, during the lifetime of her husband, and with his consent, would have been valid (*f*). Among the Nairs, as is well known, the marriage relation involves no obligation to chastity on the part of the woman, and gives no rights to the man. But here what the law recognizes is not a custom to break the marriage bond, but the fact that there is no marriage bond at all (*g*). In a case before the Privy Council, a custom was set up as existing on the west coast of India, whereby the trustees of a religious institution were allowed to sell their trust. The Judicial Committee found that no such custom was made out, but intimated that in any case they would have held it to be invalid, as being opposed to public policy (*h*).

§ 53. The fourth class of cases mentioned before (§ 43), arises when circumstances occur which make the law, which has previously governed a family, no longer applicable. In one sense any new law which is adopted for the governance of such a family must be wanting, as regards that family, in the element of antiquity necessary to constitute a custom. On the other hand, the law itself which is adopted may be of immemorial character; the only question would be as to the power of the family to adopt it. We have already seen that a family migrating from one part of India to another, may either retain the law of its origin, or adopt that of its domicil (*i*). The same rule applies to a family which has changed its *status*. If the new *status* carries

Change of  
family usage.

(*d*) *Tara Naikin v. Nana Lakshman*, 14 Bom. 90. *Venku v. Mahalinga*, 11 Mad. 393. See post, § 183.

(*e*) *R. v. Karsan*, 2 Bom. H. C. 124; see *R. v. Manohar*, 5 Bom. H. C. (C. C.) 17; *Uji v. Hathi*, 7 Bom. H. C. (A. C. J.) 133; *Narayan v. Laving*, 2 Bom. 140.

(*f*) *Khemkor v. Umiashankar*, 10 Bom. H. C. 381.

(*g*) See *Koraga v. Reg.*, 6 Mad. 374.

(*h*) *Rajah Vurmah v. Ravi Vurmah*, 4 I. A. 76, S. C. 1 Mad. 235.

(*i*) *Ante*, § 46.

with it an obligation to submit to a particular form of law, such form of law is binding upon it. If, however, it carries with it no such obligation, then the family is at liberty, either to retain so much of its old law as is consistent with its change of *status*, or to adopt the usages of any other class with which the new *status* allows it to associate itself.

**Conversion to  
Muhammedan-  
ism.**

§ 54. Where a Hindu has become converted to Muhammedanism, he accepts a new mode of life, which is governed by a law recognized, and enforced, in India. It has been stated that the property which he was possessed of at the time of his conversion will devolve upon those who were entitled to it at that time, by the Hindu law, but that the property which he may subsequently acquire will devolve according to Muhammedan law (*k*). The former proposition, however, must, I should think, be limited to cases where by the Hindu law his heirs had acquired an interest which he could not defeat. If he was able to disinherit any of his relations by alienation, or by will, it is difficult to see why he should not disinherit them by adopting a law which gave him a different line of heirs. The latter part of the proposition, however, has been affirmed by the Privy Council, in a case where it was contended that a family which had been converted several generations back to Muhammedanism was still governed by Hindu law. Their Lordships said, "This case is distinguishable from that of *Abraham v. Abraham* (*l*). There the parties were native Christians, not having, as such, any law of inheritance defined by statute; and, in the absence of one, this Committee applied the law by which, as the evidence proved, the particular family intended to be governed. But the written law of India has prescribed broadly that in questions of succession and inheritance, the Hindu law is to be applied to Hindus, and the Muhammedan law to Muhammedans; and in the judgment delivered by Lord Kingsdown in *Abraham v.*

---

(*k*) 2 W. MacN. 131, 132; *Jowala v. Dharam*, 10 M. I. A. 537.  
(*l*) 9 M. I. A. 195, S. C. 1 Suth. (P. C.) 1.



*Abraham*, p. 239, it is said that 'this rule must be understood to refer to Hindus and Muhammedans, not by birth merely, but by religion also.' The two cases in *W. H. MacNaghten's Principles of Hind. L.*, vol. ii., pp. 131, 132, which deal with the case of converts from the Hindu to the Muhammedan faith, and rule that the heirs according to Hindu law will take all the property which the deceased had at the time of his conversion, are also authorities for the proposition that this subsequently acquired property is to be governed by the Muhammedan law. Here there is nothing to show conclusively when or how the property was acquired by 'the great ancestor;' there was no conflict as in the cases just referred to, between Hindus and Muhammedans touching the succession to him. Whatever he had is admitted to have passed to his descendants, of whom all, like himself, were Muhammedans; and it seems to be contrary to principle that, as between them, the succession should be governed by any but Muhammedan law. Whether it is competent for a family converted from the Hindu to the Muhammedan faith to retain for several generations Hindu usages and customs, and by virtue of that retention to set up for itself a special and customary law of inheritance, is a question which, so far as their Lordships are aware, has never been decided. It is not absolutely necessary for the determination of this appeal to decide that question in the negative, and their Lordships abstain from doing so. They must, however, observe, that to control the general law, if indeed the Muhammedan law admits of such control, much stronger proof of special usage would be required than has been given in this case" (*m*).

55. These remarks of the Judicial Committee were not necessary for the decision of the case before them, as they held that the plaintiff would equally have failed if the prin-

Retention of  
Hindu usages.

---

(*m*) *Jowala v. Dharum*, 10 M. I. A. 511, 537. See *Hakim Khan v. Gool Khan* 8 Cal. 826, in which the Court, with much reason, doubted the decision in *Rupchund v. Latu Chowdhry*, 3 C. L. R. 97, where it was laid down as settled law that with Muhammedans living in a Hindu country, the presumption of joint family and commensality arises. See next paragraph.

ciples of Hindu law had been applied to his claim. Nor did they profess absolutely to decide that a convert to Muhammedanism might not still retain Hindu usages, and they partly rest their view against such retention of usage upon the ground that there was no decision upon the subject. The point, however, has been repeatedly decided the other way in Bombay, with regard to a sect called *Khojahs*. These are a class of persons who were originally Hindus, but who became converts to Muhammedanism about four hundred years ago, retaining however many Hindu usages, amongst others an order of succession opposed to that prescribed by the Koran. A similar sect named the *Memon Cutchees* had a similar history and usage. In 1847, the question was raised in the Supreme Court of Bombay, whether this order of succession could be supported, and Sir Erskine Perry, in an elaborate judgment, decided that it could. His decision has been followed in numerous cases in Bombay, both in the Supreme and High Court, and may be considered as thoroughly established (n). It has, however, been held that these decisions did not establish that the Khojas had adopted the entire Hindu family law, and that it could not be assumed without sufficient evidence that they were bound by the law of partition, so far as it allows a son to claim a share of the family property in his father's lifetime (o). But although these cases may probably be taken as settling that an adherence to the religion of the Koran does not necessarily entail an adherence to its civil law, there may be cases in which religion and law are inseparable. In such a case the ruling of the Privy Council would be strictly in point, and would debar any one who had accepted the religion from relying on a custom opposed to the law. For instance, monogamy is an essential part of

---

(n) *Khojah's case*, Perry, O. C. 110; *Gangbai v. Thavur*, 1 Bom. H. C. 71, 73; *Mulbai, in the Goods of*, 2 Bom. H. C. 292; *Rahimbai, in the Goods of*, 12 Bom. H. C. 294; *Rahimathai v. Hirbai*, 3 Bom. 34; *Suddurtonnessa v. Majada*, 3 Cal. 694; *Haji Ismail's Will*, 6 Bom. 452; *Ashabai v. Haji Tyeb*, 9 Bom. 115; *Abdul Cadur v. Turner*, *ibid.* 158; *Mahomed Sidick v. Haji Ahmed*, 10 Bom. 1; *Re Haroon Mahomed*, 14 Bom. 189.

(o) *Ahmedbhoy v. Cassumbhoy*, 13 Bom. 534, over-ruling S. C. 12 Bom. 280.

the law of Christianity. A Muhammedan, or Hindu, convert to Christianity could not possibly marry a second wife after his conversion, during the life of his first, and if he did so, the issue by such second marriage would certainly not be legitimate, any Hindu or Muhammedan usage to the contrary notwithstanding (*p*). His conversion would not invalidate marriages celebrated, or affect the legitimacy of issue born before that event. What its effect might be upon issue proceeding from a plurality of wives retained after he became a christian, would be a very interesting question, which has never arisen.

§ 56. The second part of the rule above stated (*q*) is illustrated by the case of *Abraham v. Abraham* (*r*), referred to above. There it appeared that there were different classes of native Christians of Hindu origin. Some retained Hindu manners and usages, wholly or chiefly, while others, who were known as East Indians, and who are generally of mixed blood, conformed in all respects to European customs. The founder of the family in question was of pure Hindu blood, and belonged to a class of native Christians which retained native customs. But as he rose in the world and accumulated property, he assumed the dress and usages of Europeans. He married an East Indian wife, and was admitted into, and recognized as a member of, the East Indian community. After his death the question arose whether his property was to be treated as the joint property of an undivided Hindu family, and governed by pure Hindu law; or if not, whether it was to be governed by a law of usage, similar to Hindu or to European law. The former proposition was at once rejected. Their Lordships said (*s*): "It is a question of parcenership and not of heirship. Heirship may be governed by the Hindu law, or by any

Case of the  
Abrahams.

(*p*) See *Hyde v. Hyde*, L. R. 1. P. & D. 130; *Skinner v. Orde*, 14 M. I. A. 309, 324, S. C. 10 B. L. R. 125; S. C. 17 Suth. 77.

(*q*) *Ante*, § 53.

(*r*) 9 M. I. A. 195, S. C. 1 Suth. (P. C.) 1. Native Christians are now governed by the Indian Succession Act. *Ponnusami v. Dorasami*, 2 Mad. 209. See *Sarkies v. Prosonomoyee*, 6 Cal. 794.

(*s*) 9 M. I. A. 237, S. C. 1 Suth. (P. C.) 5.

other law to which the ancestor may be subject ; but parcenership, understood in the sense in which their Lordships here use the term, as expressing the rights and obligations growing out of the *status* of an undivided family, is the creature of, and must be governed by the Hindu law. Considering the case, then, with reference to parcenership, what is the position of a member of a Hindu family who has become a convert to Christianity ? He becomes, as their Lordships apprehend, at once severed from the family and regarded by them as an outcast. The tie which bound the family together is, so far as he is concerned, not only loosened but dissolved. The obligations consequent upon, and connected with the tie must, as it seems to their Lordships, be dissolved with it. Parcenership may be put an end to by a severance effected by partition ; it must, as their Lordships think, equally be put an end to by severance which the Hindu law recognizes and creates. Their Lordships, therefore, are of opinion that, upon the conversion of a Hindu to Christianity, the Hindu law ceases to have any continuing obligatory force upon the convert. He may renounce the old law by which he was bound, as he has renounced his old religion ; or, if he thinks fit, he may abide by the old law, notwithstanding he has renounced the old religion.” Their Lordships then reviewed the facts, showing the different usages of different classes of Christians, and the evidence that Abraham had, in fact, passed from one class into another, and proceeded to say (t) : “ That it is not competent to parties to create, as to property, any new law to regulate the succession to it *ab intestato*, their Lordships entertain no doubt ; but that is not the question on which this case depends. The question is, whether, when there are different laws as to property applying to different classes, parties ought not to be considered to have adopted the law as to property, whether in respect of succession *ab intestato*, or in other respects, of the class to which they belong. In this parti-

---

(t) 9 M. I. A. 242, 244, S. C. 1 Suth. (P. C.) 6.

cular case the question is, whether the property was bound by the Hindu law of parcenership." "The law has not, so far as their Lordships can see, prohibited a Christian convert from changing his class. The inconvenience resulting from a change of succession consequent on a change of class is no greater than that which often results from a change of domicil. The *argumentum ab inconvenienti* cannot therefore be used against the legality of such a change. If such change takes place in fact, why should it be regarded as non-existing in law? Their Lordships are of opinion, that it was competent for Matthew Abraham, though himself both by origin and actually in his youth a 'native Christian,' following the Hindu laws and customs on matters relating to property, to change his class of Christians, and become of the Christian class to which his wife belonged. His family was managed and lived in all respects like an East Indian family. In such a family the undivided family union, in the sense before mentioned, is unknown."

§ 57. On the same principle, where a European had illegitimate sons by two Hindu women, and they conformed in all respects to Hindu habits and usages, it was held that they must for all purposes be treated as Hindus, and governed by Hindu law as such. "They were not an united Hindu family in the ordinary sense in which that term is used by the text writers on Hindu law; a family of which the father was in his lifetime the head, and the sons in a sense parceners in birth, by an inchoate, though alterable, title; but they were sons of a Christian father by different Hindu mothers, constituting themselves parceners in the enjoyment of their property, after the manner of a Hindu joint family" (u). And it was held that their rights of succession *inter se* and to their mother, must be judged by Hindu law, which recognized such rights, and not by Eng-

Illegitimate issue of European.

---

(u) *Myna Boyee v. Ootaram*, 8 M. I. A. 400, 420, S. C. 2 Suth, (P. C.) 4.



lish law, which denied them (v). On the other hand, the vast majority of the class known as East Indians, and referred to in the judgment in *Abraham v. Abraham*, have been the illegitimate sons of Europeans by natives or half-caste women, who, from being acknowledged and cared for by their fathers, have adopted European modes of life. These, as already stated, would be governed by European law.

---

(v) Same case, 2 Mad. H. C. 196.

## CHAPTER IV.

### FAMILY RELATIONS.

#### *Marriage and Sonship.*

§ 58. No part of the Hindu Law is more anomalous than that which governs the Family relations. Not only does there appear to be a complete break of continuity between the ancient system and that which now prevails, but the different parts of the ancient system appear in this respect to be in direct conflict with each other. We find a law of inheritance, which assumes the possibility of tracing male ancestors in an unbroken pedigree extending to fourteen generations; while coupled with it is a Family Law, in which several admitted forms of marriage are only euphemisms for seduction and rape, and in which twelve sorts of sons are recognized, the majority of whom have no blood relationship to their own father. I am not aware that any attempt has hitherto been made to harmonise, or to account for, these apparent inconsistencies. It has been suggested, however, that some of the peculiarities of the system may be referred to the practice of polyandry, which is supposed to have been once universal (a). It seems to me that the proved existence of such a practice would not account for the facts. I also doubt whether polyandry, properly so called (b),

Anomalies in  
Family Law.

(a) I refer, of course, to the views put forward by Mr. McLennan throughout his *Studies in Ancient History*, 1876. Also in two articles in the *Fortnightly Review*, May and June, 1877. McLennan. *Patriarchal Theory*, 1885.

(b) By polyandry, properly so called, I mean a system under which a woman is the legal property of several husbands at once, as among the Todas; or under which a woman, who is legally married to one husband, has the right, which he cannot dispute, to admit other men at her own pleasure, as among the Nairs. I

ever prevailed among the races who were governed by the system now under discussion, while they were governed by it. It is quite possible that it may have prevailed among them at a still earlier stage of their history. But this circumstance would be immaterial, if there is reason to suppose that they had escaped from its influence before the introduction of the Family law, which we find in force at the time of the earliest Sanskrit writings. Still more, if that law can be accounted for on principles which have nothing to do with polyandry. It will be well, however, to clear the ground for the discussion, by enquiring what are the actual facts.

Polyandry  
among non-  
Aryan races.

§ 59. Among the non-aryan races of India, both the former and the present existence of polyandry is beyond dispute. It is peculiarly common among the Hill tribes, who are probably aboriginal; but it is also widely diffused among the inhabitants of the plains (c). Among the Nairs, the woman remains in her own home after her marriage, and there associates with as many men as she pleases (d). The Teehurs of Oude "live together almost indiscriminately in large communities, and even where two people are regarded as married, the tie is but nominal" (e). Among the Western Kallans of Madura, "it constantly happens that a woman is the wife of either ten, eight, six, or two husbands, who are held to be the fathers jointly and severally of any children that may be born of her body. And still more curiously, when the children of such a family grow up, they for some unknown reason style themselves the children, not of ten, eight, or six fathers, as the case

---

exclude cases of mere dissoluteness. No one would apply the term polyandry to the institution of the *cavalier servente* in Italy or Spain. I also exclude cases in which a woman is allowed to offer herself to a man, who claims a sort of semi-divinity, as in the case of the Maharajas of Bombay; and the analogous cases of promiscuous prostitution of married women as a sort of religious rite. See Dubois (ed. 1862), 302; Wilson, Works, i. 263.

(c) In the Punjab it is still found existing in Seoraj, Lahoul and Spiti. Punjab Customary Law, II. 186, 187, 191. Here the joint husbands are always brothers.

(d) McLennan, 147.

(e) Lubbock, *Origin of Man* (ed. 1870), 73, citing the *People of India*, by Kaye and Watson, ii. 85.

may be, but of eight and two, or six and two, or four and two fathers" (*f*). Among the Kannuvans of Madura, "a woman may legally marry any number of men in succession, though she may not have two husbands at one and the same time. She, may, however, bestow favours on paramours without hindrance, provided they be of equal caste with her" (*g*). Among the Todas of the Nilgiris, as in Thibet, the wife is the property of all the brothers, and lives in their home (*h*). A similar custom prevails among the Tiars, or palm cultivators of Malabar and Travancore (*i*). Among the Tottiyars, a caste of Madura, it is the usage for brothers, uncles, nephews and other relations, to hold their wives in common, and their priests compel them to keep up the custom, if they are unwilling; outside the family they are chaste (*k*).

§ 60. It is difficult to believe that polyandry in its lowest form, as authorising the union of women with a plurality of husbands of different family, could ever have been common among the Aryan Hindus. Such a system, as Mr. McLennan points out (*l*), would necessarily produce a system of kinship through females, such as actually exists among the polyandrous tribes of the West Coast of India. Now, the most striking feature in the Aryan Hindu customs is the strictness with which kinship is traced through males. Except in Bengal, where the change is comparatively modern, agnates to the fourteenth degree exclude cognates. This rule is connected with, if it is not based upon, their religious system, the first principle of which was the practice of worshipping deceased male ancestors to the remotest degree (*m*). This, of course, involved the assumption that

Polyandry  
among Aryans.

(*f*) Madura Manual, Pt. II. 54.

(*g*) *Ibid.* 34.

(*h*) Brecks, Primitive Tribes, 10.

(*i*) Madras Census Report, 162.

(*k*) Dubois, 8; Madura Manual, Pt. II. 82.

(*l*) *Studies*, 124, 135. Mr. L. H. Morgan's objections (p. 515) to the general proposition stated by Mr. McLennan as to kinship through females, seem not to apply to the limited form of that proposition as stated in the text.

(*m*) *Manu*, iii. § 81—91, 122—125, 189, 193—231, 282—284; Spencer, i. 304; Appx. 1.; M. Müller, A. S. Lit. 386; Ind. Wind. 255.

those ancestors could be identified with the most perfect certainty. The female ancestors were only worshipped in conjunction with their deceased husbands. We can be quite certain that this system was one of enormous antiquity, since we find exactly the same practice of religious offerings to the dead prevailing among the Greeks and Romans. We may assert with confidence that a usage common to the three races had previously existed in that ancient stock from which Hindus, Greeks, and Romans, alike proceeded. No doubt, Mr. McLennan points out numerous indications of kinship through females among the Greeks, especially in the case of the Trial of Orestes. But, if I may be allowed to say so, all these instances seem to be less the voice of a living law, than the feeble echoes of one sounding from a past that was dead (*n*). I by no means deny that polyandry of the second, or Toda, type, may have existed among the Hindu Aryans. But I think that at the earliest times of which we have any evidence it had become very rare, and had fallen into complete discredit even where it existed. Also, that everything which we find in the oldest Hindu laws can be accounted for without any reference to it.

**Evidences of  
polyandry.**

§ 61. What then is the actual evidence upon the subject? The earliest indication of polyandry of which I am aware, is to be found in a hymn in the Rig-Veda, which is addressed to the two Asvins. "Asvins, your admirable horses bore the car which you have harnessed first to the goal for the sake of honour; and the damsel who was the prize came through affection to you, and acknowledged your husbandship, saying, you are my lords" (*o*). This evidently points to the practice of *Svayamvara*, when a

(*n*) See Teulon, *La Mère*, 7. "Sous les conquérants Aryas et Sémites s'étend souvent, suivant l'heureuse expression de M. d'Eckstein, un *humus scientifique*. Sous cette couche d'êtres humains, d'autres races ont vécu, obéissant à des lois qui, si elles n'ont été générales, ont régné du moins sur d'immenses étendues. Leurs civilisations reposaient sur le droit de la mère, &c." See also Teulon, 62, 68. "Partout, où les Aryas se sont établis, ils ont introduit avec eux la famille gouvernée par le père."

(*o*) Cited Wheeler, *Hist. of India*, ii. 502.



maiden of high rank used to offer herself as the prize to the conqueror in a contest of skill, and in this instance became the wife of several suitors at once. It is exactly Draupadi. in conformity with the well-known case of Draupadi, who, as the Mahabharata relates, was won at an archery match by the eldest of the five Pandava princes, and then became the wife of all. As far as I know, this is the only definite instance in which an Aryan woman is recorded to have become the legal permanent wife of several men. Undoubtedly, as Professor Max Müller remarks (p) the epic tradition must have been very strong to compel the authors to record a proceeding so violently opposed to Brahmanical law. Yet the very description of the transaction represents it as one which was opposed to public opinion, and which was rather justified by very remote tradition than by existing practice. I take the account of it given by Mr. McLennan (q). "The father of Draupadi is represented by the compilers of the epic as shocked at the proposal of the princes to marry his daughter. 'You who know the law,' he is made to say, 'must not commit an unlawful act which is contrary to usage and the Vedas.' The reply is, 'The law, O King, is subtle. We do not know its way. We follow the path which has been trodden by our ancestors in succession.' One of the princes then pleads precedent. 'In an old tradition it is recorded that Iatila, of the family of Gotama, that most excellent of moral women, dwelt with seven saints; and that Varski, the daughter of a Muni, cohabited with ten brothers, all of them called Prachetas, whose souls had been purified with penance.' " Now, upon this statement the alleged ancestral usage appears really to have been non-existent. The only specific instances that could be adduced were certainly not cases of marriage. They were instances of special indulgence allowed to Rishis, who had passed out of the order of married men, and whose greatness of spiritual merit made it impossible for them to commit sin (r). It is also to be remembered

(p) A. S. Lit. 46.

(q) Fort. Rev., May 1877, 698.

(r) See Apastamba, ii. vi. 18, § 8—10, and post, § 62.

Rama and Sita.

that the Pandava princes were Kshatriyas, to whom greater license was allowed in their dealings with the sex, and for whom the loosest forms of marriage were sanctioned (s). If polyandrous practices existed among the aborigines whom they conquered, these would naturally be imitated by them. Just as the English knights who settled beyond the Pale became *Hibernis Hiberniores*. On the other hand, in a passage of the Ramayana (t), where the Rakshasa meets Rama and his brother wandering with Sita, the wife of the former, the giant accosts them in language of much moral indignation, saying, "Oh little dwarfs, why do you come with your wife into the forest of Dandaka, clad in the habit of devotees, and armed with arrows, bow and scimitar? Why do you two devotees remain with one woman? Why are you, oh profligate wretches, corrupting the devout sages?" The giant seems to have looked upon polyandry with the same abhorrence as Draupadi's father.

Looseness of marriage tie.

§ 62. Other passages of the Mahabharata are referred to, which seem rather to evidence the greatest grossness, and want of chastity, in the relations between the sexes, than anything like polyandry. It is said that "women were formerly unconfined, and roamed about at their pleasure independent. Though in their youthful innocence they abandoned their husbands, they were guilty of no offence; for such was the rule in early times. This ancient custom is even now the law for creatures born as brutes, which are free from lust and anger. This custom is supported by authority, and is observed by great Rishis, and it is still practised among the northern Kurus." Dr. Muir goes on to add, "A stop was, however, put to the practice by Svetaketu, whose indignation was on one occasion aroused by a Brahman taking his mother by the hand, and inviting her to go away with him, although his father, in

(s) Manu, iii. § 26.

(t) Cited Wheeler, Hist. India, ii. 241. Mr. V. N. Mandlik (p. 397) says that the original passage contains nothing to show that the giant accused the brothers of having a joint wife.

whose presence this occurred, informed him that there was no reason for his displeasure, as the custom was one which had prevailed from time immemorial. But Svetaketu could not tolerate the practice; and introduced the existing rule. A wife and a husband indulging in promiscuous intercourse were thenceforward guilty of sin" (u). So the Gandhara Brahmans of the Punjab are said "to corrupt their own sisters and daughters-in-law, and to offer their wives to others, hiring and selling them like commodities for money. Their women, being thus given up to strangers, are consequently shameless;" as might have been expected (v). In exactly the same way, the Koravers of Southern India, who are not polyandrous, sell and mortgage their wives and daughters when they are in want of money (w). Of course, delicacy, or chastity, must be utterly unknown in such a state of society. But these very texts seem to show that each wife was appropriated to a single husband, though he was willing to allow her the greatest freedom of action (x).

§ 63. When we come to the law writers it is quite certain that a woman could never have more than one husband at a time. But we also find that sonship and marriage seem to stand in no relation to each other. A man's son need not have been begotten by his father, nor need he have been produced by his father's wife. How is such a state of the family, which appears to set genealogy at defiance, reconcilable with a system of property which is based upon the strictest ascertainment of pedigree? I believe the answer is simply this—that a son was always assigned in law to the male who was the legal owner of the mother. Further,

Early Family  
Law.

Principle of  
sonship.

(u) Muir, A. S. T. ii. 418 (2nd ed.) The first passage is cited by Mr. McLennan, p. 173, n., from the 1st ed., ii 336. See also other passages from the Mahabharata, cited 2 Dig. 392—394.

(v) Muir, A. S. T. ii. 482, 483.

(w) Madras Census Report, 167.

(x) Mr. V. N. Mandlik says of the passages cited from Dr. Muir "To me the whole chapter shows that the Northern kurus were then what the Nairs in Malabar are now; so that a man did not know his own father." But he admits that these and similar passages "point to times anterior to the compilation of the Vedas. For even in the earliest Veda marriage appears to have become a well established institution," pp. 395—397.

that the filial relation was itself capable of being assigned over by the person to whom the son was subject, or by the son himself if emancipated. If I am right in this view, the theory that the *levirate* is invariably a survival of polyandry will fall to the ground.

Different sorts  
of sons.

§ 64. The various sorts of sons recognized by the early writers were the following. The legitimate son (*aurasa*), the son of an appointed daughter (*putrika putra*), the son begotten on the wife (*kshetraja*), the son born secretly (*gudhaja*), the damsel's son (*kanina*), the son taken with the bride (*sahodha*), the son of a twice married woman (*paunarbhava*), the son by a Sudra woman (*nishada*), or by a concubine (*parasava*), the adopted son (*dattaka*), the son made (*kritrima*), the son bought (*kritaka*), the son cast off (*apavidha*), and the son self-given (*svayamdattaka*) (*y*). Of these it will be at once seen that the five last never could be the actual sons of their father, and of the other nine only the first and the last two need be. Of the remaining seven, some necessarily, and others probably, were not begotten by him at all. Further, many of these were not even the offspring of his wife. The problem for solution is, how they came to be considered as his sons? To answer this, we must enquire into the Hindu idea of paternity.

Necessity for  
sons.

§ 65. In modern times children are a luxury to the rich, an encumbrance to the poor. In early ages female offspring stood in the same position, but male issue was passionately prized. The very existence of a tribe, surrounded by enemies, would depend upon the continual multiplication of its males. The sonless father would find himself without protection or support in sickness or old age, and would see his land passing into other hands, when he became unable to

(*y*) Baudhayana, xvii. 2, § 10—24; Gautama, xxviii. § 32, 33; Vasishtha, xvii. § 9—22; Vishnu, xv. § 1—27; Narada, xiii. § 17—20, 45—47; Manu, ix. § 127—140, 158—184; Devala, 3 Dig. 153; Yama, *ib.* 154; Yajnavalkya, ii. § 128—132; Mit., i. 11. Apastamba stands alone among the earlier writers in only recognizing the legitimate son, ii. vi. 18, § 1—11.

The annexed table shows the order in which the different sons are placed

cultivate it. The necessity for male offspring extended in the case of the Aryan even beyond this world. His hap-

by the various authors.

	son.	Son on	Son of appointed	Damself's son.	Gudhaja. born.	Son of twice married	Sahodha. Son of bride.	Son of Sudra	Adopted son.	Son made.	Son	Apariddha. Son cast off	son.
Baudhi	12, i	3											2
Gautar	xxvi		0*	7	6		9	3			0		1
Vasish	xvi		3		6		8	1	8		2		0
Vishnu	r. §						7	2				1	0
Manu,	§ 15												
Kalika	rana					0	8	12	3				1
Yajnav	ra, i		2			6	1	—		9			0
Narada	ii. §	3	3			7	5	—				1	
Sancha	d Li	2	3			4	8	11					
Harita	Dig.	2	5			3	0	—					
Devala	Dig.	3	2			8	7	—					
Yama,	dig. 31	3	3			4	8	—					
Vrihas		3	3			9	1	7					
Brahm						0	8	12					

Vijnane quotes both Yajnavalky. I seems follow the  
 Jimuta V. a follows Devala. Bh., x.  
 The Smriti andrika follows Manu, Chap. x  
 \* Mitakshara (i. 11, § 35) explain the low position assigned Gauṛma the son of appol  
 one differing in tribe.

† The son of appointed daughter is not equal to an adopted son. Manu, ix. 34—136.

‡ See an edition offered of Datta's text.

153.

5

153.



piness in the next depended upon his having a continuous line of male descendants, whose duty it would be to make the periodical offerings for the repose of his soul. Hence the works of the Sanskrit sages state it to be the first duty of man to become the possessor of male offspring, and imprecate curses upon those who die without a son (2). Where a son was so indispensable, we might expect that every contrivance would be exhausted to procure one. What has been already said about the relations between the sexes in early times would make it certain that neither delicacy, nor sentiment, would stand in the way.

Theory of  
among

§ 66. A frequent subject for discussion in Manu is as to the property in a child. He says: "They consider the male issue of a woman as the son of the lord: but on the subject of that lord, a difference of opinion is mentioned in the Veda; some giving that name to the real procreator of the child, and others applying it to the married possessor of the woman." He argues the point on the analogy of seed sown by a stranger on the land of another, or of flocks impregnated by a strange male. He sums up by declaring: "Thus men who have no marital property in women, but sow in the fields owned by others, may raise up fruit to the husbands, but the procreator can have no advantage from it. Unless there be a special agreement between the owners of the land and of the seed, the fruit belongs clearly to the landowner, for the receptacle is more important than the seed. But the owners of the seed and of the soil may be considered in this world as joint owners of the crop, which they agree by special compact, in consideration of the seed, to divide between them" (a). The conflicting opinions referred to by Manu are probably the texts mentioned by the early Sutra writers (b). In one of these

(c) Vasish., xvii. § 1—5; Vish., xv. § 43—46; Manu, vi § 36, 37, ix. § 45; Atri. D. M., i § 3.

(a) Manu, ix. § 32—44, 48,—55, 181; x. § 70; Nar., xii. § 56—60. Viramit., p. 104, § 4.

(b) Apast., ii. vi. 13, § 6, 7, and note; Baudh., ii. 2, § 25; Vasish., xvii. § 6, 7. Gautama, xviii. § 11.

passages quoted from the Vedas, a husband is reported as announcing, with considerable *naïveté*, that he will not any longer allow his wives to be approached by other men, since he has received an opinion "that a son belongs to him who begot him in the world of Yama." In this world, it is to be observed, there seems to be no doubt entertained that the son begotten by others on his wife would be his own.

§ 67. It was upon this principle—*viz.*, that a son, by whomsoever begotten, was the property of the husband of the mother—that the *kshetraja*, or son begotten upon a wife, ranked so high in the list of subsidiary sons. The Mahabharata and Vishnu Purana relate how king Saudasa, being childless, induced Vasishtha to beget for him a son upon his wife Damayanti. So king Kalinga is represented as requesting the old Rishi Dirghatamas to beget offspring for him; and Pandu, when he became a Sunnyasi, accepted, as his own, sons begotten upon his wife by strangers. The same passage of the Mahabharata which relates how Svetaketu put an end to promiscuous intercourse on the part of husbands and wives, also states that a wife, when appointed by her husband to raise up seed to him by connection with another man, is guilty of sin if she refuses (c). And so the law-books expressly sanction the begetting of offspring by another on the wife of a man who was impotent, or disordered in mind, or incurably diseased; and the son so begotten belonged to the incapacitated husband (d). No rule is laid down that the person employed to beget offspring during the husband's life should be a near relation, or any relation (e). In fact, in the instances just mentioned, the procreator, who was called in aid, was not only not of the same family, but was not even of the same caste, the owner

Origin of the  
Niyoga.

(c) Muir. A. S. T. i. 418, 419; Wilson, Works, v. 310; M. Müller, A. S. Lit. 56; 8 Dig. 252.

(d) Baudh., ii. 2, § 12; Manu, ix. § 162, 167, 203. § 162 shows that a man might have a son begotten by procuration, and also a son begotten by himself.

(e) Apastamba, who is strongly opposed to the *Niyoga*, says (ii. x. 27 § 2) that a husband shall not make over his wife, who occupies the position of a *gentilis*, to others than to his *gentilis* in order to cause children to be begotten for himself. It is probable that this refers to an authority to beget after the husband's death. If not, it is merely a restriction on the old usage.

of the wife being a Kshatriya, and his assistant being a Brahman.

Offspring  
begotten upon a  
widow.

§ 68. The begetting of offspring upon the widow of a man who had left no issue is, of course, merely an extension of the practice just discussed (*f*). But there was this difference between the two cases; that in the latter, for the first time, the element of fiction was introduced. In the former case, the husband became the father, not by any fiction of paternity, but by the simple fact that he was the owner of the mother. But after his death the ownership had ceased; unless, indeed, by another fiction, he was considered as still surviving in her (*g*). Therefore, unless the husband had given express directions during his lifetime, the process to be adopted was to be as like as possible to an actual begetting by him, or was to be such a substituted begetting as he would probably have sanctioned. Hence, such a connection was never permitted when the widow had issue already. Nor was it to be continued further than was necessary for the purpose of conception. Nor was it allowable to procreate more than one son, though at one time it was thought that a second might lawfully be produced (*h*). Nor was the widow allowed to consort with any one she pleased, or to do so at all merely of her own free will. The procreator was to be the brother of the deceased if possible, or, if he was not attainable, a near sapinda (*i*). This was either to enhance the fiction of paternity; or, perhaps, still further to exclude any personal feeling on the part of the widow. Further, some authorisation was necessary, though it is not very clearly stated by

(*f*) This alone is the *levirate* referred to by Mr. McLennan, see Fort. Rev., May, 1877. The general usage of begetting a son upon the wife of another on his behalf was known by the term *Niyoga*, (that is, order or commission) of which the *levirate* was only a special instance.

(*g*) Manu, ix, § 45; Vrihaspati, 3 Dig. 458.

(*h*) Manu, ix, § 58—63, 143, 147; Narada, xii, § 62, 80—88; Yama, 2 Dig. 468.

(*i*) Gautama, xviii, § 4—7, xxviii, § 23; Manu, ix, § 59; Narada, xii, § 80—88; Yajnavalkya, ii, § 128. Manu, permits either a brother or another. Yajnavalkya, either a relative or another. Kulluka Bhatta in his gloss adds the word *sapinda* as limiting the vague word *another*.

whom it was to be given. In a legend mentioned in the Mahabharata, Vyasa begets children on both the widows of his brother, at the request of Satyavat, the mother of the deceased (*k*). Gautama asserts that the widow must obtain the permission of her Gurus. Narada speaks of the authorisation as being given to the widow by her spiritual parents, or by her relations. Manu merely speaks of her being authorised, to which Kulluka Bhatta adds *by the husband or spiritual guide*. Yajnavalkya refers to the authority of the latter (*l*). It is quite plain that even the brother could not perform the act without some external authority.

§ 69. If I am right in this view, it is evident that the *levirate*, as practised among the Aryan Hindus, was not a survival of polyandry. The *levir* did not take his brother's widow as his wife. He simply did for his brother, or other near relation, when deceased, what the latter might have authorised him, or any other person, to do during his lifetime. And this, of course, explains why the issue so raised belonged to the deceased and not to the begetter. If it were a relic of polyandry, the issue would belong to the surviving polyandrous husband, and the wife would pass over to him as his wife. Such a course would have been natural enough even among Hindus, and, as we shall see presently, the practice actually existed (*m*). But it is something completely different from the Hindu *Niyoga*. And the same explanation which accounts for the origin of the *levirate* accounts, also, for its extinction. As soon as any idea of mutual fidelity, sentiment, or delicacy, arose as an element in the marriage union, the notion of allowing issue to be begotten on a wife would become most repulsive. And as that practice died away, the usage of authorising it in regard to a widow would naturally die away also, though it might continue longer in the latter case than in

Niyoga not connected with polyandry.

(*k*) Ind. Wisd. 376.

(*l*) Gautama, xviii. § 5; Narada, xii. § 80—87; Manu, ix. § 58; Yajnavalkya, ii. § 68.

(*m*) Post, § 70.



the former. We can see that a considerable amount of refinement in the relations between man and wife had already sprung up at the date of our compilation of Manu (*n*); and we can understand how it came about, that texts were interpolated forbidding a practice which the preceding texts had sanctioned and regulated (*o*). The *Niyoga* would also become unpopular, as partition became more common. So long as the family remained undivided, the afterborn son would be merely an additional mouth to feed, accompanied by a pair of hands to work, and he would take upon himself the entire duty of performing the recurring ceremonies to his quasi-father. But as soon as the practice of division sprang up, he would be entitled to claim a share, and to stand generally in his parent's place. At one time, too, it appears that the widow had a right to manage the property of her deceased husband on his behalf (*p*). Naturally the relations would cease to authorise an act which tended to defeat their own rights.

Marriage of  
widow with  
husband's  
brother.

§ 70. The actual marriage of a widow with the brother of her deceased husband is, of course, something quite different from the *levirate*. This was sanctioned by Manu in the single case of a girl who had been left a virgin widow (*q*). The practice still exists in many parts of India. It has been found among the Ideiyars, a pastoral race of Southern India; in Orissa, among the Jat families of the Punjab, both Brahman and Rajputs; and among some of the Rajput class of Central India. In the Punjab such marriages are considered of an inferior class, and do not give the issue full right of inheritance (*r*). Such marriages may in some cases be a relic of polyandry, but they seem to me capable of a much simpler explanation. There is nothing in the usage of itself unnatural and revolting. The

---

(*n*) Manu, iii. § 45, 55—62, ix. § 101—105.

(*o*) Manu, ix. § 64—68.

(*p*) Manu, ix. § 210, 146, 190.

(*q*) Manu, ix. § 60, 70.

(*r*) Madras Census Rep. 149; Punjab Cust. 94; Lyall, Fort. Rev., Jan. 1877 103; Sarvadhikari, 528, n.



marriage of a woman with two brothers successively is merely the converse of the marriage of a man with two sisters successively, a sort of union which, though illegal, is by no means uncommon in Great Britain, and which is absolutely legal in several of our colonies. Marriage with a deceased wife's sister is believed to be very common among the lower orders, from the simple fact that a sister-in-law very frequently becomes a permanent member of the family during the life of the sister, and continues in it after her death. She naturally takes the place of her sister as mother and wife. Exactly the same facts would lead to the converse result in a Hindu undivided family. On the death of the husband the widow would continue to reside in the same house with her brother-in-law. He would take possession of all the effects of his deceased brother, not as heir, but as manager of the family corporation by virtue of seniority (*s*). At a time when women were regarded merely as chattels (*t*), the wives of the deceased would naturally pass over to the manager, who was bound to support them. To take the illustration from Scandinavian history cited by Mr. McLennan: "Now Bork sets up his abode with Mordissa, and takes his brother's widow to wife with his brother's goods; that was the rule in those days, and wives were heritage like other things." The only difference is, that the Hindu Mordissa would have been living all along in the house with the Hindu Bork, and that on the death of her husband the latter would have become her natural protector and legal guardian. The transition to husband is so natural that it is strange it did not more universally take place.

---

(*s*) Among some tribes of the Punjab the custom is that the widow should marry not her husband's elder brother but his younger brother. Punjab Customary Law, II. 94.

(*t*) The prohibition against dividing women at a partition (Manu, ix. § 219; Gautama, xxviii. § 45) seems to point to a time when they had been looked upon merely as a part of the family property. Perhaps those curious texts which state the liability of a man who had taken the wife, or widow, of another to pay his debts, may be founded on the same principle (1 Dig. 321—323, 2 Dig. 476; Narada, iii. § 21—26; V. May, v. 4, § 16, 17; Spencer, i. 680; *post*, § 302.) Accordingly Narada says (iii. § 23, 24), "In all the four classes, wives and goods go together; he who takes a man's wives takes his property also." "The wife is considered as the dead man's property."

Son born in  
secret.

§ 71. The same principle, *viz.*, that the son belongs to the owner of the mother, can be shown with greater ease in the other cases. The secretly born son is described by Vishnu as follows: "The son who is secretly born in the house is the sixth. He belongs to him on whose bed he was born" (*u*). Manu is to the same effect, and the gloss of Kulluka Bhatta shows that the mother is supposed to be a married woman, whose husband's absence makes it certain that he was not the father. Yet the child belongs to him (*v*). In the case of the son of a damsel (*Kanina*) born in her father's house, if she marries, the son belongs to the husband, and inherits to him. If she does not marry, he belongs to, and is the heir of, her father, under whose dominion she remains (*w*). So, "if a pregnant young woman marry, whether her pregnancy be known or unknown, the male child in her womb belongs to the bridegroom, and is called a son received with his bride" (*Sahodha*) (*x*). As regards the sons of twice married women (*paunarbhava*) and of disloyal wives, Narada lays down the same rule. "Their offspring belongs to the begetter, if they have come under his dominion, in consideration of a price he had paid to the husband. But the children of one who has not been sold belong to her husband" (*y*). Of course the children of a woman who had actually been married to a second husband would, *a fortiori*, have belonged to him (*z*).

Son of damsel;

or bride;

or twice married  
woman.

Son by a concu-  
bine.

§ 72. The same considerations seem to govern the case of a child by a concubine, who is classed by some writers with the child by a Sudra (*a*). The union of a man of the higher classes with a Sudra was, in the later law, though not

(*u*) Vishnu, xv. § 13, 14.

(*v*) Manu, ix. § 170. Viramit., ii. 2, § 5.

(*w*) Vishnu, xv. § 10—12; Vasishtha, xvii. § 14; Narada, xiii. § 17, 18. The Viramitrodaya, p. 113, says that the child belongs to the father of the woman or husband, according as she was affianced or not at the time of birth. This is also the view taken by Nanda Pandita in the Vaijayanti. Jolly, § 152.

(*x*) Manu, ix. § 173; Vishnu, xv. § 15—17; Narada, xiii. § 17.

(*y*) Narada, xii. § 55. For the definition of a "paunarbhava," see Vishnu, xv. § 7—9; Manu, ix. § 175; Narada, xii. § 46—49; Vasishtha, xvii. § 13.

(*z*) Katyayana, 3 Dig. 236.

(*a*) See Baudhayana, ii. 2, § 21, 22; Vishnu, xv. § 27, note.

originally, looked upon as so odious, that the son was only entitled to maintenance, and not to inheritance (b). And the position of a son born to him by a concubine was no better (c). But the son of a Sudra by a concubine was always entitled to inherit under certain events. The distinction, however, seems to have been taken, that in order to do so, he must have been begotten upon a woman who was under the absolute control of the begetter. Manu speaks of the son begotten by a man of the servile class "on his female slave, or on the female slave of his male slave" (d). And so Narada says, "there is no issue if a man has had intercourse with a woman in the house of another man; and it is termed fornication by the learned if a woman has intercourse with a man in the house of a stranger" (e). Obviously, because in the latter case the woman is not under his dominion. Her issue would belong to the person who was her owner.

§ 73. The case of the son of the appointed daughter is a little more complicated, but appears to me to be explicable in the same way.. She was lawfully married to her husband. Yet her son became the son of her father, if he had no male issue; and he became so, not only by agreement with her husband, but by a mere act of intention on the part of her father, without any consent asked for or obtained. Hence a man was warned not to marry a girl without brothers, lest her father should take her first son as his own (f). Now Vasishtha quotes a text of the Vedas as showing that "the girl who has no brother comes back to the males of her own family, to her father and the rest. Returning she becomes their son" (g). In her case, therefore, the father seems to have retained his dominion over

Son of an  
appointed  
daughter.

---

(b) Cf. Manu, iii. § 18—19, ix. § 145—155, 178; Gautama, xxviii. § 39; Devala, 3 Dig. 185, and other authorities cited 3 Dig. 115—133; Yajnavalkya, ii. § 125.

(c) Mitakshara, i. 12, § 3.

(d) Manu, ix. § 170.

(e) Narada, xii. § 61.

(f) Gautama, xxviii. § 19, 20; Manu, iii. § 11.

(g) Vasishtha, xvii. § 12.

her, to the extent of being able to appropriate her son if he wished it (*h*). The same result of course followed, where the marriage took place with an express agreement that this dominion should be reserved (*i*).

A custom precisely similar to that of the son of an appointed daughter still exists among the Nambudri Brahmans of the Malabar Coast in Madras. They are believed to have emigrated from Eastern India about 1200 or 1500 years ago, bearing with them a system of Hindu law of an archaic character, more nearly representing that of the Sutra writers than the later form to be found in the Mitakshara (*k*). Where a Nambudri has no male issue, he may give his daughter in Sarvasvadhanam marriage. The result of such a marriage is that if a son is born, he inherits to, and is for all purposes the son of, his father-in-law. If there is no male issue, or on failure of such issue, the property of the wife's family does not belong to the husband, but reverts to the family of the father-in-law (*l*).

#### Adopted sons.

§ 74. The remaining sons are all adopted sons, and avowedly the original property of their natural parents. Their case will be separately treated in the next chapter. The only matter of remark bearing on the present enquiry is this ; that in two of the cases, *viz.*, the son given (*dattaka*) and the son bought (*kritaka*), the boy was a minor, and the right in him was given over by those who had dominion over him, and could be given over by no one else (§ 119). In the case of the son made (*kritrima*), the youth was of full age, and therefore able to dispose of himself ; and in the case of the son self-given (*svayamdattaka*) or cast off (*apavidha*) he had been abandoned, or ill-treated by his

In Russia, a father retains his dominion over his daughter after marriage, and may claim her services at his own home if they are required in case of illness, or by the death of his wife. See an article on Marriage Customs, in the Pall Mall Budget, xix. 249, one of a series on The Russians of to-day.

(*i*) Baudhayana, ii. 2, § 11.

(*k*) *Vasudevan v. Secretary of State*, 11 Mad. 157, 160.

(*l*) 11 Mad. 158, 162. *Kumaran v. Narayanan*, 9 Mad. 260.



parents, or had lost them. Their dominion had accordingly come to an end (*m*).

§ 75. All of these sons, except the legitimate and the adopted, are long since obsolete (*n*). Possibly traces of the old usage may still linger on in remote districts. Jagannatha says that in Orissa it is still the practice with some people to raise up issue on the wife of a brother, but his own opinion is strongly expressed against the legality of such a proceeding. Mr. Colebrooke states that, in his time, the practice of appointing brothers to raise up male issue to deceased, impotent, or even absent brothers, still prevailed in Orissa. Mr. Rajkumar Sarvadhikari says in reference to this statement,—“From all the enquiries we have made on the subject, it appears that the practice is highly reprobated among the higher classes in Orissa, and if it exists among the lower classes at all, it exists in such a form that it is of no importance whatever from a juridical point of view.” He adds, that among some of the rich and noble classes in Orissa, the practice of *Niyoga* has probably assumed the modernised form of marriage with an elder brother’s widow (*o*). The same reason which caused the *Kshetraja* son to fall into disrepute, necessarily led to the disappearance of several of the others also. The increasing strictness of the marriage tie made a husband refuse to recognize as his son any issue which was not begotten upon his own wife by himself, or at all events might not be supposed to have been so begotten. This would eliminate from the list of sons the *Kanina*, the *Gudhaja*, and the *Sahodha*, unless, in the latter case, the son

All but two now obsolete.

(*m*) Bandhayana, ii. 2, § 13, 14, 16, 19, 21; Vasishtha, xvii. § 17—20; Vishnu, xv. § 18—26; Manu, ix. § 168, 169, 174, 177; *post*, § 94. Similarly in Rome there were two sorts of adoption; *adoptio*, properly so called of a child who was under the dominion of another, and *adrogatio*, of a person who was *sui juris*.

(*n*) Vrihaspati, 3 Dig. 271; Aditya, Purana, *ib.* 272, 288; Apararka, cited. Sarvadhikari, 512; V. May, iv, 4, § 46; Dattaka Mimamsa, i. § 64; Smriti Chandrika, x. § 5; D. Ch. i. 9; 2 Bor. 456; *post*, § 94. The mention of them in works so late as the Daya Bhaga cannot be taken as any evidence that they were still recognized at that time. See *ante*, § 15. Sarvadhikari, 519.

(*o*) 3 Dig. 288, 289, 276, note. Sarvadhikari, 528.



conceived before marriage was born after marriage (*p*). When a second marriage came to be forbidden (§ 88), the *Paunarbhava* would follow the same fate (*q*). The practice of appointing a daughter would also fall into disuse, since so long as it lasted there would be a difficulty in finding a husband for a girl who had no brothers. It was probably at this period that the son of a daughter not appointed came to take the high rank which he at present occupies, in the list of heirs (*r*). Among the Nambudris in Malabar, the son of the appointed daughter is still recognised as heir to his maternal grandfather, where the marriage of the daughter has taken place according to the form known as *Sarvasvadhanam*; the formula used being, "I give unto thee this virgin, who has no brother decked with jewels; the son who may be born of her shall be my son" (*s*). In one case the Judicial Committee intimated a doubt whether such a son might not even now be lawfully created in the orthodox parts of India (*t*). It is improbable, however, that this doubt will be found to have any substantial foundation. The cessation of marriage between persons of different classes (§ 84) would similarly put an end to the *Nishada*. The five sorts of adopted sons would alone remain. These are reserved for future discussion (§ 93).

Eight forms of marriage.

§ 76. The above statements will show that in the view of early Hindu law, sonship was not by any means founded on marriage. A consideration of the marriage law itself will show that in ancient times it meant something very different from what it does at present. Eight forms of marriage are described by Manu, and in less detail by Narada and

(*p*) See *Collector of Trichinopoly v. Lekkamani*, 1 I. A. 283, 293, S. C. 14 B. L. R. 115; S. C. 21 Suth. 358.

(*q*) The Sudder Court of Bengal, however, admitted that by local usage such a son might inherit. In the particular instance, that of the Nagur Brahmans of Benares, the custom was negatived, *Mohun Singh v. Chuman Rai*, 1 S. D. A. 28, (37).

(*r*) See post, § 483.

(*s*) *Kumaran v. Narayan*, 9 Mad 260.

(*t*) *Thakur Jeebnath Singh v. Court of Wards*, 2 I. A. 163; 23 Suth. P. C. 409. S. C. 15 B. L. R. 190.

Yajnavalkya (u). "The ceremony of Brahma, of the Devas, of the Rishis, of the Prajapatis, of the Asuras, of the Gandharvas, and of the Rakshasas ; the eighth, and basest, is that of the Pisachas. The gift of a daughter, clothed only with a single robe, to a man learned in the Veda, whom her father voluntarily invites, and respectfully receives, is the nuptial rite called Brahma. The rite which sages call Daiva, is the gift of a daughter, whom her father has decked in gay attire, when the sacrifice is already begun, to the officiating priest, who performs that act of religion. When the father gives his daughter away, having received from the bridegroom one pair of kine, or two pairs, for uses prescribed by law, that marriage is termed Arsha. The nuptial rite called Prajapatya, is when the father gives away his daughter with due honour, saying distinctly, ' May both of you perform together your civil and religious duties.' When the bridegroom, having given as much wealth as he can afford to the father and paternal kinsmen, and to the damsel herself, takes her voluntarily as his bride, that marriage is named Asura. The reciprocal connection of a youth and a damsel with mutual desire, is the marriage denominated Gandharva, contracted for the purpose of amorous embraces, and proceeding from sensual inclination. The seizure of a maiden by force from her house, while she weeps and calls for assistance, after her kinsmen and friends have been slain in battle or wounded, and their houses broken open, is the marriage styled Rakshasa. When the lover secretly embraces the damsel, either sleeping or flushed with strong liquor, or disordered in her intellect, that sinful marriage, called Pisacha, is the eighth and the basest."

§ 77. It is obvious that these forms are founded upon different views of the marriage relation, that they belong to different stages of society, and that their relative

Different stages  
of law marked  
by:

(u) Manu, iii. § 20—42 ; Narada, xii. 39—45 ; Yajnavalkya, i. § 58—61 ; Apastamba, ii. 11 and 12, and Vasishtha, i. 28—36, omit the Prajapatya and Pisacha forms.

antiquity is exactly in the inverse ratio to the order in which they are mentioned. The last three point to a time when the rights of parents over their daughters were unknown or disregarded, and when men procured for themselves women (they can hardly yet be called wives) by force, fraud, or enticement. But even these three show variations of barbarism. The Pisacha form is more like the sudden lust of the ourang-outang than anything human. The first dawning of the conjugal idea cannot have arisen, when the name of marriage could be given to a connection, which it would be an exaggeration to describe as temporary. The Rakshasa form is simply the marriage by capture, the existence of which, coupled with the practice of exogamy, Mr. McLennan has tracked out in the most remote ages and regions. It is at the present day practised among the Meenas, a robber tribe of central India, and among the Gonds of Berar, not as a symbol but a matter of real earnest; as real as any other form of robbery (*v*). The connection between the Rakshasa and the Gandharva forms is evidenced by the fact that both were considered lawful for the warrior tribe (*w*). The latter is an advance beyond the former in this respect, that it assumes a state of society in which a friendly, though perhaps stealthy, intercourse was possible between man and woman before their union, and in which the inclinations of the female were consulted. Both forms admitted of a permanent connection, though there is certainly nothing in the definition to show that permanence was a necessary element in either transaction. The remaining forms of marriage all agree in this, that the dominion of the parents over the daughter was fully recognized, and that the essence of the marriage consisted in a formal transfer of this dominion to the husband.

The Pisacha ;

The Rakshasa ;

The Gandharva forms.

The Asura form.      § 78. The Asura form, or marriage by purchase, which

Lyall, Asiatic Studies, 163. V. N. Maudlik, 441. As to survivals of this practice in the Punjab, see Punjab Customary Law, ii. 91.  
(*w*) Manu, iii. § 26.

the Sanskrit writers so much condemn ( $x$ ), was probably the next in order of antiquity to those already mentioned. When it became impossible, or inconvenient, to obtain wives by robbery or stealth, and when it was still necessary to obtain them from another tribe ( $y$ ), the only other mode would be to obtain them by purchase. And, of course, the same system would survive even when marriage was permitted within the tribe, though not within the family, if an unmarried girl was a valuable commodity in the hands of her own family, either as a servant, while she remained unmarried, or as a possible wife, where the balance of the sexes rendered it difficult to obtain wives. As delicacy increased in the relation between the sexes, marriage by sale would fall into disrepute from its resemblance to prostitution ( $z$ ). Hence Manu says: "Let no father, who knows the law, receive a gratuity however small for giving his daughter in marriage, since the man who through avarice takes a gratuity for that purpose is a seller of his offspring" ( $a$ ). The Arsha form, which is one of the approved forms, appears to be simply a survival from the Asura, the substantial price paid for the girl having dwindled down to a gift of slight, or nominal, value ( $b$ ). Another mode of preserving the symbol of sale while rejecting the reality, appears to have been the receipt of a gift of real value, such as a chariot and a hundred cows, which was immediately returned to the giver, much in the same way as our Indian officials touch a valuable *nuzzur*, which is at once removed by the servants of the donor. This arrangement is said by Apastamba to have been prescribed by the Vedas "in order to fulfil the law,"—that is, apparently, the ancient law, by which the binding form of marriage was a sale ( $c$ ). The ultimate compromise, however, appears to have been that the present given by the suitor

The Arsha form.

Origin of dowry.

( $x$ ) Manu, iii. § 41.

( $y$ ) See as to this necessity, *post*, § 82.

( $z$ ) See Teulon, 12. *Tusco more tute tibi dotem quæris corpore*.

( $a$ ) Manu, iii. § 5, ix. § 98, 100.

( $b$ ) Manu, iii. § 29; Yajnavalkya, i. § 59.

( $c$ ) Apastamba, ii. vi. 13, § 12. See Mayr, 155, who compares the Roman "Coemptio," and the German "Fraukauf."



was received by the parents for the benefit of the bride, and became her dowry. Manu says: "When money or goods are given to damsels, whose kinsmen receive them not for their own use, it is no sale; it is merely a token of courtesy and affection to the brides" (*d*). This gift, which was called her fee (*çulka*), passed in a peculiar course of devolution to the woman's own brothers; that is, back again into her original family, instead of to her own female heirs. One rendering of the text of Gautama which regulates this succession, even allowed the fee to go to her brothers during her life. In either view, it was evidently considered to be something over which her family had special rights. If they abandoned the possession, they retained the reversion (*e*). This was probably the reason that where a girl, who had been allowed to pass maturity, exercised her right of choosing a husband for herself, the bridegroom was not to give a nuptial present to her father, "since he had lost his dominion over her, by detaining her at a time when she might have been a parent." But, on the other hand, as the reversion was thus lost, she was not allowed to carry with her the ornaments she had received from her own family (*f*). If the girl died before marriage, the gifts made by the bridegroom reverted to him, after deducting any expenses that might have been already incurred (*g*).

Essence of remaining forms is absence of equivalent.

§ 79. The essential difference between the three remaining forms, *viz.*, the Brahma, Daiva and Prajapatya, and those just described, is this; that while on the one hand the girl is voluntarily handed over by her parents, they on the other hand receive no equivalent. The Daiva form is expressly stated to be appropriate to an officiating priest, that is a Brahman. Manu describes the bridegroom in the Brahma form as "a man learned in the Vedas," therefore

Brahma form.

Manu, iii. § 54; Mayr, 157. See a case held to be of this sort in Bombay. *In the goods of Nathibai*, 2 Bom. 9. Mr. McGahan mentions an exactly similar usage as prevailing among the Kirghiz. *Campaigning on the Oxus*, 60.

(*e*) Mayr, 170.

(*f*) Manu, ix. § 90—93.

(*g*) Yajnavalkya, ii. § 146; Mitakshara, ii. 11, § 80.



presumably a Brahman also. It is probable that these forms first arose in the case of Brahmans. When mixed marriages were allowed, the great reverence shown to the Brahman would naturally have led to his being accepted upon his own merits, without any payment. In time, the same practice would be adopted, even when he was marrying a girl of his own caste. When these forms came to be universally adopted by the Brahmans, they would be followed by the inferior classes also as a mark of respectability. Just as a marriage in St. George's, Hanover Square, is specially prized by persons who do not happen to have houses in that fashionable district. *Primâ facie* one would imagine that a Brahma marriage, from its very definition, was inadmissible for a Sudra; and Manu certainly seems to contemplate only the last four as applicable to the case of the three lower classes (*h*). But there is no doubt that the Brahma marriage has long since ceased to be the property of any class; and the Madras Sudder Court have held that, in the case of Sudras, the mere fact that the bride is given without the bestowal of any gift by the bridegroom, constitutes the marriage one of the Brahma form (*i*).

§ 80. Of these various forms of marriage all but two, the Brahma and the Asura, are now obsolete. Manu treats the first four as the approved forms, and the latter four as disapproved. He permits the Gandharva and the Rakshasa to a military man. Narada forbids the Rakshasa in all cases. Both absolutely forbid the Asura and the Pisacha (*k*). The existence of the disapproved forms, or some of them, at a period much later than Narada, is evidenced by the rules which provide a peculiar descent for the *stridhana* of a woman so married (*l*). It is stated generally, that the Brahma is the only legal form at present, and probably this may be so among the higher classes, to whom the assertion

Brahma and  
Asura alone  
survive.

(*h*) Manu, iii. § 22—26.

(*i*) *Sivarama v. Bagavan*, Madras Dec. of 1859, 44.

(*k*) Manu, iii. § 23, 24, 36—41; Narada, xii. § 45.

(*l*) Mitakshara, ii. 11, § 11.

Presumption as  
to form.

Gandharva form

is limited by Mr. Steel (*m*). But there is no doubt that the Asura is still practised ; and in Southern India, among the Sudras, it is a very common, if not the prevailing, form (*n*). Even there, however, and among Sudras, it has been held that the presumption will be against the assertion that a marriage is in a disapproved form, and that it must be proved by those who rely on it for any purpose. The same point has been decided by the High Court in Calcutta, as regards Bengal, and seems to have been assumed by the Judicial Committee in a case from Tirhoot (*o*). In a case in Western India, the Shastras stated that although Asura marriages were forbidden, it had nevertheless been the custom of the world for Brahmans and others to celebrate such marriages, and that no one had ever been expelled from caste for such an act (*p*). The validity of a Gandharva marriage between Kshatriyas appears to have been declared by the Bengal Sudder Court in 1817, and to have been assumed both by the District and Sudder Court so late as 1850 and 1853 (*q*). It seems to me, however, that this form belongs to a time when the notion of marriage involved no idea of permanence or exclusiveness. Its definition implies nothing more than fornication. It is difficult to see how such a connection could be treated at present as constituting a marriage, with the incidents and results of such a union. This view was unhesitatingly laid down by

---

(*m*) Gibelin, i. 63 ; Colebrooke, *Essays*, 142 (ed. of 1858) ; Steele, 159. V. N. Mandlik, 301.

(*n*) 3 Dig. 605 ; 1 Stra. H. L. 43 ; Mayr, 155. I have often heard the same statement made, *arguendo*, in the Madras Courts by the late Mr. J. W. Branson, a barrister of great local and professional experience, and thoroughly versed in the languages and customs of Southern India. The statement seemed to be accepted by the Bar and the Bench. Jagannatha quotes a text from Yajñavalkya, stating that the Asura ceremony is peculiar to the mercantile and servile classes, which is not to be found in Stenzler's edition. It ought to come in after i. § 61. See 3 Dig. 604 ; *In the goods of Nathibai*, 2 Bom. 9. Even between Brahmans such a marriage has been held valid in Madras. *Visvanathan v. Saminathan*, 13 Mad. 83.

(*o*) *Kaithi v. Kulladasi*, Madras Dec. of 1860, 201 ; *Judoonath v. Bussunt Coomar*, 11 B. L. R. 286, 288, S. C., 19 Suth. 264 ; *Mt. Thakoor v. Rai Baluk Ram*, 11 M. I. A. 175, S. C. 10 Suth. (P. C.) 3.

(*p*) *Keshow Rao v. Naro*, 2 Bor. 198, [215, 221] and see *Nundlal v. Tapeedas*, 1 Bor. 18, [16, 20].

(*q*) *Hujmu Chul v. Rane Bhadoorun*, cited S. D. of 1846, 340 ; S. C. 7 B. S. D. 355, 3 Dig. 606 ; *Jogendro Deb. v. Funendro Deb.*, 14 M. I. A. 375.

the Allahabad High Court in a case between Rajputs, when the offspring of such a marriage claimed as, but was held not to be, legitimate (r). The Madras High Court considers that a Gandharva marriage would be legal, if celebrated with nuptial rites, of which the *homum* ceremony, or sacrifice by fire is an essential part (s). It is obvious that such a ceremonial proceeding is something very different from the unconventional arrangement described by Manu. No doubt the texts referred to in the Judgment of the High Court result from the attempt of later writers to reconcile a respect for ancient usages with the greater formality of modern society.

§ 81. As regards the persons who are authorised to dispose of a girl, Narada says: "A father shall give his daughter in marriage himself, or a brother with the father's consent, or a grandfather, maternal uncle, kinsmen, or relatives. In default of all these, the mother, if she is qualified; if she is not, the remoter relations should give a girl in marriage. If there be none of these, the girl shall apply to the king, and having obtained his permission to make her own choice, choose a husband for herself" (t). Where a father had abandoned his wife and daughter, the mother would be capable to give away her daughter (u). But under no other circumstances would a marriage contract be binding without the father's consent (v). And the maternal grandfather has a right of disposal superior to that of the stepmother (w). Where the natural guardian is a female, she is not necessarily invested with exclusive authority in the matter, as is clear from the fact that the mother, who ranks next to the father as natural guardian, ranks low in the list of relations for the purpose of dispos-

Power to dispose of girl.

(r) *Bhaoni v. Maharaj Singh*, 8 All. 738.

(s) *Brindavana v. Radhamani*, 12 Mad. 72, *per curiam*, 13 M. I. A. 506.

(t) Narada, xii., § 20—22; Yajñvalkya, i. § 63.

(u) *Bae Rulyat v. Jeychund*, Bellasis, 48, S. C. 1 Mor. (N.S.) 181. *Khushalchand v. Bai Mani*, 11 Bom. 247.

(v) *Nundlal v. Tapeedas*, 1 Bor. 14, [16.] *Nanabhai v. Janardhan*, 12 Bom. 110.

(w) *Ram Bunsee v. Soobh Koonwaree*, 7 Suth. 321; S. C. 3 Wym. 219; S. C. 2 In. Jur. 193.

ing of her daughter in marriage (x). But the High Court of Madras refused to allow a divided uncle to dispose of his niece in marriage without consulting her mother. They admitted that the text of Yajnavalkya (i. § 63) could not be limited to the case of a divided family, but they thought that the object of placing the male relations before the mother was merely to supply that protection and advice which the Hindu system considered to be necessary on account of the dependent condition of women. That dependence had now practically ceased to be enforced by the law. Where the mother was at once the guardian of the girl, and the legal possessor of the estate out of which the marriage expenses must be defrayed, they considered that she was entitled to be consulted on the one hand, and the male relations on the other, but that the Court would probably interfere to compel the marriage of a girl to a suitable husband, if chosen by either party, and rejected without reasonable cause by the other (y). Where the guardian is about to effect a marriage which is obviously injurious to the girl, the Court has power to interfere especially where his conduct is actuated by improper or interested motives. Such interference, however, would very rarely, and only in extreme cases, be allowed, where the guardian was the father (z).

**Interference of Court.**

§ 81A. The above rules are of importance so long as the marriage rests in contract, and an attempt to give away a girl in marriage by a person not authorised to do so would be over-ruled by the Court upon a proper application by the person in whom the right was reposed (a). A very different question arises where the marriage has actually been celebrated. A very strong case of that sort recently arose in Madras (b). There the mother had caused her

---

(x) *Per cur.*, 7 Suth. 328.

(y) *Namasevayam v. Annamal*, 4 Mad. H. C. 339; *Mt. Ruliyat v. Madkowjee*, 2 Bor. 680, [739]; *Kumla Buhoo v. Muneeshunkur*, *ib.* 689, [746.]

(z) *Shridhar v. Hiralal*, 12 Bom. 480.

(a) *Per curiam*, 11 Bom. 253.

(b) *Venkatacharyulu v. Rangacharylu*, 14 Mad. 316.



daughter's marriage to be celebrated without her husband's permission. The Brahman who celebrated the marriage was falsely informed by her that the father's consent had been given. It was found as a fact that the mother acted *bonâ fide* in the interest of her daughter, and, as her natural guardian, desiring to secure her a suitable husband. The father repudiated the marriage. The husband sued for a declaration that the marriage is irrevocable. The High Court decided in his favour. They said, "two propositions of law may be taken to be established beyond controversy, *viz.*, (1) where there is a gift by a legal guardian, and the marriage rite is duly solemnised (c) the marriage is irrevocable, and (2) where the girl is abducted by fraud or force and married, and there is no gift either by a natural or legal guardian, there is a fraud upon the policy of the religious ceremony, and there is therefore no valid religious ceremony" (d). "The third proposition of law which is material to the case before us is, that when the mother of the girl, acting as her natural guardian, in view to her welfare, and without force or fraud, gives away the girl in marriage, and the marriage rite is duly solemnised, the marriage is not to be set aside. This view is supported by authority (e) and is sound in principle."

§ 82. The selection of persons to be married is limited by two rules: *first*, that they must be chosen outside the family; *secondly*, that they must be chosen inside the caste. The first of these rules is only a special instance of that singular prohibition against marriage between persons belonging to the same family, or tribe, which is to be found in almost every part of the world, and to which Mr. McLennan has given the name of Exogamy. According to the Sanskrit writers, persons are forbidden to marry who are related as

Persons to be selected.

Exogamy.

Forbidden affinities.

(c) See as to presumption in favour of due performance of a marriage actually celebrated. *Brindabun Chundra v. Chundra Kurmokar*, 12 Cal. 140.

(d) See *per Norman, J., Aunjonu Dasi v. Prahlad Chandra*, 6 B. L. R., p. 254.

(e) Citing *Bai Ruliyat v. Jeychand Rewal*, Bellasis, 43; S. C. 1 Morley N. S. 181. *Modhoosoodhun v. Jadub Chunder*, 3 Suth. 194. *Brindabun Chundra v. Chundra Kurmokar*, 12 Cal. 140. *Khushal Chand v. Bai Mani*, 11 Bom. 247.



sapindas. This relationship extends to six degrees where the common ancestor is a male. Where the common ancestor is a female there is a difference of opinion; Manu and Apastamba extending the prohibition in her case also to six degrees, while Gautama, Vishnu, Vasishtha, Sankha, Narada and Yajnavalkya limit it to four degrees. To this restriction some of the above writers add a further rule that the bride and bridegroom must not be of the same *gotra* or *pravara*. That is, that they must not be of the same family, nor invoke the same ancestor (*f*). In counting according to the above rules the person under consideration is to be excluded. That is to say, begin from the bride or bridegroom, and count, exclusive of both, six, or four, degrees upwards according as their relationship with the common ancestor is through the father or the mother respectively, and if the common ancestor is not reached within those degrees on both sides, they are not sapindas, and marriage between them can be solemnised (*g*). In this way 2,121 possible relations are rendered ineligible for marriage; while further complications, rendered more complex by differences of opinion among the commentators, arise in the case of an adopted son, who is excluded from marriage in two families, or where relationship is traced through stepmothers (*h*). On the other hand, the strictness of these rules is relaxed as regards Western and Southern India by writers who recognise the validity of district, or family, custom permitting intermarriages within the forbidden degrees. They expressly refer to marriages between first cousins, such as that of a man with the daughter of his mother's brother, or of his father's sister (*i*).

---

(*f*) *Manu*, iii. 5, *Apastamba*. ii v. 11, § 15, 16, *Gautama*, iv. § 2—5, *Vishnu*, xxiv. § 9, 10, *Narada*, xii. § 7. *Yajn*, i. § 52, 53, V. N. Mandlik, 411. It is said that a woman married within the forbidden degrees, though she cannot be the wife of the bridegroom for any conjugal or religious purposes, yet cannot be married by another, and must be maintained by her attempted husband. V. N. Mandlik, 508. See as to the prohibited degrees in the Punjab, Customary Law, II. 120, 174.

(*g*) V. N. Mandlik, 347 : Mitakshara, cited W. & B. 121, *post*, § 469. The apparent variance in the authorities quoted above arises from some counting exclusively and others inclusively.

(*h*) See V. N. Mandlik, 352.

(*i*) See the authorities cited by Mr. V. N. Mandlik, 403, 413, 416—424, 448.

Usage, unsupported by direct authority, permits the union of a man with his own sister's daughter (*k*). Marriage with a niece has, however, been held by the Bombay High Court to be incestuous and the Madras High Court, while admitting that the rules among Sudras were not as strict as among Brahmans, and that instances existed of a man marrying his brother's daughter, intimated that such a practice was not warranted by usage (*l*).

§ 83. The restrictive Sanskrit texts which have been referred to above only apply to the twice born classes. Even amongst these it is stated by Mr. V. N. Mandlik that the Kshatriyas and Vaisyas have neither *gotra* nor *pravara*, and that thousands of Brahmans in different parts of the country are in the same position. As regards Sudras, the restraint upon intermarriage must arise from usage, or from voluntary adoption of the Sanskrit rules, not from any inherent efficacy of the rules themselves (*m*). But exactly the same rule against intermarriages between members of the same family has been observed among the Kurumbas of the Nilgiris, the Meenas of Central India, the Kandhs of Orissa, and among the Dravidian races of Southern India (*n*). In Madura, the women of the Chakkili tribe belong to the right-hand faction, and the men to the left-hand (*o*). Evidently a relic of the time when men had to marry women of a different tribe. So the chiefs of the Maravers are accustomed to marry Ahambadyan women, and of the children born of such marriages, the males must marry Ahambadyans, and the females must marry Maravers (*p*). Exactly the opposite rule of Endogamy is found to exist among other tribes in the same district. For instance, among the Kallans, the most proper marriage for a man is with his first cousin, that is

---

(*k*) V. N. Mandlik.

(*l*) *Ramanavda v. Shiraji* cited V. N. Mandlik, 438; *Vythilinga v. Vijithammal*, 6 Mad. 43.

(*m*) V. N. Mandlik, 412, 431.

(*n*) Brecks, 51; Lyall, Fort. Rev., Jan. 1877, 106; Hunter, Orissa, ii. 81.

(*o*) Mad. Manual, Pt. II. 7.

Mad. Manual, Pt. II. 42.

the daughter of his father's sister or brother, and failing her, with his own aunt or niece. Among the Maravers, also, marriage is permitted between the children of brothers (*q*). In ancient times, the incestuous marriages of the Sakya princes with their own sisters, and the similar intercourse of the Gandhara Brahmans with their own sisters and daughters-in-law (*r*), present an illustration of the same curious conflict of principle.

Mixed marriages  
formerly permit-  
ted.

§ 84. The prohibition against marriages between persons of different castes is comparatively modern. Originally, marriages between men of one class and women of a lower, even of the Sudra class, were recognized (*s*), and must have tended strongly to produce that amalgamation of the customs of the Aryans and the aborigines, which I have already suggested as probable (*t*). The sons of such unequal unions were said to rank and to inherit, not equally, but in proportions regulated according to the class of their mother (*u*). Even this rule, however, appears to have been an innovation. Baudhayana lays it down generally, that "in case of a competition of a son born from a wife of equal class, and of one born from a wife of a lower class, the son of the wife of lower class may take the share of the eldest, in case he be possessed of good qualities" (*v*). All the writers allow marriages between a Sudra woman and a Kshatriya or Vaisya, but there is much conflict as to marriages between a Brahman and a Sudra woman. Among the Sutra writers the validity of such marriages seems to be undisputed, but there is much variance as to the position of the offspring. Some texts represent him as sharing with

(*q*) *Mad. Manual*, Pt. II. 40, 50.

(*r*) *Wheeler, Hist. Ind.* iii. 102; *Muir, A. S. T.* ii. 483.

(*s*) *Apastamba* stands alone among the early writers in not recognizing unequal marriages, ii. vi. 13, § 4, 5. It will be remembered that he does not recognize the subsidiary sons either. I cannot account for this difference, unless some passages have fallen out in the text.

(*t*) I take the Sudras as representing the aborigines in early times, but I am aware there is much controversy upon the point. See *Muir, A. S. T.* i. 140—159, 289—295, ii. 368, 455, 485; *Lassen, Ind. Alt.* i. 799.

(*u*) *Manu*, ix. § 149—154.

*Baudhayana*, ii. 2, § 8. See *Gautama*, xxviii. § 35—1

the higher sons ; others as only inheriting in default of them ; others as never taking more than a small fraction of the estate ; and others as never entitled to more than maintenance (*w*). The conflict in Manu is still greater, and shows that the present compilation is made up of texts of different periods. Some texts forbid the marriage, some permit it. Some allow the son to inherit, others forbid him to do so (*x*). But perhaps the strongest possible recognition of such marriages is that afforded by Manu himself, when he admits that the offspring resulting from them might in seven generations rise to the highest class (*y*). It seems, however, to have been always admitted that a Sudra man could not lawfully marry a woman of a higher class than his own (*z*).

§ 85. Marriages between persons of different classes are long since obsolete (*a*). No doubt from the same process of ideas which has split up the whole native community into countless castes, which neither eat, drink, nor marry with each other (*b*). It is impossible now to say when mixed marriages first became extinct. The Mitakshara follows Yajnavalkya in recognizing such marriages, though the phrase, "under the sanction of the law instances do occur," seems to show that they were dying out (*c*). They are also mentioned without disapproval by the Daya Bhaga, Smriti Chandrika, Sarasvati Vilasa, Viramitrodaya, Madhaviya, and Varadrajah (*d*). But in the case of the later authors, at all events, it is probable the discussion was

Mixed marriages  
obsolete.

(*w*) Baudhayana, ii. 2, § 6, 7, 21 ; Gautama, xxviii. § 39 ; Vasishtha, xvii, 21, 25.

(*x*) Cf. Manu, iii. § 12—19, ix § 149—155 ; Narada, xii. § 4—6 ; Yajnavalkya, i. § 56, 57 ; Smriti Chandrika, ii. 2, § 8

(*y*) Manu, x. § 64 ; see, too, § 42.

(*z*) Manu, iii. § 13, ix. § 157.

(*a*) *Vrihat Naradiya Purana*, 3 Dig. 141 ; D. K. S. i. 2, § 7.

(*b*) Marriages between persons in different sub-divisions of the same caste, e.g., of Brahmans or Sudras, have said to be invalid unless sanctioned by local custom. *Melaram v. Thanooram*, 9 Suth. 552 ; *Narain Dhara v. Rakhal*, 1 Cal. 1., S. C. 23 Suth. 334. Contra, *Pandaiya Talaver v. Puli Talaver*, 1 Mad. H. C. 478 ; *affd.* 13 M. I. A. 141 ; S. C. 4. Mad. Jur. 328 ; S. C. 3 B. L. R. (P. C.) 1 ; S. C. 12 Suth. (P. C.) 41. *Ramamani v. Kulanthai*, 14 M. I. A. 346, 352. *Upoma Kuchain v. Bholaram Dhubi*, 15 Cal. 708.

(*c*) Mitakshara, i. 8, § 2.

(*d*) Daya Bhaga, ix. ; Smriti Chandrika, ii. 2, § 6—9 ; Viramit., p. 101 § 2 ; Madhaviya, § 24 ; Varadrajah, 18. Sarasvati Vilasa, § 163—167.

merely introduced to give completeness to the subject, and not because such a practice really subsisted. Illegitimacy is of itself no disqualification for marriage. Where one or both parties to a marriage are illegitimate, it will be valid if they are in fact recognised by their caste men as belonging to the same caste (e).

Physical or  
mental capacity.

§ 86. As the great and primary object of marriage is the procuring of male issue, physical capacity is an essential requisite, so long as mere selection of a bridegroom is concerned; but a marriage with a eunuch is not an absolute nullity as with us (f). Mental incapacity stands in the same position. While the matter rested in contract, no Court, I imagine, would treat a promise to marry a lunatic or an idiot as binding; but the marriage, if celebrated, would be valid. The lunatic, or idiot, would be incapable of inheriting; but his issue would receive their shares (g). A Hindu marriage is the performance of a religious duty (h), not a contract; therefore the consenting mind is not necessary, and its absence, whether from infancy or incapacity, is immaterial (i).

Polygamy.

§ 87. The efficacy of the marriage tie, as binding either party to the transaction, is a matter upon which there has been a considerable change in the Hindu law, while its earlier stage was evidently in accordance with usages which we find at present existing among the non-Aryan races. Among the Kandhs, "so long as a woman remains true to her husband, he cannot contract a second marriage, or even keep a concubine, without her permission" (k). The same rule prevails among the caste of musicians in Ahmedabad, and in the Vadanagara Nagar caste, (l), and seems,

(e) *In re Ram Kumari*, 18 Cal. 264.

(f) Cf. Narada, xii. § 8—19; Manu, ix. § 79, 203. Jolly, § 280. See as to withdrawal from contract, *post*, § 100. *Kanahi v. Biddya*, 1 All 549.

(g) See Gautama, xxviii. § 44; Narada, xiii. § 22; Manu, ix. § 201—203; W. & B. 908; *Dabychurn v. Radachurn*, 2 M. Dig. 99.

(h) Manu, ii. § 66, 67, vi. § 36, 37. See, however, v. § 159.

(i) *Supra*, 2 M. Dig. 99, W. & B. 908, *per curiam*, 5 All. 513.

(k) Hunter's Orissa, ii. 84.

(l) *Muhashunkur v. Mt. Oottum*, 2 Bor. 524. [572.] V. N. Mandlik, 406.



from the evidence of the Thesawaleme, to have been in force among the Tamil emigrants into Ceylon (*m*). One text of Manu seems to indicate that there was a time when a second marriage was only allowed to a man after the death of his former wife (*n*). Another set of texts lays down special grounds which justify a husband in taking a second wife, and except for such causes it appears she could not be superseded without her consent (*o*). Other passages provide for a plurality of wives, even of different classes, without any restriction (*p*). A peculiar sanctity, however, seems to have been attributed to the first marriage, as being that which was contracted from a sense of duty, and not merely for personal gratification. The first married wife had precedence over the others, and her first-born son over his half-brothers (*q*). It is probable that originally the secondary wives were considered as merely a superior class of concubines, like the handmaids of the Jewish patriarchs. It is now quite settled that a Hindu is absolutely without restriction as to the number of his wives, and may marry again without his wife's consent, or any justification except his own wish (*r*). He cannot, however, divorce his wife except by special local usage (*s*); nor does conversion to christianity, with its consequence of expulsion from caste, operate as a dissolution of the union (*t*).

§ 88. The prohibition against second marriages of women, either after divorce, or upon widowhood, has no foundation

Second marriages of women formerly allowed.

(*m*) Thesawaleme, i. § 11.

(*n*) "Having thus kindled sacred fires and performed funeral rites to his wife, who died before him, he may again marry, and again light the nuptial fire." Manu, v. § 168; and see ix. § 101, 102.

(*o*) Manu, ix. § 77—82, Apastamba, ii. v. ii. § 12—13. This seems still to be the usage among some castes of the Deccan. Steele, 30, 168, and in Bengal. *Kally Churn v. Dukhee*, 5 Cal., 692.

(*p*) Manu, iii. § 12, viii. § 204, ix. § 85—87.

(*q*) See Manu, iii. § 12, 14, ix. § 107, 122—125; *post*, § 499.

(*r*) Daya Bhaga, ix. § 6, note; 1 Str. H. L. 56; Steele, 168; *Huree Bhaee v. Nuthoo*, 1 Bor. 59 [65]; *Virasvamy v. Appasvamy*, 1 Mad. H. C. 375.

(*s*) Such a usage has been affirmed in Assam. *Kudomee v. Joteeram*, 3 Cal. 305.

(*t*) *Administrator-General v. Anandachari*, 9 Mad. 466. See Act XXI of 1866.

either in early Hindu law or custom. Passages of the Vedas quoted by Dr. Mayr sanction the remarriage of widows (*u*). And the second marriage of women who have left their husbands for justifiable cause, or who have been deserted by them, or whose husbands are dead, is expressly sanctioned by the early writers (*v*). The authority of Manu is strongly on the other side; but I think it is plain that this is one of the many instances in which the existing text has suffered from interpolations and omissions. Manu declares that a man may only marry a virgin, and that a widow may not marry again (*w*). The only exception which he appears to allow, is in the case of a girl whose husband has died before consummation, who may be married again to the brother of the deceased bridegroom (*x*). On the other hand, two other texts appear to recognize and sanction the second marriage, either of a widow, or of a wife forsaken by her husband (*y*). The contradiction appears to arise from the deliberate omission of part of the original text in an earlier portion of the same chapter. At ix. § 76 a wife, whose husband resides abroad, is directed to wait for him eight, six, or three, years according to the reason for his original absence. Nothing is said as to what is to happen at the end of the time. Kulluka Bhatta inserts a gloss:—"after these terms have expired, she must follow him" (*z*). Now if we look to the corresponding part of Narada, who had an earlier text of Manu before him (*a*), we find that he lays down that "there are five cases in which a woman may take another husband; her first husband having perished, or died naturally, or gone abroad, or if he be impotent, or have lost his caste." Then follow the periods during which

Probable omission in present text of Manu.

(*u*) Mayr, 181. It is now restored by Act XV of 1856, see *post*, § 512.

(*v*) Narada, xii. § 97—101; see too § 18, 19, 24, 46—49, 62; Devala, 2 Dig. 470; Baudhayana, ii. § 20; Vasishtha, xvii. § 13; Katyayana, 3 Dig. 286.

(*w*) Manu, viii. § 226, v. § 161—163. See, to the same effect, Apastamba, ii. vi. 13, § 4.

(*x*) Manu, ix. § 69, 70; *ante*, § 70. Vasishtha, xvii. 74, places no restriction on her second choice.

(*y*) Manu, ix. § 175, 176. See 1 Gib. 84, 104.

(*z*) This is apparently founded on a text attributed to Vasishtha, xvii. 75—80, which is to the same effect.

(*a*) See *ante*, § 21; Introd. to Narada

a woman is to wait for her absent husband, and the whole thing is made into sense by the direction, that when the time has expired she may betake herself to another man (b). Nothing is said about her following him, which after such an absence would probably be impossible or useless. If a similar passage had followed § 76 in Manu, the texts at § 175, 176 would be intelligible and consistent. When second marriages were no longer allowed, these passages seem to have been left out, and others of an exactly opposite character were inserted; the texts at § 175, 176 then became unmeaning, but they were retained to explain the phrase, "son of an unmarried woman," which had already appeared in the list of subsidiary sons. It is probable that the change of usage on this point arose from the influence of Brahmanical opinion, marriage coming to be looked upon as a sort of sacrament, the effect of which was indelible. A similar cause has produced that difference of opinion upon the legality of marriage following upon divorce which prevails in Protestant and Roman Catholic countries. If it is asked why the law varied in exactly the opposite direction in regard to second marriages of men, the only answer I can suggest is, that men have always moulded the law of marriage so as to be most agreeable to themselves.

§ 89. When we examine the usages of the aboriginal races, or of those who have not come under Brahmanical influence, we find a system prevailing exactly like that described by Narada. Among the Jat population of the Punjab, not only a widow, but a wife who has been deserted, or put away, by her husband, may marry again, and will have all the rights of a lawful wife. The same rule exists among the Lingaits of South Canara (c). In Western India, the second marriage of a wife or widow (called *Pat* by the Mahrattas, and *Natra* in Guzerat) is allowed among all the lower castes. The cases in which a wife may re-marry are

Usage of other tribes.

(b) Narada, xii. § 97—101. See also authorities, *ante*, note (o).

(c) Punjab Customary Law, II. 131, 174, 190, 192, 193. Punjab Cust., 95. *Virasangappa v. Rudrappa*, 8 Mad. 440.

Second marriages and divorce.

stated by Mr. Steele as being, if the husband prove impotent, or the parties continually quarrel; if the marriage were irregularly concluded; if by mutual consent the husband breaks his wife's neck-ornament, and gives her a *chorchittee* (writing of divorcement), or if he has been absent and unheard of for twelve years. Should he afterwards return, she may live with either party at her own option, the person deserted being reimbursed his marriage expenses. A widow's *pat* is considered more honourable than a wife's, but children by *pat* are equally legitimate with those by a first marriage (d). The right of a divorce and second marriage has been repeatedly affirmed by the Bombay Courts (e). So, in Southern India widow marriage and divorce is common among many of the lower castes, such as the Velalans of the Palanis, the Maravers (except in the case of the women of the Sambhu Nattan division), the Kallans, the Pallans (f), the tank-diggers, the potters, the barbers, and the pariahs generally (g). In the better classes, such as the oilmongers, the weavers, and a wandering class of minstrels, called the Bhat Rajahs, who claim to be Kshatriyas, it is found in some localities and not in others (h). It is not practised at all among the Brahmans and Kshatriyas, or among the higher classes of Sudras, such as the shepherds, the Komaty caste, the writers, or the five artisan classes, who claim equality with the Brahmans and wear the thread (i). Similarly the Bengal High Court has recognised the validity of widow marriage among the

(d) Steele, 26, 159, 168; W. & B. (2nd ed.) 139 to 146, 162, 168, 167. The *fatwahs* recorded at pp. 112, 114, 139, 141, where evidently given by Shaatris, who treated such second marriages as illegal. See to *Huree Bhaee v. Nuthoo*, 1 Bor. 59, [65] note.

(e) As to divorce, see *Kaseram v. Umbaram*, 1 Bor. 387 [429]; *Kasee Dhoolubh v. Rutton Bae*, ib. 410 [452]; *Muhashunker v. Mt. Oottum*, 2 Bor. 524 [572]; *Dyaram v. Baesumba*, Bellasis, 86. *R. v. Karsan*, 2 Bom. H. C. 124, *R. v. Sumbhu*, 1 Bom. 347, *Government of Bombay v. Ganga*, 4 Bom. 330. *Empress v. Umi*, 6 Bom. 126. As to widow marriage, *Hurkoonwur v. Rutton Bae*, 1 Bor. 431 [475]; *Treekumjee v. Mt. Laro Laroo*, 2 Bor. 361 [397]; *Bae Rutton v. Lalla Munnohur*, Bellasis, 86; *Bae Sheo v. Ruttonjee*, Morris, Pt. I. 103. See *per curiam*, *Rahi v. Govind*, 1 Bom. 114.

(f) Mad. Manual. Pt. II. 33, 40, 58; *Kattama Nachiar v. Dorasinga Tevar*, 6 Mad. H. C. 329; *Murugayi v. Viramakali*, 1 Mad. 226.

(g) Madras Census Report, 157, 159, 164, 171.

(h) Ibid. 141, 143, 155.

(i) Ibid. 137, 140, 143, 149.



Nomosudras (*k*). The degree in which divorce and widow marriage prevails is probably in the direct ratio to the degree in which the respective castes have imitated Brahman habits. The Thesawaleme treats widow marriage as a matter of course (*l*), and we may fairly assume that it was so originally among all the Tamil races.

§ 90. Marriage is not to be confounded with betrothal. Betrothal  
The one is a completed transaction; the other is only a contract. Manu says, "Neither ancients nor moderns who were good men have ever given a damsel in marriage after she had been promised to another man" (*m*). But Narada and Yajnavalkya both admit the right of a father to annul is revocable.  
a betrothal to one suitor, if a better match presents himself; and either party to the contract is allowed to withdraw from it, where certain specified defects are discovered (*n*). Narada states that a man who withdraws Result of breach of contract.  
from his contract without proper cause, may be compelled to marry the girl even against his will. But it is now settled by decision that a contract to marry will not be specifically enforced, and that the only remedy is by an action for damages (*o*). All expenses resulting from the abortive contract would be recoverable in such an action (*p*). Of course, no such claim could be maintained where the contract failed from the wilful, or negligent, conduct of the complaining party (*q*). Probably the real difficulty has often been to distinguish between two things which are sometimes called by the same name, *viz.*, the betrothal, which is only a promise to marry, and the pledging of troth, which forms part of the marriage itself. The former class of betrothal is often celebrated with much ceremony,

(*k*) *Hurry Churn v. Nunai Chand*, 10 Cal. 138.

(*l*) Thesawaleme, i. § 10.

(*m*) Manu, ix. § 99.

(*n*) Narada, xii. § 30—38; Yajnavalkya, i. § 65, 66; Vasishtha, 2 Dig. 487, 490; Katyayana, *ib.* 491; Mitakshara, ii. 11, § 27.

(*o*) Narada, xii. § 35; *Umed v. Nagindas*, 7 Bom. H. C. O. C. 122; *Nowbut v. Mt. Lad Kooer*, 5 N.-W. P., 102; *re Gunput Narain Singh*, 1 Cal. 74.

(*p*) Mitakshara, ii. 11, § 28. *Mulji Thakersey v. Gomti*, 11 Bom. 412.

(*q*) *Divi Virasalingam v. Alaturti*, Mad. Dec. of 1860, 274.



Septapati.

but this does not alter its character. So, in the actual marriage there are numerous formalities, and many recitals of holy texts, but the operative part of the transaction consists in the seven steps taken by the bridal pair. On the completion of the last step, the actual marriage has taken place (*r*). Till then it is imperfect and revocable. Even this proceeding, however, is not absolutely essential. It is a form which, if complied with, is conclusive. But if it is shown that by the custom of the caste, or district, any other form is considered as constituting a marriage, then the adoption of that form, with the intention of thereby completing the marriage union, is sufficient (*s*). In some communities there is a custom that after the actual marriage has taken place a further ceremony must be performed before cohabitation, and if the man who has gone through the first ceremony declines to perform the second, the girl may lawfully marry again (*t*). But the legal result of such a custom would appear to be that there is no binding and complete marriage until after the second ceremony. In the absence of any such custom the marriage is complete, even though never followed by consummation, and though, in consequence of the conversion to christianity of one party, the other renounces the obligations of marriage (*u*).

Irregular marriage :

§ 91. A marriage actually and properly celebrated will be legal and binding, although it has taken place in violation of a previous agreement to marry another person (*v*) ; or although it has been performed without the consent of the person whose consent ought to have been obtained (*w*). For this is one of the cases in which necessity compels the appli-

(*r*) *Manu*, ix. § 227 ; *Narada*, xii. § 2 ; *Yama*, 2 Dig. 488 ; *Virāmit.*, ii. 2, § 4 ; *Coleb. Essays*, 128. See cases last cited.

(*s*) *Manu*, iii. § 35 ; see *futwah*, 2 M. Dig. 45 ; *Gatha Ram v. Moohita Kochin*, 14 B. L. R. 298, S. C. 23 Suth. 179. *Kally Churn v. Dukhee*, 5 Cal. 692. V. N. Mandlik, 404. *Hurry Churn v. Nimai Chand*, 10 Cal. 138. When the fact of the celebration of marriage is established, it will be presumed, in the absence of evidence to the contrary, that all the necessary ceremonies have been complied with. *Brindabun Chundra v. Chundra Kurmoker*, 12 Cal. 140.

(*t*) *Boolechand v. Janokee*, 25 W. R. 386.

(*u*) *Administrator-General v. Anandachari*, 9 Mad. 466.

(*v*) *Khooshal v. Bhugwan Motee*, 1 Bor. 188 [155].

(*w*) *Bae Rulyat v. Jeychund*, Bellasis, 48 S. C. 1 Mor. N. B. 181.

cation of the maxim, *Factum valet quod fieri non debuit*. When the marriage is once completed, if either party refuses to live with the other, the case is no longer one for specific performance of a contract, but for restitution of conjugal rights. It has long since been settled that such a suit would lie between Hindus, but there was much conflict of authority as to the mode in which the decree was to be enforced (x). The point has now been settled by s. 260 of the Civil Procedure Code (Act XIV of 1882), which provides that where the party against whom the decree has been made has had an opportunity of obeying it, and has wilfully failed to do so, it may be enforced by imprisonment, or by attachment of property, or by both (y). *Primâ facie* the husband is the legal guardian of his wife, and is entitled to require her to live in his house from the moment of the marriage, however young she may be. But this right does not exist, where by custom, or agreement, the wife is to remain in her parents' house, until puberty is established (z).

how enforced

Custody of wife.

---

(x) See *Gatha Ram v. Moohita Kochin*, 14 B. L. R. 298 S. C. 23 Suth. 179, *Jogendronundini v. Hurry Doss*, 5 Cal. 500. *Pakhandu v. Manki*, 3 All. 506. *Dadaji v. Rukmabai*, 10 Bom. 301. *Binda v. Kaunsilia*, 13 All. 126.

(y) Under this Section, as in England, the Court will take into consideration any circumstances which establish a reasonable objection on the part of the wife, and will impose proper conditions upon the husband in reference to such objection. *Paigi v. Sheonarrain*, 8 All. 78.

(z) *Kateeran v. Mt. Gendhenee*, 23 W. R. 178; *Suntosh Ram v. Gera Pat-tuck*, ib. 22. See post, § 414.

## CHAPTER V.

### FAMILY RELATIONS.

#### *Adoption.*

Little noticed in  
early writings.

§ 92. THERE is a singular disproportion between the space necessarily devoted to adoption in the English works on Hindu law, and that which it occupies in the early law-books. One might read through all the texts from the Sutra writers down to the Daya Bhaga without discovering that adoption is a matter of any prominence in the Hindu system. But for the two treatises translated by Mr. Sutherland, it may almost be affirmed that Englishmen would never have discovered the fact at all. Even in Jagannatha's Digest, the subject only takes up thirty-two pages. The fact is that the law of adoption, as at present administered, is a purely modern development from a very few old texts. The very absence of direct authority has caused an immense growth of subtleties and refinements. The effect that every adoption must have upon the devolution of property causes every case that can be disputed to be brought into Court. Fresh rules are imagined, or invented. Notwithstanding the spiritual benefits which are supposed to follow from the practice, it is doubtful whether it would ever be heard of, if an adopted son was not also an heir. Paupers have souls to be saved, but they are not in the habit of adopting.

Importance of  
sons.

§ 93. I have already (§ 65) pointed out the advantages which all early races would derive from the possession of sons, and the peculiar necessity for male offspring which would press upon the Aryans, on account of their religious system. This want was amply met by the early Hindu law, which provided twelve sorts of sons, all of whom were com-

petent to prevent a failure of obsequies, in the absence of legitimate issue (a). For religious purposes, the son of the appointed daughter seems to have been completely equal in efficacy with the natural-born son (b), and where any one of several brothers had a son, the latter was considered to be the son of all the brothers; Kulluka Bhatta actually adds a gloss: "So that if such nephew would be the heir, the uncles have no power to adopt a son;" and the same view was maintained by Chandesvara and other commentators (c). It is evident, therefore, that in early times the five sorts of adopted sons must have been of very secondary importance. Apastamba expressly states that "the gift or acceptance of a son, and the right to buy or sell a child, is not recognized" (d). And Katyayana permits the gift, or sale, of a son during a season of distress, but not otherwise (e). The same low estimation of adopted sons is evidenced by the rank which they occupied in the order of sons. A reference to the table which accompanies § 64 will show, that out of fourteen authorities there quoted only five place even the *dattaka* among the first six. Now this is not a mere matter of arrangement, for they all without exception give rights of inheritance to the first six sons which are denied to the remaining six. No doubt Manu is one of the five who thus favours the adopted son. But it may be questioned whether his text has not undergone an alteration in that respect. Both Yajnavalkya and Narada, who were later than Manu, place the adopted among the later six. Narada expressly states that he took Manu as the basis of his work. An examination of the marginal references in Stenzler's Yajnavalkya will establish that he did the same. It will be seen by the table that these two agree much

Comparative  
inferiority of  
adopted son.

Manu, ix. § 180; cf. § 161, which, as explained by Kulluka Bhatta, seems to be an interpolation, introduced when subsidiary sons had become obsolete. Vrihaspati, Dattaka Chandrika, i. § 8.

(b) Vishnu, xv. § 47; Manu, ix. § 127—139.

(c) Vasishtha, xvii. § 8; Vishnu, xv. § 48; Manu, ix. § 182; 3 Dig. 266; Dattaka Chandrika, i. § 21.

(d) Apastamba, ii. 18; vi. § 11.

(e) Dattaka Mimamsa, i. § 7, 8. Mitakshara, i. 11, § 10 refers this prohibition to the giver not the taker of the son. A contrary view was taken by Apararka.



more closely with each other than either does with Manu as it now stands. It is difficult to account for their differing from so high an authority, if they had before them the text which we possess. In any case, the mere fact that differences of opinion did exist on such a point would seem to show that it had not assumed any great prominence.

Diminished  
number of modes  
of adoption.

§ 94. When the number of subsidiary sons was diminished from the causes I have already suggested (§ 75), the importance of the adopted sons, who alone were left, would naturally increase. Even where a brother's son existed, though he might procure for his uncle all the required spiritual blessings, still an adoption would be necessary, "for the celebration of name, and the due perpetuation of lineage" (*f*). As partition and self-acquisition became more common, the latter objects would naturally be more desired. It is singular, then, that we should find the same diminution exhibiting itself in the forms of adoption (*g*). The explanation is probably to be found in the growth of Brahmanical influence, and the consequent prominence given to the religious principle. If the primary object of adoption was to gratify the *manes* of the ancestors by annual offerings, it was necessary to delude the *manes*, as it were, into the idea that the offerer really was their descendant. He was to look as much like a real son as possible, and certainly not to be one who could never have been a son. Hence arose that body of rules which were evolved out of the phrase of Çaunaka, that he must be "the reflection of a son" (*h*). He was to be a person whose mother might have

(*f*) Dattaka Chandrika, i. § 22; V. Darp. 739.

(*g*) In addition to the general authorities cited, *ante*, § 75, see as to the obsolescence of the *Krita* form, 1 Stra. H. L. 132; 1 N. C. 72; *Eshan Kishor v. Haris Chandra*, 15 B. L. R. Appx. 42, S. C. 21 Suth. 381. As to the *Svayamdatta*, *Bashetiappa v. Shivlingappa*, 10 Bom. H. C. 268. As to a form called *paluk patro*, *Kalee Ohunder v. Sheeb Ohunder*, 2 Suth. 281. Other forms might perhaps be valid, when sanctioned by local custom, as the *Krita* system is said still to exist among the Gosains, 1 W. MacN. 101.

(*h*) Dattaka Mimamsa, v. § 15. It seems possible that this metaphor is itself a mistake. Dr. Bühler translates the verse, "He then should adorn the child, which (now) resembles a son of the receiver's body; that is, which has come to resemble a son by the previous ceremony of giving and receiving. See Journal, As. Soc. Bengal, 1866, art. Çaunaka-Smriti.



been married by the adopter (i) ; he was to be of the same class ; he was to be so young that his ceremonies might all be performed in the adoptive family ; he was to be absolutely severed from his natural family, and to become so completely a part of his new family as to be unable to marry within its limits. His introduction into the family must appear to be a matter of love and free-will, unsullied by every mercenary element. All these restrictions had the effect of eliminating the other forms of adoption, and leaving the *dattaka* alone in force.

§ 95. It must not be supposed that the religious motive for adoption ever excluded the secular motive. The spiritual theory operated strongly upon the Shastries who invented the rules ; but those who followed them were, in all probability, generally unconscious of any other aim than that of securing an heir, on whom to lavish the family affection which is so strong among Hindus. The propriety of this motive was admitted by the Sanskrit writers themselves. In the ceremonial for adoption given by Baudhayana, the adopter receives the child with the words : “I take thee for the fulfilment of religious duties. *I take thee to continue the line of my ancestors*” (k). A text which is by some attributed to Manu, states that “a son of any description must be anxiously adopted by one who has none, for the sake of the funeral cake, water and solemn rites, *and for the celebrity of his name*” (l). And the author of the *Dattaka Chandrika* admits that even where no spiritual necessity exists, a son may, and even ought to, be adopted, for “the celebration of name, and the due perpetuation of lineage” (m). In fact, the earliest instances of adoption found in Hindu legend are adoptions of daughters (n). The *Thesawaleme* shows that such adoptions

Influence of  
secular motives.

(i) It will be seen (post, § 123) that the origin and scope of this rule is open to much doubt.

(k) The whole passage is translated by Dr. Bühler in his article on *Çaunaka*, Journ. As. Soc. Bengal, 1866.

(l) *Dattaka Chandrika*, i. § 9 ; 3 Dig. 297.

(m) *Ibid.* i. § 22

(n) See *Dattaka Mimamsa*, vii. § 30—38.

Adoptions  
among non-  
Brahmanical  
races.

were practised among the Tamil races of Southern India (o). At the present day the Bheels carry away girls by force for wives, and then, with a zeal for fiction which is interesting among savages, adopt them into one family, that they may marry them into another (p). The *Kritrima* form of adoption which is still in force in Mithila, and which in several particulars strongly resembles that which is practised in Jaffna, has no connection with religious ideas, and is wholly non-Brahmanical. Among the tribes who have not come under Brahmanical influence, we find that adoption is equally practised, but without any of those rules which spring from the religious fiction. One Sanskrit purist actually laid it down that Sudras could not adopt, as they were incompetent to perform the proper religious rites (q). As a matter of fact they always did adopt, but were expressly freed from the restrictions which fettered the higher classes. They not only might, but ought to, adopt the son of a sister or of a daughter, who was forbidden to others; and they might take as their son a person of any age, and even a married man (r); that is to say, they adopted persons who made no pretence to religious fitness, but who were perfectly suitable for all other objects. So in the Punjab, adoption is common to the Jats, Sikhs, and even to the Muhammedans, just as in other parts of India. But with them the object is simply to make an heir. "The religious notion of a mystical second birth is not imported into the transaction." No religious ceremonies are used. There is no exclusion of an only son, or of the son of a daughter, or of a sister, nor is there any limit of age. Of later years, however, a tendency to introduce these Brahmanical rules is showing itself. The explanation given by Mr. Justice Campbell is interesting, as illustrating the way in which the process has often taken place:—"In Sikh times, when the land was of little value, and young men of much value, the introduction of a new boy into the com-

(o) Thesawaleme, ii. § 4.

(p) Lyall, Asiatic Studies, 163

(q) Vachespatri, cited Dattaka Mimamsa, i. § 26.

(r) See post, § 124, 129.

munity was probably looked on with satisfaction. But by the time of our regular settlements the value of land was discovered, and the brotherhood would naturally look to the chances of dividing the land of an heirless co-sharer, rather than to the introduction of an extra hand to share in the profits, which had begun to be considerable. Hence the main body of a tribe would be inclined to enter as a custom what they wished should be the custom, and unless there were men with interests to defend, the general wish for the future was entered without protest" (s). Among the Jain dissenters, and in the Talabda Koli caste in Western India, adoption is also practised, but without any religious significance attached to it, and consequently with a complete absence of the restrictions arising therefrom (t). Among the Oóriya Rajahs of Ganjam, who are Kshatriyas, the exequial rites are always performed by a Brahman official, who is permanently attached to the family, and who is called the son-Brahman (u). Yet these Rajahs invariably adopt, as might be expected where an old feudality has to be maintained. In Jaffna, the Tamil people adopt both boys and girls; and so little is there any idea of a new birth into the family, that the adopted son can marry a natural-born daughter of the adopting parents; and where both a boy and girl are adopted, they can intermarry (v). The secular character of the transaction is even more forcibly shown by the circumstance that the person who makes the adoption must obtain the consent of his heirs. If they withhold it, their rights of inheritance will be unaffected (w). These facts appear to be of much weight in support of the suggestion I have already made

(s) Punjab Cust., 78—83.

(t) *Sheo Singh v. Mt. Dakho*, 6 N. W. P. 382, 392, *affd.* 5 I. A. 87 S. C., 1 All. 688; *Bhala Nahana v. Parbhu*, 2 Bom. 67.

(u) This usage was frequently proved in cases in which I was counsel. For instance, in the case of the Seerghur succession, and that of the Chinna Kimedy taluq, (*Tammirazu v. Pantina*, 6 Mad. H. C. 301; *Raghanadha v. Brozokishoro*, 3 I. A. 154 S. C. 1 Mad. 69; S. C. 25 Suth. 291) but the custom has not been noticed in either of the reports. It was fully set out in the evidence. It is stated in a more recent case, 11 Mad., 289.

(v) *Thesawaleme*, ii. § 4.

(w) *Ibid.* ii. § 1, 5, 6. See *post*, § 117, note

(§ 10), that the spiritual theory is not the sole object of an adoption, even upon Brahmanical principles, and that it can only be applied with the greatest possible caution in the case of non-Aryan tribes, or such as dissent from orthodox Hinduism

#### Early texts.

§ 96. The whole Sanskrit law of adoption is evolved from two texts and a metaphor. The metaphor (if it is not itself a mis-translation) is that of Çaunaka, that the boy to be adopted must be “the reflection of a son” (§ 94 note *h*). The texts are those of Manu and Vasishtha.

Manu says (*y*), “He whom his father or mother gives to another as his son, provided that the donee have no issue, if the boy be of the same class, and affectionately disposed, is considered as a son given, the gift being confirmed by pouring water.”

Vasishtha says (*z*), “A son formed of seminal fluids and of blood, proceeds from his father and mother as an effect from its cause. Both parents have power to sell, or to desert him. But let no man give, or accept, an only son, since he must remain to raise up a progeny for the obsequies of ancestors. Nor let a woman give, or accept, a son, unless with the assent of her lord. He who means to adopt a son, must assemble his kinsmen, give humble notice to the king, and then having made an oblation to fire with words from the Veda, in the midst of his dwelling-house he may receive, as his son by adoption, a boy nearly allied to him,

(*x*) Where the family, being non-Hindu by origin, has adopted Hinduism in part, though not entirely, the *onus* lies on those who set up an adoption to show that this part of the Hindu law has been incorporated in the family usage. Where a family is governed by Hindu law, it may be possible to make out a usage forbidding adoption. It is evident, however, that it would be very difficult to establish a negative usage of such a nature. (*Fanindra Deb. v. Rajeswar Das*, 12 I. A. 72; S. C. 11 Cal. 468.)

(*y*) Manu, ix. § 168.

(*z*) 3 Dig. 242. The passage from the Grihyasutra of Baudhayana, translated by Dr. Bühler in the Journal As. Soc. Beng. 1866, art. Çaunaka Smriti, is almost word for word the same, but contains no limitation as to relationship or class. See also the passage from Çaunaka on Adoption, translated in the same article, which is also given, V. May., iv. 5, § 8.



or (on failure of such) even one remotely allied. But if doubt arise, let him treat the remote kinsman as a Sudra. The class ought to be known, for through one son the adopter rescues many ancestors."

These texts only apply to the *Dattaka* form. The *Kritrima*, which prevails in Mithila, but nowhere else, will be treated of subsequently. From this small beginning a body of law has been developed, which will be considered under the following heads :—FIRST, who may take in adoption ; SECOND, who may give in adoption (§ 119) ; THIRD, who may be adopted (§ 123) ; FOURTH, the ceremonies necessary to an adoption (§ 140) ; FIFTH, the evidence of adoption (§ 145) ; SIXTH, the results of adoption (§ 152).

§ 97. FIRST, WHO MAY ADOPT.—An adoption may either be made by the man himself, or by his widow on his behalf. But in either case it is a condition precedent that he should be without issue at the time of adoption (*a*). Issue is taken in the wide sense peculiar to the term in Hindu law (§ 498). Accordingly, if a man has a son, grandson, or great-grandson actually alive, he is precluded from adopting. Because any one of such persons is his immediate heir, and is capable of performing his funeral rites with full efficacy (*b*). But the existence of a great-great-grandson, or of a daughter's son, is no bar to an adoption (*c*). Still less the previous existence of issue who are now dead (*d*). Nanda Pandita in discussing this subject suggests, upon the authority of a legend in the Purana, that an adoption might be valid even during the life of a natural-born son, if made with the consent of the latter ; and in Bengal the validity of such an adoption has been maintained, and also that of two suc-

Adopter must be without issue.

Only one son at a time.

(*a*) The same rule prevailed as regards adoption both in Greece and Rome. It is singular that the earliest instance of adoption is that in the Rigveda, where Visvamitra, who had at the time a hundred living sons, adopted Sunahsepa. V. N. Mandlik, 454.

(*b*) Dattaka Mimamsa, i. § 13 ; Dattaka Chandrika, i. § 6.

(*c*) F. MacN. 149 ; 1 W. MacN. 66, n.

(*d*) Cankha. Dattaka Mimamsa, i. § 4 ; Dattaka Chandrika, i. § 4.



cessive adoptions, the latter of which was made while the son first adopted was still alive (*e*). But the contrary rule is now established; and it is settled that a man cannot have two adopted sons at the same time, though of course he may adopt as often as he likes, if at the time of each successive adoption he is without issue (*f*). On the same principle, the simultaneous adoption of two or more sons is invalid as to all (*g*). And where an adoption is invalid by reason of the concurrent existence of a son, natural or adopted, the death of the latter will not give validity to a transaction which was an absolute nullity from the first (*h*). It is suggested by Mr. Sutherland, and assented to by Mr. MacNaghten, that if the son, natural or adopted, became an outcast, and therefore unable to perform the necessary funeral rites, an adoption would be lawful; and a practice to that effect is stated to exist in Bombay (*i*). But since Act XXI of 1850 a son would not forfeit any legal right by loss of caste. Therefore an adopted son could not, by virtue of his adoption, step into his place on the ground that he had lost his caste. If the question were to arise, it is possible the Courts would refuse to recognize an adoption which could confer no civil rights. The question might, however, become of importance on the death of the natural son without issue.

Bachelor or  
widower.

§ 98. It has been suggested that an adoption by a bachelor, or a widower, would be invalid, either on the ground that such a person was not in the order of *grihastha* (householder or married man), or that the right of adoption was only allowed where the legitimate mode of procreation had failed. But it may now be taken as settled that an adop-

(*e*) *Mt. Solukna v. Ramdolal*, 1 S. D. 324 (434); *Goureepershad v. Mt. Jymala*, 2 S. D. 186 (174); *Steele*, 45, 183.

(*f*) *Rungama v. Atchama*, 4 M. I. A. 1, S. C. 7 Suth. (P. C.) 57. But an adoption will not be invalid because it is made in breach of an agreement to adopt another person, where such agreement has not been carried out. 2 Stra. H. L. 115.

(*g*) *Akhoy Chunder v. Kalapar Haji*, 12 I. A. 198; S. C. 12 Cal. 406; *Doorga Sundari v. Surendra Keshav*, 12 Cal. 686.

(*h*) *Basoo v. Basoo*, Mad. Dec. of 1856, 20.

(*i*) 2 W. MacN. 200; *Steele*, 42, 181.

tion in either of the above cases would be valid (*k*). In one case the Madras Sudr Court held that an adoption was illegal which had been effected during the pregnancy of the adopter's wife ; not on the ground that she afterwards produced a son, which it does not appear that she did, but because it was " of the essence of the power to adopt that the party adopting should be hopeless of having issue" (*l*). This principle, if sound, would preclude a man ever adopting until extreme old age, or until he was on his death-bed. It is also opposed to the rules which provide for the case of a son born after an adoption (§ 155). Accordingly in a later case (1881) where an adoption had been held invalid on the ground that the wife was at the time pregnant, and known to be so by her husband, the Court after an examination of the above decision over-ruled it, and held the adoption to be valid. They pointed out that the logical result of such a rule would be to suspend an adoption during the pregnancy, not only of the adopter's wife, but also of the wives of his sons and grandsons, since the existence of issue in the most extended sense of the word is a bar to an adoption (*m*).

§ 99. Where a person is disqualified from inheriting by any personal disability, such as blindness, impotence, leprosy, or the like, a son whom he may adopt can have no higher rights than himself, and would be entitled to maintenance only (*n*). Mr. Sutherland was of opinion that the adoption itself would be valid, in which case, of course, the adopted son would succeed to the self-acquired or separate property of his adoptive father (*o*). On the other

Adoption by disqualified heir.

(*k*) Suth. Syn. 664, 671 ; 3 Dig. 252 ; 1 W. MacN. 66 ; 2 W. MacN. 175 ; *Gunnappa v. Sankappa*, Bom. Sel. Rep. 202 ; *Nagappa v. Subba Sastry*, 2 Mad. H. C. 367 ; *Chandrasekharudu v. Bramhanna*, 4 Mad. H. C. 270. *Gopal Anant v. Narayan Ganesh*, 12 Bom. 329. *Per Mahmood, J.*, 12 All. 352.

(*l*) *Narayana v. Vedachala*, Mad. Dec. of 1860, 97. See Steele, 43.

(*m*) *Nagabhushanam v. Seshamma*, 3 Mad. 180 ; acc. *Hanmant Ramchandra v. Bhimacharya*, 12 Bom. 105.

(*n*) *Dattaka Chandrika*, vi. § 81 ; *Sevachetumbara v. Parasucty*, Mad. Dec. of 1857, 210. In the Punjab a man who is blind, impotent, or lame, can adopt, though the Brahmans deny the right of one who was always impotent. Punjab Customary Law, II. 154.

(*o*) Suth. Syn., 664, 671.

hand, in two cases which Mr. MacNaghten cites with approbation, the Bengal pundits held that the capacity of a leper to adopt depended upon his having performed the necessary expiation. When he had done so the adoption was valid. When he had not done so, or where the disease was such as to be inexpiable, the adoption was invalid (*p*). This opinion rested on the ground that until expiation he was unable to perform the necessary religious ceremonies. Accordingly, the Bengal High Court decided that an adoption was invalid when effected by a widow who was living in concubinage, as this made her unfit to take part in any religious ceremony (*q*). In Bombay it was contended that an adoption by a widow was invalid, as she had not undergone tonsure, and was therefore impure. It appeared, however, that she had made certain expiatory gifts, which the Shastras, on being consulted previous to the adoption, had pronounced sufficient. The Court refused to allow their opinion to be questioned (*r*). In a case before the Privy Council it was argued, and seems to have been assumed, that an adoption would have been invalid, if it had been made while the adopter was still in a state of pollution (*s*). No decision was given upon the point, as the facts which would have raised it were negatived. When the case arises it will require a previous determination of the question, What religious ceremonies are necessary to an adoption, and who must take part in them (*t*).

Adoption by  
minor.

§ 100. The law as to the capacity of a minor to adopt, or to authorise an adoption, seems also unsettled. The various acts which constitute Courts of Wards all contain provisions forbidding a disqualified landholder to adopt without the consent of the Court (*u*). It has been held that these

(*p*) 2 W. MacN. 201, acc.; Mitakshara, ii. 10, § 11.

(*q*) *Sayamalal v. Saudamini*, 5 B. L. R. 862.

(*r*) *Ravji Vinayakrao v. Lakshmibai*, 11 Bom. 381, 392.

(*s*) *Ramalinga v. Sadasiva*, 9 M. I. A. 506; S. C. 1 Suth. (P. O.) 25.

(*t*) See as to this, *post*, § 142, 143, and as to the grounds upon which disability to inheritance arises, *post*, chap. xix.

(*u*) Beng. Reg. X of 1793, s. 33; LII of 1803, s. 37 (N. W. P.); Mad. Reg. V of 1804, s. 25; Act XXXV of 1858, s. 74; Act IV of 1870, s. 74 (B. C.). Act

provisions do not apply at all unless actual possession has been taken by the Courts of Wards ; but that where they do apply, they equally forbid the giving of an authority to adopt, and that an adoption made in violation of them is absolutely invalid (*v*). Under Act IX of 1875, (Majority) § 3, minority in the case of Hindus now extends to the end of the 18th year, unless in cases where a guardian has been appointed by a Court of Justice, or where the minor is under the jurisdiction of the Court of Wards, in which case it lasts till the end of the 21st year. It has, however, been held in Bengal and Bombay that both an actual adoption effected by a minor, and an authority to adopt given by him, will be valid, provided he has attained years of discretion, and this opinion appears to have been approved by the Judicial Committee. Mr. Justice *Mitter* said : “ Every act done by a minor is not necessarily null and void. Those acts only which are prejudicial to his interest can be questioned and avoided by him after he reaches his majority. But no such prejudicial character can be predicated of adoption in the case of a childless Hindu, and as under the Hindu Shasters a minor who has arrived at the age of discretion is not only competent but bound to perform the religious ceremonies prescribed for his salvation, we cannot hold the adoption made in this case to be invalid, merely because the adoptive father was in the eye of the law a minor” (*w*). The judgment does not state when a Hindu arrives at years of discretion ; whether the period is a fixed one, or whether it depends upon the special capacity of

Age of discretion.

---

IX of 1879 (B.C.) s. 61. This last Act also extends the prohibition to an authority to adopt.

(*v*) *Jumona v. Bamasoonderai*, 3 I. A. 72 ; S. C. 1 Cal. 289 ; *Neelkaunt v. Anundmoyee*, S. D. of 1855, 218 ; *Anundmoyee v. Sheebchunder*, 9 M. I. A. 287 ; S. C. 2 Suth. (P. C.) 19. But see *per Pontifex, J.*, *Banee Pershad v. Moonshee Syud*, 25 Suth. 192, 198. It has been held that the corresponding provision in Bombay, Act II of 1863, s. 6, cl. 2 only applies as between Government and the person claiming as adopted son, and cannot be taken advantage of by third parties for the purpose of invalidating the adoption. *Vasudevanant v. Ramkrishna*, 2 Bom. 529.

(*w*) *Rajendro Narain v. Saroda*, 15 Suth. 548 ; *Patel Vandravan Jekisan v. Manilal*, 15 Bom. 565 ; *per curiam*, *Jumona v. Bamasoonderai*, 3 I. A. 83 ; S. C. 1 Cal. 289 ; *Mt. Pearee v. Mt. Hurbunsee*, 19 Suth. 127 ; V. Darp. 770, where conflicting opinions are cited.



each individual. In general, the Hindu law-books speak of the age of discretion and majority as convertible terms, and treat each period as being attained at the sixteenth year. But a further subdivision is stated, *viz.*, infancy to the end of the fourth year, boyhood to the end of the ninth, and adolescence to the end of the fifteenth. This distinction, according to Jagannatha, regards penance, expiation, and the like. An opinion is also mentioned by him, that the period of legal capacity may be determined with reference to the degree in which a youth has actually become conversant with affairs (*x*). It may be that Mr. Justice *Mitter* meant, that an adoption would be valid if effected by a boy between the ages of ten and sixteen, who was shown to be capable of understanding the nature of his act (*y*). The actual decision appears to have been as to an authority to adopt given by the minor. Of course he could not authorise an adoption which he could not effect. The converse of the proposition does not seem necessarily to follow. An act done might be valid, though an authority to do it might be invalid.

Adoption by  
wife.

§ 101. As an adoption is made solely to the husband and for his benefit, he is competent to effect it without his wife's assent, and notwithstanding her dissent (*z*). For the same reason, she can adopt to no one but her husband. An adoption made to herself, except where the *Kritrima* form is allowed, would be wholly invalid (*a*). Nor can she ever adopt to her husband during his lifetime, except with his assent (*b*). Her capacity to adopt to him, after his death, whether with or without his assent, is a point which has given rise to four different opinions, each of which is settled

Adoption by  
widow.

(*x*) 1 Dig. 291—293; 2 Dig. 115—117; Mitakshara on Loans, cited V. Darp. 770.

(*y*) Act IX of 1875 (Majority) does not settle the point, as s. 2 provides that the Act is not to affect any person in the matter of adoption.

(*z*) Dattaka Mimamsa, i. § 22; *Rungama v. Atchama*, 4 M. I. A. 2; S. C. 7 Suth. (P. C.) 57.

(*a*) *Chowdhry Pudum v. Koer Oodey*, 12 M. I. A. 856; S. C. 12 Suth (P. C.) 1; S. C. 2 B. L. R. (P. C.) 101. Adoptions by women of the dancing-girl caste rest on a different footing, see *post*, § 183.

(*b*) Dattaka Mimamsa, i. § 27.



to be law in the province where it prevails. "All the schools accept as authoritative the text of Vasishtha, which says, 'Nor let a woman give or accept a son unless with the assent of our lord' (§ 96). But the Mithila school apparently takes this to mean that the assent of the husband must be given at the time of the adoption, and therefore that a widow cannot receive a son in adoption, according to the Dattaka form, at all (c). The Bengal school interprets the text as requiring an express permission given by the husband in his lifetime, but capable of taking effect after his death (d); whilst the Mayukha, Kaustubha, and other treatises which govern the Mahratta school, explain the text away by saying, "that it applies only to an adoption made in the husband's lifetime, and is not to be taken to restrict the widow's power to do that which the general law prescribes as beneficial to her husband's soul (e). The same interpretation is put upon the text by the Nambudry Brahmans of the West Coast (§ 42) with the same result (f). A fourth and intermediate view was established by the Judicial Committee in the case from which this quotation is taken, viz., that in Southern India the want of the husband's assent may be supplied by that of his sapindas. The doctrine of the Benares school, as it prevails in Northern India, appears to be the same as that of Bengal, as to the necessity for the husband's assent; though upon this point a greater difference of opinion has prevailed, from the circumstance that the Viramitrodaya, which allows the assent of the kinsmen to be sufficient, is an authority in that province (g). The result is, that in the case of an adoption

Mithila.

Bengal.

Mahratta.

Southern India.

Benares.

(c) Dattaka Mimamsa, i. § 16; Vivada Chintamani, 74; 1 W. MacN. 95, 100; *Jai Ram v. Musan Dhami*, 5 S. D. 3.

(d) 1 W. MacN. 91, 100; 2 W. MacN. 175, 182, 183; *Janki Dibeh v. Suda Sheo*, 1 S. D. 197 (262); *Mt. Tara Munee v. Dev. Narayun*, 3 S. D. 387 (516).

(e) *Per curiam*, *Collector of Madura v. Moottoo Ramalinga*, 12 M. I. A. 435; S. C. 1 B. L. R. (P. C.) 1; S. C. 10 Suth. (P. C.) 17; V. N. Mandlik, 463.

(f) 11 Mad. 167, 178, 187.

(g) Viramit., ii. 2, § 8; 1 W. MacN. 91, 100; 2 W. MacN. 189; *Shumshere v. Dilraj*, 2 S. D. 169 (216); *Haiman v. Koomar*, 2 Kn. 203; *Chowdry Padum Singh v. Oodey Singh*, 12 M. I. A. 350; *per curiam*, *Collector of Madura v. Moottoo Ramalinga*, 12 M. I. A. 440; S. C. in Court below, 2 Mad. H. C. 216; 2 Stra. H. L. 92. *Tulshi Ram v. Behari Lal*, 12 All. (F. B.) 328, where it was also held that the want of proper authority could not be cured on the principle of *Factum valet*. *Semble*, *Lala Parbhu Lal v. Mylne*, 14 Cal. 401—415.

by a widow, in Mithila, no consent is sufficient; in Western India no consent is required; in Bengal and Benares the husband's assent is required; in Southern India the consent either of the husband or of the sapindas is sufficient. The cases of Western and Southern India alone require any further discussion. Before examining them it will be well to dispose of the other matters relating to an adoption by a widow upon which the law is uniform.

**Nature of  
authority.**

§ 102. No particular form of authority is required. It may be given in writing or in words (*h*), or by will (*i*). It may also be conditional; that is, an authority to adopt upon the happening of a particular event, provided an adoption made when the event happened, would be legal. For instance, an authority to a widow to adopt, in the event of a disagreement between herself and a surviving son, would be invalid, because the father himself could not adopt so long as the son lived (*k*). But an authority to adopt in the event of the death of a son then living would be good, and so it would be if the authority were to adopt several sons in succession, provided one was not to be adopted till the other was dead (*l*).

**Must be strictly  
followed.**

§ 103. The authority given must be strictly pursued, and can neither be varied from nor extended. If the widow is directed to adopt a particular boy, she cannot adopt any other, even though he should be unattainable. If she is directed to adopt *a son*, her authority is exhausted as soon as she has made a single adoption; and she cannot adopt a second time, even on the failure of the son first adopted (*m*). Where a man died, leaving his wife pregnant, and

(*h*) *Futwah*, 1 Mad. Dec. 104; *per curiam*, *Soondur Koomaree v. Gudadhur*, M. I. A. 64; S. C. 4 Suth. (P. C.) 116.

(*i*) *Saroda v. Tincowry*, 1 Hyde, 223.

(*k*) *Mt. Solukna v. Ramdolal*, 1 S. D. 324 (434); *Gopee Lall v. Mt. Chundraolee*, 19 Suth. 12, (a Privy Council case).

(*l*) *Shamchunder v. Narayni*, 2 S. D. 209 (279); *Bhoobun Moyee v. Ram Kishore*, 10 M. I. A. 279; S. C. 3 Suth. (P. C.) 15; *Jumona v. Bamasoonderai*, 3 I. A. 72; S. C. 1 Cal. 289; *Vellanki v. Venkata Rama*, (Guntur case) 4 I. A. 1; S. C. 1 Mad. 174; S. C. 26 Suth. 21.

(*m*) *Per curiam*, *Chowdry Padum v. Koer Oodey*, 12 M. I. A. 356; S. C. 1

authorized her to adopt, in case the son to be born should die, and she had a daughter, it was held she could not adopt (n). And so it was decided that a direction to a widow to adopt a boy along with a living son, which was illegal and could not be carried out, did not authorise her to adopt after the death of that son (o). But an authority to adopt generally, authorises the adoption of any person whose affiliation would be legal (p). A direction by a testator that his widow should adopt a son "with the good advice and opinion of the manager," whom he had appointed as a sort of agent, was held only as a direction, and that an adoption made without consulting him was valid (q).

In one case decided at Madras, the authority to the widow was contained in the following words of her husband's will :—"If Iyah Pillay beget a son, beside his present son, you are to keep him to my lineage." At the testator's death, Iyah Pillay had no second son. Sir *Thomas Strange*, decided that the widow was not bound to wait indefinitely, and he affirmed the validity of the adoption by her of another boy (r). This decision is canvassed with much vigour by the author of *Considerations on Hindu Law* (s), who argues that the authority was specific, that under it no one could be adopted but a son of Iyah Pillay, that the widow was bound to wait till after possibility extinct of further issue by him, and then that the authority would lapse, from the failure of any object, upon whom it could be exercised. Sir *Thomas Strange*, however, construed the document as evidencing a primary desire to be represented by an adopted son, coupled with a subsidiary desire that that son should have been begotten by Iyah

Case of Iyah  
Pillay.

Suth. (P. C.); 1 F. MacN. 156, 175; 1 W. MacN. 89, *dub.*; *Purmanund v. Oomakunt*, 4 S. D. 318 (404); *Gournath v. Arnapoorna*, S. D. of 1852, 332 *Amirthayyan v. Ketharamayyan*, 14 Mad. 65.

(n) *Mohendro Lall v. Rookinny*, 1 Coryton, 42; cited V. Darp. 814.

(o) *Joychundro v. Bhyrub*, S. D. of 1849, 41.

(p) 1 Mad. Dec. 105.

(q) *Surendra Nandan v. Sailaja Kant*, 18 Cal. 335.

(r) *Veerapermall v. Narain Pillay*, 1 N. C. 91. (s) F. MacN.

Pillay. In this construction he was certainly more liberal than the Courts have been in the other instances just mentioned.

When power of adoption becomes incapable of being exercised.

§ 104. Another limitation to the right of adoption has been laid down by the Privy Council, in some cases which decide, that a widow cannot adopt to her deceased husband where he has left a son, who has himself died, leaving an heir to his estate. The first case in which this point arose was that of *Bhoobun Moyee v. Ram Kishore Achari* (t). There Gour Kishore died leaving a son Bhowani, and a widow Chundrabullee, to whom he gave an express authority to adopt in the event of his son's death. Bhowani married, attained his majority, and died, leaving a widow but no issue. Chundrabullee then adopted a son Ram Kishore, who sued Bhowani's widow to recover the estate. The Privy Council held that her estate could not be divested by the subsequent adoption. Lord Kingsdown, however, went on to say "that at the time when Chundrabullee professed to exercise it, the power was incapable of execution." Their Lordships admitted that Gour Kishore had fixed no limits to the period during which his power might be acted on by his widow, but, they said, "it is plain that some limits must be assigned. It might well have been that Bhowani had left a son, natural born or adopted, and that such son had died himself, leaving a son, and that such son had attained his majority in the lifetime of Chundrabullee. It could hardly have been intended that after the lapse of several successive heirs a son should be adopted to the great-grandfather of the last taker, when all the spiritual purposes of a son, according to the largest construction of them, would have been satisfied. But whatever may be the intention, would the law allow it to be effected? We rather understand the Judges below to have been of opinion, that if Bhowani Kishore had left a son, or if a son

10 M. I. A. 279; S. C. 3 Suth. (P. C.) 15. See this case referred to on another point, § 172.



had been lawfully adopted to him by his wife under a power legally conferred upon her, the power of adoption given to Chundrabullee would have been at an end. But it is difficult to see what reasons could be assigned for such a result which would not equally apply to the case before us." The same question arose again after the deaths of Bhowani's widow and of Chundrabullee. Ram Kishore got into possession of the property left by Gour Kishore and Bhowani. He was sued for its recovery by a more distant relation. It was admitted that he was entitled to hold it, if his adoption was valid, and the High Court of Bengal decided in his favour (*u*). They limited the effect of the Privy Council judgment to that which it had actually decided, *viz.*, that the plaintiff in the suit had no right to the property which he claimed. This decision, however, was in its turn reversed by the Judicial Committee (*v*). They said "the substitution of a new heir for the widow was no doubt the question to be decided, and such substitution might have been disallowed, the adoption being held valid for all other purposes, which is the view the Lower Courts have taken of the judgment, but their Lordships do not think that this was intended. They consider the decision to be that, upon the vesting of the estate in the widow of Bhowani, the power of adoption was at an end, and incapable of execution and if the question had come before them without any previous decision upon it they would have been of that opinion." Both these cases were again considered and followed in a subsequent case from Madras (*w*), when the facts were exactly similar, except that the widow acted upon an authority from her husband's sapindas, given after the death of the natural born son, but during the life of his widow. After her death the distant collaterals sued for, and obtained a declaration that the adoption was wholly invalid, and could not stand in the way of their reversion-

---

(*u*) *Puddo Kumaree v. Juggut Kishore*, 5 Cal. 615.

(*v*) *Pudma Coomari v. Court of Wards*, 8 I. A. 229.

(*w*) *Thayammal v. Venkatrama*, 14 I. A. 67, S.C. 10 Mad. 205; *Tarachurn v. Suresh Chunder*, 16 I. A. 166; S. C. 17 Cal. 122.



ary rights. Of course the same doctrine would apply *à fortiori* as against the independent right of a widow in Bombay to adopt to her late husband (x).

Further consideration of the rule.

§ 104 A. The applicability of this doctrine to cases differing in their facts has been considered in two cases in Bengal. In the first (y) a husband had left his widow authority to adopt five sons in succession. She adopted Kristo Churn who died twelve years after his adoption, apparently unmarried. She then adopted another boy, whose right to succeed to the husband's property was disputed by a collateral relation of the husband. Before the High Court, the only point raised was that under the decision in Bhoobun Moyee's case (z) the power to the widow to make a second adoption was incapable of execution, inasmuch as Kristo Churn had lived long enough to perform all acts of spiritual benefit for the deceased, and it must be assumed he had performed them. The High Court found that the second adoption was valid. They said that "an adopted son attaining an age of sufficient maturity, and performing the religious services enjoined by the Shasters cannot exhaust the whole of the spiritual benefit which a son is capable of conferring upon the soul of his deceased father. Because these services are enjoined to be repeated at certain stated intervals, and the performance of them on each successive occasion secures fresh spiritual benefit to the soul of the deceased father." As regards Bhoobun Moyee's case, they proceeded to state their opinion that the Privy Council had not meant to hold that the power was incapable of execution for all purposes, but only for the purpose of divesting the widow of Bhowani Kishore of her proprietary rights. This view can no longer be maintained after the more recent decisions of the Judicial Committee. But the case before the High Court differed from the three cases in the Privy Council which followed and

(x) See W. & B. 987—991. *Keshav Ramkristna v. Govind Ganesh*, 9 Bom. 94.

(y) *Ram Soondar v. Sarbanee Dossee*, 22 Suth. 121.

(z) *Ante*, § 104.

explained Bhoobun Moyee's case (a), in this respect that on the death of Kristo Churn the estate vested in no one as his heir, other than the widow who exercised the power of adoption. In this respect the case may well stand along with the four already discussed. In fact it comes within the express words of Lord Kingsdown, when he said (b) "If Bhowani Kishore had died unmarried, his mother, Chundrabullee Debia, would have been his heir, and the question of adoption would have stood on quite different grounds. By exercising the power of adoption she would have divested no estate but her own, and this would have brought the case within the ordinary rule."

This *dictum* was the ground of the later decision of the Bengal High Court (c). There Jagat Sett died in 1865 leaving an adopted son Gopal Chand and a widow Pran Kumari. Gopal Chand died in 1868, leaving a son Gopi Chand, and he again died unmarried and without issue. On his death Pran Kumari, who was his heir, adopted Jibun Mull. The plaintiff, a distant collateral relation of Gopi Chand, sued for a declaration that he was entitled to succeed to the estate on the death of Pran Kumari, and that the adoption of Jibun Mull was invalid. The High Court appears to have admitted that the adoption would have been invalid if it had been based upon an authority to adopt granted by Jagat Sett. In this case, however, the parties were Jains, and by Jain law a widow can adopt without authority from her husband (d). They held that this distinguished the case from that of *Pudma Kumari Debi v. The Court of Wards* (e), and brought it within the dictum of Lord Kingsdown above quoted. But, although a Jain widow can adopt without any authority from her husband, it is difficult to suppose that she can do what her husband could not have authorised her to do. Both in Madras and Bombay a widow is precluded from adoption

---

(a) 8 I. A. 229; 14 I. A. 67; 16 I. A. 166.

(b) 10 M. J. A., p. 311.

(c) *Manick Chand v. Jagat Settani*, 17 Cal. 518, p. 536.

(d) *Post*, § 119.

(e) 8 J. A. 229.

where a prohibition from her husband can be proved or inferred (*f*). Can she be in a better position, where the law would have prohibited her to act upon his directions, if they had been given?

Adoption by  
minor ;

§ 105. A widow, who is duly authorised by her husband, may adopt while she is a minor, because the act is her husband's, and she is only the instrument (*g*). I presume the same rule would apply in cases where an authority by his sapindas is requisite, and is given. In Western India it is stated that a widow under the age of puberty cannot adopt (*h*). I suppose the reason for the difference is that there the adoption is the act of the widow, for which no authority, or consent, is required.

or unchaste  
widow.

An unchaste widow cannot adopt even with the express authority of her husband, because her dissolute life entails a degradation which renders her unable to perform the necessary ceremonies. This incapacity may, it is said, be removed by performing the penances proper for expiation. But these cannot be performed during pregnancy ; therefore, while it lasts an unchaste widow cannot possibly adopt (*i*). In the case of an adoption by a Vaisya widow under authority from her husband it seems to have been considered by the Madras High Court, though it was not necessary to decide the point, that the adoption was bad, being made while the corpse was still in the house, and the widow was therefore in a state of pollution (*k*). Whether this ground of incapacity would apply in the case of Sudras, depends upon the question, whether in their case any religious ceremonies are necessary (*l*).

(*f*) 12 M. L. A., p. 443, *post*, § 110 and § 118.

(*g*) 2 W. MacN. 180 ; V. Darp. 769 ; *Mondakini v. Adinath*, 18 Cal. 69.

(*h*) Steele, 48.

(*i*) *Thukoo v. Ruma*, 2 Bor. 446, 456 [488] ; *Sayamalal v. Saudamini*, 5 B. L. R. 362, approved by Mitter, J., *Kery Kolutany v. Moneeram*, 13 B. L. R. 14 ; S. C. 19 Suth. 367. As to the possibility of removing by penance the results of unchastity, see *per Mitter, J.*, S. C. 13 B. L. R. 39.

(*k*) *Ranganayakamma v. Alwar Setti*, 13 Mad. p. 222.

(*l*) As to this, see *post*, § 142.

§ 106. Where there are several widows, if a special authority has been given to one of them to adopt, she, of course, can act upon it without the assent of the others, and, I presume, she alone could act upon it (*m*). If the authority has been given the widows severally, the junior may adopt without the consent of the senior, if the latter refuses to adopt (*n*). In Bombay, it is said that where there are several widows, the elder has the right to adopt even without the consent of the junior widow, but that the junior widow cannot adopt without the consent of the elder, unless the latter is leading an irregular life, which would wholly incapacitate her (*o*).

Several widows.

§ 107. It is a curious thing, that while the husband's right is recognized to delegate to his widow an authority to adopt, he can delegate it to no one else (*p*). In cases where the assent of sapindas will supply the place of an authority by the husband, that assent must be sought for and acted upon by the widow. Where no authority is given or required, equally the widow alone can perform the act (*q*). The reason probably is, that she is looked upon, not merely as his agent, but as the surviving half of himself (*r*), and, therefore, exercising an independent discretion, which can neither be supplied, nor controlled, by any one else. It is no doubt upon the same principle, that an express authority, or even direction, by a husband to his widow to adopt is, for all legal purposes, absolutely non-existent until it is acted upon. She cannot be compelled to act upon it unless, and until, she chooses to do so (*s*). If she

Widow alone can adopt for husband.

Her discretion absolute.

(*m*) 2 Stra. H. L. 91.

(*n*) *Mondakini v. Adinath*, 18 Cal. 69.

(*o*) Steele, 48, 187; W. & B. 977, 999; *Rakhmabai v. Radhabai*, 5 Bom. H. C. (A. C. J.) 181.

(*p*) E.g., A direction by a testator to his son's widow to adopt might authorise an adoption to the son, but not to the testator. *Karsandas v. Ladkavahu*, 12 Bom. 185.

(*q*) F. MacN. 202; 2 Stra. H. L. 94; *Veerapermall v. Narain Pillay*, 1 N. C., 103; *Bhagvandas v. Rajmal*, 10 Bom. H. C. 241.

(*r*) See Vrihaspati, 3 Dig. 458.

(*s*) *Dyamoyee v. Rasbeharee*, S. D. of 1852, 1013; *Bamundoss v. Mt. Tarinee*, 7 M. I. A. 190; *Uma Sunduri v. Sourobinee*, 7 Cal. 288.

No limit of time

acts upon it, not voluntarily but under the influence of coercion, physical or moral, the adoption is invalid (*t*). And so it has been held in a case where a widow adopted in ignorance of the legal effect of her acts in divesting her estate (*u*). The Court will not even recognize the authority to the extent of making a declaration as to its validity (*v*). Till she does act, her position is exactly the same as it would be, if the authority had never been given. If she would be the heir to her husband's estate in the absence of a son, she is such heir until she chooses to descend from that position; and she is in of her own right, and not as trustee for any son to be adopted hereafter (*w*). If she is not the heir, she can claim no greater right to interfere with the management of the estate, or to control the persons in possession, than if she had no authority. The only mode of giving it effect is to act upon it (*x*). If a husband directs his widow to adopt a particular boy, or the child of a particular father, she is under no obligation to submit to any conditions which the latter may attempt to impose (*y*). A question has arisen, but not been decided, whether a widow with power to adopt can bind herself not to adopt. The Court refused an *interim* injunction against the adoption but there the matter ended (*z*). Should the case arise again, it might affect the decision to consider the nature of the widow's power; whether she was expressly directed by her husband to adopt or only allowed to do so at her own discretion or whether her husband had been wholly silent on the point, and her authority to adopt arose from consent of sapindas, or, in the West Coast, from her own independent power. Nor is there any limit to the time during which a widow may act upon the authority

(*t*) *Ranganayakamma v. Alwar Setti*, 13 Mad. 214, 220.

(*u*) *Bayabai v. Bala*, 7 Bom. H. Ct. Appx. 1.

(*v*) *Mt. Pearee v. Mt. Hurbunsee*, 19 Suth. 127; *Sreemutty Rajcoomaree v. Nobocoomar*, 1 Boul. 137; Sev. 641, n.

(*w*) *Bamundoss v. Mt. Tarinee*, 7 M. I. A. 169, overruling *Bijaya v. Shama*, S. D. of 1848, 762.

(*x*) *Mt. Subudra v. Goluknath*, 7 S. D. 143 (166).

(*y*) *Shamavahoo v. Dwarkadas*, 12 Bom. 202

*Assar Purshotam v. Ratanbai*, 13 Bom. 56.



given to her (a). In a Bengal case, an adoption made fifteen years after the husband's death was supported; and in Bombay cases the periods were twenty, twenty-five, fifty-two, and even seventy-one years (b).

§ 108. Having now seen the effect of an authority to adopt when given by the husband, it remains to examine the mode in which it may be supplied when wanting. This can only be in Southern and Western India and in some parts of Northern India (§ 101, 110, 119). In Madras the balance of opinion had always been that in the absence of authority from the husband, the assent of sapindas was sufficient. Till lately, however, the point was certainly open to argument. It has now been definitively settled by the judgment of the Privy Council in the case of the Ramnaad Zemindary, and in several other cases which followed, and were founded upon, that decision.

Absence of husband's authority.

§ 109. In the Ramnaad case (c), the adoption in dispute was made by a widow, who had taken as heir to her late husband a Zemindary, which was his separate estate. The adoption was made with the assent, original or subsequent, of a number of sapindas of the last male holder, who were certainly the majority of the whole number then alive, if indeed they did not constitute the entire body of sapindas. The only question, therefore, which required decision was, whether in Southern India any amount of assent on the part of sapindas could give validity to an adoption made by a widow without her husband's consent. The High Court of Madras, after an elaborate examination of all the authorities, came to the conclusion that such an adoption was

Ramnaad case.

High Court.

(a) F. MacN. 157; 1 N. C. 111; *Ramkishan v. Mt. Strimutee*, 3 S. D. 367. (489, 494).

(b) Anon, 2 M. Dig. 18; *Bhasker v. Narro Ragoonath*, Bom. Sel. Rep. 24; *Brijbhokunjee v. Gokoolootsaojee*, 1 Bor. 181; [202] *Nimbalkar v. Jayavantrav*, 4 Bom. H. C. (A. C. J.) 191. *Giriowa v. Bhimaji Raghunath*, 9 Bom. 58. See *Dukhina v. Rash Beharee*, 6 Suth. 221, where it was suggested that a widow could not act upon an authority after twelve years. *Sed quære*.

(c) *Collector of Madura v. Mootoo Ramalinga*, 2 Mad. H. C. 206; *affd.*, 12 M. I. A. 397. S. C. 1 B. L. R. (P. C.) 1; S. C. 10 Suth. (P. C.) 17.

valid. They relied much on the theory that the law of adoption was founded upon, and a development from, the old principle of actual begetting by a brother or sapinda. Arguing from this analogy, they proceeded to say (d), "On the reason of the rule, then, it seems to us that if the requirement of consent is more than a moral precept, and it must never be forgotten that in all Hindu authors, as in the works of all authors who expound a system of positive law, professing to be based upon divine revelation, ethical and jural notions are inextricably intermixed, the assent of any one of the sapindas will suffice. If, however, the sapindas are by a fanciful, rather than a solid, analogy to be treated as a juridical person in which the whole authority of the husband is to be vested, it would be wholly contrary to sound jurisprudence to treat the assent of every individual member as necessary. On the contrary, the will of the majority of individual members must be taken as the will of the body, in any matter not manifestly repugnant to the purpose for which the body was created."

§ 110. The Judicial Committee confirmed this decision upon the ground of positive authority and precedent, while declining to accept the supposed analogy between adoptions according to the *Dattaka* form, and the obsolete practice of raising up issue to the deceased husband by carnal intercourse with the widow. They then proceeded as follows (e) :—

Judicial Committee.

"It must, however, be admitted that the doctrine is stated in the old treatises, and even by Mr. Colebrooke, with a degree of vagueness that may occasion considerable difficulties and inconveniences in its practical application. The question who are the kinsmen whose assent will supply the want of positive authority from the deceased husband, is the first to suggest itself. Where the husband's family

Undivided property.

---

(d) 2 Mad. H. C. 231. I have already suggested my belief that the two things were perfectly independent of each other. See *ante*, § 63, *et seq.*

(e) 12 M. I. A. 441. S. C. 1 B. L. R. (P. C.) 1; S. C. 10 Suth. (P. C.) 17.

is in the normal condition of a Hindu family, *i.e.*, undivided, that question is of comparatively easy solution. In such a case, the widow, under the law of all the schools which admit this disputed power of adoption, takes no interest in her husband's share of the joint estate, except a right to maintenance. And though the father of the husband, if alive, might, as the head of the family and the natural guardian of the widow, be competent by his sole assent to authorise an adoption by her, yet, if there be no father, the assent of all the brothers, who, in default of adoption, would take the husband's share, would probably be required, since it would be unjust to allow the widow to defeat their interest by introducing a new co-parcener against their will. Where, however, as in the present case, the widow has taken by inheritance the separate estate of her husband, Separate estate. there is greater difficulty in laying down a rule. The power to adopt, when not actually given by the husband, can only be exercised when a foundation is laid for it in the otherwise neglected observance of religious duty, as understood by Hindus. Their Lordships do not think there is any ground for saying that the consent of every kinsman, however remote, is essential. The assent of kinsmen seems to be required by reason of the presumed incapacity of women for independence, rather than the necessity of procuring the consent of all those whose possible and reversionary interest in the estate would be defeated by the adoption. In such a case, therefore, their Lordships think that the consent of the father-in-law, to whom the law points as the natural guardian and 'venerable protector' of the widow, would be sufficient (*f*). It is not easy to lay down an inflexible rule for the case in which no father-in-law is in existence. Every such case must depend on the circumstances of the family. All that can be said is, that there should be such evidence of the assent of kinsmen as suffices to show that the act is done by the widow in the

---

(*f*) So held where the case arose. *Vithoba v. Bapu*, 15 Bom. 110.

proper and *bonâ fide* performance of a religious duty, and neither capriciously, nor from a corrupt motive. In this case no issue raises the question that the consents were purchased, and not *bonâ fide* obtained. The rights of an adopted son are not prejudiced by any unauthorised alienation by the widow which precedes the adoption which she makes ; and though gifts improperly made to procure assent might be powerful evidence to show no adoption needed, they do not in themselves go to the root of the legality of an adoption.

Express or implied prohibition.

“ Again, it appears to their Lordships that, inasmuch as the authorities in favour of the widow’s power to adopt with the assent of her husband’s kinsmen proceed in a great measure upon the assumption that his assent to this meritorious act is to be implied wherever he has not forbidden it, so the power cannot be inferred when a prohibition by the husband either has been directly expressed by him, or can be reasonably deduced from his disposition of his property, or the existence of a direct line competent to the full performance of religious duties, or from other circumstances of his family, which afford no plea for a supersession of heirs, on the ground of religious obligation to adopt a son in order to complete, or fulfil, defective religious rites ” (g).

Ramnaad doctrine not to be extended.

§ 111. Of course, in all subsequent instances of adoption by a widow without express authority from her husband, the effort has been to bring the case within, or to exclude it from, some of the above dicta. I say *dicta*, because the only point actually decided was that the assent of the majority of the sapindas was sufficient.

Accordingly, in a Madras case, which followed shortly

---

(g) The practice in the Punjab appears to be exactly the same as that laid down in the *Ramnaad case*. An adoption is there looked upon merely as a mode of transferring, or creating, a title to property. A widow may adopt either with her husband’s permission, or by consent of his kinsmen, but in no case against an express prohibition by him. Punjab Cust., 88.

after the decision of the Ramnaad suit, an attempt was made to push that doctrine to the extent of holding that the consent of sapindas was wholly unnecessary, and that the widow might adopt of her own authority. But the Court refused to carry the law further than had been laid down in that judgment, in which "there had been the assent of a majority of the husband's sapindas to the adoption on his behalf" (h).

§ 112. The next case arose in the Travancore Courts, Travancore case. where a widow had made an adoption without the consent of her husband's undivided brother, but with the consent of her divided kinsmen. The Court, after weighing the judgments of the High Court and the Privy Council in the *Ramnaad* case, decided against the sufficiency of the authorization. The Chief Judge, after observing that a woman under Hindu law was in a perfect state of tutelage, passing from the control of her father to that of her husband, and after his death to that of the head of his family, pointed out that, in the absence of the father-in-law, the eldest surviving brother must necessarily be that head. He said, "it is clear to me, then, that the kinsman whose assent the law requires for this act is the one who would be liable to support her through her widowhood, and to defray the marriage expenses of her female issue. In the case of divided kinsmen the case may be different, because no one in particular can claim to control her, or is chargeable for her maintenance; but it seems to be clear that, united as the family is, the natural head and venerable protector contemplated by the *Shastras* is the surviving brother, or if there are more than one, the eldest of them. It seems to me impossible to affirm that the liability to maintain the widow, and undertake the other duties of the family, is not coupled with a right to advise and control her act in so important a matter as the introduction of a stranger into

Head of family must assent.

---

(h) *Arundadi v. Kuppammal*, 3 M. H. C. 283, and *per curiam*, *Parasara v. Rangaraja*, 2 Mad. 206.



the family, with claims to the family property" (i). It will be seen that this reasoning was approved and followed by the Privy Council in the case which follows.

Berhampore  
case.

§ 113. The next case was one of the class contemplated by the Judicial Committee in their remarks above quoted, and exactly similar to that in the Travancore suit, the family being an undivided family, and the consent of the father-in-law being wanting. In it (k) the Zemindar of Chinna Kimedy died, leaving a wife, a brother, and a distant and divided sapinda, the Zemindar of Pedda Kimedy; there were no other sapindas. The deceased and his brother were undivided. Therefore, in default of an adoption, the brother was the heir. The widow adopted the son of the Pedda Kimedy Zemindar, admittedly without the consent of the brother. She alleged a written authority from her husband, but pleaded that even without such authority, she had sufficient assent of sapindas within the meaning of the *Ramnaad* decision. The Lower Court found against her on both points. On appeal, the High Court was inclined to think the authority proved, but reversed the decision of the Lower Court, on the ground that the assent of the Pedda Kimedy Zemindar, evidenced by his giving his son, was sufficient. The Court expressly ruled (l) and it was necessary so to rule,—1st. That the consent of one sapinda was sufficient; 2nd. That proximity to the deceased with regard to rights of property was wholly beside the question. In the particular instance the assenting sapinda was not only not the nearest heir, but was not an immediate heir at all, because, being divided, he could not take till after the widow.

High Court.

Judicial Com-

§ 114. The Judicial Committee, on appeal, held that the written authority was made out. It was therefore unneces-

(i) *Ramaswami Iyen v. Bhagati Ammal*, 8 Mad. Jur. 58.

(k) *Raghunadha v. Brozo Kishoro*, 3 I. A. 154; S. C. 1 Mad. 69; S. C. 25 Suth. 291.

(l) 7 M. H. C. 301.

sary to go into the question of law. But being of opinion that the views laid down by the High Court were unsound, they proceeded to intimate their dissent from them (*m*).

In the first place, they reiterated their opinion that speculations derived from the practice of begetting a son upon the widow, upon which Mr. Justice *Holloway* had again founded his opinion, were inadmissible as a ground for judicial decision. They also stated that the analogy of that practice would not support the conclusions drawn from it. "Most of the texts speak of 'the appointed' kinsman. By whom appointed? If we are to travel back beyond the *Kali* age, and speculate upon what then took place, we have no reasonable grounds for supposing that a Hindu widow, desirous of raising up seed to her deceased husband, was ever at liberty to invite to her bed any sapinda, however remote, at her own discretion (*n*); and that his consent of itself constituted a sufficient authorization of his act.

"Positive authority, then, does not do more than establish that, according to the law of Madras, which in this respect is something intermediate between the stricter law of Bengal and the wider law of Bombay, a widow, not having her husband's permission, may adopt a son to him, if duly authorized by his kindred. If it were necessary, which in this case it is not, to decide the point, their Lordships would be unwilling to dissent from the principle recognized in the *Travancore* case, viz., that the requisite authority is, in the case of an undivided family, to be sought within that family. The joint and undivided family is the normal condition of Hindu society. An undivided Hindu family is ordinarily joint, not only in estate but in food and worship; therefore, not only all the concerns of the joint property, but whatever relates to their commensality and their religi-

Authority of  
separate king-  
man insufficient.

(*m*) 3 I. A. 190, 192.

(*n*) Gautama expressly declares that "a son begotten on a widow whose husband's brother lives, by another more distant relation, is excluded from inheritance," xxviii. § 23. See *ante*, § 68.

ous duties and observances, must be regulated by its members, or by the manager to whom they have expressly or by implication delegated the task of regulation. The Hindu wife upon her marriage passes into, and becomes a member of, that family. It is upon that family that, as a widow, she has her claim for maintenance. It is in that family that, in the strict contemplation of law, she ought to reside. It is in the members of that family that she must presumably find such counsellors and protectors as the law makes requisite for her. These seem to be strong reasons against the conclusion that for such a purpose as that now under consideration she can at her will travel out of that undivided family, and obtain the authorization required from a separated and remote kinsman of her husband (o).

Conscious exercise of discretion.

“ In the present case there is an additional reason against the sufficiency of such an assent. It is admitted on all hands that an authorization by some kinsman of the husband is required. To authorize an act implies the exercise of some discretion whether the act ought or ought not to be done. In the present case there is no trace of such an exercise of discretion. All we know is that the *Mahadevi*, representing herself as having the written permission of her husband to adopt, asked the Rajah of Pedda Kimedy to give her a son in adoption, and succeeded in getting one. There is nothing to show that the Rajah ever supposed that he was giving the authority to adopt which a widow not having her husband's permission would require.”

The remarks last quoted would probably make it difficult hereafter for a widow to plead, as she did in this case, *first*, that she had express authority from her husband to adopt, and, *secondly*, that if she had not such authority, the want of it was supplied by authority from kinsmen. Ac-

---

(o) Where, however, all the branches of the family are divided from the deceased husband and from each other, the Madras High Court has held that the *bonâ fide* consent of one divided member is sufficient, where the assent of the other is withheld from improper motives. *Parasara v. Rangaraja*, 2 Mad. 202.

cordingly in a later case decided by the Judicial Committee (p), an adoption was set aside (*inter alia*) on the ground that the consent of the managing member of the family, which might in other respects have been sufficient, had been obtained by the widow upon a representation that she had received authority to adopt from her deceased husband, no such authority having been in fact given.

§ 115. In a case, subsequent to the Berhampore case, one Guntur case. would have imagined that everything had concurred to place the validity of the adoption beyond dispute. The family was divided ; all the sapindas had assented, and the persons in possession of the property had no title whatever. But the High Court set the adoption aside on the ground “ that it was not made out that there had been such an assent on the part of the widow as to show, to quote the words of the judgment of the Privy Council in the *Ramnaad* case, ‘ that the act was done by the widow in the proper and *bonâ fide* performance of a religious duty ;’ ” and that Religious motive for adoption. there was no appearance of any anxiety or desire on the part of the widow for the proper and *bonâ fide* performance of any religious duty to her husband. Her object appeared to have been to hold the estate till her death, and then continue the line in the person of the plaintiff. This judgment was reversed on appeal. The Privy Council, after pointing out that the facts of the case did not justify the inference drawn from them by the High Court, proceeded to say :—

“ This being so, is there any ground for the application which the High Court has made of a particular passage in the judgment in the *Ramnaad* case ? The passage in question perhaps is not so clear as it might have been made. The Committee, however, was dealing with the nature of the authority of the kinsman that was required. After dealing with the *vexata quæstio* which does not arise Judicial Committee.

(p) *Karunabdhī v. Ratnamaiyar*, 7 I. A. 173, S. C. 2 Mad. 270. *Venkatalakshamma v. Narasayya*, 8 Mad. 545.

in this case, whether such an adoption can be made with the assent of one or more sapindas in the case of joint family property, they proceed to consider what assent would be necessary in the case of separate property; and after stating that the authority of the father-in-law would probably be sufficient, they said: 'It is not easy to lay down an inflexible rule for the case in which no father-in-law is in existence. Every such case must depend upon the circumstances of the family. All that can be said is, that there should be such evidence,' not, be it observed, of the widow's motives, but 'of the assent of kinsmen, as suffices to show that the act is done by the widow in the proper and *bonâ fide* performance of a religious duty, and neither capriciously nor from a corrupt motive. In this case no issue raises the question that the consents were purchased and not *bonâ fide* attained.' Their Lordships think it would be very dangerous to introduce into the consideration of these cases of adoption nice questions as to the particular motives operating on the mind of the widow, and that all which this Committee in the former case meant to lay down was, that there should be such proof of assent on the part of the sapindas as should be sufficient to support the inference that the adoption was made by the widow, not from capricious or corrupt motives, or in order to defeat the interest of this or that sapinda, but upon a fair consideration by what may be called a family council, of the expediency of substituting an heir by adoption to the deceased husband. If that be so, there seems to be every reason to suppose that in the present case there was such a consideration, both on the part of the widow and on the part of the sapindas; and their Lordships think that in such a case it must be presumed that she acted from the proper motives which ought to actuate a Hindu female, and that, at all events, such presumption should be made until the contrary is shown" (q).

---

(q) *Vellanki v. Venkata Rama*, 4 I. A. 1, 13 S. C. 1 Mad. 174, S. C. 26 Suth. 21 In this case the husband had died, leaving a son. The decision established that sapindas had the same power of authorising an adoption in lieu of a son, who died, as they would have had if there had never been a son.



§ 116. It does not seem quite clear, even now, whether their Lordships are of opinion that the motive which operates upon the mind of a widow in making an adoption can be material upon the question of its validity, where she has obtained the necessary amount of assent: that is, whether evidence would be admissible which went to show that the widow was indifferent to the religious benefits supposed to flow from an adoption to her husband, or even disbelieved in the efficacy of such an adoption; and that her real and only object in making an adoption was to enhance her own importance and position, and to prevent the property of her late husband from passing away to distant relations. With the greatest deference to any conclusions to the contrary which may be drawn from the above passages, it seems to me that the Judicial Committee did not mean to lay down that such evidence would be material or admissible. The fair result of all their judgments appears to be, that the assent of one or more sapindas is necessary, as a sort of judicial decision that the act of adoption is a proper one. That decision, like any other, may (perhaps) be impeached, by showing that it was procured by fraud or corruption. But if it was arrived at *bonâ fide* by the proper judges, it is conclusive as to the propriety of the adoption. The judgment of the Court cannot be affected by the motives of the suitor. The reasons which influence the widow may be puerile or even malicious. But what the family decide upon is the propriety of her act, not the propriety of her reasons (r).

Discussion as to motive.

§ 117. As might have been anticipated, the ingenuity of Hindu litigants was next directed to invalidating the assent of the *sapindas*. Accordingly an adoption by a widow, with the consent of the managing member, and only adult *sapinda* of an undivided family was set aside on the ground (*inter alia*) that his consent was given from inter-

Is religious motive essential?

(r) *Acc. Vithoba v. Bapu*, 15 Bom. 134; *Patel Vandravan Jekisan v. Manilal*, *ibid.* 565.

ested motives (*s*). But where the assent is fair and *bonâ fide*, I would submit that it could not be objected to on the ground that it did not arise from religious motives. I have already suggested that even according to Brahmanical views, religious grounds were not the only ones for making an adoption, and that among the dissenting sects of Aryans, and all the non-Aryan races, religious motives had absolutely nothing to do with the matter (*t*). But further, when a religious act comes to be indissolubly connected with civil consequences, it follows that the act may be properly performed, either with a view to the religious or the civil results. Not only so, but that if the act is in fact performed, the civil consequences must follow, whatever be the motive of the actor. Marriage is just as much a duty with a Hindu as adoption. It could not be contended that the validity of a marriage, or any of its legal results, could be in the slightest degree affected by the motives of either of the parties to the transaction. When the Test and Corporation Acts rendered it necessary that a candidate for office should have taken the sacrament, it was not material or permissible to enquire, whether the communicant had spiritual or temporal benefits in view.

Western India.

§ 118. In Western India the widow's power of adoption is even greater than in Southern India. The Mayukha, commenting on the same text of Vasishtha, draws from it, as already remarked (§ 101), exactly the opposite conclusion from that arrived at by Nanda Pandita. The latter

---

(*s*) *Karunabdhī v. Ratnamaiyar*, 7 I. A. 173, 2 Mad. 270 and see *Parasara v. Rangaraja*, 2 Mad. 202.

(*t*) See *ante*, § 94, 95. I have already stated (§ 95) that among the Tamil inhabitants of Northern Ceylon even the husband, when desirous to adopt, must obtain the consent of his heirs, and they must evidence their assent by dipping their fingers in the saffron water. If such consent is withheld, the rights of the dissenting parties to the inheritance will not be affected. *Thesawaleme*, ii. 1, 5, 6. Probably this was the original law in Southern India, though it may have passed away when the Brahmanical view of adoption, as a duty and not merely a right, was introduced. But the necessity for obtaining the consent of sapindas to an adoption by a widow, and the sufficiency of such consent, may be a survival from the old law. If so, it would be an additional reason for supposing that religious motives had nothing to do with the adoption itself, or with the consent given to it by kinsmen. See as to the Nambudri Brahmans, 11 Mad. 188.

infers that a widow can never adopt, as she can never obtain her husband's assent; the former infers that the prohibition can only extend to a married woman, as she only can receive such an assent (*u*). The whole of the authorities are collected and reviewed in several cases in the Bombay High Court, which have established, *First*, that in the Maharatta country and in Gujarat, a widow, who is sole or joint heir to her husband's estate, may adopt a son to her deceased husband, without authority from her husband, and without the consent of his kindred, or of the caste, or of the ruling authority. The qualification is added, borrowed from the dictum of the Privy Council in the *Ramnaad* case, provided "the act is done by her in the proper and *bonâ fide* performance of a religious duty, and neither capriciously nor from a corrupt motive" (*v*). *Secondly*, that she cannot do so, where her husband has expressly forbidden an adoption (*w*). *Thirdly*, that she can never adopt during his lifetime, without his assent (*x*). *Fourthly*, that a widow, who has not the estate vested in her, and whose husband was not separated at the time of his death, is not competent to adopt a son to her husband without his authority, or the consent of his undivided co-parceners (*y*). A further qualification is suggested by the Bombay High Court, *viz.*, that where the adoption by a widow would have the effect of divesting an estate already vested in a third person, the consent of that person must be obtained (*z*). This will be considered subsequently under the head of effects of an adoption (*a*). *Fifthly*, that an adoption made

(*u*) V. May., iv. 5, § 17, 18. Dr. Bühler says that the principal argument advanced by the Mahratta writers for this view is a version of the text of Çaunaka, where they read "a woman who is childless, or whose sons have died" (may adopt), instead of "a man," &c. The error of this reading is shown by the fact that in the subsequent verses (13, 14) the adopter is referred to in the masculine gender. See art. *Çaunaka-Smriti*, Journ. As. Soc. Bengal, 1866.

(*v*) *Rakhmabai v. Radhabai*, 5 Bom. H. C. (A. C. J.) 181, *acc. per curiam*; *Bhagvandas v. Rajmal*, 10 Bom. H. C. 257. *Ramji v. Ghaman*, 6 Bom. 498. *Dinkar Sitaram v. Ganesh Shivram*, ib. 505. *Giriowa v. Bhimaji Raghunath*, 9 Bom. 58. The onus of proving such a corrupt motive lies heavily on him who alleges it. *Patel Vandrayan Jekisan v. Manilal*, 15 Bom. 565.

(*w*) *Bayabai v. Bala Venkatesh*, 7 Bom. H. C. Appx. 1.

(*x*) *Narayan v. Nana Manohar*, 7 Bom. H. C. (A. C. J.) 153.

(*y*) *Ramji v. Ghaman*; *Dinkar v. Ganesh*, *ub sup.*

(*z*) *Rupchund v. Rakhmabai*, 8 Bom. H. C. (A. C. J.) 114.

(*a*) See *post*, § 171, *et seq.*

by a widow, which in other respects is valid is not rendered invalid by the fact that the husband to whom she adopted was a minor (b).

Jains.

§ 119. Among the Jains a sonless widow has the same power of adoption as her husband would have had, if he chose to exercise it. Neither his sanction, nor that of any other person is necessary (c). The Court said of this class:—"They differ particularly from the Brahmanical Hindus in their conduct towards the dead, omitting all obsequies after the corpse is burnt or buried. They also regard the birth of a son as having no effect on the future state of his progenitor, and consequently adoption is a merely temporal arrangement, and has no spiritual objects (d)." In the Punjab the custom appears to vary. In Gurgaon a widow can adopt without any consent, if she selects a son from her husband's agnates. She cannot adopt any one else without the consent of such agnates. In Rohtak and several other districts, the husband's consent is necessary. In three cases, the Punjab Courts set aside adoptions by a widow for *want* of her husband's permission. Two of these cases came from Lahore and Delhi respectively. It does not appear where the third case arose (e).

Punjab.

Only parents  
can give.

§ 120. SECOND, WHO MAY GIVE IN ADOPTION.—As the act of adoption has the effect of removing the adopted son from his natural, into the adoptive, family, and thereby most materially and irrevocably affects his prospects in life, and as the ceremony almost invariably takes place when the adoptee is of tender years, and unable to exercise any discretion of his own in the matter, it follows that only those who have dominion over the child have the power of giving him in adoption. According to Vasishttha (f), both parents

(b) *Patel Vandravan Jekisan v. Manilal*, 15 Bom. 565.

(c) *Govindnath Ray v. Gulal Chand*, 5 S. D. 276 (322); *Sheo Singh v. Mt. Dakho*, 6 N.-W.P. 392; *affd.*, 5 I. A. 87, S. C. 1 All, 688; *Lakmi Chand v. Gatto Bai*, 8 All. 319; *Manik Chand v. Jagat Settani*, 17 Cal. 518.

(d) *Per cur.*, 6 N.-W.P. 892.

(e) Punjab Customary Law, II. 154, 178, 205; III. 87, 89, 90.

(f) Dig. 242.



have power to give a son, but a woman cannot give one without the assent of her lord. Manu says (g) : “ He whom his father or mother (with her husband’s assent) gives to another, &c., is considered as a son given.” The words in parenthesis are the gloss of Kulluka Bhatta. Different explanations have been given to Visishtha’s text (h). Some say that the wife’s assent is absolutely necessary ; others, Assent of wife. that if not given, the adopted son remains the son of his natural mother and performs her obsequies ; others, that the words mean that either parent has the power to give, but that the wife can only exercise this power during her husband’s life with his assent. The last explanation is the one which is now accepted. It is quite settled that the father alone has absolute authority to dispose of his son in adoption, even without the consent of his wife, though her consent is generally sought and obtained (i). The wife cannot give away her son while her husband is alive and capable of consenting, without his consent ; but she may do so after his death, or when he is permanently absent, as, for instance, an emigrant, or has entered a religious order, or has lost his reason (k), provided the husband was legally competent to give away his son, and has not expressly prohibited his being adopted (l). But in a Bengal case the pandits laid it down, and it was held accordingly, that an adoption was bad where a widow had given away her only son as *dvyamushyayana* without the express consent of her late husband (m). It does not, however, appear from the report whether the decision went upon the ground that the adopted son was an only son, or upon the ground that he was given away without sufficient authority. The former seems

(g) Manu, ix. 168.

(h) 3 Dig. 254, 257, 261 ; V. May., v. ; Steele, 45, 183.

(i) Dattaka Mimamsa, iv. 13—17 ; v. 14, n. ; 3 Dig. 244 ; *Alank Manjari v. Fakir Chand*, 5 S. D. 356 (418) ; *Chitko Raghunath v. Janaki*, 11 Bom. H. C. 199 ; *Mitakshara*, i. 11, § 9.

(k) Dattaka Mimamsa, iv. 10—12 ; Dattaka Chandrika, i. 31, 32 ; *Mitakshara*, i. 11, § 9. *Arnachellum v. Iyasamy*, 1 Mad., Dec. 154 ; *Huro Soondree v. Chundermoney*, Sevest. 938. *Rangubai v. Bhagirthibai*, 2 Bom. 377. *Mhal. sabai v. Vithoba*, 7 Bom. H. C. Appx. 26.

(l) *Narayanassami v. Kuppusami*, 11 Mad. 113.

(m) *Debee Dial v. Hur Hor Singh*, 4 S. D. 320, (407).



rather to have been the case. It has been expressly ruled in Bombay, that whether the giving in adoption of an only son by his father is valid or invalid, it is at all events so improper that a widow, without the direct sanction of her husband, cannot be assumed to have authority to give such a son away (*n*). It was evidently the opinion of the High Court that a widow, in giving her son, exercises not an independent but a delegated authority, and that such an authority will be negatived when it is exercised in a manner which it may be supposed the husband would have disapproved. No other relation but the father or mother can give away a boy. For instance, a brother cannot give away his brother (*o*). Nor can the paternal grandfather, or any other person (*p*). Nor can the parents delegate their authority to another person, for instance a son, so as to enable him after their death to give away his brother in adoption, for the act when done must have parental sanction (*q*). And, therefore, an orphan cannot be adopted, because he can neither give himself away, nor be given by any one with authority to do so (*r*). But what the law declines to sanction is the delegation by an authorised person to an unauthorised person of the discretion to give in adoption which is vested solely in the former. Where the necessary sanction has been given by an authorised person, the physical act of giving away in pursuance of that sanction may be delegated to another

Conditions  
imposed by  
natural parent.

§ 121. The person who is authorised to give away a boy in adoption may make his consent dependent on the fulfilment of certain conditions and it has been held that where

(*n*) *Lakshmappa v. Ramappa*, 12 Bom. H. C. 364. *Somasekhara v. Subdramaji*, 6 Bom. 524.

(*o*) *V. Darp.*, 825; *Mt. Tara Mune v. Dev Narayun*, 3 S. D. 387 (516); *Moottoosamy v. Lutchmeedarumma*, Mad. Dec. 1852, p. 97. See F. MacN. 228, combating *Veerapermal v. Narain Pillay*, 1 N. C. 91.

(*p*) *Collector of Surat v. Dhirsingji*, 10 Bom. H. C. 235.

(*q*) *Bashetiappa v. Shivlingappa*, 10 Bom. H. C. 268.

(*r*) *Subbalurammal v. Ammakutti*, 2 M. H. C. 129; *Balvantrav v. Bayabai*, 6 Bom. H. C. (O. C. J.) 83; *Supra*, 10 Bom. H. C. 268.

(*s*) *Vijiarangam v. Lakshuman*, 8 Bom. H. C. (O. C. J.) 244. *Venkata v. Subadra*, 7 Mad. 549.

these conditions are not complied with the adoption is invalid. For instance, where a father by letter authorised the giving of his son in adoption, provided the adopting party first obtained the assent of the British Government, an adoption made without such assent was held invalid, though the assent was not in other respects necessary (*t*).

§ 122. The consent of the Revenue Board is necessary to an adoption by a person whose estate is under the actual management of the Court of Wards (*u*). It was once supposed that the consent of Government was also necessary in the case of Inamdars, Zemindars, and feudal chieftains whose estates would fall into the hands of the Government in the event of their dying without heirs, and in the time of Lord Dalhousie this principle was frequently acted on. But it seems clear that, though it was customary in such cases to ask for the sanction of the ruling power, and to pay a nuzzur on receiving it, still the sanction was considered to be due as a matter of right, and was not a condition precedent to the validity of the adoption itself, although in some cases the native power, with a high hand, may have refused to allow the adopted son to succeed (*v*).

Consent of Government.

§ 123. THIRD, WHO MAY BE TAKEN IN ADOPTION.—The restrictions upon the selection of a person for adoption appear all to be of Brahmanical origin, and to rest upon the theory, that as the object of adoption was the performance of religious rites to deceased ancestors, the fiction of sonship must be as close as possible (§ 94). Hence, in the first place, the nearest male sapinda should be selected, if suitable in other respects, and if possible a brother's son, as he was already in contemplation of law a son to his uncle.

Origin of restrictions.

Nearest sapinda.

(*t*) *Rangubai v. Bhagirthibai*, 2 Bom. 377.

(*u*) See *ante*, § 100.

(*v*) *Steele*, 183; *Bhasker Bhachajee v. Narro Ragonath*, Bom Sel. Rep. 24; *Ramchandra v. Nanaji*, 7 Bom. H. C. (A. C. J.) 26; *Narhar Govind v. Narayan*, 1 Bom. 607; *Rangubai v. Bhagirthibai*, 2 Bom. 377; *Ball's Fictions in India*.

One whose  
mother could  
have been  
married.

If no such near sapinda was available, then one who was more remote ; or in default of any such, then one who was of a family which followed the same spiritual guide, or, in the case of Sudras, any member of the caste (*w*). Probably this rule was strengthened by the feeling that it was unjust to the members of the family to introduce a stranger if a near relative was available. Originally it seems to have been a positive precept. Subsequently it sunk to a mere recommendation. It is now settled that the adoption of a stranger is valid, even though near relatives, otherwise suitable, are in existence (*x*). In the second place, no one can be adopted whose mother the adopted could not have legally married (*y*). The origin and binding character of this rule have been criticised with great learning and force by Mr. V. N. Mandlik (*z*). He admits that "the Dattaka Chandrika, the Dattaka Mimamsa, the Samskara Kaustubha, the Dharma Sindhu and the Dattaka Nirnaya contain this prohibition." These authorities base their opinion, *first*, on the text of Çaunaka, that the adopted boy must bear the reflection of a son, to which they append the gloss "that is the capability to have been begotten by the adopter through *niyoga* and so forth" (*a*). Many objections are offered to this gloss by Mr. V. N. Mandlik, and, as I have already pointed out, (§ 94, note) it is possible that the text itself had originally a different meaning. *Secondly*, they rely upon a text which is attributed variously to Çaunaka, Vridha Gautama, and Narada, which states that a sister's son and a daughter's son may be

Dattaka Mimamsa, ii. § 2, 28, 29, 67, 74, 76, 80; Dattaka Chandrika, i. § 10, 20, ii. § 11; Mitakshara, i. 11, § 13, 14, 36; V. May., iv. 5, § 9, 16, 19.

(*w*) 1 W. McN. 68; 2 Stra. H. L. 98, 102; *Gocoolanund v. Wooma Dae*, 15 B. L. R. 405, S. C. 23 Suth. 340; *affd. sub. nomine, Uma Deyi v. Gookoolanund*, 5 I. A. 40, S. C. 3 Cal. 587; *Babaji v. Bhagirthibai*, 6 Bom. H. C. (A. C. J.) 70; *Darma Dagu v. Ramkrishna*, 10 Bom. 80. These authorities must be taken as overruling the case of *Ooman Dut v. Kunhia Singh*, 3 S. D. 144 (192), which was also a *Kritrima* adoption.

(*y*) Dattaka Mimamsa, v. § 20.

(*z*) Pages, 478—495, 514. The rule itself was reaffirmed by the High Court of Madras after a full examination of Mr. Mandlik's argument. *Minakshi v. Ramanada*, 11 Mad. 49.

(*a*) D' Mimamsa, v. § 15—17. Dattaka Chandrika, ii. § 7, 8. I am unable to refer to the other authorities, but Mr. V. N. Mandlik says that they rely upon the same texts, p. 489.

adopted by Sudras, but not by members of the three higher classes, and upon a text of Çakala which explicitly forbids the adoption by one of the regenerate classes of "a daughter's son, a sister's son, and the son of the mother's sister" (b). As to the former text Mr. Mandlik argues that the correct translation is "Sudras should adopt a daughter's son, or a sister's son. A sister's son is in some places not adopted as a son among the three classes beginning with a Brahmana." He points out that the Mayukha as properly rendered interprets the text as meaning that Sudras should adopt only, or primarily, a daughter's or a sister's son, but not as forbidding such adoptions by Brahmans. This view is also supported by the Dvaita Nirnaya, and the Nirnaya Sindhu (c). The text of Çakala he disposes of (p. 495) by treating its authority as of no weight in opposition to usage and conflicting authorities. The fact still remains, however, that the five digests above referred to lay down the rule in distinct and positive terms. The rule so laid down was stated by Mr. Sutherland, both the MacNaghtens, and both the Stranges (d); and, as limited to the three regenerate classes, it has been affirmed by a singularly strong series of authorities in all parts of India as forbidding the adoption of the son of a daughter, or of a sister, or of an aunt (e). On the same ground, it is unlawful to adopt a brother, or stepbrother, or an uncle, whether paternal or maternal (f). And it makes no difference that the adopter has himself been removed from his natural family by adoption; for adoption does not remove

---

(b) Dattaka Mimamsa, ii. § 32, 74, 107, Dattaka Chandrika, i. § 17, 7.

(c) V. May., iv. 5, § 9, 10, V. N. Mandlik, pp. 53—56.

(d) Suth. Syn. 664, F. MacN. 150, 1 W. MacN. 67, 1 Stra. H. L. 83, S. M. § 84.

(e) *Bae Gunga v. Bae Sheekoovur*, Bom. Sel. Rep. 73; *Narasammal v. Balarama Charlu*, 1 M. H. C. 420; *Jivani v. Jivu*, 2 M. H. C. 462; *Gopalayyan v. Raghupatiayyan*, 7 M. H. C. 260; *Ramalinga v. Sadasiva*, 9 M. I. A. 506, S. C. 1 Suth. (P. C.) 25, where the side-note calls the parties Vaisyas, though they were really Sudras. See *Supra*, 2 M. H. C. 467; *Kora Shunko v. Bebee Munnee*, 2 M. Dig. 32; *Gopal Narhar v. Hanmant*, 3 Bom. 273, where all the authorities are examined; *Bhagirthibai v. Radhabai*, 3 Bom. 298. *Parbati v. Sundar*, 8 All. 1; affd. 16 I. A., 186, S. C. 12 All. 51.

(f) Dattaka Mimamsa, v. § 17; *Runjeet Singh v. Obhya*, 2 S. D. 245 (315); *Moottoosamy v. Lutchmedavummah*, Mad. Dec. of 1852, 96. *Sriramulu v. Ramaiyya*, 3 Mad. 15.



the bar of consanguinity which would operate to prevent intermarriage within the prohibited degrees (*g*). This rule must, of course, be understood as excluding only the sons of women whose original relationship to the adopter was such as to render them unfit to be his wives. A man could not lawfully marry his brother's, or nephew's, wife, but a brother's son is the most proper person to be adopted, and so is a grandnephew (*h*). A wife's brother, or his son, may be adopted (*i*), and so may the son of a wife's sister (*k*) or of a maternal aunt's daughter (*l*).

Rules not universal.

124. This rule again appears to be of Brahmanical origin. The same authorities which lay it down as regards the higher classes state that Sudras (*m*), may adopt a daughter's, or a sister's, son. The Mayukha even states that as regards them such a person is the most proper to be adopted (*n*). He is obviously the most natural person to be selected. A mother's sister's son may also be adopted among Sudras (*o*). In the Punjab such adoptions are common among the Jats, and this laxity has spread even to Brahmans, and to the orthodox Hindu inhabitants of towns, such as Delhi (*p*). They are also permitted among the Jains (*q*), and in Southern India even among the Brahmans such adoptions are undoubtedly very common. It was decided so late as 1873 that the practice had not attained the force of a legal custom (*r*). But in 1881, upon a renewed enquiry, the High Court pronounced that in Southern India

(*g*) *Moothia v. Uppen*, Mad. Dec. of 1858, 117.

(*h*) *Morun Moe v. Bejoy*, Suth. Sp. No. 122.

(*i*) *Kristniengar v. Vanamamalay*, Mad. Dec. of 1856, 213; *Runganaigum v. Namesenoya*, Mad. Dec. of 1857, 94; *Ruvee Bhudr v. Roopshunker*, 2 Bor. 662 [718]; *Sriramulu v. Ramayya*, 8 Mad. 15.

(*k*) *Baee Gunga v. Baee Sheekoovur*, Bom. Sel. Rep. 73, 76.

(*l*) *Venkata v. Subhadra*, 7 Mad. 549.

(*m*) The Kayasthas in Bengal are Sudras, and may make such adoptions. *Rajcoomar Lall v. Bissessur Dyal*, 10 Cal. 688.

(*n*) V. May., iv. 5, § 10, 11.

(*o*) *Chinna Nagayya v. Pedda Nagayya*, 1 Mad. 62.

(*p*) Punjab Cust. 79—83. Punjab Customary Law, II. 111, 154, 205, 210

(*q*) *Sheo Singh v. Mt. Dakho*, 6 N.-W. P. 382, *affd.* 5 I. A. 87, 8. O. 1 All. 688; *Hassan Ali v. Nagamal*, 1 All. 288; *Lakhmi Chand v. Datto Bai*, 8 All. 819.

(*r*) *Gopalyyan v. Raghupatiayyan*, 7 M. H. O. 250; 2 Stra. H. L. 101; 1 Gibelin, 89, Nelson's view of the Hindu Law, 90.



such adoptions were valid among Brahmans. A similar practice among the Nambudri Brahmans of Malabar has also received judicial sanction (s). In Western India also they appear to be permitted. It is also said that in the Deccan a younger brother may be adopted, and though the adoption of uncles is forbidden, a different reason is alleged for the prohibition (t).

§ 125. A singular extension has been given to this rule by Nanda Pandita. He quotes a text of Vriddha Gautama : —“In the three superior tribes a sister’s son is nowhere mentioned as a son,”—and says that here a sister’s son is inclusive of a brother’s son. But as the brother’s son is not only not prohibited, but is expressly enjoined, for adoption, he draws the remarkable conclusion that a brother’s son must not be adopted by a sister. And this opinion was acted upon in the N.-W. Provinces, where the Court set aside an adoption by a widow, acting under her husband’s authority, where she had selected the son of her own brother (u). If the adoption had been made by her husband, and not by herself, it would have been perfectly valid (v). The same principle seems to have been the ground of a case which is reported, and discussed at much length, by Sir F. MacNaghten (w). There a man died leaving three widows, and an authority to them to adopt. As they could not agree, a reference was made to the Master, who reported in favour of a boy who was the son of the second widow’s uncle. The next question that arose was, whether the boy could be received in adoption by the second widow. It was argued that this was impossible, because she could not without incest have been the mother of a boy by her own uncle. The pandits differed, and no decision

Extension of rule to son of wife’s brother.

(s) *Vayidinada v. Appu*, 9 Mad. 44; *Vishnu v. Krishnan*, 7 Mad. 3; *per curiam*, 11 Mad. 55.

(t) *Steele*, 44; *Huebut Rao v. Govindrao*, 2 Bor. 85, V. N. Mandlik, 474, 495, W. & B. 887.

(u) *Dattaka Mimamsa*, ii. § 33, 34; *Mt. Battas v. Lachman Singh*, 7 N.-W. P. 117.

(v) See authorities quoted § 123, notes (h) (i).

(w) *Dagumbaree v. Taramonee*, F. MacN. 170, App. 10.

was ever given, the second widow having waived her right in favour of the elder. Sir F. MacNaghten, however, pronounces unhesitatingly in favour of the objection. It seems to me, however, with the greatest respect, that this is introducing into the Hindu theory of adoption a second fiction for which there is no foundation. The real fiction is, that the adopting father had begotten the child upon its natural mother; therefore it is necessary that she should be a person who might lawfully have been his wife. There is no fiction that the natural father had also begotten the child upon the adopting mother. The natural son becomes the son, not merely of the particular wife from whom he is born, but of all the wives; and the authors of the Dattaka Mimamsa and Dattaka Chandrika seem to think that the same result follows in the case of several wives from an adoption (*x*). The fiction can hardly extend to the length of his being conceived by all. In fact it would appear that the Hindu law takes no notice of the wife in reference to adoption. The relation of the adopted son to her arises upon adoption. But the balance of authority and reasoning appears to be opposed to the idea that relationship to her has any effect upon the choice of the boy to be adopted (*y*).

Identity of  
caste.

§ 126. The adopted son must be of the same class as his adopting father; that is, a Brahman may not adopt a Kshatriya, or *vice versa*. This rule is probably an innovation upon ancient usage, as Medhatithi and others interpret the words of Manu "being alike" (translated by Sir W. Jones "being of the same class") as meaning merely, possessing suitable qualities, though of a different class (*z*). In the time of Manu a man might have married wives of different class, and the sons of all such wives would have been legitimate, and would have inherited together, though

(*x*) Manu, ix. § 183; Dattaka Mimamsa, ii. § 69; Dattaka Chandrika, i. § 23. And so the pandits stated in this case, F. MacN. App. 11

(*y*) This view was approved by the Madras High Court. *Sriramulu v. Ramayya*, 3 Mad. p. 17.

(*z*) Manu, ix. § 168; Mitakshara, i. 11, § 9; V. May., v. 5, § 4; Dattaka Mimamsa, ii. § 23—25; Dattaka Chandrika, i. § 12—16.

in different proportions (*a*). Each of such sons must have been competent to perform his father's obsequies, though perhaps with varying merit. It would have been remarkable, therefore, if a man could not have adopted the son of a woman whom he might have married. Baudhayana makes no reference to caste, and Vasishtha merely says, "the class ought to be known" (§ 96), which is natural enough, as determining a preference. The other authors (Katyayana, Çaunaka, Yajñavalkya, and Yaska) who forbid the adoption of one of unequal class, admit that such adoptions do take place, and are effectual as prolonging the line, though not for purposes of oblations. They, therefore, declare that a son so adopted is entitled to receive maintenance (*b*). From this, I presume, they considered that he was effectually severed from his natural family. It is probable, therefore, that as long as mixed marriages were lawful, the adoption of sons of inferior caste was also lawful (*c*). When the former ceased, the latter also ceased. At present, I imagine that the adoption of a Kshatriya by a Brahman would be a mere nullity, and would neither take the boy out of his natural family, nor give him any claim upon the family of the adopter. The case has never occurred, and is quite certain never to occur.

§ 127. As the chief reason for adoption is the performance of funeral ceremonies, it follows that one who, from any personal disqualification would be incapable of performing them, would be an unfit person to be adopted (*d*). Nothing is said upon the point by Hindu law writers. Probably the idea that such an adoption could be made would never have occurred to their minds. As a person so adopted would also be incapable of succeeding to the property of the adopter,

Personal dis-  
qualification.

(*a*) Manu, ix. § 148—156.

(*b*) See to D. K. S. vii. § 23, 24, citing Narada.

(*c*) In Northern Ceylon this is the case still. The son, if adopted by a man, passes into his caste. If adopted by a woman, he remains in the caste of his natural father. Thesawaleme, ii. § 7.

(*d*) Suth. Syn. 665; V. Darp. 828, 830.

and so continuing his name and lineage, every object would fail which an adoption is intended to serve.

Limitation from age.

§ 128. A further limitation upon the selection of a son for adoption arises from age, and the previous performance of ceremonies in the natural family (*e*). The leading authority upon this point is a passage from the Kalika-purana, which is relied on by Nanda Pandita, but which is treated as spurious by the author of the Dattaka Chandrika, Nilakanta, and others, and which is admittedly wanting in many copies of that work. It lays down absolutely that a child must not be adopted whose age exceeds five years, or upon whom the ceremony of tonsure has been performed in the natural family (*f*). The result of a lengthened commentary on this passage in the Dattaka Mimamsa appears to be ; *first*, that the limit of age as not exceeding five is absolute : *secondly*, that one who has had the tonsure performed ought not to be adopted, as he will at the outside be the son of two fathers : but, *thirdly*, that if no other is procurable, a boy on-whom tonsure has been performed may be received. In that case, however, the previous rites must be annulled by the performance of the *putreshti*, or sacrifice for male issue. As regards other rites, those previous to tonsure are immaterial, the performance of the *upanayana* is an absolute bar (*g*).

Dattaka Mimamsa.

Jagannatha.

Jagannatha appears to accept the text as literally binding, and not to recognize the right of performing the tonsure over again. He, therefore, considers an adoption to

---

(*e*) As to the eight ceremonies for a male, see Colebrooke, note to Dattaka Mimamsa, iv. § 23 ; 3 Dig. 104. Of these, tonsure is the fifth, and *upanayana*, or investiture with the second thread, is the eighth. The former is performed in the second or third year after birth, the latter, in the case of Brahmans, in the eighth year from conception. But it may be performed so early as the fifth, or delayed till the sixteenth year. The primary periods for *upanayana* in the case of a Kshatriya are eleven, and of a Vaisya twelve years, but it may be delayed till the ages of twenty-two and twenty-four respectively. For Sudras there is no ceremony but marriage.

(*f*) Dattaka Mimamsa, iv. § 22 ; Dattaka Chandrika, ii. § 25 ; V. May, iv. 5, § 20 ; Mitakshara, i. 11, § 13, note. Jolly, § 161.

(*g*) Dattaka Mimamsa, 30—56 ; 1 W. MacN. 72. Mr. Sutherland's gloss upon Dattaka Mimamsa, § 53 that the words 'a boy five years old' means under

be invalid, if it is made after tonsure, or after the fifth year (*h*).

On the other hand, the author of the Dattaka Chandrika refuses to accept the text of the Kalika-purana as authentic. But even if it should be genuine, he explains it away by the possibility of performing tonsure a second time in the adoptive family. The result he arrives at is, that age is only material as determining the term at which *upanayana* may be performed. So long as this rite in the case of the three higher classes, and marriage in the case of Sudras, can be performed in the family of the adopter, there is no limit of any particular time (*i*).

Dattaka Chandrika.

Mr. W. MacNaghten is of opinion that the rules laid down by the Dattaka Mimamsa and the Dattaka Chandrika should be followed in the Provinces in which they are respectively in force ; that is, the Dattaka Mimamsa in Benares, and the Dattaka Chandrika in Bengal and Southern India (*k*). From what has been already stated (§ 30) as to the authorship of the Dattaka Chandrika there seems to be no reason for ascribing to it any special authority in Southern India. The authority of the Dattaka Mimamsa in Benares appears to be equally open to doubt.

§ 129. The only decisions upon this point under Benares law have been given in the Courts of the North-West Provinces. The first of these was in 1868 (*l*), when it was held that under the Dattaka Mimamsa an adoption was valid so long as the boy was below six years. Here the Court accepted the authority of the Dattaka Mimamsa, and of the Kalika-purana on which the rule is based, but fell into a mistake as to the meaning of the rule, in conse-

Benares law.

---

six is a mistake. It means one who has not passed his fifth birth-day. *Per Mahmood, J., Ganga Sahai v. Lekhraj Singh*, 9 All. 310.

(*h*) 3 Dig. 148, 249—251, 263. See to F. MacN. 139—146, 194.

(*i*) Dattaka Chandrika, ii. § 20—33 ; 1 W. MacN. 72.

(*k*) 1 W. MacN. 78.

(*l*) *Thakoor Oomrao Singh v. Thakooranee Mehtab Koonwer*, N.-W.P., H. C. Rep. 1868, 103a. See *per Mahmood, J.*, 9 All., p. 312.



quence of the gloss put upon it by Sutherland Mr. (§ 128*n*). The question arose again in 1886, and was examined in the most elaborate manner by Mr. Justice Mahmood (*m*). The conclusions he arrived at are stated as follows: "I hold that the passage of the Kalika-purana upon which the limitation of five years for adoption is entirely founded, is not proved to be authentic; that even if it be taken to be authentic, the interpretation adopted by Nanda Pandita in his Dattaka Mimamsa is not shown to be universally applicable; that the interpretation may be restricted only to Brahmans intended for priesthood; that this interpretation would bring the Dattaka Mimamsa in accord with the Dattaka Chandrika; that various other plausible interpretations of the passage have been adopted by other authorities; that such authorities may be referred to for the purposes of this question; and that the matter being so dealt with by those authorities, it would be unsafe to set aside the plaintiff's adoption upon the solitary ground that he was older than five years at that time." He then proceeded to express his opinion that, as regards the twice-born classes, age was only material as determining the time at which the *upanayana* may be performed, and that its performance was the ultimate limit for a valid adoption. As regards Sudras adoption could be performed effectually till marriage.

#### Bengal.

§ 129A. In Bengal and Southern India the decisions are in favour of the view laid down by the Dattaka Chandrika. In some of the earlier Bengal cases, the pandits, while agreeing that the age of five years was not an absolute limit which could not be exceeded, seem to have thought that if tonsure had already been performed in the natural family, and in the name of the natural father, a subsequent adoption would be invalid (*n*). In 1838, however, the Sudder Court Pandit, in reply to a question as to age,

(*m*) *Ganga Sahai v. Lekhraj Singh*, 11 All. 253, pp. 316—324, 327, 328.

(*n*) *Kerutnaraen v. Mt. Bhobinesree*, 1 S. D. 161 (213) (as to the remark appended to this decision, see 1 W. MacN. 75); 2 W. MacN. 180; *Mt. Dullabh v. Manu*, S. D. 50 (61).

answered "that the period fixed for adoption with respect to the three superior tribes, Brahmans, Kshatriyas, and Vaisyas, was prior to their investiture with their respective cords; and with respect to Sudras, prior to their contracting marriage" (o). This opinion has been affirmed in several subsequent cases, and may now be treated as beyond doubt (p). The same rule has been repeatedly laid down in Madras, both by the Pandits and the Court (q). It is also suggested by Mr. Ellis, that even after *upanayana* an adoption would be valid, if the person adopted was of the same *gotra* as his adopter. He bases this view on the ground, that where the *gotra* is different, the *upanayana* is a bar, since by it the person is definitely settled in his natural family, and this renders the performance of the *datta homam* (§ 141) impossible. But where the *gotra* is the same, the performance of the *datta homam*, though proper, is not necessary for an adoption. And this view was adopted by the Travancore Court in a case between Brahmans. There the *upanayana* had been performed previous to adoption. But the Court held the objection to be immaterial, since the person adopted was the son of the adopter's brother (r). This ruling was followed by the High Court of Madras after a very full investigation of the authorities, and upon evidence of local usage (s). The usage in Pondicherry admits of adoption after the *upanayana* in any case (t).

§ 130. This restriction again does not exist where the Brahmanical fiction of an altered paternity is unknown.

Limit of age not universal

(o) *Bullabakant v. Kishenprea*, 6 S. D. 219 (270).

(p) *Nitradayee v. Bholanath*. S. D. of 1853, 553; *Ramkishore v. Bhoobun*, S. D. of 1859, 229, 236; affirmed on review, S. D. of 1860, i. 485, 490; reversed on a different point in the P. C. *Sub Nomine Bhoobun Moyee v. Ramkishore*, where, however, the ruling as to the validity of the adoption on the ground of age was not disputed, 10 M. I. A. 279; S. O. 3 Suth (P. C.) 15.

(q) 1 Stra. H. L. 87, 91; 2 Stra. H. L. 87, 110; *Mootoo Vizia Raghoonadha Satooputty, alias Annasamy v. Sevagamy Nachiar*, 1 Mad. Dec. 106; affirmed by P. C. on the 28th April 1828, *Chetty Colum Prussuna v. Chetty Colum Moodoo*, 1 Mad. Dec. 406; *Sreenevassien v. Sashyummam*, Mad. Dec. of 1859, 118; *Veerapermall v. Narrain Pillay*, 1 N. C. 133; *Vythilinga v. Vyiatham-mal*, 8 Mad. 43. *Pichuvayyan v. Subbayyan*, 13 Mad. 128.

(r) 2 Stra. H. L. 104; *Ramaswami Iyen v. Bhagati Ammal*, 8 Mad. Jur. 58.

(s) *Viraragava v. Ramalinga*, 9 Mad. 148, overruling *Venkatasaiya v. Venkata Charlu*, 3 Mad. H. C. 28.

(t) 1 Gibelin, 94.

In the Punjab there is no restriction of age (*u*). Among the Jains the period extends to 32, and it is said by *Holloway, J.*, that there is no limit of age (*v*). So in Western India, the author of the *Mayukha* says, "And my father has said that a married man, who has even had a son born, may become an adopted son" (*w*). In accordance with this *dictum* the pandits of the Surat Sudder Court reported that "the rule that a boy should be adopted under five years related to cases where no relationship exists; but when a relation is to be adopted, no obstacle exists on account of his being of mature age, married and having a family, provided he possesses common ability, and is beloved by the person who adopts him" (*x*). So Mr. Steele states, "the Poona Shastries do not recognize the necessity that adoption should precede *moonj* and marriage." And he gives various statements as to the proper age for adoption ranging from five to fifty, and ending, "there is no limit as to age. The adoptee should not be older than the adopter" (*y*). None of these authorities make any distinction as to the caste of the person adopted. In the Surat case the parties appear to have been Brahmans, or at least Kshatriyas. In some of the cases in which the adoption of a married man has been held valid by the Bombay High Court, the parties happened to be Sudras, but the decision did not turn upon that circumstances (*z*). It has been settled by recent cases, after some doubt, that a married Brahman may be lawfully adopted, and that it makes no difference as to the legality of the transaction whether he belongs to a different or to the same *gotra* as the adopter (*a*).

---

(*u*) Punjab Cust., 82.

(*v*) *Rithcurn v. Soojun*, 9 Mad. Jur. 21, cited in *Sheo Singh v. Mt. Dakho*, 6 N.-W. P. 402; *Govindnath v. Gulalchund*, 5 S. D. 276 (322).

(*w*) V. May., iv. 5, § 19. His father was Shauker Bhatt, author of the *Dvait Nirnaya*, a work of special authority in the Deccan. *Nathaji v. Hari*, 8 Bom. H. C. (A. C. J.) 70.

(*x*) *Brijhookunjee v. Gokoolootsaojee*, 1 Bor. 195, [217].

(*y*) Steele, 44, 182; V. N. Mandlik, 471; 1 W. MacN. 75. This was also the case in Rome.

(*z*) *Rajo Nimbalkar v. Jayavantrav*, 4 Bom. H. C. (A. C. J.) 191; *Nathaji v. Hari*, 8 Bom. H. C. (A. C. J.) 67.

(*a*) *Sadashiv v. Hari Moneshwar*, 11 Bom. H. C. 190; *Lakshmappa v. Ramappa*, 12 Bom. H. C. 364; *Dharma Daguv. Ramkrishna*, 10 Bom. 80. Among the Nambudri Brahmans, (§ 42) the power to adopt a married man appears only to exist when the adoption is of the *Kritrima* form, 11 Mad. p. 176.

§ 131. The prohibition against adopting an only son Only son. rests on the texts of Vasishtha, Baudhayana and Çaunaka, (§ 96). "Let no man give or accept an only son, since he must remain for the obsequies of his ancestor" (b). So Çaunaka says, "By no man having an only son is the gift of a son to be ever made." From these Nanda Pandita infers a prohibition against accepting also, and says that the offence of extinction of lineage, denounced by Vasishtha, is incurred by both giver and receiver (c). This prohibition is by some authorities extended to the adoption of an eldest son, since his merits are specially appropriated in the Eldest son. interests of his own father (d). And even to the adoption of one of two sons, since such an act would leave the father with an only son, and thereby subject him to the chance of being left wholly without issue. But this final precept is admittedly only dissuasive, and not peremptory (e). And the same decision has lately been given as regards the adoption of an eldest son (f). The value to be placed upon these texts according to Hindu rules of interpretation is discussed at length by Mr. V. N. Mandlik. His view is that they are recommendatory only, and not prohibitory, and that a violation of them affects the offender, but does not detract from the validity of the rite (g).

§ 132. It seems to be admitted everywhere that there is Son of two fathers. no objection to the adoption of an only son, when he is taken as *dwyamushyayana*, or the son of two fathers; either by an express agreement that his relationship to his natural family shall continue (h), or by the fact that the only son of one

(b) So in Rome, the only male of his *gens* could not be adopted, for the *sacra* would in such a case be lost.

(c) Dattaka Mimamsa, iv. § 1—6; Dattaka Chandrika, i. § 27, 28; Mitakshara, i. 11, § 11; V. May, iv. 5, § 9, 16; V. N. Mandlik, 502.

(d) Mitakshara, i. 11, § 12, citing Manu, ix. § 106; Viramit, ii. 2, § 8; Sarasvati Vilasa, § 868, 869; 2 Stra. H. L. 105; 2 W. MacN., 182; V. May., iv. 5, § 4; *Permaul Naicken v. Pottes Ammal*, Mad. Dec. of 1851, 234.

(e) Dattaka Mimamsa, iv. § 8; 1 Stra. H. L. 85; 1 W. MacN. 77.

(f) *Janokes v. Gopaul*, 2 Cal. 865; *Kashibai v. Tatia*, 7 Bom. 221; *Jamnabai v. Raichand*, ib. 225.

(g) V. N. Mandlik, 496—508 where he gives instances of the adoption of only sons from the Vedic ages downwards.

(h) 2 W. MacN. 192; 1 Stra. H. L. 86; *futwaks*, 2 Kn. 206; *Shumshere v. Dilraj*, 2 S. D. 189 (216); *Joymonee v. Sibosoondry*, Fulton, 75.



brother is taken in adoption by another brother, in which case the double relationship appears to be established without any special contract (i). But whether in other cases the adoption of an only son is absolutely invalid, or is only sinful, is a point on which a great conflict of opinion exists. In Southern India, the balance of authority is in favour of the validity of the adoption. In Bengal the decisions are almost unanimously opposed to its validity. In Western India there is a conflict of decisions, which appear to have finally settled that such adoptions are invalid. In all the Provinces reliance is placed on the same texts, and no special usage appears to be set up as qualifying them. Whether there is any difference between the law in the different parts of India, is a matter which can now only be settled by a decision of the Privy Council. It will be sufficient for me to furnish the materials on which a decision may be given.

Decisions in  
Madras.

§ 133. The question came before Sir Thomas Strange, as Recorder of Madras in 1801, in the case of *Veerapermall v. Narrain Pillay* (k), where the objection was taken to an adoption that the boy was an only son. There was in fact nothing in the objection, for he was the only son by a younger wife, and had an elder brother by another wife living at the time. The Recorder, after citing the text of Vasishtha, and the opinion of Jagannatha (l) that such an adoption if made would be valid, proceeded :—

“ The opinion of the present pandits of Bengal is, ‘ that a person who has only one son should not give him away ; nor should he give away an elder son : the adoption of an only son indeed is valid, but both giver and receiver are

---

(i) Dattaka Mimamsa, ii. 37, 38, vi. § 34—36, 47, 48 ; Dattaka Chandrika, i. § 27, 28, iii. § 17, v. § 33 ; 1 Stra. H. L. 86 ; 2 Stra. H. L. 107 ; Steele, 45, 183 ; Sarvadhikari, 535. *Permaul Naicken v. Pottee Ammal*, Mad. Dec. of 1851, 234 ; *per curiam*, *Gocoolanund v. Wooma Dae*, 15 B. L. R. 415, S. C. 23 Suth. 340 ; *Nilmadhub v. Bishumber*, 13 M. I. A. 101, S. C. 12 Suth. (P. C.) 29 ; *Chinna Gaundan v. Kumara*, 1 Mad. H. C. 57 ; *Uma Deyi v. Gokoolanund*, 5 I. A. 42, S. C. 3 Cal. 587. V. May., iv. 5, § 21, 22.

(k) 1 N. C. 91, 125.

(l) 3 Dig. 243.



blameable.' This appears to have been settled in the instance of the Rajah of Tanjore. In that important case the person adopted was the only son of his parents ; and it is a mistake if any one imagines that the deviation from the rule on that occasion was supported upon any ground of Mahratta custom or policy. The objection appears to have undergone deep consideration, conducted in part through the fortunate medium of Sir W. M. Jones ; and certainly in a way to evince the anxiety of Government to be rightly advised. It appears that the pandits of Bengal and Benares in general were of opinion that 'in all countries the affiliation of an only son is valid, although the parent who gives the child, and the adopter, both incur sin by deviating from the ordinances of the *Shaster*, which declare the giving or taking of an only son in adoption to be improper.' Ramavana indeed, and the other pandits who sign with him, state 'that an only son could not be given to the Rajah to adopt as his son.' But it appears that they rather mean that the act could not be done consistently with the ordinances of the *Shaster*, than that the adoption was invalid, for they expressly state that 'several usages had been adopted and followed, that are not found in the *Shaster*, and are to be looked upon as valid.' This exposition was considered at the time as reconciling their opinion with that of Kasheenauth and the other Benares pandits, who stated 'that the adoption of an only son is one of those acts which is tolerated by usage, although it incurs guilt according to the *Shaster*.' These testimonies corroborating the opinions of the Tanjore pandits, transmitted by the widow of the Rajah Tulsajee, and those received through the Government of Fort St. George, decided the Supreme Government that the objection that Serfojee was an only son was not sufficiently founded to invalidate his adoption and succession."

Only son may be adopted.

§ 134. In his second volume Sir Thomas Strange gives the opinions of pandits declaring that neither an only, nor an elder, son can be adopted. These are accompanied by

European opinions.

remarks of Mr. Colebrooke, who says that a valid adoption of an only son cannot be made, except in the case of a brother's son, who performs the offices of a son to both natural and adoptive father, the absolute gift being forbidden; and of Mr. Ellis, who says that if the act be duly completed it cannot be reversed (*m*). In the text he reiterates the opinion, already expressed from the Bench, that the prohibitions respecting an eldest and only son are only directory, and an adoption of either, however blameable in the giver, would nevertheless for every legal purpose be good (*n*).

Pandits.

Madras  
decisions.

§ 135. In a Madras case in 1817 the question was whether a man was bound to adopt the son of his elder brother, being an only son, in preference to the son of his uncle. The pandits answered: "It is not lawful for a man to give his only son in adoption to another. It is not lawful for a man to receive in adoption the only son of another, therefore it is not lawful, and consequently not incumbent, on a man to adopt the only son of his elder brother in preference to the youngest son of his uncle. But if such an adoption as aforesaid should take place, although the giver and receiver in adoption have thereby committed sin, the adoption is valid" (*o*). Here the pandits seem to have overlooked the distinction between the only son of a brother and of a stranger. In other respects they agree with Sir T. Strange.

Eldest son.

In 1851 a case came before the Sudr Udalut in which an uncle had adopted the eldest son of his brother. The pandits, after having referred to an opinion they had given in 1848 declaring the adoption of an eldest son to be invalid, repeated their opinion that as a general rule it would be so, but not in this case where the person adopted

(*m*) 2 Stra. H. L. 87, 106, 107. Proceedings of the Sudr Udalut of Madras to the same effect appear to have been passed in 1824 and 1825. See Stra. Man. § 99.

(*n*) 1 Stra. H. L. 87.

(*o*) *Arnachellum v. Iyasamy*, 1 Mad. Dec. 154.

was a brother's son. The Court, citing this opinion and also the opinion of Sir Thomas Strange, say, "In the present instance the adoption was by a paternal uncle, and having thus taken place, though a thing to have been avoided, it must be held to be valid." (p).

In 1854 the same question as to an eldest son arose, but in this case without the circumstance of his being a brother's son. The Sudder Pandits again pronounced the adoption invalid, and on the strength of their opinion the Civil Judge rejected his claim. The Sudder Court reversed the decision, solely on the ground that the adoption had been made good by acquiescence and lapse of time. They did not notice the finding as to invalidity in law (q).

The case came on for a direct decision in the Madras High Court in 1862, and it was decided, on a review of the previous cases, that the adoption of an only son was valid (r). A similar conclusion has lately been arrived at by the majority of the Judges of the High Court of Allahabad, Allahabad. *Turner*, J. dissenting (s).

§ 136. In Bombay there is a conflict of authority. It is Bombay. stated by Mr. Steele that an only son should not be given in adoption, except to his uncle, or with the concurrence of both parties, by which I suppose he means as a *dwyamushyayana* (t). But in a case where a man who had only two sons gave them both away in adoption, the pandits said the adoptions were valid, as the sin lies with the giver, and not with the receiver (u). And in 1862 and 1867 the High Court expressly decided that the adoption of an only son was valid, if accomplished, though improper (v). On

(p) *Permaul Naicken v. Pottée Ammall*, Mad. Dec. of 1851, p. 234.

(q) *Chocummal v. Surathy*, Mad. Dec. of 1854, p. 31.

(r) *Chinna Gaundan v. Kumara*, 1 Mad. H. C. 54. Followed in *Narayana-sami v. Kuppusami*, 11 Mad. 43.

(s) *Hanuman v. Chirai*, 2 All. 164, (F. B.) Doubted by *Straight* and *Mahmood*, JJ., 12 All. 381—387.

(t) *Steele*, 45, 188. (u) *Huebut Rao v. Govindrao*, 2 Bor. 75, 86 [88].

(v) *Mhalsabai v. Vithoba*, 7 Bom. H. C. Appx. 26; *Raje Nimbalkar v. Jayavantrav*, 4 Bom. H. C. (A. C. J.) 191.

the other hand, in a later case the High Court spoke of "the general rule of Hindu law that an only son cannot be the subject of adoption, a rule recently re-affirmed and illustrated by a judgment of the Calcutta High Court" (*w*). The remark, of course, was merely *obiter dictum*. In 1877 the objection that the boy adopted was an only son was taken in the High Court, but abandoned as untenable (*x*). In 1875, a question arose whether the giving by a widow of an only son in adoption was valid or invalid. The only question necessary to be decided was, whether the authority of the deceased husband could be presumed. For this purpose it was necessary to consider the propriety of the act. The whole law, and all the precedents upon the point were minutely examined by *Westropp*, C.J. The only point actually decided was, that the giving or receiving of an only son was so improper that the consent of the husband could not be presumed. The Chief Justice, however, expressed himself most unfavourably to the validity of such an adoption, though he admitted that such cases had been recognised as legal under the old Sudder Court. This ruling was followed in an exactly similar case in 1882 (*y*). In 1883, the validity of the adoption of an eldest son was in question. The High Court, while holding that the prohibition against such an adoption was only admonitory, contrasted it with the prohibition against the adoption of an only son, which it treated as unqualified and absolute. This again was only *obiter dictum* (*z*). The opinion of the authors of *West and Bühler's Digest* is that such adoptions are invalid in Bombay. In addition to the above authorities they refer to two unreported cases, in one of which the adoption of an only son in the Linghait caste was held to be invalid, while in the other the general principle seems to have been laid down that such adoptions could only be valid by virtue of a special custom (*a*). Finally in

(*w*) *Bhasker Trimbak v. Mahadev Ramji*, 6 Bom. H. C. (O. C. J.) 4.

(*x*) *Rangubai v. Bhaghirthibai*, 2 Bom. at p. 379.

(*y*) *Lakshmappa v. Ramappa*, 12 Bom. H. C. 364; *Somasekhara v. Subhadra-maji*, 6 Bom. 524.

(*z*) *Kashibai v. Tatia*, 7 Bom. 221.

(*a*) W. & B. 909, 912, 1040.

1889 the same Court, in a Full Bench decision, decided that the adoption of an only son was absolutely invalid. They held that the Full Bench had already decided in the Linghait case that under Hindu law a gift of an only son in adoption was invalid, and could not be made good by the doctrine of *Factum valet* (b). This of course finally closes the discussion in Bombay.

§ 137. In Bengal the authorities are nearly all opposed to the validity of the adoption of an only son. Sir F. MacNaghten and Mr. Sutherland both declare unhesitatingly against it (c), and the younger MacNaghten cites numerous futwahs in accordance with that view, the only exception being where the adoption was of the *dwya-mushyayana* character (d). The decisions are to the same effect.

Bengal: only son may not be adopted.

§ 138. In the case of *Shumshere Mull v. Dilraj Konwur* (e), the plaintiff rested his case on an adoption which was void as being made by a widow without her husband's authority. The Sudder Court, however, with reference to the claims of other parties, one of whom, named Tej Mull, was an only son who had been taken in adoption, asked the pandits whether such an adoption was valid. They replied that the validity of the adoption of Tej Mull, and his right to the estate, depended upon whether he had been delivered to, and accepted by, the adopting parent on the condition that he should belong as a son to both. If not so delivered, the adoption would be illegal, and carry with it no title to the estate. No decision upon the point was required, or given. In a later case, the plaintiff, who was an only son, claimed as adopted. His adoption was declared illegal on this ground, and his suit was dismissed. This decision was confirmed on review. After the case had been submitted to a new pandit, he gave an equally unqualified opinion with his

(b) *Waman Raghupati v. Krishnaji*, 14 Bom (F. B.) 249.

(c) F. MacN. 123, 147, 150; Suth. Syn. 665.

(d) 2 W. MacN. 178, 179, 192, 195.

(e) 2 S. D. 189 (216).



Bengal: decisions as to only son.

predecessor. One of the Judges thought that the adoption, though improper, was not invalid; but two other Judges disagreed with him, and the former decision was confirmed (*f*). The same decision was given in another case, where the defendant in possession was an only son, whose title rested on the validity of his adoption. The pandits pronounced "that the fact of his being an only son was sufficient to invalidate the adoption, as such a person was forbidden to be adopted; and the violation of this law was a criminal act on the part of both giver and receiver." It was then alleged that he had been given as *dwyamushyayana*. But it appeared that he had been given by his mother after his father's death, and the pandits said that a widow could not give away her son in this manner without express authority from her husband, which she had not received. He was, therefore, turned out of possession by the Court (*g*). On the other hand, in a case in the Bengal Supreme Court, the Court said: "The adoption of an only son is no doubt blameable by Hindu law, but when done it is valid." They went on, however, to say that rather than treat it as invalid they would assume an agreement between the natural and adoptive father that the boy was to be the son of both, which, of course, got over the difficulty (*h*). Finally, the point came before the Bengal High Court in 1868, when the title of the plaintiff rested on the validity of his adoption, he being an only son. The Madras case and others were cited, but it was held by the Court that the adoption was absolutely invalid. *Mitter*, J. said, "One of the essential requisites of a valid adoption is that the gift should be made by a competent person, and the Hindu law distinctly says that the father of an only son has no such absolute dominion over that son as to make him the subject of a sale

(*f*) *Nundram v. Kashee Pande*, 3 S. D. 232 (310) S. C. 1 Mor. 17; 4 S. D. 70 (89). This case is erroneously cited by *Scotland*, C. J., as an authority the other way in *Chinna Gaundan v. Kumara*, 1 Mad. H. C. 57.

(*g*) *Debee Dial v. Hur Hor Singh*, 4 S. D. 820 (407)

(*h*) *Joymony v. Sibosoondry*, Fulton, 75. In one case in Bengal an adoption was held valid where it was admitted that the boy at the time of his adoption was an only son, his elder brother having predeceased. No discussion on the point is recorded in the report. *Mt. Dullabh v. Manu*, 5 S. D. 50 (61).

or gift (D. M. iv. 5). Such a gift, therefore, would be as much invalid as a gift made by the mother of a child, without the consent of the father. It is to be borne in mind that the prohibition in question is applicable to the giver as well as to the receiver, and both parties are threatened with the offence of 'extinction of lineage' in case of violation. Now the perpetuation of lineage is the chief object of adoption under the Hindu law, and if the adoptive father incurs the offence of 'extinction of lineage,' by adopting a child who is the only son of his father, the object of the adoption necessarily fails" (i). In 1878 the whole subject was again elaborately discussed by the High Court of Bengal, and it was decided that according to the law of that province the adoption of an only son was illegal, and that the prohibition applied to Sudras as well as to the higher classes (k). It may therefore be taken that on this point the law of Bengal differs from that of Madras.

§ 139. Two persons cannot adopt the same boy, even if the persons adopting are brothers. It is, however, suggested by the author of the Dattaka Mimamsa that two brothers may jointly adopt the son of a third brother, so that he may be the *dwyamuskyayana*, or son of both. Mr. W. MacNaghten expresses a strong opinion against the legality of such a proceeding (l).

Two persons  
cannot adopt  
same boy.

§ 140. FOURTH, THE CEREMONIES NECESSARY TO AN ADOPTION are stated by Vasishtha as follows: "A person being about to adopt a son, should take an unremote kinsman, or the near relation of a kinsman, having convened his kindred,

Ritual.

(i) *Upendra Lal v. Rani Prasanna Mayi*, 1 B. L. R. (A. C. J.) 221; S. C. 10 Suth. 847, *Sub nomine, Opendur Lall v. Bromo Moyee*; approved, *Janokee v. Gopaul*, 2 Cal. 365, and by Bombay H. Ct., *Bhaskar Trimbak v. Mahadev Ramji*, 6 Bom. H. C. (O. C. J.) 4. See *obiter dictum* of Jud. Committee, *Nilmadhub v. Bishumber*, 13 M. I. A. 100. S. C. 12 Suth. (P. C.) 29; S. C. 2 B. L. R. (P. C.) 27. In a later case a man had three sons, one of whom died leaving a widow, who had adopted to her deceased husband. The High Court held that under these circumstances there was no objection to the adoption of the two surviving sons. *Manik Chand v. Jagat Sattani*, 17 Cal. 518, 536.

(k) *Manick Chunder v. Bhuggobutty*, 3 Cal. 443.

(l) *Dattaka Mimamsa*, i. § 30, ii. § 40—47; 1 W. MacN. 77.

and announced his intention to the king, and having offered a burnt offering, with recitation of the holy words in the middle of his dwelling" (m). A fuller ritual, which, however, is merely an enlargement of the above, is given by Çaunaka and Baudhayana, in passages which are referred to by writers as the leading authorities upon the subject (n). In these much stress is laid upon the giving and receiving of the boy. Upon this Baudhayana says, "Then having performed the ceremonies beginning with drawing the lines on the altar, and ending with the placing of the water vessels, he should go to the giver of the child, and ask him, saying, Give me thy son. The other answers, I give him. He receives him with these words, I take thee for the fulfilment of my religious duties. I take thee to continue the line of my ancestors" (o). "The expression 'king' in these texts has been explained by commentators to signify the chief of the town, or village. They seem, however, agreed that the notice enjoined, and the invitation of kinsmen are no legal essentials to the validity of the adoption, being merely intended to give greater publicity to the act, and to obviate litigation and doubt regarding the succession" (p).

Notice to officials.

Giving and receiving.

Datta homam.

§ 141. The giving and receiving are absolutely necessary; they are the operative part of the ceremony, being that part of it which transfers the boy from one family into another (q). According to some authorities nothing else is so essential, that the want of it will absolutely invalidate an adoption. Even the *datta homam*, or oblation to fire, though a most important part of the rite in the case of the three higher classes, has been held to be a mere matter of unessential ceremonial (r). On this point, however, there

(m) Mitakshara, i. 11, § 13.

(n) V. May., iv. 5, § 8, 36—42; Dattaka Mimamsa, v. § 2, 42; Dattaka Chandrika, ii. See, too, 2 Stra. H. L. 218; Steele, 45.

(o) Baudhayana, ii. § 7—9; Journ. As. Soc. Bengal, 1866, art. Çaunaka Smṛiti.

(p) Suth. Syn. 667, 675; 1 N. C. 117; as to assent of Government, ante, § 122.

(q) Mahashoya Shosinath v. Srimati Krishna, 7 I. A. 250, S. C., 6 Cal. 381; Ranganayakamma v. Alwar Setti, 13 Mad. 214.

(r) Veerapermall v. Narrain Pillay, 1 N. C. 91, 117; 1 Stra. H. L. 95; 3 Dig. 244, 248; Singamma v. Venkatacharlu, 4 M. H. C. 165; per cur. Sootrogun

is a conflict of authority. The Dattaka Mimamsa, after reciting the ritual prescribed by Vasishtha and Çaunaka, both of which include the oblation to fire, says, "Therefore the filial relation of these five sons proceeds from adoption only with observance of the forms of either Vasishtha or Çaunaka; not otherwise" (s). And he winds up the chapter on the mode of adoption by saying, "It is, therefore, established that the filial relation of adopted sons is occasioned only by the (proper) ceremonies. Of gift, acceptance, a burnt sacrament, and so forth, should either be wanting, the filial relation even fails" (t). So the Dattaka Chandrika, after giving the ritual of Baudhayana for the followers of the Taittiri Veda, which also includes the *datta homam*, says, "In case no form, as propounded, should be observed, it will be declared that the adopted son is entitled to assets sufficient for his marriage" (u). A Madras Pandit says, *datta homam* is essential to Brahmans, but not to the other classes; and his opinion is stated to be correct by Mr. Colebrooke and Mr. Ellis (v). So Mr. Steele says, "Sudras cannot perform any ceremonies requiring *Muntras* from the Vedas" (w). Judging from these passages, it would certainly seem that the sacrifice to fire was essential to those classes for whom it was prescribed, and probable that it was not prescribed for the Sudras.

§ 142. After a good deal of conflict of decisions, it appears to be now settled that for Sudras, at all events, no religious ceremony is necessary; whether this applies to the superior classes seems to be still unsettled. In 1834 the Judicial Committee said, "Although neither written acknowledgments, nor the performance of any religious ceremonies, are essential to the validity of adoptions, such acknowledgments are usually given, and such ceremonies observed, and notices given of the times when adoptions are to take place,

v. *Sabitra*, 2 Kn. 290; 2 W. MacN. 199; 1 Gib. 93. See the native authorities cited, Jolly, § 159.

(s) Dattaka Mimamsa, v. 50.

(t) Dattaka Mimamsa, v. 56.

(u) Dattaka Chandrika, ii. 16, 17, vi. 3; 2 W. MacN., 198

(v) 2 Stra. H. L. 87—89.

(w) Steele, 46.

in all families of distinction, as those of Zemindars or opulent Brahmans ; so that wherever these have been omitted, it behoves the Court to regard with extreme suspicion the proof offered in support of an adoption" (x). It appears from the report of the case in Bengal that the parties were Brahmans. It was admitted that no religious ceremonies were performed. But both in the Sudder Court and in the Privy Council their absence was treated as merely a matter of evidence, and not as in itself invalidating the adoption. As a matter of fact both Courts found that the adoption had not taken place. In a much later case before the Privy Council, where a Sudra adoption was concerned, the High Court of Bengal had treated it as an open question whether or not a Sudra could be adopted without the performance of religious ceremonies, viz., the offering of burnt sacrifice and the like. On appeal, the Judicial Committee said, "In the case of *Streemutty Joymonee v. Streemutty Sibosoonderee* (Fult. 75), it was held by the Supreme Court in Calcutta that amongst Sudras no religious ceremony, except in the case of marriage, is necessary" (y). In the view taken of the case by their Lordships the point did not arise, and was not decided. The next time the point arose in Bengal between Sudras the High Court decided, on the authority of a passage in the Dattaka Nirnaya, cited in the Vayavastha Darpana, that the performance of the *datta homam* was essential to an adoption even amongst Sudras, and as no such ceremony had been performed in the particular case, held the adoption invalid (z). In a later case, however, which was also between Sudras, the Court professed to treat this decision as having gone upon the special facts, which it certainly had not done ; and drew a further distinction between the two cases, on the ground that "in the

Case of Sudras.

(x) *Sootroqun v. Sabitra*, 2 Kn. 287, 290 ; S. C. in the Sudder Adawlut, *Sub nomine, Sabitreea v. Suttur Ghun*, 2 S. D. 21 (26).

(y) *Sreenarain Mitter v. Sreemutty Kishen*, 11 B. L. R. (P. C.) 171, 187 ; S. C. 19 Suth. 133 ; S. C. I. A. Sup. Vol. 149 : in the High Court, 2 B. L. R. (A. C. J.) 279 ; S. C. 11 Suth. 196.

(z) *Bhairabnath v. Maheschandra*, 4 B. L. R. (A. C. J.) 162 ; S. C. 13 Suth. 168 cited and approved, *Sayamalak v. Saudamini*, 5 B. L. R. 366.



present case, the adopted son is a brother's son, a member of the same family, in regard to whom the mere giving and taking may be sufficient to give validity to the adoption" (a). Finally, the express point was referred to a Full Bench. It was then found that the passage in the Dattaka Nirnaya, which had formerly been relied upon as showing that a Sudra should adopt with the *datta homam*, proved exactly the opposite; an essential part of the passage having been omitted. The Court accordingly answered the question put by saying, "Amongst Sudras in Bengal no ceremonies are necessary in addition to the giving and taking of the child in adoption" (b).

§ 143. Whether the same rule holds good in the three superior classes is, of course, a different question. In Madras, it has been expressly decided that even among Brahmans the *datta homam*, or any other religious ceremony, is unnecessary (c). The same rule is certainly implied in the case in Knapp., cited in the last section, though not decided, and the opinion of Jagannatha is to the same effect (d). The ruling in the Madras case was affirmed in a later decision where the parties were Kshatrias (e). In a still later case, where the parties were Brahmans, the same Court doubted the authority of the ruling; but affirmed the adoption on the ground that the *datta homam* had in fact been performed, though at an interval of five years after the giving and receiving (f). In that case it would appear that the giving and receiving had been made with reference to a formal adoption to take place afterwards. This adoption, when it took place, was duly

Case of superior classes.

(a) *Nittianand v. Kishna Dyal*, 7 B. L. R. 1; S. C. 15 Suth. 300. As to the last point suggested, see *ante*, § 129.

(b) *Behari Lal v. Indramani*, 13 B. L. R. 401; S. C. 21 Suth. 285 *affd.* in P. C. *Sub nomine, Indromoni v. Behari Lall*, 7 I. A. 24; S. C. 5 Cal. 770, *acc. Dya-moyee v. Rasbeharee*, S. D. of 1852, 1001; *Perkash Chunder v. Dhunmonree*, S. D. of 1853, 96; *Alwar v. Ramasamy*, 2 Mad. Dec. 67; *Thangathanni v. Ramu Mudali*, 5 Mad. 358.

(c) *Singamma v. Venkatachurlu*, 4 Mad. H. C. 165; 1 Stra. H. L. 96; *contra*, 2 Stra. H. L. 131.

(d) 3 Dig. 244, 248.

(e) *Chandramala v. Muktamala*, 6 Mad. 20.

(f) *Venkata v. Subhadra*, 7 Mad. 548. See however the cases in § 144.

accompanied by the *datta homam*. It may be a question whether the decision would have been the same if the adoption had been completed without performing or intending to perform the *datta homam*, and that ceremony had been appended at a later period, *pro majori cautela*. In 1884 a case arose in which a Brahman had adopted a boy of the same *gotra* as himself without the *homam* ceremony. The Court seemed to treat the case of *Singamma v. Venkatacharlu* as of little weight, pointing out that it was not argued on both sides, and that Jagannatha, who was cited, was no authority in Southern India. They held that in this case the adoption was good, because both parties were of the same *gotra*, relying upon the authority of Mr. Ellis in 2 Strange's Hindu Law, p. 155 (g). Both in this case and in the later one of *Ranganayakamma v. Alwar Setti* (h) the Judges relied on the dictum of the Judicial Committee in *Mahashoya Shosinath v. Srimati Krishna* (i), where their Lordships say, "All that has been decided is that amongst Sudras no ceremonies are necessary in addition to the giving and taking of the child in adoption. The mode of giving and taking a child in adoption continues to stand as Hindu law and usage, and it is perfectly clear that amongst the twice-born classes there could be no such adoption by deed, because certain religious ceremonies, the *datta homam* in particular, are in their case requisite." So the pandits in two Bengal cases seem to have laid down that the *datta homam* was essential in the case of an adoption among the three superior classes (k), and the same statement was made very recently by Mr. Justice Mitter (l). It seems also to have been assumed that this was the general rule in a Bombay case. There it had been omitted in the case of an adoption of a brother's son. The pandits held the adoption nevertheless valid under a special text of

(g) *Govindayyar v. Dorasami*, 11 Mad. 5.

(h) 13 Mad. 214, 219.

(i) 7 I. A. 250, p. (256).

(k) *Alank Manjari v. Fakir Chand*, 5 S. D. 356 (418); *Bullubakant v. Kishenprea*, 6 S. D. 219 (270).

(l) *Luchmun v. Mohun*, 16 Suth. 179; see, too, *Thakoor Oomrao v. Thakooranee*, N. W. P., H. C. 1868, 103.

Yama. "It is not expressly required that burnt sacrifice and other ceremonies should be performed on adopting the son of a daughter, or of a brother, for it is accomplished in those cases by word of mouth alone" (m). In Allahabad, where a similar case arose among Dakhani Brahmans, the inclination of some of the members of the Court seems to have been to hold that no religious ceremonies were necessary. The decision, however, was limited to holding that when the boy was the son of a daughter or of a brother, a gift and acceptance was sufficient (n).

So far as it is possible to reconcile these conflicting decisions, they seem to point to the conclusion that, among the twice-born classes, the *datta homam* is necessary, unless the adopted boy is of the same *gotra* as his adopter, or unless a usage to the contrary can be established. In Madras there is also high authority for limiting the application of the rule to Brahmans.

§ 144. In any case it is quite clear that if the omission of the ceremonies has been intentional, with a view to leaving the adoption absolutely unfinished; or, if from death, or any other cause, a ceremony which had been intended has not been carried out, no change of condition will take place, even though the ceremonies which have been omitted might lawfully have been left out. Because the mutual assent, which is necessary to a valid and completed adoption, has never taken place (o). And even in cases where giving and receiving are sufficient, there must be an actual giving and receiving. A mere symbolical transfer by the exchange of deeds would not be sufficient

Intentional  
omission.

(m) *Huebut Rao v. Govindrao*, 2 Bor. 75, 87 [83]; Steele, 45. This is in accordance with many authorities cited by Dr. Jolly, § 159. See W. & B. 923, 1083. In *Ravji Vinayakrao v. Lakshminibai*, 11 Bom. 351, (393), the Court while not deciding the point, expressed a strong opinion that the *datta homam* was essential among Brahmans.

(n) *Ayima Ram v. Madho Rao*, 6 All. 276.

(o) 2 W. MacN. 197; *Isserchunder v. Rasbeharee*, S. D. of 1852, 1001; *Banee Pershad v. Moonshree Syud*, 25 Suth. 192.

(p) *Sreenarain Mitter v. Sreemutty Kishen*, 2 B. L. R. (A. C. J.) 279; S. C. 11 Suth. 196; *Mahashoya Shosinath v. Srimati Krishna*, 7 I. A. 250; S. C. 6 Cal. 381.

Punjab.

In the Punjab and among the Jains, no ceremonial whatever is required, the transaction being purely a matter of civil contract (q). Among the Moodelliars of Northern

Ceylon.

Ceylon the only ceremonial appears to be the drinking of saffron water by the adopting person (r).

Doctrine of  
*Factum valet.*

§ 144A. In many of the cases previously discussed, where it is necessary to admit that an adoption has been made in violation of a rule laid down by ancient authorities, an attempt has been made to support the adoption on the principle of *Factum valet quod fieri non debuit*. The existence of this rule in other districts than that of Bengal has been expressly affirmed by the Privy Council (s). The limits within which the rule can be applied have been much discussed in several cases in Bombay and in Allahabad. In the former Presidency it has been said of this rule "That its proper application must be limited to cases in which there is neither want of authority to give nor to accept, nor imperative interdiction of adoption. In cases in which the Shastra is merely directory and not mandatory, or only indicates particular persons as more eligible for adoption than others, the maxim may be usefully and properly applied, if the moral precept or recommended preference be disregarded" (t).

In an Allahabad case (u) where all the previous decisions were reviewed by *Mahmood*, J., he said, "In the case of adoption there are, of course, questions of formalities, ceremonies, preference, in the matter of selection, and other points which amount to moral and religious suggestions. Such matters, speaking generally, are dealt with in the texts in a directory manner, relating to what I may perhaps call the *modus operandi* of adoption. To such

---

(q) Punjab Customs, 82. Punjab Customary Law, III, 82. *Lakmi Chand v. Gatto Bai*, 8 All. 319.

(r) *Thesawaleme*, ii.

(s) *Uma Deyi v. Gokoolanund*, 5 I. A., p. 53. S. C. 3 Cal. p. 601.

(t) *Lakshmappa v. Ramava*, 12 Bom. H. Ct., p. 398, approved and followed; *per curiam*, 8 Bom. 293; 10 Bom., p. 86.

(u) *Ganga Sahai v. Lekhraj Singh*, 9 All. 253, pp. 296, 297.

matters, which do not affect the essence of the adoption, the doctrine of *factum valet* would undoubtedly apply upon general grounds of justice, equity and good conscience, and irrespective of the authority of any text in the Hindu law itself. There may, indeed be codes where the express letter of the texts renders that which in other systems be regarded as a matter of form, a matter of imperative mandate or prohibition affecting the very essence of the transaction.” “Adoption under the Hindu law being in the nature of gift, three main matters constitute its elements apart from questions of form. The capacity to give, the capacity to take; and the capacity to be the subject of adoption, seems to me to be matters essential to the validity of the transaction, and, as such, beyond the province of the doctrine of *factum valet*.

§ 144B. In accordance with these rules, the principle of *factum valet* has been held to be ineffectual where the son was given or received by a mother who was destitute of the necessary authority (*v*), or where the boy taken in adoption was one whose mother could not have been married by the adopting father (*w*). It has been held to be effectual where a preferential relation has been passed over in favour of the son of a stranger (*x*), or where the limit of age fixed by the Dattaka Mimamsa has been exceeded (*y*). On the other hand the above principles give no help in a case where it is possible to hold different views on the question, whether a particular direction is, or is not so imperative as to be of the essence of an adoption. For instance, not only different Courts, but the same Court at different times, have disagreed as to the applicability of the doctrine of *factum valet* in cases of the adoption of an only son (*z*), or of a member of the superior classes, where

Application of these rules.

*Rangabai v. Bhagirthibai*, 2 Bom. 377; *Narayan Babaji v. Nana Manohar*, Bom. H. C., A. C. 153.

(*w*) *Gopal Narhar v. Hanmant Ganesh*, 3 Bom. 273.

(*x*) *Uma Deyi v. Gokoolanund*, 5 I. A. 40; S. O. 3 Cal. 587.

(*y*) *Ganga Sahai v. Lekhraj Singh*, 9 All. 254. (\*) *Ante* §§ 131—138.



the prescribed religious ceremonies were omitted (a). Of course completely different considerations arise where a direct prohibition has been worn away by conflicting usage. Probably no Court except one governed by the authority of the Mayukha, and of the practices recognized by it, would give effect to the adoption of a married Brahman (b).

Presumption as to adoption.

§ 145. FIFTH, THE EVIDENCE OF AN ADOPTION.—There is no particular evidence required to prove an adoption. Those who rely on it must establish it like any other fact, whether they are plaintiffs, or defendants (c). In one respect they are in a favourable position ; that is in consequence of the peculiar religious views of Hindus. The probability is that a sonless Hindu will contemplate adoption ; and this probability is increased if he is advanced in years, or sickly ; if he has property to leave behind, as regards which he would naturally wish for a lineal successor ; and still more if, from family dissensions, the person who would otherwise be his successor is a person whom he would not be likely to desire. In countries governed by the Mitakshara law the further circumstance would arise that his widow, supposing him to leave one, would be dependent for her maintenance on a collateral, perhaps a distant, member of the family. If, therefore, he was on affectionate terms with her, he would naturally wish to leave her in the more advantageous position of mother and guardian of an adopted son (d). Similarly, an opposite state of things, such as the youth of the adopting father, the probability of his having issue by his wife, or the like, would render the fact of the adoption unlikely (e). No writing is necessary ; though, of course,

Writing.

(a) Ante § 143. (b) *Dharma Dagu v. Ramkrishna Chimnaji*, 10 Bom. 80.

(c) *Tarini Charan v. Saroda Sundari*, 3 B. L. R. (A. C. J.) 146 ; S. O. 11 Suth. 468 ; *Hur Dyal Nag v. Roy Krishno*, 24 Suth. 107.

(d) 1 Hyde, 249 ; *Huradhun v. Muthoranath*, 4 M. l. A. 414 ; S. O. 7 Suth. (P. C.) 71 ; where the P. C. reversed concurrent decisions of the Lower Courts, finding against the adoption ; *Soondur Koomaree v. Gudadhur*, 7 M. l. A. 64 ; S. O. 4 Suth. (P. C.) 116 ; *Raghunadha v. Brozo Kishoro*, 8 l. A. 177 ; S. O. 1 Mad. 69 ; S. C. 25 Suth. 291. See as to force of presumption in favour of adoption, per Mitter, J., *Rajendro Narain v. Saroda*, 15 Suth. 548. *Harman Chull Singh v. Koomar Gunsheam*, 2 Kn., p. 220.

(e) *Mt. Sabitreea v. Suttur Ghun*, 2 S. D. 21 (26) ; affirmed, 2 Kn. 287.

in case of a large property, or of a person of high position, the absence of a writing would be a circumstance which would call for strict scrutiny, and for strong evidence of the actual fact (*f*). Nor is it even in all cases necessary to produce direct evidence of the fact of the adoption; where it has taken place long since, and where the adopted son has been treated as such by the members of the family and in public transactions, every presumption will be made that every circumstance has taken place which is necessary to account for such a state of things as is proved, or admitted, to exist (*g*).

§ 146. It has been held that a decision in favour of an adoption, in a suit in which it was in dispute, is *primâ facie* evidence of the fact of the adoption, even as against persons who were no parties to the suit (*h*). It has even been held that a valid regular judgment of a competent Court upon the status of an alleged adopted son is a judgment *in rem*, which is binding and conclusive as against the whole world, unless fraud, or collusion, can be made out; and that a summary adjudication of the same nature, though not conclusive, is *primâ facie* evidence of the facts adjudicated upon, sufficient to throw the burthen of disproving the same upon the opposite party (*i*). But this doctrine is now over-ruled. The binding character of judgments of the Courts of India upon questions of personal status was exhaustively examined by Mr. Justice *Holloway* in a Madras case, where a decree upon a question of division was relied upon as a judgment *in rem* (*k*), and later in a Bengal case, where the point decided in 3 Suth. 14, was referred to a Full Bench. It had been held upon the authority of that decision, where a

Effect of res  
judicata.

Not a judgment  
in rem.

(*f*) 2 Kn. 290; *Ondy Kadarom v. Aroonachella*, Mad. Dec. of 1857, p. 53.

(*g*) *Perkash Chunder v. Dhunmonnee*, S.D. of 1853, 96; *Nittianand v. Krishna Dyal*, 7 B. L. R. 1; S. C. 15 Suth. 300; *Rajendro Nath v. Jogendro Nath*, 14 M. I. A. 67; S. C. 15 Suth. (P. C.) 41; *Hur Dyal v. Roy Krishto*, 24 Suth. 107; *Sabo Bewa v. Nuboghun*, 11 Suth. 380; S. O. 2 B. L. R. Appx. 51.

(*h*) *Seetaram v. Juggobundoo*, 2 Suth. 168.

(*i*) *Kistomonee v. Coll. of Moorshedabad*, S. D. of 1859, 550; *Rajkristo v. Kishoree*, 3 Suth. 14.

(*k*) *Yarakalamma v. Anakala*, 2 Mad. H. C. 276. See also *Gopalayyan v. Raghupati Aiyyan*, 3 Mad. H. C. 217.

reversioner had brought a suit against a widow as heiress, to set aside alienations by her, and to establish his title as reversioner, and the Court had found that her husband had been adopted, and therefore that the plaintiff was next heir, that this finding was conclusive against a person who was no party to that suit, and who denied the adoption. *Peacock*, C. J., after referring to Mr. Justice *Holloway's* judgment, said, "I concur with him entirely in the conclusion at which he arrived; *viz.*, that a decision by a competent Court that a Hindu family was joint and undivided, or upon a question of legitimacy, adoption, partibility of property, rule of descent in a particular family, or upon any other question of the same nature in a suit *inter partes*, or, more properly speaking, in an action in *personam*, is not a judgment *in rem* or binding upon strangers, or, in other words, upon persons who were neither parties to the suit nor privies. I would go further, and say that a decree in such a case is not, and ought not to be, admissible at all as evidence against strangers" (1).

Important as  
evidence.

But though the decree itself might neither be conclusive, nor admissible, as evidence, the proceeding in which the decree took place might be very important. For instance, when the fact of any adoption at all having taken place was in dispute, it would be most important to show that the alleged adopted son had put forward his title as owner of, or interested in, the property, by preferring or defending suits, or proceedings in the revenue or Magisterial Courts, relating to the property; just as his failing to do so would be important the other way. Again if those who now denied his title were shown to have been cognisant of, or to have joined him in, such transactions, the evidence would be still stronger in his favour.

---

(1) *Kanhya v. Radha Churn*, 7 Suth. 338; S. O. B. L. R. Sup. Vol. 662; followed in *Jogendro Deb v. Funindro*, 14 M. I. A. 367; S. C. 11 B. I. R. 244; S. C. 17 Suth. 104; *Katama Nachiar v. Rajah of Shivagunga*, 9 M. I. A. 539; S. C. 2 Suth. (P. C.) 31; *Jumona Dassya v. Bamasoonderai*, 8 I. A. 72, 84; S. C. 1 Cal. 520

§ 147. Lapse of time may operate in two ways. *First*, Lapse of time, as strengthening the probability of an adoption. *Secondly*, as barring any attempt to set it aside. In the first case it goes to show that the adoption was valid ; in the second case, it prevents the results which would follow from holding that it was invalid.

*First*, it is evident that where a length of time has elapsed since an alleged adoption, and that adoption has been treated by the family, and by the society in which the family moves, as a valid and subsisting one, this is in itself strong evidence of the opinion of those acquainted with the facts that everything had taken place necessary to a valid adoption. It is like that repute which is always so much relied on in cases of disputed marriage, or legitimacy (m). But it is evident that the force of the testimony lies in repute prevailing through a long period of time, not upon the time itself. If, therefore, it appears that the adoption was kept a secret, or that being asserted on one side it was simply ignored on the other, and that no action was ever taken upon it, nor any course of treatment pursued in respect to the alleged adopted son, different from that which would have prevailed if no adoption had been set up, then there is no repute, and the longer the time during which such a state of things lasts the greater is the evidence against the adoption.

*Secondly*, such repute can have no effect whatever when the admitted facts show that there has been no valid adoption ; e.g., in the case of the adoption of a sister's son by a Brahman, or of a son by a man who had one living. But there might be facts, or a course of dealing which, though they could not render the adoption valid, would prevent certain persons from disputing it. A bar of this sort would arise in two ways : 1, by way of estoppel ; 2, by way of the Statute of Limitations.

Where adoption  
admittedly in-  
valid.

(m) *Rajendro Nath v. Jojendro Nath*, 14 M. I. A. 67 ; S. C. 15 Suth. (P. C.) 41 ; S. O. 7 B. L. R. 216 ; *Anandray Sivaji v. Ganesh Eshvant*, 7 Bom. H. C. Appx. 38.



Effect of acquiescence.

§ 148. FIRST.—A merely passive acquiescence by one person in an infringement of his rights by another person, or in an assertion of an adverse right by another person, will not prevent the former from afterwards maintaining his own strictly legal right in a Court of law, provided he does so within the period of limitation fixed by the law. The reason is that the law gives him a specified period during which he may, if he choose, submit with impunity to an encroachment on his rights, and there is nothing inequitable in his availing himself of this period. But it is different if his acquiescence amounts to an active consent to conduct on the part of another of which he might justly complain. If by his own behaviour he encourages another to believe that he has not the right which he really possesses, or that he has waived that right; or if by representations, or acts, he induces another to enter upon a course which he would not otherwise have entered on, or leads him to believe that he may enter on that course with safety, then he will not afterwards be allowed to assert any rights which are inconsistent with, or infringed upon by, that new state of things which he himself has been influential in bringing about. And this is equally so whether the right he is asserting is a legal, or an equitable, right. For it would be unjust that after he had by his own conduct induced another to alter his position, he should afterwards be allowed to complain of the very thing which he had himself brought about (*n*). This doctrine has been applied in India to cases of invalid adoption. In one, the adoption, being that of a sister's son by a Brahman, was held to be absolutely invalid. In another, in Western India, being the case of a Brahman adopted after *upanayana* and marriage, the Court declined to decide the question of invalidity. In both cases they were of opinion that the objecting

(*n*) *Rama Rau v. Raja Rau*, 2 Mad. H. C. 114; *Peddammuthulaty v. N. Timma Reddy*, *ib.* 270; *Rajan v. Basuva Chetti*, *ib.* 428, where the English cases are examined, and the distinction between legal and equitable rights and the mode in which they are barred, is pointed out; *Taruck Chunder v. Huro Sunkur*, 22 Suth. 267. Indian Evidence Act, § 115.



party was estopped from disputing the adoption, since he had himself not only acquiesced in it, but in one case had encouraged it, and concurred in it, at the time it took place ; and in another had, by treating the adopted son as a member of the family, induced him to abandon the right in his natural family which he might otherwise have claimed (o). In a later case, however, the High Court of Madras, while admitting the general principle, limited its application to instances where one party had knowingly and intentionally produced upon the mind of the other a false belief as to some definite fact. Where all parties erroneously believed a particular adoption to be valid, no estoppel arose which would prevent a person claiming under the adopter from impugning its validity (p). The application of this doctrine when so limited is peculiarly just in cases of adoption. Even if the invalidity of the adoption was such that the person adopted was not legally excluded from his natural family, he would necessarily be driven to legal proceedings to effect his return into it ; he might be met by the Statute of Limitations, and so completely defeated ; or might find that from change of circumstances his position, when restored to his natural family, was very different from what it would have been if he had never left it (q). It must, however, be remembered that estoppel is purely personal, and that it cannot affect any one who claims by an independent title, and who is not bound by the acts of the person estopped (r).

§ 149. SECONDLY.—The Statute of Limitations will also

Statute of Limitations :

---

(o) *Gopalayyan v. Raghupatiayyan*, 7 Mad. H. C. 250 ; *Sadashiv v. Hari Moreshtar*, 11 Bom. H. C. 190 ; *Ravji Venayakrav v. Lakshmibai*, 11 Bom. 381, 396 ; *Pillari Setti v. Rama Lakshmama*, Mad. Dec. of 1860, 92 ; *Appuayyan v. Rama Subbaiyan*, Mad. Dec. of 1860, 54. See *Sukhbasi v. Guman*, 2 All. 366 ; where it is not clear whether the Court meant to lay down that a valid adoption once made could not be cancelled, or that a person, who had once deliberately made an adoption, was estopped from asserting that it was originally invalid.

(p) *Vishnu v. Krishnan*, 7 Mad. 3.

(q) See *per cur.*, *Rajendro Nath v. Jojendro Nath*, 14 M. I. A. 77 ; S. C. 15 Suth. (P. C.) 41 ; S. C. 7 B. L. R. 216.

(r) *Lala Parbhu Lal v. Mylne*, 14 Cal. 401.

be a bar in some cases to an attempt to set aside a disputed adoption ; that is, it will bar a suit to recover property held under colour of an adoption. The important question here will be, from what time does the statute run ? The answer will be, from the time the party seeking to set it aside is injuriously affected by it. Where a person would be entitled to immediate possession, but for the intervention of one claiming as adopted son, of course the statute must run at the very latest from the time at which the title to possession accrues ; because from this time, at all events, the possession of the adopted son must be adverse. But there are cases of greater difficulty, where an adopted son is in possession, but the person whose rights would be affected by the adoption is a reversioner, who is not entitled to immediate possession. An instance of this sort is the case of an adoption by a widow who is in as heir to her husband.

time from which  
it runs.

§ 150. On this point there was a direct conflict of authority. In several cases previous to 1869 it was held that the statute ran from the time at which the adopted son was put in possession as such, with the cognisance of those whose rights would be affected by his adoption, and in such a public manner as to call upon them to defend their rights (s). The whole series of authorities, however, was reviewed in a case which was referred to the decision of the Full Bench of the High Court of Bengal. There the ancestor died leaving a widow, who adopted in 1824, and survived him till 1861. In 1866 the suit was commenced by the daughter's son of the ancestor, who claimed the property, alleging that the adoption was invalid. It was admitted that the adopted son and his son, the then defendant, had been in possession by virtue of the adoption since 1824. The plaintiff's suit was dismissed as barred by limitation. But this decision was reversed by the Full Bench, who held that the statute did not begin to run till the death of the

---

(s) *Bhyrub Chunder v. Kalee Kishwur*, S. D. of 1850, 369, followed in various other cases which were examined in the one next cited.

widow (t). That decision was given under the Limitation Act XIV of 1859. Act IX of 1871, Sched. II, contained the following provision Art. 129 : " To establish or set aside an adoption—twelve years from the date of the adoption, or (at the option of the plaintiff) the date of the death of the adoptive father." A suit was brought to recover property held adversely to the claimant by a person who had been admittedly adopted by the widow of the last male holder. Much more than 12 years had elapsed since the death of the husband, or since the adoption, but much less since the death of the widow. The adopted son had admittedly been placed in open adverse possession more than 12 years before suit and had been recognized by the plaintiffs themselves as legally in possession in such capacity. The plaintiffs contended that they were entitled to sue for possession within 12 years of the death of the widow, exactly as if she had made an alienation to the defendant. The latter contended that the suit was barred under Art. 129, inasmuch as the plaintiff could not recover without setting aside the adoption, and in fact the only issue recorded was as to its validity. The Judicial Committee, reversing the judgment of the Bengal High Court, held that the suit was barred, as the expression to " set aside an adoption" had been for many years applied in the ordinary language of Indian lawyers to proceedings which bring the validity of an alleged adoption under question, and applied indiscriminately to suits for possession of land and to suits of a declaratory nature. The present Limitation Act XV of 1877, § 118 provides a period of six years for a suit " to obtain a declaration that an alleged adoption is invalid, or never in fact took place," the statute to run from the time " when the alleged adoption became known to the plaintiff." Their Lordships declined to say whether the alteration of language in the later Act denoted a change of policy, or how much change of law it affected. They proceeded, however, to express themselves strongly

---

(t) *Srinath Gangopadhyaya v. Mahes Chandra*, 4 B. L. R. (F. B.) 8 S. C. 12 Suth. (F. B.) 14 Sub *Nomine*, *Sreenath Gangooly v. Mohesh Chunder*.

against the probability that the same statute would apply two different periods of limitation for a suit declaring the invalidity of an adoption, and a suit to recover possession of land founded on such invalidity. Should the same question arise under the new statute, the argument that a similar construction is to be placed upon it will be at least a plausible one (*u*). The Allahabad High Court, however, has recently expressed its opinion that § 118 of Act XV of 1877 only applied to suits for a declaration of right, and that suits for possession of property were governed by a different period of limitation (*v*), and a similar decision has been still more recently given by the High Court of Calcutta (*w*).

Creates rights  
not status.

§ 151. It may be necessary to remark that neither the law of Estoppel nor the Statute of Limitations can make a person an adopted son if he is not one. They can secure him in the possession of certain rights, which would be his if he were adopted, by shutting the mouths of particular people, if they propose to deny his adoption; or, by stopping short any suit which might be brought to eject him from his position as adopted. But if it becomes necessary for the person who alleges himself to have been adopted, to prefer a suit to enforce rights of which he is not in possession, he would be compelled strictly to prove the validity of his adoption, as against all persons but the special individuals who were precluded from disputing it.

Results of adoption.

§ 152. SIXTH.—THE RESULT OF ADOPTION may be stated generally to be, that it transfers the adopted son out of his natural family into the adopting family, so far as regards all rights of inheritance, and the duties and obligations connected therewith. But it does not obliterate the tie of blood, or the disabilities arising from it. Therefore, an adopted son is just as much incapacitated from marrying

(*u*) *Jagadamba Chowdhurani v. Dakhina Mohun*, 13 I. A. 84, 94,—explaining *Raj Bahadur v. Achumbit Lal*, 6 I. A. 110; *per curiam*, 11 Bom. p. 396.

(*v*) *Basdeo v. Gopal*, 8 All. 644.

(*w*) *Lala Parbhu Lal v. Mylne*, 14 Cal. 401.



in his natural family as if he had never left it. Nor can he himself adopt a person out of his natural family, whom he could not have adopted if he had remained in it.

Questions of inheritance arise, *first* ; where there is only an adopted son : *secondly* ; where there is also legitimate issue of the adoptive father. Under the first head, succession is either to the paternal line, lineally or collaterally, or to the maternal line.

§ 153. Where there is only an adopted son, properly constituted, he is beyond all doubt entitled to inherit to his adoptive father, and to the father and grandfather and other more distant lineal ancestors, of such adoptive father, just as if he was his natural-born son (*x*). But there has been considerable discussion as to whether he was entitled to inherit to collaterals. A reference to the table of sonship (*y*) will show that eight of the fourteen authorities referred to place the adopted son beyond the sixth in number. Now, all of these say that the first six sons inherit to the father, and to collaterals ; the last six only to the father. From this it is argued by those who rely on the eight, that he only succeeds lineally ; by those who rely on the remaining six, that he inherits collaterally also. The real fact, of course, is that the two sets of authorities represent different historical periods of the law of adoption ; the former relating to a period when the adopted son had not obtained the full rights which he was recognized as possessing at a later period. The Dattaka Chandrikâ as usual tries to make all the passages harmonise by saying : “ In the same manner the doctrine of one holy saint that the son given is an heir to kinsmen—and that of another that he is not such heir—are to be reconciled by referring to the distinction of his being endowed with good qualities

Lineal succession.

Collateral succession.

(*x*) Dattaka Mimamsa, vi. § 3, 8 ; Dattaka Chandrikâ, v. § 25, iii. § 20 ; *Gourbullub v. Juggenoth*, F. MacN. 159. *Mokundo v. Bykunt*, 1 Cal. 289. Sir F. MacNaghten was of opinion that an adopted son in Bengal was even in a better position than a natural-born son, as having an indefeasible right to his father's estate, which a natural-born son would not have. F. MacN. 157, 228. *Sed quære?*

(*y*) *Ante*, § 66.



or otherwise," and concludes the controversy by saying, that wherever a legitimate son would succeed to the estate of a brother or other kinsmen, the adopted son will succeed in the absence of such legitimate son (z). The Mitakshara follows Manu, who places the adopted among the first class of sons, and, of course, makes him a general and not merely a special heir, while it explains away the conflicting texts as being founded on the difference of good and bad qualities (a). The Daya Bhaga on the other hand follows Devala, who has been supposed to make the adopted son only heir to his father, and not to collaterals (b). But it seems that is a misapprehension. Devala no doubt enumerates the different sons so as to bring in the adopted son as ninth. But then he goes on, "These twelve sons have been propounded for the purpose of offspring, being sons begotten by a man himself, or procreated by another man, or received for adoption, or voluntarily given. Among these the first six are heirs of kinsmen, and the other six inherit only from the father." Now, if the words "the first six" refer, not to the original enumeration, but to the new arrangement by classes, the adopted son comes within the first six (c) Jagannatha, after appearing to rest the claim of an adopted son to collateral succession upon endowment with transcendent good qualities, finally states the present practice to be "for a son given in adoption, who performs the acts prescribed to his class, to take the inheritance of his paternal uncles and the rest" (d). This is also the opinion of Sir F. MacNaghten, of Mr. W. MacNaghten, of Sir Thomas Strange, and of Mr. Sutherland (e). The right has also been affirmed by express decision. In two cases, the right of an adopted son to succeed to another adopted son was declared (f). In other cases, the adopted son was held en-

(z) Dattaka Chandrika, v. § 22—24.

(a) Mitakshara, i. 11, § 30—34.

(b) Daya Bhaga, x. § 7, 8.

(c) See D. Bh. x. 7, note, *per curiam*; *Puddo Kumaree v. Juggut Kishore*, 5 Cal. 630.

(d) 3 Dig. 270, 272; F. MacN. 162.

(e) F. MacN. 128, 132; 1 W. MacN. 78; 2 W. MacN. 187; 1 Stra. H. L. 97; 2 Stra. H. L. 116; Surh. Syn. 668, 677.

(f) *Shamchunder v. Narayni*, 1 S. D. 209 (279); affirmed 3 Kn. 55. (So much of this decision as allowed a second adoption to take place during the life

titled to share an estate of his adoptive father's brother (g). In a later case, the adoptive son was held entitled to share in the property of one who was first cousin to his grandfather by adoption. And he takes exactly the same share as a legitimate son, when he is sharing with all other heirs than the legitimate son of his adoptive father (h). And so do his descendants, whether male or female (i). In the latest case upon the point, the right of an adopted son was maintained to succeed to all his adoptive father's sapindas, whether the latter were related to the former through males only or through females (k).

§ 154. Another question as to which there was, till lately, a singular conflict of opinion, is as to the right of an adopted son to succeed to the family of his adoptive father's wife, or wives. *Primâ facie* one would imagine that he must necessarily do so. The theory of adoption is that it makes the son adopted to all intents and purposes the son of his father, as completely as if he had begotten him in lawful wedlock. The lawful son of a father is the son of all his wives, and would, therefore, I presume, be the heir of all or any of them (l). And so it has been laid down that a son adopted by one wife becomes the son of all, and succeeds to the property of all (m). The same result must follow where the son is adopted, not by the wife, but by the man himself. The authors of the Dattaka Chandrika and Dattaka Mimamsa seems to lay the point down with the most perfect clearness. The former states that "where there may be a diversity of

Succession *ex-parte maternâ.*

Native writers.

---

of the first adopted son must be taken as bad. But a note states that it was considered as settling the right of an adopted son to inherit from the collaterals of his adoptive father.) *Gourhurree v. Mt. Rutnasuree*, 6 S. D. 203 (250); *Joy Chundro v. Bhyrub Chundro*, S. D. of 1849, 461. See also the Judgment of *Hobhouse, J.*, in the Full Bench case of *Guru Gobind v. Anand Lal*, 5 B. L. R. 15; S. C. 13 Suth. (F. B.) 49.

(g) *Lokenath v. Shamasoonduree*, S. D. of 1858, 1863; *Kishenath v. Hurreegobind*, S. D. of 1859, 18; *Gooroopershad v. Rasbehary*, S. D. of 1860, i. 411.

(h) *Taramohun v. Kripa Moyee*, 9 Suth. 423.

(i) S. D. of 1858, 1863; of 1859, 18.

(k) *Puddo Kumaree v. Juggut Kishore*, 5 Cal. 615 affd. *Sub nomine Pudma Coomari v. Ct. of Wards*, in P. C. 8 I. A. 229.

(l) *Manu*, ix. § 183; *Dattaka Mimamsa*, ii. § 69; *Dattaka Chandrika*, i. § 23—26.

(m) *Teencowree v. Dinonath*, 3 Suth. 49.

mothers, the sires of the natural mothers are first designated by a son, who is son to two fathers, at the funeral repast in honour of the maternal grandsires ; subsequently the sires of her who is the adoptive mother. But the absolutely adopted son presents oblations to the father and to the other ancestors of his adoptive mother only ; for he is capable of performing the funeral rites of that mother only" (n). And the latter says, "The forefathers of the adoptive mother only are also the maternal grandsires of sons given and the rest ; for the rule regarding the paternal is equally applicable to the maternal grandsires of adopted sons (o) ; and in an earlier chapter (I. § 22) Nanda Pandita says, "In consequence of the superiority of the husband, by his mere act of adoption, the filiation of the adopted, as son of the wife, is complete in the same manner as her property in any other thing accepted by her husband." So Mr. Sutherland states as the effect of these passages that—"He likewise represents the real legitimate son in relationship to his adoptive mother, whose ancestors are his maternal grandsires" (p). To the same effect is a futwah recorded by Mr. MacNaghten, where the adopted son of a sister was held to be an heir to that sister's brother, that is to say, he inherited to his adoptive mother's family (q). On the other hand Mr. W. MacNaghten himself decides against the right of an adopted son to succeed to property, which the wife of the adopting father had received from her relations. For this he refers to a case in Bengal, where he says the point was determined (r). This, however, was a mistake, as has been repeatedly pointed out. There was no decision of the Sudder Court such as Mr. MacNaghten supposed, but there was an unnecessary opinion of the pandits, which itself rested only upon an irrelevant text of the Daya Bhaga. Upon this supposed decision, however, to express rulings, negating the right of the adopted son to succeed to property *ex parte maternâ*, were subse-

Decisions.

(n) Dattaka Chandrika, iii. § 16, 17.

(o) Dattaka Mimamsa, vi. § 50—52.

(p) Suth. Syn. 668.

(q) 2 W. MacN. 88.

(r) 1 W. MacN. 78, citing *Gunga Mya v. Kishen Kishore*, 8 S. D. 128 (170).

quently given in Bengal and in Madras (s). Yet, in direct conflict with the only principle which could have justified such a decision, it was settled that the next-of-kin of an adoptive mother would be the heirs of her adopted son (t), and that an adopted son would succeed to the *stridhanum* of his adoptive mother (u). Finally it was decided by the Allahabad High Court, that an adopted son had all the rights of a natural-born son in the maternal line as well as in the paternal line, and would therefore succeed to property which his adoptive mother had inherited from her father (v). This decision was followed by the High Court of Bengal in a case where the plaintiff claimed property which had devolved upon the son of A, by virtue of his adoption by the daughter of A. In their judgment the former Bengal decision and that which followed it in Madras were formally over-ruled, and the general principle laid down by the Allahabad High Court was approved and adopted to the fullest extent. This ruling was supported on appeal by the Judicial Committee, and has finally settled a controversy which had lasted for upwards of eighty years (w). In conformity with it, the adopted son of a daughter has been held to share equally with the natural-born son of another daughter the inheritance left by his maternal grandfather (x).

§ 155. Cases where a legitimate and an adopted son exist together can only occur lawfully where a legitimate son has been born after an adoption. The adoption of a son by one who had male issue would be absolutely invalid (§ 97), and the son so adopted would be entitled to no share whatever. It may be suggested, on the authority of a text ascribed to Manu, that he would be entitled to have his marriage ceremony performed, which I suppose includes maintenance

After-born  
legitimate son.

(s) *Marun Moe v. Bejoy*, Suth. Sp. No. 121; *Chinna Ramakristna v. Minatchi*, 7 Mad. H. C. 245.

(t) *Gunga Persad v. Brojessaree*, S. D. of 1859, 1091.

(u) *Teen Cowrie v. Dinonath*, 3 Suth. 49, and so laid down by the Pandits in Bombay, W. & B. 513.

(v) *Sham Kuar v. Gaya*, 1 All. 256.

(w) *Uma Sunker v. Kali Komul*, 6 Cal. 256. *Affd.* 10 I.A. 138, S.C. 10 Cal. 232.

(x) *Surjokant Nundi v. Mohesh Chunder*, 9 Cal. 70.



Share of adopted son.

Madras.

Bombay.

also. But the text, if in force at all at present, seems to me to relate rather to informal than to wholly invalid adoptions, which would create no change of status (*y*). Where, however, a legitimate son is born after an adoption, which was valid when it took place, the latter is entitled to share along with the legitimate son, taking a portion which is sometimes spoken of as being one-fourth, and sometimes as being one-third of that of the after-born son (*z*). Dr. Wilson says that the variance is only apparent, and that all the texts mean the same thing, *viz.*, that the property should be divided into four shares, of which the adopted son gets one. That is to say, he gets one-fourth of the whole, or one-third of the portion of the natural-born son (*a*). Whatever may have been the original meaning of the texts, a difference of usage seems to have sprung up, according to which the adopted son takes one-third of the whole in Bengal, and one-fourth of the whole in other Provinces which follow Benares law (*b*). The Madras High Court, however, have decided on the authority of the *Sarasvati-Vilasa*, that the fourth which he is to take is not a fourth of the whole, but a fourth of the share taken by the legitimate son. Consequently, the estate would be divided into five shares, of which he would take one, and the legitimate son the remainder. A similar construction has been put upon the texts in Bombay (*c*). Nanda Pandita suggests a further explanation, that he is to take a quarter share; *i.e.*, a fourth of what he would have taken as a legitimate son, that is to say a fourth of one-half, or one-eighth (*d*). Where there are several after-born sons, of course the shares will vary according to the principle adopted. Supposing there were two legitimate sons, then, upon the principle laid down by Mr. MacNaghten, the estate would be divided into seven shares in Benares, and into five

(*y*) Dattaka Mimamsa, vi. § 1, 2; Dattaka Chandrika, vi. § 3.

(*z*) Dattaka Mimamsa, x. § 1; Dattaka Chandrika, v. § 16, 17; Mitakshara, i. 11, § 24, 25; Daya Bhaga, x. § 9; 3 Dig. 154, 179, 290; V. May., iv. 5, § 25; 2 W. MacN. 184.

(*a*) Wilson's Works, v. 52.

(*b*) D. K. S. vii. § 23; 1 W. MacN. 70; 2 W. MacN. 184; F. MacN. 137; *Taramohun v. Kripa Moyee*, 9 Suth. 423; 1 Stra. H. L. 99.

(*c*) *Ayyaru v. Niladatchi*, 1 Mad. H. C. 45; W. & B. 373.

(*d*) Dattaka Mimamsa, v. § 40; Suth. Syn. 678.

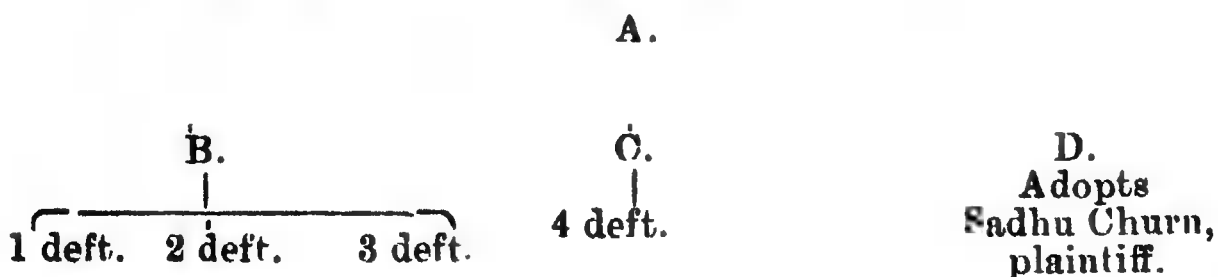


shares in Bengal. According to the *Sarasvati-Vilasa* it would be divided into nine shares, the adopted son taking one share in each case. According to Nanda Pandita he would take one-twelfth (*e*). Among various castes in Western India the rights of the adopted son vary from one-half, one-third, and one-fourth, to next to nothing, the adoptive father being at liberty, on the birth of a legitimate son, to give him a present and turn him adrift (*f*).

According to a text of Vridhdha Gautama, an adopted and an after-born son share equally. This text is said in the *Dattaka Chandrika* to apply only to Sudras, and in the *Dattaka Mimamsa* it is explained away altogether, as referring to an after-born son destitute of good qualities. The High Court of Madras, following Mr. W. MacNaghten and Sir Thomas Strange, say it is in force among all Sudras in Southern India, and M. Gibelin says it is the rule among all classes in Pondicherry. It is the rule still in Northern Ceylon. Baboo Shamachurn says that in Bengal this rule only applies to the lower class of Sudras (*g*).

§ 156. A curious question, as to which there has been a decision in Calcutta (*h*), is, whether the inferiority of an adopted son for purposes of inheritance is limited to the case of the subsequent birth of natural sons to the adopting father, or whether it applies also for the benefit of the brothers of such adopting father and their issue. In the particular case the pedigree was as follows :—

Rights of adopted son on partition with collaterals.



The family was governed by Mitakshara law. The

(*e*) F. MacN. 151; 1 MacN. 70; Jolly, Lect. 182. (*f*) Steele, 47, 186.  
 (*g*) *Dattaka Mimamsa*, v. § 43; *Dattaka Chandrika*, v. § 32; 1 Stra. H. L. 99; 1 W. MacN. 70, n.; 1 Gib. 82; *Thesawaleme*, ii. § 2; V. Darp., 979. *Raja v. Subbaraya*, 7 Mad. 253. A son-in-law affiliated in the *Illatom* form, which is in use in some of the Telugu speaking districts of Madras takes an equal share with a natural-born son *Hanumantamma v. Rami Reddi*, 4 Mad. 272.  
 (*h*) *Raghubanand Doss v. Sadhu Churn*, 4 Cal. 425.

plaintiff sued for a partition after the deaths of A, B, C, and D. In the Original and Appellate Courts the only points taken were to establish that he was not entitled to any share. The defendants being defeated in this contention urged an appeal to the High Court that his share would not be one-third but one-sixth. The High Court affirmed this view, relying upon the *Datta Chandrika V. 24 & 25*. *Markby, J.*, pointed out that Mr. Sutherland's translation of § 24 omitted some lines, and that the two sections really ran as follows:—"24. 'Therefore by the same relationship of brother and so forth, in virtue of which the real legitimate son would succeed to the estate of a brother or other kinsman, *the adopted son of the same description obtains his due share. And in the event of the ancestor having other sons, a grandson by adoption whose father is dead obtains the share of an adopted son.* Where such son may not exist, the adopted son takes the whole estate even.' The words in italics are omitted by Mr. Sutherland.

"There is no dispute between the parties to this appeal that this emendation of Mr. Sutherland's translation ought to be made.

"Paragraph 25 is as follows:—"Since it is a restrictive rule that a grandson succeeds to the appropriate share of his own father, the son given, where his adopter is the real legitimate son of the paternal grandfather, is entitled to an equal share even with a paternal uncle, who is also such description of son: therefore a grandson who is an adopted son may (in all cases) inherit an equal share even with an uncle. This must not be alleged (as a general rule). For there would be this discrepancy where the father of the grandson were an adopted son, he would receive a fourth share: but the grandson, if he were such son (of him) would receive an equal share (with an uncle in the heritage of the grandfather) and accordingly, whatever share may be established by law for a father of the same description as himself,

to such appropriate share of his father does the individual in question (*viz.*, the adopted son of one adopted) succeed. Thus, what had been advanced only is correct. The same rule is to be applied by inference to the great-grandson also.' The words, *viz.*, 'the adopted son of one adopted' do not occur in the original. But even if we strike out these words, and take the two paragraphs according to their more correct version, they clearly enunciate that, upon partition, an adopted son and the adopted son of a natural son stand exactly in the same position, and that each takes only the share proper for an adopted son,—*i.e.*, half of the share which he would have taken had he been a natural son."

The learned Judge then proceeded to deal with the objection, that under Mitakshara law the plaintiff's adoptive father D acquired by birth a vested interest in one-third of the estate, and that the whole of this interest descended to the plaintiff by right of representation. This he answered by pointing out (p. 430), that under Mitakshara law no definite share vested in any member of the family so long as it remained joint, and that the share of each must be determined by the state of the family, and the position of each individual member at the time of partition. If then the sole adopted son of a natural-born son was only entitled to half the share that a natural-born son of the same father would have been entitled to, it made no difference that his father, if he had sought for a partition earlier, would have obtained twice that share, and that the whole share so obtained would have descended to him. It came back again to the same question, what were his own personal rights at the time of partition.

§ 157. The text of Vasishttha upon which all the authorities rely is as follows (XV. 9) "when a son has been adopted, if a legitimate son be afterwards born, the given son shares a fourth part." To which the author of the Dattaka Mimamsa adds (X. 1) "on the default of him

Case discussed.

he is entitled to the whole." That is to say, to the whole of the property of his adoptive parent. This is quite intelligible. An adopted son is a substitute for a natural-son, and cannot come legally into existence if there is a natural son. But a man may adopt under the belief that he will never have a natural son, and find himself mistaken. Then justice is done by giving a larger share to the natural son, and a smaller to the son who would never have been adopted, if it could have been foreseen how matters would really have turned out. But is there anything in the wording or principle of the rule to suggest that a person who has become by adoption the sole son of his adopter shall have his rights in the family diminished, because other legitimate sons have been born, not to his adopter but to the brothers of that adopter? It is admitted that no authority can be found for such a position in the text of Vasishtha itself, or in any commentary except that of the Datta Chandrika as cited. But the latter seems to me to bear a very different interpretation. The clauses 24 and 25 relate to the general rights of all adopted sons, not to the special position of an adopted son where there are after-born legitimate sons of his adoptive parent. The author is commenting not only on the text of Vasishtha, but on texts of Manu and others, some of which lay down that an adopted son only inherits to lineals, others that he inherits to lineals and collaterals also. He reconciles these by the usual formula that a son with good qualities is meant in the latter case (§ 153). It seems to me that § 24 merely states the general principle that, however distant from the common ancestor, an adopted son has the full rights of an adopted son as such; not merely of an adopted son who is driven to share with legitimate sons. The commencement of § 25 lays down explicitly that the adopted son of one natural son inherits equally with the natural born brother of such son. Then the author meets the question whether every grandson by adoption would inherit in the same manner. To this he answers, not necessarily. If an adopted son himself adopted, then his son could take no

more than himself; *i.e.*, if there were legitimate sons along with the first adopted son he himself would only take one-fourth, and therefore his son by adoption could take no more. Or as the *Smriti Chandrika* expresses it "the individual in question (an assumed grandson by adoption) will only take whatever share may be established for a father of the same description as himself" (a son by adoption). What share that is would depend upon whether legitimate sons were afterwards born to the first adopting father or common ancestor. If there were, he would only take one-fourth, and his son, whether natural or adopted, could take no more.

§ 158. When the legitimate and adopted son survive the father, and then the legitimate son dies without issue, it has been held in Madras that the adopted son takes the whole property by survivorship (*i*). Of Course, it would be different in Bengal, if the legitimate son left a widow, daughter, &c. Survivorship.

§ 159. By adoption the boy is completely removed from his natural family as regards all civil rights or obligations. He ceases to perform funeral ceremonies for those of his family for whom he would otherwise have offered oblations, and he loses all rights of inheritance as completely as if he had never been born (*k*). And, conversely, his natural family cannot inherit from him (*l*), nor is he liable for their debts (*m*). Of course, however, if the adopter was already a relation of the adoptee, the latter by adoption would simply alter his degree of relationship, and, as the son of his Removal from natural family.

(i) 1 Mad. H. C. 49, note.

(k) Manu, ix. 142; Dattaka Mimamsa, vi. § 6—8; Dattaka Chandrika, ii. § 18—20; Mitakshara, i. 11, § 32; V. May., iv. 5, § 21. See *contra*, 1 Gib. 95, as to Pondicherry. In parts of the Punjab the rights of the adopted son in his natural family take effect if his natural father dies without leaving legitimate sons. Punjab Customary Law, III. 83. A son-in-law, affiliated by the Custom of *Illatom* which prevails among some classes of Sudras in Madras, does not lose his rights in his natural family. *Balarani v. Pera*, 6 Mad. 267; *Hanumantamma v. Rami Reddi*, 4 Mad. 272.

(l) 1 W. MacN. 69; *Kayan v. Kuppanayyengar*, 1 Mad. H. C. 180.

(m) *Pranvullubh v. Deocristin*, Bom. Sel. Rep. 4; *Kasheepershad v. Bunsee-dhur*, 4 N.-W. P. (S. D.) 348.



adopting father, would become the relative of his natural parents, and in this way mutual rights of inheritance might still exist. The rule is merely that he loses the rights which he possessed, *quâ* natural son. And the tie of blood, with its attendant disabilities, is never extinguished. Therefore, he cannot after adoption marry any one whom he could not have married before adoption (*n*). Nor can he adopt out of his own natural family a person whom, by reason of relationship, he could not have adopted had he remained in it (*o*). He is equally incompetent to marry within his adoptive family within the forbidden degrees (*p*).

Case of son of  
two fathers.

§ 160. An exception to the rule that adoption severs a son from his natural family exists in the case of what is called a *dwyamushyayana*, or son of two fathers. This term has a two-fold acceptation. Originally it appears to have been applied to a son who was begotten by one man upon the wife of another, but for and on behalf of that other. He was held to be entitled to inherit in both families, and was bound to perform the funeral oblations of both his actual and his fictitious fathers (*q*). This is the meaning in which the term is used in the Mitakshara, but sons of this class are now obsolete (*r*). Another meaning is that of a son who has been adopted with an express or implied understanding that he is to be the son of both fathers. This again seems to take place under different circumstances. One is what is called the *Anitya*, or temporary adoption, where the boy is taken from a different *gotra*, after the tonsure has been performed in his natural family. He performs the ceremonies of both fathers, and inherits in both families, but *his* son returns to his original *gotra* (*s*). This form of adoption seems now to be obsolete. At all

(*n*) Dattaka Mimamsa, vi. § 10; Dattaka Chandrika, iv. § 8; V. May., iv. 5, § 30.

(*o*) *Moottia Moodelly v. Uppon*, Mad. Dec. of 1858, p. 117.

(*p*) Dattaka Mimamsa, vi. § 25, 38.

(*q*) Baudhayana, ii. 2, § 12; Narada, 13, § 23; Dattaka Chandrika, ii. § 35.

(*r*) Mitakshara, i. 10; 2 Stra. H. L. 82, 118.

(*s*) 2 Stra. H. L. 120; 1 W. MacN. 71. See futwah of Pandits in *Shumshere v. Dilraj*, 2 S. D. 169 (216); Dattaka Mimamsa, vi. § 41—43; Dattaka Chandrika, ii. § 37.

events I know of no decided case affirming its existence. Another case is that of an adoption by one brother of the son of another brother. He is already for certain purpose considered to be the son of his uncle. When he is the only son, the law appears to reconcile the conflicting principles that a man should not give away his only son, and that a brother's son should be adopted, by allowing the adoption, but requiring the boy so adopted to perform the ceremonies of both fathers, and admitting him to inherit to both in the absence of legitimate issue. It is stated by Mr. *Strange* in his Manual that the *dwyamushyayana* in this sense also is obsolete. And so it was laid down in one Madras case. But the weight of authority in opposition to that statement seems to be overwhelming (*t*). Among the Nambudri Brahmans of the West Coast (§ 42) the *dwyamushyayana* form prevails generally without any special circumstances, as the ordinary incident of an adoption (*u*).

§ 161. Where a legitimate son is born to the natural father of a *dwyamushyayana*, subsequently to the adoption, the latter takes half the share of the former ; if, however, the legitimate son is born to the adopting father, the adopted son takes half the share which is prescribed by law for an adopted son, exclusively related to his adoptive father, where legitimate issue may be subsequently born to that person (*v*), that is half of one-fourth or one-third, according to the doctrines of different schools (§ 155). The Mayukha, however, seems only to allow him to inherit in the adoptive family, if there are legitimate sons subsequently born in both, and then gives him the share usual in such a case where the adoption has been in the ordinary form, that is, one-fourth or one-third (*w*). It lays down no

After-born son.

(*t*) Stra. Man. § 99 ; Mad. Dec. of 1859, p. 81 ; Dattaka Chandrika, v. § 33 ; V. May, iv. 5, § 22, 25 ; Dattaka Mimamsa, vi. § 34—36, 47, 48. And see authorities cited *ante*, § 132. Mr. V. N. Mandlik says that whatever the theory may be, such adoptions are in practice obsolete, p. 506. In the N.-W. Provinces adoptions of this character are said to be very common, Jolly, Lect. 166.

(*u*) 11 Mad. 167, 178.

(*v*) Dattaka Chandrika, v. § 33, 34.

(*w*) V. May., iv. 5, § 25.

rule for the case of legitimate sons arising in one family only.

Origin of rule.

§ 162. It is probable that the rule which deprived an adopted son of the right to inherit in his natural family, originated, not from any fiction of a change of paternity, but simply from an equitable idea, that one who had been sent to seek his fortunes in another family, and whose services were lost to the family in which he was born, ought not to inherit in both. This is the view taken of the matter in the Punjab, where it is said that if the natural father dies without heirs, the village custom would be in favour of the child's double succession (*x*). In Pondicherry, a boy, notwithstanding adoption, preserves his rights of inheritance in his natural family, if he has not found a sufficient fortune in his acquired family, and in all cases if his natural father and brothers have died without issue. This doctrine, however, is based not upon any special usage, but upon the view which the French jurists have taken of the Hindu texts (*y*). The *Thesawaleme* merely states that "an adopted child, being thus brought up and instituted as an heir, loses all claim to the inheritance of his own parents, as he is no longer considered to belong to that family, so that he may not inherit from them." It is not stated whether his right would revive if there were no heirs in his natural family. But he only forfeits rights to the extent to which he acquires others; therefore, if his adoption is only by the husband, he continues to inherit to his natural mother; if it is only by the wife, he continues to inherit to his natural father (*z*).

Effect of an invalid adoption.

§ 163. A question of very great importance, which seems plain enough in theory, but which appears to be still unsettled, is as to the effect of an invalid adoption. *Primâ facie* one would imagine that it would confer no rights in the adoptive family, and take away no rights in the natural

(*x*) Punjab Cust., 81. Punjab Customary Law, III.

(*y*) 1 Gib. 95, citing Dattaka Mimamsa, i. § 31, 33; vi. § 9; Mitakshara, i. 10, § 1 note, § 32, note.

(*z*) Thesawaleme, ii. § 2.

family. The claim to enforce rights in the former family, or to resist them in the latter, must depend upon a change of *status*, and if the adoption, upon which such change depended, were invalid, it would seem as if no change could have taken place. But there certainly is much authority the other way. I have already (§ 126) noticed the texts which award maintenance to a son adopted out of an inferior class, and suggested that they are merely a survival from a time when such adoptions were in fact valid, though less efficacious than others (a). A text is also ascribed to Manu which lays down that "He who adopts a son without observing the rules ordained, should make him a participator of the rites of marriage, not a sharer of wealth." This text seems to be interpreted as applying to a person who makes an adoption without observing the proper forms (b). Sir Thomas Strange\* cites these texts, as establishing that a person may be adopted under circumstances which will deprive him of his rights in one family, without entitling him to more than maintenance in the other. But he questions the proposition in a note, and refers to Mr. Sutherland as being of opinion that if the adoption were void, the natural rights would remain (c). In one old case the pandits of the Sudr Court of Madras laid it down, that an adoption of a married man over thirty years of age, and with three children, was invalid, but that he was entitled to maintenance in the family of his adopting father. The proposition was cited before the High Court, and approved of. The approval, however, was extra-judicial, as the High Court considered that, they were bound by former decrees to treat the adoption as valid, and actually awarded the plaintiff his full rights as adopted son (d). In a later case, where a boy had been adopted by a widow without any authority, it was held that the adoption was wholly invalid, and gave the boy no right to maintenance. The Court said: "in reason and

Madras.

(a) See *per cur.* *Bawani v. Ambabay*, 1 Mad. II C. 367.

(b) *Dattaka Mimamsa*, v. § 45; *Dattaka Chandrika*, ii. § 17; vi. § 3.

(c) 1 Stra. H. L. 82.

(d) *Ayyavu v. Niladatchi*, 1 Mad. II. C. 45.



good sense it would hardly seem a matter of doubt that where no valid adoption, in others words, no adoption, has taken place, no claim of right in respect of the legal relationship of adoption can properly be enforced at law." The Court also expressed their opinion that the natural rights of the plaintiff remained quite unaffected (e).

Bengal.

§ 164. In Bengal the case has twice arisen incidentally, though in neither instance in such a manner as to require a decision. In the first case, which was before the Supreme Court, *Colville*, C.J., said, "It has been said on one side and denied on the other (neither side producing either evidence or authority in support of their contention) that a *Dattaka*, or son given, would forfeit the right to inherit to his natural father, even though he might not, for want of sufficient power, have been duly adopted into the other family. This proposition seems to be contrary to reason, but for all that may be very good Hindu law. But from the enquiries we have made, we believe the true state of the law on the subject to be this. There may undoubtedly be cases in which a person, whose adoption proves invalid, may have forfeited his right to be regarded as a member of his natural family. In such a case some of the old texts speak of him as a slave, entitled only to maintenance in the family into which he was imperfectly adopted. But one very learned person has assured me, that the impossibility of returning to his natural family depends, not on the mere gift or even acceptance of a son, but on the degree in which the ceremonies of adoption have been performed; and that there is a difference in this respect between Brahmans and Sudras. A Brahman being unable to return to his natural family if he has received the Brahmanical thread in the other family; the Sudra, if not validly adopted, being able to return to his natural family at any time before his marriage in the other family.

Depends on performance of ceremonies.

---

(e) *Bawani v. Ambabai*, 1 Mad. H. C. 363. Approved by *Westropp*, C. J. *Lakshmappa v. Ramara*, 12 Bom. H. C., p. 897.



Even if it be granted that a person, merely because he is a *Dattaka*, or son given, apart from the performance of any further ceremony, becomes incapable of returning to his natural family, that rule would not govern the case of an adoption that was invalid because the widow had not power to adopt. For to constitute a *Dattaka*, there must be both gift and acceptance. A widow cannot accept a son for her husband unless she is duly empowered to do so, and, therefore, her want of authority, if it invalidates the adoption, also invalidates the gift" (f).

§ 165. In the above passage, the words "ceremonies Rule suggested.  
*after* adoption" ought apparently to be substituted for the words "ceremonies *of* adoption." The principle of the rule suggested seems to be, that a man cannot take his place in his natural family unless the essential ceremonies have been performed in it, and that if performed in a wrong family, they cannot be performed over again in the right one. But that where no such ceremonies have followed upon the adoption, he can return, if there has not been a valid giving and receiving. Where there has been a valid giving and receiving, then, apparently, he could not return, even though, in consequence of some other defect, the adoption may have been so far invalid, as not to invest the person taken with the full privileges of an adopted son.

§ 166. In the other Bengal case, the Court refused to enforce specific performance of a contract to give a boy in adoption in consideration of an annuity. They said that this would be a *Kritaka* adoption which is now invalid, therefore that the contract, "if it were capable of being carried out, and were recognized by the Court, would involve an injury to the person and property of the adopted son, inasmuch as if it could be proved that the boy was purchased and not given, it is very probable that the adoption would be set aside; and if such adoption were set aside,

---

(f) *Sreemutty Rajcoomaree v. Nobocoomar*, 1 Boul., 137; S. C. Sevest., 641, note.

he would not only lose his status in the family of his adopting father, but also lose his right of inheritance to his natural parents" (g). In this case there would have been a complete giving and acceptance. But if the mode of doing so had ceased to be lawful, it is difficult to see how there could be a valid giving and acceptance, any more than if the son had been a self-given or a castaway. It may be suggested whether the whole theory of imperfect adoptions is not a relic of the times when some sorts of adoption were falling into disfavour, though still practised and permitted. The view taken by the Madras High Court, that an adoption must either be effectual for all purposes, or a nullity, has the merit of being practical and intelligible, while doing substantial justice to all parties.

Validity of gift  
to a person  
whose adoption  
is invalid.

§ 167. The validity of an adoption often becomes material as determining the validity of a gift or of a bequest. Suppose a gift made to a person who is believed to be an adopted son, but whose adoption turns out to be invalid; is the gift to fail or to stand good? The answer to this question does not depend upon any special doctrine of Hindu law, but upon general principles applicable to all similar cases. Where a gift is bestowed upon a person who is described as possessing a particular character or relationship, the gift may be to him absolutely as an individual, the addition of his supposed character or relationship being simply a matter of description. In this case, if the identification is complete the gift prevails, though the description is incorrect. For instance a bequest to Charles Millar Standen and Caroline Elizabeth Standen, legitimate son and daughter of Charles Standen. It appeared that they were really illegitimate, but their claim was supported (h). So where a will was to this effect, "I declare that I give my property to *Koibullo* whom I have adopted. My wives shall perform the ceremonies according to the Shastras and

(g) *Eshan Kishor v. Haris Chandra*, 13 B. L. R., Appx. 42; S. C. 21 Suth. 381.  
(h) *Standen v. Standen*, 2 Ves. Jun. 589.

bring him up." Then followed a clause showing that no other adoption was to be made till after his death. It was held in the Privy Council that even if the widows never performed the contemplated ceremonies, or performed them ineffectually, the bequest was valid (*i*). So a foster child, that is, one who has been taken into the family of another, nurtured, educated, married and put forward in life as his son, but without the performance of an actual adoption, does not obtain any rights of inheritance thereby (*k*). But a gift made to such a person by his foster-father, if in other respects valid, will not be made void, merely because he was under the mistaken belief that the foster-son would be able to perform his funeral obsequies (*l*).

§ 168. Again a gift may be made to a person who is supposed to possess some special relationship, in such a manner that the existence of the relationship is a condition precedent to the coming into operation of the gift, or is an essential limitation as determining the person who is to benefit by it. Here if the relationship does not exist the gift cannot take effect. A Hindu made an adoption under circumstances which were held not to justify him in making any adoption. At the same time he executed in favour of the boy so adopted an *angikar-patra*, which, after reciting the adoption, provided as follows: "I authorize you by this *angikar-patra* to offer oblations of water and pinda to me and my ancestors after my death, by virtue of your being my adopted son. Moreover you shall become the proprietor of all the movable and immovable properties which I own and which I may leave behind." The Judicial Committee held that the gift failed with the adoption, as it was evidently the intention of the donor to give his property to the boy as his adopted son, capable of inheriting by the adoption (*m*). So where a testator left an annuity to his

Gift to a supposed relation, as such.

(*i*) *Nidhoomoni Debya v. Saroda Pershad*, 3 I. A. 253; S. O. 26 Suth. 91.

(*k*) 2 Stra. H. L. 111, 113; Steele, 184; *Bhimana v. Tayappa*, Mad. Dec. of 1861, 124.

(*l*) *Abhachari v. Ramachendrayya*, 1 Mad. H. C. 393.

(*m*) *Fanindra Deb v. Rajeswar Dass*, 12 I. A. 72; S. C. 11 Cal. 463; *Doorga*

wife, "So long as she shall continue my widow and unmarried." After the date of the will, and before his death she obtained a divorce *ab initio* on the ground of nullity of marriage. It was held that she could not take the annuity, as it was only capable of being held by a person who occupied the position of widow of the testator (*n*).

Where relationship is a motive, but not the essence of the gift.

§ 169. An intermediate state of things is where the supposed character of the donee is the motive, but not necessarily the only motive, for the disposition in his favour. If a man makes a gift to one whom he erroneously supposes to be his son or his wife, he does so, partly because it is his duty to provide for such near relations, partly because feelings of affection have arisen in reference to them. Here the gift will be valid though the relationship never existed; *à fortiori* if the relationship had existed at the time the gift was made, though it had ceased before the gift came into effect (*o*). Where however "a legacy is given to a person under a particular character which he has falsely assumed, and which alone can be assumed to be the motive for the bounty, the law will not permit him to avail himself of it, and therefore he cannot demand the legacy." Hence a bequest to a person who had fraudulently induced the testator to contract a bigamous marriage with him or her, the testator being ignorant of the facts, is invalid (*p*).

Adoption by widow :

§ 170. The case of an adoption made by a widow to her husband, after her husband's death, raises special considerations, owing to the double fact that the person adopted has in general a better title than the person in possession, while on the other hand the title of the person so in pos-

---

*Sundari v. Surendra Keshar*, 12 Cal. 686. *Karsandas v. Ladkavahu*, 12 Bom. 185. *Shamavahoo v. Dwarkadas*, ib. 202; *Patel Vandrayan Jekisan v. Manilal*, 15 Bom. p. 573.

(*n*) In re *Boddington*, 22 Ch. D. 597, *affd.*, 25 Ch. D. 685.

(*o*) Re *Boddington* *ub. sup.* *Bullnore v. Wynter*, 22 Ch. D. 619; *Wilkinson v. Joughin*, 2 Eq. 319. See however, re *Morrisson*, 40 Ch. D. 30.

(*p*) Per Lord Cottenham, 5 Myl. & Cr. 150, following *Kennel v. Abbott*, Ves. 802; *Wilkinson v. Joughin*, *ub. sup.*



session has been a perfectly valid title up to the date of adoption. Questions of this sort arise in two ways. *First*, with regard to title to an estate; *secondary*, with regard to the validity of acts done between the date of the husband's death and the date of adoption.

§ 171. It has already been pointed out (*q*) that a widow with authority to adopt cannot be compelled to act upon it unless she likes. Consequently, the vesting of the inheritance cannot be suspended until she exercises her right. Immediately upon her husband's death it passes to the next heir, whether that heir be herself or some other person, and that heir takes with as full rights as if no such power to adopt existed, subject only to the possibility of his estate being divested by the exercise of that power. But as soon as the power is exercised, the adopted son stands exactly in the same position as if he had been born to his adoptive father, and his title relates back to the death of his father to this extent, that he will divest the estate of any person in possession of the property of that father to whom he would have had a preferable title, if he had been in existence at his adoptive father's death. One of the most common cases is an adoption by a widow, who is herself heir to her husband. The result of such an adoption is that her limited estate as widow at once ceases. The adopted son at once becomes full heir to the property; the widow's rights are reduced to a claim for maintenance; and if, as would generally happen, the adopted son is a minor, she will continue to hold as his guardian in trust for him (*r*). Where there are several widows, holding jointly, one who has authority from her husband to adopt would, of course, by exercising it, divest both her own estate and that of her co-widows. And in the Mahratta country, where no authority is required,

its effect.

Divests estate of widow;

(*q*) *Ante*, § 107.

(*r*) *Dhurm Das Pandey v. Mt. Shama Soondri*, 3 M. I. A. 229; S. C. 6 Suth. (P. C.) 48. Of course, the adopted son does not take any of the property which is held by the widow as her *Stridhana*, W. & B. 1174. The Court in awarding the property to the adopted son will take all necessary steps for determining and securing the maintenance of the widow. *Vrandivandas v. Yamunabai*, 12 Bom. H. C. 229; *Jamnabai v. Raychand*, 12 Bom. 225.



it is held that the elder widow may of her own accord adopt, and thereby destroy the estate of the younger widow, without obtaining her consent. The Court said, "It would seem to be unjust to allow the elder widow to defeat the interest of the younger by an adoption against her wish. But, on the other hand, if the adoption is regarded as the performance of a religious duty and a meritorious act, to which the assent of the husband is to be implied wherever he has not forbidden it, it would seem that the younger widow is bound to give her consent, being entitled to a due provision for her maintenance, and if she refuses, the elder widow may adopt without it" (s). It was not decided, but it seems to be an inference from the language of the Court, that they did not think the junior widow would have had the same right. Of course, an adoption would *à fortiori* divest all estates which follow that of the widow, such as the right of a daughter, or a daughter's son (t).

or of inferior  
heir.

§ 172. An adoption will equally divest the estate of one who takes before the widow, provided he would take after the son. For instance, where, in the Madras Presidency, an undivided brother succeeded to an impartible Zemindary in Berhampore, on the decease of his brother, the last holder, it was held that his estate was divested by an adoption made by the widow of the latter after his death, and under his authority (u). On the other hand, if the estate has once vested in a person who would have had a preferable title to that of a natural-born son, an adoption will not defeat his title or that of his successor, whether male

Estate of pre-  
ferable heir not  
divested.

---

(s) *Rukhmabai v. Radhabai*, 5 Bom H. C. (A. C. J.) 181, 192. *Per curiam*, 18 Cal. p. 74. See *post* § 177.

(t) *Ramkishan v. Mt. Sri Mutee*, 3 S. D. 367 (489).

(u) *Raghunadha v. Brozo Kishoro*, 3 I. A. 154; S. C. 1 Mad. 69; S. C. 25 Suth. 291. The facts of this case seem to have been misunderstood by the High Court of Bengal, in *Kally Prosonno v. Gocool Chunder*, *post*, § 179, where they say (2 Cal. 309), "The property in dispute in that case was not a joint family property, and the surviving members of the joint family unjustly took possession of it, by excluding the widow of the owner, who was entitled by the Mitakshara law to succeed to it." The property was joint though impartible, and it was admitted that, as the brothers were undivided, the widow had no right to anything beyond maintenance. *Surendra Nandan v. Sailaja*, 18 Cal. 385, p. 393; *Mondakini v. Adinath Dey*, *ib.* 69; *Chandra v. Gojrabai*, 14 Bom. 463.

or female, unless the successor be herself the widow who makes the adoption. Both branches of this rule are illustrated by decisions of the Privy Council. In the first case, Gour Kishore, a Zemindar in Bengal, died leaving a widow Chundrabullee, and a son, Bhowanee. Previous to his death he executed a document whereby he directed his wife to adopt a son in the event of failure of her own issue. Bhowanee succeeded to the Zemindary, married, came to full age and died, leaving no issue, but a widow, Bhoobun Moyee. Chundrabullee then adopted Ram Kishore under her authority. He sued the widow of Bhowanee for the estate. It will be remembered that under the law of Bengal a widow is the heir of her husband, dying without issue, even though he has an undivided brother. The Judicial Committee held that the plaintiff's suit must be dismissed, since his adoption gave him no title that was valid against Bhowanee's widow. They said, "In this case Bhowanee Kishore had lived to an age which enabled him to perform, and it is to be presumed that he had performed, all the religious services which a son could perform for a father. He had succeeded to the ancestral property as heir: he had full power of disposition over it; he might have alienated it: he might have adopted a son to succeed to it if he had no male issue of his body. He could have defeated every intention which his father entertained with respect to the property. On the death of Bhowanee Kishore, his wife succeeded as heir to him, and would have equally succeeded in that character in exclusion of his brothers, if he had had any. She took a vested estate, as his widow, in the whole of his property. It would be singular if a brother of Bhowanee Kishore, made such by adoption, could take from his widow the whole of his property when a natural-born brother could have taken no part. If Ram Kishore is to take any of the ancestral property, he must take all he takes by substitution for the natural-born son, and not jointly with him. Whether under his testamentary power of disposition Gour Kishore could have restricted the interest of Bhowanee in his estate to a

Chundrabullee's case.

life interest, or could have limited it over (if his son left no issue male, or such issue male failed) to an adopted son of his own, it is not necessary to consider ; it is sufficient to say that he has neither done, nor attempted to do, this. The question is, whether, the estate of his son being unlimited, and that son having married and left a widow his heir, and that heir having acquired a vested estate in her husband's property as widow, a new heir can be substituted by adoption, who is to defeat that estate, and take as an adopted son what a legitimate son of Gour Kishore would not have taken. This seems contrary to all reason, and to all the principles of Hindu law, as far as we can collect them. It must be recollected that the adopted son, as such, takes by inheritance and not by devise. Now the rule of Hindu law is, that in the case of inheritance, the person to succeed must be the heir of the last full owner. In this case Bhowanee Kishore was the last full owner, and his wife succeeds, as his heir, to a widow's estate. On her death the person to succeed will again be the heir at the death of Bhowanee Kishore. If Bhowanee Kishore had died unmarried, his mother, Chundrabullee would have been his heir, and the question of adoption would have stood on quite different grounds. By exercising the power of adoption, she would have divested no estate but her own, and this would have brought the case within the ordinary rule ; but no case has been produced, no decision has been cited from the text books, and no principle has been stated, to show that by the mere gift of a power of adoption to a widow, the estate of the heir of a deceased son, vested in possession, can be defeated or divested" (v).

Unless heiress is  
adopting widow.

Guntur case.

§ 173. The case suggested by their Lordships at the close of the above quotation, was the case which actually came before them for decision in 1876. There a Zemindar in Guntur in the Madras Presidency died, leaving a widow, an infant son, and daughters. The son was placed in

---

(v) *Bhoobun Moyee v. Ram Kishore*, 10 M. J. A. 279, 310 ; S. C. 3 Suth. (P. C.) 15.

possession, but died a minor, and unmarried. His mother was then placed in possession, and adopted a son, without any authority from her deceased husband, but with the consent of all the husband's sapindas. This was before the decision in the *Ramnaad* case (§ 109), and the Government refused to recognize the adoption, and the adopted son was never put in possession. On the death of the mother, the Collector placed the daughters in possession, apparently treating the heirship as one which had still to be traced to their father, the last full-aged Zemindar. The Madras High Court treated the adoption as invalid, on grounds which have been already discussed. On appeal, the Privy Council maintained the adoption, and the right of the adopted son to take as heir. They held that in the Madras Presidency the consent of the sapindas was as efficacious for the purpose of enabling a widow to adopt in lieu of a son who had died without issue, as it admittedly was where there never had been issue at all. As to the effect of the adoption they proceeded to say, "If, then, there had been a written authority to the widow to adopt, the fact of the descent being cast would have made no difference, unless the case fell within the authority of that of *Chundrabullee*, reported in 10 Moore, in which it was decided, that the son having died leaving a widow in whom the inheritance had vested, the mother could not defeat the estate which had so become vested by making an adoption, though in pursuance of a written authority from her husband. That authority does not govern the present case, in which the adoption is made in derogation of the adoptive mother's estates; and indeed expressly recognizes the distinction" (w).

§ 174. Both in *Chundrabullee's* case and in the *Guntur* case just cited, it seems to have been assumed by the Judicial Committee, that an adoption made by a woman on

Whether an adoption by a mother devests her estate?

---

(w) *Vellanki v. Venkata Rama*, 4 I. A. 1; S. C. 1 Mad. 174; S. C. 25 Suth. 21, *Boicunt Money v. Kishen Soonder*, 7 Suth. 392.



behalf of her deceased husband would always divest her own estate, whether she held as widow of the person to whom she adopted, or as mother of the son of that person. But in a more recent appeal before the Privy Council, it was suggested that there might be a difference in that respect between the two cases. In the former case, the adoption produces a son who takes as heir to his own father, and as such heir is prior to the widow. But in the latter case the adoption produces a son who is brother to the last male holder, and it is to the last male holder that descent is traced. Now a mother ranks before a brother as heir to her own son. Why then should he destroy her estate? If the adoption could be treated as relating back to the life of the deceased, then it would have given him an undivided brother, who would take by survivorship in preference to the mother. But it would seem that no such fiction is now admitted, (§ 181). In the particular instance it was unnecessary to decide the point, but it is well worthy of attention (x). When the adoption in Chundrabullee's case came again before the High Court of Bengal, the Judges seemed to think that the son so adopted would only take in his proper place and order after the mother (y). In a still later case the High Court of Bombay treated the Guntur case as evidencing the opinion of the Judicial Committee, that an adoption by a mother would divest her estate, and ruled in accordance with that opinion (z).

Principle of  
above cases.

Cases in which  
estate will not  
be divested.

§ 175. It will be observed that in both the Madras cases, in which the right of the adopted son was affirmed by the Privy Council, the property had descended lineally from the person to whom the adoption was made. In the Berhampore case (§ 172), the last male holder was the person to whom the adoption was made. In the Guntur case (§ 173), there had been an intermediate descent to his own

(x) *Ramasawmy v. Venkatramien*, 6 I. A. 196, 208.

(y) *Puddo Kumaree v. Juggut Kishore*, 5 Cal. 615, 644; reversed on another point, 8 I. A. 229.

(z) *Jamnabai v. Raychand*, 7 Bom. 225; followed, *Ravji Vinayakrav v. Laksh-mibai*, 11 Bom. 881, 897.



son, and on his death without issue the Zemindary had reverted to the person making the adoption, who was at once his mother and his father's widow. Two different cases, however, have arisen. *First*, where the property has descended to A. the son of B. to whom the adoption is made, as in the Guntur case, but has passed at his death to a person different from the widow who makes the adoption. *Secondly*, where the property has descended from A., and the adoption has been made to B., a collateral relation of A. Let it be assumed that the adopted son of B. would in each case have been the heir to A., if he had been adopted previously to the death of A. The question arises, whether, if he is adopted subsequently to the death, he will divest the estate of the person who has taken as heir of A. It has been held that he will not.

§ 176. The first point was decided in a Madras case. Madras decision. There N. had died, leaving a widow the first defendant, and a son, Sitappah, by another wife. Sitappah died unmarried, and thereupon his stepmother, the first defendant, adopted Munisawmy, who was the son of one Bali. Bali sued as guardian of his son to establish the adoption. Its validity was conceded by the High Court. It seems to have been admitted in argument that the first defendant, as stepmother, was not the heir of Sitappah, and that Bali was his heir. Upon this the High Court held that the adoption conveyed no title to the property. They said, "Even if it be considered that N.'s widow possessed or acquired in 1870 (the date of Sitappah's death) power to adopt a son to her husband, it has to be determined whether, according to Hindu law, any adoption could then be lawfully made by her. The principle of the decision of the Privy Council in the case reported in 10 Moore's Indian Appeals, 279, (*ante*, § 172) appears to us to govern this case, and show that it could not. Chinna Sitappah had inherited his father's property; "He had full power of disposition over it; he might have alienated it; he might have adopted a son to succeed to it, if he had no male issue of his body. He

could have defeated every intention which his father entertained with respect to the property." On the death of Chinna Sitappah, the next heir, it is here admitted, was Bali Reddy, who is the natural father of the minor plaintiff, and who has also other sons. The inheritance having passed in 1870 to Bali Reddy, still remains in him; and we must hold upon the authority cited, that the estate of the deceased son, thus vested in possession, cannot be defeated and divested" (a)

Bombay  
decision.

second point arose both in Bombay and in Bengal. In the Bombay case the facts were as follows:—

A.

Anandram  
= Sarjabai,  
| adopts  
Badridas.

Sobharam  
= Rakhmabai.

Anandram and Sobharam were undivided brothers, who died leaving widows but no male issue. Anandram died first, therefore his whole interest passed to Sobharam, and on the death of the latter the entire property vested in his widow Rakhmabai. After the death of Sobharam, Sarjabai, widow of Anandram, adopted a son. Thereupon a creditor raised the question, whether he took the estate of Sobharam. It was argued that the case in 10 M. I. A. 279 (*ante*, § 172) established that an adoption can never be held valid, which has the effect of divesting an estate once vested. Upon that however *Melville*, J. remarked, "In that case A claimed, by virtue of adoption, an estate which B. had inherited from C. Even if A had been a natural-born son, B. and not A. would have been the heir of C.; and it was held that under such circumstances A. could not defeat B.'s estate. There would seem to be no room for doubt on this point, and the decision in that case certainly does not

---

(a) *Annamah v. Mabbu Bali Reddy*, 8 Mad. H. C., 108; followed, *Doobomoyee v. Shama Churn*, 12 Cal. 246; *Keshar Ramkrishna v. Govind Ganesh*, 9 Bom. Chandra v. Gojraba, 14 Bom. 468.

support the argument (which is moreover at variance with the decision in *Rakhmabai v. Radhabai*) (b), that an adoption can in no case operate to defeat an interest once vested." The same Judge, however, expressed a strong opinion that the adoption would not be valid on the ground suggested by the Judicial Committee in the *Ramnaad* case (c). He summarised their views as follows :—"In other words, when the estate is vested in the widow, she may adopt without the consent of reversioners, but when the estate is vested in persons other than the widow, and the immediate effect of an adoption would be to defeat the interest of those persons, then justice requires that their consent should be obtained. This proposition seems very reasonable and just." He distinguished the case from that of *Rakhmabai v. Radhabai* by saying: "The two widows being equally bound to take the measures necessary to secure their husbands' future beatitude, the younger widow, who by withholding her consent, ignores the religious obligation imposed upon her, has no right to complain of injustice if the adoption be made by the elder without her consent. But it does not follow that the plea of injustice is to be equally disregarded where it is put forward by a person who is under no such religious obligation. In *Rakhmabai v. Radhabai* it was certainly laid down in the broadest terms that in the Mahratta country a Hindu widow may, without the consent of her husband's kindred, adopt a son to him, if the act is done by her in the proper and *bonâ fide* performance of a religious duty, and neither capriciously nor from a corrupt motive. But the Judges by whom that case was decided were not dealing with an adoption which would have had the effect of divesting an estate vested in a relative other than a widow, nor in any of the decided cases on which they relied was the validity of such an adoption in issue. It does not appear to me that the authorities quoted would be

*Rupchand v. Rakhmabai* :

(b) 5 Bom. H. C. (A. C. J.) 181, *ante*, § 171.

(c) *Collector of Madura v. Moottoo Ramalinga*, 12 M. I. A. 397; S. C. 1 B. L. R. (P. C.) 1; S. C. 10 Suth. (P. C.) 17, *ante*, § 110.

sufficient to support the validity of an adoption working such manifest injustice" (d).

differs from  
Madras ruling.

§ 178. As a matter of fact, the Court found that Sobharam's widow had given her consent to the adoption, so the whole of the above discussion was extra-judicial. It will, of course, be observed that the Madras and the Bombay Courts went upon different grounds. The Madras Court considered that the question was decided by the authority of the Privy Council. But there was this difference between the two cases, that in *Chundrabullee's* case, the adopted son, if natural-born, would not have been heir to the property he claimed. In the Madras case he certainly would have been. This was pointed out by the Bombay High Court (e). Their judgment proceeded upon the ground that the adoption itself was invalid. No objection of that sort could be taken in the Bengal case, and there the judgment went upon different grounds from those taken in either of the cases last cited. The facts of it were as follows:—

Bengal decision.

§ 179. B. and B. named in the annexed table were undivided brothers, who held their property in the quasi-severalty of the Bengal law. P. by his will bequeathed his

A. dies 1825.

P. dies 1851  
= B. D. dies 1864,  
|  
daughter  
dies childless after her  
father and before her mother.

B. dies 1845  
|  
K. dies 1855  
= Bamasoondery  
who in 1876 adopts  
KALLY PROSONNO, the plaintiff.

share to his widow B. D. for life, and after her to the sons of his daughter, if any, subject to trusts, legacies and annuities. The daughter died without issue during the widow's

(d) *Rupchand v. Rakhmabai*, 8 Bom. H. C. (A. C. J.) 114. This reasoning was followed in the case of *Ramji v. Ghaman*, 6 Bom. 498; *Dinker v. Ganesh*, ib. 505; *Patel Vandravan Jekisan v. Manilal*, 15 Bom. 565.

(e) See also the remarks made upon it by the Bengal High Court in *Ram Soondur v. Surbanee Dossee*, 22 Suth. 121.

life, and at her death the widow made a will, bequeathing the property to the defendant as executor, for religious purposes. K. died in 1855, leaving to his widow authority to adopt. If she had exercised that authority prior to the death of B. D., there can be no doubt that the son adopted to K. would have been the heir of his grand-uncle P., and would have been entitled to set aside the will of B. D., and to claim the property of P., so far as he had not disposed of it by his will. But the power was not exercised till 1876. When the suit was brought by the adopted son, the Court held that he could not succeed. At the death of B. D. the whole property of P. must have vested in some one who was then the heir of P.; or if there was no such heir in existence, it must have passed to Government by escheat. The Court held, upon a review of all the cases, that there was no authority for holding that an estate, which had once vested in a person as heir of the last full owner, could be subsequently divested by the adoption of a person who would have been a nearer heir, had his adoption taken place previously to the death. They considered that the inheritance could not remain in a sort of latent abeyance, subject to be changed from one heir to another, on the happening of an event which might never take place, or only at some indefinite future time (*f*). Some passages in the judgment are more broadly expressed than they would have been if the Court had not misconceived the facts of the case in the Privy Council from Berhampore (*g*). But the decision itself, coupled with the other cases cited, seems to lead to the following conclusions: *First*, where an adoption is made Rules. to the last male holder, the adopted son will divest the estate of any person, whose title would have been inferior to his, if he had been adopted prior to the death. *Secondly*, where the adoption is not made to the last male holder,

(*f*) *Kally Prosonno v. Gocool Chunder*, 2 Cal. 295, followed in a later case when it was held that it made no difference that the delay in adoption had arisen from the fraud of the person who took the estate in default of adoption. *Nilkomul v. Jotendro*, 7 Cal. 178. Affd. *Bhubaneswari v. Nilkomul*, 12 I. A. 187, S. C. 12 Cal. 18.

(*g*) See *ante*, § 172, note.



but is made by the widow of any previous holder, it will perhaps divest her estate, subject, however, to the doubt suggested in § 174. *Thirdly*, under no other circumstances will an adoption made to one person divest the estate of any one who has taken that estate as heir of another person. All these rules seem to be consistent with natural justice. In the first case, the object of an adoption is to supply an heir to the deceased. That heir, when created, properly takes precedence over any one who is a less remote heir. Further, the services which he renders to the deceased are fitly rewarded by the estate. In the second case, the widow who makes the adoption exercises a discretion which may be intended to produce a preferable heir to herself. Naturally she takes the consequences. But in the third case, there can be no reason why an adoption which is intended to benefit A. should disturb the succession to the estate of B., who receives no benefit from it, and who has not been consulted upon it, or been instrumental in bringing it about (*h*).

Son's estate  
postponed.

§ 180. In Bengal, where a father has the absolute power of disposing of his property, he may couple with his authority to the widow to adopt, a direction that the estate of the widow shall not be interfered with during her life, or indeed any other condition derogating from the interest which would otherwise be taken by the adopted son (*i*). In provinces governed by the Mitakshara law, where a son obtains a vested interest in his father's property by birth, a person who has once made a complete and unconditional adoption could not derogate from its operation either by deed during his lifetime or by will. But where a man made a disposition of part of his property which was valid when made, and as part of the same transaction took a boy in adoption, the father of the adopted boy being aware of the provisions of the will, and

(*h*) Approved and followed *per curiam*, 18 Cal. 74, 398.

(*i*) *Radhamonee v. Jadubnarain*, S. D. of 1855, 139; *Prosunnomoyee v. Ramsoonder*, S. D. of 1859, 162; *Bepin Behari v. Brojonath Mookhopadya*, 8 Cal. 357.

assenting to them, and knowing that the testator would not have made the adoption without such assent, it was held that the will was valid against the adopted son (*k*). If, however, a will disposed of the whole of the testator's property, making no provision for an adopted son, it would probably be held that a subsequent adoption operated as a revocation of the will (*l*). It has been held in Bombay, that if the parent of the boy, when giving him in adoption, expressly agree with the widow that she shall remain in possession of the property during her lifetime, and she only accepts the boy on those terms, the agreement will bind him, as being made by his natural guardian, and within the powers given to such guardian by law (*m*). In a later case, however, before the Privy Council the effect of a similar agreement was much discussed, and not determined. The Committee refused to decide more than that such an agreement was not absolutely void, and therefore might be ratified by the youth on arriving at full age (*n*). *A fortiori*, an agreement by the adopted son himself when of full age, waiving his rights in favour of the widow, would be valid (*o*). And he may after adoption renounce all rights in his adopted family, but this will not restore him to the position he has abandoned in his natural family. Upon his renunciation the next heir will succeed (*p*).

§ 181. The second question which arises in the case of an adoption by a widow after her husband's death, is as to the date at which the rights of the adopted son arise. It has been suggested that a son so adopted must be considered

Son's rights date from adoption.

(*k*) *Lakshmi v. Subramanya*, 12 Mad. 490; *Narayanasami v. Ramasami*, 14 Mad. 172; *Vinayek Narayan v. Govindrav Chintaman*, 6 Bom. H. Ct., A. O. 224.

(*l*) *Per Couch, C. J.*, 6 Bom. H. Ct. A. C., p. 230, citing *futwah* of a pundit; 6 M. I. A., p. 320.

(*m*) *Chitko Raghunath v. Janaki*, 11 Bom. H. C. 199; followed *Ravji Vinayakrav v. Laksmibai*, 11 Bom. 881, p. 398.

(*n*) *Ramasawmi v. Vencutaramaiyan*, 6 I. A. 196; S. C. 2 Mad. 91. The Madras High Court subsequently expressed a strong opinion that such an agreement by the father of the boy would not bind him; *Lakshmana Rau v. Lakshmi Ammal*, 4 Mad. 160; *Narainah v. Savoobhady*, Mad. Dec. of 1854, 117; and see *per curiam*, 16 I. A. 59.

(*o*) *Mt. Tara Mune v. Dev Narayun*, 3 S. D. 387 (b16); 2 W. MacN. 188; *Mt. Bhugobutty v. Chowdhry Bholanath*, 15 Suth. 63.

(*p*) *Ruvee Bhudr v. Roopshunker*, 2 Bor. 656, 662, 665, [718].

as a posthumous son, and that his rights would relate back to the death of the father when he ought to be considered as having been born, or even to the date of the authority to adopt, when he ought to be considered as having been conceived. The whole of the authorities on the point were examined in an elaborate judgment of the Sudder Court of Bengal, which was appealed against, and adopted in its entirety by the Privy Council, and which may be considered as having settled the question (q). The point for decision in the case was, whether a widow, who had received an authority to adopt, was thereby debarred from suing for her husband's estates in her own right. It was argued that she must be considered as a pregnant widow, and could only sue on behalf of the son whom she was about to bring forth. The Court refused to act upon any such fanciful analogy, and laid it down that although a son, when adopted, entered at once into the full rights of a natural-born son, his rights could not relate back to any earlier period. Till he was adopted, it might happen that he never would be adopted; and when he was adopted, his fictitious birth into his new family could not be ante-dated. It must not, however, be supposed that an adopted son would necessarily have to acquiesce in all the dealings with the estate between the death of his adoptive father and his own adoption. The validity of those acts would have to be judged of with reference to their own character, and the nature of the estate held by the person whom he supersedes. Where that person, as frequently happens, is a female, either a widow, a daughter, or a mother, her estate is limited by the usual restrictions which fetter an estate which descends by inheritance from a man to a woman. These restrictions exist quite independently of the adoption. The only effect of the adoption is that the person who can question them springs into existence at once, whereas in the absence of an adoption he

How far he may dispute previous acts of widow.

---

(q) *Bamundoss v. Mt. Tarinee*, S. D. of 1850, 538; 7 M. I. A. 169. See cases collected, 3 M. Dig. 186; *Narain Mal v. Koor Narain*, 5 Cal. 251; *Rambhat v. Lakshman*, 5 Bom. 680.

would not be ascertained till the death of the woman. If she has created any incumbrances, or made any alienations which go beyond her legal powers, the son can set them aside at once. If they are within her powers, he is as much bound by them as any other reversioner would be (r). And he is also bound, even though they were not fully within her powers, provided she obtained the consent of the persons who, at the time of the alienation, were the next heirs, and competent to give validity to the transaction (s). One case goes a good deal beyond this. A widow adopted a son under the authority of her husband. She succeeded him as his heir, and made an alienation, and then adopted another son. The Court held that the alienation was good as against the second adopted son (t). The decision was given without any inquiry as to the propriety of the alienation, and was rested on the authority of *Chundrabullee's* case (u). It does not seem to have occurred to the Court that a mother had no more than a limited estate, which, upon the authority of the case cited, was divested by the adoption. The son then came in for all rights which had not been lawfully disposed of, or barred, during the continuance of that estate (v).

182. I am not aware of any case which has raised the same question, where the person whose estate was divested by adoption, was a male, and therefore a full owner. But I conceive the same rule would apply. Until adoption has taken place he is lawfully in possession, holding an estate which gives him the ordinary powers of alienation of a Hindu proprietor. No doubt he is liable to be superseded ;

Acts of previous  
male holder.

(r) *Kishenmunnee v. Oodwunt*, 3 S. D. 220 (304); *Ramkishen v. Mt. Strimutee*, 3 S. D. 367 (489), explained, 7 M. I. A. 178; *Doorga Soonduree v. Goureespersad*, S. D. of 1856, 170; *Sreenath Roy v. Ruttunmulla*, S. D. of 1859, 421; *Manikmulla v. Parbuttee*, ib. 515; *Lakshmana Rau v. Lakshmi Ammal*, 4 Mad. 160; *per curiam*, 8 M. I. A., p. 443; *Lakshman Bhau v. Radhabai*, 11 Bom. 609.

(s) *Rajkristo v. Kishoree*, 3 Suth. 14.

(t) *Gobindonath v. Ramkanay*, 24 Suth. 183, approved *per cur.*, *Kally Prosonno v. Gocool Chunder*, 2 Cal. 307. See *per curiam*, 11 Bom. 614.

(u) *Bhoobum Moyee v. Ram Kishore*, 10 M. I. A. 279; S. C. 3 Suth. (P. C.) 15; ante, § 172.

(v) See as to the effect of acts done during the estate of a woman, *post*, § 578; as to the effect of a decree passed against a widow before the adoption, see *Hari Saran Moitra v. Bhubaneswari*, 15 I. A. 195; S. C. 16 Cal. 40.



but on the other hand he never may be superseded. It would be intolerable that he should be prevented from dealing with his own, on account of a contingency which may never happen. When the contingency has happened, it would be most inequitable that the purchaser should be deprived of rights which he obtained from one who, at the time, was perfectly competent to grant them. Accordingly, where the brother of the last holder of a Zemindary was placed in possession in 1869, and subsequently ousted by an adoption to the late Zemindar, the Privy Council held that he could not be made accountable for mesne profits from the former date. Their Lordships said, "At that time Raghunada was, in default of a son of Adikonda, natural or adopted, unquestionably entitled to the Zemindary. The adoption took place on the 20th November, 1870, and the plaint states that the cause of action then accrued to the plaintiff. The plaint itself was filed on the 15th December, 1870, and there is no proof of a previous demand of possession. Their Lordships are of opinion that the account of mesne profits should run only from the commencement of the suit" (*w*).

Widow cannot  
adopt to herself.

§ 183. It is hardly necessary to say that as under the ordinary Hindu law an adoption by a widow must always be to her husband, and for his benefit, an adoption made by her to herself alone would not give the adopted child any right, even after her death, to property inherited by her from her husband (*x*). Nor, indeed, to her own property, however acquired, such an adoption being nowhere recognized as creating any new *status*, except in Mithila, under the *Kritrima* system. But among dancing girls it is customary in Madras and Western India to adopt girls to follow their adoptive mother's profession, and the girls so adopted succeed to their property. No particular ceremonies

Dancing girls.

(*w*) *Raghunadha v. Brozo Kishoro*, 3 I. A. 154, 193; S. C. 1 Mad. 69; S. C. 25 Suth. 291. As to alienations by the father himself, see *post*, § 317.

(*x*) *Chowdhry Pudum v. Koer Oodey*, 12 M. I. A. 850; S. C. 12 Suth. (P. C.) 1; S. C. 2 B. L. R. (P. C.) 101.



are necessary, recognition alone being sufficient (y). In Calcutta and Bombay, however, such adoptions have been held illegal (z). A recent attempt by a Brahman in Poona to adopt a daughter who should take the place of a natural-born daughter, was held to be invalid by general law, and not sanctioned by local usage (a).

§ 184. KRITRIMA ADOPTION.—According to the *Dattaka Mimamsa*, the *Kritrima* form is still recognized by the general Hindu law, since the modern rule which refuses to recognize any sons except the legitimate son and the son given includes the *Kritrima* under the latter term (b). But the better opinion seems to be that this form is now obsolete, except in the Mithila country, where it is the prevalent species (c), and among the Nambudri Brahmans of the West Coast where it exists along with the usual form (d). The cause of its continuance in Mithila is attributed by Mr. MacNaghten to the rule which exists there, which forbids an adoption by a widow even with her husband's authority. As the tendency of man is to defer an adoption until the last moment, the form which could be most rapidly and suddenly carried out, naturally found most favour (e). This cannot be the reason for the existence of this form among the Nambudri Brahmans, who allow a widow to adopt without her husband's consent (f). Probably in each case the *Kritrima* has maintained a successful competition with the *dattaka* form as being laxer in its rules, and therefore easier of application.

Prevails in  
Mithila.

§ 185. The *Kritrima* son is thus described by Manu (g): Described.

(y) *Venkatachellum v. Venkatasawmy*, Mad. Dec. of 1856, 65; Stra. Man. § 98, 99; Steele, 185, 186. In the absence of a special custom, and on the analogy of an ordinary adoption, only one girl can be adopted, *Venku v. Mahalinga*, 11 Mad. 393; *Muttukannu v. Paramasami*, 12 Mad. 214.

(z) *Hencower v. Hanscower*, 2 M. Dig. 133; *Mathura v. Esu*, 4 Bom. 545; but see *Tara Naikin v. Nana Lakshman*, 14 Bom. 90.

(a) *Gangabai v. Anant*, 13 Bom. 690. (b) *Dattaka Mimamsa*, ii. § 65.

(c) Suth. Syn. 663, 674; 3 Dig. 276; 2 Stra. H. L. 202; note to *Sutputtee v. Indranund*, 2 S. D. 173 (221); *Madhaviya*, § 32. Mr. Sarvadhikari says (526) that this form of adoption is still practised in Behar, Benares and other places, citing the note to *Srikant Sarma v. Radhakant*, 1 S. D. A. 15 (19.)

(d) 11 Mad. 174, 176, ante § 42.

(e) 1 W. MacN. 97.

(f) 11 Mad. 174, 176.

(g) Man., ix. § 169.

“He is considered as a son made (or adopted) whom a man takes as his own son, the boy being equal in class, endued with filial virtues, acquainted with (the) merit (of performing obsequies to his adopter) and with (the) sin (of omitting them).” The Mitakshara adds the further definition “being enticed by the show of money or land, and being an orphan without father or mother; for, if they be living, he is subject to their control” (*h*).

Only adult.

§ 186. The consent of the adoptee is necessary to an adoption in this form (*i*), and the consent must be given in the lifetime of the adopting father (*k*). This involves the adoptee being an adult. Consequently there appears to be no limit of age. The initiatory rites need not be performed in the family of the adopter, and the fact that those rites, including the *upanâyana*, have already been performed in the natural family is no obstacle (*l*). Even marriage can be no obstacle, for it is stated by *Keshuba Misra* in treating of this species of adoption that a man may even adopt his own father (*m*).

No restrictions on choice.

§ 187. The great distinction between this species of adoption and the *dattaka*, appears to be that the fiction of a new birth into the adoptive family, with the limitations consequent upon that fiction, do not exist. A *Kritrima* son “does not lose his claim to his own family, nor assume the surname of his adoptive father; he merely performs obsequies, and takes the inheritance” (*n*). Hence any person may be adopted who is of the same tribe as his adopter, even a father as above stated, or a brother. In one case, from the Mithila district, it was stated by the Pandits and held by the Court that an adoption of an elder brother by

(*h*) Mitakshara, i. 11, § 17.

(*i*) Suth. Syn. 678; Baudhayana, ii. 2, 14; 2 W. MacN. 196.

(*k*) *Sutputtee v. Indranund*, 2 S. D. 178 (221); *Durgopal v. Roopun*, 6 S. D. 271 (340); *Luchman v. Mohun*, 16 Suth. 179.

(*l*) 2 Stra. H. L. 204; 2 W. MacN. 196; *Shibo Koeree v. Joogun*, 8 Suth. 155, S. C. 4 Wym. 121.

(*m*) 1 W. MacN. 76; *Chowdree v. Hunooman*, 6 S. D. 192 (235); *Ooman Dut v. Kunhia*, 3 S. D. 145 (192).

(*n*) 3 Dig. 276, n.; 1 W. MacN. 76.

the younger was invalid (o). But Mr. MacNaghten points out that the authorities relied upon in that case related exclusively to the *dattaka* form. A daughter's son may be adopted, and so may the son of a sister (p). For the same reason, the prohibition against adopting an only or an eldest son does not apply to a Kritrima adoption (q). It has been held in the case last cited, that where a brother's son exists, no other can be adopted. But the opinion of the Pandits was principally founded upon texts applying to the *dattaka* form, and which, with reference to that form, have been long since held to be no longer in force. It is probable, therefore, that they would be held inapplicable to the *Kritrima* form, which is so much laxer in its rules.

§ 188. As regards succession, the *Kritrima* son loses no rights of inheritance in his natural family. He becomes the son of two fathers to this extent, that he takes the inheritance of his adoptive father, but not of that father's father, or other collateral relations, nor of the wife of his adoptive father, or her relations (r). Nor do his sons, &c., take any interest in the property of the adoptive father, the relationship between adopter and adoptee being limited to the contracting parties themselves, and not extending further on either side (s). Among the Nambudri Brahmans (*ante*, § 42) where it is desired to perpetuate the line of the adopter, the adopted son receives a special appointment to marry and raise up issue for the *illam* or line of the adopter (t).

Results of adoption.

§ 189. It has already been stated that in Mithila a woman cannot adopt to her husband, after his death, whether she has obtained his permission or not. But she is at liberty to

Female may adopt to herself.

(o) *Runjeet Singh v. Obhya*, 2 S. D. 245 (315). See 1 W. MacN. 76, n.

(p) *Ooman Dut v. Kunhia*, 3 S. D. 144 (192); *Chowdree v. Hunooman*, 6 S. D. 192 (235).

(q) *Ooman Dut v. Kunhia*, 3 S. D. (197); 2 W. MacN. 197, where however the opinion of the pandits was based upon the fact that the adopter was the uncle of the adoptee.

(r) See note to *Srinath Serma v. Radhakaunt*, 1 S. D. 15 (19); 1 W. MacN. 76; *Deepoo v. Gowreesunker*, 3 S. D. 307 (410); *Sreenarain Rai v. Bhya Jha*, 2 S. D. 28 (29, 34); *Shibo Koeree v. Jugun*, 8 Suth. 155; S. C. 4 Wym. 121.

(s) *Juswant Doolee*, 25 Suth. 255.

(t) 11 Mad. 158, 175, 179.

do in Mithila, what she can do nowhere else, viz., adopt a son to herself, and this she may do either during her husband's life, or after his death. And husband and wife may jointly adopt a son, or each may adopt separately. "If a woman appoint an adopted son, he stands in the relation to her of a son, offers to her funeral oblations, and is heir to her estate; but he does not become the adopted son of her husband, nor offer to him funeral oblations, nor succeed to his property. If a husband and wife jointly appoint an adopted son, he stands in the relation of son to both, and is heir to the estate of both. If the husband appoint one, and the wife another adopted son, they stand in the relation of sons to each of them respectively, and do not perform the ceremony of offering funeral oblations, nor succeed to the estate of the husband and wife jointly" (u).

#### Ceremonies.

§ 190. No ceremonies or sacrifices are necessary to the validity of a *Kritrima* adoption. "The form to be observed is this. At an auspicious time, the adopter of a son having bathed, addressing the person to be adopted, who has also bathed, and to whom he has given some acceptable chattel, says, "Be my son." He replies, "I am become thy son." The giving of some chattel to him arises merely from custom. It is not necessary to the adoption. The consent of both parties is the only requisite: and a set form of speech is not essential" (v).

#### Similar form practised in Jaffna.

It is a curious thing that this form of adoption, which now only exists in Mithila and among the Nambudris of Western India is almost identical in its leading features with that at present practised in Jaffna. There is the same absence of religious ceremonies, the same absence of any assumed new birth, and the same right of adoption both by husband and wife, followed by the same results of heirship

(u) Futwah of pandits, *Sree Narain Rai v. Bhya Jha*, 2 S. D. 23 (29, 34); 1 W. MacN. 101; *Collector of Tirhoot v. Huropershad*, 7 Suth. 500; *Shibo Koeree v. Jugun*, 8 Suth. 155; S. C. 4 Wym. 121.

(v) *Rudradhara*, cited note to *Mitakshara*, i. 11, § 17; 1 W. MacN. 98; *Kullean v. Kirpa*, 1 S. D. 9 (11); *Durgopal v. Roopun*, 6 S. D. 271 (340).

only to the adopter (*w*). The explanation given by Mr. MacNaghten (§ 184) may account for the survival of the *Kritrima* adoption: but it does not explain its origin. It seems plain that both the Mithila and the Ceylon form arose from purely secular motives, and existed anterior to, and independent of, Brahmanical theories. The growth of these put the *Kritrima* form out of fashion. But the similar type continued to flourish in Ceylon, where no such influence prevailed. An enquiry into the usages of the Tamil races in Southern India would probably disclose the existence of analogous customs.

§ 190A. A custom known as that of *Illatam* adoption prevails among the *Reddi* caste in the Madras Presidency. It consists in the affiliation of a son-in-law, in consideration of assistance in the management of the family property. No religious significance appears to attach to the act. It seems uncertain whether such an affiliation can take place where there is already a son, or whether the person so affiliated can claim a partition during the life of his adopting father. After the death of the adopter he is entitled to the full rights of a son, even as against natural sons subsequently born (*x*). As between himself and his own descendants he takes the property as self-acquisition, and therefore free from all restraints upon alienation (*y*). The property so taken descends to his relations, not to the heirs of the adopter (*z*), while he himself loses no rights of inheritance in his natural family (*a*).

*Illatam adoption.*

---

(*w*) Thesawaleme, ii.      (*x*) *Hanumantamma v. Rami Reddi*, 4 Mad. 272.  
 (*y*) *Chella Papi v. Chella Koti*, 7 Mad. H. C. 25.  
 (*z*) *Ramakristna v. Subbakka*, 12 Mad. 442.  
 (*a*) *Balarami v. Pera*, 6 Mad. 267.



## CHAPTER VI.

### FAMILY RELATIONS.

#### *Minority and Guardianship.*

Period of  
minority.

§ 191. MINORITY under Hindu law terminates at the age of sixteen. There was, however, a difference of opinion as to whether this age was attained at the beginning, or at the end, of the sixteenth year. The Hindu writers seem to take the former view (*a*), and this was always held to be the law in Bengal (*b*). The latter limit is stated to be the rule in Mithila and Benares, and was followed in Southern India and apparently in Bombay (*c*). Different periods were also fixed for special purposes by statutes, which it does not come within the scope of this work to discuss. These variances will soon lose all importance in consequence of Act IX of 1875, which lays down as a general rule for all persons domiciled in British India or the Allied States, that in the case of every minor or whose person or property a guardian has been, or shall be, appointed by any Court of Justice, and of every minor under the jurisdiction of any Court of Wards, minority terminates at the completion of the twenty-first year; in all other cases, at the completion of the eighteenth year (*d*). Where a guardian has once been appointed by a Court of Justice,

---

(*a*) 1 Dig. 293; 2 Dig. 115; Mitakshara on Loans, cited V. Darp., 770; Daya Bhaga, iii. 1, § 17, note; Dattaka Mimamsa, iv. § 47.

(*b*) 1 W. MacN. 103; 2 W. MacN. 220, 288, note; *Callychurn v. Bhuggobutty*, 10 B. L. R. 231; S. C. 19 Suth. 110; *Mothoor Mohun v. Surendro*, 1 Cal. 108.

(*c*) W. MacN. *ubi. sup.*; 1 Stra. H. L. 72; 2 Stra. H. L. 76, 77; *Lachman v. Rupchand*, 5 S. D. 114 (136); *Shirji v. Datu*, 12 Bom. H. C. 281, 290.

(*d*) *Khwahish v. Surju*, 3 All. 598; *Reade v. Krishna*, 9 Mad. 391. As to whether the appointment is complete until a certificate has actually been issued, see under Bombay Minors Act XX of 1864, *Yeknath v. Warubai*, 13 Bom. 285; under Bengal Act XL of 1858, *Mungniram v. Mohunt Gursahai*, 16 I. A. 195, S. C. 17 Cal. 347. A Collector appointed under Act XL of 1858, s. 7 is a guardian within the meaning of Act IX of 1875, s. 3, but one appointed under s. 12 is not. 17 Cal. p. 948.

minority will last till 21, whether the guardian so appointed continues to act or not, or has, or has not taken out a certificate (e). But where the Court of Wards has assumed jurisdiction, the disability of minority only continues so long as the Court of Wards, retains charge of the minor's property, and no longer (f). The Act is not to affect any person in respect of marriage, dower, divorce, or adoption.

§ 192. GUARDIANSHIP.—The Hindu law vests the guardianship of the minor in the sovereign as *parens patriæ*. Necessarily this duty is delegated to the child's relations. Of these the father, and next to him the mother, is his natural guardian. In default of her, or if she is unfit to exercise the trust, his nearest male kinsmen should be appointed, the paternal kindred having the preference over the maternal (g). Of course, in an undivided family, governed by Mitakshara law, the management of the whole property, including the minor's share, would be vested in the nearest male, and not in the mother. It would be otherwise where the family was divided (h). But this would not interfere with her right to the custody of the child itself (i). The husband's relations, if any exist within the degree of a sapinda, are the guardians of a minor widow, in preference to her father and his relations (k). A mother loses her right by a second marriage (l), and a father loses

Order of guardianship.

(e) *Rudra Prokash v. Bholanath Mukherjee*, 12 Cal. 612; *Girish Chunder v. Abdul Selam*, 14 Cal. 55.

(f) *Birjmohun Lal v. Rudra Perkash*, 17 Cal. 944.

(g) Manu, viii. § 27; ix. § 146, 190, 191; 3 Dig. 542—544; F. MacN. 25; 1 Stra. H. L. 71; 2 Stra. H. L. 72—75; *Gungama v. Chendrappa*, Mad. Dec. of 1859, 100; 1 W. MacN. 103; *Mooddookrishna v. Tandavaroy*, Mad. Dec. of 1852, 105; *Muhtaboo v. Gunesh*, S. D. of 1854, 329. Under Mithila law, however, it has been held that the mother is entitled to be guardian of the person of her minor son in preference to the father. *Jussoda v. Lallah Nettya*, 5 Cal. 43. As to the claim of the step-mother, see *Lukmee v. Umurchund*, 2 Bor. 144 [163]; *Ram Bunsee v. Soobh Koonwaree*, 7 Suth. 321; S. C. 3 Wym. 219; S. C. 2 In. Jur. 193, *Baee Sheo v. Ruttonjee*, Morris, Pt. 1. 108. As to the Punjab, see Punjab Customary Law, II. 133.

(h) *Alimelammal v. Arunachellam*, 3 Mad. H. C. 69; *Bissonauth v. Doorgapersad*, 2 M. Dig. 49; *Gourahkoeri v. Gujadhur*, 5 Cal. 219. But she can sue on his behalf if the proper guardian refuses to do so, *Mokrund Deb v. Ranees Bissessuree*, S. D. of 1853, 159.

(i) *Kooldeep v. Bajbunsee*, S. D. of 1847, 557.

(k) *Khudiram Mookerjee v. Bonwari*, 16 Cal. 584.

(l) *Baee Sheo v. Ruttonjee*, Morris, Pt. I. 108.

his right by giving his son in adoption (*m*). And, of course, any guardian, however appointed, may be removed for proper cause (*n*). Little is to be found on the subject of guardianship in works on Hindu law. The matter is principally regulated by statute (*o*).

Right of guardian to custody of minor.

Change of religion by parent ;

§ 193. The right of the guardian to the possession of the infant is an absolute right, of which he cannot be deprived, even by the desire of the minor himself, except upon sufficient grounds. In the case of parents, especially, it is obvious that the custody of their child is a matter of greater moment to them than the custody of any article of property. Cases, however, have frequently occurred in the Indian Courts, where the right of a parent to recover his child has been contested, on the ground that the parent had changed his religion, and was therefore no longer a fit guardian for his child ; or that the child had changed its religion, and was no longer willing to live with its parent. On the former point it has been decided, that the fact that a father has changed his religion, whether the change be one to Christianity or from Christianity, is of itself no reason for depriving him of the custody of his children. It would be different, of course, if the change were attended with circumstances of immorality, which showed that his home was no longer fit for the residence of the child (*p*). But the case of a change of religion by the mother might be different. The religion of the father settles the law which governs

---

(*m*) *Lakshmibai v. Shridur*, 3 Bom. 1.

(*n*) *Alimelammal v. Arunachellam*, 3 Mad. H. C. 69 ; *Gourmonee v. Bama-soonderee*, S. D. of 1860, i. 532 ; *Skinner v. Orde*, 14 M. 1 A. 309 ; S. C. 10 B. L. R. 125 ; S. C. 17 Suth. 77 ; *Kanahi v. Biddya*, 1 All. 549 ; *Abasi v. Dunne*, 1 All. 598.

(*o*) See Ct. of Wards Acts, Beng. Reg. XXVI of 1793, LII of 1803, VI of 1822 ; Mad. Reg. V of 1804 ; Act XX of 1864 ; Bengal Act, IV of 1870. Minors not under Court of Wards, Act XL of 1858, IV of 1872. Education and marriage of minors, Acts XXVI of 1854, XXI of 1855, XIV of 1858. *Ram Bunsee v. Soobh Koonwaree*, 7 Suth. 321 ; S. C. 3 Wym. 219 ; S. C. 2 In. Jur. 193 ; *Ramchunder v. Brojonath*, 4 Cal. 929. See as to Procedure, Act IX of 1861 ; Guardian and Ward Act, XIII of 1874, VIII of 1890. Where the Law requires the appointment of a guardian under any statute, no greater powers can be exercised by a guardian *de facto* than would have been vested in him by statute, if he had been duly appointed. *Abhassi Begam v. Rajroop Koonwar*, 4 Cal. 38.

(*p*) *R. v. Bezonji*, Perry, O. C. 91.

himself, his family, and his property. "From the very necessity of the case, a child in India, under ordinary circumstances, must be presumed to have his father's religion, and his corresponding civil and social *status*; and it is, therefore, ordinarily, and in the absence of controlling circumstances, the duty of a guardian to train his infant ward in such religion." Therefore, where a change of religion on the part of the mother would have the effect of changing the religion, and therefore the legal *status* of the infant, the Court would remove her from her position as guardian. And the asserted wish of the minor, also, to change his religion, in conformity with that of the mother, would not necessarily alter the case; unless, perhaps, where the advanced age of the minor, and the settled character of his religious convictions would render it improper, or impossible, to attempt to restore him to his former position (*q*). The rights of a father to direct the religion in which his children shall be brought up is so inseparable from his character as parent that he cannot be bound by an agreement renouncing the rights, even though the agreement is made before marriage and was a *sine quâ non* to the marriage taking place (*r*). But where the father has allowed his agreement to be acted on during his life, and has died without expressing any contrary wish, these circumstances will be taken into consideration as showing that he had abandoned any desire that his children should be brought up in his own religion, especially if it appears that it would be for their temporal benefit to continue in the religion of their mother (*s*).

§ 194. The case of a child voluntarily leaving its parents by infant. has frequently occurred where there has been a conversion to Christianity. It seems at one time to have been the practice of the Courts of Calcutta and Madras to allow the

(*q*) *Skinner v. Orde*, 14 M. I. A. 309; S. C. 10 B. L. R. 125; S. C. 17 Suth. 77.

(*r*) *Re Agar Ellis*, 10 Ch. D. 49. This right of the father continues in England till the child is 21. *Re Agar Ellis*, 24 Ch. D. 317.

(*s*) *Re Clarke*, 21 Ch. D. 817; *Re Violet Nevin*, 2 Ch. (1891) 299.



child to exercise his discretion, if, upon a personal examination, they were satisfied that his wish was to remain away from his parents, and that he was capable of exercising an intelligent judgment upon the point. The contrary rule was for the first time laid down by the Supreme Court of Bombay, when they directed a boy of twelve years old to be given back to his father, and refused to examine him as to his capacity and knowledge of the Christian religion, or as to his wish to remain with his Christian instructors (*t*). This course was approved by Mr. Justice *Patteson*, to whom Sir Erskine Perry referred the point (*u*). That decision was followed in the Supreme Court of Madras in 1858, in the case of *Culloor Narrainsawmy* (*v*), when Sir *Christopher Rawlinson* and Sir *Adam Bittleston* decided that a Hindu youth of the age of fourteen, who had gone to the Scottish missionaries, should be given up to his father, though he had become a convert to Christianity, and was most anxious to remain with his new protectors. A similar decision was given in Calcutta in 1863, by Sir *Mordaunt Wells*, where a boy of fifteen years and two months had voluntarily gone to reside with the missionaries (*w*). All these cases were lately examined and affirmed by the Madras High Court, which held that under Act IX of 1875 the period of parental control and custody lasted until 18 (*x*). It may also be observed, that it is a criminal offence under the Indian Penal Code, to entice from the keeping of its lawful guardian a male minor under the age of fourteen, or a female minor under the age of sixteen (*y*).

Illegitimate  
child.

§ 195. The mother is the natural guardian of an illegitimate child. But where she has allowed the child to be

(*t*) *R. v. Nesbitt, Perry*, O. C. 103

(*u*) *Ib.*, p. 109.

(*v*) Not reported. I was counsel for the missionaries in the case.—J. D. M.

(*w*) *Re Himnauth Bose*, 1 Hyde, 111.

(*x*) *Reade v. Krishna*, 9 Mad. 391. No agreement by which a parent surrenders to another the right to the custody of the child is binding, and in this respect the mother of an illegitimate child is in the same position as the father of one that is legitimate. *Reg. v. Burnardo*, A. C. (1891) 388.

(*y*) I. P. C. § 361, 363. The consent, or wish, of the minor is quite immaterial. See cases cited *sub loco*. Mayue's Commentaries on the Indian Penal Code.



separated from her and brought up by the father, or by persons appointed by him, the Court will not allow her to enforce her rights. Especially if the result would be disadvantageous to the child, by depriving it of the advantages of a higher mode of life and education (z). Her own continued immorality would of itself be a sufficient reason against handing over to her a child which was otherwise properly provided for (a).

§ 196. Contracts made by a minor himself are, at the utmost voidable, not void. If made for any necessary purpose they are absolutely binding upon him, and they can always be ratified by him after he attains full age, either expressly, or impliedly by acquiescence, and taking the benefit of them (b). He will also be bound by the act of his guardian, in the management of his estate, when *bonâ fide* and for his interest, and when it is such as the infant might reasonably and prudently have done for himself, if he had been of full age (c). But not where the act appears not to have been for his benefit (d), unless he has ratified

Effect of contracts.

(z) *R. v. Fletcher*, Perry, O. C. 109; *Mittibhayi v. Kottekarati*, Mad. Dec. of 1860, 154; *Lal Das v. Nekunjo*, 4 Cal. 374.

(a) *Venkamma v. Savitramma*, 12 Mad. 67.

(b) *Rennie v. Gunganarain*, 3 Suth. 10; *Boiddonath v. Ramkishore*, 13 Suth. 166; *Doorga Churn v. Ram Narain*, *ib.* 172.

(c) *Cauminany v. Perumma*, Mad. Dec. of 1855, 99; *Temmakal v. Subhammal*, 2 Mad. H. C. 47; *Manishankar v. Bai Muli*, 12 Bom. 686; *Nathuram v. Shoma Chhagan*, 14 Bom. 562; *Kumurooddeen v. Shaikh Bhadoo*, 11 Suth. 134; *Makbul v. Srimati Masnad*, 3 B. L. R. (A. C. J.) 54; S. C. 11 Suth. 396; *Gooroopersad v. Muddun*, S. D. of 1856, 980; *Soonder Narain v. Bennud Ram*, 4 Cal. 76; *Roshan Singh v. Har Kishan*, 3 All. 535; *Sikher Chund v. Dulputty*, 5 Cal. 363; *Nirvanaya v. Nirvanaya*, 9 Bom. 365. See as to a guardian's power of leasing, *Nubokishen v. Kaleepersad*, S. D. of 1859, 607; *Gopeenath v. Ramjeewun*, *ib.* 913; *Beebee Sowlutoonisa v. Robt. Savi*, *ib.* 1575. See also as to contracts requiring statutory sanction, *Debi Dutt v. Subodra*, 2 Cal. 283. *Manji Ram v. Tara Singh*, 3 All. 852; *Doorga Persad v. Kesho Persad*, 9 I. A. 27, S. C. 8 Cal. 656; *Rai Balkrishna v. Mt. Masuma Bibi*, 9 I. A. 182; S. C. 5 All. 142; *Dunput Singh v. Shoobudra*, 8 Cal. 620; *Harendra Narain v. Moran*, 15 Cal. 40; *Bhupendro Narayan v. Nemye Chand*, 15 Cal. 627; *Girraj Baksh v. Kasi Hamid*, 9 All. 840. Documents executed by a Hindu widow who described herself as "mother of A, minor," were held in the absence of evidence to the contrary, to be executed by her in her capacity as guardian of the infant, *Watson v. Sham Lal Mitter*, 14 I. A. 178, S. C. 15 Cal. 8.

(d) *Sambasivien v. Kristnien*, Mad. Dec. of 1858, 252; *Nawab Syud Ashrufooddeen v. Mt. Shama Soonderee*, S. D. of 1853, 531; *Nubokishen v. Kaleepersad*, S. D. of 1859, 607; *Lalla Bunseedhur v. Koonwur Bindeseree*, 10 M. I. A. 454. A guardian may pay debts barred by statute if fairly due, *Chowdhry Chuttersal v. Government*, 3 Suth. 57.

it on reaching his majority (e). And where the act is done by a person who is not his guardian, but who is the manager of the estate in which he has an interest, he will equally be bound, if under the circumstances the step taken was necessary, proper, or prudent (f). In all cases the power of the guardian or manager is limited to the disposal of the estate with which he is entrusted. He cannot bind the minor by any purely personal covenant. For instance, a guardian in order to pay off a charge upon the estate sold part of it, and was held to have acted properly in so doing. The part was sold as free of all Government claim for revenue, and naturally fetched a higher price on that account. The conveyance contained a covenant binding the minor and his heirs to indemnify the purchaser against any claims for revenue which the Government might make at any future time, and provided that the amount of such indemnity should be a charge upon the unsold portion of the estate, and should also be payable personally by the vendor and his heirs. After the termination of the minority Government assessed the land, and an action was brought upon the covenant by the purchaser. The Privy Council held that the personal covenant was not binding on the minor after he attained majority, such a covenant being beyond the guardian's powers. They thought that possibly it might bind the land, as the result of the covenant was to save part of the land which would otherwise have to be sold. It was unnecessary to decide this point, as under a special statute the land was made free from incumbrance (g).

Where the act is done by a person in possession of

---

(e) *Chetty Colum v. Rajah Rungasawmy*, 8 M. I. A. 319; S. C. 4 Suth. (P. C.) 71. *Golaub Koonwurree v. Eshan Chunder*, 8 M. I. A. 447; S. C. 2 Suth. (P. C.) 47. *Kumurooddeen v. Shaikh Bhadoo*, 11 Suth. 134; *Bhobanny v. Teerpurachurn*, 2 M. Dig. 100; *Mongooney v. Goorooopersad*, *ib.* 188. See as to carrying out, after the removal of a personal disability, a contract which was agreed upon while the disability lasted, *Gregson v. Aditya Deb*, 16 I. A. 221. S. C. 17 Cal. 223. A ratification will be of no effect, if the property has already passed away from the person who ratifies the transaction, *Lallah Rawuth v. Chadee*, S. D. of 1858, 312.

(f) *Hunoomanpersaud v. Mt Babooe*, 6 M. I. A. 393.

(g) *Waghela Raj Sanji v. Shekh Masludin*, 14 I. A. 89; 11 Bom. 551.

property, who does not profess to be acting on behalf of the minor, but who claims to be independent owner, and to be acting on his own behalf, it will not bind the infant who is really entitled (*h*).

Of course the objection to an act on the ground of minority must be taken by the minor himself. Those who deal with him are always bound, though he may not be (*i*).

Where a minor on coming of age sues to set a sale aside, he is bound to refund the purchase money, when his estate has benefited by it, or to hold the property charged with the amount of debt from which it has been freed by the sale (*k*).

Equities on setting aside.

§ 197. A minor, who is properly represented in a suit, will be bound by its result, whether that result is arrived at by hostile decree, or by compromise or by withdrawal (*l*). But the Court will not make a decree by consent without ascertaining whether it is for the benefit of the infant. Without such approval by the Court, the compromise will not bind the infant, and the decree passed in accordance therewith will be set aside at his instance (*m*). Where a decree binding on a minor has once been obtained, the creditor will not be deprived of the benefit of his decree, because he has by mistake taken out execution against the guardian

Decrees.

(*h*) *Bahur Ali v. Sookeea*, 13 Suth. 63.

(*i*) *Canaka v. Cottavappah*, Mad. Dec. of 1855, 184 *Hanmant Lakshman v. Jayarao*, 12 Bom. 50; *Muhamed Arif v. Saraswati Debya*, 18 Cal. 259.

(*k*) *Bukshun v. Doolhin*, 12 Suth. 337; S. C. 3 B. L. R. (A. C. J.) 423; *Paran Chandra v. Karunamayi*, 7 B. L. R. 90; S. C. 15 Suth. 268; *Bai Kesar v. Bai Ganga*, 8 Bom. H. C. (A. C. J.) 81; *Mirza Pana v. Saiad Sadik*, 7 N.-W. P. 201; *Kuvarji v. Moti Haridas*, 3 Bom. 234; and see *Gadgeppa v. Apaji*, 3 Bom. 287.

(*l*) *Kamaraju v. Secretary of State*, 11 Mad. 309; *Chengal Reddi v. Venkata Reddi*, 12 Mad. 483; *Tarinee Churn v. Watson*, 12 Suth. 414; S. C. 8 B. L. R. (A. C. J.) 437; *Modhoo Soodun v. Prithee Bullub*, 16 Suth. 231; *Jungee Lall v. Sham Lall*, 20 Suth. 120; *Lekraj v. Mahtab*, 14 M. I. A. 393; S. C. 10 B. L. R. 35; S. C. 17 Suth. 117; *Mrinamoyi v. Jogo Dishuri*, 5 Cal. 450. And the guardian may equally compromise claims before suit; *Gopeenath v. Ramjeewun*, S. D. of 1859, 913. As to effect of withdrawal of suit, *Eshan Chunder v. Nundamoni*, 10 Cal. 357.

(*m*) *Ram Churn v. Mungul*, 16 Suth. 232. Civil Procedure Code, Act XIV of 1882, § 462; *Rajagopal v. Muttupalem*, 8 Mad. 103; *Karmali v. Rahimbhoy*, 13 Bom. 187.

by name instead of against the minor as represented by the guardian (*n*). And the mere fact that a proceeding was partly conducted through the intervention of a Civil Court—as for instance, a decree on a foreclosure—does not give it any additional validity against a minor, unless he is properly made a party to the proceeding at a stage when he can question it on its merits (*o*): Of course a compromise or a decree can always be set aside if obtained by fraud (*p*). Cases might arise in which a guardian by mere carelessness, amounting to gross neglect of duty but without fraud, failed properly to support the interests of his ward, and thereby failed in a suit which he ought to have won. Whether the ward in attaining full age might set aside the decree against him is a point which has been raised, but not decided. (*q*).

The natural father of an adopted son is not his guardian, unless specially so appointed, so as to bind him by his conduct of a suit in his behalf (*r*). And although the minor may properly be represented by the manager of the undivided family, the mere fact that the suit is conducted or defended by the manager is not in itself sufficient to show that the minor is adequately represented (*s*). If, however, the Court has in fact given permission to any one to represent the minor, his acts will not be invalid for want of a certificate under Act XL of 1858, though the absence of such certificate may, if not rebutted, be evidence that there never has been such a permission (*t*). A mere want of form in the mode of describing the minors will not affect

---

(*n*) *Hari v. Narayan*, 12 Bom. 427.

(*o*) *Buzrung v. Mt. Mautora*, 22 Suth. 119.

(*p*) *Lekraj v. Mahtab*, 14 M. L. A. 393; S. C. 10 B. L. R. 35; S. C. 17 Suth. 117; *Bibee Solomon v. Abdul Azees*, 6 Cal. 687; *Eshan Chunder v. Nundamoni*, 10 Cal. 357; *Raghubar Dyal v. Bhikya Lall*, 12 Cal. 69.

(*q*) *Munqniram v. Mohunt Gursahai*, 16 I. A., p. 204, S. C. 17 Cal. p. 361.

(*r*) *Srinarain Mitter v. Sreemutty Kishen*, 11 B. L. R. 171. (P. C.)

(*s*) *Padmakar Vinayek v. Mahadev Krishna*, 10 Bom. 21. *Doubting Gan Savant v. Narayen Dhond*, 7 Bom. 467; *Vishnu Keshav v. Ramchandra*, 11 Bom. 130.

(*t*) *Jogi Singh v. Behari Singh*, 11 Cal. 509; *Alim Buksh v. Jhalo Bibi*, 12 Cal. 48; *Durgopershad v. Kesho Pershad*, 9 I. A. 27; S. C. 8 Cal. 656; *Suresh Chunder v. Jugat Chunder*, 14 Cal. 204; *Parmeshar Das v. Bela*, 9 All. 508. As to suits brought on behalf of a minor without the sanction of the Court of Wards, see *Dinesh Chunder v. Golam Mostapha*, 16 Cal. 89.



the validity of the decree, if they have been really represented and sued (*u*).

A decree in a suit in which a minor is properly represented may be liable to set aside for fraud or other reasons, but till set aside it binds him, and proceedings to get rid of it must be commenced within a year from the date of the decree or from the termination of the minority (*v*). Where the minor has not been properly represented the decree is a nullity, as far as he is concerned. He need take no notice of it, and may proceed to enforce his rights within the period of limitation which would be applicable if no decree had been passed (*w*).

A guardian is liable to be sued by his ward for damages arising from his fraudulent or illegal acts (*x*). For debts due by the ward, the guardian of course is only liable to the extent of the funds which have reached his hands (*y*).

Suits against  
guardian.

---

(*u*) *Jogi Singh v. Behari Singh*, *ub. sup.*, *Bhaba Pershad v. Secretary of State*, 14 Cal. 159; *Suresh Chunder v. Jugat Chunder*, 14 Cal. 204; *Natesvayyan v. Narasimmayyar*, 13 Mad. 480; *Hari Saran Moitra v. Bhubaneswari Debi*, 15 I. A. 195. S. C. 16 Cal 40.

(*v*) Act XV of 1877, Sched. II, Art. 12. *Mungniram Marwari v. Mohunt Gursahai*, 16 I. A. 203. S. C. 17 Cal. 347. As to the mode of setting aside such a decree, see *Mirali Rahimbhoy v. Rehmoobhoy*, 15 Bom. 594.

(*w*) *Daji Himat v. Dhirajram*, 12 Bom. 18.

(*x*) *Issur Chunder v. Ragab*, S. D. of 1860, 1, 349.

(*y*) *Sheikh Azeemooddeen v. Moonshee Athur*, 3 Suth. 137.



## CHAPTER VII.

### EARLY LAW OF PROPERTY.

Misleading  
effect of English  
analogies.

§ 198. THE student who wishes to understand the Hindu system of property, must begin by freeing his mind from all previous notions drawn from English law. They would not only be useless, but misleading. In England ownership, as a rule, is single, independent, and unrestricted. It may be joint, but the presumption will be to the contrary. It may be restricted, but only in special instances, and under special provisions. In India, on the contrary, joint ownership is the rule, and will be presumed to exist in each individual case until the contrary is proved. If an individual holds property in severalty, it will, in the next generation, relapse into a state of joint tenancy. Absolute, unrestricted ownership, such as enables the owner to do anything he likes with his property, is the exception. The father is restrained by his sons, the brother by his brothers, the woman by her successors. If property is free in the hands of its acquirer, it will resume its fetters in the hands of his heirs. Individual property is the rule in the West. Corporate property is the rule in the East. And yet, although the difference between the two systems can now only be expressed in terms of direct antithesis, it is pretty certain that both had a common origin (*a*). But in India the past and the present are continuous. In England they are separated by a wide gulf. Of the bridge by which they were formerly connected, a few planks, only visible to the eye of the antiquarian, are all that now remain.

---

(*a*) See Maine, *Village Communities*, 82.

§ 199. Three forms of the corporate system of property exist in India ; the Patriarchal Family, the Joint Family and the Village Community. The two former, in one shape or other, may be said to prevail throughout the length and breadth of India. The last still flourishes in the north-west of Hindostan. It is traceable, though dying out, in Southern India. It has disappeared, though we may be sure it formerly existed, in Bengal and the upper part of the peninsula. In some regions, such as among the Hill tribes and the Nairs of the Western Coast, it appears never to have arisen at all. The analogy between the two latter forms is complete. The Village Community is a corporate body, of which the members are families. The Joint Family is a corporate body, of which the members are individuals. The process of change which has been undergone both by Village Communities and Families is similar, and the causes of this change are generally identical. It seems a tempting generalisation to lay down, that one must have sprung from the other ; that the Village Community has grown out of the extension of the Joint Family, or that the Joint Family has resulted from the dissolving of the larger body into its component parts. But such a generalisation would be unsafe. The same causes have no doubt produced the Village system and the Family system. But it is certain that there are many Villages which have never sprung from the same Family, and many places where the Family system has shown no tendency to grow into the Village system.

Different forms of corporate property.

§ 200. The Village system of India may be studied with most advantage in the Punjab, as it is there that we find it in its most perfect, as well as in its transitional, forms. It presents three marked phases, which exactly correspond to the changes in an undivided family. The closest form of union is that which is known as the *Communal Zemindari* village. Under this system " the land is so held that all the village co-sharers have each their proportionate share in it as common property, without any possession of, or title to, distinct portions of it ; and the measure of each proprietor's

Village communities in the Punjab.

Punjab.

interest is his share as fixed by the customary law of inheritance. The rents paid by the cultivators are thrown into a common stock, with all other profits from the village lands, and after deduction of the expenses the balance is divided among the proprietors according to their shares" (b). This corresponds to the undivided family in its purest state. The second stage is called the *pattidari* village. In it the holdings are all in severalty, and each sharer manages his own portion of land. But the extent of the share is determined by ancestral right, and is capable of being modified from time to time upon this principle (c). This corresponds to the state of an undivided family in Bengal. The transitional stage between joint holdings and holdings in severalty is to be found in the system of re-distribution, which is still practised in the Pathan communities of Peshawur. According to that practice, the holdings were originally allotted to the individual families on the principle of strict equality. But as time introduced inequalities with reference to the numbers settled on each holding, a periodical transfer and re-distribution of holdings took place (d). This practice naturally dies out as the sense of individual property strengthens, and as the habit of dealing with the shares by mortgage and sale is introduced. The share of each family then becomes its own. The third and final stage is known as the *bhaiachari* village. It agrees with the *pattidari* form, inasmuch as each owner holds his share in severalty. But it differs from it, inasmuch as the extent of the holding is strictly defined by the amount actually held in possession. All reference to ancestral right has disappeared, and no change in the number of the co-sharers can entitle any member to have his share enlarged. His rights have become absolute instead of relative, and have ceased to be measured by any reference to the extent of the whole village, and the

Punjab Customs, 105, 161. This stage is the same as that described by Sir H. S. Maine, as existing in Servia and the adjoining districts. Ancient Law, 267. See Evans, Bosnia, 44.

(c) Punjab Customs, 106, 156.

(d) Punjab Customs, 125, 170. See Corresponding Customs, Maine, Anc. Law, 267; Village Communities, 81; Lavaleye, ch. vi.; Wallace, Russia, i. 189.

numbers of those by whom it is held (e). This is exactly the state of a family after its members have come to a partition.

§ 201. The same causes which have broken up the Joint Family of Bengal have led to the disappearance of the Village system in that province. In Western and Central India, the wars and devastations of Muhammedans, Mah-rattas, and Pindarries swept away the Village institutions, as well as almost every other form of ancient proprietary right (f). But in Southern India, among the Tamil races, we find traces of similar communities (g). The Village landholders are there represented by a class known as *Mirasidars*, the extent and nature of whose rights are far from being clearly ascertained. It is certain, however, that they have a preferential right over other inhabitants to be accepted as tenants by the Government, a right which they do not even lose by neglecting to avail themselves of it at each fresh settlement (h). They are jointly entitled to receive certain fees and perquisites from the occupying tenants, and to share in the common lands (i). Some vil-lages are even at the present time held in shares by a body of proprietors who claim to represent the original owners, and a practice of exchanging and re-distributing these shares is known still to exist, though it is fast dying out (k). In Madras the Government claim is made upon each occu-pant separately, not upon the whole village, as in the Punjab; but the contrary usage must once have existed.

(e) Punjab Customs, 106, 161.

(f) See speech of Sir J. Lawrence, cited Punjab Customs, 138.

(g) Elphinstone, India, 66, 249.

(h) *Ramanooja v. Peetayen*, Mad. Dec. of 1850, 121; *Alagappa v. Ramasamu*, Mad. Dec. of 1859, 101; 5th Report House of Commons, cited *Moottoopermall v. Tondaven*, 1 N. C. 320. [275]. See *Fakir Muhammad v. Tirumala Chariar*, 1 Mad. 205.

(i) *Moottoopermall v. Tondaven*, 1 Stra. N. C. 300. [260] *Koomarasawmy v. Ragava*, Mad. Dec. of 1852, 38; *Viswanadha v. Moottoo Moodely*, Mad. Dec. of 1854, 141; *Muniappa v. Kasturi*, Mad. Dec. of 1862, 50. In the Punjab this right may be retained by a co-sharer, though he has ceased to possess any land in the village. Punjab Customs, 108.

(k) Madras Manual, Pt. V. 12; *Venkataswami v. Subba Rau*, 2 Mad. H. C. 1, 5; *Anundayyan v. Devarajayyan*, ib. 17; *Saminathaiyan v. Saminthaian*, 4 Mad. H. C. 159; *Sittiaramiyer v. Alagiri*, 3 Mad. Rev. Reg. 189.



Sir G. Campbell mentions an instance in which the Government supposed that they were receiving their revenue as usual, from the individual ryots. It was ascertained that the village had really taken the matter into its own hands, and regularly re-distributed the burthen according to ancient practice among the several occupants (*l*).

Tradition of  
common de-  
scend.

§ 202. The co-sharers in many of these Village Communities are persons who are actually descended from a common ancestor. In many other cases they profess a common descent, for which there is probably no foundation (*m*). In some cases it is quite certain there can be no common descent, as they are of different castes, or even of different religions (*n*). But it is well known that in India the mere fact of association produces a belief in a common origin, unless there are circumstances which make such an identity plainly impossible. I have often heard a witness say of another man that he was his relation, and then upon cross-examination explain that he was of the same caste. The ideas presented themselves to his mind, not as two but as one. An instance is given by Sir H. S. Maine, in which some missionaries planted in villages converts collected from all sorts of different regions. They rapidly adopted the language and habits of a brotherhood, and will no doubt before long frame a pedigree to account for their juxtaposition (*o*). It is evident that an actual community of descent must depend upon mere accident. If a family settled in an unoccupied district, it might spread out till it formed one community, or several Village Communities. The same result might happen if a family became sufficiently powerful to turn out its neighbours, or to reduce them to submission. Where the country was more thickly peopled, several families would have to unite from the first for

---

(*l*) Land Tenures, Cobden Club, 197.

(*m*) Punjab Customs, 136, 164; Maine, Vill. Com. 12, 175; Early Instit. 1, 64; Lyall, Asiatic Studies, ch. vii; Hunter's Orissa, ii 72; McLennan, 214. It must be remembered that the co-sharers of a village are a much smaller body than the inhabitants.

(*n*) Maine, Vill. Com. 176; *Muniappa v. Kasturi*, Mad Dec. of 1862, 50.

(*o*) Maine, Early Instit. 238.



mutual protection, and would in time begin to account in the usual way for the fact that they found themselves united in interest. Families which settled, or sprung up, in regions that were fully occupied never could form new communities based on the possession of land.

§ 203. As it is certain that Village Communities have not always sprung from a single Joint Family, so it is equally certain that a Joint Family does not necessarily tend to expand into a Village Community. For instance, the Nairs, whose domestic system presents the most perfect form of the Joint Family now existing, never have formed Village Communities. Each *tarwad* lives in its own mansion, nestling among its palm trees, and surrounded by its rice lands, but apart from, and independent of, its neighbours. This arises from the peculiar structure of the family, which traces its origin in each generation to females, who live on in the same ancestral house, and not to males, who would naturally radiate from it, as separate but kindred branches of the same tree. In a lesser degree the same thing may be said of the Kandhs. Among them the Patriarchal Family is found in its sternest type. But though the families live together in septs and tribes, tracing from a common ancestor, and acknowledging a common head, and although their hamlets have a deceptive similarity to a Hindu village, they want the one element of union—there is no unity of authority, and no community of rights. Each family holds its property in severalty, and never held it in any other way. It is absolute owner of the land it occupies; and it ceases to have any interest in the land which it abandons. The chieftain has influence, but not authority. The families live in proximity, but not in cohesion. They are not branches of one tree, but a collection of twigs (*p*). This, again, seems to arise from the circumstances of their position. With them land is so abundant, and their wants so few, that it has never been

Joint families do not always expand into village communities.

Kandhs.

necessary to restrain the individual for the benefit of the community. Where the common stock is limited, it is necessary to make rules for its enjoyment; but where all can have as much as they want, no one would take the trouble to make rules, and no one would submit to them if made.

Arrested expansion of the Patriarchal Family.

§ 204. The same causes which have prevented the Joint Family from extending into the Village Community, appear also to check the Patriarchal Family at the stage at which it would naturally expand into the Joint Family. For instance, among the Kandhs, at the death of the father, the family union, which previously was absolute, appears to dissolve. The property is divided, and each son sets up for himself as a new head of a family (*q*). Among the Hill Tribes of the Nilgiris, and among the Kols, the same practice prevails (*r*).

§ 205. It would appear, therefore, that in tracing society backwards to its cradle, one of the earliest, if not the earliest, unit, is the Patriarchal Family. In the language of Sir H. S. Maine (*s*), "Thus all the branches of human society may, or may not, have been developed from joint families which arose out of an original Patriarchal cell; but, wherever the Joint Family is an institution of an Aryan race (*t*), we see it springing from such a cell, and, when it dissolves, we see it dissolving into a number of such cells."

Its origin and nature.

§ 206. The Patriarchal Family may be defined as "a group of natural, or adoptive, descendants held together by subjection to the eldest living ascendant, father, grand-

---

(*q*) Hunter's Orissa, ii. 79.

(*r*) Breeks, Primitive Tribes of the Nilgiris, 9, 39, 42, 68.

(*s*) Early Institutions, 118. I have retained the following pages unaltered, notwithstanding the attack lately made upon Sir H. S. Maine's views by Mr. McLennan. Patriarchal Theory, 1885. For a reply to that work, so far as it affects Hindu Law, see an article by the present author in the Law Quarterly Review, I. 485. For a general reply, see the London Quarterly Review, Jan. 1886.

(*t*) This qualification was no doubt intended to exclude cases where the Joint Family is of a polyandrous type.

father, or great-grandfather. Whatever be the formal prescription of the law, the head of such a group is always in practice despotic ; and he is the object of a respect, if not always of an affection, which is probably seated deeper than any positive institution" (*u*). The absolute authority over his family possessed by the Roman father in virtue of this position is well known. A very similar authority was once possessed by the Hindu father. Manu says, "Three persons a wife, a son, and a slave, are declared by law to have in general no wealth exclusively their own ; the wealth which they may earn is regularly acquired for the man to whom they belong" (*v*). And so Narada says of a son, "he is of age and independent, in case his parents be dead ; during their lifetime he is dependent, even though he be grown old" (*w*). But this doctrine was not peculiar to the Aryan races. Among the Kandhs it is stated that "in each family the absolute authority rests with the house father. Thus, the sons have no property during their father's lifetime ; and all the male children, with their wives and descendants, continue to share the father's meal, prepared by the common mother" (*x*). An indication of a similar usage still exists among the Tamil inhabitants of Jaffna, where all acquisitions made by the sons while unmarried, except mere presents given to them, fall into the common stock (*y*). As soon as they are married, it would appear that each becomes the head of a new family.

§ 207. The transition from the Patriarchal to the Joint Family arises (where it does arise) at the death of the common ancestor, or head of the house. If the family choose to continue united, the eldest son would be the natural head (*z*). But it is evident that his position would be very different from that of the deceased Patriarch. The former

Origin of Joint Family.

Difference between Patri-

(*u*) Early Institutions, 116 ; Ancient Law, 133. Here seems to be the origin of the great Hindu canon of inheritance, that the funeral cake stops at the third in descent. See *post*, § 474.

(*v*) Manu, viii. § 416 ; Narada, v. § 39 ; Sancha & Lich., 2 Dig. 526.

(*w*) Narada, iii. § 38. See to Sancha & Lich., 2 Dig. 533.

(*x*) Hunter's Orissa, ii. 72.

(*y*) Thesawaleme, iv. 5.

(*z*) Manu, ix. § 105.

Patriarchal and Joint  
Family.

was head of the family by a natural authority. The latter can only be so by a delegated authority. He is *primus* but *inter pares*. Therefore, in the first place, he is head by choice, or by natural selection, and not by right. The eldest is the most natural, but not the necessary head, and he may be set aside in favour of one who is better suited for the post. Hence Narada says (a), "Let the eldest brother, by consent, support the rest like a father; or let a younger brother, who is capable, do so; the prosperity of the family depends on ability." And so the old Toda, when asked which of his sons would take his place, replied, "the wisest (b)." In the next place the extent of his authority is altered. He is no longer looked upon as the owner of the property, but as its manager (c). He may be an autocrat as regards his own wife and children, but as regards collaterals he is no more than the president of a republic. Even as regards his own descendants, it is evident that his power will tend gradually to become weaker. The property which he manages is property in which they have the same interest as the other members of the family. The restrictions which fetter him in dealings with the property as against collaterals, will, by degrees, attach to his dealings with it as against his own children. They also will come to look upon him as the manager, and not as the father. The apparent conflict between many of the texts of Hindu sages as to the authority of the father, may, perhaps, be traced to this source. Those which refer to the father as head of the Patriarchal Family will attribute to him higher powers than those which refer to him as head of a Joint Family.

Not in necessary  
sequence.

§ 208. We have already seen (d) that the step from the Patriarchal to the Joint Family is one which, in some states of society, never takes place. Conversely the Joint Family is by no means necessarily preceded by the Patriarchal Family. For instance, the Nair system absolutely excludes

(a) Narada, xiii. § 5.

(b) Breake, Primitive Tribes, 9.

(c) See Maine, Early Institutions, 116.

(d) *Ante*, § 204.

the Patriarchal idea. Its essence is the tracing of kinship through females, and not through males. Mr. McLennan considers that the Nair system was the necessary antecedent of the patriarchal form of relationship. According to his view, the loose relation between the sexes in early ages first settled into polyandry. Where it existed in its rudest shape, in which a woman associated with men unrelated to each other, the only family group that could be formed would be that of the mother and her children, and the children of such of them as were females. This is the Nair type, and still exists in the Canarese and Malabar *tarwâds*. Here kinship by females was alone possible. When the woman passed into the possession of several males of the same family, the circle of possible paternity became narrowed. The wife then lived in the house of her husbands, and the children were born in their home as well as hers. They could be identified as the offspring of some one of the husbands, though not with certainty as the offspring of any particular one. This was the first dawning of kinship through males. It is the species of polyandry that exists in Thibet, Ceylon, among the Todas on the Nilghiri Hills and elsewhere. Where the woman was the wife of several brothers, the eldest, to whom she was first married, would naturally have a special claim upon her, and could be ascertained to be the father of the children who were first born. By degrees this special claim would change into an exclusive claim, and so a system of absolute monandry would arise, and the Patriarchal Family become possible (e). Substantially the same view is put forward by Dr. Mayr in a less elaborate form (f). Now, as the

Polyandrous  
origin of family  
system.

(e) McLennan, *Studies in Ancient History. Patriarchal Theory*. See further discussion on the same subject in Spencer's *Principles of Sociology*, I, chaps. iii—viii.; *Fortnightly Review*, May and June, 1877; and in Mr. Morgan's "*Ancient Society*," Part III. Mr. C. Staniland Wake, "*The development of marriage and kinship*," chapters ii, viii, ix, x. Mr. Edward Westermarck, "*The History of Human Marriage*," chapters iv. v., Maxime Kovalevsky, "*Tableau des Origines et de l'Evolution de la Famille et de la Propriete*," *Leçons* i—v.

(f) Ind. Erbrecht, pp. 72—76. He appears not to have been acquainted with Mr. McLennan's work on *Primitive Marriage*, and bases his theory on the cruder speculations of Sir J. Lubbock, as to the early prevalence of what the latter terms "*Communal Marriage*." Lubbock, *Origin of Civilisation*, chap. iii.



tenure of property always moulds itself to the family relations of the persons by whom it is held, the result would be that property would first be held by the entire tribe; next by those who claimed relationship to a common mother; and next by a family, tracing either from several males, or from a single male. According to this theory, the Patriarchal Family would always be evolved from a wider Joint Family, instead of the reverse.

Theory discussed.

§ 209. It seems to me that the fallacy of these speculations consists in assuming that a cause, which is sufficient to produce a particular result, is the cause which has invariably produced that result. It is certain that polyandry, and the female group-system of property, has a tendency to change into monandry, and individual property. We have seen the process going on among the Kandyan chiefs of Ceylon, and the Todas evince the same tendency (*g*). I have been told that fidelity to a single husband is becoming common among the Nair woman of the better class (*h*). And it is certain that the Malabar *tarwâds* would long since have broken up into families, each headed by a male, if our Courts had allowed them to do so. It is equally certain that the Patriarchal Family is capable of expanding, and has a tendency to expand into the wider Joint Family, for we see instances of it every day. Every Hindu who starts with nothing, and makes a self-acquired fortune, is a pure and irresponsible patriarch. But we know that in a couple of generations his offspring have ramified into a Joint Family, exactly, to use Mr. McLennan's simile, like a banyan tree which has started with a single shoot. It may possibly be that the Village Communities and undivided families of Southern India have originated among polyandrous tribes,

---

(*g*) McLennan, 195; Brecks, Primitive Tribes, 9. Mr. Lewis H. Morgan gives numerous instances of the same transition among the American Indian tribes.

(*h*) Mr. Wigram in his work on Malabar Law and Custom, Introduction iii. says, "But polyandry may now be said to be dead, and although the issue of a Nair marriage are still children of their mother rather than of their father, marriage may be defined as a contract based on mutual consent and dissoluble at will. It has been well said that nowhere is the marriage tie, albeit informal, more rigidly observed or respected than it is in Malabar; nowhere is it more jealously guarded, or its neglect more savagely avenged."

for we have evidence of the recent existence of polyandry among the Dravidian races (§ 59). But it is difficult to attribute to the same cause the existence of similar organizations among the Aryan races of Northern India. We know that the village and family system in these races must be of enormous antiquity, because we find an exactly similar system existing among the kindred races which branched off from them before history commenced. It is impossible to say that the ancestors of the common race were not polyandrous, but it is almost certain that their descendants neither are nor have been so during any period known to tradition (§ 60). It is difficult therefore to imagine that polyandry could have been the necessary antecedent of a system of property, which is able to flourish in every part of the world under exactly opposite conditions.

§ 210. The following suggestions seem to me capable of accounting for all the known facts, and are equally applicable to any families, however formed.

I assume that an original tribe, finding themselves in any tract of country, would consider that tract to be the property of the tribe; that is to say, they would consider that the tribe, as a body, had a right to the enjoyment of the whole of the tract, in the sense of excluding any similar body from a similar enjoyment (*i*). It would never occur to them that any individual member of the tribe had a right to exclude any other member permanently from any part of it; they would hunt over it and graze over it in common. When they came to cultivate the land, each would cultivate the portion he required. The produce would go to support himself and his family, but the land would be the common property of all. So long as the ratio between population and land was such as to enable any one to occupy as much as he liked, and when the land was exhausted, to throw it up and exhaust another patch, the community would have

Tribal rights.

---

(*i*) This is the sort of right which the Red Indians are always asserting against the Americans.

Growth of  
restrictions.

Private pro-  
perty.

no motive for restraining him in so doing. His rights would appear to be unlimited, merely because no one had an interest in limiting them. The same cause would produce the continual break-up of families. They might cling together for mutual protection ; but as soon as each fraction grew strong enough to protect itself, it would wander apart to seek fresh pasturage for its flocks, or virgin soil for its crops (*k*). This is the condition of the hill tribes of India at present. But it would be different when population began to press upon subsistence, either from the increase of the original tribe, or from the closing in of adjoining tribes. Then the unlimited use of the land by one would be a limitation of its use by another. An individual or a family might be sufficiently strong to enforce an exclusive possession, but every one could not encroach upon every one else. The community would assert its right to put each of its members upon an allowance. That allowance would be apportioned on principles of equality, giving to each family according to its wants. The mode of apportionment might be, either by throwing all the produce into a common stock, and then re-distributing it, as in a communal Zemin-dari village ; or by allotting separate portions of land to each family, with reference to the number of its members, as in a *pattidari* village. In the latter case equality would probably be from time to time restored by an exchange and re-distribution of shares, as in the Russian Mir, and the Pathan communities. In time this periodical dislocation of society would cease: it would tend to die out when the members began to improve their own shares. In the Punjab it is found that community has died out in spots whose cultivation depends entirely upon wells (*l*). Gradually the shares would come to be looked upon as private property. The idea of community would be limited to a joint interest in the village waste, and a joint responsibility for the claims of Government. This is the *bhaiacharry* village. If Government chose to settle with each individual instead of with the

(*k*) See the separation of Abraham and Lot, in Genesis, xiii.

(*l*) Punjab Customs, 128

village, the members would be exactly in the same position as the Mirasidars of Southern India.

§ 211. During the whole of this time the family system might be going through a series of analogous changes. The same causes which led to the compression or disruption of the tribe would lead to the compression or disruption of the family. The same feeling of common ownership which caused the tribe to look upon the whole district as their joint property, would cause the family to look upon their allotment in the same way. The same sense of individual property which led to the break-up of the village into shares, would lead to the break-up of the family by partition. But as the motives for union are stronger in a family than in a village, the union of the family would be more durable than that of the village. And this, in fact, we find to be the case.

Progress of the family.

§ 212. The ancient Hindu writers give us little information as to the earlier stages of the law of property. So far as property consisted in land, they found a system in force which had probably existed long before their ancestors entered the country, and they make little mention of it, unless upon points as to which they witnessed, or were attempting innovations. No allusion to the village coparcenary is found in any passage that I have met. *Manu* refers to the common pasturage, and to the mode of settling boundary disputes between villages, but seems to speak of a state of things when property was already held in severalty (*m*). But we do find scattered texts which evidence the continuance of the village system, by showing that the rights of a family in their property were limited by the rights of others outside the family. For instance, as long as the land held by a family was only portioned out by the community for their use, it is evident that they could not dispose of it to a stranger without the consent of the general body. This is probably the real import of two anonymous texts cited in the *Mitakshara*: "Land passes by six form-

Early Hindu writers.

Limitation of family rights.



alities ; by consent of townsmen, of kinsmen, of neighbours and of heirs, and by gift of gold and water.” “ In regard to the immoveable estate, sale is not allowed ; it may be mortgaged by consent of parties interested” (*n*). This would also explain the text of Vrihaspati, cited Mitakshara, i., 1, § 30. “ Separated kinsmen, as those who are unseparated, are equal in respect of immoveables, for one has not power over the whole, to make a gift, sale or mortgage.” It is evident that partition would put an end to further rights within the family, but would not affect the rights which the divided members, in common with the rest of the village sharers, might possess as ultimate reversioners. Consequently they would retain the right to forbid acts by which that reversion might be affected. And this is the law in the Punjab to the present day (*o*). Perhaps the text of Uçanas, who states that land was “ indivisible among kinsmen even to the thousandth degree” (*p*), may be referred to the same cause.

**Right of pre-emption.**

§ 213. A further extension of the rights of co-sharers place, when each sub-division was saleable, but the members of the community had a right of pre-emption, so as to keep the land within their own body. This right exists, and is recognized at present by statute, in the Punjab (*q*). The existence of an exactly similar right among the Tamil inhabitants of Northern Ceylon is recorded in the Thesawaleme (*r*).

§ 214. With the exception of these scattered and doubtful hints, the Sanskrit writers take up the history of the

(*n*) Mitakshara, i. 1, § 31, 32 ; see to Vivada Chintamani, p. 309. It will be observed that here, as in other cases, Vijnaneswara gives the texts an explanation which makes them harmonize with the law as known to him. But it is more probable that they were once literal statements of a law which in his time had ceased to exist. See Mayr, 24, 30.

(*o*) Punjab Customs, 73.

(*p*) Mitakshara, i. 4, § 26. See Mayr, 31.

(*q*) Punjab Customs, 186 ; Act XII of 1878, § 2.

(*r*) Thesawaleme, vii. § 1, 2. The right of pre-emption is there said to extend to the vendor's “ heirs or partners, and to such of his neighbours whose grounds are adjacent to his land, and who might have the same in mortgage, should they have been mortgaged.”



family at a period when it had become an independent unit, unrestrained by any rights external to itself. As regards the rights of the members, *inter se*, their statements are very meagre. The *status* of the undivided family was, apparently, too familiar to every one to require discussion. They only notice those new conditions which were destined to bring about the dissolution of the family itself. These were *Self-Acquisition*, *Partition* and *Alienation*.

§ 215. SELF-ACQUIRED PROPERTY in the earliest state of Indian society did not exist (*s*). So where the family was of the purely Patriarchal type, the whole of the property was owned by the father, and all acquisitions made by the members of the family were made for him, and fell into the common stock (*t*). When the Joint Family arose, self-acquisition became possible, but was gradual in its rise. While the family lived together in a single house, supported by the produce of the common land, there could be no room for separate acquisition. The labour of all went to the common stock, and if one possessed any special aptitude for making clothes or implements of husbandry, his skill was exercised for the common benefit, and was rewarded by an interchange of similar good offices, or by the improvement of the family property, and the increased comfort of the family home. But as civilization advanced, and commerce arose, new modes of industry were discovered, which had no application to the joint property. As the family had only a claim upon its members for their assistance in the cultivation of the land, and the ordinary labours of the household, they could not compel the exertion of any special form of skill, unless it was to meet with a special reward. It was recognized that a member, who chose to abandon his claims upon the family property, might do so, and thenceforward pursue his own special occupation for his own exclusive profit (*u*). But it might be for the advantage of all to keep

Origin of self-acquired property.

(*s*) See Mayr, 28.

(*t*) Manu, viii. § 416; *ante*, § 206.

(*u*) Manu, ix. § 207; Yajnavalkya, ii. § 116; Mayr, 29, 43.

the specially gifted member in the community by allowing him to retain for himself the fruits of his special industry. On the other hand, an injury would be done to the family, if, while living at its expense, he did not contribute his fair share of labour to its support, or if he used any appreciable portion of the family property for the purpose of producing that which he afterwards claimed as exclusively his own. The doctrine of self-acquired property sprung from a desire to reconcile these conflicting interests.

Its earliest  
forms.

§ 216. The earliest forms of self-acquisition appear to have been the gains of science and valour, peculiar to the Brahman and the Kshatriya. Wealth acquired with a wife, gifts from relations or friends, and ancestral property, lost to the family, and recovered by the independent exertions of a single member, were also included in the list; and Manu laid down the general rule, "What a brother has acquired by labour or skill, without using the patrimony, he shall not give up without his assent, for it was gained by his own exertion" (v). But we can see that self-acquisitions were at first not favoured, and that Manu's formula was rather strained against the acquirer than for him. Katyayana and Vrihaspati refuse to recognize the gains of science as self-acquisition, when they were earned by means of instruction imparted at the expense of the family (w); and Vyasa similarly limits the gains of valour, if they were obtained with supplies from the common estate, such as a vehicle, a weapon, or the like, only allowing the acquirer to retain a double share (x). It would also seem doubtful whether the acquirer was originally entitled to the exclusive possession of the whole of his acquisitions. Vasishttha says, "If any of the brothers has gained something by his own efforts, he receives a double share." This text is supposed by Dr. Mayr to mark a stage at which the only benefit obtained by the acquirer was a right to retain, on partition,

Not favoured.

(v) Manu, ix. § 206—209; Gautama, xxviii. § 27, 28; Narada, xiii. § 6, 10, 11; Vyasa, 3 Dig. 333.

(w) 3 Dig. 333, 340.

(x) 3 Dig. 71; V. May, iv. 7, § 12.

an extra portion of the fruits of his special industry (*y*). If that be the correct explanation, the text of Vyasa just quoted shows a further step in advance. He restricts the rights of the acquirer, only in cases where assistance, however slight, has been obtained from the family funds; as where a warrior has won spoil in battle, by using the family sword or chariot. In later times all trace of such a restriction had passed away. The text of Vasishtha had lost its original meaning, and was explained as extending Manu's rule, not as restricting it; and as establishing that a member of a family, who made use of the patrimony to obtain special gains, was entitled to a double portion as his reward (*z*). This is evidently opposed both to the spirit and the letter of the ancient law. It has, however, come to be the present rule in Bengal, as we shall see hereafter § (264).

§ 217. It does not appear that an acquirer had from the first an absolute property in his acquisition, to the extent of disposing of it in any way he thought fit. Originally the benefit which he derived from a special acquisition seems to have come to him in the form of a special share at the time of partition (*a*). While the family remained undivided, he would be entitled to the exclusive use of his separate gains. If he died undivided, they would probably fall into the common stock (*b*). Probably he was only allowed to alienate, where such alienation was the proper mode of enjoying the use of the property. This would account for the distinction which is drawn between self-acquired movables and immovables. The right to alienate the former is universally admitted by the commentators, but the Mitakshara cites with approval a text, which states that, "Though immova-

Right over self-acquisitions.

(*y*) Vasishtha, xvii. § 51; Mayr, 29, 30; Dr. Burnell's translation of Varadrajah (p. 31) renders it, "If any of them have self-acquired property, let him take two shares." The text seems to be similarly interpreted by Jimuta Vahana. Daya Bhaga, ii. § 41. See *post*, 265.

(*z*) Mitakshara, i. 4, § 29; Daya Bhaga, vi. 1, § 24—29.

(*a*) Vishnu, xvii. § 1; Yajnavalkya, ii. 118—120, and texts referred to at note (*v*).

(*b*) This is at present the case with the Nambudri Brahmans of the West Coast (11 Mad. 162), as to whom, see *ante*, § 42.

bles or bipeds have been acquired by a man himself, a gift or sale of them should not be made without convening all the sons" (c). According to the existing Malabar law, a member of a *tarwâd* may make separate acquisitions, and dispose of them as he pleases during his life; but anything that remains undisposed of at his death becomes part of the family property (d). According to the Thesawaleme a member of an undivided family appears to have more power of disposal over self-acquired than he has over ancestral property, but not an absolute power (e).

Originally unknown.

§ 218. PARTITION of family property, so far as that property consisted of land, could not arise until the land possessed by each family had come to be considered the absolute property of the family, free from all claims upon it by the community. Nor would there be any very strong reason for partition, as long as the bulk of the property consisted of land. It would furnish a better means of subsistence to the members when it remained in a mass, than when it was broken up into fragments. The influence of the head of the family, and the strong spirit of union which is characteristic of Eastern races, would tend to preserve the family coparcenary, long after the looser village bond had been dissolved. In Malabar and Canara, at the present day, no right of partition exists. In some cases, where the family has become very numerous, and owns property in different districts, the different branches have split into distinct *tarwâds*, and become permanently separated in estate. But this can only be done by common consent. No one

---

(c) Mitakshara, i. 1, § 27. This text is ascribed by Mr. Colebrooke to Vyasa. In the Vivada Chintamani, p. 309, it is attributed to Prakasha, while Jagannatha quotes it as from Yajnavalkya, 2 Dig. 110. How far this is still the law in Southern India appears unsettled. See *post*, § 318. The Viramitrodaya treats the consent of the sons to the alienation of self-acquired and immovable property, like that of separated members to the alienation of separated immovable property as being desirable for purposes of evidence, but not necessary as a matter of law. Viramit, p. 87, § 22.

(d) *Kallati v. Palat*, 2 Mad. H. C. 162; *Vira Rayen v. Valia Rani*, 3 Mad. 141; *Ryrappen Numbiar v. Kelu Kurup*, 4 Mad. 150. By the Alya Santana law of South Canara such acquisitions pass to the personal representatives of the acquirer. *Antamma v. Kaveri*, 7 Mad. 575.

(e) Thesawaleme, ii. § 1.



member, nor even all but one, can enforce a division upon any who object (*f*). The text of Uçanas, already quoted (*g*), which forbids the division of land among kinsmen, seems to evidence a time when the Hindu joint family was as indivisible as the Malabar *tarwâd* (*h*).

§ 219. Partition would begin to be desired, when self-acquisitions became common and secure. A man who found that he was earning wealth more rapidly than the other members of his family, would naturally desire to get rid of their claims upon his industry, and to transmit his fortune entire to his own descendants. This is one of the commonest motives which brings about divisions at present. But the family feeling against partition is so strong (*i*), since what one gains all the others lose, that it is probable the usage would have had a painful struggle for existence, if it had not been supported by the strongest external influence, *viz.*, that of the Brahmans. This support it certainly had. As long as a family remained joint, all its religious ceremonies were performed by the head. But as soon as it broke up, a multiplication of ceremonies took place, in exact ratio to the number of fractions into which it was resolved. Hence a proportionate increase of employment and emolument for the Brahmans. The Sanskrit writers are perfectly frank in advocating partition on this very ground. Manu says (*k*). “Either let them live together, or if they desire religious rites, let them live apart; since religious duties are multiplied in separate houses, their separation is therefore legal,”—to which Kulluka adds, in a gloss, “*and even laudable!*” And so Gautama says (*l*), “If a division takes place, more spiritual merit is acquired.”

Its origin.

Stimulated by  
Brahmanism.

(*f*) *Munda Chetty v. Timmaju*, 1 Mad. H. C. 380; *Timmappa v. Mahalinga*, 4 Mad. H. C. 28. The same rule applies in the case of the Nambudri Brahmans who are governed by Hindu law of a primitive character, 11 Mad. 162; *ante*, § 42.

(*g*) *Ante*, § 212.

(*h*) See Mayr, 31, 43.

(*i*) I have been assured that even in Bengal, where the family tie is so loose, no one can enforce a division except at the cost of all natural love and harmony. In Madras I have invariably found that a family feud was either the cause, or the consequence, of a suit for partition.

(*k*) ix. § 111.

(*l*) xxviii. § 4.



Its development.

Malabar  
tarwâd.

Originally sub-  
ject to consent  
of father.

§ 220. It was, however, by very slow steps that the right to a partition reached its present form. At first it is possible that a member who insisted on leaving the family for his own purposes, went out with only a nominal share, or such an amount as the other members were willing to part with (*m*). This is the more probable, since, so long as the family retained its Patriarchal form, the son could certainly not have compelled his father to give him a share at all, or any larger portion than he chose. The doctrine that property was by birth—in the sense that each son was the equal of his father—had then no existence. The son was a mere appendage to his father, and had no rights of property as opposed to him (*n*). The family was then in the same condition as a Malabar *tarwâd* is now. There the property is vested in the head of the family, not merely as agent or principal partner, but almost as an absolute ruler. The right of the other members is only a right to be maintained in the family house, so long as that house is capable of holding them. The scale of expenditure to be adopted, and its distribution among the different members, is a matter wholly within the discretion of the *karnaven*. No junior member can claim an account, or call for an appropriation to himself of any special share of the income. Partition, as we have already seen, can never be demanded (*o*). It is quite certain that in the earlier period of Hindu law, no son could compel his father to come to a partition with him. Manu speaks only of a division after the death of the father, and says expressly that the brothers have no power over the property while the parents live. Kulluka Bhatta adds in a gloss, “unless the father chooses

(*m*) *Ante*, § 215, note (*u*). See *Peddayya v. Ramalingam*, 11 Mad. 406.

(*n*) *Manu*, viii. § 416; *ante*, § 206.

(*o*) *Kunigaratu v. Arrangaden*, 2 Mad. H. C. 12; *Subbu Hegadi v. Tongu*, 4 Mad. H. C. 196; *ante*, § 218, note (*f*); *Varanakot v. Varanakot*, 2 Mad. 328. As to separate Maintenance, see *Peru Nayar v. Ayyappan*, *ib.* 282. *Narayani v. Govinda*, 7 Mad. 352. As to power of removing the *Karnaven* for imprudent management, see *Ponambilath Kunhamod v. Ponambilath Kuttiath*, 8 Mad. 169. As to cases where a *tarwâd* is split up into several *taverais*, or sub-divisions, see *Chalayil Kandotha v. Chathu*, 4 Mad. 169; *Mammali v. Pakki*, 7 Mad. 428. As to one member having separate property, as affecting his right to maintenance, see *Thaya v. Shungunni*, 5 Mad. 71.

to distribute it" (*p*). This was no doubt added because the actual or mythical Manu did himself divide his property among his sons, or was alleged by the Veda to have done so, and the fact is put forward by the sages as an authority for such a division (*q*). The consent of the father is also stated by Baudhayana, Gautama, and Devala to be indispensable to a partition of ancestral property (*r*), and Sancha and Lichita even make his consent necessary where the sons desire to have a partition of their own self-acquired property (*s*). Subsequently a partition was allowed even without the father's wish, if he was old, disturbed in intellect, or diseased; that is, if he was no longer fit to exercise his paternal authority (*t*). A final step was taken when it was acknowledged that father and son had equal ownership in ancestral property; that is to say, when the Patriarchal Family had changed into the Joint Family (*u*). It then became the rule that the sons could require a division of the ancestral property, but not of the acquired property (*v*). The joint family then ceased to be a corporation with perpetual succession, and became a mere partnership, terminable at will.

Growth of son's right.

§ 221. The above sequence of rights is perfectly intelligible. It is more difficult to account for the early limitations upon partition with reference to the mother. There seems to be no doubt that originally the right of brothers to divide the family estate was deferred till after the death, not only of the father, but of the mother (*w*). Gautama, Narada and Vrihaspati allow of partition during the

Partition deferred till death of mother.

(*p*) Manu, ix. § 104; see also Vasishtha, xvii. § 23—29. A text of Manu (ix. § 209) is, however, cited in the Mitakshara, (i. 6, § 11) as evidencing the right of sons to compel a partition of the ancestral property held by their father. The translation given by Sir W. Jones (*brethren* for *sons*) is incorrect, see 2 W. & B. xxiv. 1st ed. The text itself refers, not to partition, but to self-acquisition. It contemplates the continuance of the coparcenary, not its dissolution, and points out what property falls into the common stock, and what does not.

(*q*) Apastamba, xiv. § 11; Baudhayana, ii. 2, § 1.

(*r*) Baudhayana, ii. 2, § 4; Gautama, xxviii. 2; Devala, 2 Dig. 522.

(*s*) 2 Dig. 526, 533. (*t*) Sankha, or Harita, cited Mitakshara, i. 2, § 7.

(*u*) See *ante*, § 207; *post*, § 229. (*v*) Vyasa, 3 Dig. 35; Vishnu, xvii. § 1, 2.

(*w*) Manu, ix. § 104; Sancha & Lichita, 2 Dig. 533; Yajnavalkya, ii. § 117; Mitakshara i. 3, § 1—3; Daya Bhaga, iii. § 1.

mother's life, but make it an essential that she should have become incapable of child bearing, or that cohabitation on the part of the father should have ceased ( $x$ ). The latter limitation, which is also the later, may be explained as intended to protect the interests of after-born children ( $y$ ). It would operate as forbidding partition until after possibility of further issue was extinct. But why extend the prohibition to the death of the mother when the father was already dead? It might be suggested that this prohibition was necessary at a time when a widow was authorized to raise up issue by a relation. But it seems to me that it may evidence a time when the widow had a life estate in her husband's property, even though he left issue. It has often been said that the ground on which a widow's right of inheritance is rested, *viz.*, that she is the surviving half of her husband, would be a reason for her inheriting before her sons, instead of after them ( $z$ ). Now according to the Thesawaleme this is actually the rule. Where the father dies leaving children, the mother takes all the property and gives the daughters their dowry, but the sons may not, demand anything as long as she lives ( $a$ ). An indication of such a state of things having once existed may perhaps be found in the text of Sancha and Lichita ( $b$ ), which, after forbidding partition without the father's consent, goes on to say, "Sons who have parents living are not independent, nor even after the death of their father while their mother lives." And similarly Narada makes the dependence of sons, however old, last during the life of both parents; and, in default of the father, places the authority of the mother before that of her first-born ( $c$ ).

( $x$ ) Gautama, xxviii. § 2; Narada, xiii. § 3; 3 Dig. 48.

( $y$ ) Daya Bhaga, i. § 45. The Sarusvati Vilasa, p. 12, § 61 treats it as introduced in the father's interest, so as to secure him against a compulsory partition, so long as he might wish to marry again.

( $z$ ) See 3 Dig. 79.

( $a$ ) Thesawaleme, i. § 9.

( $b$ ) 2 Dig. 533.

( $c$ ) Narada, iii. § 38, 40: "He is of age and independent in case his parents be dead. During their lifetime he is dependent, even though he be grown old. Of the two parents the father has the greater authority, since the seed is worth more than the field; in default of the father, the mother; in her default, the first-born. These are never subject to any control from dependent persons they are fully entitled to give orders, and make gifts or sales."

§ 222. When we come to the commentators who wrote at a time when all these restrictions had passed away, we find that the above passages had lost all meaning for them. But no Hindu lawyer admits that any sacred text can conflict with existing law. As usual, they attempt to reconcile the irreconcilable, either by forced explanations, or by simple collocation of contradictory passages, without any effort to explain their bearing upon each other. The *Mitakshara*, in dealing with the time of partition, quotes several of the texts just cited, as establishing that partition, during the father's lifetime, can only be made in three cases, *viz.*, first, when he himself desires it; or secondly, even against his will, when both parents are incapable of producing issue; or thirdly, when the father is addicted to vice, or afflicted with mental or bodily disease (*d*). And so he quotes, without any objection or explanation, the passage which directs partition to take place after the death of both parents (*e*). But in treating of the rights of father and son to ancestral property, he explains these texts as referring only to the self-acquired property of the father, and concludes that "while the mother is capable of bearing more sons, and the father retains his worldly affections, and does not desire partition, a distribution of the grandfather's estate does nevertheless take place by the will of the son" (*f*).

Restrictions  
become obsolete.

*Mitakshara.*

§ 223. The *Smriti Chandrika* explains the passage of Manu, ix. § 104, which defers partition till after the death of both parents, as meaning that the property of each parent can only be divided after his or her decease (*g*). But the result of an involved disquisition as to the right of sons to exact partition during the father's life, appears to be, that as long as the father is competent to beget children, and to manage the family affairs, the sons have not such inde-

*Smriti Chan-  
drika.*

(*d*) *Mitakshara*, i. 2, § 7. The *Viramitrodaya* only recognises the 1st and 3rd cases, (p 49, § 4).

(*e*) *Mitakshara*, i. 8, § 1, 2.

(*f*) *Mitakshara*, i. 6, § 5, 7, 8, 11. To the same effect is the *Mayukha*, iv. § 1—4.

(*g*) *Smriti Chandrika*, i. § 12—17.



pendent power as entitles them to compel him to proceed to a division (*h*).

It will be seen hereafter (*i*), that, until quite lately, the point was still open to discussion in Southern India.

**Bengal writers.**

§ 224. The writers of the Bengal school had to perform an exactly opposite feat of interpretation to that accomplished by those of the Benares school. The latter considered the sons to be joint owners with their father, and had to explain away the texts which restricted or delayed their right to a partition. The former considered that the father was the exclusive owner, and had to explain away the other texts which authorised a partition. The mode in which they attained this result will be found in the first chapter of the *Daya Bhaga*. Jimuta Vahana takes up all the texts which assert that sons cannot compel a partition during the father's lifetime, as supporting his view that property in the sons arises not by birth, but by the death of the father. Consequently, even in the case of ancestral property, there can be no partition during the father's life, without his consent. Upon his death, whether actual or civil, the property of the sons arises for the first time, and with it their right to a division (*k*).

if

§ 225. The condition that the mother should be past child-bearing, is taken by the writers of this school to be a limitation upon the father's power to make a partition, where the property is ancestral, on the ground, that if the ancestral estate were divided while the mother was still productive, the after-born children would be deprived of subsistence (*l*). They also interpret literally the prohibition against partition even after the father's death, while the mother is still alive, and repudiate the explanation that this prohibition

(*h*) *Smṛiti Chandrika*, i. § 19—22, 28—38.

(*i*) *Post*, § 480.

(*k*) *Daya Bhaga*, i. § 11—31, 38—44, 50; ii. § 8. *Raghunandana*, i. 5—14; ii. 26, 34, 35. This appears to be the rule in the Punjab. See *Punjab Customary Law*, II. 168, III. 122.

(*l*) *Daya Bhaga*, i. § 45; *D. K. S.* vi. § 1.



relates to the separate property of the mother (*m*). Later commentators, however, do not allow that the rule is still in force, or get out of it, by the usual Bengal formula, that it is morally wrong but legally valid. In practice neither the mother's death nor consent is now required (*n*).

§ 226. The result of this long history is, that the right to a partition at any time, between co-sharers, is now admitted universally. But the writers of the Bengal school do not allow that sons are co-sharers with their father. Elsewhere all members of a Joint Family are considered to be co-sharers, whether they are related to each other lineally or collaterally. Results.

§ 227. THE RIGHT OF ALIENATION of course proceeds *pari passu* with the development of property from its communal to its individual form. As each new phase of property arose, there was a transitional period before it absolutely escaped from the fetters which had ceased to be properly binding upon it. We have already seen reason to believe, that there was a time when the shares of separated kinsmen in land were not absolutely at their own disposal. But all such restrictions had passed away before the time of Narada (*o*). So it would appear that at first sons were not at liberty to dispose of their own self-acquired property, and it is still an unsettled point whether, under Mitakshara law, a father has absolute control over self-acquired land (*p*). Conversely, a relic of the supreme power of the father, as head of the family, may, perhaps, be found in his asserted right to dispose of ancestral movables at pleasure (*q*). Possibly the absolute obligation of the sons to pay his debts may be traceable to the same source (*r*). Development of right to alienate.

§ 228. As regards joint property, it necessarily followed, from the very essence of the idea, that no one owner could Joint property.

(*m*) Daya Bhaga, iii. § 1—11; D. K. S. vii. § 1. See F. MacN. 37, 57; 1 W. MacN. 49.

(*n*) 8 Dig. 78; 1 W. MacN. 50.

(*p*) Ante, § 206; post, § 233.

(*o*) Ante, § 212; Narada, xiii. § 43.

(*q*) Post, § 231.

(*r*) Post, § 278.

dispose of that which belonged to others along with himself, unless with their consent, or under circumstances of necessity, from which their assent might be implied (*s*). But a most important difference of opinion arose, as to who were joint owners in property, and as to the power of disposal each joint owner had over his own share.

The former point arose with reference to the position of a father in regard to his sons. Where the Joint Family was an enlargement of the Patriarchal Family, the power of the head would necessarily be different, according as he was looked upon as the father of his children, or merely as the manager of a partnership (*t*). The texts which had their origin in the former stage of the family, would necessarily ascribe to him wider powers than those which originated in its later stage. For instance, when Narada says, "women, sons, slaves, and attendants are dependent; but the head of a family is subject to no control in disposing of his hereditary property" (*u*);—he is evidently quoting a text which had once been true of the father as a domestic despot, but which had long since ceased to be true of him as the head of a Joint Family. At each stage of the transition, the original writers, who spoke merely with reference to the facts which were under their own eyes, would speak clearly and unhesitatingly. When the era of commentators arrived, who had to weave a consistent theory out of conflicting texts, all of which they were bound to consider as equally holy and equally true, controversy would begin. Those who wished to diminish the father's authority would quote the later texts. Those who wished to enlarge his authority would quote the earlier texts. This is exactly what took place.

§ 229. The author of the Mitakshara enters into an elaborate disquisition, as to whether property in the son arises for the first time by partition, or the death of the previous

---

(*s*) Vyasa, 1 Dig. 455; 2 Dig. 189. (1) Ante, §

owner, or exists previously by birth (v). He quotes two anonymous texts, "The father is master of the gems, pearls, coral, and of all other (movable property), but neither the father nor the grandfather is of the whole immovable estate;" and this other passage, "By favour of the father, clothes and ornaments are used, but immovable property may not be consumed even with the father's indulgence" (w). He sums up his views in § 27, 28, as follows:—"Therefore it is a settled point that property in the paternal or ancestral estate is by birth, although the father have independent power in the disposal of effects other than immovables for indispensable acts of duty, and for purposes prescribed by texts of law, as gifts through affection, support of the family, relief from distress, and so forth; but he is subject to the control of his sons and the rest in regard to the immovable estate, whether acquired by himself or inherited from his father or other predecessor; since it is ordained, 'though immovables or bipeds have been acquired by a man himself, a gift or sale of them should not be made without convening all the sons. They who are born, and they who are yet unbegotten, and they who are still in the womb, require the means of support. No gift or sale should therefore be made.' " An exception to it follows: "Even a single individual may conclude a donation, mortgage, or sale of immovable property during a season of distress, for the sake of the family, and especially for pious purposes."

Property is by birth.

230. The opinion of Vijnanesvara that sons had by birth an equal ownership with the father in respect of ancestral immovable property, is followed by all writers except those of the Bengal school, and is now quite beyond dispute (x). But upon the other points, viz., as to the extent

(v) Mitakshara, i. 1, § 17—27. Viramit., ch. i.

(w) Mitakshara, i. 1, § 21. The former of these texts is cited by Jimuta Vahana, ii. § 22, as from Yajñavalkya, but cannot be found in the existing text. It is also opposed to Yajñavalkya, ii. § 121, quoted, post, § 232.

(x) Smṛiti Chandrika, viii. § 17—20; Madhaviya, § 15, 16; Varadrajah, pp. 4—6; V. May., iv. 1, § 3, 4; Vivada Chintamani, 309. As to whether land purchased with ancestral movable property possesses incidents of ancestral immovable, see § 251.

of the father's power over ancestral movables, and the limitation upon his power over self-acquired land, there is no such harmony, and his own views appear to have been in a state of flux upon the subject.

Father's power  
over movables.

§ 231. As regards movables, it is evident that the head of the family, whether in his capacity as father or as manager, must necessarily have a very large control over them. Money and articles produced to be sold or bartered, he must have the power to dispose of, in the ordinary management of the property. Clothes, jewels, and the like he would apportion to and reclaim from the various members of the family at his discretion. Household utensils, and implements of trade or husbandry, he would buy, exchange and dispose of as the occasion arose. Now, in early times, movable property would be limited to such articles. Even at the present day, not one Hindu family in a thousand possesses any other species of chattel property. The very instance adduced by the text—gems, pearls and corals—points to things over which the father would necessarily have a special control. And the Mayukha says of this very text, “it means the father's independence only in the wearing and other use of ear-rings, rings, &c., but not so far as gift or other alienation. Neither is it with a view to the cessation of the cause of his ownership in the production of a son. This very meaning is made manifest also by the text noticing only gems and such things as are not injured by use” (y).

§ 232. In another portion of the Mitakshara (z) he quotes without comment a text of Yajnavalkya (ii. § 121). “The ownership of father and son is the same in land which was acquired by the grandfather, or in a corrody (or settled income), or in chattels which belonged to him.” This evidently contradicts the idea that the father had any absolute power of disposal over ancestral movables. Further,

(y) V. May., iv. 1, § 5.

(z) Mitakshara, i. 5, § 3.



although in ch. i. 1, § 24, he lays down the general principle, that “the father has power, under the same text, to give away such effects, though acquired by his father;” in § 27, already quoted, he seems to limit this power to the right of disposing of movables for such necessary or suitable purposes as would come within the ordinary powers of the head of a household. It is evidently one thing to bestow a rupee on a beggar, and another to give away the balance at the bank. Lastly, it is important to observe, that none of the later writers in Southern India, who follow the Mitakshara, make any such distinction. They quote the above text of Yajnavalkya, and a similar one from Vrihaspati, which place ancestral movables and immovables on exactly the same footing as regards the son’s right by birth (a).

§ 233. As regards the second point, *viz.*, the restriction upon a father’s power to dispose of his own self-acquired land, Vijnanesvara is equally at variance with himself. He asserts the restriction in the most unqualified terms in the passage already quoted. He denies it in equally unqualified terms in later passage (b). “The grandson has a right of prohibition, if his unseparated father is making a donation, or a sale of effects inherited from the grandfather; but he has no right of interference, if the effects were acquired by the father. On the contrary, he must acquiesce, because he is dependent. Consequently the difference is this: although he have a right by birth in his father’s and in his grandfather’s property, still, since he is dependent on his father in regard to the paternal estate, and since the father has a predominant interest, as it was acquired by himself, the son must acquiesce in the father’s disposal of his own acquired property; but since both have indiscri-

Over self-acquired land.

Mitakshara.

(a) Smṛiti Chandrika, viii. § 17—20; Madhaviya, § 15, 16; Varadrajah, § 4—6. Exactly a similar conflict of opinion to that which is found in the Mitakshara as regards the father’s power of disposal over movable property appears in the Viramitrodaya, at p. 6, § 9; p. 74, § 17, and p. 16, § 30. See the modern decisions on this point, *post*, § 310.

(b) Mitakshara, i. 5, § 9, 10, 11.



Smriti Chandrika.

Vivada Chintamani.

minately a right in the grandfather's estate, the son has a power of interdiction." And in the next paragraph he quotes Manu, ix. § 209, as showing that the father was not compelled to share self-acquired wealth with his sons. The Smriti Chandrika is explicit on the point that as regards all self-acquired property, without any exception, the father has independent power, to the extent of giving it away at his pleasure, or enjoying it himself, and he cites texts of Katyayana and Vrihaspati, which state this to be the rule, as plainly as can be (c). On the other hand, the Vivada Chintamani, which always maintains the rights of the family in their strictest form, cites with approval the same text as that which is relied on by the Mitakshara, as restraining the dealings of the father with self-acquired land (d). But in an earlier chapter the author states the unqualified rule, "Self-acquired property can be given by its owner at his pleasure" (p. 76), and at p. 229 he repeats the same rule expressly as to a father.

Explanation of text.

§ 234. It is probable that the text which is relied on both by the Mitakshara and the Vivada Chintamani, was one of a class of texts which forbid the alienation by a man of his entire property, so as to leave his family destitute (e). To our ideas such a prohibition would seem to be unnecessary. But in India, where generosity to Brahmans was inculcated as the first of virtues, and a life of asceticism and mendicancy was pointed out as the fitting termination of a virtuous career (f), a direction that a man should be just before he was generous, might not have been uncalled for. Whether the direction, so far as it regards self-acquired land, is anything more than a moral precept, is a point which cannot be treated as absolutely settled even now (g).

(c) Smriti Chandrika, viii. § 22—28. Mr. Colebrooke refers to both the Smriti Chandrika and the Madhaviya as laying down exactly the opposite doctrine (2 Stra. H. L. 439, 441). I suppose the passages he refers to are in portions which have not yet been translated. I have been unable to find them.

(d) Vivada Chintamani, p. 309.

(e) See Narada, iv. § 4, 5; Vrihaspati, 2 Dig. 98; Daksha, 2 Dig. 110; Viramit., p. 89.

(f) Manu, vi.

(g) See the modern decisions, *post*, § 818.

§ 235. When we come to Jimuta Vahana, we find that by a little dexterous juggling he arrives at exactly the opposite conclusion from that of the Mitakshara, out of precisely the same premises. He, too, discusses the origin of a son's right in property, with the same elaborate subtlety as Vijnanesvara, and announces as the result of the texts, "That sons have not a right of ownership in the wealth of the living parents, but in the estate of both when deceased" (*h*). The process he adopts is as follows. He relies on the texts of Manu and Devala which prohibit partition in the father's lifetime, without his consent, as showing that the father was the absolute owner of the property (*i*). He then grapples with the text—"The father is master of the gems, pearls and corals, and of all other (movable property), but neither the father nor the grandfather is so of the whole immovable estate." From this he argues, 1. That since the grandfather is mentioned, the text must relate to his effects, *viz.*, to ancestral property; 2. That with regard to such property, "the father has authority to make a gift or other similar disposition of all effects other than land, &c., but not of immovables, a corrody, and chattels, (*i.e.*, slaves);" 3. That even as to land "the prohibition is not against a donation or other transfer of a small part not incompatible with the support of the family. For the insertion of the word 'whole' would be unmeaning (if the gift of even a small part were forbidden)." The other texts which forbid a transfer by one of several joint owners, or even the sale by a father of his own self-acquisitions without the consent of his sons, he dismisses with the simple remark, that they only show a moral offence: "Therefore, since it is denied that a gift or sale should be made, the precept is infringed by making one. But the gift or transfer is not null, for a fact cannot be altered by a hundred texts" (*k*).

The Daya Bhaga.

§ 236. Of course this argument is opposed to the first

Attempt to reconcile usage with texts.

(*h*) Daya Bhaga, i. § 30; D. K. S. vi. § 18. Raghunandana, i. 5—14; ii. 26.

(*i*) Daya Bhaga, i. § 12—34.

(*k*) Daya Bhaga, ii. § 22—30; D. K. S. vi. § 18—20.

principles both of historical and legal reasoning. Manu and Devala forbid compulsory partition at the will of the sons, in order to prevent the family corporation being broken up. The whole object of the prohibition would be frustrated if the father was at liberty to dispose of its property, in whole or in part, at his own pleasure. Not a suggestion is to be found in any writer earlier than Jimuta Vahana himself, that he possessed such a right, or anything approaching to it (*l*). Every authority which speaks of alienation, directly negatives the existence of such a right. It might with equal logic be argued, that the karnaven of a Malabar tarwâd at the present day is absolute owner of its property, because none of the junior members can demand a share. The indissoluble character of the property would furnish as complete an answer to the former claim as it does to the latter. As to the suggestion that what is forbidden may still be valid, Mr. W. MacNaghten points out, that there is a distinction between an improper but legal mode of dealing with a man's self-acquisition, which is wholly his own, and an improper and illegal manner of dealing with ancestral land which is only shared by him with his sons. He was of opinion that, as to the former, the father could dispose of it as he liked, while as to the latter he could only dispose of his own share (*m*). But the badness of the reasoning arose from the fact that Jimuta Vahana considered it necessary to reconcile the usage which had sprung up in Bengal, with the letter of texts which applied to a state of things that had ceased to exist. He was the apologist of a revolution which must have been completed long before he wrote. But from his writings that revolution derived the stability due to a supposed accordance with tradition. If no law-books of a later tone than the Mitakshara had been in existence when our Courts

---

(*l*) The only exception is the text of Narada, cited *ante*, § 228, which, even if it is to be taken literally, plainly refers to a time anterior to that of the Joint Family.

(*m*) 1 W. MacN. Pref., vi. 2—15. See *per East*, C. J., 2 M. Dig 200—204; *per Peacock*, C. J., *Mangala v. Dinanath*, 4 B. L. R. (O. C. J.) 78; S. C. 12. Suth. (A. O. J.) 35. As to the modern decisions, see *post*, § 346.

were established, there can be little doubt that the conscientious logic of English judges would have refused to recognize that the revolution had ever taken place.

§ 237. There are probably no materials in existence which would enable us to trace the causes of that change in popular feeling, and family law, which is marked by the difference between the Mitakshara and the Daya Bhaga. Much was of course due to the natural progress of society. A race so full of commercial activity as the Hindus who were settled along the lower course of the Ganges, would find their growth cramped by the Procrustean bed of ancient tradition. As soon as land came to be looked on as an object of mortgage and sale, the restraints upon alienation imposed by the early law would be found insufferable. But I imagine that the Brahmanical influence helped most strongly in the same direction. Sir H. S. Maine, while discussing a similar transition in Celtic law, says, "When this writer affirms that, under certain circumstances, a tribesman may grant or contract away tribal land, his ecclesiastical leaning constantly suggests a doubt as to his legal doctrine. Does he mean to lay down that the land may be parted with generally, or only that it may be alienated in favour of the Church? This difficulty of construction has an interest of its own. I am myself persuaded that the influence of the Christian Church on law has been very generally sought for in a wrong quarter, and that historians of law have too much overlooked its share in diffusing the conceptions of free contract, individual property, and testamentary succession, through the regions beyond the Roman Empire, which were peopled by communities held together by the primitive tie of consanguinity. It is generally agreed among scholars that churchmen introduced these races to wills and bequests. The Brehon tracts suggest to me at least that, along with the sacredness of bequests, they insisted upon the sacredness of contracts; and it is well known that, in the Germanic countries, their ecclesiastical societies were among the earliest and largest

Suggested explanation of Bengal doctrines.



grantees of public or 'folk' land. The Will, the Contract, and the Separate Ownership, were in fact indispensable to the church as the donee of pious gifts" (n).

**Influence of  
Brahmans.**

§ 238. It seems to me that every word of this passage is applicable to the effect caused by Brahmanical influence upon Hindu law. The moral law, as promulgated by Manu, might be described as a law of gifts to Brahmans. Every step of a man's life, from his birth to his death, required gifts to Brahmans. Every sin which he committed might be expiated by gifts to Brahmans. The huge endowments for religious purposes which are found in every part of India show that these precepts were not a dead letter. Every day's experience of present Indian life shows the practical belief in the efficacy of such gifts. Naturally, every rule of law which threw an impediment in their way would be swept aside as far as possible. And, when we remember that the Brahman was the King's minister in his Cabinet, the King's judge in his Court, it is obvious that it was a mere question of the means that would be adopted to secure the end. Even the earlier writers had led the way, by mingling pious gifts with the necessary purposes which would justify an alienation of family property (o). It was a further step to emancipate the holder of the estate from all control whatever. This was effected in Bengal by the doctrine that a father was absolute owner of the property; and by its further extension, that every collateral member held his share as tenant in common, and not as joint tenant. The favour shown to women, who are always the pets of the priesthood, by allowing them to inherit and to enforce partition in an undivided family, seems to me an additional stage in the same direction. The validity attributed to death-bed gifts for religious objects, which gradually ripened into a complete system of devise (p), completed the downfall of the common law of property in India.

---

(n) Maine, *Early Instit.*, 104.

(o) *Katyayana*, 2 Dig. 96; *Mitakshara*, i. 1, § 28; *Daya Bhaga*, xi. 1, § 63.

(p) See *post*, § 368.



§ 239. There can be no doubt that Brahmanism was rampant among the law writers of Bengal. I think it can be shown that it was this influence which completely remodelled the law of inheritance in that Province, by applying tests of religious efficacy which were of absolutely modern introduction (*q*). We can easily see why this influence was more powerful in Bengal than in Southern and Western India, where the Brahmans had never been so numerous; and than it was in the Punjab, where Brahmanism seems from the first to have been a failure (*r*). But it is difficult to see why a similar system should never have been developed in Benares, which is the very hot-bed of Brahmanism. Much may, perhaps, have been due to the personal character and influence of Jimuta Vahana. It has been supposed that the *Daya Bhaga* was written under the influence of one of the Hindu sovereigns of Bengal, and perhaps even received his name, much as the great work of Tribonian came to bear the name of Justinian (*s*). It would be unphilosophical to suppose that he originated the changes we have referred to. But if he had had the acuteness to see that these changes actually had taken place, the wisdom to adopt them, and the courage to avow that adoption, it is obvious that a work written under such inspiration would take precisely the form of the *Daya Bhaga*. It would be based upon the new system as a fact, while its arguments would be directed to show that the new system was the old one. Its authority would necessarily be accepted as absolute throughout the kingdom, and it would become a fresh starting point for all subsequent treatises on law. On the other hand, the Benares jurists, in consequence of the very strength of their Brahmanism, would continue slavishly to reproduce their old law books, without caring, or daring, to consider

Powerful in Bengal.

Personal influence of Jimuta Vahana.

(*q*) See *post*, § 468, *et seq.*

(*r*) See 2 Muir, S. T. 482; *ante*, § 8.

(*s*) See Colebrooke's Introduction to the *Daya Bhaga*. Dr. Jolly, however, states that the fabulous character of the supposed monarch is now established. Lect. 22. He suggests that the difference between the doctrines of the *Daya Bhaga* and the *Mitakshara* may arise from the fact that Jimuta Vahana followed the views of commentators earlier than Vijnaneswara. *Ibid.* 25. It seems to me difficult to account for the uniformly progressive character of his doctrines by any such supposition.

how far they had ceased to correspond with facts ; just as we find comparatively modern works discussing elaborately the twelve sorts of sons, long after any but two had ceased to be recognized. Conversely, of course, the treatises themselves, both in Bengal and Benares, would alter the current of usage, by affecting the opinion of Pandits and Judges upon any concrete case that was presented for their decision. If any writer of equal authority with Jimuta Vahana had arisen in Southern India, had represented plainly the usages which he found in force, and painted up the picture with a plausible colouring of texts, we should probably find the Mitakshara as obsolete in Madras as it is in Bengal.

Power of father  
to distribute.

§ 240. When Jimuta Vahana had established to his own satisfaction that a father was the absolute owner of property, and that the sons had no right in it till his death, it would seem to follow, as a necessary consequence, that if the father chose to make a partition, he might distribute his estate among his sons exactly as he liked. But this conclusion he declined to draw. Nothing can show the artificial character of his reasoning more strongly than this fact. In the very chapter in which he lays down that the absolute ownership of the father enables him to deal with his ancestral property as he likes, he also lays down that if he chooses to distribute it, he must do so upon general principles of equality, and cannot, even for himself, reserve more than a double share (*t*). He affirms for one purpose the very ownership by birth which he denies for another. The reason probably was, that unequal distributions of a man's property during his life had not become common, and that there was no particular motive for encouraging them. The result, however, possibly was to preserve the family union in many cases in which it would otherwise have been broken up.

Interest of  
coparcener in  
his share.

§ 241. The second point upon which Jimuta Vahana

---

(*t*) Daya Bhaga, ii. § 15—20, 47, 56—82. See the whole subject discussed, *post*, § 449, 451.

differed from the earlier writers, was as to the nature of the interest which each person who was admitted to be a co-sharer, had in the joint property. The point will have to be fully discussed hereafter (*u*). It is enough to say here that the Mitakshara, and those who follow its authority, consider that no coparcener has such an ascertained share, prior to partition, as admits of being dealt with by himself, apart from his fellow sharers (*v*). They look upon every co-sharer as having a proprietary right in the whole estate, subject to a similar right on the part of all the others. Jimuta Vahana, on the other hand, denies the existence of such a general right, and says that their property consists in unascertained portions of the aggregate (*w*). Hence he argues that the text of Vyasa which prohibits sale, gift or mortgage by one of several coparceners, cannot be taken literally, for each has a property consisting in the power of disposal at pleasure (*x*).

§ 242. Another feature of Bengal law which must have helped much to break up the family union, was the favour with which it regarded the rights of women. According to the Benares school, a widow could never inherit unless her husband had been a sole or a separated owner (*y*). This resulted from the nature of his interest in the property. So long as he was undivided, he had not a share but a right to obtain a share by partition. If he died without exercising this right, his interest merged, and went to enlarge the possible shares of the survivors. But according to the Daya Bhaga, a widow inherits to an issueless husband whether he dies divided or undivided. This would have been a logical result of holding that each coparcener during his lifetime held a definite though unascertained share. But though Jimuta Vahana relies upon this as an answer to his opponents, he grounds the right itself upon the texts of

Rights of  
women.

(*u*) See *post*, § 348.

(*v*) See Vyasa, 1 Dig. 455.

(*w*) Daya Bhaga, xi. 1, § 26.

(*x*) Daya Bhaga, ii. § 27 ; 2 Dig. 99—105, 189 ; D. K. S. xi.

(*y*) Mitakshara ii. 1, § 30.

early sages. It is probable that in this respect he may have been really reviving the old law (z). Certainly he was so in allowing the mother a right to obtain a share. But the result is, that in Bengal property falls far more frequently under female control than it does in other parts of India, and we may be certain, with proportionate advantage to the Brahmans.

Wills.

§ 243. I have now traced the changes which the law of property underwent in India, up to the time when its administration fell into English hands. I have not touched upon the subject of wills. The fruitful germ of a system of bequest can be seen in very early writers, but all the evidences of its growth are to be found in the records of the British Courts.

The succeeding chapters will be devoted to a fuller examination of this law, as it has been developed and applied by our tribunals. .

---

(z) Daya Bhaga, xi. 1, § 1—26 ; see *ante*, § 221.

## CHAPTER VIII.

### THE JOINT FAMILY.

§ 244. In discussing the Joint Family or coparcenary which forms the subject of this chapter, we shall have to consider—*first*, who are its members; *secondly*, what is coparcenary property; *thirdly*, self-acquisition, and the burthen of proof when it is set up; *fourthly*, the mode in which the joint property is enjoyed. The historical discussion contained in the previous chapter has shown that originally every Hindu family, and all its property, was not only joint but indivisible. This state of things ceased when partition broke up the family, and when property came to be held in severalty, either as being the share of a divided member, or as being the separate acquisition of one who was still living in a state of union. But the presumption still continues, that the members of a Hindu family are living in a state of union, unless the contrary is established. “The strength of the presumption necessarily varies in every case. The presumption of union is stronger in the case of brothers than in the case of cousins, and the farther you go from the founder of the family, the presumption becomes weaker and weaker” (a). Even where separation, either of person or estate, is established, it can never be more than temporary. The man who has severed his union with his brothers, if he has children, becomes the head of a new joint family, composed of himself and his children, and their issue. And so property, which was the self-acquisition of the first owner, as soon as it descends to his heirs, becomes

Division of  
subject.

Presumption of  
union.

---

(a) *Moro Visvanath v. Ganesh*, 10 Bom H. C. 444, 468; 2 Stra. H. L. 847.



their joint property, with all the incidents of that condition (b).

Its members

§ 245. It is evident that there can be no limit to the number of persons of whom a Hindu joint family consists, or to the remoteness of their descent from the common ancestor, and consequently to the distance of their relationship from each other. But the Hindu coparcenary, properly so called, constitutes a much narrower body. When we speak of a Hindu joint family as constituting a coparcenary, we refer not to the entire number of persons who can trace from a common ancestor, and amongst whom no partition has ever taken place ; we include only those persons who, by virtue of relationship, have the right to enjoy and hold the joint property, to restrain the acts of each other in respect of it, to burthen it with their debts, and at their pleasure to enforce its partition. Outside this body there is a fringe of persons who possess inferior rights such as that of maintenance, or who may, under certain contingencies, hope to enter into the coparcenary. In defining the coparcenary, therefore, it will be necessary somewhat to anticipate matters which have to be more fully treated of hereafter.

§ 246. The Hindu lawyers always treat partition and inheritance as part of the same subject (c). The reason of this is that the normal state of the property with which they have to deal is to be joint property, and that they can only explain the amount of interest which each member has in the property, by pointing out what share he would be entitled to in the event of a partition.

do not succeed  
to each other.

There is no such thing as succession, properly so called, in an undivided Hindu family (d). The whole body of such

(b) *Ram Narain Singh v. Pertum Singh*, 11 B. L. R. 397 ; S. C. 20 Suth. 189.

(c) The works of Jimuta Vahana and Madhaviya are known by names (Daya Bhaga and Daya-vibhaga) which mean simply partition of heritage. See *Bhimul Doss v. Choonee Lall*, 2 Cal. 379, where the right of a nephew to share in the property with his uncles was argued as if he was claiming to succeed to the property before his uncles.

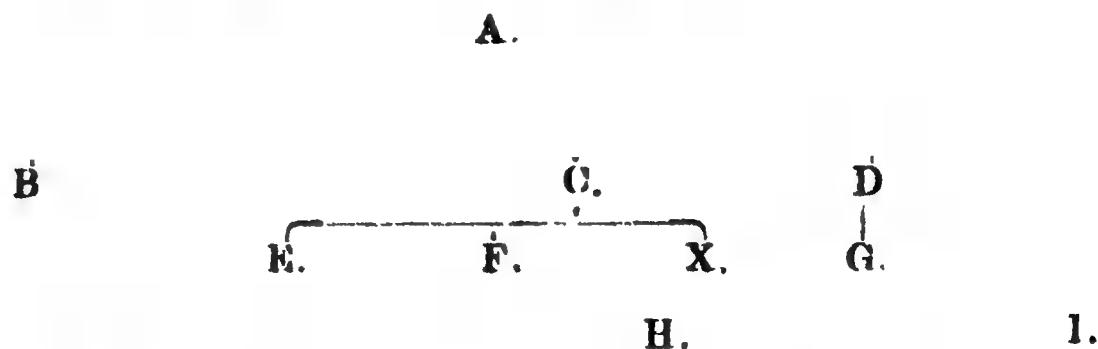
(d) Coparcenary and survivorship are incidents of Hindu law, which are

a family, consisting of males and females, constitutes a sort of corporation, some of the members of which are coparceners, that is, persons who on partition would be entitled to demand a share, while others are only entitled to maintenance. In Malabar and Canara, where partition is not allowed, the idea of heirship would never present itself to the mind of any member of the family. Each person is simply entitled to reside and be maintained in the family house, and to enjoy that amount of affluence and consideration which arises from his belonging to a family possessed of greater or less wealth (§ 220). As he dies out his claims cease, and as others are born their claims arise. But the claims of each spring from the mere fact of their entrance into the family, not from their taking the place of any particular individual. Deaths may enlarge the beneficial interest of the survivors, by diminishing the number who have a claim upon the common fund, just as births may diminish their interests by increasing the number of claimants. But although the fact that A. is the child of B. introduces him into the family, it does not give him any definite share of the property, for B. himself has none. Nor upon the death of B. does he succeed to anything, for B. has left nothing behind to succeed to. Now in the rest of India the position of an undivided family is exactly the same, except that within certain limits each male member has, and in Bengal some females have, a right to claim a partition, if they like. But until they elect to do so, the property continues to devolve upon the members of the family for the time being by survivorship and not by succession. The position of any particular person as son, grandson, or the like, or as one of many sons or grandsons, will be very important when the time for partition arrives, because it will determine the share to which he is then entitled. But until that time arrives he can never say, I am entitled to such a definite portion of the property; because next year the proportion he would

Rights arise by birth :

are ascertained by partition.

have a right to claim on a division might be much smaller, and the year after much larger, as births or death supervene. For instance, suppose a family to consist only of A.



Mitakshara.

and his sons B. and C., on a partition each would take one-third. But if D. was born while the family remained joint, each would take one-fourth. Supposing the family still to remain undivided, on the death of A., the possible shares of the three sons would be enlarged to one-third; and if B. were subsequently to die without issue, they would again be enlarged to one-half. As C. and D. married, their sons E., F. and G. would enter into the family and acquire an interest in the property. But that interest again would be a shifting interest, depending on the state of the family. If C. were to die, leaving only two sons E. and F., and they claimed a partition, each would take one-half of one-half. But if X. had previously been born, each would only take one-third of one-half. If they put off their claim for a division till D., G., H. and I. had all died, they would each take one-third of the whole. It is common to say that in an undivided family each member transmits to his issue his own share in the joint property, and that such issue takes *per capita inter se*, but *per stirpes* as regards the issue of other members. But it must always be remembered that this is only a statement of what would be their rights on a partition. Until a partition their rights consist merely in a common enjoyment of the common property, to which is further added, in Provinces governed by Mitakshara, the right of male issue to forbid alienations, made by their direct ancestors (e). These observations, however, require modifica-

(e) See this subject discussed, *Appovier v. Rama Subbaiyan*, 11 M. I. A. 75; S. C. 8 Suth. (P. C.) 1; *Sadabart Prasad v. Foolbash Koer*, 3 B. L. R. (F. B.) 31; S. C. 14 Suth. 340; *Ram Narain v. Pertum Singh*, 20 Suth. 189; S. C. 11

tion in Bengal. There, "admitting the family to have been joint, and the sons joint in estate, the right of any one of the co-sharers would not, under the Hindu law, pass over, upon his death, to the other co-sharers. It would be part of the estate of the deceased co-sharer, and would devolve upon his legatees or natural heirs" (*f*). The share of an undivided brother will pass to his widow, daughter and daughter's son, and may thus vest in a family completely different from his own (§ 486). Bengal.

§ 247. Now it is at this point that we see one of the most important distinctions between the coparcenary and the general body of the undivided family. Suppose the property to have all descended from one ancestor, who is still alive, with five generations of descendants. It by no means follows that on a partition every one of these five generations will be entitled to a share. And if the common ancestor dies, so that the property descends a step, it by no means follows that it will go by survivorship to all these generations. It may go to the representatives of one or more branches, or even to the widow of the survivor of several branches, to the total exclusion of the representatives of other branches. The question in each case will be, who are the persons who have taken an interest in the property by birth (*g*). The answer will be, that they are the persons who offer the funeral cake to the owner of the property. That is to say, the three generations next to the owner in unbroken male descent (*h*). Therefore, if a man has living, sons, grandsons, and great-grandsons, all of these constitute a single coparcenary with himself. Every The coparcenary  
  
limited to those  
who partake in  
the funeral cake.

---

B. L. R. 397; *Rajnarain v. Heeralal*, 5 Cal. 142; *Bhimul Doss v. Choonee Lall*, 2 Cal. 379; *Debi Parshad v. Thakur Dial*, 1 All. 105; *Raul Gorain v. Tezu Gorain*, 4 B. L. R. Appx. 90.

(*f*) *Per Turner, L. J. Snorjeemoney Dossee v. Denobundo*, 6 M. I. A. 553; S. C. 4 Suth. (P. C.) 114. This seems also to have been the view of Apararka. Partition, he says, does not create a new right; it has but the effect to render visible the right of each of the former joint owners to his share of the estate. Jolly Lect. 87, 114, n.

(*g*) This principle will not apply in Bengal, where sons take no interest by birth in their father's property. See *ante*, § 235.

(*h*) *Mauu*, ix. § 186; *Viramit.*, p. 72, § 16, *post*, § 460.



one of these descendants is entitled to offer the funeral cake to him, and therefore every one of them obtains by birth an interest in his property. But the son of one of the great-grandsons would not offer the cake to him, and therefore is out of the coparcenary, so long as the common ancestor is alive. But while fresh links are continually being added to the chain of descendants by birth, so earlier links are being constantly removed from the upper end of the chain by death. So long as the principle of survivorship continues to operate, the right to the property will devolve from those who are higher in the line to those who are lower down. As each fresh member takes a share, his descendants to the third generation below him take an interest in that share by birth. So the coparcenary may go on widening and extending, until its members may include persons who are removed by indefinite distances from the common ancestor. But this is always subject to the condition that no person who claims to take a share is more than three steps removed from a direct ascendant who has taken a share. Whenever a break of more than three degrees occurs between any holder of property and the person who claims to take next after that holder, the line ceases in that direction, and the survivorship is confined to those collaterals and descendants who are within the limit of three degrees. This was laid down in two cases in Bombay and Madras.

Coparcenary not limited to three degrees from common ancestor.

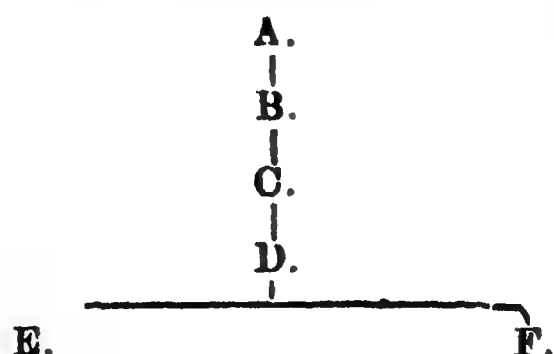
§ 248. In the former case the claim to partition was resisted, on the ground that the plaintiff was beyond the fourth degree from the acquirer of the property in dispute, the defendant being within that degree. It was argued that the analogy of the law of inheritance prevented a lineal descendant, beyond the great-grandson, from claiming partition at the hands of those who are legally in possession, as descendants from the original sole owner of the family property or any part of it (i). *West, J.*, said, "The Hindu

---

(i) *Moro Vishvanath v. Genesh*, 10 Bom. H. C. 444, 449.



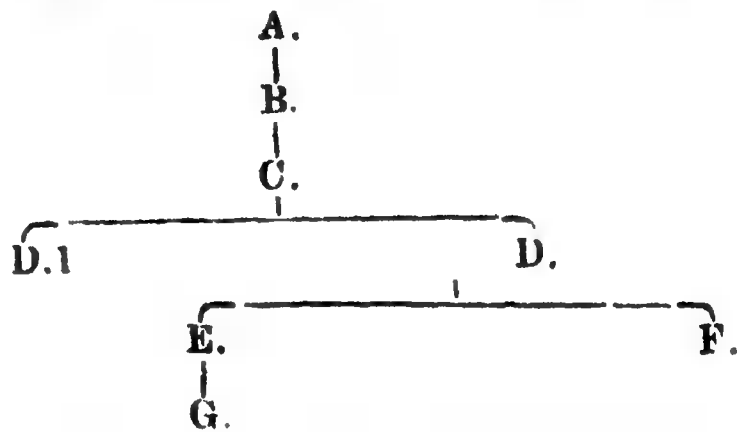
law does not contemplate a partition as absolutely necessary at any stage of the descent from a common ancestor ; yet the result of the construction pressed on us would be to force the great-grandson in every case to divide from his coparceners, unless he desired his own offspring to be left destitute. Where two great-grandsons lived together as a united family, the son of each would, according to the Mitakshara law, acquire by birth a co-ownership with his father in the ancestral estate ; yet if the argument is sound, this co-ownership would pass altogether from the son of A. or B., as either happened to die before the other. If a coparcener should die, leaving no nearer descendant than a great-great-grandson, then the latter would no doubt be excluded at once from inheritance and from partition by any nearer heirs of the deceased, as, for instance, brothers and their sons ; but where there has not been such an interval as to cause a break in the course of lineal succession, neither has there been an extinguishment of the right to a partition of the property in which the deceased was a co-sharer in actual possession and enjoyment (*k*). Each descendant in succession becomes co-owner with his father of the latter's share, and there is never such a gap in the series as to prevent the next from fully representing the preceding one in the succession." The same principles were illustrated in detail by Mr. Justice *Nanabhai Haridas*. He said (*l*), "Take, for instance, the following case. A., the original owner of the property in dispute, dies, leaving a son B. and a grandson C., both members of an undivided family. B. dies, leaving C. and D., son and grandson respectively ; and C. dies, leaving a son D. and two grandsons by him, E. and F. No partition of the family property has taken place, and D., E., and F. are living in a state of union. Can E. and F. compel



(*k*) See *per Jagannatha*, 3 Dig. 446—450.

(*l*) 10 Bom. H. C. 468.

D. to make over to them their share of the ancestral property? According to the law prevailing on this side of India they can, sons being equally interested with their father in ancestral property (*m*). In the same way, suppose B. and C. die, leaving A. and D. members of an undivided family, and then A. dies, whereupon the whole of this property



devolves upon D., who thereafter has two sons, E. and F. They, or either of them, can likewise sue their father D. for partition of the said property, it being ancestral. Now suppose B. and C. die, leaving A., D., and D.<sup>1</sup>, members of an undivided family, after which A. dies, whereupon the whole of his property devolves upon D. and D.<sup>1</sup> jointly, and that D. thereafter has two sons, E. and F., leaving whom D. dies. A suit against D.<sup>1</sup> for partition of the joint ancestral property of the family would be perfectly open to E. and F., or even to G. and F., if E. died before the suit. It would be a suit against D.<sup>1</sup> by a deceased brother's sons, or son and grandson (*n*). But E. and F., are both fifth, and G. sixth in descent from the original owner of the property, whereas D. and D.<sup>1</sup> are only fourth. Suppose, however, that A. dies after D. leaving a great-grandson, D.<sup>1</sup> and the two sons of D., E. and F. In this case E. and F. could not sue D.<sup>1</sup> for partition of property descending from A., because it is inherited by D.<sup>1</sup> alone, since E. and F., being sons of a great-grandson, are excluded by D.<sup>1</sup>, A.'s surviving great-grandson, the right of representation extending no further (*o*). The rule, then, which I deduce from the autho-

Rule.

(*m*) 1 Stra. H. L. 177; 2 *ibid.* 316; Mitakshara, i. 1, § 27, i. 5, § 3, 5, 8, 11; V. May., iv. 6, § 13.

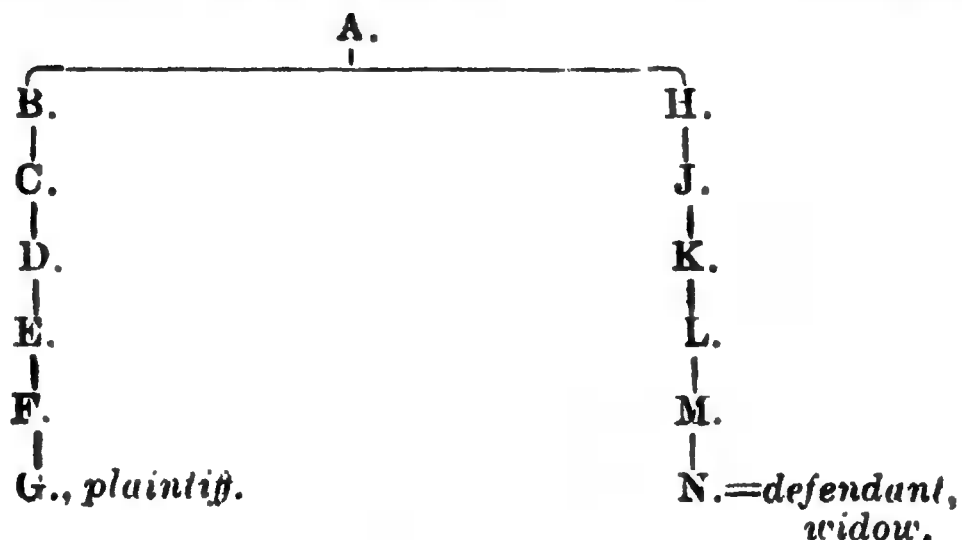
(*n*) V. May., iv. 4, § 21.

(*o*) See Jagannatha's Comment, on text, ccclxx.; 3 Dig. 388; 1 Nort. L. C. 292; Stra. Man. § 323; 2 Stra. H. L. 327.

rities on this subject is, not that a partition cannot be demanded by one more than four degrees removed from the acquirer or *original owner* of the property sought to be divided, but that it cannot be demanded by one more than four degrees removed from the last owner, however remote he may be from the original owner thereof."

§ 249. This principle was also affirmed by the Madras High Court, and its application put to a more violent test. The question was as to the right of succession to an impartible Zemindary. The original owner and common ancestor of the claimant was A. The Zemindary had descended throughout in the line of H., and was last held by N., who

applied to impartible Zemindary.



died without issue, leaving a widow, the defendant. The plaintiff was G., who was admittedly the nearest male of kin to N. The family was undivided. It was conceded that according to the law of the Mitakshara, an undivided coparcener would take before the widow. But it was contended on her behalf, "that only those of the unseparated kinsmen were coheirs, who by birth had acquired a proprietary interest in the estate in common with the deceased; his coparceners, who, on a division in his life-time, would have been sharers of the estate, and that such a coparcenership can exist only between kindred who are near sapindas (i.e., not beyond the fourth degree), and consequently, that the respondent (plaintiff) was not a coheir of the deceased." The Court assented to the first branch of the argument, but denied the second. They held that the Zemindary, though impartible, was still coparcenary property, and that

## Definition of coparceners.

the members of the undivided family acquired the same right to it by birth, as they would have done to any other property, subject only to the limitation of the enjoyment to one. Then as to who were coparceners, they said: "It appears to us equally certain that the limit of the coheirs must be held to include undivided collateral relations, who are descendants in the male line of one who was a coparcener with an ancestor of the last possessor. For, in the undivided coparcenary interest which vested in such coparcener, his near sapindas were coheirs, and when on his death, the interest vested in his sons, or son, or other near sapinda in the male line, the near sapindas of such descendants or descendant became in like manner coheirs with them or him, and so on, the coheirship became extended through the new sapindas down to the last descendant. Obviously, therefore, as long as the *status* of non-division continues, the members of the family who have, in this way, succeeded to a coparcenary interest, are coheirs with their kindred who possess the other undivided interests of the entire estate, and one of such kindred and his near sapindas in the male line cannot be the only coheirs, until by the death of all the others without descendants in the male line to the third degree, he has, or he and they have, by survivorship acquired the entire right to the heritage, as effectually as if the estate had passed upon an actual partition with the coheirs." The Court, therefore, held that the plaintiff, as undivided coparcener, would succeed before the widow (p). In this case it will be observed the plaintiff was sixth in descent from the common ancestor, the defendant's husband being equally distant.

## Obstructed and unobstructed property.

§ 250. The same principle, *viz.*, that property vests in certain relations by birth, and not in other relations, gives rise to a division of property into two classes, which are spoken of by Hindu lawyers as *Apratibandha* and *Sapratibandha*.

---

(p) *Yenumula v. Ramandora*, 6 Mad. H. C. 94, 106. See also in Bengal, *Girwurdharee v. Kulahul*, 4 S. D. 9 (12), where property was divided among persons four, five, and six degrees removed from the common ancestor.

*bandha*; terms which have been translated, not very happily, *unobstructed* and *obstructed*, or liable to obstruction. These terms are thus explained in the Mitakshara (q), "The wealth of the father or of the paternal grandfather becomes the property of his sons or of his grandsons, in right of their being his sons or his grandsons; and that is an inheritance not liable to obstruction. But property devolves on parents or uncles, brothers, or the rest, upon the demise of the owner, if there be no male issue; and thus the actual existence of a son, and the survival of the owner are impediments to the succession; and on their ceasing, the property devolves on the successor in right of his being uncle or brother. This is an inheritance subject to obstruction." The distinction is the same as that which is present to the mind of an English lawyer, when he speaks of estates as being vested or contingent, or of an heir as being the heir-at-law, or the heir presumptive. The unobstructed, or rather the unobstructible, estate is that in which the future heir has already an interest by the mere fact of his existence. If he lives long enough he must necessarily succeed to the inheritance, unless his rights are defeated by alienation or devise; and if he dies, his rights will pass on to his son, unless he is himself in the last rank of sapindas, in which case his son is out of the line of unobstructed heirs. On the other hand, the person who is next in apparent succession to an obstructed, or rather an obstructible estate, may at any moment find himself cut out by the interposition of a prior heir, as for instance a son, widow or the like. His rights will accrue for the first time at the death of the actual holder, and will be judged of according to the existing state of the family at that time. Any nearer heir who may then be in existence will completely exclude him; and if he should die before the succession opens, even though he would have succeeded, had he survived, his heirs will not

---

(q) Mitakshara, i. 1, § 3; Viramit., p. 3, V. May., iv. 2, § 2. See *per curiam*, *Nund Coomar Lall v. Ruzzooddeen*, 10 B. L. R. 191; S. C. 18 Sath 477; *Debi Parshad v. Thakur Dial*, 1 All. 112. These terms are not used by the writers of the Bengal or Mithila School. V. N. Mandlik, 359. Jolly, Lect. 176.



take at all, unless they happen themselves to be the next heirs to the deceased. In other words, he cannot transmit to others rights which had not arisen in himself (r).

Ancestral property

§ 251. The second question is as to the coparcenary property. The first species of coparcenary property is that which is known as ancestral property. The meaning of this phrase might be taken to be, property which descended upon another from an ancestor, however remote, or of whatever sex. Where property so descended upon several persons simultaneously, and with equal rights both of possession and enjoyment, as for instance upon several brothers, sons, grandsons, nephews or the like, it would certainly be joint property, by the very hypothesis. But this is not what is generally known as ancestral property. That term, in its technical sense, is applied to property which descends upon one person in such a manner that his issue (s) acquire certain rights in it as against him. For instance, if a father under Mitakshara law is attempting to dispose of property, we enquire whether it is ancestral property. The answer to this question is, that property is ancestral property if it has been inherited as unobstructed property, that it is not ancestral if it has been inherited as obstructed property (§ 250). The reason of this distinction is, that in the former case the heir had an actual vested interest in the property, before the inheritance fell in, and therefore his own issue acquired by birth an interest in that interest. Hence, when the property actually devolved upon him, he took it subject to the interest they had already acquired. But in the latter case, he had no interest whatever in the property, before the descent took place; there-

is unobstructed property.

---

(r) The High Court of Bengal has lately stated the rule of the Mitakshara law to be "that the principle of survivorship is limited to two descriptions of property, namely (1) what is taken as unobstructed inheritance and property acquired by means of it; and (2) what forms the joint property of re-united coparceners; and that property obtained in the ordinary course of inheritance (e.g., by several daughter's sons) is not subject to that incident. *Jasoda Koer v. Sheo Pershad*, 17 Cal. 33.

(s) I may as well state, once for all, that the word "issue" will be used throughout this work as embracing son, grandson, and great-grandson. *Post*, § 498.

, when that event occurred, he received the property of all claims upon it by his issue, and *à fortiori*, by any other person. Hence all property which a man inherits from a direct male ancestor, not exceeding three degrees higher than himself, is ancestral property, and is at once held by himself in coparcenary with his own issue. But where he has inherited from a collateral relation, as for instance from a brother, nephew, cousin or uncle, it is not ancestral property (t); consequently his own descendants are not coparceners in it with him. They cannot restrain him in dealing with it, nor compel him to give them a share of it (u). On the same principle, property which a man inherits from a female, or through a female, as for instance a daughter's son, or which he has taken from an ancestor more remote than three degrees, or which he has taken as heir to a priest or a fellow-student, would not be ancestral property (v). And that which is ancestral, and therefore coparcenary property, as regards a man's own issue, is not so as regards his collaterals. For they have no interest in it by birth (w). On the other hand, property is not the less ancestral because it was the separate or self-acquired property of the ancestor from whom it came (x). When it

Ancestral property.

(t) It is hardly necessary to remark that I am speaking of inheritance, not of survivorship. The enlarged share which accrues to the remaining brothers on the death of an undivided brother is ancestral property, and subject to all its incidents. *Gunqoo Mull v. Bunseedhur*, 1 N. W. P. 170.

(u) *Rayadur Nallatambi v. Mukunda*, 3 Mad. H. C. 455; *Nund Coomur Lall v. Ruzzooddeen*, 10 B. L. R. 183; S. C. 18 Suth. 477; *Jawahir v. Ghyar*, 3 Agra H. C. 78; *Lochun v. Nemdharee*, 20 Suth. 170; *Pitam v. Ujagar*, 1 All. 652. Jolly, Lect. 121.

(v) 3 Dig. 61; W. & B. 710, approved *per cur.* 10 B. L. R. 192 *supra*. The High Court of Madras has held that property which descended to a man from his maternal grandfather was ancestral property, which he could not alienate to the detriment of his son. None of the above authorities were referred to. The decision was reversed by the P. C. on another point (*Muthayan Chetti v. Sangili*, 3 Mad. 370 9 I. A. 128. *Sivagunga v. Lakshmana*, 9 Mad. 188, 190). When the case arises again it will be material to remember that property only becomes joint property by reason of being ancestral property, where the ancestor from whom it was derived was a paternal ancestor. See Mit., i 1. § 3, 5, 21, 24, 27, 33; i. 5, § 2, 3, 5, 9—11; *Per Mitter, J. Gunga Prosad v. Ajudhin Pershad*, 8 Cal. 131, p. 134; *per curiam, Jasoda Koer v. Sheo Pershad*, 17 Cnl., p. 38; *Nanabhai v. Achratbai*, 11 Bom., p. 133; *post*, § 252.

(w) *Ajoodhin v. Kashee Gir*, 4 N. W. P. 31; *Gopal Singh v. Bheekunlal*, S. D. of 1859, 294; *Gopal Dutt v. Gopal Lall*, *Ibid.* 1314.

(x) *Ram Narain v. Pertum Singh*, 20 Suth. 189; S. C. 11 B. L. R. 397, *curiam*, 9 Bom. 450.

has once made a descent, its origin is immaterial as regards those persons to whom it has descended. It is very material, however, as regards those who have not taken it by descent. A father with two sons A and B had self-acquired property. A died in his lifetime leaving a widow, and upon his death B took the property. A's widow claimed maintenance out of it as ancestral property. The Court admitted that in any question between B and his sons it would be ancestral property. But it was not so as regards A. During his life the property was absolutely at the disposal of the father. As regards A it was neither ancestral nor coparcenary property, and on his death his widow had no higher claim over it than her husband. Her rights were not enlarged by its change of character when it reached the hands of B (y). All savings made out of ancestral property, and all purchases or profits made from the income or sale of ancestral property, would follow the character of the fund from which they proceeded (z). On the same principle accretions to a riparian village are ancestral property, if the village itself was such (a).

Divided property.

§ 252. Where ancestral property has been divided between several joint owners, there can be no doubt that if any of them have issue living at the time of the partition,

(y) *Janki v. Nandram*, 11 All. F. B. 194, p. 198.

(z) *Shudanund v. Bonomalee*, 6 Suth. 256; S. C. on review; *Sub nomine, Sudanund v. Soorjo Monee*, 8 Suth. 455; S. C. 11 Suth. 436, reversed on another point in P. C.; *Sub nomine, Soorjomonee v. Suddanund*, 12 B. L. R. 304; S. C. 20 Suth. 377; S. C. 8 Mad. Jur. 466; *Ghansham v. Gorind*, 5 S. D. 202 (240); *Umrithnath v. Goureenath*, 13 M. I. A. 542; S. C. 15 Suth. (P. C.) 10; *Kristnappa v. Ramasawmy*, 8 Mad. H. C. 25; *Jugmohundas v. Mungaldas*, 10 Bom. 529. In the case of *Gunga Prosad v. Ajudhia Pershad*, the High Court of Bengal treated it as a point still unsettled, whether property purchased out of the income of ancestral property before the birth of a son was ancestral property vested in the after-born son. Mr. Justice Mitter was strongly of opinion that it was not. It was admitted that it would be otherwise as to property so purchased after his birth, 8 Cal. 131; S. C. 9 C. L. R. 417. In Madras it has been held that property purchased from the income of ancestral is ancestral property which cannot be given to a stranger in derogation of the right of a son who was *in gremio matris* at the time of the gift. The Court refused to follow the dictum of Mitter, J., cited above, *Ramanna v. Venkata*, 11 Mad. 246. As to savings from income of impartible Zemindary, or purchases made out of such savings, see post, § 262. *Semble*, that movable property which has made a descent, and is then converted into land, possesses all the incidents of ancestral immovable property. *Sham Narain v. Raghoobur*, 3 Cal. 508.

(a) *Ramprasad v. Radha Prasad*, 7 All. 402.

the share which falls to him will continue to be ancestral property in his hands, as regards his issue, for their rights had already attached upon it, and the partition only cuts off the claims of the dividing members. The father and his issue still remain joint (b). But it is not so clearly settled whether the same rule would apply where the partition had been made before the birth of issue. In a case in Calcutta it was held that where a father by various deeds of gift had distributed his property among his sons, the portion obtained by each was ancestral property as regards his issue. It does not appear whether the issue had been in existence at the time of the gift. But the son contended that it was by the gift his self-acquired property. This the Court refused to admit. After a full examination of the Hindu authorities, they said, "We think that according to the Mitakshara, landed property acquired by a grandfather and distributed by him amongst his sons, does not by such gift become the self-acquired property of the sons so as to enable them to dispose of it by gift or sale without the consent, and to the prejudice of, the grandsons. The property cannot be said to have been acquired without detriment to the father's (i.e., ancestral) estate, because it was not only given out of that estate, but in substitution for the undivided share of that estate to which the father appears to have been entitled. It cannot therefore be taken to have been given simply by the favour of the father, but upon consideration of the father surrendering some interest or right to share in the grandfather's estate, which he did by the acceptance of this separate parcel. We think that the father took it with the incidents to which the undivided share for which it was substituted would have been subject" (c) This reasoning would appear to apply equally

Property  
obtained from  
ancestor by gift

(b) *Lakshmibai v. Ganpat Moroba*, 5 Bom. H. C. (O. C. J.) 129. *Chatterbhooj v. Dharamsi*, 11 Bom. 488. The same point was very lately decided in Calcutta. The report does not state whether the son was born before or after the partition, but I think the latter seems to have been the case. *Adurmoni v. Chowdhry*, 3 Cal. 1.

(c) *Muddun Gopal v. Ram Buksh*, 6 Suth. 71, 73; followed *Nanomi Babuasin v. Modun Mohun*, 13 I. A. 5. In *Mohabeer Kooer v. Joobha*, 16 Suth. 221; S. C. 8 B. L. R. 88, a contrary opinion seems to have been expressed by Jackson, J.



or by will.

in favour of issue unborn at the time of the gift. Similarly it was held in Madras, that a father did not take his share of the estate as self-acquired property, in consequence of having received it under the will of his own father. The Court said, "It seems to us that there is no reason whatever in the contention that its quality was changed by his choosing to accept it, apparently under the terms of his father's will. Still less ground would there be for the contention that his acquiescence in that mode of receiving it would vest in himself a larger interest than he would have taken by descent" (d). In Bombay it has been recently decided, after a review of all the cases, that where a grandfather bequeathes his self-acquired property to a son, who has at the time male issue, in terms showing an intention that the devisee should take an absolute estate, the property so devised does not vest in the issue as ancestral estate, so as to entitle them to sue their father for a partition (e). The same principle was followed in a case under Mitakshara law, where a father bequeathed his self-acquired property to his widow and his three sons jointly. Two of the sons separated. The third continued to live in union with his mother, and on her death took her share by survivorship. The Court, after reviewing the above decisions, held that the share of the widow which came to the son must be considered in his hands as ancestral property, since it had originally formed part of his father's estate (f). Whatever the nature of the widow's interest may have been, its descent was governed by the incidents attaching to the source from which it arose. Where a man had obtained a share of family property on partition, which was mortgaged to its full value, and which he had subsequently cleared from the mortgage by his own self-acquisitions, it was held that the unencumbered property was ancestral property in his hands (g).

---

But in that case the property appears not to have been ancestral at all. See as to what is "a gift through affection," *Lakshman v. Ramchandra*, 1 Bom. 561.

(d) *Tara Chand v. Reeb Ram*, 8 Mad. H. C. 50, 55.

(e) *Jugmohundas v. Mangaldas*, 10 Bom. 528.

(f) *Nanabhai v. Achratbai*, 12 Bom. 122, p. 138.

(g) *Visalatchy v. Annusamy*, 5 Mad. H. C. 150.



§ 253. *Secondly*, property may be joint property without having been ancestral. Where the members of a Joint Family acquire property by or with the assistance of joint funds, or by their joint labour, such property is the joint property of the persons who have acquired it, whether it is an increment to ancestral property, or whether it has arisen without any nucleus of descended property (*h*). Whether the issue of such joint acquirers would by birth alone acquire an interest in such property, without evidence that they had in any way contributed to it, is a question which, as far as I know, has never arisen. If a single individual acquired a fortune by his own exertions, without any assistance from ancestral property, his issue would certainly take no interest in it. If several brothers did the same, the property would be joint as between themselves. It would certainly be self-acquired as regard all collaterals, and it is difficult to see why it should not be the same as regards their issue, unless they chose voluntarily to admit the latter to a share of it. This seems to have been the view taken by the High Court of Bombay in a case where property had been acquired by trade. They said, "There is no evidence to show that the parties were members of an ordinary trade partnership resting on contract. If the sons had a joint interest with their father in the piece-goods business, it was apparently because they were members of an undivided family carrying on business jointly in that capacity. If the property of the family firm had been acquired by the equal exertions of the three members, without the aid of any nucleus of property other than acquired by themselves, then, no doubt, the property of the firm with its accumulations would be self-acquired property even

Property jointly  
acquired

(*h*) Manu, ix. § 215; Yajnavalkya, ii. 120; Mitakshara, i. 4, § 15; 3 Dig. 386; F. MacN. 351, 362; *Ramasheshaiah v. Bhagavat*, 4 Mad. H. C. 5; *Rampershad v. Sheochurn*, 10 M. I. A. 490; *Radhabai v. Nanarav*, 3 Bom. 151. By § 45 of the Transfer of Property Act (IV of 1882) persons who purchase immovable property out of a common fund are, in the absence of any contract to the contrary, entitled to hold it in shares proportioned to their interest in the common funds; and similarly where a joint purchase is made by several with their separate funds.

though it was owned jointly. And on a partition such property would apparently remain self-acquired property in the hands of the several members, even though one of them was the father of the other two" (i).

or thrown into  
common stock.

§ 254. *Thirdly*, property which was originally self-acquired, may become joint property, if it has been voluntarily thrown by the owner into the joint stock, with the intention of abandoning all separate claims upon it. This doctrine has been repeatedly recognized by the Privy Council. Perhaps the strongest case was one, where the owner had actually obtained a statutory title to the property under the Oudh Talukdars Act I of 1869. He was held by his conduct to have restored it to the condition of ancestral property (k). To create such a new title, however, a clear intention to waive the separate rights of the owner must be established, and will not be inferred from acts which may have been done out of kindness and affection. A younger brother who was insane from birth, had for many years been treated by his elder brother as if he was under no incapacity. His name was entered in the revenue records as joint owner, and documents were issued and taken in his name. It appeared that for many years his case had been treated by the family as one that might be cured. Finally a family arrangement was entered into by which he was set aside as incapacitated. The Privy Council held that the previous course of conduct could not be treated as amounting to a fresh grant of rights which the youth was incapable of taking by inheritance (l).

Impartible pro-  
perty may be  
joint.

§ 255. Liability to partition is one of the commonest incidents of joint property, but it must not be supposed that

(i) *Chatterbhooj v. Dharamsi*, 9 Bom. 438, p. 445.

(k) *Hurpurshad v. Sheo Dyal*, 3 I. A. 259; S. C. 26 Suth. 55; *Shankar Baksh v. Hardeo Baksh*, 16 I. A. 71; S. C. 16 Cal. 397; *per cur.*, *Rampershad v. Sheo-churn*, 10 M. I. A. 506; *Chellayamal v. Mutialamal*, 6 Mad. Jur. P. C. 108; *Sham Narain v. Ct. of Wards*, 20 Suth. 197; *Gopulasami v. Chinnasami*, 7 Mad. 458; *per curiam*, 15 Bom. p. 39; 10 Cal. pp. 392, 398, 401; *Madhavray Manohar v. Atmaram*, 15 Bom. 519.

(l) *Lala Muddun Gopal v. Khikhinda Koer*, 18 I. A. 9; S. C. 18 Cal. 841.

joint property and partible property are mutually convertible terms. If it were so, an impartible Zemindary could never be joint property. The reverse, however, is the case. The mode of its enjoyment necessarily cuts down to a very small point the rights of the other members of the family with respect to it. But there are two particulars in which its joint character becomes material—first, with reference to the order of succession; and, secondly, as to the powers of alienation possessed by each successive holder. Now as to the first point, it has been repeatedly held by the Privy Council that the order of succession to a Zemindary depended upon whether “though impartible it was part of the common family property,” or was the separate or self-acquired property of the holder (*m*). As to the second point, the Courts of Madras, till very lately, ruled that the holder of an impartible Zemindary under Mitakshara law would be under the same restrictions as to alienation in regard to it as to any other ancestral property. This course of decisions has, however, been interrupted in consequence of a recent ruling of the Privy Council. The subject will have to be discussed more fully hereafter (*n*).

§ 256. An examination into the property of the joint family would not be complete without pointing out what property may be held by the individual members which is not joint property. Property which is not joint must be either separate property or self-acquired, or property which has devolved upon another in such a manner as to be held by him free of all claims by members of the same undivided family. The last of the three cases has already been discussed (§ 251, 252). Separate property, *ex vi termini*, assumes that the holder of it has ceased to be in union

Coparceners  
may hold pro-  
perty separately.

(*m*) *Katama Natchier v. Rajah of Shivagunga*, 9 M. I. A. 539, 589, 610; S. C. 2 Suth. (P. C.) 31; *Yanumula v. Boochia*, 13 M. I. A. 333, 336; S. C. 13 Suth. (P. C.) 21; *Chowdhry Chintamun v. Nowlukho*, 2 I. A. 263; S. C. 24 Suth. 255; *Yenumala v. Ramandoru*, 6 Mad. H. C. 93, 103; *Periasamy v. Periasamy*, 5 I. A. 61; S. C. 1 Mad. 312; *Runganayakamma v. Bulli Ramaya*, P. C. 5th July 1879.

(*n*) See post, § 314.

with those in reference to whom the property is separate. But a man is very commonly separated from one set of persons, as, for instance, his brothers, while he is in union with others, as, for instance, his own issue. As regards the former, his property is separate; as regards the latter, it is joint (§ 252). Self-acquisition, on the other hand, may be made by any one while still in a state of union, and when made will be effective against the whole world. I have already (§ 215—217) pointed out the early history of this branch of the law. The following remarks will show how it has been dealt with by modern decisions.

**Self-acquisition.** § 257. The whole doctrine of self-acquisition is briefly stated by Yajnavalkya as follows:—“Whatever is acquired by the coparcener himself, without detriment to the father’s estate, as a present from a friend, or a gift at nuptials, does not appertain to the coheirs (o). Nor shall he who recovers hereditary property which has been taken away give it up to the coparceners; nor what has been gained by science” (p). Upon this the Smriti Chandrika remarks that the estate of the father means the estate of any undivided coheir (q). While the Mitakshara adds, that the words “without detriment to the father’s estate” must be connected with each member of the sentence. “Consequently what is obtained from a friend as the return of an obligation conferred at the charge of the patrimony; What is received at a marriage concluded in the form Asura or the like (r); What is recovered of the hereditary estate by the expenditure of the father’s goods; What is earned by science acquired at the expense of ancestral wealth; all that must be shared with the whole of the brethren and the father” (s). The author of the Mitakshara enlarges the text of Yajnavalkya by

(o) See as to presents from relations or friends, Manu, ix. § 206; Narada, xiii. § 6, 7; *Muddun Gopal v. Ram Buksh*, 6 Suth. 71; *ante*, § 252; Mitakshara, i. 5, § 9.

(p) Yajnavalkya, ii. § 118, 119; Mitakshara, i. 4, § 1. See Daya Bhaga, vi. 1 D. K. S. iv. 2, § 1—12; V. May., iv. 7, § 1—14; *Raghunandana*, v. 1—

(q) Smriti Chandrika, vii. § 28.

(r) *Sheo Gobind v. Sham Narain*, 7 N. W. P. 75.

(s) Mitakshara, i. 4, § 6.



defining self-acquisition as "that which had been acquired by the coparcener himself without any detriment to the goods of his father or mother." Hence the Madras High Court has recently decided that property inherited by a man from his mother's father is not his self-acquisition, and this ruling has been affirmed by the Privy Council (*t*). The whole contest in each instance is to show that the gain has been without "detriment to the estate." In early times the slightest assistance from the joint patrimony, however indirect, was considered to be such a detriment, and the possession of any joint property was considered as conclusively proving that there had been such an assistance. The Madras Court has always leant very strongly against self-acquisition. But the recent tendency of decisions seems to be towards a more sensible view of the law, following out its spirit rather than its letter.

§ 258. For instance, the gains of science or valour, which seem to have been the earliest forms of self-acquisition, were held to be joint property, if the learning had been imparted at the expense of the Joint Family, or if the warrior had used his father's sword (§ 216). The law upon this point was examined with great fulness in a case where the adoptive mother of a dancing girl claimed her property, on the ground that it had been acquired by skill imparted at the mother's expense. The High Court of Madras, overruling a very elaborate judgment of the Civil Judge, decided that if these gains were to be considered the gains of science, they were joint property of the acquirer and her mother (*u*). It would admittedly have been otherwise if her gains had merely been the result of prostitution, unaided by any special education (*v*). In a later case the gains of a Vakil were held to be divisible, on the ground that they had been

Gains of science.

(*t*) Mit., i. 4, § 2; acc. *Raghunandana*, v. 5; *Muttayan Chetty v. Sangili*, 9 I. A. 127, 3 Mad. 370, 1882. The Privy Council declined to commit itself to the consequence drawn by the Madras High Court that property so inherited became the joint property of the taker and his son. See *ante*, § 251.

(*u*) *Ohalakonda v. Ratnachalam*, 2 Mad. H. C. 56. See 2 W. MacN. 167.

(*v*) *Boologam v. Swornam*, 4 Mad. 330.



obtained by education imparted at the family expense, although it was found that he had received from his father nothing more than a general education. *Holloway, J.*, referring to the dancing girl's case, said, "I fully adhere to the judgment of the High Court, for which I am responsible, and especially to the statement that the ordinary gains of science by one who has received a family maintenance are certainly partible" (*w*). The decisions in the above cases were adopted in general terms by the Chief Justice in Bombay in another case of a Vakil. There, however, the point really did not arise, as it appeared that he united the business of money-lender with that of Vakil, and that there was joint family property of which he had the use

Effect of education in family.

§ 259. It is, however, difficult to see why a person who has made gains by science, after having been educated or maintained at the family expense, should be in a worse position than any other person who has been so educated, or maintained, and who has afterwards made self-acquisitions. *Jimuta Vahana* lays it down, that where it is attempted to reduce a separate acquisition into common property on the ground that it was obtained with the aid of common property, it must be shown that the joint stock was used for the express purpose of gain. "It becomes not common merely because property may have been used for food or other necessities, since that is similar to the sucking of the mother's breast" (*y*). This seems to be good sense. If a member of a Hindu family were sent to England at the joint expense, to be educated for the Bar or the Civil Service, it seems fair enough that his extra gains should fall into the common stock, as a recompense for the extra outlay incurred. It might be assumed that when the outlay was incurred the reimbursement was contemplated. But it is different where all start on exactly

(*w*) *Gunqadharudu v. Narasammah*, 7 Mad. H. C. 47.

*Bai Manchha v. Narotamdas*, 6 Bom. H. C. (A. C. J.) 1, 6.

(*y*) *Daya Bhaga*, vi. 1, § 44—50; 1 Stra. H. L. 214; 2 Stra. H. L. 374.

the same level, with nothing but the ordinary maintenance and education which is common to persons of that class of life. Accordingly, in a Madras case, where a Hindu had made a large mercantile fortune, his claim to hold it as self-acquired was allowed, though he had admittedly been maintained in his earlier years, educated and married out of patrimonial means (z). So in a Bengal case, where self-acquisition was set up, and the defendant had been maintained at the family expense, but it was proved that in acquiring his property he did not use any funds which belonged to the joint family, his gains apparently being derived from some lucrative employment, it was held that the plea was made out. *Mitter, J.*, said, "The plaintiff's case in the Court below was that the defendant received his education from the joint estate, and that he is consequently entitled to participate in every property that has been acquired by the defendant by the aid of such education. But this contention is nowhere sanctioned by the Hindu law, and I see nothing in justice to recommend it" (a). This case was approved by the Privy Council in an appeal where it had been contended that the property acquired by a successful merchant was joint property, because he had been educated out of the joint funds. The fact was negatived, upon which the Committee observed, "This being their Lordships' view, it does not become necessary to consider whether the somewhat startling proposition of law put forward by the appellant, which, stated in plain terms, amounts to this—that if a member of a joint Hindu family receives any education whatever from the joint funds, he becomes for ever after incapable of acquiring by his own skill and industry any separate property—is or is not maintainable. Very strong and clear authority would be required to support such a proposition. For the reasons that they have given, it does not appear to them necessary to review the text-books or the authorities which

Maintenance  
and education in  
family.

(z) *Chellaperoomall v. Veeraperoomal*, 4 Mad. Jur. 54, affd. on appeal, *ib.*, 240.  
(a) *Dhunookdaree v. Gunput*, 11 B. L. R. 201, note; S. C. 10 Suth. 122.

have been cited on this subject. It may be enough to say, that according to their Lordships' view, no texts which have been cited go to the full extent of the proposition contended." Then, after referring with approval to the Bengal case as laying the law down less broadly than those in Madras and Bombay, the judgment concluded by saying, "It may hereafter possibly become necessary for this Board to consider, whether or not the more limited and guarded expression of the law upon this subject of the Courts of Bengal, is not more correct than what appears to be the doctrine of the Courts of Madras" (b).

The science must have been specially taught at the family expense.

§ 260. All of the above cases were recently examined by the High Court of Bombay (c). They said, "It certainly appears to us that the dictum of *Mitter, J.*, that the proposition which we are considering 'is no where sanctioned by Hindu law,' is not strictly accurate. The texts which have been cited to us do, in our opinion, establish it as a rule of Hindu law that the ordinary gains of science are divisible, when such science has been imparted at the family expense, and acquired while receiving a family maintenance, but that it is otherwise when the science has been imparted at the expense of persons who are not members of the student's family. But the question still remains, whether the term 'Science' as used in the texts, is, in modern days, to be construed as meaning a mere general education, and not rather a special training for a particular profession. The words 'any education whatever' in the judgment of the Judicial Committee in *Pauliem v. Pauliem*, as well as an observation of one of their Lordships in the course of the argument, that the Madras case of the dancing girl was a case of a special training, and not necessarily applicable to a case of general training, may seem to indicate that, if the question again comes before their Lordships, it will be considered chiefly with reference to the nature and extent of the educa-

(b) *Pauliem Valoo v. Pauliem Sooryah*, 4 I. A. 109, 117; S. C. 1 Mad. 252.

(c) *Lakshman v. Jumnabai*, 6 Bom. 325, p. 342. Approved and followed *Krishnaji Mahadev v. Moro Mahadev*, 15 Bom. 32.

tion imparted at the family expense." The Court, after citing with approval the remarks at the beginning of the preceding paragraph, proceed to say: "We think that we shall be doing no violence to the Hindu texts, but shall be only adapting them to the condition of modern society, if we hold, that, when they speak of the gains of science which has been imparted at the family expense, they intend the special branch of science which is the immediate source of the gains, and not the elementary education which is the necessary stepping stone to the acquisition of all science."

§ 261. On the same principle, although the admitted possession or existence of joint funds will throw upon the self-acquirer the onus of proving that such funds did not form the nucleus of his fortune (*d*), the fact itself is not conclusive. In a case in the Supreme Court of Bengal, *Grant, J.*, said, "Where the property descended is incapable of being considered as the germ whose improvement has constituted the wealth subsequently possessed, this wealth must evidently be deemed acquired. An ancestral cottage never converted, or capable of conversion to an available amount into money, in which the maker of the wealth had the trifling benefit of residing with the rest of the family when he commenced turning his industry to profit,—so of other things of a trifling nature" (*e*). Of course the contrary would be held, if it appeared that the income of the joint property was large enough to leave a surplus, after discharging the necessary expenses of the family, out of which the acquisitions might have been made (*f*). And purchases made with money borrowed on the security of the common property will belong to the Joint Family, the members of which will be jointly liable for the debt

Possession of joint funds not conclusive.

(*d*) *Shib Pershad v. Gungamonee*, 16 Suth. 291; *Pran Kriato v. Bhageerutee*, 20 Suth. 158; *Subbayya v. Surayya*, 10 Mad. 251.

(*e*) *Goeroochurn v. Goluckmoney*, Fultou, 165, 181; *per curiam*, *Mernatchee v. Chetumbra*, Mad. Dec. of 1853, 63; *Jadoomonee v. Gungadur*, 1 Boul. 600; *V. Darp*, 321; *Ahmedbhoy v. Cassumbhoy*, 13 Bom. 334; 10 M. I. A., p. 505.

(*f*) *Sudanund v. Soorjo Monee*, 11 Suth. 436.

(*g*) *Sheopershad v. Kulunder*, 1 S. D. 76.



But it would be otherwise if the loan was made on the sole credit of the borrower, or even if the loan was made out of the common fund, under a special agreement that it was to be at the sole risk of the borrower, and for his sole benefit (*h*).

Government  
grants.

§ 262. Estates conferred by Government in the exercise of their sovereign power, become the self-acquired property of the donee, whether such gifts are absolutely new grants, or only the restoration to one member of the family of property previously held by another, but confiscated (*i*). But where one member of a family forcibly dispossesses another who is in possession of an ancestral Zemindary, and there is no legal forfeiture, nor any fresh grant by a person competent to confer a legal title, the new occupant takes, not by self-acquisition, but in continuation of the former title (*k*). And where a confiscation made by Government was subsequently annulled, and no grant to any third person was ever made, it was held that the old title revived, for the benefit of all persons capable of claiming under it (*l*). So a grant made by Government to the holder of an estate, which merely operates as an ascertainment of the State claim for revenue, and a release of the reversionary right of the crown, is a mere continuance of the old estate (*m*).

Savings from  
impartible  
property.

A point which has only recently been decided is, whether the savings made by the holder of an impartible estate

---

(*h*) *Rai Nursingh v. Rai Narain*, 8 N. W. P. 218.

(*i*) *Katama Natchiar v. Rajah of Shivaganga*, 9 M. I. A. 606; S. C. 2 Suth. (P. C.) 31; *Beer Pertab v. Maharajah Rajender*, 12 M. I. A. 1, (Hunsapore Case); S. O. 2 Suth. (P. C.) 31. As to grants in Oudh after the Confiscation of 1858, and under Act I of 1869 (Oudh Estate Act); see *Thakurain Sookraj v. The Government*, 14 M. I. A. 112. *Hurpurshad v. Sheo Dyal*, 3 I. A. 259; S. C. 26 Suth. 55; *Hardeo Bux v. Jawahir*, 4 I. A. 178; 6 I. A. 161. *Brijindar v. Janki Koer*, 5 I. A. 1; *Thakur Shere v. Thakurain*, 3 Cal. 645; *Gouri Shunker v. Maharajah of Bulrampore*, 6 I. A. 1; S. O. 4 Cal. 839; *Mulka Jahan v. Deputy Commissioner of Lucknow*, *ib.* 63; *Mirza Jehan v. Nawab Afsur Bahu*, *ib.* 76; S. C. 4 Cal. 727; *Seth Jaidial v. Seth Siteeram*, 8 I. A. 215; *Ramanund v. Raghunath*, 9 I. A. 41; S. C. 8 Cal. 769. *Pirithi Pal v. Jewahir Singh*, 14 I. A. 37. A grant of a jaghire is presumably only for life. *Gulabdas v. Collector of Surat*, 6 I. A. 54; S. O. 3 Bom. 186.

(*k*) *Yanumula v. Boochia*, 13 M. I. A. 333; S. C. 13 Suth. (P. C.) 21.

(*l*) *Mirza Jehan v. Badshoo Bahoo*, 12 I. A. 124; S. C. 12 Cal. 1.

(*m*) *Narayana v. Chengalamma*, 10 Mad. 1.



under Mitakshara law, are his self-acquired property, or not. It is quite settled that, although an impartible Zemindary may be joint property, in the sense that all the family have a joint and vested interest in the reversion (§ 255), its annual income, and the accumulations of such income, are the absolute and exclusive property of the possessor of the Zemindary for the time being. None of his kindred can claim an account of the mode in which he has spent his income, nor a share in the profits annually accruing or laid by. He may spend as much or as little of his income as he likes. If he spends it all, it is not waste, and whatever he invests is absolutely at his own disposal during his life (n). There could therefore be no coparcenary in such savings, and therefore no survivorship (o). If, therefore, a Zemindar in Madras left no issue, it seems to me that his widow would take his savings before his brothers, or their issue, and if he left issue, they would take exclusively. This appears to have been the view of the Madras High Court in one of the two cases quoted above, where they say, "Whether regarded as the separately acquired funds of the Zemindar, or as it really is, his acquisition derived from ancestral property owned by him solely, it is equally divisible family property as between his sons" (p). Accordingly when a Poligar died leaving debts which would not bind the family, but also leaving property which had been purchased out of the savings of his income, it was held that such purchases were his separate property, to which his creditors would be entitled in discharge of their debts (q). Of course savings handed down from previous Zemindars would follow a different rule; they would become the joint property of his descendants, of whom the succeeding Zemindar was only one, his brothers and their issue being the others.

---

(n) *Maharajulungaru v. Rajah Row Pantalu*, 5 Mad. H. C. 31, 41; *Lutchmana Row v. Terimul Row*, 4 Mad. Jur. 241.

(o) See *Neelkisto Deb v. Beerchunder*, 12 M. I. A. 540; S. C. 3 B. L. R. (P. C.) 13; S. C. 12 Suth. (P. C.) 21 (Tipperah Case).

(p) 5 Mad. H. C. 41, *Supra*, note (n).

(q) *Kotta Ramasami v. Bangari*, 3 Mad. 145. Both Judges agreed that this would be the case with a *de jure* Poligar, but they differed as to the law where the Poligar was one *de facto* but not *de jure*. See pp. 155, 165.

Recovery of  
ancestral pro-  
perty.

§ 263. Another mode of self-acquisition, which is not very likely to arise now, is where one coparcener unaided by the others, or by the family funds, recovers, with the acquiescence of his co-heirs, ancestral property, which had been seized by others, and which his family had been unable to recover (r). In order to bring a case within this rule, the property must have passed into the possession of strangers, and be held by them adversely to the family. It is not sufficient that it should be held by a person claiming title to hold it as a member of the family, or by a stranger claiming under the family, as for instance by mortgage. So also the recovery by one co-heir for his own special benefit is only permissible where "the neglect of the coparceners to assert their title had been such as to show that they had no intention to seek to recover the property, or were at least indifferent as to its recovery, and thus tacitly assented to the recoverer using his means and exertions for that purpose, or upon an express understanding with the recoverer's coparceners." "The recovery, if not made with the privity of the co-heirs, must at least have been *bonâ fide*, and not in fraud of their title, or by anticipating them in their intention of recovering the lost property." Finally, it must be an actual recovery of possession, and not merely the obtaining of a decree for possession (s).

Result to re-  
coverer.

As to the result of such a recovery, there seems to be a conflict in the Mitakshara. At ch. i. 5, § 11, the author, referring to Manu, ix. § 209, makes the property which has been recovered belong exclusively to the recoverer. At ch. i. 4, § 11, he quotes a text of Sankha as establishing that, "if it be land, he takes the fourth part, and the remainder is equally shared among all the brethren." Dr. Mayr reconciles the discrepancy by supposing that the former

(r) Manu, ix. § 209; Mitakshara, i. 4, § 2, 6; Daya Bhaga, vi. 2, § 31—37; D. K. S. iv. 2, § 6—9; Raghunandana, v. 29—31.

(s) Visalatchy v. Annasamy, 5 Mad. H. O. 150; Bishenwar v. Shitul, 8 Suth. 13; S. C. Confirmed on review; Sub nomine, Bissessur v. Seetul, 9 Suth. 69; Bolakee v. Ct of Wards, 14 Suth. 34; Jugmohundas v. Mangaldas, 10 Rom. 528; Muttu Vaduganadha v. Dorasinga, 8 I. A. 99; S. C. 3 Mad. 300; Naraganti v. Venkatachalapati, 4 Mad. p. 259.

text refers to the case of a recovery by the father, while the latter refers to one of several brethren or other coparceners, who all stand on the same level (*t*). The Bengal authorities, however, take the latter rule as applying to every recoverer, but only in the case of land (*u*). It is to be observed that the recoverer takes one-fourth first, and then shares equally with the others in the residue (*v*).

§ 264. An intermediate case between self-acquired and joint property is the case, resting upon a text of Vasishtha, in which property acquired by a single coparcener, at the expense of the patrimony, is said to be subject to partition, the acquirer being entitled to a double share (*w*). It has already been suggested (§ 216) that this text probably applied originally to self-acquisition properly so called, and that it cut down the rights of a self-acquirer, instead of enlarging the rights of one who has made use of common property. The Smriti Chandrika and Madhaviya both restrict the text to the gains of learning, when considered to be partible in consequence of the education from which they sprung, having been imparted at the expense of the family (*x*). The general principles laid down by Vijnanesvara seem to exclude the idea that any special and exclusive benefit can be obtained to any co-heir by a use of the family property (*y*). Mr. W. MacNaghten states that under Benares law no such benefit can be obtained, whatever may have been the personal exertions of any individual, but that the rule does exist in Bengal (*z*). There is no doubt that in that province the rule has been repeatedly

Acquisitions  
aided by joint  
funds.

(*t*) Mayr, 25; Vrihaspati, 3 Dig. 32.

(*u*) Daya Bhaga, vi. 2, § 36—39; D. K. S. iv. 2, § 7, 8; 1 W. MacN. 52; 2 W. MacN. 157.

(*v*) D. K. S. iv. 2, § 9; 3 Dig. 365.

(*w*) "And if one of the brothers has gained something by his own effort, he shall receive a double share." Vasishtha, xvii. 51; Mitakshara, i. 4, § 29; Daya Bhaga, vi. 1, § 27—29; Raghunandana, i. 20, v. 18.

(*x*) Smriti Chandrika, vii. § 9; Madhaviya, p. 49, and see futwah, 2 W. MacN. 167.

(*y*) Mitakshara, i. 4, § 1—6.

(*z*) 1 W. MacN. 52; 2 W. MacN. 7, n., 158, 160, n., 162, n.

laid down (a), but little attempt has been made to define its extent, or the cases to which it applies. In a case before the Supreme Court of Bengal, Sir *Lawrence Peel*, C. J., laid down the law as follows: "The authorities establish, and the uniform course of practice in this Court is conformable to them, that the sole manager of the joint stock is thereby entitled to no increased share, and that skill and labour contributed by one joint sharer alone in the augmentation or improvement of the common stock, establishes no right to a larger share; that the acquisition of a distinct property without aid of the joint funds or joint labour gives a separate right, and creates a separate estate; that the acquisition of a *distinct* property, with the aid of joint funds, or of joint labour, gives the acquirer a right to a double share, and prevents the character of separate estate from attaching to such an acquisition; and lastly, that the union with the common stock of that which might otherwise have been held in severalty, gives it the character of a joint and not of a separate property." *Grant*, J., held to the same effect, adding that in this respect the law of Bengal and the Mitakshara coincide, and that to entitle the acquirer to a double share, he must only be "aided by means drawn from the joint funds of little consideration" (b). This decision is cited with approval by the Supreme Court of Bengal (c) as laying down both the rule and the exception as to joint and separate acquisitions. The first principle laid down by Sir *Lawrence Peel*, that in order to entitle the acquirer to a double share, the property acquired must be a distinct one, is in accordance with the Mitakshara, which, after citing Vasishtha's text, proceeds, "The author (Yajnavalkya) propounds an exception to that maxim. But if the common stock be improved, an equal division is ordained;" and says

---

(a) *Gudadhur v. Ajodhearam*, 1 S. D. 6 (7); *Koshul v. Radhanath*, 1 S. D. 336 (448); *Doorputtee v. Haradhun*, 3 S. D. 98; *Kripa Sindhu v. Kanhaya*, 5 S. D. 335 (393); *per curiam*, *Uma Sundari v. Dwarkanath*, 2 B. L. R. (A. C. J.) 287.

(b) *Gooroochurn v. Goluckmoney*, *Fulton*, 165.

(c) *Soorjeemoney Dossee v. Denobundo*, 4 M. I. A. 539; S. C. 4 Suth. (P. C.) 114; *post*, § 268.



that in such a case, a double share is not allotted to the acquirer (d). The second principle laid down by *Grant, J.*, that the assistance derived from the joint funds must be of little consideration, seems also to be in accordance with the *Daya Bhaga*. It will be seen that *Jimuta Vahana* rests the doctrine of the double share of the acquirer, not upon the text of *Vasishtha*, which he seems to take as applying to self-acquisition, properly so called, but upon a text of *Vyasa*. "The brethren participate in that wealth, which one of them gains by valour or the like, using any common property, either a weapon or a vehicle" (e). Here the meritorious cause of the acquisition is the brother himself, the assistance derived from the joint funds being insignificant. This view is in accordance with the *futwah* of the Pandits in *Purtab Bahaudur v. Tilukdharee* (f), "of several brothers living together in family partnership, should one acquire property by means of funds common to the whole, the property so acquired belongs jointly to all the brothers. Should, however, the means of acquisition, drawn from the joint funds, be of little consideration, and the personal exertions considerable, two shares belong to the acquirer, and one to each of the other brothers." Both points have been affirmed by later decisions of the Bengal High Court (g).

§ 265. There is a good deal of conflict, probably more apparent than real, between the decisions of the High Court of Bengal as to the question upon whom lies the onus of proof, where property is claimed by one person as being joint property, and withheld by another as being self-acquired, or *vice versa*. The general principle undoubtedly is, that as every Hindu family is supposed to be joint unless the contrary is proved, so if nothing appears upon the case except that a member of a family, admittedly or presumably joint, is in possession of property, if he alleges that it is his

Burthen of proof.

(d) *Mitakshara*, i. 4, § 30, 31.

(e) *Daya Bhaga*, ii. § 41, vi. 1, § 28, 14.

(f) 1 S. D. 179 (236).

(g) *Sree Narain v. Gooro Pershad*, 6 Suth. 219; *Sheo Dyal v. Judoonath*, 9 Suth. 61; and *per Colvile, C. J.*, *Jadomonee v. Gangadhur*, 1 Boul., 600; *V. Darp.*, 521.



Presumption as  
to union.

own self-acquisition, he is alleging something which is an exception to the general rule, and it lies upon him to prove the exception (*h*). But on the other hand, the case of a plaintiff who seeks to establish a claim to Joint Family property is no exception to the rule, that the plaintiff must make out his case. He starts with a presumption in his favour. But this presumption must be taken along with the other facts, proved or admitted, and those facts may so far remove the presumption arising from the ordinary condition of a Hindu family, as to throw back the burthen of proof on the other side (*i*). What, then, is the extent of the presumption as to the condition of a Hindu family? "The normal state of every Hindu family is joint. Presumably every such family is joint in food, worship, and estate. In the absence of proof of division, such is the legal presumption. But the members of the family may sever in all or any of these three things" (*k*). Of course there is no presumption that a family, because it is joint, possesses joint property, or any property. But where it is proved or admitted that a Joint Family possesses some joint property, and the property in dispute has been acquired, or is held in a manner, consistent with that character, "the presumption of law is that all the property they were possessed of was joint property, until it was shown by evidence that one member of the family was possessed of separate property." And this presumption is not rebutted merely by showing "that it was purchased in the name of one member of the family, and that there are receipts in his name respecting it; for all that is perfectly consistent with the notion of its having been joint property, and even if it had been joint property, it still would have been treated in exactly the same manner" (*l*). The difference of opinion seems to arise as to the degree to

(*h*) *Luximon Row v. Mullar Row*, 2 Kn, 60, 63.

(*i*) *Bholanath v. Ajoodhia*, 12 B. L. R. 336; S. C. 20 Suth. 65; *Bodh Singh v. Gunesh*, 12 B. L. R. (P. C.) 317; S. C. 19 Suth. 356; *per curiam*, 12 Bom. pp. 131, 309, 13 Bom. p. 66.

(*k*) *Per curiam*, *Neelkisto Deb v. Beerchunder*, (Tipperah case) 12 M. I. A. 540; S. C. 3 B. L. R. (P. C.) 13; S. C. 12 Suth. (P. C.) 21; *Naragunt v. Vengama*, 9 M. I. A. 92; S. C. 1 Suth. (P. C.) 30.

(*l*) *Dhurm Das v. Mt Shama Soondri*, 3 M. I. A. 229, 240; S. C. 6 Suth (P.

which the presumption is to be pushed, where the family is joint, but where no nucleus of joint property is either admitted or proved, and where some property is held by one or more members in a manner, as regards either origin or enjoyment, apparently, though not necessarily, inconsistent with the idea of a joint interest.

§ 266. The law upon this point was laid down as follows by the Sudder Court of Bengal. "Where, by the plaintiff's own admission, the properties in dispute were not acquired by the use of patrimonial funds, and the defendants never acknowledged that they were acquired by the joint exertions and aid of the plaintiff and his father, it was for the plaintiff to prove his own allegations as to the original joint interest in the purchase of the property. The mere circumstance of the parties having been united in food, raises no such sufficient presumption of a joint interest as to relieve the plaintiffs from the onus of proof" (*m*). And the Bengal High Court said, "To render it joint property, the consideration for its purchase must have proceeded either out of ancestral funds, or have been produced out of the joint property, or by joint labour. But neither of these alternatives is matter of legal presumption. It can only be brought to the cognizance of a Court of justice in the same way as any other fact, viz., by evidence. Consequently, whoever's interest it is to establish it, he must be able to produce the evidence. The plaintiff coming into Court to claim a share in property as being Joint Family property, must lay some foundation before he can succeed in his suit. He must, at least, show that the defendants whom he sues constitute a Joint Family, and that the property in question became joint property when acquired, or that at some period since its acquisition it has been enjoyed jointly by the family. It will be sufficient for this purpose for him to show that the family, of

Burthen of  
proof.

C.) 48; *Umrithnath v. Goureenath*, 13 M. I. A. 542; S. C. 15 Suth. (P. C.) 10; *Rampershad v. Sheochurn*, 10 M. I. A. 490, 505.

(*m*) *Kishoree v. Chummun*, S. D. of 1852, 111, citing 2 W. MacN. 152—156; F. MacN. 60, approved; *Soobhedur v. Boloram*, Suth. Sp. No. 57.

which the defendants came, was at some antecedent period, not unreasonably great, living joint in estate ; and that the property in question was either a portion of the patrimonial estate, so enjoyed by the family, or that it has been since acquired by joint funds. In this case the Principal Sudr Amin has found that the plaintiff has given no proof of the family being joint, beyond the admitted fact of the three persons being brothers and the plaintiff has also given no sort of proof that these brothers ever were living in the joint enjoyment of any property, still less that this property was acquired by the use and employment of any joint funds. It seems to us that he was entirely right, on this finding, to dismiss the plaintiff's suit without looking further into the case" (n). The principles laid down in this case as to *onus probandi* were, however, denied to be law by the Chief Justice, Sir *Richard Couch*, in *Taruck Chunder v. Jodeshur* (o). He laid down the rule to be that, "as the presumption of law is that all the property the family is in possession of is joint property, the rule that the possession of one of the joint owners is the possession of all would apply to this extent, that if one of them was found to be in possession of any property, the family being presumed to be joint in estate, the presumption would be, not that he was in possession of it as separate property acquired by him, but as a member of the Joint Family." This ruling, however, was considered and differed from by other Judges of the High Court in two subsequent cases (p), and was again considered by the High Court and affirmed by two later cases. One of these was the decision of a Court of Appeal, and in the second a single Judge refused to refer the point to a full bench as being conclusively settled (q).

Conflict of  
opinion.

(n) *Shiu Golam v. Baran*, 1 B. L. R. (A. C. J.) 164; S. C. 10 Suth. 198; *Sub nomine, Sheo Golam v. Burra*.

(o) 11 B. L. R. 193; S. C. 19 Suth. 178; acc. *Annundo Mohun v. Lamb*, 1 Marsh. 169; *Hait Singh v. Dabee Singh*, 2 N. W. P. 308; *Nursingh Das v. Narain Das*, 3 N. W. P. 217; *Sidapa v. Pooneakooty*, Morris, 100.

(p) *Bholanath v. Ajoodhia*, 12 B. L. R. 336; S. C. 20 Suth. 65; *Denonath v. Hurrynarrain*, 12 B. L. R. 349.

(q) *Gobind Chunder v. Doorgapersad*, 14 B. L. R. 337; S. C. 22 Suth. 248; *Shushee Mohun v. Aukhil*, 25 Suth. 232; *Vedavalli v. Narayana*, 2 Mad. 19.

§ 267. It seems to me that the difficulty arises from attempting to lay down an abstract proposition of law which will govern every case, however different in its facts. It is correct to say that a Hindu family is presumed to be joint. It is merely equivalent to saying, that, where nothing else is known of a family, the probability is that its members have never entered into a partition with each other. It is a definite statement as to the probability of a single fact. But to say generally of any piece of property in the possession of any member of the family, that it is presumably joint estate, is to assert one or other of a great many different propositions. Either that in its present condition it was ancestral property, or that it was acquired by means or with the assistance of ancestral property, or by means of joint labour, or joint funds, or both, or that it was acquired by a single member without aid from other funds, or from other members, and then thrown into the common stock. Now, these propositions are each different in their probability, and different in the facts which would establish them. The very statement of the plaintiff's case, or his evidence, may negative some of them, just as the defendant's case may admit some of them. It seems impossible to say what the presumption is, until it is known what proposition the plaintiff and defendant respectively put forward. This seems to be all that is laid down by the Bengal cases, which go most strongly against the rights of undivided family. The Judges say, "Tell us what your case is: when we find how much of it is admitted by the other side, we will then be able to say whether you are relieved of the necessity of proving any part of your case, and how much of it." For instance, if the plaintiff's case was that the property was ancestral, and the defendant admitted that it was purchased with his father's money, but alleged that the purchase was made in his own name, and for his own exclusive benefit, the burthen of proof would lie on him (*r*). Again, if the case was that the property was purchased out of the proceeds

Suggested solution.

Burthen of proof varies.

(*r*) *Gopeekrist v. Gungapersaud*, 6 M. I. A. 53; *Bissessur v. Luchmessur*, 6 I. A. 238; S. C. 5 C. L. R. 477.



of the family estate, and it was admitted that there was family property, of which the defendant was manager, the *onus* would also lie on him to show a separate acquisition (s). And so it would be where the property was acquired by any member, if the family was joint, and there was an admitted nucleus of family property (t). If it was denied that there ever had been any family property, or admitted that the defendant was not the person in possession of it, the plaintiff would, I imagine, fail if he offered no evidence whatever. The amount of evidence necessary to shift upon the other side the burthen of displacing it might be very small, but would necessarily vary according to the facts of each case. On the other hand, if the property was admitted to be originally self-acquisition, but stated to have been thrown into the common stock, this would be a very good case, if made out (§ 254), but the *onus* of proving it would be heavily on the party asserting it. And so it would be if the property were admitted to have been acquired by one member without the use of family funds, but the plaintiff asserted that he had rendered such assistance as made it joint property. Even where it appeared that the family had ancestral property in their joint possession, but that some of the family acquired separate property from their own funds, and dealt with it as their own without reference to the other members of the family, the Privy Council held "that such a state of things may be fairly held to weaken, if not altogether to rebut, the ordinary presumption of Hindu law as to property in the name of one member of a Joint Family, and to throw upon those who claim as joint property that of which they have allowed their coparcener, trading and incurring liabilities on his separate account to appear to be the sole owner, the obligation of establishing their title by clear and cogent reasons" (u). *A fortiori*,

---

(s) *Luximon Row v. Mullar Row*, 2 Kn. 60; *Pedru v. Domingo*, Mad. Dec. of 1860, 8; *Janokee v. Kisto*, Marsh, 1.

(t) *Prankristo v. Bhagerutee*, 20 Suth. 158; *Moolji Lilla v. Gokuldas*, 8 Bom. 154; *Lakshman v. Jamnabai*, 6 Bom. 225.

(u) *Bodh Singh v. Gunesh*, 12 B. L. R. 317, 327; S. C. 19 Suth. 356; *Murari Pithoji v. Mukund Shiraji*, 15 Bom. 201.



where there had been admitted self-acquisitions, and an actual partition, if one of the members sued subsequently for a share of property left in the hands of one of the members as his self-acquired property, alleging that it was really joint property; or if a member of the family admitted a partition among some of the members, but asserted that the others had remained undivided, the *onus* would lie upon him to make out such a case

§ 268. The fourth subject of examination relates to the mode in which the Joint Family property is to be enjoyed by the coparceners. This must necessarily vary according to the view taken of the nature of the family corporation. In Malabar and Canara, where the property is indissoluble, the members of the family may be said rather to have rights out of the property than rights to the property. The head of the family is entitled to its entire possession, and is absolute in its management. The junior members have only a right to maintenance and residence. They cannot call for an account, except as incident to a prayer for the removal of the manager for misconduct, nor claim any specific share of the income, nor even require that their maintenance or the family outlay should be in proportion to the income. An absolute discretion in this respect is vested in the manager (*w*). A family governed by Mitakshara law is in a very similar position, except as to their right to a partition, and to an account as incident to that right. In a judgment which is constantly referred to, Lord *Westbury* said, "According to the true notion of an undivided family in Hindu law, no individual member of that family while it remains undivided, can predicate of the joint and undivided property that he, that particular member, has a certain

Enjoyment of family property.

Malabar.

Mitakshara.

(v) *Badul v. Chatterdharee*, 9 Suth. 558; *Bannoo v. Kashee Ram*, (P. C.) 8 Cal. 815; *Radha Churn v. Kripa*, 5 Cal. 474; *Obhoy Churn v. Gobind Chunder*, 9 Cal. 287; *Upendra Narain v. Gopanath*, *ibid.* 817; *Bata Krishna v. Chintamani*, 12 Cal. 262. In the two latter cases it was held, that the mere fact that one member of the family had separated from the joint stock, raised no presumption that the other members had separated *inter se*. See the converse case, *Kristnappa v. Ramasawmy*, 8 Mad. H. C. 25.

(w) § 220. *Tod v. Kunhamod*, 3 Mad. 175.

Bengal.

definite share. No individual member of an undivided family could go to the place of the receipt of rent, and claim to take from the collector or receiver of the rents a certain definite share. The proceeds of undivided property must be brought, according to the theory of an undivided family, to the common chest or purse, and there dealt with according to the modes of enjoyment by the members of an undivided family" (x). The position of a Joint Family under Bengal law is in some respects less favourable, and in other respects, apparently, more favourable than that of a family under Mitakshara law. Where property is held by a father as head of an undivided family, his issue have no legal claim upon him or the property, except for their maintenance. He can dispose of it as he pleases, and they cannot require a partition (§ 224). Consequently they can neither control, nor call for an account of his management. But as soon as it has made a descent, the brothers or other co-heirs hold their shares in a sort of quasi-severalty, which admits of the interest of each, while still undivided, passing on to his own representatives, male or females, or even to his assignees (y). How far this principle enlarges the rights of the co-sharers *inter se* is a matter of some obscurity. *Primâ facie* one would imagine that it would entitle each coparcener under Bengal law to do what, according to Lord *Westbury*, no coparcener can do under Benares law, *viz.*, "to predicate of the joint and undivided family property that he, that particular member, has a certain definite share." But this seems hardly to be admitted by the Supreme Court of Bengal, in a passage where they laid down the following propositions as setting forth the characteristics of joint property held by an undivided family in Bengal. "*First*, each of the coparceners has a right to call for a partition, but until such partition takes place, and even an inchoate partition does not

*Appovier v. Rama Subba Aiyar*, 11 M. I. A. 89; S. C. 8 Suth. (P. C.) 1. *Per Turner*, L. J., *Soorjeemoney Dossee v. Denobundo*, 6 M. I. A. 558; S. C. 4 Suth. (P. C.) 114; *Daya Bhaga*, ii. § 28, note, xi. 1, § 25, 26; D. K. S. xi. § 2, 8, 7; 2 Dig. 104; *ante*, § 241. *Raghunandana*, however, lays down most strongly the doctrine that each undivided coparcener has an equal right over the whole and every portion of the undivided property, i. 21—2f

seem to vary the rights of the co-sharers, the whole remains common stock ; the co-sharers being equally interested in every part of it. *Second*, on the death of an original co-sharer his heirs stand in his place, and succeed to his rights as they stood at his death ; his rights may also in his lifetime pass to strangers, either by alienation, or as in the case of creditors, by operation of law ; but in all cases those who come in, in the place of the original co-sharer, by inheritance, assignment or operation of law, can take only his rights as they stand, including of course the right to call for a partition. *Third*, whatever increment is made to the common stock whilst the estate continues joint, falls into and becomes part of that stock. On a partition it is divisible equally, no matter by what application of the common funds, or by whose exertions it may have been made ; the single exception to the rule being, that on the acquisition by one co-sharer of a distinct property, with the aid only of the joint funds, the acquirer may take a double share in that property. The increment arising from the accumulations of undrawn income is obviously within the general rule'' (z).

§ 269. So long as the manager of the Joint Family administers it for the purposes of the family, he is not under the same obligation to economise or to save, as would be the case with a paid agent or trustee. For instance, where the family concern is being wound up on a partition, the accounts must be taken upon the footing of what has been spent, and what remains, and not upon the footing of what might have been spent, if frugality and skill had been employed (a). The reason, of course, is that the manager is dealing with his own property, and if he chooses to live expensively, the remedy of the others is to come to a partition. On the other hand " he is certainly liable to make good to them their shares of all sums which he has actually

Position of  
manager ;

(z) *Soorjeemoney Dossee v. Denobundo*, 6 M. I. A. 526, 539 ; S. C. 4 Suth. (P. C.) 114, reversed by the P. C. upon the construction of a will, but these propositions were not disputed. See too *Chuckun v. Poran*, 11 Suth. 488.

(a) *Tara Chand v. Reeb Ram*, 3 Mad. H. C. 177 ; *Choonee v. Prosunno*, Sev. 281 ; *Jugmohundas v. Mangaldas*, 10 Bom. 528.

of ordinary  
member of  
family.

mis-appropriated, or which he has spent for purposes other than those in which the Joint Family was interested. Of course, no member of a joint Hindu family is liable to his coparceners for anything which might have been actually consumed by him in consequence of his having a larger family to support, or of his being subject to greater expenses than the others ; but this is simply because all such expenses are justly considered to be the legitimate expenses of the whole family. Thus, for instance, one member of a joint Hindu family may have a larger number of daughters to marry than the others. The marriage of each of these daughters to a suitable bridegroom is an obligation incumbent upon the whole family, so long as they continue to be joint, and the expenses incurred on account of such marriages must be necessarily borne by all the members, without any reference whatever to respective interests in the family estate" (b). Observations to the same effect were made by the Supreme Court of Bengal in the case from which I have already quoted, and they add, "We apprehend that at the present day, when personal luxury has increased, and the change of manners has somewhat modified the relations of the members of a Joint Family, it is by no means unusual that in the common *Khatta* book an account of the separate expenditure of each member is opened and kept against him ; and that on a partition, even in the absence of fraud or exclusion, those accounts enter into the general account on which the final partition and allotment are made" (c).

Right to an  
account.

§ 270. 'The right of each member of an undivided Hindu family to require an account of the management, has been both affirmed and denied in decisions which are not very easy to reconcile. Possibly, however, the apparent conflict may be explained, by considering the various purposes for which an account may be demanded. It is of course quite clear, that every member of the coparcenary, who is entitled

(b) *Per Mitter, J., Abhaychandra v. Pyari*, 5 B. L. R. 347, 349.

(c) *Soorjeemoney Dossee v. Denobundo*, 6 M. I. A. 540 ; S. C. 4 Suth. (P.



to demand a partition, is also entitled to an account, as a necessary preliminary to such partition. A different question arises, where the account is sought by a member who desires to remain undivided. A claim by a continuing coparcener to have a statement furnished to him of the amount standing to his separate account, with a view to having that amount or any portion of it paid over to him, or carried over to a fresh account, as in the case of an ordinary partnership, would, in a family governed by Mitakshara law, be wholly inadmissible. The answer to such a demand would be, "You have no separate account. Your claim is limited to the use of the family property, and everything that has not been specifically set apart for you belongs to the family and not to its members." It was a claim to an account of this sort to which *Jackson, J.*, referred, when he said, "It appears to be admitted that, although a son has a joint interest in the ancestral estate with his father, he cannot, as long as that estate remains joint, call upon his father for an account of his management of that estate; that he, for instance, could not sue his father for mesne profits for years during which it was under his father's management" (d). But it would be very different if he said, "I wish to know how the affairs of the corporation to which I belong are being managed." It certainly seems a matter of natural justice that such a demand should be complied with. The remedy which any coparcener has against mismanagement of the family property, is his right to a partition. But he cannot know whether it would be wise to exercise this right, unless he can be informed as to the state of the affairs of the family. Yet even a right to an account of this nature has in some cases been denied. The Supreme Court of Bengal in the case already referred to (e) say, "the right to demand such an account, when it exists, is incident to the right to require partition; the liability to account can only be enforced upon a partition." In one case of a Bengal

Right to an account.

(d) *Shudanund v. Bonomalee*, 6 Suth. 256, 259.

(e) *Soorjeemoney Dossee v. Denobundo*, 6 M. I. A. 540; S. C. 4 Suth. (P. C.) 114.



family, *Phear, J.*, drew a distinction as to the liability to account between the case of a management on behalf of a minor and on behalf of one of full years. In the former case he considered that the manager was strictly a trustee, and was bound when his trust came to an end, that is at the end of the minority, to account for the manner in which he had discharged it. But as regards adult members, he said, "the manager is merely the chairman of a committee, of which the family were the members. They manage the property together, and the '*karta*' is but the mouthpiece of the body, chosen and capable of being changed by themselves. Therefore, unless something is shown to the contrary, every adult member of an undivided Joint Family, living in commensality with the '*karta*,' must be taken, as between himself and the '*karta*,' to be a participator in, and authoriser of, all that is from time to time done in the management of the joint property to this extent, namely, that he cannot, without further cause, call the '*karta*,' to account for it. Of course, it may, as a matter of fact, be the case in a given family that the '*karta*' is the agent of, or stands in a fiduciary and accountable relation to, one or more of the members. It would be easy to imagine a state of things under which he had become the trustee of the property relative to his adult coparcener, or in which, by reason of his fraud or other behaviour, they, some or one of them, had acquired an equity to call upon him for an account. All that I desire to say is, that, in my judgment, he does not wear this character of accountability, merely because he occupies the position of '*karta*'" (*f*). In this case, the plaintiff sought for the account, not merely for information, but as incidental to a claim for his share of the surpluses which such an account would show that the manager had received. The suit was not one for partition, as is evident from the fact that the entire suit was dismissed. Had he sued for a partition he would of course have been

---

(*f*) *Chuckun v. Poran*, 9 Suth. 483. See this case explained by *Phear, J.*, *Abhaychandra v. Pyari*, 5 B. L. R. 354; S. C. *Sub nomine, Obhoy Chunder v. Pearee*, 13 Suth. (F. B.) 75.

entitled to it, though on different terms as to accounting from those which he tried to impose.

§ 271. This decision was relied on in a later case, where a widow (in Bengal) sued for a partition of the property, and, as incidental thereto, for the dissolution of a banking partnership, and that the defendant, the manager, should render an account of the estate of the common ancestor, and of the banking business (g). *Markby*, J., said, "I am clearly of opinion that, in the ordinary case of a joint Hindu family, the manager of the whole, or any portion of the family property, is not, by reason of his occupying that position, bound to render any accounts whatever to the members of the family." He granted an account in the special case on the ground that the banking business was carried on, not as a common family business in the strict sense, the profits of which were all to sink into the common family fund, but rather on the footing of a partnership, the profits of which, when realised, were to be divided among the individual members in certain proportions. This decision however was directly overruled by the Full Bench, in a case where the following questions were referred for decision :—1. Whether the managing member of a joint Hindu family can be sued by the other members for an account, and (it appearing that one of the plaintiffs was a minor) 2. Whether such a suit would not lie, even if the parties suing were minors, during the period for which the accounts were asked. Mr. Justice *Mitter* in making the reference said, "suppose, for instance, that one of the members of a Joint Family, with a view to separate from the others, asks the manager what portion of the family income has been actually saved by him during the period of his managership. If the manager chooses to say that nothing has been saved, but at the same time refuses to give any account of the receipts and disbursements, which were

Full Bench decision.

Right to an account.

---

(g) *Ranganmani v. Kasinath*, 3 B. L. R., (O. C. J.) 1; S. C. 13 Suth. B.) 75, note.

entirely under his control, how is the member, who is desirous of separation, to know what funds are actually available for partition? And according to what principle of law or justice can it be said that he is bound to accept the *ipse dixit* of the manager as a correct representation of the actual state of things?" Both questions accordingly were answered in the affirmative. The previous decision was overruled, and that of *Chuckun v. Poran* was reconciled and explained, as meaning only that joint managers must be taken to have authorized each other's acts, and, therefore, could not after a lapse of years call for an account by one of themselves of dealings which were in fact their own (h).

Relief incidental  
to account.

§ 272. The decision upon the two questions referred is no doubt perfectly sound. But I cannot understand the framework of the suit. The plaintiff alleged that there was real and personal property, the management of which was taken by the defendant in 1863; that although the profits were large, yet the plaintiffs had not been properly maintained; that the elder plaintiff had taken upon himself, in 1866, the management of the one-third share belonging to himself and his minor brother; he prayed for recovery of one-third share of the profits during the defendant's management from 1863 to 1866, and also for one-third share of the *personal* property. No share of the real property was asked for. The account was asked for as incidental to this claim. The defendant pleaded a partition in 1849 which was found against. The original Court gave a decree for the plaintiff for a share of the profits of the real and personal property, but not for a share of the *corpus*. This decree seems to have been in principle affirmed on appeal. It would appear then that the claim made by the plaintiff was, that a separate account should be kept in the name of each co-sharer, in which he should be credited with an aliquot share of the savings, and debited with the amount

---

(h) *Abhaychandra v. Pyari*, 5 B. L. R. 347; S. C. 15 Suth. (F. B.) 75; *Sub-nomine*, *Obhoy Chunder v. Pearee*.

actually expended on himself, and that the balance should be paid over to him annually, or as it accumulated, whenever he chose to ask for it. It is evident that if this principle were carried out, no additions could ever be made to the family property. If the entire family chose to live up to their income, of course they could do so. But would any one member of the family have a right to insist upon living upon a scale higher than was thought suitable by the other members? Would he have a right to withdraw his own share of the income annually from the family system of management or trade, and to deal with it on his own account? If he did so, would the accumulations of such annual withdrawals, and the profits made by means of them, be his own separate property, or would they continue to be joint property? Either supposition involves a contradiction. If they became separate property, that would be in conflict with the rule that the savings of joint property, and acquisitions made solely by means of joint property, continue to be joint. If they became separate, it would follow that a member of an undivided family might accumulate large separate acquisitions by simply investing portions of the family property. On the other hand, if such accumulations remained joint property, the absurdity would arise that A. might sue B. and get a decree for a thousand rupees, and B. might sue A. the very next week, to enforce a partition of that sum and recover a moiety of it.

§ 273. It is, however, quite possible that the plaint was based upon a system of family management, which is by no means uncommon, when the family continues undivided, but each member holds a portion of the property separately, and applies the income arising from it to his own use. Of course, if the portion appropriated to A. was placed in charge of B., the income would be held by him for the use of A., and he would be entitled to an account of its application, and to payment over of the balance. But this would be, not by virtue of the general usage of an undivided Hindu family, but in opposition to that usage, by virtue of

Special family arrangement.



a special arrangement for the apportionment of the income among the individual branches. It must be owned, however, that the language of *Couch*, C. J., looks as if he took a different view. He says (i), "It appears to me that the principle upon which the right to call for an account rests is not, as has been supposed, the existence of a direct agency, or of a partnership where the managing partner may be considered as the agent for his co-partners. It depends upon the right which the members of a joint Hindu family have to a share of the property; and where there is a joint interest in the property, and one party receives all the profits, he is bound to account to the other parties who have an interest in it, for the profits of their respective shares, after making such deductions as he may have the right to make." If by this the learned Chief Justice meant that he was bound to account for these profits, in the sense of paying them over, or holding them at the disposal of the individual members, the opinion must be founded upon a distinction between the rights of co-sharers under Bengal and Mitakshara law. It must proceed upon the idea that the entire share of each member, and therefore its entire income, is appropriated to him, free of all claims by the others, and therefore that the manager only receives it as his agent and trustee. Such a view is certainly the logical result of Jimuta Vahana's theory of joint-ownership. But it is opposed to many of the judicial *dicta* already quoted.

Necessity for  
joint action.

§ 274. A necessary consequence of the corporate character of the family holding is, that wherever any transaction affects that property all the members must be privy to it, and whatever is done must be done for the benefit of all, and not of any single individual. For instance, a single member cannot sue, or proceed by way of execution (k), to recover a particular portion of the family property for himself, whether his claim is preferred against a stranger

(i) *Abhaychandra v. Pyari*, 5 B. L. R. 338; S. C. Sub nomine, *Obhoy Chunder v. Pearee*, 13 Suth. (F. B.) 75.

(k) *Banarsi Das v. Maharam Kuar*, 5 All. 27.



who is asserted to be wrongfully in possession, or against his coparceners. If the former, all the members must join, and the suit must be brought to recover the whole property for the benefit of all. And this, whether the stranger is in possession without a shadow of title, or by the act of one of the sharers, in excess of his power (*l*). If any of the members refuse to join as plaintiffs, or are colluding with the defendant, they should be made co-defendants, so that the interests of all may be bound (*m*). If from any cause, such as lapse of time, the other members cannot be joined as plaintiffs, the whole suit will fail (*n*). If the suit is against the coparceners, it is vicious at its root. The only remedy by one member against his co-sharer is by a suit for partition, as until then he has no right to the exclusive possession of any part of the property (*o*). The same rule forbids one of several sharers to sue alone for the ejectment of a tenant (*p*), unless, perhaps, in a case where by arrangement with his coparceners the plaintiff has been placed in the exclusive possession of the whole (*q*); or for enhancement of rent (*r*) or for his share of the rent (*s*), unless where the defendants

Suits by one co-sharer.

(*l*) *Sheo Churn v. Chukraree*, 15 Suth. 436; *Cheytt Narain v. Bunwaree*, 23 Suth. 395; *Parooma v. Valayooda*, Mad. Dec. of 1853, 35; *Rajaram Tewari v. Lachman*, 4 B. L. R. (A. C. J.) 118; S. C. 12 Suth. 478 approved in *Phoolbas Koonwur v. Lalla Jogeshur*, 3 I. A. at p. 26; S. C. 1 Cal. 226; S. C. 25 Suth. 285; *Biswanath v. Collector of Mymensing*, 7 B. L. R. Appx. 42; S. C. 21 Suth. 69, note; affirmed by *F. B. Unnoda v. Erskine*, 12 B. L. R. 370; S. C. 21 Suth. 68; *Dewakur v. Naroo*, Bom. Sel. Rep. 190; *Nundun v. Lloyd*, 22 Suth. 74; *Teeluk v. Ramjus*, 5 N. W. P. 182; *Nathuni v. Manraj*, 2 Cal. 149. *Arunachela v. Vythialinga*, 6 Mad. 27. The joinder of all necessary parties is the right not only of the plaintiff but of the defendant, as it is his interest that the decree should bind the whole family. *Harigopal v. Gokaldas*, 12 Bom. 158.

(*m*) *Rajaram Tewari v. Lachman*, *ib. sup.*; *Juggodumba v. Haran*, 10 Suth. 109; *Gokool v. Etwaree*, 20 Suth. 138; *Kattusheri v. Vallotil*, 3 Mad. 234; *Bechu Lal v. Oliullah*, 11 Cal. 338; *Kalichandra v. Raj Kishore*, *ib.* 615; *Dwarkanath Mitter v. Tara Prosunno*, 17 Cal. 160.

(*n*) *Kalidas Keraldas v. Nathu Bhagvan*, 7 Bom. 217.

(*o*) *Phoolbas Koonwur v. Lalla Jogeshur*, 3 I. A. 7; S. C. 1 Cal. 226; S. C. 25 Suth. 285; *Dadjee v. Wittal*, Bom. Sel. Rep. 151; *Trimbak v. Narayan*, 11 Bom. H. C. 69; *Gobind Chunder v. Ram Coomar*, 24 Suth. 393. *Ramanuja v. Virappa*, 6 Mad. 90.

(*p*) *Sree Chand v. Nim Chand*, 13 Suth. 337; S. C. 5 B. L. R. Appx. 35; *Alum v. Ashad*, 16 Suth. 138; *Hulodhur v. Gooroo*, 20 Suth. 125; *Krishnarav v. Govind*, 12 Bom. H. C. 85; *Sobharam v. Gunga*, 2 N. W. P. 260; *Balaji v. Gopal*, 3 Bom. 23; *Reasut v. Chorwar*, 7 Cal. 470. See also *Gopal v. Mac-Naghten*, 7 Cal. 751.

(*q*) *Amir Singh v. Mouzzim*, 7 N. W. P. 58.

(*r*) *Jogendro v. Nobin Chunder*, 8 Cal. 353.

(*s*) *Indromonee v. Suroop*, 15 Suth. 395; S. C. 12 B. L. R. 201 (note); *Hur*

have paid their rent to him separately, or agreed to do so, in which case they at all events could not raise the objection. Even in such a case, however, it would clearly be open to any of the other sharers to intervene, if they considered that their rights were being endangered (*t*). And so where one member of a Joint Family has laid out money upon any portion of the joint estate, he cannot sue his co-sharers for repayment, unless there has been an express agreement that he should be repaid. Otherwise his outlay is only a matter to be taken into account on a partition (*u*).

On the other hand, where the act of a third party with respect to the joint property has caused any personal and special loss to one of the co-sharers, which does not affect the others, he can sue for it separately, and they need not be joined (*v*). And it would seem that one co-sharer may sue to eject a mere trespasser, when his object is to remove an intruder from the joint property, without at the same time claiming any special portion of it for himself (*w*). *A fortiori*, a member, of a Joint Family who has contracted in his own name for the benefit of the family, may sue upon the contract in their behalf, without joining the others (*x*).

Rights of  
coparceners  
*inter se*.

§ 275. The rights of shareholders *inter se* depend upon the view taken by the law which governs them of their interest in the property. In the early conception of a

---

*Kishore v. Joogul*, 16 Suth. 281; S. C. 12 B. L. R. 293 (note); *Bhyrub v. Goguram*, 17 Suth. 408; S. C. 12 B. L. R. 290 (note); *Annoda v. Kall Coomar*, 4 Cal. 88. *Manohar Das v. Manzar Ali*, 5 All. 40. As to cases where the other co-sharers are colluding with the defaulting tenant, *Cf. Jadu v. Sutherland*, 4 Cal. 556; and *Jadoo v. Kadumbinee*, 7 Cal. 150.

(*t*) *Ganga v. Saroda*, 3 B. L. R. (A. C. J.) 230; S. C. 12 Suth. 50; *Harad-hun v. Ram Newaz*, 17 Suth. 414; *Saleehoonissa v. Mohesh*, *ib.* 452; *Sree Misser v. Crowdy*, 15 Suth. 243; *Dinobundhoo v. Dinonath*, 19 Suth. 168; by F. B., *Doorga v. Jampa*, 12 B. L. R. 289; S. C. 21 Suth. 46; *Rakhal v. Mahtab*, 25 Suth. 221. Of course the co-sharers might agree that the tenant should pay each of them a portion of the rent, and would then be entitled to sue separately for their respective portions. *Guni v. Moran*, 4 Cal. 96; *Lootfulhuck v. Gopee*, 5 Cal. 941.

(*u*) *Nubkoomar v. Jye Deo*, 2 S. D. 247 (317); *Jalaluddaula v. Sumsamud-daula*, Mad. Dec. of 1860, 161; *Muttuswami v. Subbiramaniya*, 1 Mad. H. C. 309.

(*v*) *Gopee v. Ryland*, 9 Suth. 279; *Chundee v. MacNaghten*, 28 Suth. 386.

(*w*) *Radhu Proshad v. Esuf*, 7 Cal. 414.

(*x*) *Bungsee v. Soodist*, 7 Cal. 739.

Hindu family the right of any member consisted simply in a general right to have the property fairly managed in such a manner as to enable himself and his family to be suitably maintained out of its proceeds. The duties which he was to perform, and the profits which he was to receive, would be regulated by the discretion of the head of the family. This is at present the case in a Malabar *tarwad* (y). Except so far as it is varied by special agreement or usage, the members of a family governed by Mitakshara law are still in much the same position (z). In Bengal, where the members hold rather as tenants in common than as joint tenants, a greater degree of independence is possessed by each (a). There, each member is entitled to a full and complete enjoyment of his undivided share, in any proper and reasonable manner which is not inconsistent with a similar enjoyment by the other members, and which does not infringe upon their right to an equal disposal and management of the property (b). But he cannot, without permission, do anything which alters the nature of the property ; as, for instance, build upon it. Where such an act is an injury to his coparceners the Court will, as a matter of discretion, though not as a matter of absolute right, direct the removal of the building (c). In exercising this discretion it is material to consider, whether the defendant is building on land in excess of that which would come to him on a partition, and

(y) *Kunigaratu v. Arrangaden*, 2 Mad. H. C. 12; *Subbu Hegadi v. Tongu*, 4 Mad. H. C. 196

(z) See per Lord Westbury, *Appovier v. Rama Subbaiyan*, 11 M. I. A. p. 89; S. C. 8 Suth. (P. O.) 1; *ante*, § 268.

(a) See per Phear, J., *Chuckun v. Poran*, 9 Suth. 483; *ante*, § 270.

(b) *Eshan Chunder v. Nund Coomar*, 8 Suth. 239; *Gopee Kishen v. Hemchunder*, 13 Suth. 322; *Nundun v. Lloyd*, 22 Suth. 74; *Stalkartt v. Gopal*, 12 B. L. R. 197; S. C. 20 Suth. 168; *Watson v. Ram Chand Dutt*, 17 J. A. 110. And he may lease out his share, *Kamdebul v. Mitterjeet*, 17 Suth. 420.

(c) *Jankee v. Bukhooree*, S. D. of 1856, 761; *Inderdeonarain v. Toolseena-rain*, S. D. of 1857, 765; *Guru Dass v. Bijaya*, 1 B. L. R. (A. C. J.) 108; S. C. *Sub nomine*, *Goroodoss v. Bejoy*, 10 Suth. 171; *Sheopersad v. Leela*, 19 B. L. R. 188; S. C. 20 Suth. 160; (see *Lala Bishwambhar v. Rajaram*, 3 B. L. R. Appx. 67; S. C. 16 Suth. 140 (note), where such a decree was refused, and *Nobin Chunder v. Mohesh Chunder*, 12 Suth. 69); *Holloway v. Mahomed*, 15 Suth. 140; S. C. 12 B. L. R. 191 (note) *Sub nomine*, *Holloway v. Sheik Wahed*; (see apparently *contra*, *Dwarkanath v. Gopeenath*, 16 Suth. 10; S. C. 12 B. L. R. 189 note). *Mehdee v. Anjud*, 6 N. W. P. 259; *Rajendro v. Shama Churn*, 5 Cal. 188.

whether on a partition the plaintiff could be adequately compensated (*d*). And the same rule has been applied where an entire change of crops has been introduced, where the produce would be valueless unless followed up by manufacture (*e*).

Coparcener may  
be tenant.

§ 276. There is nothing to prevent one co-sharer being the tenant of all the others, and paying rent to them as such. But the mere fact that one member of the family holds exclusive occupation of any part of the property, carries with it no undertaking to pay rent, in the absence of some agreement to that effect, either express or implied (*f*).

---

(*d*) *Paras Ram v. Sherjit*, 9 All. 661; *Shaik v. Dorup Singh*, 12 All. (F. B.) 436.

(*e*) *Crowdee v. Bhekdari*, 8 B. L. R. Appx. 45; S. C. 16 Suth. 41.

(*f*) *Alladinee v. Sreenath*, 20 Suth. 258; *Gobind Chunder v. Ram Coomar*, 24 Suth. 398.

## CHAPTER IX.

### DEBTS.

§ 277. I HAVE thought it well to treat the subject of Debts, as affecting property, before that of voluntary alienations, as it illustrates a principle which is constantly recurring in Hindu law, *viz.*, that moral obligations take precedence of legal rights; or, to put the same idea in different words, that legal rights are taken subject to the discharge of moral obligations.

The liability of one person to pay debts contracted by another arises from three completely different sources, which must be carefully distinguished. These are—*first*, the religious duty of discharging the debtor from the sin of his debts:—*secondly*, the moral duty of paying a debt contracted by one whose assets have passed into the possession of another:—*thirdly*, the legal duty of paying a debt contracted by one person as the agent, express or implied, of another. Cases may often occur in which more than one of these grounds of liability are found co-existing; but any one is sufficient.

Three sources of liability.

278. The first ground of liability only arises in the case of a debtor and his own sons and grandsons. In the view of Hindu lawyers, a debt is not merely an obligation but a sin, the consequences of which follow the debtor into the next world. Vrihaspati says, "He who having received a sum lent or the like, does not repay it to the owner, will be born hereafter in his creditor's house, a slave, a servant, a woman, or a quadruped" (a). And Narada says, "when a

Debts of father.



Liability of son  
independent of  
assets.

devotee, or a man who maintained a sacrificial fire, dies without having discharged his debt, the whole merit of his devotions, or of his perpetual fire, belongs to his creditors" (b). The duty of relieving the debtor from these evil consequences falls on his male descendants, to the second generation, and was originally quite independent of the receipts of assets. Narada says, "The grandsons shall pay the debt of their grandfather, which having been legitimately inherited by the sons has not been paid by them; the obligation ceases with the fourth descendant (c). Fathers desire offspring for their own sake, reflecting, 'this son will redeem me from every debt whatsoever due to superior and inferior beings.' Therefore a son begotten by him should relinquish his own property, and assiduously redeem his father from debt, lest he fall into a region of torment" (d). Vrihaspati states a further distinction as to the degrees of liability which attached to the descendants. "The father's debt must be first paid, and next a debt contracted by the man himself; but the debt of the paternal grandfather must even be paid before either of these. The sons must pay the debt of their father, when proved, as if it were their own, or with interest; the son's son must pay the debt of his grandfather, but without interest; and his son shall not be compelled to discharge it;" to which the gloss is added, "unless he be heir and have assets" (e). Finally Yajnavalkya adds an exception to these rules: that the son is not liable to pay if the father's estate is actually held by another; as, for instance, if he is from any cause incapacitated from succession (f).

Narada, iii. § 10. The text of Manu, xi. § 66, which Jagannatha cites (1 Dig. 267) as referring to a money debt, seems to refer to the three debts which are elsewhere spoken of, viz., reading the Vedas, begetting a son, and performing sacrifices. See Manu, vi. § 36, 37, ix. § 106; Vishnu, xv. § 45.

(c) This is counted inclusive of the debtor, 1 Dig. 302; Yajnavalkya, ii. § 90.

(d) Narada, iii. § 4—6. According to the Thesawaleme (i. § 7), sons were also bound to pay their father's debts, even without assets.

(e) 1 Dig. 263; Katyayana, 1 Dig. 301; V. May., v. 4, § 17.

(f) 1 Dig. 270; V. May., v. 4, § 16; Katyayana, 1 Dig. 273. It has been held that this principle of Hindu law does not apply to the Nambudri Brahmans of Malabar, who are governed by a combination of Hindu and Marumakkattayam law, *Nilakandan v. Madharan*, 10 Mad. 9. See as to their usages. *Vishnu v. Krishnan*, 7 Mad. 15; *Vasudevan v. Secretary of State*, 11 Mad. 157.

§ 279. The liability to pay the father's debt arises from the moral and religious obligation to rescue him from the penalties arising from the non-payment of his debts. And this obligation equally compels the son to carry out what the ancestor has promised for religious purposes (*g*). It follows, then, that when the debt creates no such moral obligation the son is not bound to repay it, even though he possess assets. This arises in two cases, 1st, when the debt is of an immoral character; 2nd, when it is of a ready-money character.

Obligation is religious.

"The sons are not compellable to pay sums due by their father for spirituous liquors, for losses at play, for promises made without any consideration, or under the influence of lust or of wrath; or sums for which he was a surety (except in the cases before mentioned), or a fine or a toll, or the balance of either," nor generally, "any debt for a cause repugnant to good morals" (*h*). Jagannatha denies that a son is not liable for the debts of his father as surety, and says with much reason, that if by a toll is meant one payable at a wharf or the like, that is a cause consistent with usage and good morals and it ought to be paid (*i*). Another meaning of the word "*Çulka*," translated toll, is a nuptial present, given as the price of a bride, and this has been determined not to be repayable by the son, apparently on

Cases in which it does not arise.

(*g*) Katyayana, 1 Dig. 299.

(*h*) Vrihaspati, Gautama, 1 Dig. 305; Vyasa, *ib.* 305; Yajnavalkya, *ib.* 311; Katyayana, *ib.* 300, 309; 2 W. MacN. 210. As to what are immoral debts, see *Budree Lall v. Kantee*, 23 Suth. 260; *Wajed Hossein v. Nankoo*, 25 Suth. 311; *Luchmi v. Asman*, 2 Cal. 213; S. C. 25 Suth. 421; *Sura; Bunsu Koer v. Sheo Proshad*, 6 I. A. 88; S. C. 5 Cal. 148; *Sitaram v. Zalim Singh*, 8 All. 231. A decree against a father for money which he had criminally misappropriated does not bind his son's estate as being a debt which they were bound to pay. *Mahabir Prasad v. Basdeo Singh*, 6 All. 234. The onus of proving that the debt was contracted for an immoral or illegal purpose lies upon those who allege it, and the onus is not discharged by showing that the father lived an extravagant or immoral life. *Bhaqbut Pershad v. Girja Koer*, 15 I. A. 99; S. C. 15 Cal. 717; *Chintamanrao v. Kashinath*, 14 Bom. 320.

(*i*) 1. Dig. 305, acc. Manu, viii § 159, 160. As regards suretyship, the son's liability has been expressly affirmed. *Moolchand v. Krishna*, Bellasis, 54. *Sitaramayya v. Venkatramanna*, 11 Mad 83. As regards fines, the reason is given "that a son is not liable for a penalty incurred by his father in expiation of an offence; for neither sins nor the expiation of them are hereditary." *Nhanee v. Hureeram*, 1 Bor. 90 [101] analogous to the principle of English Law that an action for a tort does not survive.

the ground that it constitutes the essence of one of the unlawful forms of marriage (*k*). Sir *Thomas Strange* takes the term in its natural signification, and explains the non-liability on the ground that such payments are of a ready-money character, for which no credit is, or at all events ought to be given (*l*).

Debt need not be beneficial.

Ancestral estate equally liable.

It also follows that the obligation of the son to pay the debt is not founded on any assumed benefit to himself, or to the estate, arising from the origin of the debt; still less is that obligation affected by the nature of the estate, which has descended to the son, as being ancestral, or self-acquired. "Unless the debt was of such a nature that it was not the duty of the son to pay it, the discharge of it, even though it affected ancestral estate, would still be an act of pious duty in the son. By the Hindu law, the freedom of the son from the obligation to discharge the father's debt has reference to the nature of the debt, and not to the nature of the estate, whether ancestral or acquired by the creator of the debt" (*m*).

Now limited to assets.

§ 280. The law as administered in our Courts, in all the provinces except Bombay, has for many years held that the heir is only liable to the extent of the assets he has inherited from the person whose debts he is called on to pay (*n*). But as soon as the property is inherited a liability *pro tanto* arises, and is not removed by the subsequent loss or destruction of the property, and still less, of course, by the fact that the heir has not chosen to possess himself of it, or has alienated it after the death (*o*). In Bombay, however,

(*k*) *Keshow Rao v. Naro*, 2 Bor. 194 [215].

(*l*) 1 Stra. H. L. 166.

(*m*) *Hunoomanpersaud v. Mt. Babooee*, 6 M. I. A. 421; S. C. 18 Suth. 81, (note); *Girdharee Lall v. Kantoo Lall*, 1 I. A. 321; S. C. 14 B. L. R. 187; S. C. 22 Suth. 56; *Suraj Bunsu Koer v. Sheo Proshad*, 6 I. A. 88; S. C. 5 Cal. 148; *Muttayan Chetty v. Sangili*, 9 I. A. 128; *Narayansami v. Samidas*, 6 Mad. 293; *Bhagbut Pershad v. Girja Koer*, 15 I. A. 99; S. C. 15 Cal. 717.

(*n*) *Rayappa v. Ali Sahib*, 2 Mad. H. C. 336; *Karuppan v. Veriyal*, 4 Mad. H. C. 1; *Aga Hajee v. Juggut*, Montr. 272; *Jamoonah v. Mudden*, ib. 227; *Dyamonee v. Brindabun*, S. D. of 1856, 97; *Kunhya v. Bukhtawar*, 1 N. W. P. (S. D.) 3; *Ponnappa v. Pappuvayyengar*, 4 Mad. pp. 9, 21, 45; S. C. 5 Ind. Jur. Supplement.

(*o*) *Kasi v. Buchireddi*, Mad. Dec. of 1860, 78; *Unnopooru v. Gunga*, 2 Suth. 296; *Keval Bhagvan v. Ganpati*, 8 Bom. 220; *Girdharlal v. Bai Shiv*, ibid. 309.

the stricter rule was applied, that a son was liable to pay his father's debts with interest, and a grandson those of his grandfather without interest, even though no assets had been inherited ; but the Courts held that the rights of the creditor could only be enforced against the property of the descendant, and not against his person (*p*). But in that presidency, also, the law has, by legislation, been brought into conformity with the more equitable rule observed elsewhere. (*q*).

§ 281. As regards the onus of proof that assets have come to the hands of the heir, it has been ruled by the Madras High Court, that the plaintiff must in the first instance give such evidence as would *primâ facie* afford reasonable grounds for an inference that assets had, or ought to have, come to the hands of the defendant. But when the plaintiff has laid this foundation for his case, it will then lie on the defendant to show that the amount of the assets is not sufficient to satisfy the plaintiff's claim, or that they were of such a nature that the plaintiff was not entitled to be satisfied out of them, (*r*) or that there never were any assets, or that they have been duly administered and disposed of in satisfaction of other claims. The mere fact of a certificate having been taken out was held not to be even *primâ facie* evidence of the possession of assets. But the Court refused to offer any opinion whether the same rule would apply since the Stamp Act, which made it necessary that the amount of assets to be administered under the certificate should be apparent from it (*s*). As to the doubt expressed by the High Court as to the effect of the stamp, it is probable that

Evidence of  
assets.

(*p*) *Pranvullubh v. Deocristin*, Bom. Sel. Rep. 4; *Hurbojee v. Hurgovind*, Bellasis, 76; *Narasimharav v. Antaji*, 2 Bom H. C. 64.

(*q*) Bombay Act VII of 1866 [Hindus liability for ancestor's debts]. *Sakharam v. Govind*, 10 Bom. H. C. 361; *Udaram v. Ranu*, 11 Bom. H. C. 76. In Bombay the Courts appear still to hold that the creditor is entitled to obtain a decree with costs against the son as legal representative of the father for the debts of the latter, though the decree cannot be enforced without proof of assets. *Lallu Bhagvan v. Tribhuvan Motiram*, 13 Bom. 653. It seems hard, however, that the son should be put to the cost of proving a merely worthless claim.

(*r*) *Krishnaya v. Chinnaya*, 7 Mad. 597.

(*s*) *Kottala v. Shangara*, 3 Mad. H. C. 161; *Joogul v. Kalee*, 25 Suth. 224.



they would have given the same decision had it been necessary to decide the point. The primary object of a certificate is to collect debts, and the stamp would be assessed on the value of these. But this would be no evidence that the assets had been realised.

Assets include  
the whole joint  
property.

§ 282. Another very important question which has lately been much discussed is this ; where property has descended from father to son, is the whole, or any lesser part, of such property to be treated as assets which are liable to be taken in payment of the father's debts ? In Bengal no such question could arise, as the rights of the son come into existence for the first time on the father's death. He takes the ancestor's property strictly as heir, and all that he so takes is necessarily assets of him from whom it descends (§ 235). But it is different in districts governed by the Mitakshara. There each son takes at his birth a co-ordinate interest with his father in all ancestral property held by the latter, and on the death of the father the son takes, not as his heir, but by survivorship, the father's interest simply lapsing, and so enlarging the shares of his descendants (§ 229, 246). It is evident then that three views might be taken of the son's liability. *First* ; that it only attached to the separate, or self-acquired, property of the father, which the son strictly took as his heir. *Secondly* ; that it attached to that share of the joint property which, according to the rulings in Madras and Bombay (§ 330—335), a father can dispose of in his lifetime. *Thirdly* ; that it applied to the whole property in the hands of the father as representing the Joint Family. After some conflict of decisions the last view has recently been decided to be the correct one, in a case where the property was of the ordinary partible character (*t*) ; and the same rule was applied by the Privy Council where the estate was an ancient impartible *polliem* of the nature of a Raj (*u*).

(*t*) *Ponnappa v. Pappuvayyengar*, 4 Mad. 1 ; S. C. 5 Ind. Jur. Supplement ; *Sheo Proshad v. Jung Bohadur*, 7 Cal. 389.

(*u*) *Muttayan Chetti v. Sangili*, 11 I. A. 128, reversing S. C. 8 Mad. 370 ; *Sivagiri v. Tiruvengada*, 7 Mad. 389.



§ 283. The liability of the son is stated by the old writers to arise not only after the actual death of the father, but after his civil death, as when he has become an anchoret, or when he has been twenty years abroad, in which case his death may be presumed, or when he is wholly immersed in vice, which is explained by Jagannatha as indicating a state of combined insolvency and insolence, in which the father being devoted to sensual gratifications, gives up all attempts to satisfy his creditors, and sets them at defiance (*v*). And so when the father is suffering from some incurable disease, or is mad, or is extremely aged (*w*). But I imagine that no suit could now be brought directly against sons, based solely on their liability to pay the debt of their father, until he was either actually or civilly dead, so that the estate had legally vested in the sons. In a Madras case where a son, living apart from his father, was sued for his father's debt during the life of the latter, the Pandits being questioned as to his liability replied, "The Hindu law-books, Vijnanes-vareyum, etc., do not declare that the debt contracted by a person shall be discharged by his wife and son, while the said person is alive, is residing in his own village, and is still capable of carrying on business" (*x*). And in a later case, where the plaintiff sought to recover from the wife and brothers of the obligor of a bond, not on the ground of any personal liability, but as the representatives of the obligor, who was supposed to be dead, the Court held that no suit could be maintained before the lapse of the time which raised the legal presumption of the death of the obligor, unless there was proof of special circumstances which warranted the inference of the death within a shorter period (*y*). In Bombay a son had taken a share of the ancestral property by partition with his father, and held it as separate property for twenty years. A suit was brought against the son

Liability arises  
after father's  
death.

(*v*) Vishnu, 1 Dig. 266; Yajnavalkya, *ib.* 268; 2 Stra. H. L. 277; 2 W. MacN. 282.

(*w*) Katyayana; Vrihaspati, 1 Dig. 277, 278.

(*x*) *Chennappah v. Chellamanah*, Mad. Dec. of 1851, p. 33.

(*y*) *Karuppan v. Veriyal*, 4 Mad. H. C. 1. Here, however, the supposed liability rested on possession of the estate.

during his father's life to compel him to pay a debt of his father out of his share. The Poona Shastri gave his opinion that the son was liable, on the ground that "the expression 'incurable disease' is to be understood as referring to disease either mental or bodily, and a father having the anxiety of his debts in his mind may be considered as suffering from mental disease, and therefore it is binding on his son to discharge them." On appeal the Shastri of the Sudr Adawlut stated in his futwah "that if a son has taken possession of his share of the ancestral property, and a release has been passed, and if his father be free from any incurable disease, the father's debt cannot be recovered from the share allotted to his son," also, "that during the father's lifetime, his son is not obliged to liquidate his father's debts." This futwah was accepted by the Sudr Adawlut, and a decision was passed exempting the property of the son from liability (z).

Son's liability  
not limited to  
father's interest  
in property.

§ 284. Where the son is sued after his father's death for the payment of his father's debts, it is, as already observed, utterly immaterial whether the debts had been contracted for the benefit of the family, or for the sole use of the father, provided, in the latter case, they were not of an immoral character (a). The Madras Court for some time struggled against the full application of this doctrine, on the ground that it would enable the father indirectly to make the family property liable to a greater extent than that to which he could have affected it by any direct act in his lifetime. Their views were, however, overruled by the Judicial Committee. The facts of the case were as follows: the holder of an impartible estate in Madras contracted certain debts for necessary purposes previous to the birth of his son. Subsequently he contracted other debts which were found by both Courts to be neither necessary nor

(z) *Amrut v. Trimbuck*, Bom. Sel. Rep. 218. See *Ponnappa v. Pappuvayangar*, 4 Mad. pp. 13, 18, 26; *Gurusami v. Chinna Mannar*, 5 Mad. 87, p. 46. W. & B. 643.

(a) *Ante*, § 279; *Udaram v. Ranu*, 11 Bom. H. C. 76, 88; *Goburdhon v. Singessur*, 7 Cal. 52.

beneficial to the family. For these he was sued in 1867, and to satisfy the decree he entered into an arrangement for payments by instalments, hypothecating part of his Zemindary as security for the debt. Upon default of payment this portion of the Zemindary was attached during his life. Upon his death the Court released the attachment. The creditor then sued the son and successor of his original debtor for the double purpose of restoring the attachment, and of making the entire property liable for payment of his debt. The High Court held that the estate was liable for so much of the debt as was contracted for necessary purposes, but refused to make it liable to any extent for the remainder of the debt contracted subsequent to the birth of the son, and not for the benefit of the family. On appeal the Privy Council refused to restore the attachment upon the portion of the estate which was specifically pledged, but held that the whole estate was liable in the hands of the heir for all the debts, which though neither necessary nor beneficial to him were free from any taint of immorality (b).

§ 285. The principle of these decisions has recently received a considerable extension by its application by the Privy Council to cases where the father has mortgaged or sold the family property to liquidate his private debts, or where it has been sold in execution of decrees against him for such debts. Where such transactions affect a larger share of the property than his own interest in it, the result evidently is that the sons are compelled indirectly to discharge during the father's life an obligation which in strictness only attaches upon them at his death. The body of law deducible from the rulings of the Judicial Committee seems to rest upon a series of exceptions to a

Father may alienate family property to satisfy his own debts.

---

(b) *Muttayan Chetti v. Sangili*, 3 Mad. 370; S. C. on appeal, 9 I. A. 128, following *Girdharee Lall v. Kantoo Lall*, 1 I. A. 321; S. C. 14 B. L. R. 187; S. C. 22 Suth. 56; *Suraj Bunsu Koer v. Sheo Proshad*, 6 I. A. 88; S. C. 5 Cal. 148; and affirming *Ponnappa v. Pappuvayyanganar*, 4 Mad. 1. Where the father's property has fallen to the son by survivorship, the liability of the latter must be enforced by fresh suit, and not by execution of the decree against the father, unless it had been enforced by attachment during his life, in which case it becomes a charge upon the estate. *Venkatarama v. Senthivelu*, 13 Mad. 265.

general rule. The general rule is that no member of an undivided family can by any process appropriate to his own benefit a larger portion of the family property than the share he would obtain on partition. The exception is, that where the father has incurred a debt which would bind his son, the creditor can obtain satisfaction of the debt, either by conveyance from the father, or by a decree of Court, to the extent of even the whole family property. And this is subject to a further exception, that a creditor who wishes to enforce his claim against the interests of the sons, must show that he intended to do so by his proceedings in execution, or that he believed he was doing so by the form of the conveyance which he received. The first branch of these special rules was decided by the Privy Council under the following circumstances. Certain property descended from Kunhya Lall to his two sons, Bhikaree and Bhujrung. The former of the two had a son, Kantoo. The family was governed by Mithila law, and therefore, the property being ancestral, Kantoo acquired an interest in it by his birth. Subsequently to his birth Bhikaree executed a bond, upon which judgment was obtained, and his share of the property was attached. To pay off this judgment a portion of the property was sold by both brothers. It does not appear that Bhikaree's bond was in any respect for the benefit of the family, or that the sale of the property was for the family benefit, except in so far as it went to satisfy the decree, and except as to a small portion which was applied in payment of Government revenue. Kantoo Lall sued to set aside the sale, as not having been made for his benefit or with his consent. A similar suit was brought by Mahabeer, the son of Bhujrung. The High Court dismissed Mahabeer's suit, on the ground that he was not born at the time the deed of sale was executed, but awarded to Kantoo Lall one-half of his father's share. The Privy Council reversed this decree. They remarked in their judgment, "It is said that they (Bhikaree and Bhujrung) could not sell the property, because before the deed of sale was executed, Kantoo Lall was born, and by reason of his birth, under the

*Girdharee Lall  
v. Kantoo Lall.*



Mithila law, he had acquired an interest in that property. Now it is important to consider what was the interest which Kantoo Lall acquired. Did he gain such an interest in this property as prevented it from being liable to pay a debt which his father had contracted? If his father had died, and had left him as his heir, and the property had come into his hands, could he have said that because this was ancestral property which descended to his father from his grandfather, it was not liable at all to pay his father's debts?" They then quoted the passage above referred to (6 M. I. A. 421, § 279) and proceeded, "that is an authority to show that ancestral property which descended to a father under the Mitakshara law is not exempted from liability to pay his debts because a son is born to him. It would be a pious duty on the part of the son to pay his father's debts, and it being the pious duty to pay his father's debts, the ancestral property, in which the son, as the son of his father, acquires an interest by birth, is liable to the father's debts. The rule is, as stated by Lord Justice *Knight Bruce*, "the freedom of the son from the obligation to discharge the father's debt has respect to the nature of the debt, and not to the nature of the estate, whether ancestral or acquired by the creator of the debt." It is necessary, therefore, to see what was the nature of the debt for the payment of which it was necessary to raise money by the sale of the property in question. If the debt of the father had been contracted for an immoral purpose, the son might not have been under any pious obligation to pay it; and he might possibly object to those estates which had come to the father as ancestral property being made liable to the debt. That was not the case here. It was not shown that the bond upon which the decree was obtained was given for an immoral purpose: it was a bond given apparently for an advance of money, upon which an action was brought. The bond had been substantiated in a Court of Justice; there was nothing to show that it was given for an immoral purpose; and the holder recovered a decree upon it. There is no suggestion either that the bond, or the decree, was



obtained *benamee* for the benefit of the father, or merely for the purpose of enabling the father to sell the family property, and raise money for his own purpose. On the contrary, it was proved that the purchase-money for the estate was paid into the bankers of the father, and credit was given to them with the bankers for the amount, and that the money was applied partly to pay off the decree, partly to pay off a balance which was due from the father to the bankers, and partly to pay Government revenue; and then there was some small portion of which the application was not accounted for. But it is not because a small portion is unaccounted for that the son has a right to turn out the *bonâ fide* purchaser who gave value for the estate, and to recover possession of it with mesne profits. Even if there was no necessity to raise the whole purchase-money, the sale would not be wholly void" (c).

Bengal rulings  
in regard to mi-  
nors and adults.

§ 286. This decision has been followed in numerous cases from all the Presidencies, where sales or mortgages by a father for the purpose of satisfying antecedent debts of his own, which were neither immoral on the one hand, nor beneficial to the family on the other, have been held to bind the sons' and grandsons' share in the property as well as the father's share (d). The Bengal Court, however, takes a distinction which seems to be peculiar to itself. They hold that such a transaction is valid against the other members of the family as being "an alienation for the performance of indispensable duties within the meaning of para. 29, Chap. I, § 1 of the Mitakshara." But they also hold that even such an alienation, though it binds minors, cannot

(c) *Girdharee Lall v. Kantoo Lall*, 1 I. A. 321, 330; S. C. 14 B. L. R. 187; S. C. 22 Suth. 56; *Suraj Bansi Koer v. Sheo Proshad*, 6 I. A. 88; S. C. 5 Cal. 148. See these cases discussed. W. & B. 646.

(d) *Muddun Gopal v. Mt. Gowrunbutty*, 15 B. L. R. 264; S. C. 23 Suth. 365; *Adurmoni v. Chowdhry*, 3 Cal. 1; *Ponnappa v. Pappurayyungar*, 4 Mad. 1; *Gangulu v. Ancha*, 4 Mad. 73; *Narayana v. Narso*, 1 Bom. 262; *per curiam*, *Lakshman v. Satyabhamabai*, 2 Bom. 498; *Kastur v. Appa*, 5 Bom. 622; *Darsu v. Bikarmajit*, 3 All. 125; *Sadashiv Dinkar v. Dinkar Narayan*, 6 Bom. 520; *Ramphul Singh v. Deg Narain*, 8 Cal. 517; S. C. 10 C. L. R. 489; *Velliyammal v. Katha Chetty*, 5 Mad. 61; *Fakirchand v. Motichand*, 7 Bom. 438; *Trimbak Balkrishna v. Narayan Damodar*, 8 Bom. 481; *Ponnappa v. Pappurayyungar*, 9 Mad. 343; *Koer Hasmal v. Sunder Das*, 11 Cal. 896.

bind adults without their consent express or implied. Consequently, that a sale or mortgage by a father to satisfy his antecedent debt cannot *per se* bind his adult sons, though it would bind any who were minors at the time (e). Practically, however, the Court seems to get rid of its own distinction by holding that even in such a case, "the property would be bound; not indeed by virtue of the mortgage but by virtue of the father's debt antecedent to the suit being enforceable against the joint ancestral estate and therefore against the mortgaged property as part of it. Strictly speaking, perhaps, the suit should be in the form of a suit upon the mortgage as against the father, and upon the debt as an antecedent debt as against the interests of the sons in the joint ancestral estate. But this would be merely matter of form (f)." Similarly, though the Bengal Court holds that the rule laid down by *Girdharee Lall v. Kantoo Lall* only applies where the sale or mortgage was made in consideration of a debt antecedent to the transaction purporting to deal with the property (g), they practically arrive at the same result in cases where there has been no antecedent debt, by holding that the money, which is the consideration for the sale or mortgage, constitutes a debt to the purchaser or mortgagee, which, in a suit properly framed against the son, might be enforced by a decree directing the debt to be raised out of the whole ancestral estate, including the mortgaged property, and this whether the son was a minor or an adult at the time of the transaction (h).

§ 287. Where a father has sold or mortgaged the family property for an antecedent debt, not of an immoral or illegal character, it seems now quite settled that a sale

Sales in execution of decrees enforcing a mortgage.

(e) *Upooroop v. Lalla Bandhjee*, 6 Cal. 749, 753; see *Muthoora v. Bootun*, 13 Suth. 30; contra, *Phulchand v. Mansingh*, 4 All. 309.

(f) *Laljee v. Fakeer*, 6 Cal. 135, 138. See *Baso Kooer v. Hurry Dass*, 9 Cal. 495.

(g) *Supra* (note f) 6 Cal. 138; *Hanuman Kamat v. Dowlut Munder*, 10 Cal. 528; *Lal Singh v. Deo Narain*, 8 All. 279; *Arunachela v. Munisawmy*, 7 Mad. 39.

(h) *Luchman v. Giridhur*, 5 Cal. 855, (F. B.); *Gunga Prosad v. Ajudhia*, 8 Cal. 131; Contra, *Jamna v. Nain Sukh*, 9 All. 493.

under a decree against him enforcing such a transaction will bind his sons, even though they have not been made parties to the suit (i). The reason for this appears to be that the right of the purchaser or mortgagee was complete by means of the transfer made to him by the father, and did not require the decree to give it validity against his sons. The only effect of the decree is to give the stamp of genuineness to the demand, and to direct the mode in which the transaction is to be carried out. Where the Court enforces a mortgage by directing a sale of "the right title and interest" of the mortgagor, these words may "include the entire interest which he had authority to mortgage at the time he executed the deed of mortgage, as distinguished from the share of the judgment debtor which was available to creditors generally at the date of the attachment" (k). Hence where the decree would deprive the sons of any right which they would possess, not inconsistent with the validity of the mortgage, as for instance the right to redeem, the Madras High Court holds that this right is not taken away from them by a decree to which they are not a party (l). The High Court of Bombay had occasion to consider the same question in a case where there had been a partition between father and sons after the mortgage and before suit. They refrained from deciding the general question as to the effect of such a decree against the father alone in binding the sons. They considered it quite clear that after the partition the father could not be treated as representing the interests of his sons in the suit, and that, therefore, their right to redeem was unaffected by the decree (m).

---

(i) *Suraj Bansi Koer v. Sheo Pershad Singh*, 6 I. A. 88; S. C. 5 Cal. 148; *Ponnappa v. Pappuvayyanganar*, 4 Mad. 1; 9 Mad. 343; *Srinavasa v. Yelaya*, 5 Mad. 251; *Ramphul Singh v. Deg. Narain*, 8 Cal. 517; *Krishnamma v. Perumal*, 8 Mad. 388; *Sadashiv Dinkar v. Dinkar Narayan*, 6 Bom. 520; *Hurdey Narain v. Rooder Perkash*, 11 I. A. 26, 28; S. C. 10 Cal. 626; *Basamal v. Maharaj Singh*, 8 All. 205; *Sundraraja v. Jagannada*, 4 Mad. 111. The decisions of the Privy Council in *Simbhu Nath v. Golab Singh*, and *Pettachi Chetty v. Sivagiri Zemin-dar*, 14 I. A. 77, 84, rested on grounds which are stated, *post*, § 294, 295.

(k) *Per curiam*, 5 Bom. p. 486, 4 Mad. p. 65, 17 I. A. p. 16.

(l) *Ponnappa v. Pappuvayyanganar*, 4 Mad. 1, 69. The High Court of Bengal appears to have taken the same view in *Ramphul Singh v. Deg Narain*, 8 Cal. p. 525.

(m) *Trimbak Balkrishna v. Narayan Damodar*, 8 Bom. 481.

§ 288. After much conflict of decision in the Indian Courts, arising from a misunderstanding of certain cases which will be referred to hereafter, it is now settled that the sons may be bound by proper proceedings taken by the creditor against the father to enforce a mere money debt due by him, although the sons are not made parties to the suit. The leading case upon this point is that of *Muddun Thakoor v. Kantoo Lall* (n). The facts of that case were as follows. Kunhya Lall died in 1843 leaving two sons Bhikaree and Bujrung. Kantoo Lall, the son of Bhikaree, was born in 1844. In 1855 Bhikaree and Bujrung borrowed Rs. 3,540 from Mt. Asmutanissa and others, and executed a bond for the amount, in which they hypothecated certain specified Mousahs of the joint family property. In 1857 the bondholders obtained a decree against Bhikaree and Bujrung in these terms: "Plaintiffs sue defendants for the recovery of Rs. 3,540 under a bond duly registered, and Rs. 1,189 interest thereon from date of bond to date of suit at one per cent. aggregating Rs. 4,729." An acknowledgment by defendants was recited, and it was "ORDERED that this suit be decreed to plaintiffs according to acknowledgment filed by defendants. The plaintiffs do recover from defendants the money claimed with costs and interests from the date of suit to that of realisation." It is evident that though the plaintiffs might have sued to enforce the hypothecation as such, they chose to treat the bond as a mere money claim, upon which they sought a simple decree for money. Kantoo Lall who was then of full age was not made a party to the suit, nor was Mahabeer, an infant son of Bujrung, who was born after 1856. In 1859 the right, title and interest of the judgment debtors in certain specified properties was sold in execution of the decree, and was purchased by a benamidar for Muddun Thakoor. Judging from the names of the properties it would appear, that although most of those which were hypothecated in

*Muddun Thakoor v. Kantoo Lall.*

(n) 1 I. A. 321, 333; S. C. 14 B. L. R. 187; S. C. 23 Suth. 56. The facts of the case are not set out in the report, but are fully stated by the Chief Justice of Madras (9 Mad. 347) from a personal examination of the original record.



1855 were sold under the execution, yet some which were hypothecated were not sold, and some which were sold had not been hypothecated. The whole execution appears to have proceeded upon the footing of an ordinary money decree, and not of a mortgage. Kantoo Lall sued Muddun Thakoor to recover the whole property, a relief to which he would have been entitled if his share had been improperly sold (§ 340). The High Court of Bengal awarded him the share to which he would have been entitled on partition. This decree was reversed by the Judicial Committee. The judgment followed that in Girdhar Lall's case (§ 285) of which it formed part. It rested on the principle laid down in that case that, "It would be a pious duty on the part of the son to pay his father's debts and it being the pious duty of the son to pay his father's debts, the ancestral property, in which the son, as the son of his father, acquires an interest by birth, is liable to the father's debts." It applied that principle to the particular case by saying. "It has already been shown that if the decree was a proper one, the interest of the sons as well as the interest of the fathers in the property, although it was ancestral, were liable for the payment of the father's debts." Their Lordships were of opinion that in favour of the auction purchaser the propriety of the sale must be assumed. It has been suggested (o) that the decree in Muddun Thakoor's case was given on the footing of a mortgage, or at all events that the Privy Council acted on that view. I think it is quite clear that such a supposition would have been a mistake, and that there is no reason to suppose that their Lordships were under any misapprehension.

Affirmed by  
Privy Council.

§ 289. This case again has been approved and followed to its full extent by the Judicial Committee in more recent cases. In the case of *Suraj Bunsî v. Sheo Pershad*, their Lordships quote *Muddun Thakoor's* case with approval, and cite it as establishing "that where joint ancestral property

---

(o) By Kernan, Offg. C. J., 9 Mad. 196.



has passed out of a joint family, either under a conveyance executed by a father, in consideration of an antecedent debt, or in order to raise money to pay off an antecedent debt, or under a sale in execution of a decree for the father's debt, his sons, by reason of their duty to pay their father's debts, cannot recover that property unless they show that the debts were contracted for immoral purposes, and that the purchasers had notice they were so contracted" (p).

§ 290. These rules are subject, as already stated (§ 285) to a further exception, of which the first branch is that the creditor, who wishes to enforce his claim against the interests of the sons, must show that he intended to do so by his proceedings in execution. The leading case upon this point is that of *Deendyal v. Jugdeep Narain* (q). There *Toofani Singh*, the father of the respondent, being indebted to the appellant to the amount of Rs. 5,000, executed to him a Bengali mortgage bond for securing the repayment of that sum with interest. The appellant afterwards put that bond in suit, and obtained a decree against *Toofani Singh* for Rs. 6,328. The decree was an ordinary decree for money, and no proceedings were taken to enforce it against the property specially hypothecated. So far the case seems identical with that of *Muddun Thakoor*. Six years after decree, the appellant caused "the rights and proprietary and Mokurruri title and share of *Toofani* the judgment debtor," in the joint family property to be sold for the amount then alleged to be due, and bought it himself and got into possession of the whole. The son then sued to recover the whole property, on the ground that being under Mitakshara law the joint property of his father and himself, it could not be sold for his father's debts, which were incurred without any

(p) 6 I. A. 88, p. 106; S. C. 5 Cal. 148, p. 171; followed *Bhaqbut Pershad v. Girja Koer*, 15 I. A. 99; S. C. 15 Cal. 717; *Meenakshi Naidoo v. Immudikanaka*, 16 I. A. 1; S. C. 12 Mad. 142.

(q) 4 I. A. 247; S. C. 3 Cal. 198. Some of the facts of this case are more fully set out by Mr. Justice Mitter in 8 Cal. p. 903 than they are in the Privy Council report. See also *Jugdeep v. Deendyal*, 12 B. L. R. 100, the case •appealed from.

necessity. An issue was recorded as to whether Toofani Singh borrowed from the defendant under a legal necessity or not. No special issue was recorded as to whether the debt was of an immoral character, though evidence to that effect was given as bearing on the question of necessity. The Original Court appears to have considered that it could not go behind the order of sale, and that as that purported only to deal with the interests of Toofani Singh, the son was entitled to possession of the other moiety. The Zillah Judge dismissed the suit, being of opinion that a legal necessity was made out, that therefore the debt was binding on the son, and his share as well as the father's was liable for the debt. This finding of fact was binding on the High Court on special appeal. It held, however, upon the construction of the sale proceedings that the purchaser could get nothing more than what was put up to sale, *viz.*, the rights and share of Toofani Singh. They further were of opinion that such an interest was not saleable under Mitakshara law (§ 329) and therefore decreed for the plaintiff. This was treated by the Judicial Committee as "the first and principal question," and after an elaborate examination of the authorities they decided that the father's interest could be sold, so as to enable the purchaser at the execution sale to compel such a partition as the debtor might have compelled, if no sale had taken place. In dealing with the conclusive finding of the Zillah Judge that the debt was contracted under a legal necessity, the Judicial Committee say :—" This issue, however, seems to their Lordships to be immaterial to the present suit, because whatever may have been the nature of the debt, the appellant cannot be taken to have acquired by the execution sale more than the right, title and interest of the judgment debtor. If he had sought to go further, and to enforce the debt against the whole property, and the co-sharers therein who were not parties to the bond, he ought to have framed his suit accordingly, and have made those co-sharers parties to it. By the proceedings which he took he could not get more than what was seized and sold in execution, *viz.*, the right, title and

interest of the father. If any authority be required for this proposition, it is sufficient to refer to the cases of *Nugender Chunder Ghose v. Srimutty Kaminee Dossee*, and *Baijun Doobey v. Brij Bhookun Lall* (r).” The result was that the son was held entitled to recover the whole property, subject to a declaration that the purchaser had acquired the share of *Toofani Singh*, and was entitled to have that share ascertained by partition (s).

§ 291. This case was followed in the Privy Council by that of *Hurdey Narain v. Rooder Perkash* (t). The facts there were exactly the same as in *Deendyal's* case; viz., a decree for a money debt against the father followed by execution against “whatever rights and interests the said judgment debtor had” in the property sold. Here the Judicial Committee, agreeing with the High Court, held on the authority of *Deendyal v. Jugdeep Narain* that the interest purchased by the creditor was only “the right which the father, the debtor, would have to a partition, and what would come to him upon the partition.” The cases of *Girdharee Lall v. Kantoo Lall*, and of *Suraj Bunsu v. Sheo Pershad* were cited in argument, but not in the judgment. No doubt it was in reference to them that their Lordships said, “the decree was the ordinary one for the payment of the money, and this case is distinguishable from the cases where the father, being a member of a joint family governed by the Mitakshara law, had mortgaged the family property to secure a debt, and the decree had been obtained upon the mortgage, and for a realisation of the debt by means of the sale of the mortgaged property.” No such distinction existed as to the case of *Muddun Thakoor v. Kantoo Lall*, which does not seem to have been referred to.

*Hurdey Narain  
v. Rooder Per-  
kash.*

§ 292. These cases were for some time taken by the Courts in India as, to a certain extent, over-ruling *Muddun* Explanation of these cases.

(r) 11 M. I. A. 241; 2 I. A. 275.

(s) As to this last point, see also *Hurdey Narain v. Rooder Perkash*, 11 I. A. 26; S. C. 10 Cal. 626; *Maruti Narayan v. Lilachand*, 6 Bom. 584.

(t) 11 I. A. 26; S. C. 10 Cal. 626.

*Thakoor's* case, and as laying down the general principle, that where a decree has been obtained against a father on a mere money debt it could not be executed so as to bind the rights of the sons, unless they were parties to the decree. It is abundantly clear, however, that the Judicial Committee did not intend to over-rule that decision. It was never referred to from beginning to end of *Deendyal's* decision. It never seems to have occurred to any one that it had any bearing upon the decision. Both the original Court and the High Court had accepted as an undisputed fact that the judgment creditor chose, for reasons of his own, to sell only the right, title and interest of the father, (u). The Privy Council adopted this finding and acted upon it. Between the hearing of *Deendyal's* case and that of *Hurdey Narain* the decision in *Suraj Bunsî v. Sheo Prasad* (§ 289) had been given, in which the rulings in *Muddun Thakoor's* case had been fully adopted. Yet in *Hurdey Narain's* case neither *Muddun Thakoor* nor *Suraj Bunsî* were noticed in the judgment as being at all in point. In a much later case, in which the Privy Council over-ruled a decision of the Madras High Court founded on this mistake, they say, "The High Court seems to have acted on the rule of law so laid down as a rigid rule of law apparently applicable to this particular case. But the distinction is obvious. In *Hurdey Narain's* case, all the documents shew that the Court intended to sell, and that it did sell nothing but the father's share—the share and interest that he would take on partition, and nothing beyond it—and this tribunal in that case puts it entirely upon the ground that every thing showed that the thing sold was "whatever rights and interests the said judgment debtor had in the premises and nothing else" (v). Accordingly in the case in which those observations were made, and also in a previous one (w), the Privy Council affirmed sales under a money decree against

(u) See 12 B. L. R., pp. 101, 103.

(v) *Minakshi Naidu v. Immudi Kanaka*, 16 I. A. 1, p. 5; S. C. 12 Mad. 142, p. 147.

(w) *Bhagbut Pershad v. Girja Koer*, 15 I. A. 99; S. C. 15 Cal. 717.

the father to which the sons were no parties, being of opinion that the creditor and the Court both intended to put up for sale the entirety of the family property (x).

§ 293. A further branch of the same exception (§ 285) in that the purchaser of family property for the debt of the father, whether he takes by a conveyance direct from the father, or by a sale at Court auction, must be intended to take, and must believe that he is taking the entire estate, and not merely the father's interest in it. This was laid down in several cases before the Privy Council, the first of which was that of *Nanomi Babuasin v. Modun Mohun* (y). There a father with minor sons was manager of an ancestral estate. In an ejectment suit against the father the plaintiff obtained a decree for mesne profits. The High Court stated the execution proceedings which ensued as follows. "In the petition for execution an inventory of the judgment debtor's property was given, which described it as 'The share of 8 annas 11 gundahs out of the entire 16 annas, right and interest of the judgment debtor in Mouzah Rampore,' and prayed that this might be attached and sold. The proceeding confirming the sale, and the certificate of sale are to the same effect, viz., describing the property as 8 annas 11 gundahs share, and stating it to be the right and interest of the judgment debtor in the whole estate. This language might be regarded as specifically stating the object of the sale, viz., an 8 annas 11 gundahs share, and the statement as to its being the right and interest of the creditor as mere description. Section 249 of the Civil Procedure Code, however, provides that the proclamation of sale shall declare that the sale extends only to the right, title, and interest of the judgment debtor in the property specified, and it may be contended that, read in the light

*Nanomi Babuasin v. Modun Mohun.*

(x) In considering this question it is not sufficient to examine the decree without also considering the proceedings in execution. *Kagal Ganpaya v. Manjappa*, 12 Bom. 691.

(y) 18 I. A. 1; S. C. 18 Cal. 21; followed, *Dawlat Ram v. Mehr Chand*, 4 I. A. 187; S. C. 15 Cal. 70; *Mahabir Pershad v. Moheswar Nath*, 17 I. A. 1; S. C. 17 Cal. 584.



of this section this was the proper meaning of the petition and certificate. This is the view taken by the original Court.” The High Court then proceeded to state that in its opinion the intention of all parties was to bring the whole property to sale, and in this view the Privy Council agreed. They said, (z) “It appears to their Lordships that sufficient care has not always been taken to distinguish between the question, how far the entirety of the estate is liable to answer the father’s debt, and the question how far the sons can be precluded by proceedings taken by or against the father alone from disputing that liability. Destructive as it may be of the principle of independent coparcenary rights in the sons, the decisions have for some time established the principle, that the sons cannot set up their rights against their father’s alienation for an antecedent debt, or against his creditors remedies for their debts, if not tainted with immorality. On this important question of the liability of the joint estate their Lordships think that there is now no conflict of authority. The circumstances of the present case do not call for any enquiry as to the exact extent to which sons are precluded by a decree against their father from calling into question the validity of the sale, on the ground that the debt which formed the foundation of it was incurred for immoral purposes, or was merely illusory and fictitious. Their Lordships do not think that the authority of *Deendyal’s* case bound the Court to hold that nothing but Girdhari’s (the father’s) coparcenary interest passed by the sale. If his debt was of a nature to support a sale of the entirety, he might legally have sold it without suit, or the creditor might legally procure a sale of it by suit. All the sons can claim is, that not being parties to the sale or execution proceedings, they ought not to be barred from trying the fact or the nature of the debt in a suit of their own. Assuming they have such a right, it will avail them nothing unless they can prove that the debt was not such as to justify the sale. If the expressions by which the estate is conveyed

---

(z) 13 I. A. p. 17 ; 18 Cal. 85.

to the purchaser are susceptible of application either to the entirety, or to the father's coparcenary interest alone, (and in *Deendyal's* case there certainly was an ambiguity of that kind) the absence of the sons from the proceedings may be one material consideration. But if the fact be that the purchaser has bargained and paid for the entirety, he may clearly defend his title to it upon any ground which would have justified a sale if the sons had been brought in to oppose the execution proceedings." The Committee then pronounced its opinion that the debt for which the property had been sold was a joint family debt, adding, "If it is a joint family debt, a sale to answer it effected either by Girdhari himself, or in a suit against him cannot be successfully impeached." Finally they agreed with the Courts below "that the execution and sale proceedings was such that the purchaser must have thought that he was buying the entirety. It is equally clear that all parties thought the same. The purchaser therefore has succeeded in showing that he bought the entirety of the estate which could lawfully be sold to him, and the suit fails upon its merits." (a).

§ 294. Two later decisions of the Judicial Committee are in accordance with the view of the law stated in the last case. In one (b) Luchmun who had four sons was sued for a money debt by one Bhichook. The suit was terminated by a decree for a specified sum, to secure which the debtor mortgaged "his right and interest in Mouzah Kindwar." The sons assented to this arrangement. Upon default execution was taken out upon the decree; and the property was sold to Bhichook, who received a certificate stating that "whatever right, title, and interest the said judgment debtor had in the said property, being extinguished from the date of the sale, is transferred to Bhichook." The purchaser got into possession of the entire family property in

*Simbhu Nath*  
*v. Golab Singh.*

(a) See the construction put upon this case by the Madras High Court in *Narasanna v. Gurappa*, 9 Mad. 424.

(b) *Simbhu Nath v. Golab Singh*, 14 I. A. 77, 14 Cal., 572; *Sakharam Shet v. Sitaram Shet*, 11 Bom. 42.

the Mouzah. The sons sued to recover their shares. The Subordinate Judge held, upon the authority of *Upooroop Tewary v. Lalla Bandajee*, (c) that the mortgage by Luchmun with his sons' assent bound the whole family property. This decision was reversed by the High Court, and their reversal was affirmed by the Judicial Committee in the following judgment.

"Their Lordships cannot agree with the Subordinate Judge. Whatever part any of the sons may have taken in negotiating between Luchmun and Bhichook, there is no evidence whatever of their proposing to mortgage their own interests. The sons may have assented to what was done, but the question is, what was done? That must be answered by the documents.

"Moreover if Bhichook relied on assent by the sons he should have taken care to make them parties to the execution proceedings. In *Deendyal's* case, where the expressions used by the mortgagor were much more favourable to the conveyance of the entirety than they are here, the creditor's omission of the sons from the proceedings was made a material circumstance against him. And in *Nanomi Babuasin's* case, where the decision was in favour of the purchaser, the same circumstance was recognized as being material when the expressions by which the estate is conveyed to the purchaser are susceptible of application either to the entirety or to the father's coparcenary interest alone.

"In the case of *Upooroop Tewary*, Mr. Justice Mitter thought that the words "my proprietary share" in a Mouzah were calculated to describe the entirety of the family property in dispute; and he distinguished them from the expression "right, title, and interest." In *Hurdey Narain's* case, 11 Ind. App., 26, there was no conveyance, but a sale on a money decree. The only description was "whatever

“rights and interests the said judgment debtor had in the “property,” these were purchased by Hurdey Narain. The High Court held that nothing passed beyond the debtor’s interest which gave him a right to partition, and which perhaps may for brevity be called his personal interest, and this Committee affirmed the decision. Each case must depend on its own circumstances. It appears to their Lordships that in all the cases, at least the recent cases, the inquiry has been what the parties contracted about if there was a conveyance, or what the purchaser had reason to think he was buying if there was no conveyance, but only a sale in execution of a money decree.

“Their Lordships are sorry that they cannot follow the learned Judges of the High Court into their examination of the vernacular petition. But they find quite enough ground in the decree to express a clear agreement with them. They conceive that when a man conveys his right and interest and nothing more, he does not *primâ facie* intend to convey away also rights and interests presently vested in others, even though the law may give him the power to do so. Nor do they think that a purchaser who is bargaining for the entire family estate would be satisfied with a document purporting to convey only the right and interest of the father. It is true that the language of the certificate is influenced by that of the Procedure Code. But it is the instrument which confers title on the purchaser. Its language, like that of the certificate in *Hurdey Narain’s* case, is calculated to express only the personal interest of Luchmun. It exactly accords with the expressions used in the decree of August 1869, founded on Luchmun’s own vernacular expressions, which the High Court construe as pointing to his personal interest alone. The other circumstances of the case aid the *primâ facie* conclusion instead of counteracting it. For the creditor took no steps to bind the other members of the family, and the Rs. 625 which he got for his purchase appears to be nearer the value of one-sixth than of the entirety.”

*Pettachi Chetty  
v. Sivagiri Ze-  
mindar.*

§ 295. In a later case (*d*), from Madras the Sivagiri Zemindar had contracted numerous debts to different creditors, in respect of the majority of which he had consented to decrees by which specific portions of his impartible Zemindary were hypothecated as security for payment. The debts in question were neither illegal nor immoral, but were not shown to be necessary or beneficial to the family. He had one son who was born before these decrees commenced. During the life of the judgment debtor his whole Zemindary was attached and ordered to be sold at the demand of 13 creditors, of whom all but two held specific mortgages on the Zemindary. The sale did not take place till after his death. There can be little doubt that, if proper steps had been taken, it would have been possible to sell the Zemindary in such a manner as absolutely to bind the son's interest. But during the whole course of the execution proceeding the Civil Judge, acting upon the view of the law which was taken by the High Court previous to the decision in *Muttayen Chetty v. Sangili* (*e*), announced his opinion that the sale could only bind the father's life-interest, and that it would only pass to the purchaser the rents in arrear at his death. The son was made a party to the suit after his father's death as his legal representative. Upon these facts both the Indian Courts were of opinion that nothing was intended to pass, and therefore that nothing did pass, to the auction purchaser except the father's life-interest, and this opinion was affirmed on appeal by the Privy Council.

Execution pro-  
ceedings liberal-  
ly construed.

§ 296. Lastly, there is a class of cases which has an indirect, though important, bearing upon the present question, in which the Privy Council has laid down the rule "that in execution proceedings the Court will look at the substance of the transaction, and will not be disposed to set aside an execution upon mere technical grounds, when

---

(*d*) *Pettachi Chetty v. Sangili Vira*, 14 I. A. 84, 10 Mad. 241, 9 I. A. 128; S. C. 6 Mad. 1.



they find that it is substantially right.” Where therefore a defendant possesses both an individual and a representative character, and where he has been sued for a debt which would bind the whole family which he represents, and where execution is taken out against him under the decree, the Court is at liberty to look at the judgment to see what was intended to be sold under his right, title, and interest, and may treat the decree as binding the whole family which is represented by the defendant, and as properly executed against the joint family property (*f*).

§ 296A. It appears to me that the above decisions lay down the following rules :

Suggested summary of decisions.

I. That in cases governed by Mitakshara law a father may sell or mortgage not only his own share, but his sons' shares in family property, in order to satisfy an antecedent debt of his own, not being of an illegal or immoral character, and that such transaction may be enforced against his sons by a suit and by proceedings in execution to which they are no parties (*g*).

II. That the mere fact that the father might have transferred his sons' interest, affords no presumption that he has done so, and that those who assert that he has done so must make out, not only that the words in the conveyance are capable of passing the larger interest, but that they are such words as a purchaser, who intended to bargain for such a larger interest, might be reasonably expected to require (*h*).

III. That a creditor may enforce payment of the personal debt of a father, not being illegal or immoral, by seizure

---

(*f*) *Bissessur Lall v. Luchmessur Singh*, 6 I. A. 233 ; S. C. 5 C. L. R. 477 ; *Darbhunga v. Coomar*, 14 M. I. A. 605 ; *Jugol Kishore v. Jotindra Mohun*, 11 I. A. 66 ; S. C. 10 Cal. 985 ; *Jairan Babaja Shet v. Joma Kondia*, 11 Bom. 361 ; *Lala Parbhu Lal v. Mylne*, 14 Cal. 401 ; *Hari Saran Moitra v. Bhubaneswari*, 15 I. A. 195 ; S. C. 16 Cal. 40.

(*g*) *Girdhari Lall v. Kantoo Lall*, ante, § 285.

(*h*) *Simbhu Nath v. Golab Singh*, ante, § 294.

and sale of the entire interest of father and sons in the family property, and that it is not absolutely necessary that the sons should be a party either to the suit itself or to the proceedings in execution (*i*).

IV. That it will not be assumed that a creditor intends to exact payment for a personal debt of the father by execution against the interest of the sons, unless such intention appears from the form of the suit, or of the execution proceedings, or from the description of the property put up for sale ; and the fact that the sons have not been made parties to the proceedings in execution is a material element in considering whether the creditor aimed at the larger, or was willing to limit himself to the minor remedy (*k*).

V. That the words "right, title, and interest of the judgment debtor" are ambiguous words, which may either mean the share which he would have obtained on a partition, or the amount which he might have sold to satisfy his debt (*l*).

VI. That it is in each case a mixed question of law and fact to determine what the Court intended to sell at public auction, and what the purchasers expected to buy. That the Court cannot sell more than the law allows. If it appears as a fact that the Court intended to sell less than it might have sold, or even less than it ought to have sold, and that this was known to the purchasers, no more will pass than what was in fact offered for sale (*m*).

Can sons set up immorality of debt against purchaser under decree ?

§ 297. Another very important point which does not appear to be quite settled is this. Assuming that a decree against a father alone for a debt not immoral or illegal can be enforced against the whole family property, is it open

(*i*) *Muddun Thakoor v. Kantoo Lall*, ante, § 289 ; *Nanomi Babuasin v. Modun Mohun*, ante, § 293.

(*k*) *Deendyal v. Jugdeep Narain*, ante, § 290 ; *Hurdey Narain v. Rooder Perkash*, ante, § 292 ; *Nanomi Babuasin v. Modun Mohun*, ante, § 293.

(*l*) Same cases *et per curiam*, 17 I. A. p. 16 ; S. C. 17 Cal. p. 589 ; 8 Bom. p. 486 ; 4 Mad. p. 65.

(*m*) *Nanomi Babuasin v. Modun Mohun*, ante, § 293 ; *Simbhu Nath v. Golab Singh*, ante, § 294 ; *Pettachi Chetty v. Sangili Vira*, ante, § 295 ; *Muhammad Abdul v. Kutul Husain*, 9 All. 185.

to the sons to set up such immorality or illegality against the auction purchaser? Upon this point there have been three very important decisions of the Privy Council.

In the first case a son sought to set aside a sale made under a decree of Court against his father, the debt not being for the family benefit on one hand, nor immoral on the other. The Judicial Committee held that he had no such right. They said, "It appears that *Muddun Mohun Thakoor* purchased at a sale under an execution of a decree against the two fathers. He found that a suit had been brought against two fathers; that a Court of Justice had given a decree against them in favour of a creditor; that the Court had given an order for this particular property to be put up for sale under the execution; and therefore it appears to their Lordships that he was perfectly justified, within the principle of the case which has already been referred to in 6th Moore's Indian appeal cases, p. 423 (n), in purchasing the property, and paying the purchase money *bonâ fide* for the purchase of the estate. The same rule has been applied in the case of a purchaser of joint ancestral property. A purchaser under an execution is surely not bound to go back beyond the decree to ascertain whether the Court was right in giving the decree, or, having given it, in putting up the property for sale under an execution upon it. It has already been shewn that if the decree was a proper one, the interest of the sons, as well as the interest of the fathers, in the property, although it was ancestral, were liable for the payment of the father's debts. The purchaser under that execution, it appears to their Lordships, was not bound to go further back than to see that there was a decree against those two gentlemen; that the property was property liable to satisfy the decree, if the decree had been properly given against them; and, having inquired into that, and having *bonâ fide* purchased the estate under the execution, and *bonâ fide* paid a valuable

*Muddun  
kour v. Kantoo*

Purchaser need  
not enquire be-  
yond decree.

(n) *Hunoomanpersaud v. Mt. Babooce*; S. C. 18 Suth. 81 (note).

consideration for the property, the plaintiffs are not entitled to come in, and to set aside all that has been done under the decree and execution, and recover back the estate from the defendant." (o)

§ 298. It is evident that the general principle laid down in this judgment went very much beyond the necessities of the case. Even if the son had been allowed to rip up the decree, it appears that the evidence showed the debt to have been one which he was liable to pay, at all events after his father's death, and therefore the sale to satisfy it came within the ruling in *Girdharee Lall v. Kantoo Lall*. But it might happen that the debt was contracted for purposes which would prevent its binding the son. These circumstances might fail to afford any defence to an action against the father, or they might not be set up by the father. In either case the decree would have been a proper one as against the father, and properly enforced against his interest in the property. But when the creditor tried to enforce it against the son's interest also, would the son be allowed to show that although the decree was properly given against the debtor, the property, that is the son's interest in it, was not property liable to satisfy the decree? In other words, can he show that the facts do not exist which would entitle the creditor to seize the property of B in execution of a personal decree against A? A later decision of the Judicial Committee seems to show that he cannot do even this as against a *bonâ fide* purchaser at the execution sale, who has no notice of the original taint affecting the debt. In that case the sons sued to set aside a sale of joint property made to the defendant in execution of decree against the father. The lower Courts found that the debt was not for the benefit of the family, and that the money borrowed was spent by the father for immoral purposes. The High Court upon these findings held that although the original creditor could not have enforced his claim against the sons, the pur-

Effect of notice  
that debt was  
immoral.

*Suraj Bansi  
Koer v. Sheo  
Proshad.*

(o) *Muddun Thakoor v. Kantoo Lall*, 1 I. A. 321, 333; S. C. 14 B. L. R. 187; S. C. 22 Suth. 56.

chaser at the sale, having purchased *bonâ fide* for value without notice, was entitled to hold the property free of all claims by the sons. For this view they relied upon the decision last cited. The Judicial Committee quoted the passage already set out, remarking that they desired to say nothing which could be taken to affect the authority of *Muddun Thakoor's* case, or of the cases which might have since been decided in India in conformity with it. They summarised the judgments in that case and in the kindred case of *Girdharee Lall v. Kantoo Lall* as being "undoubtedly an authority for these propositions; 1st, that where joint ancestral property has passed out of a Joint family, either under a conveyance executed by a father in consideration of an antecedent debt, or in order to raise money to pay off an antecedent debt, or under a sale in execution of a decree for the father's debt, his sons, by reason of their duty to pay their father's debts, cannot recover that property, unless they show that the debts were contracted for immoral purposes, and that the purchasers had notice that they were so contracted; and 2ndly, that the purchasers at an execution sale, being strangers to the suit, if they have not notice that the debts were so contracted, are not bound to make inquiry beyond what appears on the face of the proceedings." Their Lordships, however, proceeded to distinguish the case before them from that of *Muddun Thakoor*, on the ground of notice, actual or constructive, of the plaintiff's objections before the sale, by virtue of which the respondents must be held to have purchased with knowledge of the plaintiff's claim, and subject to the result of the suit to which the plaintiffs had been referred. It followed, therefore, that as against them, as well as against the original creditor, the plaintiffs had established that by reason of the nature of the debt neither they nor their interests in the joint ancestral estate were liable to satisfy their father's debt (p).

---

(p) *Suraj Bunsî Koer v. Sheo Proshad*, 6 I. A. 88, 106, 108; S. C. 5 Cal. 148; *Krishnaji Lakshman v. Vithal Ravji*, 12 Bom. 625.



*Nanomi Babuasin v. Modun Mohun.*

§ 299. It certainly does appear singular that a purchaser under a decree should be entitled, as against third parties, to assume the existence of a state of facts which was not, and perhaps could not have been, adjudicated upon in the suit which led to the decree. The primary effect of a personal decree against a father is to bind his interest alone. It might be imagined that a purchaser under such a decree, who claimed to extend its operation to the interests of others, would have to make out such facts as would warrant its extension. Even if it were held that he started with a presumption in his favour, it might have been thought that the presumption would have been rebuttable. In the case before the Privy Council, which has already been cited at length (§ 293), their Lordships treated this point as still open to argument. They said "all the sons can claim is, that not being parties to the sale or execution proceedings, they ought not to be barred from trying the fact or the nature of the debt in a suit of their own" (q). This of course is all they could desire. In some later cases the Judicial Committee appears to have laid down in general terms, and without any reference to the necessity of notice, that sons could successfully impeach a sale merely by proof of the immorality of the debt (r). But in all these cases, as in that of *Nanomi Babuasin*, the fact of immorality had been disproved, so that the question of notice could not have arisen. Where the execution creditor is himself the purchaser at the auction, he cannot protect himself under the plea of being a purchaser without notice, if there is any flaw in the nature of the debt (s). Where the purchaser was the son of the execution creditor, it was considered to be a question of fact, whether he was such a stranger to the suit as to be entitled to rely upon the decree without further enquiry (t).

(q) 13 I. A., p. 18; *Jagabhai v. Vijbhokundas*, 11 Bom. 37.

(r) *Bhagbut Pershad v. Girja Koer*, 15 I. A. 99; S. C. 15 Cal. 717; *Minakshi Naidu v. Immudi Kanaka*, 16 I. A. 1; S. C. 12 Mad. 142; *Mahabir Pershad v. Moheswar Nath*, 17 I. A. 11; S. C. 17 Cal. 584.

(s) *Luchmun Dass v. Giridhur Chowdhry*, 5 Cal. 855; *Ramphul Singh v. Deg Narain*, 8 Cal. 517, p. 522.

(t) *Trimbak Balkrishna v. Narayan Domodar*, 8 Bom. 481.

§ 300. Even if the strictest view should ultimately be taken of the rights of the purchaser under an execution, it must be remembered that under the Civil Procedure Code the sons have ample opportunity of protecting themselves. When property is about to be sold for a money decree it is always attached before sale. The proper course is for the sons to come in under § 278, and object to the sale of their interests on the ground that the debt was immoral or illegal. The party against whom the order is made will then, under § 283, be entitled to bring a suit in which the whole question can be determined (*u*). Where the property is put up for sale under a decree enforcing a mortgage no attachment need take place (*v*), but the sale is always notified beforehand by proclamation. By giving public notice at the time of sale to all intending purchasers, the sons will obtain the benefit of the ruling in their favour in Suraj Bunsî's case, as stated above (§ 298). It has been held by the Allahabad High Court that the decree must be read with the plaint, and that where the latter contains express statements showing that the debt is one which could not bind the sons,—in the particular instance, a claim for the refund of money criminally misappropriated by the father,—this is in itself a constructive notice to the purchaser, which brings his case within that of Suraj Bunsî (*w*).

Remedies under  
Civil Procedure  
Code.

§ 301. A father's debts are a first charge upon the inheritance, and must be paid in full before there can be any surplus for division (*x*). As between the parceners themselves, the burthen of the debts is to be shared in the same proportion as the benefit of the inheritance. But, except by special arrangement with the creditors, the whole property, and all the heirs are liable jointly and severally (*y*). Where, how-

Mode of adjust-  
ment.

(*u*) *Umamaheswara v. Singaperumal*, 8 Mad. 376.

(*v*) *Krishnamma v. Perumal*, 8 Mad. 388.

(*w*) *Mahabir Prasad v. Basdeo Singh*, 6 All. 234.

(*x*) Narada, xiii. § 32; Daya Bhaga, i. § 47, 48; V. May., iv. § 6; Tarachand v. Reeb Ram, 3 Mad. H. C. 177, 181.

(*y*) Katyayana, 1 Dig. 291; Narada, iii. § 2; Vishnu, 1 Dig. 288; D. K. S.

ever, a father has separated from his sons, the whole of his property will descend at his death to an after-born son. Therefore all debts contracted by him subsequent to the partition will, in the first instance, be payable by that son. But Jagannatha is of opinion that even in such a case, if the after-born son has not property sufficient to pay the debts, they should be discharged by the separated sons (2). This would certainly have been the case under the old law, when the possession of assets was not necessary in order to render the sons liable. But it is probable that a different view would be taken now, when the creditor must show that the son's estate has been enlarged by the death, to the full extent of the liability attempted to be imposed.

Obligation  
arising from  
possession of

§ 302. *Secondly*, the obligation to pay the debts of the person whose estate a man has taken is declared with equal positiveness. It does not rest, as in the case of sons, upon any duty to relieve the deceased at any cost, but upon the broad equity that he who takes the benefit should take the burthen also (a). And it is evident that this obligation attached whether the property devolved upon an heir by operation of law, or whether it was taken by him voluntarily, as an executor *de son tort* as an English lawyer would say; for the liability is said to arise equally whether a man takes possession of the estate of another or only of his wife. As Narada says, "He who takes the wife of a poor and sonless dead man becomes liable for his debts, for the wife is con-

---

vii. § 26—28; 2 Stra H. L. 283. The case of *Doorga Pershad v. Kesho Pershad*, 9 I. A. 27; S. C. B Cal. 656, which seems to contradict the proposition in the text must, I think, depend on the special circumstances of the case. Certain minors had been decreed to pay money in a suit in which they were not really represented. The High Court, however, apparently to prevent a fresh suit, held them liable for so much of the decree as represented their father's debt. That debt originally due by himself and other members of the joint family to a stranger, had been apportioned at a partition. As between the father and his sons the sum so allotted to him was the only debt they could be equitably bound to pay.

(2) Vrihaspati, 1 Dig. 279; D. K. S. v. § 16—18.

(a) "He who has received the estate of a proprietor leaving no son, must pay the debts of the estate, or, on failure of him, the person who takes the wife of the deceased." Yajnavalkya, 1 Dig. 270; Katyayana, ib. 273, 330; Vrihaspati, ib. 274. "Of the successor to the estate, the guardian of the widow, or the son, he who takes the estate becomes liable for the debts." Narada, iii. 8 18, 25; Gautama, cited 2 W. MacN. 284; 1 Dig. 314.

sidered as the dead man's property" (b). Even the widow is not bound to pay her husband's debts, unless she is his heir, or has promised to pay them, or has been a joint contractor with him (c).

§ 303. "Assets are to be pursued into whatever hands. See Narada, cited by Jagannatha, 1 Dig. 272. And innumerable other authorities may be cited were it requisite in so plain a case." This is the remark of Mr. Colebrooke, approving of a Madras pandit's *futwah*, that where uncle and nephew were undivided members, and the nephew borrowed money and died, leaving his property in the hands of the uncle's widow, she might be sued for the debt (d). So in Bombay, a suit was maintained on an account current with a deceased debtor against his widow and three other persons, strangers by family, on the ground that they had taken possession of his property, but they were held only liable to the extent to which they became possessed of the property (e). Similarly in Madras, where a suit was brought against the representatives of two deceased co-debtors to recover a debt incurred for family purposes, it was decided that the son-in-law of one of the deceased co-debtors and his brothers were properly joined as defendants, on the ground that they in collusion with the widow of the deceased, had, as volunteers, intermeddled with, and substantially possessed themselves of, the whole property of the family of the deceased co-debtor (f). In each of these cases the person in possession of the property held it without any title or consideration, like an executor *de son tort* in England. On the other hand, in a Madras case, where the plaintiff sued on a bond by the first defendant's husband, and joined the second defendant, his son-in-law, as being in possession

(b) Narada, iii. § 21—26; *ante*, § 71.

(c) Narada, iii. § 17; Yajnavalkya, Vishnu, 1 Dig. 313; Katyayana, 1 Dig. 315; 2 W. M. & N. 283, 286.

(d) 2 Stra. H. L. 282

(e) *Kupurchund v. Dadabhoy*, Morris, Pt. II. 126.

(f) *Magaluri v. Narayana*, 3 Mad. 359; *Kanakamma v. Venkataratnam*, 7 Mad. 596.

in *Jamiyatram v. Parbhudas* (p), says that Mr. Colebrooke laid the proposition down too broadly that the assets of the debtor may be pursued into whatsoever hands they may come, and they rather indicate an opinion that this rule only applies to those who take the inheritance as heirs. The case before them, however, was one of a purchaser for value. There is nothing to show that they would have exonerated a person who took the estate after the death by his own voluntary act, and without a title derived either from the deceased, or from the representatives of the deceased.

Liability of coparcener taking by survivorship.

§ 305. Another question arises, how far the liability to pay debts out of assets prevails against the right of survivorship, in cases where the debtor does not stand in the relation of paternal ancestor to the heir. In this case the moral and religious obligation has vanished, and it is a mere conflict of two legal rights. It will be seen hereafter (§ 331) that in cases under the Mitakshara law there is a strong body of authority in favour of the view, that an undivided coparcener cannot dispose of his share of the joint property, unless in a case of necessity, without the consent of his coparceners. But it may now be taken as settled by the Privy Council, that even if this be so, still a creditor who has obtained a judgment against him for his separate debt may enforce it during his life by seizure and sale of his undivided interest in the joint property (q). But that decision left open the further question, whether the creditor loses his rights against the undivided share of the debtor, if the latter dies before judgment against him, and seizure in satisfaction of it? In other words, do those who take by survivorship take subject to the equities existing between their deceased co-sharer and his creditors? I say *equities*, because it is quite clear that a debt is not a lien, but only a cause of action which may be enforced by way of execution.

This question after being decided against the creditor by

(p) 9 Bom H. C. 116.

(q) *Deendyal v. Jugdeep*, 4 I. A. 247; S. C. 8 Cal. 198. As to the mode of enforcing such a decree, see *post*, 329.



the High Courts of Bombay, Madras, and the North-West Provinces, has now been definitely settled in the same way by the Privy Council.

§ 306. The first case in which the point arose directly for decision was in the North-West Provinces (r). There the share of Mahadev in a house, which was undivided family property, was attached in his lifetime, under a decree obtained against him for his separate bond. He died before any sale under the attachment. The High Court affirmed the ruling of the Courts below, which discharged the attachment on the ground that Mahadev at his death "left no right at all in the house, and that there was nothing, therefore, in connection with it which was liable to be sold" for the purpose of satisfying the plaintiff's claim. The principle of this decision was followed in Bombay in the case of *Udaram v. Ranu* (s). There a father and son were in possession of a shop which was ancestral property. The son contracted a separate debt and died, and the creditor obtained a decree against the father and widow for payment of the debt "out of the property and effects" of the deceased son, and then sued the father for a declaration that the son's share of the shop was liable in the father's hands for the son's debt. The High Court held that no such declaration could be made. After reviewing and approving of the cases which decided that an undivided Hindu might sell his share, and that it might be seized in execution during his lifetime, and admitting that the divided or separate estate of a Hindu would be liable to be sold after his death in execution of a decree against his heir, they noticed the doctrine that, except in certain special cases, the whole of the undivided family estate would be, when in the hands of the sons or grandsons, liable to the debts of the father or

---

(r) *Goor Pershad v. Sheodeen*, 4 N.-W. P. 137.  
 (s) 11 Bom. H. O. 76 followed in *Narsimbhat v. Chenappa*, 2 Bom. 479; *Balbhadar v. Bisheshar*, 8 All. 495; *Jaganath Prasad v. Sitaram*, 11 All. 302. See also per Peacock, C. J., in *Sadabart Prasad v. Foolbakh Koer*, 8 B. L. R. (F. B.) 84-87; S. C. 11 Suth. (F. B.) 1; and per Mitter, J., *Goburdhon v. Singessur*, 7 Cal. 52, 54.

grandfather. They then pointed out that "there is not any authority for the converse of that proposition, viz., that the father or grandfather is responsible for the debts of the son or grandson independently of the receipt of assets." Finally, they held that the son's interest in the shop could not be held to be assets in the hands of the father, since "the right of the son to share in it, as being ancestral property, had come into existence at his birth and it died with him." The Madras case was intermediate between the above two. There a decree had been obtained against a member of a Joint Family for his separate debt. He died before execution, and a suit was then brought by the decree-holder, against his undivided cousin, to enforce the decree against the share of the property to which the deceased had been entitled. The decisions in the North-West Provinces and Bombay were cited, and the plaintiff's suit dismissed. The Chief Justice said, "I am not aware that it can be contended that the undivided interest of a coparcener, which passes by survivorship to the other coparceners by his death, can be proceeded against in execution. A distinction must be made between a specific charge on the land, and a general decree which is merely personal. Every debt which a man incurs is not necessarily a charge upon the estate, and there is no reason for saying that a man who has obtained judgment against an undivided member of a Joint Family, has established a charge upon the property" (t). The result is that if the deceased debtor is an ordinary coparcener, who has left neither separate nor self-acquired property, the creditor who has not attached his share before his death, is absolutely without a remedy. If he stood in the relation of father to the survivors, his liability can only be enforced by a separate suit against the sons (u). If, however, the estate of a coparcener has vested in the Official Assignee under an insolvency, that estate would continue after his death, and would not be defeated by survivorship (v).

---

(t) *Keopookoonan v. Chinnayan*, 1 Mad. Law Reporter, 63.

(u) *Sivagiri v. Alwar Ayyangar*, 3 Mad. 42; *Karnataka Hanumantha v. Hanumayya*, 5 Mad. 282.

(v) *Fakirchand v. Motichand*, 7 Bom. 438.

§ 307. Most of the above cases were reviewed, and, except Privy Council  
decision. as to one point, affirmed by the Privy Council in the case of *Suraj Bunsî Koer v. Sheo Proshad* (w), already referred to. There the Court held that the father's debt as being of an immoral character, was not binding upon the sons and that the purchaser under the decree was affected with notice of the fact, so that he could claim no protection under the decree. The result was that the special liability of the sons for their father's debt was swept away, and depended solely upon their possession of assets. On the other hand, the case agreed with that in the North-West Provinces, and differed from those in Madras and Bombay in this respect, that the sale after the father's death had taken place in pursuance of an attachment and order for sale during his life. Upon this state of facts their Lordships said, "The question remains, whether they (the purchasers) are entitled to any and what relief as regards the father's share in this suit? It seems to be clear upon the authorities, that if the debt had been a mere bond debt, not binding on the sons by virtue of their liability to pay their father's debts, and no sufficient proceedings had been taken to enforce it in the father's lifetime, his interest in the property would have survived on his death to his sons, so that it could not afterwards be reached by the creditor in their hands. On the other hand, if the law of the Presidency of Fort William were identical with that of Madras, the mortgage executed by *Adit Sahai* (the father) in his lifetime, as a security for the debt, might operate after his death as a valid charge upon *Mouzah Bissumbharpore* to the extent of his own then share. The difficulty is that, so far as the decisions have yet gone, the law, as understood in Bengal, does not recognise the validity of such an alienation. Their Lordships are of opinion that it is not necessary in this case to determine that vexed question, which their former decisions have hitherto left open. They think that, at the time of *Adit* Attachment  
binds estate.

(w) 6 L. A. 88, 108; S. C. 5 Cal. 148; ante, § 279,

*Sahai's* death, the execution proceedings under which the Mouzah had been attached and ordered to be sold had gone so far as to constitute, in favour of the judgment creditor, a valid charge upon the land, to the extent of *Adit Sahai's* undivided share and interest therein, which could not be defeated by his death before the actual sale. They are aware that this opinion is opposed to that of the High Court of the North-West Provinces (x), already referred to. But it is to be observed that the Court by which that decision was passed does not seem to have recognised the seizable character of an undivided share in joint property, which has since been established by the before mentioned decision of this tribunal in the case of *Deendyal* (y). If this be so, the effect of the execution sale was to transfer to the respondents the undivided share in the Mouzah, which had formerly belonged to *Adit Sahai* in his lifetime; and their Lordships are of opinion that, notwithstanding his death, the respondents are entitled to work out the rights which they have thus acquired by means of a partition.” (z)

**Cases of agency.**

§ 308. The *third*, and only remaining, ground of liability is that of agency, express or implied. Mere relationship, however close, creates no obligation. Parents are not bound to pay the debts of their son, nor a son the debt of his mother. A husband is not bound to pay the debts of his wife, nor the wife the debts of her husband (a). Still less, of course, can any member of a family be bound to pay the debts of a divided member, contracted after partition, for such a state of things wholly negatives the idea of agency (b). It would be different if he had become the heir of the debtor, or taken possession of his assets. On

---

(x) *Goor Pershad v. Sheodeen*, 4 N.-W. P. 137.

(y) 4 I. A. 247; S. C. 3 Cal. 198.

(z) See this decision followed in the converse case, where the property of the son after attachment had vested in the father. *Rai Balkishen v. Sitaram*, 7 All. 781; *Bailur Krishna v. Lakshmana*, 4 Mad. 802.

(a) *Narada*, iii. § 11, 17, 19; *Yajnavalkya*, *Vishnu*, 1 Dig. 313; *Vrihaspati* 1 Dig. 316; *Katyayana*, 1 Dig. 317; *Mootoocoomarappa v. Hinnoo*, Mad. Dec. of 1855, 183.

(b) *Narayana v. Rayappa*, Mad. Dec. of 1860, 51.



the other hand, all the members of the family, and therefore all their property, divided or undivided, will be liable for debts which have been contracted on behalf of the family by one who was authorised to contract them (c). The most common case is that of debts created by the manager of the family. He is, *ex-officio*, the accredited agent of the family, and authorised to bind them for all proper and necessary purposes, within the scope of his agency (d). But the liability of the family is not limited to contracts made, or debts incurred by him. "The householder is liable for whatever has been spent for the benefit of the family by the pupil, apprentice, slave, wife, agent, or commissioned servant" (e). Of course, this implies that the persons referred to have acted either with an express authority, or under circumstances of such pressing necessity that an authority may be implied. Narada says, "Debts contracted by the wife never fall upon the husband, unless they were contracted for necessities at a time of distress, for the household expenses have to be defrayed by the man" (f). *A fortiori* the husband is liable for any debts contracted by a wife in a business which he has assigned to her to manage (g). And on the same principle it has been stated "that persons carrying on a family business, in the profits of which all the members of the family would participate, must have authority to pledge the Joint Family property and credit for the ordinary purposes of the business. And, therefore, that debts honestly incurred in carrying on such business must over-ride the rights of all members of the Joint Family in property acquired with funds derived from the joint business" (h).

(c) Manu, viii. § 166; Raghunandana, v. 33—36. I presume that as in the case of partnership debts, the joint property would be primarily liable, and the separate property only in case it proved insufficient.

(d) What are such necessary purposes will be examined fully in the next chapter, § 320

(e) Narada, iii. § 12, 13; Vishnu, 1 Dig. 295; Manu, viii. § 167; Yajnavalkya, 1 Dig. 313; Katyayana, 1 Dig. 296, 319; 1 W. MacN. 286. See as to the liability of the heir for debts *bona fide* incurred by executors acting under a will which was afterwards set aside, or by an adopted son whose adoption was afterwards held invalid. *Fanindro Deb v. Jugudishwari*, 14 Cal. 316.

(f) Narada, iii. § 19.

(g) Yajnavalkya, Vrihaspati, 1 Dig. 317, 318; 2 W. MacN. 278, 281.

(h) *Per Pontifex, J., Johurra Bibee v. Strigopal*, 1 Cal. 475.



Similarly a mortgage of family property by the managers of a family trade partnership for the purposes of the partnership binds all the other members of the family, and if the property is sold under a decree obtained against the mortgagors alone, the sale cannot be set aside by the other members merely on the ground that they were not parties to the suit (*i*). In Bombay, however, it is held that a decree against the managers of a Joint Family for a mere money debt only binds their share of the family property, although they were sued as managers and the debt was incurred for family purposes (*k*). Debts contracted or conveyances executed by any individual member of a Joint Family, for his own personal benefit, will not bind the interests of the other members (*l*). It is said, however, that a subsequent promise by one member of a family to pay the individual debt of another member, previously contracted, would bind him (*m*). But such a promise would now be held invalid for want of consideration (*n*).

(*i*) *Daulat Ram v. Mehr Chand*, 14 I. A. 187 ; S. C. 15 Cal. 70.

(*k*) *Maruti Narayan v. Lilachand*, 6 Bom. 564 ; *Lakshman Venkatesh v. Kashinath*, 11 Bom. 700.

(*l*) *Venkatasami v. Kupparayan*, 1 Mad. 354 ; *Gururappa v. Thimma*, 10 Mad. 316.

(*m*) *Narada*, iii. § 17 ; *Vrihaspati*, *Katyayana*, 1 Dig. 316, 317.

(*n*) *Indian Contract Act* (IX of 1872), § 25.

## CHAPTER X.

### ALIENATIONS.

§ 309. THE law of alienation falls naturally into two branches, according as the property in question is joint or several. Further distinctions arise under each head with respect to the nature of the property, as being movable or immovable. Again; under the first branch, the person who makes the alienation may do so, in his capacity of father of the family, or manager of the corporation, or merely as a private member of the corporation. Again; the act in dispute may purport to dispose of more than the alienor's share in the entire property, or of a portion equal to, or less than, his share. Finally; in each particular instance the validity of the transaction will vary, according as it is decided by the law of the Mitakshara or of the Daya Bhaga. I shall first examine the position of the father of the family under Mitakshara law.

Division of subject.

§ 310. I have already explained the process by which the father descended from being the head of the Patriarchal Family to be the manager of a Joint Family, in which the sons acquired by birth rights almost equal to his own (a). But in respect of movables he was still asserted by Vijnanesvara to possess a larger power of disposition, even though they were ancestral. The texts upon which he founds this opinion may either be a survival from the period when the father actually possessed a higher power than belongs to him at present, or, more probably, merely indicate the authority which the manager of a family would necessarily

Power of father over movables.

(a) See *ante*, § 207, 229.

Power over  
ancestral  
movables.

possess over the class of articles which would come under the head of movables in early times (b). In fact Vijnanesvara himself does not claim for the father an absolute power of disposing of movables at his own pleasure, but only an "independent power in the disposal of them for indispensable acts of duty, and for purposes prescribed by texts of law, as gifts through affection, support of the family, relief from distress and so forth," and this is the view taken by Sir *Thomas Strange* and Dr. Mayr (c). Mr. Colebrooke and Mr. MacNaghten, however, appear to lay it down, that in regard to ancestral movables the power of the father is only limited by his own discretion, and by a sense of spiritual responsibility (d). The point has arisen incidentally in several cases, but until recently has never received a full discussion. In a case in the High Court of Bengal, it was said, "By the Mitakshara law the son has a vested right of inheritance in the ancestral immovable property; on the other hand, the father has it in his power to dispose as he likes of all acquired and all personal property" (e). This latter remark, however, was merely *obiter dictum*. In Madras a son sued his father for a partition of property, partly house property and partly jewels. As regards the latter, *Bittleston, J.*, quoted the texts of the Mitakshara (I. i. § 21, 24) as showing that "it does not follow that the plaintiff has any right to complain of his father having made an unjust and partial distribution of them" (f). What the father was said by the plaintiff himself to have done was, that he gave the bulk of the jewels to the daughters of the family, only giving one to the wife of his son. Possibly

---

(b) See *ante*, § 231, 232.

(c) Mitakshara, i. 1, § 27; Viramit., p. 16, § 30; 1 Stra. H. L. 20, 261; Mayr, p. 40. In the Punjab a father is said to be at liberty to make gifts of ancestral movable property without the consent of his male heirs, but not of immovable property, whether ancestral or self-acquired. Punjab Customary Law, ii. 102, 163, 178.

(d) 2 Stra. H. L. 9, 436, 441; 1 W. MacN. 3. The latter passage was cited with approval by the P. C., in *Gopeekrist v. Gungapersaud*, 6 M. I. A. 77, but this point was not then before them. M. Gibelin states the law with the same generality. 1 Gib. 126; 2 Gib. 14; and Dr. Wilson, Works, v. 69.

(e) *Sudanund v. Bonomallee*, Marsh. 320; S. C. 2 Hay, 205.

(f) *Nallatambi v. Mukunda*, 3 Mad. H. C. 455. See too *per Turner, C. J.*, *Ponnappa v. Pappuvayyengar*, 4 Mad. 47.

this was only the sort of family arrangement which the Mayukha intimates as being within the powers of the head of the family (g). In any case the remark was extra-judicial, as the learned Judge went on to decide that none of the property sued for was ancestral. In a later Madras case, a son had sued for a declaration of his right to succeed to the whole of the ancestral property, movable and immovable, in his father's possession, and for an injunction against waste. The original and appellate Courts decreed in his favour as regards the immovable, but not as regards the movable, property, "on the ground that the defendant had the absolute right to dispose of such portion." The High Court dismissed the suit, considering that the plaintiff was claiming a right to the whole property, which he did not possess. They did not notice the distinction taken below between movables and immovables, simply observing, "As only son he has a present proprietary interest in one undivided moiety of the property, and nothing more. Consequently, the suit for the establishment of an existing reversionary right in him as heir to the whole property on the death of the defendant, and the decrees declaring such rights, are groundless" (h). In the North-West Provinces the point has been spoken of as being "the subject of much discussion." The question then before the Court was whether ancestral movables were chargeable with maintenance. This it was held that they were, since whatever might be the father's power of disposal, they were not the subject of such separate ownership by him as to be free from the ordinary charges affecting Hindu inheritance (i). In one case in the Privy Council, where the extent of a father's power of disposal *inter vivos* became material, as determining his testamentary power, the Judicial Committee said that in cases under the Mitakshara law, "a Hindu without male descendants may dispose by will of his separate and self-acquired property, whether movable or

Power over  
ancestral  
movables.

(g) V. May. iv. 1 § 5; ante, 231.

(h) *Rayachalu v. Venkataramaniah*, 4 Mad. H. C. 60.

(i) *Shib Dayee v. Doorga Pershad*, 4 N.-W. P. 63.

Power over  
ancestral  
movables.

immovable; and that one having male descendants may so dispose of self-acquired property, if movable, subject perhaps to the restriction that he cannot wholly disinherit any one of such descendants" (*k*). Here it is not suggested that he had any such power over movables, when not self-acquired but ancestral. A case of exactly that nature was recently before the Privy Council on appeal from Madras. There it was attempted to set aside a will by which the testator left only about one-eleventh of his whole property to his only son, bequeathing the rest to his divided brother. The property was all movable (*l*). The lower Court found that the property was self-acquired, and *therefore* held the will valid. On appeal the entire argument before the Judicial Committee was directed to overthrow, or support, this finding. It was never contended on behalf of the respondent in any of the Courts that the father would have had an absolute power of disposition over the property, as being movable, even if it was ancestral—though such an argument, if well founded, would have been a complete answer to the contention of the appellant (*m*). Of course this is only a negative inference. But considering the experience of the counsel who appeared for the respondent, it seems deserving of much weight. The point was raised in a somewhat similar case in Bombay, and decided. There a Hindu under the Mitakshara law died possessed of a large amount of ancestral movable property, and with two undivided sons. By his will he bequeathed to one of his sons nearly the whole of the property. The Court, after reviewing the provisions of the Mitakshara and Mayukha, and the *dicta* in Marshall and 12 Moore I. A. already quoted (*ante*, notes (*e. k.*)), set aside the will. They held that it could not be valid either as a gift or a partition. They said, "It would be impossible to hold a gift of the great bulk of the

(*k*) *Beer Pertab v. Maharajah Rajender*, (Hunsapore) 12 M. I. A. 38; S. O. 9 Suth. (P. C.) 15.

(*l*) It is not so stated in the report, probably because no argument was directed to the point, but the fact was so. It was all in Government paper, except two or three houses of trifling value.—J. D. M.

(*m*) *Pauliem Valloo v. Pauliem Sooryah*, 4 I. A. 109; S. C. 1 Mad. 252.



family property to one son, to the exclusion of the other, to be a gift prescribed by texts of law; for the texts which we next quote distinctly prohibit such an unequal distribution" (n). That is to say, the Court adopted the opinion of Sir *Thomas Strange*, that the father has a special power of dealing with ancestral movable property, but only for certain very special purposes, specified by the Mitakshara. Whenever the case arises again, the contention probably will be to bring the alienation within those purposes.

Power over  
ancestral  
movables.

§ 311. Except in this instance, and in regard to the liability for his debts (§ 284), there is under Mitakshara law no distinction between a father and his sons. They are simply coparceners (o). So long as he is capable, the father is the head and manager of the family. He is entitled to the possession of the joint property. He directs the concerns of the family within itself, and represents it to the world (p). But as regards substantial proprietorship, he has no greater interest in the joint property than any of his sons. If the property is ancestral, each by birth acquires an interest equal to his own. If it is acquired by joint labour or joint funds, then, from the very nature of the case, all stand on the same footing. And in the same manner his grandsons and great-grandsons severally take an interest on their respective births in the rights of their fathers who represent them, and therefore in unascertained shares of the entire property (§ 247). It is, therefore, an established rule that a father can make no disposition of the joint property which will prejudice his issue, unless he obtains their assent, if they are able to give it, or unless there is some established necessity, or moral, or religious,

Authority of  
father

restricted by  
rights of issue.

(n) *Lakshman v. Ramchandra*, 1 Bom. 561, *affd.* 7 I. A. 181; practically overruling the previous decision in *Ramchandra v. Mahader*, 1 Bom. H. C. Appx. 76 (2nd ed.) *acc.* *Chatturbhoj v. Dharamsi*, 9 Bom. 438. See also *per curiam*, 10 Bom. p. 545; *Baba v. Timma*, 7 Mad. 357.

(o) See *per curiam*, *Suraj Bansi v. Sheo Prashad*, 6 I. A. p. 100; *Palanivelappa v. Mannaru*, 2 Mad. H. C. 417; *Rayacharlu v. Venkataramaniah*, 4 Mad. H. C. 61; *Shudanund v. Bonomalee*, 6 Suth. 256; *Lalti Kuar v. Ganga*, 7 N.-W. P. 279.

(p) *Buldeo v. Sham Lal*, 1 All. 77.

obligation to justify the transaction. Where his acts are questioned, he has not even the benefit of a presumption in his favour that they were necessary or justifiable (*q*). And it makes not the least difference whether the disposition is in favour of a stranger, or one of the family themselves. The test is, whether it is an infringement upon their vested rights (*r*). For instance, where the father had given a lease of land to the family dewan as a reward for faithful services, during the minority, and therefore without the consent, of his sons, the lease was set aside (*s*). On the same principle, it has been held that one of several coparceners has a right to forbid the common property being dealt with in any way that alters its character; as, for instance, by building upon it (*t*); or that places any part of it in the exclusive possession of one, so as to bar the joint rights of the others (*u*). Of course, it would be otherwise if such acts were done in the ordinary course of management, as by building on building-land, or leasing out houses held as an investment.

#### Life estates.

§ 312. In some cases property is vested in its holder only for life, or during good behaviour, as remuneration for services to be rendered from time to time to the Government, the village or the like. For instance, lands held on *Ghatwali* tenure in Bengal, or on *Vatan* tenure in Bombay, or by Karnams in Madras. Here, from the nature of the tenure, the land is neither alienable by the holder, nor capable of being seized in execution of a decree against him. If upon his death it passes to his heir as successor, the latter takes it as successor, and not as heir. Consequently,

(*q*) *Gurusawmi v. Ganapathia*, 5 Mad. 337; *Subramaniya v. Sadasiva*, 8 Mad. 75; *Chunnaya v. Perumal*, 13 Mad. 51.

(*r*) *Sham Singh v. Mt. Umraotee*, 2 S. D. 75 (92); *Motee Lall v. Mitterjeet*, 6 S. D. 71 (82); *Rajaram Tewari v. Lachman*, 8 Suth. 15; *Ganga Bisheshur v. Pirthi*, 2 All. 635.

(*s*) *Pratabnarayan v. Court of Wards*, 3 B. L. R. (A. C. J.) 21; S. C. *Subnomine, Protap Narain v. Court of Wards*, 11 Suth. 343; *Muttumaran v. Lakshmi*, Mad. Dec. of 1860, 227.

(*t*) *Jankee v. Bukhooree*, S. D. of 1856, 761; *Indurdeonarain v. Toolseenaarain*, S. D. of 1857, 765; *Guru Das v. Bijaya*, 1 B. L. R. (A. C. J.) 108; S. C. 10 Suth. 171; *Sheopersad v. Leela*, 12 B. L. R. 188; S. C. 20 Suth. 160.

(*u*) *Stalkartt v. Gopal*, 12 B. L. R. 197; S. C. 20 Suth. 168.

it is not liable in his hands as assets for payment of the debts of the last holder (v).

§ 313. Until very lately it was the settled usage of those provinces of India which administer Mitakshara law that the holder of an ancestral impartible estate could not alien or encumber it beyond his own life, so as to bind his coparceners, except for purposes beneficial to the family and not merely to himself. It is very possible that a usage to this effect may have sprung up quite independently of the Mitakshara or any other law. The leading examples of estates of this class were in the nature of Royalties, whose owners did pretty much what they pleased under Native rule. A grant by one of these feudal sovereigns to a subject, not too powerful to be affronted with impunity, would naturally be set aside by his successor; not on any refined considerations of law, but simply because the power to grant could not rank higher than the power to revoke. When these estates came under the control of British tribunals, the exercise of such a right had to be placed upon a legal basis. The decisions of the Madras Sudr Court, in the early part of the century, while uniformly maintaining the substantive doctrine, varied from time to time in the grounds upon which it was supported. Ultimately, in the case of Hindus, it was rested upon the general principles by which the Mitakshara law restrains the head of a family in his dealings with the joint property. Where the impartible estate was ancestral it became the property, not only of each successive holder, but of him and of those who in respect of partible property would be his coparceners. It was true that they could not claim a share of either the *corpus* or the annual income, but it was contended that they had a vested interest in the

Rights of the holder of an impartible estate under Mitakshara law.

(v) *Nilmoni Singh v. Bakranath*, 9 I. A. 104; *Jaggiandas v. Imdad*, 6 Bom. 311; *Anundo Rai v. Kali Prosad*, 10 Cal. 677; *Muppidi Papaya v. Ramaya*, 7 Mad. 85. See as to the result of an abolition of the services. *Radhabai v. Anantrav*, 9 Bom. 198; *Appaji Bapuji v. Keshav Shumrav*, 15 Bom. 18. Akbarpore Ghatwali, which is held under a Zemindar and not under the Government, is alienable absolutely, and not merely for the life of the Ghatwal, *Teknit Kali v. Anund Roy*, 15 I. A. 18; S. C. 15 Cal. 471.

Effect of a  
forfeiture.

Right of son to  
impartible pro-  
perty denied.

succession which the holder for the time being could not defeat at his pleasure. It was held that these conflicting rights could be reconciled by allowing each holder to alienate for his own life, but not longer, unless for purposes of family necessity. In support of this view it was pointed out that the Privy Council had frequently treated an ancestral impartible estate as joint property when questions of succession arose, and that it might with equal propriety be treated as such for purposes of alienation (*w*). A doctrine which was in this way removed from the basis of usage, and rested upon certain definite propositions of law, naturally became open to attack. The first assault upon it was delivered by *Couch*, C. J., in a case before the High Court of Bengal. There, an impartible estate, which descended by the law of primogeniture, was held during the mutiny by a rebel. He was sentenced to death, and his estate confiscated under Act XXV of 1857. (Native Army, Forfeiture for Mutiny). The family was governed by Mitakshara law. The son of the rebel claimed the estate, on the ground that by birth a joint interest in the estate vested in him, and that the confiscation could only apply to the life interest of his father. This contention was overruled. The Chief Justice said, "The question appears to be reduced to this:—Is the law of Mitakshara, by which each son has by birth a property in the paternal or ancestral estate (ch. i. s. 1, v. 27) consistent with the custom that the estate is impartible, and descends to the eldest son? The property by birth gives to each son a right to compel the father to divide the estate, which is inconsistent with the estate being impartible. On the father's death the whole estate goes to the eldest son, and the property by birth in the others has no effect. Property by birth in such an estate is a right which can never be enjoyed by the younger sons.

---

(*w*) I have not thought it necessary to set out again the series of decisions in the Madras Presidency which established the practice above referred to. They will be found in §§ 312 and 313 of the 4th ed. of this work. See as to the effect of a long course of judicial decisions which are subsequently held to have been erroneous. 18 M. I. A. 500; 2 I. A. 250.



It is not only not necessary to secure the estate to the eldest son, but if it had effect in respect to the younger sons, it would prevent it. This part of the Mitakshara law cannot be reconciled with the custom, and we think we should hold it is not applicable to this estate." "The plaintiff's case, in truth, is that only the eldest son becomes a co-owner with his father, which is not the law of the Mitakshara. Either all the sons must become so, or none of them do, and the right of the eldest is only to inherit on his father's death" (x).

§ 314. The same question arose again in the case of the Patkoom Raj in Chota Nagpore (y), where upon the death of one Rajah his successor claimed the right to set aside grants which had been made by the deceased for the maintenance of the junior members. No question of Mitakshara law arose, and it appears to have been assumed that the case was governed by Bengal law, so far as that law was applicable to the case. The argument appears to have been that "the very nature of the grant which created a raj of this description, only gave each successive owner of the grant restricted rights." No evidence was adduced of any special terms annexed to the original grant, and it appeared that similar alienations had been customary in the family. The Court rejected the suits, saying, "The estate is an impartible one, but the effect of impartibility does not seem to interfere with the ordinary law as to rights beyond this, that it makes the estate pass to the eldest son. His right to alienate under the ordinary law can only be restrained by some family custom, which has the effect of overriding and controlling the general law." This of course would be so under Bengal law. This decision was affirmed on appeal. The Judicial Committee referred to a former decision of their own in the case of the Pacheet

Effects of grants  
for maintenance.

(x) *Thakoor Kapilnauth v. The Government*, 13 B. L. R. 445, 458, 460; S. C. 23 Buth. 17. The Court in fact found that the suit was barred by limitation.

(y) *Uddoy Adittya Deb v. Judublal*, 5 Cal. 113. See as to the law which governed the family, p. 116.



Raj, as showing that the mere impartibility of an estate did not render it inalienable, but that inalienability depended upon family custom which would require to be proved (2). Here again the case was under Bengal law. In a later case a dispute arose between several members of a Mitakshara priestly family, to whom a grant had been made by the Rajah of Chota Nagpore of a nature known as *putro putrodik*, which was said to be an hereditary grant, in which all the members of a Mitakshara family would share, and which would descend from father to son like any other ancestral property. One of the members asserted that a succeeding Rajah had revoked the joint grant, and conferred the whole property upon himself. The High Court held that such a revocation was unlawful. *Garth*, C.J. said "The fact that the Raj is impartible does not prevent the Maharajah for the time being from making grants of the land in perpetuity" (a). Here again it does not appear that the Raj of Chota Nagpore was governed by any law but that of Bengal. From the remarks of Mr. Justice *Mitter* in the previous case (b) that is the law which seems to govern the district in question.

§ 315. In 1888, however, a decision was given by the Privy Council in a case governed by the Mitakshara law, which struck at the root of all the previous rulings (c). The Rajah of Maholi in the North-Western Provinces had alienated seventeen of the most valuable villages of his estate in perpetuity in favour of his junior wife. His son sued for a declaration that the Rajah had according to Hindu law no right "under any circumstances except to enjoy possession of the estate during his lifetime," and had no power to alien any part of it. This claim of course was stated too widely to be correct, but the proposition really contended

(2) *Uditya Deb v. Jadub Lal*, 8 I. A. 248, citing *Anund Lal v. Maharajah Dheraj Gurrood*, 5 M. I. A. 82.

(a) *Narain Khootia v. Lokenath*, 7 Cal. 461.

(b) 5 Cal. p. 116.

(c) *Rani Sartaj Kuari v. Rani Deoraj*, 15 I. A. 51.

for was rightly laid down by the Court as follows: "In other words the plaintiff claims that, except in so far as from the nature of the estate they are inapplicable, his case must be determined according to the principles of the Hindu law, which govern joint families and their property." After examining the previous decisions of the Judicial Committee, the Court said; "If we have correctly held that the Maholi Raj estate is joint family property, then, save for urgent or necessary expenses of the family, no one member, even though he stands in the position of father, or manager, can alienate it, or any part of it, without the consent of all. Such at least is the view of the Hindu law that has been always recognised by this Court in a long, and as far as we know, unbroken series of decisions from which we should hesitate to depart. On appeal the attention of the Judicial Committee was not called to the Madras decisions, which of course added nothing to the argument relied on by the Allahabad High Court, and were only important as showing the wide extent and persistency of a course of decisions, now held to be erroneous. Their Lordships said, "The property in the paternal or ancestral estate acquired by birth under the Mitakshara law is, in their Lordships' opinion, so connected with the right to a partition, that it does not exist where there is no right to it. In the Hansapore case (*d*) there was a right to have *babaana* allowances as there is in this case, but that was not thought to create a community of interest which would be a restraint upon alienation. By the custom or usage the eldest son succeeds to the whole estate on the death of the father, as he would if the property were held in severalty. It is difficult to reconcile this mode of succession with the rights of a Joint Family, and to hold that there is a joint ownership which is a restraint upon alienation. It is not so difficult where the holder of the estate has no son, and it is necessary to decide who is to succeed." "If, as their Lordships are of opinion, the eldest son, where the

---

(*d*) 12 M. I. A. 1. There the Raj was the self-acquired property of the alienor (p. 34) and therefore, even under Mitakshara law, was absolutely at his disposal.

Mitakshara law prevails, and there is the custom of primogeniture, does not become a co-sharer with his father in the estate, the inalienability of the estate depends upon custom, which must be proved, or, it may be in some cases, upon the nature of the tenure." "The absence of evidence of an alienation without any evidence of facts which would make it probable that an alienation would have been made, cannot be accepted as proof of a custom of inalienability."

Followed in  
Madras.

This decision was, of course, followed, though reluctantly, by the Madras High Court. The son of the Shivagunga Zemindar sued to set aside a mining lease for 20 years granted by his late father. The High Court found "that the transaction was not one which the manager of a Joint Hindu Family, acting with ordinary care and prudence, in the exercise of his qualified power of dealing with family property should conclude." They said in reference to the recent decisions of the Privy Council: "These decisions are in direct conflict with the principle upon which the whole series of decisions in this Presidency as to the right of a zemindar to alienate depends. It has been invariably held that acts and alienations by the holder of an impartible Zemindary made to enure beyond his lifetime will, if otherwise than *bonâ fide*, and if prejudicial to the family, be set aside." Yielding, however, to the authority of the Judicial Committee, they directed an issue to enquire whether any family custom to restrain alienation could be made out. Of course none such could be established, and the plaintiff's suit was dismissed (e).

Right to object.

§ 316. Dispositions of property by a father can, of course, only be objected to by those who have a joint interest with him in the property, either by joint acquisition, or by birth. Where the objection is based on the latter ground, it is necessary to show that such an interest vested in the objector at his birth, or by his birth. Therefore, a son cannot object to

Interest by  
birth.

---

(e) *Beresford v. Rama Subba*, 13 Mad. 197.

alienations validly made by his father before he was born or begotten, because he could only by birth obtain an interest in property which was then existing in his ancestor. Hence, if at the time of the alienation there had been no one in existence whose assent was necessary, or if those who were then in existence had consented, he could not afterwards object on the ground that there was no necessity for the transaction (*f*). On the other hand, if the alienation was made by a father without necessity, and without the consent of sons then living, it would not only be invalid against them, but also against any son born before they had ratified the transaction; and no consent given by them after his birth would render it binding upon him (*g*). In one case the pandits advised the Madras Sudr Court that the rule as to the rights of sons extended so far, that a man "had not the power to dispose of all his property so long as he was able to beget children, but that he might alienate a small portion of the same, if by so doing he did not deprive his issue then born, or that might be born to him, of the means of support" (*h*). This futwah evidently rested on a text of *Vyasa* cited in the *Mitakshara* (I i. § 27): "They who are born, and they who are yet unbegotten, and they who are still in the womb, require the means of support. No gift or sale should therefore be made." But this text, so far as it applies to sons yet unbegotten, was treated by the Madras High Court as merely a moral precept, and they held that the rights of an unborn son only extended to the case of one who was in the womb at the time of the transaction complained of (*i*). Whether a son could defeat an alienation for value made when he was *in gremio matris*,

(*f*) *Jado v. Mt. Rane*, 5 N.-W.P. 118; *Raja Ram Tewary v. Luchmun*, 8 Suth. 16, 21; *Girdharse Lall v. Kantoo Lall*, 1 I. A. 321; S. C. 15 B. L. R. 187; S. C. 22 Suth. 56. A mere right to bring a suit, or to make a representation to Government for the enlargement of a grant, on the ground of fraud, is not such a right as vests in a son by birth. *Chaudhri Ujagar v. Chaudhri Pitam*, 8 I. A. 190; S. C. sub nomine, *Ujagar v. Pitam*, 4 All. 120.

(*g*) *Hurodoot v. Beer Narnin*, 11 Suth. 480.

(*h*) *Soobbaputten v. Jungameeah*, Mad. Dec. of 1851, 3.

(*i*) *Yekeyamian v. Agniswarian*, 4 Mad. H. C. 307. See *Parichat v. Zalim*, 4 I. A. 159, where the P. C. declined to pronounce upon the point.



as he could a gift or devise, was a point which the same Court left undecided (*k*).

Adopted son.

Alienation  
after authority.

§ 317. An adopted son stands in exactly the same position as a natural-born son, and has the same right to object to his father's alienations. In two cases pandits have relied on the above text of *Vyasa*, as enabling a son who had been adopted under an authority from the father to set aside alienations made by the father himself, before the adoption but after the authority; the ground being, that the possession of an authority to adopt by the widow was equivalent to a pregnancy (*l*). But this principle must now be taken as being overruled (*m*), and there can be no doubt that the interest of an adopted son arise for the first time on his adoption, and that he cannot after his adoption set aside any transaction which was valid when it took place, at all events as against his adopting father (*n*).

Separate pro-  
perty.

Self-acquisi-  
tions.

§ 318. A father who is separated from his sons can, of course, dispose at pleasure, not only of his share, but of all property acquired after partition; since as to the former the sons have relinquished the rights they obtained by birth, and as to the latter they never had any such rights (*o*). *Primâ facie* one would imagine the same rule must apply as to self-acquisition, and on the same grounds. Self-acquisition *ex vi termini* does not belong to the co-heirs (*p*), and in one passage *Vijnanesvara* expressly states that "the son must acquiesce in the father's disposal of his own self-acquired property" (*q*). In an earlier passage, however, he states that the father "is subject to the control of his sons

(*k*) *Minakshi v. Virappa*, 8 Mad.

(*l*) *Ram Kishen v. Mt Stri Muttee*, 3 S. D. 367 (489, 495); *Nagalutchmee v. Gopeo*, 6 M. I. A. 320, and *per curiam*, *Durmu v. Coomara*, Mad. Dec. of 1852, 117.

(*m*) See *ante*, § 181, 182.

(*n*) *Sudanund v. Soorjoomonee*, 11 Suth. 436; *Rambhat v. Lakshman*, 5 Bom. 630.

(*o*) *Narada*, xiii. § 43; *Vivada Chintamani*, 314; *Mitakshara*, i. 1, § 20; *Juvav v. Jaki*, Mad. Dec. of 1862, 1. See as to the early law, *ante*, § 212.

(*p*) *Mitakshara*, i. 4, § 1, 2.

(*q*) *Mitakshara*, i. 5, § 10.



and the rest, in regard to the immovable estate, whether acquired by himself, or inherited from his father or other predecessor," citing as an authority the text of *Vyasa* above quoted (r). Hence, a conflict of decision has arisen as to whether self-acquired immovables are absolutely at the father's disposal, or not. In Madras it has been held that they are not, and in this opinion Mr. Colebrooke and Sir *Thomas Strange* concur (s). There is also a decision of the High Court of the North-West Provinces to the same effect (t), and the Judicial Committee, when stating the power of disposition possessed by a Hindu under Mitakshara law, say that "if without descendants he may dispose by will of his separate and self-acquired property, whether movable or immovable; and that one having male descendants may so dispose of self-acquired property, if movable, subject perhaps to the restriction that he cannot wholly disinherit any one of such relations" (u). On the other hand, Mr. W. MacNaghten says, in speaking of a father's powers, "with respect to real property acquired or recovered by the occupant, he is at liberty to make any alienation or distribution which he may think fit, subject only to spiritual responsibility" (v). And this was expressly determined to be the law by the High Court of Bengal on a full examination of all the native texts. They said that "the apparent conflict between the passages of the Mitakshara is reconciled, if the right of the sons in the self-acquired property of the father is treated as an imperfect right incapable of being enforced" (w). The *Vivada Chintamani*, which is

(r) Mitakshara, i. 1, § 27. See the earlier law discussed ante, § 233, 234.

(s) 1 Stra. H. L. 261; 2 Stra. H. L. 436—441, 450; *Muttumaran v. Lakshmi*, Mad. Dec. of 1860, 227; *Komala v. Gangadhera*, Mad. Dec. of 1862, 41. See *Meenatchee v. Chetumbra*, Mad. Dec. of 1853, 61; per curiam, *Tara Chand v. Reeb Ram*, 3 Mad. H. C. 55.

(t) *Madhusookh v. Budree*, 1 N.-W. P. 153.

(u) *Beer Pertab v. Maharajah Rajendar*, 12 M. I. A. 38; S. C. 9 Suth. (P. C.) 15.

(v) 1 W. MacN. 2, cited with approval in the P.C., but as to a different point; *Gopeekrist v. Gungapersaud*, 6 M. I. A. 77. See too *Rungama v. Atchama*, 4 M. I. A. 1, 103; S. C. 7 Suth. (P. C.) 57.

(w) *Muddun Gopal v. Ram Buksh*, 5 Suth. 71; *Ojoodhya v. Ramsarun*, ib. 77; *Rajaram Tewary v. Luchmun*, 8 Suth. 15; *Sudanund v. Soorjo Monee*, 11 Suth. 436.

Persons who  
have no interest  
by birth.

the ruling authority in the Mithila, but which is really little more than a compendium of the Mitakshara, states without any exception that a father may dispose of his self-acquired property at his pleasure, and this has been affirmed to be the law of that district by the Privy Council (*x*). The same rule has been laid down by the High Courts of Bombay, Allahabad and Madras (*y*), and M. Gibelin states that the understanding in Pondicherry is to the same effect (*z*). And similarly a man is at perfect liberty to dispose of property which he has inherited collaterally, or in such a mode that his descendants do not by birth acquire an interest in it (*a*). And whatever be the nature of the property, or the mode in which it has been acquired, a man without issue may dispose of it at his pleasure, as against his wife, or daughters, or his remote descendants, or his collateral relations (*b*). Of course, as regards collaterals it is assumed that it has not been acquired by him in such a way as to make them coparceners with him in respect of it (*c*).

Consent.

§ 319. Any want of capacity on the part of the father to alienate the family property, may be supplied by the consent of the coparceners. Such consent may either be express, or implied from their conduct at or after the time of the transaction (*d*). Where the property is invested in trade, or in any other mercantile business, the manager of the property will be assumed to possess the authority usually exercised by persons carrying on such business (*e*). And,

---

(*x*) *Vivada Chintamani*, 76, 229, but see p. 309; *Bishen Perakash v. Bawa*, (P. C.) 12 B. L. R. 430; S. C. 20 Suth. 137; affirming the decision of the lower Court, 10 Suth. 287, from which it appears that the property in dispute was immovable. See too *Nana Narain v. Huree Punth*, 9 M. I. A. 96, 121.

(*y*) *Gangabai v. Vamanaji*, 2 Bom. H. C. 318; *Sital v. Madho*, 1 All. 394; *Subbayya v. Surayya*, 10 Mad. 251.

(*z*) 1 Gib. 14.

(*a*) See ante, § 251. *Jugmohundas v. Munguldas*, 10 Bom. 528.

(*b*) *Mulraz v. Chalekany*, 2 M. I. A. 54; *Nagalutchmee v. Gopee*, 6 M. I. A. 309; *Narottam v. Narsandas*, 3 Bom. H. C. (A. C. J.) 6; *Ajoodhia v. Kashee*, 4 N.-W.P. 31. These were all cases of wills, which of course are less favoured than alienations *inter vivos*.

(*c*) *Tayumana v. Perumal*, 1 Mad. H. C. 51.

(*d*) *Arumuga v. Ramasami*, Mad. Dec. of 1860, 258; *Vittal v. Ananta*, Mad. Dec. of 1861, 37; *Virasami v. Varada*, *ib.* 146; *Miller v. Runganath*, 12 Cal. 389.

(*e*) *Bemola Mohun*, 5 Cal. 792; *Samalbhai v. Someshvar*, 5 Bom. 38; *In re Haroon Mahomed*, 14 Bom. 189, p. 194.

of course, ratification will supply the want of an original consent; such a ratification will be inferred where a son, with full knowledge of all the facts, takes possession of, and retains that which has been purchased with the proceeds of the property disposed of (*f*). Whether the consent of all the coparceners is necessary will depend upon the question, which will be discussed hereafter, as to the power of one of several to dispose of his share (§ 327). If it is the law that he can do so, then, of course, the consent of some would bind their own shares, though not the shares of the dissenting members. If the contrary is the law, then the consent of all would be required to give any validity to the transaction. Where a grandfather alienates with the consent of his son, that consent binds an after-born grandson. But where the grandson is already in existence, and has taken a vested interest, his father's consent would not of itself bind him (*g*).

§ 320. Circumstances of necessity will also justify a father, Necessity. as head of the family, in disposing of any part of the family property. In the Mitakshara the explanation which follows the text of *Vyasa*—"Even a single individual may conclude a donation, mortgage, or sale of immovable property, during a season of distress, for the sake of the family, and especially for pious purposes"—seems to limit this authority to cases where the other coparceners are minors and incapable of giving their consent (*h*). And it has been held in Bengal that the consent of those who are of age cannot be dispensed with, even where the transaction is for the benefit of the family (*i*). The contrary, however, was held in other cases, and seems to have been Mr. Colebrooke's opinion (*k*). The whole current of authorities appears to support the view that

(*f*) *Gangabai v. Vamanaji*, 2 Bom. H. C. 318; *per curiam*, *Modhoo Dyal v. Kolbur*, B. L. R. Sup. Vol. 1020; S. C. 9 Suth. 511.

(*g*) *Buraik v. Greedharee*, 9 Suth. 337, where the second proposition seems to follow from the statement that the grandson, if alive at the alienation, would have had a cause of action, notwithstanding his father's consent.

(*h*) Mitakshara, i. 1; § 28, 29.

(*i*) *Muthoora v. Bootun*, 13 Suth. 30, acc. 1 Stra. H. L. 20; *ante*, 286.

(*k*) *Juggurnath v. Doobo*, 14 Suth. 80; 2 Stra. H. L. 340, 348; *Bishambhur v. Sudasheeb*, 1 Suth. 96, *per Muttusamy Iyer, J.*, *Ponnappa v. Pappuvay-yangar*, 4 Mad. p. 18.

Hunooman-  
persaud's case.

the manager of the family property has an implied authority to do whatever is best for all concerned, and that no individual can defeat this power merely by withholding his consent. The powers of the manager of a Hindu estate were very fully considered by the Privy Council in a case which is always referred to as settling the law on the subject (*l*). That was the case of a mother managing as guardian for an infant heir. Of course, a father, and head of the family, might have greater powers, but could not have less, and it has been repeatedly held that the principles laid down in that judgment apply equally to fathers, or other joint owners, when managing property governed by the Mitakshara law (*m*). Their Lordships said (p. 423): "The power of the manager for an infant heir to charge an estate not his own, is, under the Hindu law, a limited and qualified power. It can only be exercised rightly in case of need, or for the benefit of the estate. But where, in the particular instance, the charge is one that a prudent owner would make, in order to benefit the estate, the *bonâ fide* lender is not affected by the precedent mismanagement of the estate. The actual pressure on the estate, the danger to be averted, or the benefit to be conferred upon it, in the particular instance, is the thing to be regarded (*n*). But, of course, if that danger arises, or has arisen, from any misconduct to which the lender is or has been a party, he cannot take advantage of his own wrong, to support a charge in his own favour against the heir, grounded on a necessity which his wrong has helped to cause, therefore the lender in this

(*l*) *Hunoomanpersaud v. Mt. Babooee*, 6 M. L. A. 393; S. C. 18 Suth. 81; note. The same rules apply to the case of one who is *de facto* though not *de jure* manager, *ibid.* 413. See as to the position of one who deals with the holder of an impartible estate *ante*, § 314.

(*m*) *Deotares v. Damoodhur*, S. D. of 1859, 1643; *Tandavaraya v. Valli*, 1 Mad. H. C. 398; *Soorendra v. Nundun*, 21 Suth. 196; *Kameswar v. Run Bahadur*, 8 L. A. 8, *ante*, § 297; *Chotiram v. Narayandas*, 11 Bom. 605. As to alienations by manager for idol, see *post*, § 397; by female heirs, *post*, § 586. The manager for a lunatic has the same power. *Gourseenath v. Collector of Monghyr*, 7 Suth. 5.

(*n*) See *Deotares v. Damoodhur*, *ubi sup.* A mere manager cannot revive or pay time barred debts, and *a fortiori* could not pledge or sell the estate on their account. *Chinnaya v. Gurunatham*, 5 Mad. 169. But it is said that a widow may do so as regards debts of her husband, *post*, § 587.



case, unless he is shown to have acted *malâ fide*, will not be affected, though it be shewn that, with better management, the estate might have been kept free from debt. Their Lordships think that the lender is bound to enquire into the necessities for the loan, and to satisfy himself as well as he can, with reference to the parties with whom he is dealing, that the manager is acting in the particular instance for the benefit of the estate (o). But they think that if he does so enquire, and acts honestly, the real existence of an alleged sufficient and reasonably credited necessity is not a condition precedent to the validity of his charge (p), and they do not think that under such circumstance he is bound to see to the application of the money (q). It is obvious that money to be secured on any estate is likely to be obtained upon easier terms than a loan which rest on mere personal security, and that, therefore, the mere creation of a charge securing a proper debt, cannot be viewed as improvident management; the purposes for which a loan is wanted are often future, as respects the actual application, and a lender can rarely have, unless he enters on the management, the means of controlling and directing the actual application. Their Lordships do not think that a *bonâ fide* creditor should suffer when he has acted honestly and with due caution, but is himself deceived."

§ 321. The case before the Privy Council was one of mortgage and not of sale. But it is evident that the same principles would apply in either case. A prudent manager should, of course, where it is possible, pay off a debt from

Necessity justifying sale.

(o) See *Nowrutton v. Baboo Goures*, 6 Suth. 193; *Pertab Bahadur v. Chitpal Singh*, 19 I. A. 33; *Lala Amarnath v. Achan Kuar*, 19 I. A. He is not bound to inquire into the causes which produced the necessity. *Mohabeer v. Joobha*, 16 Suth. 221; S. C. 8 B. L. R. 38; *Sheoraj v. Nukchedee*, 14 Suth. 72. A stranger purchasing from a guardian who sells or mortgages under the authority of the Court, given under Act XL of 1858, § 18, (Bengal—Minors) is protected unless he himself has been guilty of actual fraud. *Sikher Chund v. Dulputty*, 5 Cal. 363. And see Act V of 1881, § 90, (Probate and Administration) as to the powers of alienation of an executor by leave of the Court.

(p) See *Soorendro v. Nundun*, 21 Suth. 196; *Ratnam v. Govindarajulu*, 2 Mad. 339.

(q) See *Sundarayan v. Sitaramayan*, Mad. Dec. of 1861, 1, where the head of the family misappropriated the money which he had raised.



savings rather than by a sale of part of the estate (r), and it might be more prudent to raise money by mortgage than by sale. On the other hand, where the mortgage was at high interest, it might be more prudent to sell than to renew (s). In every case the question is one of fact, whether the transaction was one which a prudent owner, acting for his own benefit, would enter into. A sale of part of the property in order to raise money to pay off debts which bound the family, or to discharge the claims of Government upon the land, or to maintain the family, or to perform the necessary funeral or marriage or family ceremonies, would be proper if it was prudent or necessary (t). And where there are binding debts, which cannot otherwise be met, a sale will be justifiable to pay them off, even though there was no actual pressure at the time in the shape of suits by the creditors (u). For the manager is not bound, and indeed ought not, to put the estate to the expense of actions. *A fortiori*, of course, such dealings will be justified where there are decrees in existence, whether, *ex parte* or otherwise, which could at any moment be enforced against the property (v). And the same circumstances which would justify the sale of part, might justify the sale of the whole property, though, of course, a very strong case would have to be made out.

**Ancestral debts.** § 322. It must be owned that the principle of the Mitakshara that sons have a right to control their father in the alienation of the family property, is almost nullified by the other principle that they are bound after his death to pay his debts, even though contracted without necessity; and

(r) *Bukshun v. Doolhin*, 3 B. L. R. (A.C.J.) 423; S. C. 12 Suth. 337.

(s) *Muthoora v. Bootun*, 13 Suth. 30. Whether there is a necessity for borrowing at an unusually high rate of interest is itself a matter to which the lender should apply his mind, and the Court may reduce the interest while affirming the loan. *Hurronath Roy v. Rundhir Singh*, 18 I. A. 1; S. C. 18 Cal. 311.

(t) *Bishambhur v. Sudasheeb*, 1 Suth. 96; *Sacaram v. Laxumabai*, Perry, O. C. 129; *Saravana v. Muttayi*, 6 Mad. H. C. 371; *Babaji v. Krishnaji*, 2 Bom. 666. See *Kullar v. Modho Dhyal*, 5 Wym. 28, where it is said the transaction must be necessary, and not merely advantageous.

(u) *Kaihar v. Roop Singh*, 3 N.-W. P. 4.

(v) *Purmessur v. Mt. Goolbee*, 11 Suth. 446; *Shoraj v. Nukchedee*, 14 Suth. 72.

by the logical extension of that principle, recently laid down by the Privy Council, that the father is entitled to sell the family property in order to pay off his own debts, which were not contracted for the benefit of the family, but which the sons would be under a moral obligation to discharge (w). The mode of reconciling what is now, undoubtedly, a conflict of principles, may perhaps be sought by tracing back the law to a time when no such conflict existed. While the family continued in what I have called (§ 206) its Patriarchal State, the head of the family was not merely the manager of a partnership; he was the autocratic ruler of the family and of its possessions. Its property was his property. His debts were its debts. Probably it would seldom happen in a primitive state of society that any debts would be incurred which would require a sale of the property, but such a sale, if necessary, would be within the functions of the head of the house. If he died leaving debts unpaid, they would be discharged by the survivors, without any enquiry whether they had been contracted for the joint benefit, or for the special purposes, of the original debtor. The notion of a religious as well as a civil obligation to pay debts evidences the introduction of Brahmanical theories into a law which was previously founded upon merely natural justice. The kindred theory that the soul of a deceased debtor could not find repose till his debts were discharged probably grew up still later. The religious theory of obligation could well co-exist with the civil theory, as affording an additional sanction for a liability which was already recognised. The antiquity of the texts which state this religious theory shows that it had sprung up before the family bonds were relaxed, by allowing the sons to possess a co-ordinate interest in the property, and a right to restrain their father in his dealings with it. But even after this later development, natural equity and convenience would continue to attach a specially

Right of father  
to sell to satisfy  
his own debts.

---

(w) *Girdharee Lall v. Kantoo Lall*, 1 I. A. 321; S. C. 14 B. L. R. 187; S. C. 22 Suth. 56; ante, § 285.

binding character to debts which were contracted by the official head and representative of the family, while the religious obligation would assume greater prominence in proportion as the secular obligation was weakened. The tendency would be to reconcile a conflict of rights, which was becoming important, by allowing the sons to restrain their father in his dealings with the property before they matured into transactions which conferred rights upon others. Where such rights had been created, it might fairly be held, if a struggle ensued between the interest of a son in the paternal property and the interest of a creditor or a purchaser claiming by virtue of the father's acts, that the latter interest should prevail, as being the older, and enforced by a double sanction. Where the rival interest was that of a collateral coparcener, who was under no religious obligation to discharge the liabilities of the debtor, a contrary decision would result (x).

**Pious gifts.**

Another ground upon which alienations are valid, though made without necessity, is in the case of pious gifts. These, no doubt, were looked upon by the Brahmans as being of general benefit to the family from the store of religious merit which they procured. The subject will be treated fully in the chapter on religious endowments (§ 393).

**Burthen of  
proof of neces-  
sity.**

§ 323. Those who deal with a person who has only a limited interest in property, and who professes to dispose of a larger interest, are *primâ facie* bound to make out the facts which authorise such a disposition. But the nature and extent of the proof which they must offer will vary according to the facts of the case. In *Hunoomanpersaud's* case, it was contended that the burthen was discharged by showing an advance to the manager, and the *factum* of a deed by him, and in support of this a *dictum* of the Agra Sudder Court was quoted. Upon this the Judicial Committee remarked, "It might be a very correct course to

**Proof of neces-  
sity varies.**

---

(x) See *per Muthusawmy Iyer, J., Ponnappa v. Cappurayyengar*, 4 Mad. p. 83, and *per Turner, C. J., ibid.* pp. 41 *et seq.*

adopt with reference to suits of that particular character, which was one where the sons of a living father were, with his suspected collusion, attempting, in a suit against a creditor, to get rid of the charge on an ancestral estate created by the father, on the ground of the alleged misconduct of the father in extravagant waste of the estate. Now, it is to be observed, that a lender of money may reasonably be expected to prove the circumstances connected with his own particular loan, but cannot reasonably be expected to know, or come prepared with proof of, the antecedent economy and good conduct of the owner of an ancestral estate, whilst the antecedents of their father's career would be more likely to be in the knowledge of the sons, members of the same family, than of a stranger; consequently this *dictum* may perhaps be supported on the general principle that the allegation and proof of facts, presumably in his better knowledge, is to be looked for from the party who possesses that better knowledge, as well as on the obvious ground in such suits of the danger of collusion between father and sons in fraud of the creditor of the former. Their lordships think that the question on whom does the *onus* of proof lie in such suits as the present is one not capable of a general and inflexible answer. The presumption proper to be made will vary with circumstances, and must be regulated by and dependent on them. Thus, where the mortgagee himself, with whom the transaction took place, is setting up a charge in his favour made by one whose title to alienate he necessarily knew to be limited and qualified, he may be reasonably expected to allege and prove facts presumably better known to him than to the infant heir, namely, those facts which embody the representations made to him of the alleged needs of the estate, and the motives influencing his immediate loan. It is to be observed that the representations by the manager accompanying the loan as part of the *res gestæ*, and as the contemporaneous declarations of an agent, though not actually selected by the principal, have been held to be



Burthen of  
proof

evidence against the heir; and as their Lordships are informed that such *prima facie* proof has been generally required in the Supreme Court of Calcutta, between the lender and the heir, where the lender is enforcing his security against the heir, they think it reasonable and right that it should be required. It is obvious, however, that, it might be unreasonable to require such proof from one not an original party, after a lapse of time and enjoyment, and apparent acquiescence; consequently, if, as is the case here as to part of the charge, it be created by substitution of a new security for an older one, where the consideration for the older one was an old precedent debt of an ancestor not previously questioned, a presumption of the kind contended for by the appellant would be reasonable" (y). It appears to have been the intention of the Legislature to summarise the above rulings in § 38 of the Transfer of Property Act IV of 1882. "Where any person, authorised only under circumstances in their nature variable to dispose of immoveable property, transfers such property for consideration, alleging the existence of such circumstances, they shall, as between the transferee on the one part and the transferor and other persons (if any) affected by the transfer on the other part, be deemed to have existed, if the transferee, after using reasonable care to ascertain the existence of such circumstances, has acted in good faith."

in case of  
decrees.

§ 324. One point as to which there seems at first to be a conflict of decisions, is as to the amount of proof incumbent upon a purchaser under a decree, or upon one who lends money to the manager of an estate to pay off a decree, or who purchases a part of an estate from the manager to

---

(y) *Hunoomanpersaud v. Mt. Babooee*, 6 M. I. A. pp. 418—420; S. C. 18 Suth. 81, note; *Tandavaraya v. Valli*, 1 Mad. H. C. 398; *Vadali v. Manda*, 2 Mad. H. C. 407; *Saravana v. Muttayi*, 6 Mad. H. C. 371; *Lalla Bunseedhur v. Koonwur Bindeserree*, 10 M. I. A. 454; *Syud Tasoowar v. Koonj Beharee*, 3 N.-W. P. 8; *Chowdhry v. Brojo Soondur*, 18 Suth. 77; *Sikher Chund v. Dulputty*, 5 Cal. 363; *Makundi v. Sarabsukh*, 6 All. 417; *Lal Singh v. Deo Narain*, 8 All. 279; *Gurasawmi v. Ganapathia*, 5 Mad. 337. Where a son attempts to defeat an alienation by his father, or to escape from his debts by alleging immorality or illegality, the burthen of establishing such a state of things rests upon him. *Subramaniya v. Sadasiva*, 8 Mad. 75.



supply him with funds for that purpose. Is the production of a *bonâ fide* decree sufficient of itself to establish a case of necessity; or is it incumbent upon the purchaser or creditor to go further, and to show that the decree was passed for a purpose which would bind the estate? The result of the decisions appears to be, that the party who relies on the decree is entitled to assume that it was properly passed, and that everything done under it was properly done. But the extent to which this will benefit him depends upon the nature of the decree, and the person against whom it was given, and upon the form of the proceedings taken in execution of the decree. It is evident that a decree may be one which upon its face, and by the mere fact that it was passed, binds the person against whom it is enforced. Or it may be one which will not bind him unless something was proved in the course of the case, and that something may or may not have been proved. Again; the form of the decree, and of the proceedings taken under it, may show that the creditor, while only suing his debtor by name, sued him as the representative of the family, in order to bind its property. Or, conversely, it may appear that although the creditor had a remedy, which he might have enforced, against the whole family and its property, he chose to restrict his claim to his original debtor and the interests of that debtor. Where the decree is against a father, it conclusively establishes that there was a debt due by him, and as against his issue nothing more is necessary. It is not, as we have seen, necessary to show that the debt was for the benefit of the family. Where property is sold under such a decree, "the purchaser is not bound to go back beyond the decree to ascertain whether the Court was right in giving the decree, or having given it, in putting up the property for sale under an execution upon it" (z). And, of course, the same rule would apply where

---

(z) *Per curiam*, *Muddun Thakoor v. Kantoo Lall*, 1 I. A. 321, 334; S. C. 14 B. L. R. 187; S. C. 22 Suth. 56; *ante*, §§ 289, 297; *Bhagbut Pershad v. Mt. Girja Koer*, 15 I. A. 99; S. C. 15 Cal. 317. See numerous cases following this decision; *Bhowna v. Roopkishore*, 5 N.-W. P. 89; *Budree v. Kantee*, 23 Suth. 260; *Kooldeep v. Runjeet*, 24 Suth. 231; *Sheo Pershad v. Soorjbunsee*, *ib.* 281; *Burtoo v. Ram Purmessur*, *ib.* 364; *Anooragee v. Bhugobutty*, 25 Suth. 148;

Transactions  
founded on  
decrees.

a minor sought to set aside a sale made by his guardian in order to pay off a decree against the minor himself (a); or where the transaction was disputed by an heir, not being a coparcener, for he is bound to pay the debts of the person whose estate he takes (§ 302). But it would be otherwise where the decree was given against a simple coparcener. It would be a perfectly valid decree against him, and might during his life be enforced by execution and sale of his interest in the property (§ 305). But as his debt would not bind his coparceners or their share in the property, unless it was contracted by their consent or for their benefit (§ 308), so a decree against him can create no higher liability. It ascertains his debt, but does no more. If it is intended to procure payment of the debt, directly or indirectly, out of the shares of the other members, the creditor must show that the debts themselves were such as to be properly binding upon those who have not personally incurred them (b). This proof must be given in a suit to which the joint members of the family are parties, and in which they can resist the allegations made against them. If the managing member of the family executes a document which would bind the other members, the proper course is to sue them all. If the creditor chooses, he may only sue the person who executed the document. But if he adopts this course, his execution will only take effect upon the share of the execution debtor. He cannot enforce it against the other members (not being the sons of the debtor) merely by proving that the transaction was entered into for the benefit of the family. This only shows that he had a larger

*Ramsahoy v. Mohabeer*, ib. 185; *Wajed Hossein v. Nankoo*, ib. 311; *Luchmi v. Asman*, 1 Cal. 213; S. C. 25 Suth. 421; *Sivasankara v. Parvati*, 4 Mad. 96. As to how far it is necessary to make the sons parties to suits against a father to enforce his sales or mortgages or to recover debts due by him, see *ante*, §§ 285—296A. As to the extent to which decrees are conclusive against the sons, see *ante*, §§ 297—299.

(a) *Sheoraj v. Nukchedee*, 14 Suth. 72.

(b) *Saravuna v. Muttayi*, 6 Mad. H. C. 371; *Pareyasami v. Saluckai*, 1 Mad. H. C. 157; *Reotee v. Ramjeet*, 2 N.-W. P. 50; *Venkatasami v. Kuppaiyan*, 1 Mad. 354; *Venkataramayyan v. Venkatasubramani*, ib. 358; *Loki v. Aghoree*, 5 Cal. 144; *Gangulu v. Ancha*, 4 Mad. 78.

remedy, of which he did not avail himself (c). Finally there is a class of cases in which it has been held that a suit against one member of the family must be taken as a proceeding against the family represented by him, so that the decree binds them, and may be enforced by execution against the shares of all (d). In a case where several brothers were jointly interested in a tenure, but the manager alone was registered as the owner, and he was sued for arrears of rent, and his right, title, and interest was sold in execution, it was held that the whole tenure passed to the purchaser. *Garth*, C. J., said : " Where it is clear from the proceedings, that what is sold, and intended to be sold, is the interest of the judgment debtor only, the sale must be confined to that interest, although the decree holder might have sold the whole tenure if he had taken proper steps to do so, or although the purchaser may have obtained possession of the whole tenure under the sale. But if, on the other hand, it appears that the judgment debtor has been sued as representing the ownership of the entire tenure, and that the sale, although purporting to be of the right and interest of the judgment debtor only, was intended to be, and in justice and equity ought to operate, as a sale of the tenure, the whole tenure then must be considered as having passed by the sale. And if the question is a doubtful one on the face of the proceedings, or one part of the proceedings may appear inconsistent with another, the Court must look to the substance of the matter, and not the form or language of the proceedings " (e).

(c) *Deendyal v. Jugdeep Narain*, 4 I. A. 247 ; S. C. 3 Cal. 198, *ante*, § 290 ; *Armugum v. Sabapathy*, 5 Mad. 12 ; *Subramanien v. Subramanien*, *ib.* 125 ; *Dorasawmy v. Atiratra*, 7 Mad. 136 ; *Viraragavamma v. Samudrala*, 8 Mad. 208 ; *Guruvappa v. Thimma*, 10 Mad. 316 ; *Abilak Roy v. Rubbi Roy*, 11 Cal. 293 ; *Maruti Narayan v. Lilachand*, 6 Bom. 564 ; *Kisansing v. Moreshwar*, 7 Bom. 91 ; *Doolar Chand v. Lalla Chabul*, 6 I. A. 47.

(d) *Bissessur v. Luchmessur*, 6 I. A. 233 ; 5 O. L. R. 477 ; *Deva v. Ram Manohur*, 2 All. 746 ; *Ram Sevak v. Ragnubar*, 3 All. 72 ; *Radha Kishen v. Bachhaman*, *ibid.* 118 ; *Gaya v. Rajbansi*, *ibid.* 191 ; *Ramnarain v. Bhawani*, F. B. *ibid.* 443 ; *Hari Saran Moitra v. Bhubaneswari Debi*, 15 I. A. 195 ; S. C. 16 Cal. 40.

(e) *Jeo Lal Singh v. Gunga Pershad*, 10 Cal. 996, 1001 ; *Kombi v. Lakshmi*, 5 Mad. 201, 205.

Where other  
avail-

§ 325. It has been said that where a debt is ancestral, property is sold to meet it, the purchaser is not bound to enquire whether the debt could have been met from other sources (f). But, I imagine, this can only apply where there is at all events an apparent necessity for the sale. In the case where the rule was laid down, the Court went on to say, "Nor is it indicated from what sources it would have been met." In a Bengal case, the Sudder Court laid down nearly the opposite principle. They said, "It may be shown that the ostensible object of the loan was to pay off Government revenue, but, to render such a loan binding upon those who had reversionary interests upon the property, it must also be satisfactorily proved that such loan was absolutely necessary from failure of the resources of the estate itself, and was not raised through the caprice or extravagance of the proprietor" (g). Here the law seems to be laid down rather too strictly. The person who deals with the manager of a joint family property has to consider the propriety and necessity of the transaction in which he is engaged, not merely the propriety and necessity of paying the debt which is the pretext for the transaction. If the debt is improper or unnecessary, and known to be so by the lender, the transaction is, of course, invalid. If the payment of the debt is proper and necessary, the transaction will still be invalid, unless the lender has reasonable ground for supposing that it cannot be met without his assistance. The caprice or extravagance of the proprietor is only material as showing, either that the object of the transaction was an improper one, or that the necessity for it was non-existent.

Extravagances  
of manager.

Proof of pay-  
ment.

Where it is once established that there was a debt which ought to be paid, and which could not be paid without a loan or sale, if the validity of the transaction is disputed on the ground that the debt had previously been discharged

(f) *Ajey v. Girdharee*, 4 N.-W. P. 110.

(g) *Damoodhur v. Birjo Mohapatra*, S. D. of 1858, 802.



or diminished, the burthen of making out this case rests upon the person who sets it up. Payment is an affirmative fact which cannot be assumed, merely on account of the antiquity of the debt (*h*).

§ 326. The powers of the manager of a joint family property who is not the father are governed by exactly the same principles as those already laid down (*i*). Of course, his personal debts are not binding upon his coparceners, as those of a father are upon his sons, and therefore alienations made by him to pay such debts would not bind them. In his case, too, there could be no suggestion that he had any greater power over movables than over immovables, except so far as arose from their own nature, and the mode in which they would usually be dealt with. Nor, of course, could his coparceners claim any interest in his self-acquired land.

Powers of manager.

§ 327. So far we have been considering dispositions of the family property by which one member professed to bind the others, by selling or encumbering their shares as well as his own. We have now to examine the right of one member of a family governed by Mitakshara law to dispose of his own share. To an English lawyer the existence of such a right would seem obvious. Under the early Hindu law it is equally certain that no such right existed. It has become thoroughly established in Bengal, as will be seen hereafter; but in the other provinces there is a complete variance as to its existence, and the extent to which it may be exercised. The theory of the Mitakshara law is clearly against such a right. I have already pointed out (§ 246) that under that law all the coparceners are joint owners of the property, but only as members of a corporation in which

Right of coparcener to dispose of his share.

(*h*) *Cavalry Vencata v. Collector of Masulipatam*, 11 M. I. A. 619, 633; S. C. 2 Suth. (P. C.) 61.

(*i*) A son does not by the mere absence of his father acquire the powers of alienation or mortgage vested in the managing member. *Patil Hari v. Hakamchand*, 10 Bom. 363. See as to the powers of alienation possessed by the Karna-ven of a Malabar Tarwad. *Kombi v. Lakshmi*, 5 Mad. 201; *Kalliyani v. Narayana*, 9 Mad. 266.



there are shareholders, but no shares. The family corporation remains unchanged, but its members are in a continual state of flux. No one has any share until partition, because until then it is impossible to say what the share of each may be. It will be larger one day, when a member dies; smaller the next, when a member is born (*k*). The right of the members to a partition has been slowly and reluctantly admitted. But this right carries with it the consequence of being cut off from the benefits of sharing in the family property, and participating in its future gains. If any member were allowed, from time to time, to sell his share in the joint family property, without severing himself from the family by partition, he would be securing the advantages of a division without submitting to its inconveniences. He would be benefiting himself by the exclusive appropriation of a part of the property which had never become his. He would be injuring the family by diminishing their estate, and, at the same time, he would be retaining the right to profit by the future gains of their industry. No doubt the amount so disposed of might be taken into account in the event of a subsequent partition. But the rules of Hindu law contemplate the continuance of the family union, not its disruption. Until a partition took place he would have been in a position of exceptional advantage. It would be like the case of a partner who claimed the right to withdraw his capital from the concern at pleasure, without withdrawing himself. Even before partition such alienations would be subversive of the family system. That system assumes that each member of the family is supplied out of its funds in proportion to his requirements, as often as they arise, the unspent balance of each year being carried over to the capital for the benefit of all. There is no such thing as a system of individual accounting, with a ledger opened in the name of each member, and a debiting to him of his expenses, and a crediting of his proportion of the

(*k*) See *per curiam*, *Sadabart Prasad v. Foolbash Kooer*, 3 B. L. R. (F. B.) 44; S. C. 12 Suth. (F. B.) 1.

income. But if any member were allowed to dispose of his share, such a system would be necessary; and upon taking the annual account, it might turn out that the amount of income to which he was entitled was not sufficient to defray his expenses. The anomaly would then arise, that a member of the undivided family would either not be entitled to be maintained at all, or would be maintained as a matter of charity, and not of right. Finally, the permission to alienate without a partition would necessarily have the effect of introducing strangers into the coparcenary, without the consent of its members, and defeating the right of survivorship, which they would otherwise possess.

Rights of coparcener in joint property.

§ 328. Of course, nothing is to be found in the earlier writers upon the subject. They did not notice the point, because such an occurrence did not present itself to their minds at all. An alienation of family property, even with the consent of all, was probably a very rare event. But as property began more frequently to pass from hand to hand, the circumstances which would justify an alienation began to be defined. *Vyasa* says, "A single parcener ought not, without the consent of his coparceners, to sell or give away immovable property of any sort, which the family hold in coparcenary. But at a time of distress, for the support of his household, and particularly for the performance of religious duties, even a single coparcener may give, mortgage or sell the immovable estate" (l). Not, be it observed, his own share for his own private benefit. So *Narada* mentions joint property among the eight kinds of things that may not be given, though he expressly authorizes divided brothers to dispose of their shares as they like (m). And the author of the *Vivada Chintamani*, while commenting on, and approving, these texts, gives as his reason, "for none has any right over them according to common sense." He adds in another passage: "What belongs to many may be

His power of alienation.

(l) 1 Dig. 455; 2 Dig. 189.

(m) *Narada*, Pt. II. iv. § 4, 5; xiii. § 42—43; acc. *Vrihaspati*, 2 Dig. 98; *Dacsha*, *ib.* 110.

Power to dispose  
of share.

given with their assent. Joint ancestral property may be given with the assent of all the heirs" (n). Probably all these passages referred to the powers of the father or manager. The Mitakshara and Mayukha in laying down the right of alienation are evidently dealing with the case of the father as representing the entire family (o). The idea of any individual acting solely on his own account does not seem to have occurred to them. The same view is laid down unhesitatingly by Mr. W. MacNaghten. He says, "A coparcener is prohibited from disposing of his own share of joint ancestral property; and such an act where the doctrine of the Mitakshara prevails (which does not recognize any several right until after partition, or the principle of *factum valet*), would unquestionably be both illegal and invalid" (p). On the other hand, Mr. Ellis, writing of the Madras Presidency, thought a sale would be valid to the extent of the alienor's own share (q). Mr. Colebrooke seems to have been in much uncertainty upon the point. The result of his various opinions appears to be, that a gift by one co-heir of his own share would be certainly invalid, and that a sale or mortgage would in strictness be also illegal; but that in the latter case "equity would require redress to be afforded to the purchaser, by enforcing partition of the whole or of a sufficient portion of it, so as to make amends to the purchaser out of the vendor's share" (r). This opinion was adopted by Sir Thomas Strange in his book, and acted on by him from the Bench (s).

§ 329. It is probable that the first inroad upon the strict law took place in enforcing debts by way of execution. In strict logic, of course, what a man cannot do directly by way of sale, he ought not to be allowed to do indirectly through the intervention of a decree-holder. But we have already

Vivada Chintamani, pp. 72, 77.

(o) Mitakshara, i. 1, § 27—32; V. May., iv. 1, § 3—5.

(p) 1 W. MacN. 5.

(q) 2 Stra. H. L. 350.

(r) 2 Stra. H. L. 344, 349, 433, 439.

(s) 1 Stra. H. L. 200—202; *Sashachella v. Ramasamy*, 2 N. C. 234 [74]; *post*, § 331.

seen that the Hindu law ascribed great sanctity to the obligation of a debt, and, in the case of a father, enabled him to defeat the rights of his sons, through the medium of his creditors, though it denied him the power to do so by an express alienation (§ 278). It would be a natural transition to extend this principle to all coparceners, so far as to allow a creditor to seize the interest of any one in the joint property as a satisfaction of his separate debt. There are decisions in which it has been held that even this cannot be allowed in cases under the Mitakshara law (*t*). But the contrary rule has been repeatedly laid down in all the Presidencies, and has been recently affirmed by the Privy Council. It may be taken as settled that under a decree against any individual coparcener, for his separate debt, a creditor may during the life of the debtor seize and sell his undivided interest in the family property (*u*). The decisions which show that this cannot be done after the death of the debtor have been already stated (§ 305). There may be greater difficulty in determining how the right of the purchaser at the sale under the decree is actually to be enforced. In Bengal, where the coparceners hold in quasi-severalty, each member has a right before partition to mark out his own share, and to hold it to the exclusion of the others. Accordingly, it has been held that the purchaser at a Court sale of the rights of one member is entitled to be put into physical possession even of a part of the family house; the only remedy of the other members being to purchase the rights of the debtor at the auction sale (*v*). But it is other-

Share may be seized in execution.

Right of purchaser.

(*t*) *Nana Tooljaram v. Wulubdas*, Morris, 40; *Bhyro Pershad v. Basisto*, 16 Suth. 31.

(*u*) *Valayooda v. Chedumbara*, Mad. Dec. of 1855, 234; *Subbarayudu v. Gopavajjulu*, Mad. Dec. of 1860, 247; *Virasvami v. Ayyasvami*, 1 Mad. H. C. 471; *Vasudev v. Venkatesh*, 10 Bom. H. C. 139; *Pandurang v. Bhaskar*, 11 Bom. H. C. 72; *Udaram v. Ranu*, *ib.* 76; *Gour Pershad v. Sheodeen*, 4 N.-W.P. 137; *Deendyal v. Jugdeep*, 4 I. A. 247; S. C. 3 Cal 198; overruling *Jugdeep v. Deendial*, 12 B. L. R. 100; S. C. 20 Suth. 174; *Venkataramayyan v. Venkatasubramania*, 1 Mad. 358; *Suraj Bunsu Koer v. Sheo Proshad*, 6 I. A. 88; S. C. 5 Cal. 148; *Jallidar v. Ramlal*, 4 Cal. 723; *Rai Narain v. Nownit*, 4 Cal. 809. The purchaser does not become a coparcener whose assent is required to any future dealings with the property by the remaining members; *Ballabh v. Sunder*, 1 All. 429; *Ganraj v. Sheozore*, 2 All. 898.

(*v*) *Ramtonoo v. Ishurchunder*, S. D. of 1857, 1585; *Koonwur v. Shama Soonduree*, 2 Suth. (Mis.) 30; *Eshan Chunder v. Nund Coomar*, 8 Suth. 239.

Right of execution creditor.

wise in cases under Mitakshara law, where no member has a right, without express agreement, to say that any specific portion is exclusively his. Consequently, the purchaser at a Court auction cannot claim to be put into possession of any definite piece of property (*w*). As the Judicial Committee said in one case, "No doubt can be entertained that such a share is property, and that a decree-holder can reap it. It is specific, existing and definite; but it is not properly the subject of seizure under this particular process, but rather by process direct against the owner of it, by seizure, or sequestration, or appointment of a receiver" (*x*). In cases which have occurred in Bombay, the High Court has held that the only mode in which the execution purchaser can enforce his rights is by a suit for a partition of the debtor's share in the whole estate, to which, of course, he must make all the members of the family parties. In carrying out the decree for partition, the Court will, as far as they can with regard to the interests of others, try to award to the purchaser any specific portion which the debtor may have originally pledged, mortgaged, or sold. The purchaser cannot sue for a partition of part of the property only, because an account of the whole estate must be taken, in order to see what interest, if any, the debtor possesses (*y*). On the other hand, even prior to partition, the purchaser of the interests of one coparcener is a tenant in common with the others. Therefore, if he has got into possession of what was formerly enjoyed by the debtor, the other members cannot treat him as a mere trespasser. If they are willing to continue the tenancy in common, they may compel him so to enjoy his share as not to interfere with a similar enjoyment by themselves. If they object to the tenancy in common, they must sue for a partition (*z*).

(*w*) *Kalee v. Choitun*, 22 Suth. 214; *Kallapa v. Venkatesh*, 2 Bom. 676

(*x*) *Syud Tuffuzzool v. Rughoonath*, 14 M. J. A. 50.

(*y*) *Pandurang v. Bhaskar*, 11 Bom. H. C. 72; *Udaram v. Ranu*, *ib.* 76; *acc. Lall Jha v. Juma*, 22 Suth. 116; *Jallidar v. Ramlal*, 4 Cal. 723; *Maruti v. Lilachand*, 6 Bom. 564; *Venkatarama v. Meera Labai*, 13 Mad. 275.

(*z*) *Mahabulaya v. Timaya*, 12 Bom. H. C. 138; *Babaji v. Vasudev*, 1 Bom. 95; *Kallapa v. Venkatesh*, 2 Bom. 676; *Patil Hari v. Hakamchand*, 10 Bom. 363. See *post*, § 452.



§ 330. The step from holding that the share of one member can be sold under a decree, to holding that he can sell it himself, is such an easy one, that it is surprising that those who admit the former right should deny the other. Yet it will be found that it is denied by the High Courts of Bengal and the North-West Provinces, while it is admitted by the High Courts of Madras and Bombay. The reason appears to be that in Bengal the right of even an execution creditor was originally not admitted. It was denied in 1871 in a decision which was not appealed against (a), and was only finally established by the Privy Council in an appeal which reversed a later decision of 1873 (b). Consequently, an unbroken current of decisions maintained a practice in conformity with the theory. In Madras and Bombay the earlier decisions negatived the right of a coparcener to alien his share. But the right of the execution creditor was admitted, and therefore the analogous right of the coparcener was ultimately recognized. As the question may still be treated as uncertain, it will be advisable to show rather fully what the state of the authorities really is.

Conflict of authority as to voluntary alienation.

Bengal.

§ 331. The earliest case actually decided in Madras was one before Sir *Thomas Strange* in 1813. There, one of two undivided brothers had mortgaged family property for his private purposes. A suit was first brought by the other brother to declare that the mortgage was not binding upon his share of the property. In this suit an account and partition was decreed. A cross suit was brought by the mortgagee against both brothers for payment and sale of the property mortgaged. The decree was that the suit should be dismissed against the second brother, that the share of the mortgagor should be held bound for payment of whatever was due upon the mortgage, but that no part of the property comprised in the bond and mortgage should be sold, until the account and partition directed under the original decree

Madras.

(a) *Bhyro Pershad v. Basisto*, 16 Suth. 31.

(b) *Deendyal v. Jugdeep*, 4 I. A. 217 ; S. C. 3 Cal. 198.

Alienation of  
share.

was completed. These proceedings were submitted to Mr. Colebrooke, and were approved of by him, subject to a doubt whether the charge was valid even for the share of the alienor (c). In a case in 1853 the Madras Sudr Court appears to have held a sale by one of several members to be valid for his share, even without a partition (d). On the other hand, the opinion of a pandit of the Tellicherry Court is recorded, which supports the doubt expressed by Mr. Colebrooke. In reply to a question, "Can one of an undivided family, consisting of two only, dispose of half the property, leaving his coparcener's moiety undisturbed?" he answered: "It is stated in the text of *Narada* that it is necessary that a division should be previously made, with the concurrence of all the members; wherefore the disposing to the extent of one's share at discretion is not legal" (e). This principle was followed by the Sudr Court in three cases in 1859 and 1860, when they held that a sale by an undivided member was not valid, even within the limits of his individual share, unless made under emergent circumstances (f).

Sanction by  
High Court of  
Madras.

§ 332. In this state of things the question came before the High Court of Madras. One of two brothers, members of an undivided family, had mortgaged one of two houses which formed part of the family property, for his own personal debt. He was then sued in an action for damages for a tort, and judgment was recovered against him. The judgment creditor took out execution, and, under a writ of *fi. fa.*, the Sheriff seized and sold the debtor's interest in the mortgaged house and also in another. The purchaser sued both brothers to recover possession. *Scotland, C. J.*, decided that both the mortgage and the execution stood on the same footing; that each was valid to the extent of the alienor's share, and that "What the purchaser or execution creditor of the copar-

(c) *Ramasamy v. Sashachella*, 5 N. C. 234, 240 [74].

(d) *Chinnapiel v. Chocken*, Mad. Dec. 1853, 220.

(e) 2 Strn. H. L. 451.

(f) *Ramakutti v. Kallaturaiyan*, Mad. Dec. of 1859, 270; *Kanakasabhaiya v. Seshachala*, Mad. Dec. of 1860, 17; *Sundara v. Tegaraja*, *ib.* 67.

cener is entitled to is the share to which, if a partition took place, the coparcener himself would be individually entitled, the amount of such share, of course, depending upon the state of the family" (g). This decision has since been treated as the ruling authority in Madras, and has been repeatedly followed (h). And the Court enjoined a father against alienating more than his share of the undivided property, but refused to interfere with alienations which appeared to be within his share (i). In all these cases the transaction was enforced during the life of the alienor, and the principle was stated to be, that as the alienor could himself have obtained a partition, the Court would compel him "to give to his creditor all the remedies to which he would himself be entitled as against the object matter of his agreement" (k). The same ruling was applied where a partition had become impossible by death. There, a father had given a portion of the property which was less than half of the whole to his wife, by a registered deed followed by possession. After his death, his only son sued to set it aside. The Court refused even to listen to discussion as to the father's power to make such a gift; "because the law is quite settled that a Hindu can make a gift to the extent of his power, and in this case the deceased has done no more than that" (l). This case has, however, been recently overruled on the principle that the equity to enforce a partition which exists in favour of a purchaser for value cannot arise in favour of a mere donee (m). On the other hand, the High Court held that no coparcener could give his alienee a title to any

Extent of power.

(g) *Virasvami v. Ayyasvami*, 1 Mad. H. C. 471, acc. Transfer of Property Act, (IV of 1882) § 44, but if the transferee of a share of a dwelling-house belonging to an undivided family is a stranger, he will not be entitled to any joint possession or enjoyment of such house.

(h) *Peddammuthulaty v. Timma Reddy*, 2 Mad. H. C. 270; *Palanivelappa v. Mannaru*, ib. 416; *Rayacharlu v. Venkataramaniah*, 4 Mad. H. C. 60. For instance one of several coparceners may renounce his share in favour of another. *Peddayya v. Ramalingam*, 11 Mad. 406. No such right of alienation exists under Malabar law, where no partition is allowed. *Byari v. Puttanna*, 14 Mad. 38.

(i) *Kanukurty v. Venkataramdass*, 4 Mad. Jur. 251.

(k) 2 Mad. H. C. 417; ante, note (h).

(l) *Venkatapathy v. Lutchmee*, 6 Mad. Jur. 215.

(m) *Baba v. Timma*, 7 Mad. 357; *Ponnuusami v. Thattha*, 9 Mad. 273; *Ramanna v. Venkata*, 11 Mad. 246.

specific portion of the joint property, even though such portion was less than his share. Each coparcener had an undivided share in every part of the property, and all that any member could sell was his interest in that part (n).

Devise of undivided share invalid.

§ 333. The above decisions were all passed before that given by the Full Bench in Bengal, which will be mentioned hereafter (§ 337). The same point, however, arose again after that decision. The question was, whether a devise by a father of ancestral immovable property was valid as against his only son. It was contended; *first*, that the father could, during his life, have given away his share of the family property; *secondly*, that his devise was valid to the same extent as his gift would have been. The Court admitted the first proposition, but denied the second. After referring to the view taken by the High Court of Bengal that no one could assign his share until it was ascertained by a partition, the Court said, "If by the word 'share' is intended specific share, the argument is, of course, valid, that a coparcener cannot, before partition, convey his share to another, because before partition it cannot be ascertained what it is. It is equally the law in Madras that a coparcener cannot, before partition, convey away, as his interest, any specific portion of the joint property. Considered in this light, the difficulties which have influenced the Calcutta High Court disappear. The person in whose favour a conveyance is made of a coparcener's interest takes what may, on a partition, be found to be the interest of the coparcener. What he so takes is, at the moment of taking, and until ascertained and severed, subject to the same fluctuations as it would be subject to, if it continued to subsist as the interest of the coparcener. But it can, at the proper period, be ascertained without difficulty, and there appears to be no reason, either derived from the Hindu law current in this Presidency, or founded upon general principles, for saying that such an interest is inalienable. With regard to the

---

(n) *Venkatachella v. Chinnaiya*, 5 Mad. H. C. 166.

third question we are of opinion that the will in the case referred to cannot take effect. At the moment of death, the right of survivorship is in conflict with the right by devise. Then the title by survivorship, being the prior title, takes precedence to the exclusion of that by devise (o)."

§ 334. In Bombay the decisions have taken very much the same course as in Madras. The earlier cases appear to be opposed to the right of alienation by a coparcener, and it has been laid down that a sale or mortgage by one of two undivided brothers was invalid, even for his own share of the undivided property (p). "In subsequent cases it appears that the Bombay Sudder Adawlut, although holding that the purchaser of the share of a parcener in Hindu family property cannot before partition sue for possession of any particular part of that property, or predicate that it belongs to him exclusively, yet was of opinion that he may maintain a suit for partition, and thus obtain the share which he has purchased" (q). The Supreme Court, and subsequently the High Court, recognized the right of an undivided member to sell or mortgage his undivided share, and the usage that he should do so. The whole of the previous cases are collected in an elaborate judgment pronounced by *Westropp*, C. J., in 1873 (r). He admitted that the strict law of the Mitakshara, and the usage following it in Mithila and Benares, was in accordance with the law laid down by the Full Court of Bengal, but stated that the opposite practice had prevailed in Western India. He concluded his review of the authorities by saying, "On the principle *stare decisis*, which induced Sir *Barnes Peacock* and his colleagues strictly to adhere to the anti-alienation doctrine of the Mitakshara in the provinces subject to their jurisdiction where the

Bombay  
decisions.

Coheir may sell  
his share,

(o) *Vitla Butten v. Yamenamma*, 8 Mad. H. C. 6.

(p) *Bullojee v. Venkapa*, Bom. Sel. Rep. 216; *Bajee v. Pandurang*, Morris, Pt. II. '93. But see the *futwah* in Bom. Sel. Rep. 42, which seems to admit the right.

(q) *Per curiam*, *Vasudev v. Venkatesh*, 10 Bom. H. C., p. 156, where the cases are cited.

(r) *Vasudev v. Venkatesh*, 10 Bom. H. C. 139, followed *Fakirapa v. Chanapa*, ib. 162, (F. B.)



authority of that treatise prevails, we at this side of India find ourselves compelled to depart from that doctrine, so far as it denies the right of a Hindu parcener, for valuable consideration, to sell, incumber, or otherwise alien his share in undivided family property. The foregoing authorities lead us to the conclusion that it must be regarded as the settled law of this Presidency, not only that one of several coparceners in a Hindu family may, before partition, and without the assent of his coparceners, sell, mortgage, or otherwise alien, for valuable consideration, his share in the undivided family estate, movable or immovable, but also that such a share may be taken in execution under a judgment against him at the suit of his personal creditor. Were we to hold otherwise, we should undermine many titles which rest upon the course of decision, that, for a long period of time, the Courts at this side of India have steadily taken. Stability of decision is, in our estimation, of far greater importance than a deviation from the special doctrine of the Mitakshara upon the right of alienation."

The mode in which the Bombay Court enforces this right is by a decree for an account and partition, as already stated (s).

but not give or  
devise it.

§ 335. The Bombay High Court, however, while favouring the rights of a purchaser for value, show no indulgence to a volunteer; they hold that an undivided coparcener cannot make a gift of his share, or dispose of it by will (t). In both points they agree with the High Court of Madras, no doubt on the ground, that in the case of a gift there is no equity upon which a decree for partition would depend. The High Court, however, put their decision upon the simple ground that they were not disposed to carry the assignability of the share of a coparcener in undivided family property

*Ante*, § 329.

(t) *Gangubai v. Ramanna*, 3 Bom. H. C. (A. C. J.) 66; *Tukaram v. Ramchandra*, 6 Bom. H. C. (A. C. J.) 249; *Udaram v. Ranu*, 11 Bom. H. C. 76; *Vrandavandas v. Yamuna*, 12 Bom. H. C. 229.

any father than they felt compelled to do by the precedents referred to, and by the traditions of the Supreme Court and Sudder Adawlut in the Bombay Presidency (*u*). No decision has as yet been given by the Privy Council as to the validity of a gift of his share by a coparcener, though the leaning of their Lordships' minds seems rather to be against it (*v*).

§ 336. If, as the Courts of Madras and Bombay lay down, the rights of a purchaser from a coparcener can only be worked out by means of a partition, a further question arises, what date must be taken as fixing the amount of interest he possesses in the family property? For instance, suppose one of two brothers grants a mortgage upon the family property for his own private benefit, and the transaction runs on until after three more brothers are born, and the father is dead, and then the creditor sues to enforce his claim—has he a lien upon one-third of the property, which was the interest of his debtor at the time of the mortgage, or only upon one-fifth, which is his interest at the time of suit? The latter view has been recently taken by the Madras High Court (*w*). Again, how is the claim to be dealt with, where his share has wholly lapsed by survivorship, and partition has become impossible—as in the case of one of several brothers dying without issue? In the present state of the authorities it would be useless to do more than indicate these difficulties.

Extent of share how ascertained.

§ 337. When we come to the Bengal Courts, and that of the North-West Provinces, there is a complete unanimity in affirming the early doctrine. In a Mithila case which was twice referred to the Pandits, on account of a suspicion of the integrity of one of them, they pronounced, "that a gift of joint undivided property, whether real or personal, was not valid, even to the extent of the donor's share; for property cannot be sold or given away until it is defined and

Contrary doctrine in Bengal and N.-W. Provinces.

(*u*) 12 Bom. H. C. 231; *supra*, note (*a*).

(*v*) See *per curiam*, *Lakshman v. Ramchandra*, 7 I. A. 195; S. C. 5 Bom. 48.

(*w*) *Rangasami v. Krishnayan*, 14 Mad. 408.

ascertained, which cannot be done without a division" (x). The same point was expressly decided in other cases from the same district (y). And exactly the same rule was acted on in cases from other districts, which were governed by the Mitakshara (z). In 1869 the question was referred to a Full Bench of the High Court of Bengal in consequence of some conflicting decisions of the High Courts of Madras and Bombay. The whole of the previous decisions and the Native texts were elaborately examined, and the Court replied that in cases governed by Mitakshara law, one sharer had no authority, without the consent of his co-sharers, to dispose of his undivided share, in order to raise money on his own account, and not for the benefit of the family. The Court stated that an opposite conclusion could only be arrived at, "by over-ruling that current of authorities by which, for nearly half a century, the law appears to have been settled, and in accordance with the principles of which it appears to have been generally understood and acted upon" (a). This ruling has, of course, given the law ever since within the jurisdiction of the High Court of Bengal, and would, no doubt, be regarded in the North-West Provinces as the highest confirmation of the previous decisions of that Court (b).

(x) *Nundram v. Kashec*, 3 S. D. 232 (310); S. C. 1 Mor. 17; confirmed, 4 S. D. 70 (89).

(y) *Sheo Churn v. Jummun*, 6 S. D. 176 (214); *Sheo Suhaye v. Sreekishen*, 7 S. D. 105 (123); *Mt. Roopna v. Ray Reotee*, S. D. of 1853, 344; *Jivan v. Ram Govind*, 5 S. D. 163 (193).

(z) *Sheo Surrin v. Sheo Sohail*, 4 S. D. 158 (201), see note; *Cosserat v. Sudaburt*, 3 Suth. 210. See decisions of the Court of the N.-W. P. cited, *Sadabart Prasad v. Foolbash Koer*, 3 B. L. R. (F. B.) p. 42; S. C. 12 Suth. (F. B.) 1; and *Lalti Kuar v. Ganga*, 7 N.-W. P. 277. These decisions have been recently approved and followed by the Allahabad High Court. *Chamaili v. Ram Prasad*, 2 All. 267; *Ramanand v. Gobind Singh*, 5 All. 384. That Court, however, seems to hold that a member of the family who has alienated his own interest cannot object to a similar alienation by another member. *Ganraj v. Sheozore*, 2 All. 898.

(a) *Sadabart Prasad v. Foolbash Kooer*, 3 B. L. R. (F. B.) 31; S. C. 12 Suth. (F. B.) 1.

(b) *Nathu v. Chadi*, 4 B. L. R. (A. C. J.) 15; S. C. 12 Suth. 447; *Sub nomine, Nuthoo v. Chedee*; *Haunman v. Baboo Kishen*, 8 B. L. R. 358; S. C. 15 Suth. (F. B.) 6; *Sub nomine, Honooman v. Bhagbut*; *Phoolbas Kooer v. Lall Juggesur*, 14 Suth. 340; S. C. on review, 18 Suth. 48; reversed on another point, 3 I. A. 7; S. C. 1 Cal. 226; S. C. 25 Suth. 285; *Bunsee Lall v. Shaikh Aoladh*, 22 Suth. 552; *Chunder Coomar v. Hurbuns Sahai*, 16 Cal. 137.

§ 338. Even in Bengal, however, and since the Full Bench decision, the Court has dealt with the equities of the parties in a manner which, under certain circumstances, brings about exactly the same result as is worked out by the Madras and Bombay doctrine (c). In that case, the second defendant, who was father and manager of a family governed by the Mitakshara, mortgaged the family property to the first defendant for a purpose not legally justifiable. The elder son sued on his own behalf, and on that of a minor son, to set aside the deed. The Court found that the plaintiff had assented to the transaction, consequently, only the interest of the minor was concerned. It did not appear that he had been in any way benefited. The Court, after observing that the result of setting aside the sale unconditionally would be "that the property, on going back, will come to be enjoyed by the joint family as it was before the mortgage and sale; and of necessity, by virtue of the provisions of the Mitakshara law, will return to the management of the very man (second defendant) who obtained Rs. 3,000 from the first defendant on the pretended security afforded by the mortgage, which did not seem to accord very well with equity and good conscience;" also that the Full Bench decision, which settled (3 B. L. R. (F. B.) 31; S. C. 12 Suth. (F. B.) 1) that such a deed might be set aside, refrained from saying on what terms such relief was to be granted, proceeded to point out that the father might, at any moment, claim a partition. "And plainly the first defendant is in equity entitled as against the father to insist upon his calling his share into being, and realising it for their benefit. He obtained their money by representing that he had a power to charge the joint family property, which he knew at the time he did

Equities in  
favour of  
alienee,

enforced by  
partition.

---

(c) *Mahabeer Persad v. Ramyad*, 12 B. L. R. 90; S. C. 20 Suth. 192. See *Udaram v. Ranu*, 11 Bom. H. C. 76. In no case can any right to set aside a sale upon any terms be enforced, where the member who claims the right is under any disability which would be a bar to a suit by himself for partition. *Ram Sahye v. Lalla Laljee*, 8 Cal. 149; *Ram Soonder v. Ram Sahye*, *ibid.* 919. Such a right is personal, and does not survive in favour of the heir of a person who has commenced a suit to set aside an alienation, and then died. *Padarath Singh v. Rajaram*, 4 All. 235.

not possess : he is, therefore, at least bound to make good to them that representation, so far as he can, by the exercise of such proprietary right over the same property as he individually possesses. Substantially the same reasoning applies to the eldest son (plaintiff), who aided his father in effecting the mortgage. On the whole, then, we are of opinion that a decree ought to be given to the plaintiffs to the effect that the property be recovered by the plaintiffs for the joint family, but that this decree must be accompanied by a declaration that on recovery, the property be held and enjoyed by the family in defined shares *viz.*, one-third belonging to the father (second defendant), one-third to the eldest son (the plaintiff), and one third to the second son, a minor ; and that it be also declared that the shares of the father and of the eldest son be jointly and severally subject to the lien thereon of the first defendant for the repayment of the sum of Rs. 3,000 advanced by the first defendant to the second defendant, and interest thereon at six per cent. from the date of the loan until repayment."

Judicial Committee.

Upon this decision the Judicial Committee remarked (d), "There appears to be little substantially different between the law thus enunciated and that which has been established at Madras and Bombay ; except that the application of the former may depend upon the view the Judges may take of the equities of the particular case ; whereas the latter establishes a broad and general rule defining the right of the creditor." In no case, however, can such an equity be enforced where the coparcener, who made the alienation is dead. Immediately on this event his share passes by survivorship to persons who are not liable for the debts and obligations of the deceased (e).

§ 339. The question now discussed has never come before the Privy Council in such a form as to require decision after formal argument. In the case of *Bhugwandeem v.*

(d) *Deendyal v. Jugdeep*, 4 I. A. 255 ; S. C. 3 Cal. 198.

(e) *Madho Pershad v. Mehrban Singh*, 17 I. A. 194 ; S. C. 18 Cal. 157.



*Myna Bae* (*f*), there is a *dictum* that “between coparceners there can be no alienation by one without the consent of the others.” In another case, where one of several joint proprietors had mortgaged his share, the Court said, “The sharers, however, do not appear to have been members of a joint and undivided Hindu family, but to have enjoyed their respective shares in severalty. It is, therefore, clear that the mortgagor had power to pledge his own undivided share in these villages” (*g*). On the other hand, in cases where the point was directly taken, but unnecessary to be decided, the Judicial Committee treated it as still doubtful (*h*). In a later case where the point arose the Judicial Committee appear to treat the law in Madras and Bombay as being settled in the manner above stated, while they treated the contrary ruling of the Bengal Courts as a matter still open to doubt in cases within their jurisdiction (*i*). Still more recently the Committee accepted the view of the Bengal and N.-W. Provinces Courts in a case in which it was conceded that their decisions were binding in the districts governed by them (*k*).

§ 340. The remedies possessed by one member of a family against alienations made by another member, depend, of course, upon the view taken by the Courts of the validity of such alienations. According to the law administered in Madras and Bombay, such alienations, whatever they may profess to convey, are valid to the extent of the alienor's own interest in the property. Hence, no suit could be maintained for the absolute cancelment of such an alienation, still less for recovery of the whole property, on the ground that the illegal alienation by the father or other member had given the plaintiff the right to seek possession for him-

Remedies  
against alien-  
ation.

(*f*) 11 M. I. A. at p. 516; S. C. 9 Suth. (P. C.) 23.

(*g*) *Byjnath v. Ramooddeen*, 1 I. A. at p. 119; S. C. 21 Suth. 233.

(*h*) *Girdharee Lall v. Kantoo Lall*, 1 I. A. at p. 329; S. C. 14 B. L. R. 187; S. C. 22 Suth. 56; *Phoolbas Koonwur v. Lalla Jogeshur*, 3 I. A. at p. 27; S. C. 1 Cal. 226; S. C. 25 Suth. 285; *Deendyal v. Jugdeep*, 4 I. A. at p. 252; S. C. 3 Cal. 198.

(*i*) *Suraj Bunsu Koer v. Sheo Proshad*, 6 I. A. 88; S. O. 5 Cal. 148.

(*k*) *Madho Pershad v. Mehrban Singh*, 17 I. A. 194; S. C. 18 Cal. 157.

self. But when the alienee takes exclusive possession of any specific portion of the joint property, he will be liable to be turned out at the suit of the other coparceners ; for till partition each has an undivided interest in the whole, and, of course, the vendee, claiming under one co-sharer, cannot be in a better position than the person under whom he claims (*l*). And even where there has been no dispossession ; if one member of an undivided family has, by gift, mortgage, alienation, or devise, disposed of the family property to a greater extent than the law entitles him to do, the other members have a right to have the transaction declared illegal, and set aside so far as it is illegal (*m*). And in such a suit the alienation would be set aside, wholly or in part, according as the doctrine of Bengal or Madras and Bombay was held to govern the case. *A fortiori*, a sale which was an absolute fraud upon the family, and known by the purchaser to be such, would be rescinded by all the Courts, as the equity by means of which it can be worked out, would absolutely fail (*n*).

#### Not forfeiture.

Even according to the rules laid down by the Bengal Courts, a son is not entitled upon proof of alienation by his father, to apply to have his own name substituted on the registry in place of his father's name, and to have his own exclusive possession and ownership decreed, in place of that previously existing in the head of the family (*o*). But he is entitled to sue for possession of the whole property on behalf of the undivided family, although that whole includes the share of the person who makes the alienation, leaving the purchaser to take proceedings to ascertain that share by partition (*p*).

(*l*) *Venkatachella v. Chinnaiya*, 5 Mad. H. C. 166 ; *ante*, § 275.

(*m*) *Kanukurty v. Vencaturamdass*, 4 Mad. Jur. 251 ; *Kanth Narain v. Prem Lal*, 3 Suth. 102 ; *Raja Ram Tewary v. Luchmun*, 8 Suth. 16 ; *Retoo v. Lalljee*, 24 Suth. 399 ; *Chinna Sunyasi v. Suriya*, 5 Mad. 196. As to declaratory decrees, see *Dorasinga v. Katama Nachiar*, 2 I. A. 169 ; S. C. 15 B. L. R. 83 ; S. C. 23 Suth. 314. As to the period of limitation, see Act XV of 1877, Sched. II. § 126 ; *Raja Ram Tewary v. Luchmun Pershad*, *ub. sup.*

(*n*) *Ravji v. Gangadharbhat*, 4 Bom. 29 ; *Sadashiv v. Dhakubai*, 5 Bom. 450.

(*o*) *Chutter v. Bikaoo*, S. D. of 1850, 282 ; *Kanth Narain v. Prem Lal*, 3 Suth. 102. See cases in N.-W. P. cited, *Lalti Kuar v. Ganga*, 7 N.-W. P. 277.

(*p*) *Hannman v. Baboo Kishen*, 8 B. L. R. 358 ; S. C. 15 Suth. (F. B.) 6 ;

§ 341. It does not, however, follow that any member of the family can set aside such alienations unconditionally. The rule is that the party setting aside the sale must make good to the purchaser the amount he has paid, so far as that amount has benefited himself, either by entering into the joint assets, or from having been applied in paying off charges upon the property which would have been a lien upon it in his hands. In the leading case in Bengal (g) the following question was referred to a Full Bench Court, "Whether under the Mitakshara law, a son who recovers his ancestral estate from a purchaser from the father, on proof that there was no such necessity as would legalise the sale, and that he never acquiesced in the alienation, is bound in equity to refund the purchase money before recovering possession of the alienated property?" *Peacock, C. J.*, replied that "in the absence of proof of circumstances which would give the purchaser an equitable right to compel a refund from the son, the latter would be entitled to recover without refunding the purchase money or any part of it. We ought to add that if it is proved to the satisfaction of the Court that the purchase money was carried to the assets of the joint estate, and that the son had the benefit of his share of it, he could not recover his share of the estate without refunding his share of the purchase money; so if it should be proved that the sale was effected for the purpose of paying off a valid incumbrance on the estate which was binding upon the son, and the purchase money was employed in freeing the estate from the incumbrance, the purchaser would be entitled to stand in the place of the incumbrancer, notwithstanding the incumbrance might be such that the incumbrancer could not have compelled the immediate discharge of it, and that the decree for the

Equities on setting aside alienation.

---

*Deendial v. Jugdeep Narain*, 4 I. A. 247; S. C. 3 Cal 198; *Hurday Narain v. Rooder Perkash*, 11 I. A. 26; S. C. 10 Cal. 626. See as to the right of any one to sue in respect of his own share, *Phoolbas Kooer v. Lalla Juggessur*, 18 Suth. 48.

(g) *Modhoo v. Kolbur*, B. L. R. Sup. Vol. 1018; S. C. 9 Suth. 511, followed in *Hannuman v. Baboo Kishen*, 8 B. L. R. 358; S. C. 15 Suth. (F. B.) 6; *Makundi v. Sarabsukh*, 6 All. 417; *Ajit Singh v. Bijai Bahadur*, 11 I. A. 211; cf. *Wenlock v. River*, Dec. Co., 19 Q. B. D. 155.

Equities on  
setting aside  
alienation.

recovery by the son of the ancestral property, or of his share of it, as the case might be, would be good; but should be subject to such right of the purchaser to stand in the place of the incumbrancer. It appears to me, however, that the *onus* lies upon the defendant to show that the purchase money was so applied. I do not concur with the decision which has been referred to (r), in which it is said that "in the absence of evidence to the contrary, it must be assumed that the price received by the father became a part of the assets of the joint family." If the father was not entitled to raise the money by sale of the estate, and the son is entitled to set aside that sale, the *onus* lies on the person who contends that the son is bound to refund the purchase money before he can recover the estate, to show that the son had the benefit of his share of that purchase money. If it should appear that he consented to take the benefit of the purchase money with a knowledge of the facts, it would be evidence of his acquiescence in the sale" (s).

§ 342. The doctrine laid down by the High Court of Bengal in the above case is still good law where the alienation is made by a coparcener other than a father, and is complained of by coparceners who are not his sons. But under the actual facts of that case, and since the decision in *Girdhari Lall v. Kantoo Lall*, (§ 285) the ruling to be applied would now be different. If the alienation were made for an antecedent debt, it would be absolutely binding on the sons. If it were not made for an antecedent debt the sons could only set it aside on paying the full purchase money, this being a debt for which their father would be liable to the purchaser as for failure of consideration on the sale being cancelled, and for which in consequence they and their share of the property would be ultimately responsible. If the property sold was not more than would fall to the father on partition, it would be open to the

---

(r) *Muddun Gopal v. Ram Buksh*, 6 Suth. 71.

(s) *Acc. Gangabai v. Vamanaji*, 2 Bom. H. C. 318.

Court to award it at once to the purchaser as his share, free of all claims and equities from the sons (*t*)

§ 343. When the sale was made to discharge the personal debt of the alienor, it was considered that there was no equity to refund the purchase money, on setting aside the sale. Nor did it make any difference that the defendant was an innocent purchaser for value at an auction. He had every opportunity of making enquiry, and must have known the extreme danger of purchasing an interest which had been originally bought from a single member of a joint undivided family living under the Mitakshara law (*u*). So, the value of improvements made by one who has purchased with knowledge of fraud, or after such fraud has come to his knowledge, cannot be recovered. But I apprehend it would be different where the sale was merely set aside as being beyond the powers of the vendor (*v*).

for personal  
debt of coheir

§ 344. An intermediate case is where the sale of the whole property is not justifiable, but a sale of part would have been justifiable, or where part of the consideration was applied to purposes so beneficial to the family, that in respect of it an equity arises in favour of the purchaser as against a member of the family seeking to set aside the transaction. In one case (*w*) the suit was by a son to set aside a conditional deed of sale executed by his father and his father's brother, so far as it affected his father's moiety of the property. It appeared that the deed was executed upon a loan of money, part of which was properly borrowed on grounds of legal necessity, while the remainder was not. The principal Sudr Amin treated the deed as valid in respect of a portion of the land in proportion to that part of the consideration money which was borrowed for and spent in a matter of legal necessity,

where sale  
party justifi-  
able.

Equities on  
setting aside.

(*t*) *Koer Hasmat v. Sunder Das*, 11 Cal. 396.

(*u*) *Nuthu v. Chadi*, 4 B. L. R. (A. C. J.) 15; S. C. *Sub nomine, Nuthoo v. Chedee*, 12 Suth. 447.

(*v*) *Sadashiv v. Dhakubai*, 5 Bom. 450.

(*w*) *Rajaram Tewar v. Luchmun*, 4 B. L. R. (A. C. J.) 118—125; S. C. 12 Suth. 478.



and void as too the residue of the land conveyed. Sir *Barnes Peacock*, C. J., considered the correctness of this principle to be very doubtful, and intimated that in such a case the more reasonable course would be, that upon the defendant's establishing the necessity for part of the loan, the Court should decree that the deed should be set aside, and the plaintiff recover possession upon his paying the amount which was legally taken up for necessary purposes recognized by law, or that the deed should be set aside in proportion. No decision was given, however, as no relief could be given for want of necessary parties. In some later cases the course adopted was to set aside the deed on payment of so much of the consideration money as was a proper charge upon the estate (x).

#### Laches.

So also, even though the charge has not been created for family purposes, if there are circumstances of laches or acquiescence which would render it inequitable that the deed should be set aside unconditionally, the Court will compel a refund of the purchase money (y).

#### Necessity for offer to refund.

§ 345. In some cases where the Court considered that the plaintiff should have offered to refund the purchase money, and the plaint contained no such offer, the suit was dismissed, the plaintiff being at liberty to bring a fresh suit differently framed (z). This seems to be a mere question of pleading. If, as Sir *Barnes Peacock* said (a), the *onus* lies on the defendant to allege and establish circumstances which entitle him to such repayment, one would imagine that the proper course would be for the plaintiff to claim to have the deed set aside, as not being for a matter of legal necessity or with the consent of the family, and for the defendant to

---

(x) *Shurrut v. Bholanath*, 15 B. L. R. 350; S. C. *Sub nomine, Surat v. Ashootosh*, 24 Suth. 46. See too, the analogous cases of alienations by a widow, *Phoolchund v. Rughoobuns*, 9 Suth. 108; *Mutteeram v. Gopaul*, 11 B. L. R. 416; S. C. 20 Suth. 187; *Konwur v. Ram Chunder*, 4 I. A. 52, 66; S. C. 2 Cal. 341; *Sadashiv v. Dhakubai*, 5 Bom. 450; *Subramania v. Ponnusami*, 8 Mad. 92.

(y) *Surub v. Shew Gobind*, 11 B. L. R. Appx. 29.

(z) *Supra*, note (x) 11 B. L. R. 416; *ib.*, Appx. 29; *Supra*, note (y). See *Durga Prasad v. Nawazish*, 1 All. 591.

(a) *Modhoo v. Kolbur*, B. L. R. Sup. Vol. 1018; S. C. 9 Suth. 511.

get rid of this case, wholly or in part, by showing the circumstances which made out his equity to repayment. Where the plaintiff deliberately elected to rest his case upon an allegation of wasteful and extravagant borrowing, and failed to make out that case, the Court refused to allow him to repay the purchase money, and have the deed cancelled (b).

§ 346. When we come to Bengal law, as laid down by Jimuta Vahana, the whole of the above distinctions at once vanish. I have already (§ 235) pointed out the process by which he got rid of the principle which pervades the Benares law, that property in a son is by birth, and established the opposite principle, that a son is simply heir presumptive to his father, and entitled to nothing more than his father chooses to leave him. This doctrine, in which an admission that alienations by a father of ancestral property were immoral was coupled with an assertion that they were valid, naturally exercised the minds of English lawyers a good deal. They would have accepted the assertion as a matter of course, but they were perplexed by the admission. Accordingly, we find that Mr. W. MacNaghten laid down the law in a way which was really nothing more than the Mitakshara over again, and Sir Hyde East in 1819 took very much the same view (§ 236). The *Futwahs* of the pandits were persistently given in accordance with the doctrines of Jimuta Vahana. But these futwahs appeared to be contradictory, because they were applied to two different states of fact, *viz.*, alienations and distributions. To an English lawyer it seemed obvious, that if a man could give his property to strangers, he could also give it to his sons; and that if he could give everything to one son, to the exclusion of the others, *à fortiori* he could give it to all of them in any proportions he wished. But a Hindu pandit treated one proceeding as an alienation and the other as a partition. He produced one set of texts from Jimuta

Principles of  
Bengal law.

Apparent con-  
tradiction.

---

(b) *Muddun Gopal v. Ram Buksh*, 6 Suth. 74.

Vahana to show that the former proceeding was valid, and another set of texts, also from Jimuta Vahana, to show that the latter was invalid. It is not surprising that there was a good deal of confusion before the law was finally settled. As regards the right of a father in Bengal to make an unequal partition among his sons, it can hardly be said that the law is satisfactorily settled even now.

Alienations by  
father.

§ 347. The earliest reported case is in 1792, when a bequest (c) by the Zemindar of Nuddea of his entire ancestral Zemindary to his eldest son was supported. The document recited that the Zemindary was impartible, in which case, of course, it was unnecessary. The opinions of numerous pandits in different parts of the country are said to have been taken, and the majority of them declared, that whether the Zemindary had been previously exempt from division or not, the gift settling the Zemindary on the eldest son with a provision for the younger ones, was valid. This view was affirmed by the Sudr Court. Mr. Colebrooke appends a note to the case in which he agrees with the pandits' opinion, as being in accordance with the doctrines of Jimuta Vahana. He ends by saying, "No opinion was taken from the law officers of the Sudr Court in this case. But it has been received as a precedent which settles the question of a father's power to make an actual disposition of his property, even contrary to the injunctions of the law, whether by gift or by will, or by distribution of shares" (d). This decision was followed in 1800 by the Supreme Court, which affirmed the validity of the wills of *Rajah Nobkissen* and *Nemy Churn Mullick*, by which ancestral immovable property had been disposed of, in the former case at all events, to the prejudice of the testator's sons (e). And in 1812 the Sudr Court, after consulting their pandits, held that a gift by a father of his whole estate,

---

(c) The document is sometimes spoken of as a will, sometimes as a deed of gift; it seems really to have been the former.

(d) *Eshanchund v. Eshorchund*, 1 S. D. 2. The judgment of the Sudr Court will be found in 2 Stra. H. L. 447.

(e) F. MacN, 856, 840.

real and personal, ancestral and otherwise, to a younger son during the life of the elder was valid, though immoral, the gift of the whole ancestral landed property being forbidden (*f*). In 1816, however, the law was unsettled again by the case of *Bhowanny Churn v. The Heirs of Ramkaunt* (*g*). That case will be discussed more fully hereafter (§ 450), but it is sufficient here to point out, that it was a case where a father had made an unequal partition among his sons. The pandits practically found, that as a partition, it was invalid from its inequality, and that it could not be supported as a gift, because there had been no delivery of possession. The result was that the partition was set aside. The case is followed by an elaborate note in which the opinions of the pandits in this and the two previous cases in the Sudr Court are examined, and the writer intimates that those cases had probably been incorrectly decided, so far as they respect the ancestral immovable estate (*h*). It is evident, however, that the pandits would not have agreed in this view, for we find that in 1821 they pronounced opinions affirming a gift by a father of an ancestral taluq to one of his eleven sons (*i*), and in 1829 they supported a sale by a Zemindar of an ancestral taluq during the life of his son. They laid down the broad principle, "The law as current in Bengal recognizes no proprietary right in the son, so long as that of the father is existent; and therefore in the case stated, as *Ram Shunker's* (the father's) right in the soil, was existent, *Mohun Chund* (the son) could have no claim upon it" (*k*). Finally, in 1831, the same question arose again in the Supreme Court of Bengal, and was referred to the Judges of the Sudr Dewanny, who returned the following certificate: "On

Rights of sons.

(*f*) *Ramkoomar v. Kishenkunker*, 2 S. D. 42 (52); F. MacN. 277.

(*g*) 2 S. D. 202 (259); F. MacN. 283, 294.

(*h*) These conflicting opinions were probably before Sir Hyde East in 1820, when he pronounced his judgment in *Cossinaut Bysack v. Hurroosoondry* (2 M. Dig. 198), where he balances against each other two conflicting sets of texts, with an evident consciousness that he had got into a labyrinth to which he did not possess the clue.

(*i*) *Raujkrisno v. Taraneychurn*, F. MacN. 265, Appx. viii.

(*k*) *Kumla v. Gooroo*, 4 S. D. 322 (410)

mature consideration of the points referred to us, we are unanimously of opinion that the only doctrine that can be held by the Sudr Dewanny Adalut, consistently with the decisions of the Court, and the customs and usages of the people, is, that a Hindu, who has sons, can sell, give, or pledge, without their consent, immovable ancestral property, situated in the province of Bengal; and that without the consent of the sons, he can, by will, prevent, alter or affect their succession to such property" (l). This certificate has ever since been accepted as settling the law in Bengal, on the points to which it refers (m), and it makes no difference that the property is impartible, and descends by the rule of primogeniture (n). Of course there never was any doubt as to the right of a Bengal proprietor to dispose of his property to the prejudice of relations other than his own issue (o), as for instance to deprive his widow of her share on a partition (p).

**Rights of coparceners.**

§ 348. As regards those who are coparceners in Bengal, that is brothers, cousins, or the like, who have taken property jointly by descent, or who have acquired it jointly, there is also no difficulty. In Bengal the right of every coparcener is to a definite share, though to an unascertained portion of the whole property (§ 241). This right passes by inheritance to female or other relations, just as if it were already divided, and it may be disposed of by each male proprietor just as if it were separate or self-acquired property. And such alienations will be taken into account as part of his share in the event of a partition. But, of course, no one can dispose of more than his share, unless by consent

(l) *Juggomohun v. Neemoo*, Morton, 90; *Motee Lal v. Mitterjeet*, 6 S. D. 73 (85). A note follows that this certificate overrules the case of *Bhowanny Churn*. It really did nothing of the sort.

(m) See *per curiam*, *Ramkishore v. Bhoobunmoyee*, S. D. of 1859, 250; S. C. *affd.* on review, S. D. of 1860. i. 489.

(n) *Uddoy v. Jadublal*, 5 Cal, 113; *Narain v. Lokenath*, 7 Cal 461.

(o) F. MacN. 360; *Bhowanee v. Mt. Taramunee*, 3 S. D. 138 (184); *Sheodas v. Kunwul*, 3 S. D. 234 (313), *Tarnee Churn v. Mt. Dasee*, 3 S. D. 397 (530). As to the rights of an adopted son, see *ante*, § 153 and note.

(p) *Debendra Coomar v. Brojendracoomar*, 17 Cal. 886.



of the others, or for necessary purposes (*q*). And so an undivided coparcener may in Bengal lease out his own share, and put his lessee in possession (*r*). But as a son has no interest in his father's property during the father's life, a sale of such property by him during the father's life would be wholly void, and it has been ruled that if the purchaser had got into possession, the son himself might recover the property from him when his own title as heir accrued. The purchaser, however, would have a right to recover the purchase-money (*s*).

§ 349. It has been held in the Allahabad High Court that an agreement by one coparcener not to alienate his share to any one except his coparcener is valid, and may be enforced, and that an alienation to a stranger made in violation of such an agreement may be set aside at the suit of the other coparceners (*t*). The former part of the ruling is, of course, beyond doubt. But it may be questioned whether the latter part would be followed by those Courts which recognize the right of a coparcener to dispose of his share. Can an agreement by a member of a family not to exercise his ordinary rights of property be enforced against a stranger, who has dealt with him in ignorance of such an agreement? In other words, can the agreement operate as anything more than a trust in favour of the other members of the family, which is ineffectual against a purchaser for value without notice of the trust? (*u*).

§ 350. Throughout the preceding paragraphs no distinc- Cases of gift.

(*q*) *Rajbulubh v. Mt. Buneta*, 1 S.D. 44 (59); *Prannath v. Calishunkur*, 1 S.D. 45 (60); *Anundchund v. Kishen*, 1 S. D. 115 (152), where, see Mr. Colebrooke's notes. *Ramkunhaee v. Bung Chund*, 3 S. D. 17 (22); *Kounla v. Ram Huree*, 4 S. D. 196 (247); *Sakhawat v. Trilok*, 1 S. D. 338 (397); 2 W. MacN. 291, 294, 296, 306 n., 313.

(*r*) *Ram Debul v. Miterjeet*, 17 Suth. 420; *Macdonald v. Lalla Shib*, 21 Suth. 17.

(*s*) *Gunganarain v. Bulram*, 2 M. Dig. 152.

(*t*) *Lakhmi v. Tori*, 1 All. 618. See *Lachmin v. Koteswar*, 2 All. 826. See post. §§ 387, 445.

(*u*) See *Kanna Pisharodi v. Kombi Achen*, 8 Mad. 381; *Ali Hasan v. Dhirja*, 4 All. 518.

Gifts.

Conditional.

Invalid.

tion has been drawn between gifts and transfers for valuable consideration. The High Courts of Madras and Bombay it will be remembered, allow a coparcener to alien his undivided share for value, but not by way of gift (§§ 332, 335), and according to the view taken by the High Court of Bengal, equities would arise in favour of a purchaser for value which would not exist in favour of a donee. Where a transaction can only be supported on the plea of necessity, of course a gift could never be valid. An exception may exist, perhaps, in favour of gifts of a certain part of the property for pious purposes. These will be treated of at length in Chapter XII on Religious Endowments. Where property is absolutely at the disposal of its owner, as being the property of a father under Bengal law, or the separate or self-acquired property of any person, he may give it away as freely as he may sell or mortgage it (*v*), subject to a certain extent to the claims of those who are entitled to be maintained by him (*w*). And where a gift is valid it may be accompanied with conditions, such as that the donor should be maintained by the donee during his lifetime, and that his exequial ceremonies should be performed after his death in consideration of the gift (*x*); that the donee should forego claims against the donor, and should defray expenses of the worship of the idol (*y*); that the property should pass to another in a particular event (*z*). So a *donatio mortis causâ*, revocable if the donor should recover from an illness, is valid (*a*). But a gift will be invalid which creates any estate unknown to, or forbidden by, Hindu law (*b*). Provisions which are repugnant to the nature of the grant, such as a restraint upon alienation or partition are inva-

---

(*v*) *Saminadien v. Durmarajien*, Mad. Dec. of 1853, 291; and see authorities cited *ante*, § 348, note (*q*), 2 Dig. 159.

(*w*) As to the extent to which this limitation applies, see *post*, § 418.

(*x*) *Ram Narayun v. Mt. Sut Runsee*, 3 S. D. 377 (503); see note.

(*y*) *Madhubchunder v. Bamasoondree*, S. D. of 1853, 103; *Gokool Nath v. Issur Lochun*, 14 Cal 222.

(*z*) *Soorjeemoney Dossee v. Denobundo*, 9 M. L. A. 123, 135; *per curiam*, *Tagore v. Tagore*, 4 B. L. R. (O. C. J.) 192.

(*a*) *Visalatchmi v. Subbu*, 6 Mad. H. O. 270.

(*b*) *Tagore v. Tagore*, 4 B. L. R. (O. C. J.) 103; S. C. 9 B. L. R. (P. C.) 377; S. C. 18 Suth. 359.

lid (c). So are all conditions which are immoral or illegal. Where the gift is in itself good, conditions which are repugnant, or illegal, or immoral are ineffectual, but the gift itself remains good. Where the illegal condition is the consideration for the gift, and therefore forms an essential part of it, both will fail (d). Where a gift is already complete so that the property has completely passed from the donor to the donee, any conditions that may be subsequently added are absolutely void, since the person who attempts to impose them has ceased to have any right to do so (e). Where a gift to A for life is followed by a gift of the remainder of the estate to B, if the gift to A is void, the estate of B is accelerated, and takes effect at once (f). A gift to A with a condition postponing his enjoyment to a period beyond majority is good but the condition is bad, unless there is an intermediate disposition in favour of some other person (g). And of course the same principles apply to a transfer for value.

§ 351. Few propositions have been laid down with more Possession. confidence than the doctrine that under Hindu law a gift is invalid without possession. Yet Hindu law, properly so called, appears to lay little stress on any such rule as specially applicable to gifts. Gifts have been always favoured by the Brahman lawyers, for the obvious reason that they were generally made to Brahmans. The early sages discuss the

---

(c) See post, § 387; F. MacN. 327; *Venkatramanna v. Brammanna*, 4 Mad. H. C. 345; *Amiruddaula v. Nateri*, 6 Mad. H. C. 356; *Thakoor Kapilnauth v. Government*, 13 B. L. R. 445, 457; S. C. 22 Suth. 17; *Anantha v. Nagamuthu*, 4 Mad. 200; *Gokool Nath v. Issur Lochun*, 14 Cal. 222; *Ali Hasan v. Dhirja*, 4 All. 518; *Narayanan v. Kannan*, 7 Mad. 315; *Bhaira v. Parmeshri*, 7 All. 516. Transfer of Property Act (IV of 1882), §§ 10, 12. See as to such conditions in a lease, *Vyankatroya v. Shivrambat*, 7 Bom. 256; *Nil Madhab v. Narattam*, 17 Cal. 826, in a mortgage *Mukkanni v. Manan Bhatta*, 5 Mad. 186. See per curiam, *Tagore v. Tagore*, 9 B. L. R. (P. C.) 395, 406; S. C. 18 Suth. 359; and *Renaud, v. Tourangeau*, L. R. 2 P. C. 4. As to agreements between coparceners not to divide, see post, § 445.

(d) *Ram Sarup v. Mt. Bela*, 11 I. A. 44; S. C. 6 All. 313. Transfer of Property Act (IV of 1882), §§ 25, 18; re *Dugdale*, 38 Ch. D. 176, re *Moore*, 39 Ch. D. 116.

(e) *Ram Sarup v. Mt. Bela*, ub. sup.

(f) *Ajudhia Buksh v. Mt. Rukmin Kuar*, 11 I. A. 1. Transfer of Property Act (IV of 1882), § 27. See also for a case where the subsequent estate fails, § 16.

(g) *Gosavi Shivgar v. Rivett-Carnac*, 12 Bom. 463.

law of gifts with special reference to their liability to resumption. This depends on the purpose of the gift or the special circumstances of the giver. Vrihaspati says, "Things once delivered on the following eight accounts cannot be resumed; for the pleasure of hearing poets, musicians or the like, as the price of goods sold, as a nuptial gift to a bride or her family, as an acknowledgment to a benefactor, as a present to a worthy man, from natural affection, or from friendship. What is given by a person in wrath or excessive joy, or through inadvertence, or during disease, minority or madness, or under the influence of terror, or by one intoxicated, or extremely old, or by an outcast or an idiot, or by a man afflicted with grief or with pain, or what is given in sport; all this is declared ungiven or void. If any thing be given for a consideration unperformed, or to a bad man mistaken for a good one, or for any illegal act, the owner may take it back" (*h*). Katyayana says, that "He who delivers not a present which he has promised to a priest, shall be compelled to pay it as a debt, and incurs the first amercement;" and Harita lays it down broadly that "a promise legally made in words, but not performed in deed, is a debt of conscience both in this world and the next" (*i*). In one case reported by Mr. MacNaghten (*k*) where the facts placed before the pundit stated, "It does not clearly appear that the donee ever took possession of the property given;" his futwah asserted that the gift could not be resumed, quoting as authority a text of Manu "once is the partition of an inheritance made; once is a damsel given in marriage; and once does a man say, "I give." These three are by good men done once for all and irrevocably." No doubt the pundit also answered that even without a gift the donee was entitled to the property as being adopted in the *Kritrima*

(*h*) 2 Dig. 174, 197; Narada, Pt. II. ch. iv. Katyayana, 2 Dig. 197; Manu, viii. §§ 212, 213; Gotama, 2 Dig. 172. See as to revocation of gifts the Transfer of Property Act (IV of 1882), § 126.

(*i*) 2 Dig. 170, 171.

(*k*) 2 W. MacN. 249; case xlii. See also case xxxv, p. 248.



form. The necessity for acceptance is put more prominently forward by Yajnavalkya (l), who says, "The acceptance of a gift should be public, especially of immovable property. Whatever may be lawfully given and is contracted to be given, shall not after gift be resumed." So far as this text makes possession necessary to give validity to a gift, Yajnavalkya seems to treat it as standing on the same footing with other modes of transfer. In an earlier passage (m), he says, "Acquisition by title is stronger than possession, unless this has come down from ancestors. But acquisition by title is of no avail without possession for a short time." The whole subject is discussed at considerable length by the author of the Mitakshara under two headings, of possession without a title and of a title without possession (n). As regards gift he says, "gift consists in the relinquishment of one's own right, and the creation of the right of another; and the creation of another man's right is completed on that other's acceptance of the gift but not otherwise. Acceptance is made by three means, mental, verbal or corporeal. Mental acceptance is the determination to appropriate; verbal acceptance is the utterance of the expression, this is mine or the like; corporeal acceptance is manifold, as by touching" (o). "In the case of land, as there can be no corporeal acceptance without enjoyment of the produce, it must be accompanied by some little possession; otherwise the gift, sale, or other transfer is not complete. A title, therefore, without corporeal acceptance, consisting of the enjoyment of the produce, is weaker than a title accompanied by it or with such corporeal acceptance. But such is the case only, where of

(l) II. 176.

(m) II. 27.

(n) Mit. iii. §§ 5 and 6, translated by Mr. William MacNaghten, 1 W. MacN. 212, 217.

(o) Under English law the acceptance of a gift by a donee is to be presumed until his dissent is signified, even though the donee is not aware of it, and the presumption has even been held to apply to a gift which the donor desired to revoke before the donee knew that it had been made. *Per Lindley, L. J.*, 21 Q. B. D., p. 541. Where, however, delivery is necessary, as in the case of a parol gift of a chattel capable of gift, mere words of giving and acceptance, communicated by the donor to the donee, and by the donee to the donor, do not pass the property without delivery. *Cochrane v. Moore*, 25 Q. B. D. 57.



these two the priority is undistinguishable ; but when it is ascertained which is first in point of date, and which posterior, then the simple prior title affords the stronger evidence. Or the interpretation may be as follows : “ Evidence is said to consist of documents, possession, and witnesses.” This having been premised as the general rule, the text “ a title is more powerful than possession unaccompanied by hereditary succession,” and “ where there is not the least possession, there a title is not sufficient,” have been propounded to point out to which the superiority belongs, where the three descriptions of evidence meet.” Apparently, in the view of Vijnaneswara, acceptance was necessary to complete a gift because according to a Hindu lawyer property can never be in abeyance. It cannot pass out of one till it is received by another. The very nature of a mortgage or sale, which is necessarily a bilateral proceeding, assumes acceptance. No such assumption exists in the case of a gift. But as regards actual corporeal acceptance, or as he calls it “ some little possession,” he appears to put a gift on the same footing with a sale or other transfer. As to all three evidence of possession is material in order to determine priorities between conflicting claims, where any such dispute exists. Where no such dispute exists, then the general rule applies “ In the case of a pledge, a gift, or a sale, the prior contract has the greater force” (*p*).

§ 352. It is probable that the rule that actual possession is necessary to give validity to a gift arose, not from any special doctrine of Hindu law, but from the general principle common to all systems of law, that a voluntary promise cannot be enforced, though the voluntary act, when completed is irrevocable (*q*). To this extent the doctrine received very early recognition in our Courts, and has long since been enforced (*r*). Whether the English doctrine of Equity

(*p*) Mit. iii. 2, § 5 ; 1 W. MacN. 200.

(*q*) See *per curiam*, 11 L. A., p. 283 ; *Standing v. Bowring*, 31 Ch. D. 282.

(*r*) 2 Stra. H.L. 426 ; 2 W. MacN. 243, case xxxvi ; *Kishto Soondery v. Kishto Motee*, Marshall, 367 ; *Sham Singh v. Mt. Umraotee*, 2 S. D. 75 (92) ; *Harji-*

that a declaration of trust, not amounting to a legal transfer, can be enforced in favour of the object of the trust would be extended to cases governed by Hindu law is undecided (*s*). It is quite certain that no promise to confer a future benefit upon a priest, however holy, would be enforced by the secular Courts (*t*). Where, however, the donor has done every thing in his power to complete the gift, and the resistance to his attempts to give it full effect arises from a third person, the fact that possession has not been given is no answer to a suit by the donee against the obstructing party (*u*).

§ 353. To complete a gift there must be a transfer of the apparent evidences of ownership from the donor to the donee. It is, however, sufficient if the change of possession is such as the nature of the case admits of. Therefore, where the gift is of land, which is in the possession of tenants, receipt of rent by the donee is enough, even though it is received through a person who received it formerly as agent for the donor; or delivery to the donee of the deed of gift, and of the counterpart lease executed to the donor by the tenants (*v*). So a gift may be made to an absent person, if his acceptance of it is certain, but if it is unknown whether he will accept or not, the right of the donor continues (*w*). And it was stated by a pandit in Bengal that a

What amounts to possession.

---

*van v. Naran Haribai*, 4 Bom. H. C. (A. C. J.) 81; *Vasudev v. Narayan*, 7 Bom. 181. The Transfer of Property Act (IV of 1882). § 122 only requires an acceptance of the gift by or on behalf of the donee, which acceptance must be made during the lifetime of the donor, and while he is still capable of giving. If the donee dies before acceptance, the gift is void. But by § 129 nothing in the above provisions would affect any rule of Hindu law.

(*s*) *Venkatachella v. Thathammul*, 4 Mad. H. C. 460; *Hirbai v. Jan Mahomed*, 7 Bom. 229.

(*t*) *Manjanadhaya v. Tangamma*, Mad. Dec. of 1861, 24; *Nursing v. Mohunt*, S. D. of 1857, 1000.

(*u*) *Kalidas v. Kanhya Lall*, 11 I. A. 218; S. C. 11. Cal. 121. See the facts of this case stated, *post*, § 359; followed in cases under Muhammedan law. *Mahomed Buksh v. Hosseini Bibi*, 15 I. A. 81; S. C. 15 Cal. 684; *Sheikh Muhummed v. Zubaida Jan*, 16 I. A. 205; S. C. 11 All. 460.

(*v*) *Bank of Hindustan v. Premchand*, 5 Bom. H. C. (O. O. J.) 83; *Wannathan v. Keyakadath*, 6 Mad. H. C. 194; *Harjivan v. Naran*, 4 Bom. H. C. (A. C. J.) 81; *Man Bhari v. Naunidh*, 4 All. 40; *Kallyani v. Narayana*, 9 Mad. 267.

(*w*) *Srikrishna*, cited with approval by *Macpherson, J*, *Krishnaramani v. Ananda*, 4 B. L. R. (O. O. J.) 291.

gift would be valid, even though the donor retained possession, if it was expressly stated in the deed that he was holding the property as a loan from the donee (*x*). So it has been held, that where the donee is incapable of taking possession, as being a minor or a lunatic, the possession of the donor is enough, if it is expressly asserted to be in trust for the donee (*y*). And when the donee was in possession either alone, or jointly with the donor, before the gift, the continuance of his possession is sufficient, without any new delivery (*z*). So where one of several donees is already in possession, a declaration of gift to him on behalf of all, assented to by himself and the other donees is sufficient, without putting them in possession (*a*). The gift of an incorporeal right will be sufficient if it is made in such a manner as would suffice for the transfer of choses in action (*b*). It follows from the above principles, that whether the gift be *in praesenti* or *in futuro* the donee must be a person in existence, and capable of accepting the gift at the time it takes effect (*c*). The only exceptions are the cases of an infant in the womb, or a person adopted after the death of the husband under an authority from him. Such persons are by a fiction of law considered to have been in existence at the time of the death (*d*).

Donee must be in existence.

Gift to a class of whom some are incapable of taking.

§ 354. The principle last stated has given rise to a class of cases as to which there appears to be some conflict of authority. In England it is well settled that where a gift or bequest is made to a class of persons, some of whom are

*Sheodas v. Kuhuul*, 3 S. D 234 (313).

(*y*) *Punjab Cust.*, 75 ; 2 W. MacN 243.

(*z*) *Meyajee v. Metha*, Bom. Sel. Rep. 80, 89 ; *Sheik Ibrahim v. Sheik Suleman*, 9 Bom. 146. This, and the previous case, were decided under Muhammedan law, which in this respect agrees with the Hindu law.

(*a*) *Bai Kushal v. Lakhma Mana*, 7 Bom. 452.

(*b*) *Chellamamma v. Subamma*, 7 Mad. 23 ; *Khursadji v. Pestonji*, 12 Bom. 573.

(*c*) This is the actual time of giving, that is the date of the gift, if *inter vivos* or the death of the testator, if by will : not the possible time of receiving. See *Tagore v. Tagore*, 9 B. L. R. 399 ; S. C. 18 Suth. 359 ; *Soudaminey v. Jogesh*, 2 Cal. 265 ; *Kherodemoney v. Doorgamoney*, 4 Cal. 455 ; *Bai Mamubai v. Dossa Moraji*, 15 Bom. 443 ; post, § 386.

(*d*) *Tagore v. Tagore*, 4 B. L. R. (O. C. J.) 103 ; S. C. on appeal in the P. O 9 B. L. R. 377, 397, 400, 404 ; S. C. 18 Suth. 359.

incapable of taking, the disposition fails as to all. This rests not upon any technicality of English law, but upon the ground that the intention of the donor was to benefit all equally, and that it is impossible to know what shape his wishes would have taken, if he had been informed that they could not be carried out as he intended (*e*). This rule has been applied in several cases in India, where it has been held that a disposition in favour of a class of persons, as to some of whom the gift is void for remoteness, or some of whom are or may be incapable of taking as being unborn at the time when the gift should take effect, is void as to all. And the rule applies even though all the members of the class are in fact born before the gift or bequest takes effect, if it was antecedently possible that they might not have been so born, since "it is an invariable rule that regard is had to possible not actual events, and the fact that the gift might have included objects too remote, is fatal to its validity irrespective of the event" (*f*). The existence of such a rule as properly applicable to India appears to have been recognised by the Judicial Committee in one case, though they were of opinion that upon the true construction of the instrument the disposition did not come within the rule (*g*). The rule itself is expressly made applicable by the Legislature to transfers which are invalid as offending against the doctrine of perpetuity, or where an attempt is made to create a series of limited interests in favour of persons not in existence at the date of the transfer, after the termination of a previous vested estate (*h*). Whether

(*e*) *Leake v. Robinson*, 2 Mer. 363, 390; *Pearks v. Moseley*, 5 App. Ca. 714.

(*f*) *Brahmamayi v. Jages Chandra*, 8 B. L. R. 400; *Soudaminy v. Jogesh*, 2 Cal. 262; *Kherodemoney v. Doojyamoney*, 4 Cal. 455; *Jairam v. Ruverbai*, 2 Bom. 491, 508; *Javerbai v. Kablibai*, 15 Bom. 326; 1 Jarman on Wills, 4th ed. 266. Where the invalidity of any disposition of property turns on the possibility that a particular person might have children, evidence is not admissible to show that from advanced age the birth of future children is impossible re *Dawson*, 39 Ch. D. 155. The same rule would, no doubt, apply to any other physical incapacity.

(*g*) *Kumar Tarakeswar v. Kumar Shoshi*, 10 I. A. at p. 60; S. C. 9 Cal. at p. 960.

(*h*) Transfer of Property Act (IV of 1882), § 15; Succession Act (X of 1865), § 102. Nothing in these sections alters any principle of Hindu law. Act IV of 1882, § 2; Act XXI of 1870, § 3. *Alangamonjori v. Sonamoni*, 8 Cal. 637.



it was intended to exclude the application of the rule in all other cases is matter of argument or inference.

§ 354A. A class within the meaning of this rule has been defined as follows by Mr. Jarman (*i*). “A number of persons are popularly said to form a class when they can be designated by some general term, as children, grandchildren, nephews, but in legal language the question whether a gift is one to a class depends not upon those considerations, but upon the mode of gift itself, *viz.*, that it is a gift of an aggregate sum to a body of persons uncertain in number at the time of the gift, to be ascertained at a future time, and who are to take in equal or in some other definite proportions, the share of each being dependent for its amount upon the ultimate number of persons.” The rule does not apply where all the individuals are named, as then the intention of the donor as to each is defined. In such a case, if they are to take as tenants in common, and the gift fails as to some, the others take their appointed shares (*k*). If they are to take jointly, those who are capable of taking are entitled to the whole (*l*). Nor does it apply where the nature of the benefit conferred—such as residence in a family house—is not dependent on the number of persons who may ultimately prove that they have a right to share (*m*). Where there are independent and alternative gifts, of which one is good at the time the document takes effect, and the other is void, the former will take effect, and the latter will be disregarded (*n*).

Recent decisions.

§ 355. Recent decisions throw some doubt upon the above doctrine as of universal application in India. The first case is a decision of the Judicial Committee which of course is conclusive as to whatever it lays down (*o*). In that case

(*i*) Jarman. Wills, I. 266 (4th ed).

(*k*) *James v. Lord Wynford*, 1 Sm. & Giff. p. 59.

(*l*) *Nandi Singh v. Sitaram*, 1 I. A. 44; S. C. 16 Cal. 677.

(*m*) *Krishanath v. Atmaram*, 15 Bom. 543.

(*n*) *Re Harvey*, 39 Ch. D. 289; *Raikishori v. Debendranath*, 15 I. A. 37; S. C. 15 Cal. 409.

(*o*) *Raj Bishen Chand v. Mt. Asmaida Koer*, 11 I. A. 164; S. C. 6 All. 560,



there were alive as members of an undivided family governed by Mitakshara law, Mata Dyal, his son Udey Narrain, and Satrujit the only son of Udey Narrain. To protect the estate against the profligacy of Udey Narrain, Mata Dyal, with the consent of Udey Narrain to whom a sum of Rs. 5,000 was paid, transferred the estate to Satrujit Narrain and his own brothers who are born or may be born hereafter. The validity of this gift was objected to, amongst other reasons, on the ground that as the unborn sons of Udey could not take, the gift to Satrujit himself as a member of the class of Udey's sons, was invalid. In support of this view reference was made to § 102 of the Succession Act (X of 1865). As to this the Committee replied that the gift in question did not come within the terms of the section (p). Upon the general question their Lordships held that the gift was not made to a class of whom Satrujit was one, but that it was made to Satrujit as a person in whose favour it was intended to operate at once, for a purpose which would be absolutely frustrated if it did not so operate. The further intention that his younger brothers, if he ever had any, should share in the benefit of the gift, could not be carried out, but that was no reason for holding the whole transaction to be void. They said (q) "Cases are not rare in which a Court of construction, finding that the whole plan of a donor of property cannot be carried into effect, will yet give effect to part of it, rather than hold that it shall fail entirely. In the present case, there is every reason for holding that, if Satrujit's possible brothers are not able to take by virtue of the gift, he shall take the whole. He is there present and able to receive the gift. He is an individual designated in the deed. If the deed stood alone, it is a question in each case whether a designated person who is coupled with a class described in general terms is

(p) It seems very doubtful whether under the saving clause of the Hindu Wills Act, § 102 of Act X of 1865 has any application to Hindu Wills. See *per Wilson, J.*, 12 Cal. p. 669. It has no application whatever to gifts or transfers *inter vivos*.

(q) 10 L. A., p. 178; S. C. 6 All., p. 573.

merged into that class or not. But the deed does not stand alone. It is followed by actions of a kind which, even without a deed, may work a transfer of property in India. Satrujit is entered in the Collector's books as the sole possessor of the property, and his guardian takes possession, first in his name and afterwards as his successor. Their Lordships hold that the circumstance that the parties wished to do something beyond their legal power, and that they have used unskilful language in the deed of gift, ought not to invalidate that important part of their plan which is consistent with one construction of the deed, and is clearly proved from the transfer of the property in fact."

§ 356. This decision was followed in a very similar case in Calcutta (*r*), where a man by deed of gift gave certain property to Ramlal and Shamlal the two existing infant sons of his son Madhub, with a direction that they and their uterine brothers who should be born hereafter should divide the same amongst them in equal shares. He then proceeded to provide that the two grandsons so named should be placed in possession and have their names registered. But the rights of the uterine brothers to be born in future were not to be extinguished by this possession. The Court held on the authority of the Privy Council case that the gift was good to the persons so designated, though ineffectual as to those who might be born hereafter. *Wilson, J.*, however, upon an elaborate examination of all the Indian and English authorities, arrived at the conclusion (p. 681) that the rule in *Leake v. Robinson* was only applied in England to gifts to a class tainted with the vice of remoteness, and that the Indian Succession Act, § 102, and the Transfer of Property Act, § 15 marked the intention that the rule should only be extended to India in similar cases. He then expressed his opinion that the decision in *Rai Bishen Chand's* case was inconsistent with the rulings in *Soudamoney's* and *Kherodemoney's* cases, and ended by saying (p. 685) "For these reasons I should be prepared, if necessary, to dissent wholly

(*r*) *Ramlal Sett v. Kanai Lal*, 12 Cal. 668.

from the doctrine laid down in those cases, and to hold, as the general rule, that where there is a gift to a class, some of whom are or may be incapacitated from taking, because not born at the date of gift or the death of the testator as the case may be, and where there is no other objection to the gift, it should enure for the benefit of those members of the class who are capable of taking."

The latter part of the judgment was, of course, merely *obiter dictum*. The views there laid down have, however, been followed to their full extent by the High Courts of Madras and Bombay. Property was granted to a man for his life, and at his death to persons (in the Madras case his brothers, in the Bombay case his children) forming a class, whose description would equally embrace persons born during and after the life of the testator or settlor. In each case the person who claimed the property had been in fact born before the document took effect, and no one had been born after that date. The Court held that he was entitled to take in accordance with the Calcutta judgment (*s*). The Bombay High Court further supported its opinion by a reference to the language of *Jessel, M. R.*, (*t*) where he said: "I think there is a convenient mode of interpreting this testator's intention, and it is this: The testator may be considered to have a primary and a secondary intention. His primary intention is that all members of the class shall take, and his secondary intention is that if all cannot take, those who can shall do so." In the case before *Jessel, M. R.*, the testator had given certain property to "the children of my late brother Joseph Coleman who shall survive me or who shall have died in my lifetime leaving issue living at my death in equal shares." Four children of Joseph were living at the testator's death, and one had died leaving issue living at the death of the testator. The Master of the Rolls said that he intended

*Manjamma v. Padmanabhayya*, 12 Mad. 393; *Mangaldas v.*

15 Bom. 562.

(*t*) In *re Coleman*, 4 Ch. D., p. 169.

somehow to provide for a child who died leaving issue, but did not know how to do it. That part of the gift therefore failed; but the supposed secondary intention was carried out by holding that the four children took the share among them. The doctrine of *Leake v. Robinson* had no application to the case, which was decided on completely different principles as regards the child who had predeceased the testator.

Valid against  
creditors.

§ 357. A gift once completed by delivery or its equivalent is binding upon the donor himself, and upon his representatives, and is valid even against his creditors; provided it was made *bonâ fide*, that is with the honest intention of passing the property, and not merely as a fraudulent contrivance to conceal the real ownership (*u*).

Necessity for  
delivery where  
transfer is for  
consideration.

§ 358. Another question which has given rise to numerous and conflicting decisions, is as to the necessity for delivery of possession where the transfer is not by way of gift, but by way of mortgage or sale of land. Such a transaction, even without possession, would, of course, be valid and enforceable as against the transferor. But the importance of the question would arise where the rights of third parties were concerned. For instance, where the same property was mortgaged or sold twice, and possession given to the last transferee. If the first transfer was valid without possession, the first transferee could bring ejectment for the land. If it required possession, his only remedy would be against his transferor by suit for specific performance or for damages. There is a good deal in the passages from the native writers quoted above (§ 351) which might have been interpreted as intimating that an actual delivery of possession was necessary in order to give effect to any

(*u*) *Sabapaty v. Panyandy*, Mad. Dec. of 1858, 61; *Abhachari v. drayya*, 1 Mad. H. C. 393; *Gnanabhai v. Srinavasa*, 4 Mad. H. C. 84; *Nasir v. Mata*, 2 All. 891; *Rai Bishen Chand v. Asmaida Koer*, 11 I. A. 164; S. C. 6 All. 560. Of course it may be set aside for any ground which shows that it was void *ab initio* against the donor, as from fraud practised on him or defective knowledge on his part as to its effect. *Bai Manigavri v. Narondas*, 15 Bom. 549.



species of transfer. But the more natural explanation appears to be that they refer to two different matters, *viz.*, the effect of possession as evidencing a right, and the effect of possession as destroying a right. For instance, *Narada* says, "Written proof, witnesses and possession, these are the three kinds of evidence on which the right of property rests, (and by means of which) a creditor may recover a loan. A document remains always evidence, witnesses as long as they live, and possession after a lapse of time. What a man is not possessed of, that is not his own, even though there be written proof, and even though witnesses be living; this is especially the case with immoveables." But in the next verse he shows that he is speaking of what we would call the law of limitations, as he fixes periods after which possession shall destroy the right to recover; and further on he says, "Where possession exists, but no title whatever exists, there a title but not possession (alone) can confer proprietary rights. A title having been substantiated, the possession becomes valid; it remains invalid without a proved title." He winds up by saying, "In all business transactions the latest act shall prevail; but in the case of a gift, a pledge, or a purchase, the prior act has the greater force." In a subsequent text he says, "What a man possesses without a title, he must not alienate" (*v*). *Vijnaneswara* in commenting on the same rule, *viz.*, that "in the case of a pledge, a gift, or a sale, the prior contract has the greater force" expressly points out that this applies to the case where a person who has sold or mortgaged to one, afterwards, through delusion or avarice, makes a similar sale or mortgage to another (*w*). These texts and many others are reviewed by Professor Wilson, in an article on Sir F. MacNaghten's considerations on Hindu Law, and this article with further texts was examined by the Madras High Court in reference to a question of inchoate partition. Dr. Wilson states his view as follows, "It is therefore in

(*v*) *Narada*, iv. §§ 2—13, 17. See also 18—23, 27.

(*w*) *Mit.* iii. 2, § 6; 1 *W. MacN.* 200. The Transfer of Property Act (IV of 1882), § 48 lays down the same rule.



our estimation quite clear that the Hindu Law and common sense go hand in hand. A man may forego his rights if he pleases, and any capricious abandonment of them for an unreasonable time is to be punished by their forfeiture. But he is not to be deprived of what is legally his, because legal proceedings, interested opposition, accident, distance or disease debar him from taking possession of it when it first becomes his due." To which the Madras High Court adds, "This seems to us precisely the doctrine derivable from the text writers" (x).

Decisions in  
Madras.

Privy Council  
decisions.

§ 359. The Madras Courts have always held that a sale by the owner without delivery of possession is valid as against a subsequent sale by the original owner followed by possession, and that the first vendee may bring ejectment both against the vendor and the second vendee, "on the simple principle, that after the conveyance to the first vendee the owner of the land had nothing whatever to convey" (y). Two cases in the Privy Council (z) were for some time supposed to have laid down the rule that a sale will be invalid, *first*, if the vendor cannot give possession, and *secondly*, if he does not give possession. In earlier editions of this work I had suggested that neither of those cases decided that a document, intended to operate as a transfer *in præsenti* of a specific piece of land, would be invalid because possession was not given under it. In both cases the Judicial Committee held that the document was not intended so to operate. In both cases, too, the sale was not of a specific piece of property, but of a share in something afterwards to be recovered. Something remained to be done between the parties before the purchaser could say

(x) Wilson's works, v. 88; *Lakshmy v. Narasimha*, 3 Mad. H. C. 40, 46, affirmed; 13 M. J. A. 118; S. C. 12 Suth. (P. C.) 40.

(y) *Velayuda v. Sivarama*, Mad. Dec. of 1860, 277; *Virabhadra v. Hari Rama*, 3 Mad. H. C. 88; *Vasudeva Bhatlu v. Narasamma*, 5 Mad. 6; *Ramasami v. Marimuttu*, 6 Mad. 404.

(z) *Perhlad Sein v. Baboo Budhoo*, 12 M. J. A. 300, 306—309; S. C. 2 B. L. R. (P. C.) 111; S. C. 12 Suth. (P. C.) 6; *Rhobosundree v. Issurchunder*, 11 B. L. R. 36; S. C. 18 Suth. 140; compare *Kamala v. Pitchocooty*, 10 M. J. A. 386, 395.

that he had a claim to any definite field or house. This view was taken by the Privy Council in a later case when the same question arose (a). There Romasundari gave to Ruttonmoni an estate for an interest which was ultimately decided to be only good for Ruttonmoni's life, and placed her in possession. In 1864 Ruttonmoni's interest was sold in execution, and purchased by Kanhya Lall, who also got into possession. She died in 1867. In 1876 Romasundari by gift bestowed the same estate upon the wife of Kalidas. Neither Romasundari nor her second donee ever regained possession from Kanhya Lall. The suit to recover possession was brought by the executor of the second donee against the purchaser from the first donee, the donor being joined as defendant. It was contended that the second deed of gift was utterly invalid, inasmuch as the donor was out of possession, and no possession was ever given to the donee. The Judicial Committee decided against this contention. After citing the two decisions above referred to they say (p. 232), "Neither of these decisions is applicable to the present case. The ground of them is that the plaintiff was not entitled under the terms of the contract of sale to possession. In this case the appellant is under the terms of the gift entitled to possession, and their Lordships see no reason why a gift or contract of sale of property, whether movable or immovable, if it is not of a nature which makes the giving effect to it contrary to public policy, should not operate to give to the donee or purchaser a right to obtain possession. This appears to be consistent with Hindu Law. On the principle contended for by the respondent, so long as he prevents the true owner from taking possession, however violently or wrongfully, that owner cannot make any title to a grantee."

§ 360. During the period which elapsed between these decisions there was naturally a good deal of conflict in the in Calcutta.

(a) *Kalidas v. Kanhya Lall*, 11 I. A. 218; S. C. 11 Cal. 121; followed *Mahomed Buksh v. Hosseini Bibi*, 15 I. A. 81; S. C. 15 Cal. 684.

of immoveable property either by gift, sale or mortgage." Among the exceptions to the above general rule the Chief Justice enumerated cases arising between the transferor or volunteers claiming under him and the transferee ; cases in which the second transferee became such with actual notice of the earlier transfer without possession ; or in which he had implied notice by the fact that the earlier transfer was registered under any of the Acts XVI of 1861, XX of 1866, VIII of 1871, or III of 1877 prior to the execution of the second instrument. In adopting the principle that registration was an implied notice the Chief Justice admitted that he was following the American in preference to the English or Irish decisions, " 6thly. It has been held that possession by a judgment debtor having a good title is not necessary to validate a judicial sale of his lands : 7thly. It appears to have been held that possession by the vendee, who became such at a judicial sale, is not necessary to validate the sale to him as against subsequent attaching creditors under money decrees, or as against purchasers at the sales under such decrees : 8thly. The purchaser at a judicial sale may re-sell without previously taking possession" (l). A purchaser at a judicial sale is not a purchaser without notice, as he only buys such an interest as the execution debtor could equitably sell to him (m).

As regards persons other than purchasers for value without notice, the Bombay High Court laid down the rule, that a Hindu whose estate was in the possession of a trespasser or mortgagee, might sell his right of entry, as such, or his equity of redemption, as such, and that the purchaser might thereupon sue to eject the trespasser, or to redeem the mortgage. But if he professed to sell the estate itself, of which he was out of possession, the plaintiff who proceeded to sue as the owner of the estate, would be defeated, on the

---

(l) *Lakhmandas v. Dasrat*, 6 Bom. 168, F. B., pp. 175—177, 184—187 ; *Shivram v. Genu*, 6 Bom. 515 ; *Dundaya v. Chenbasapa*, 9 Bom. 427.

(m) *Sobhagchund v. Bhaichand*, 6 Bom. 93 ; *Chintaman v. Shivram*, 9 Bom. H. C. 304 ; *Ramaraia v. Arunachella*, 7 Mad. 248.

ground that the conveyance to him was ineffectual (*n*). This was very much like a distinction without a difference. Accordingly after the case of *Kalidas v. Kanhya Lall* (*o*), the Bombay High Court decided that no such distinction could be maintained, and that it was no objection to an ejectment on the plaintiff's title as absolute owner, that his vendor had been kept out of possession by adverse claim up to the time of his conveyance (*p*).

§ 362. The case of mortgages creates greater difficulty, as the mortgagor still retains an assignable interest in himself. Distinctions would also arise according as the mortgagor had transferred his property in the land, reserving only a right to redeem, or had retained the property, merely creating a lien upon it in favour of the creditor; in the language of English law, according as the mortgage was legal or equitable. Questions of notice, negligence, &c., would also largely affect the decision of each case. I do not propose to enter into these matters, which are beyond the scope of this work, and have been fully treated by Mr. Macpherson in his book on Mortgages. I shall briefly point out the state of the authorities on the one point of possession. It is evident that the effect of want of possession will depend largely upon whether such non-possession was in accordance with the terms of the contract, or opposed to it. *Narada* says broadly, "Pledges are declared to be of two sorts, movable and immovable. Both are valid when there is actual enjoyment, and not otherwise" (*q*). It is possible he may be referring to cases in which possession ought to follow the pledge, as it would do naturally in regard to movables. In Madras it is quite settled that a mere hypothecation of land, neither followed nor intended to be followed by possession, creates a lien upon it, which may be enforced against a subsequent purchaser (*r*). The

Cases of mortgage.

Mortgage without possession.

(*n*) *Bai Suraj v. Dalpatram*, 6 Bom. 380; *Vasudev Hari v. Tatia Narayan*, *ibid.* 887.

(*o*) 11 I. A. 218; S. C. 11 Cal. 121, ante § 359.

(*p*) *Ugarchand v. Madapa Somana*, 9 Bom. 324.

(*q*) *Narada*, iv. § 64.

(*r*) *Varden v. Luckpathy*, 9 M. I. A. 308; *Kadarsa v. Raviah*, 2 Mad. H. C. 108; *Golla v. Kali*, 4 Mad. H. C. 484; *Sadagopah v. Ruthna*, 6 Mad. Jur. 176.



same point has been decided in Bengal by the Supreme Court, after taking the opinion of the Judges of the Sudder Court (*s*). In Bombay the Courts, in dealing with the rights of a mortgagee against subsequent mortgagees or purchasers, proceed upon the doctrine of the position of a purchaser for value without notice. Except as regards mortgages in Guzerat they hold that a mere mortgage without possession cannot prevail against a subsequent mortgagee or purchaser who has obtained possession without notice (*t*). A purchaser with express notice of a previous mortgage takes subject to it, and either possession under a previous mortgage, or registration of it prior to the execution of the subsequent transfer, is equivalent to notice (*u*.) The general principle that possession is not necessary to give validity to a mortgage as against the mortgagor was affirmed by the Bombay High Court in a very elaborate judgment, where all the previous cases were reviewed (*v*); and it has also been held that such a mortgagee may maintain his claim against third persons who are wrongfully in possession (*w*); or against purchasers at a Court sale, who only take the right, title, and interest of the debtor (*x*).

Priority between registered and unregistered documents.

§ 363. Another point as to which there is a conflict of decisions is as to priority between two documents, the former of which is unregistered, and the latter is registered. Where the former document is one of which registration is compulsory, no question can arise. The unregistered document creates no rights, and is inadmissible in evidence (*y*). But

(*s*) *Collydoss v. Sibchunder*, Morton, 111; *Sibchunder v. Russick*, Fulton, 36. These cases over-rule contrary decisions in *Montrion*, 278, and *Morton*, 105. See *Nanack v. Teluckdye*, 5 Cal. 265.

(*t*) *Parmaya v. Sonde*, 4 Bom. 459, 461; *Bapuji Balal v. Satyabhamabai*, 6 Bom. 490; *per Westropp*, C. J., 6 Bom., p. 176. See as to the early Sudder decisions, *Tooljaram v. Meean*, 2 Bor. 130, (147); *Kundoojee v. Ballajee*, Bellasis, 5; *Dondee v. Suntram*, Morris, 56.

(*u*) See cases in last note, also *Gopal v. Kristnappa*, 7 Bom. H. C. (A. C. J.) 69; *Hari v. Mahadaji*, 8 Bom. H. C. (A. C. J.) 50; *Balaji v. Ramchandra*, 11, Bom. H. C. 37. See as to possession being notice, Act I of 1877, § 27.

(*v*) *Jivandas v. Framji*, 7 Bom. H. C. (O. C. J.) 45.

(*w*) *Krishnaji v. Govind*, 9 Bom. H. C. 275.

(*x*) *Chintaman v. Shivram*, 9 Bom. H. C. 304. See upon the whole of this subject the judgment in *Lakshmandas v. Dasrat*, 6 Bom. 168.

(*y*) Act III of 1877, § 49.



it has been the policy of the Legislature to allow a certain class of documents, evidencing transactions of a small value, to be registered or not at the option of the holders. Under the Registration Acts XVI of 1864, XX of 1866, and VIII of 1871 there was no competition in respect of registration between a document compulsorily registrable and a document which, being optionally registrable, was in fact not registered (z). But under the existing Registration Act, III of 1877, § 50, every document of which registration is compulsory and certain classes of documents of which registration is optional, "shall, if duly registered, take effect as regards the property comprised therein, against every unregistered document relating to the same property, and not being a decree or order, whether such unregistered document be of the same nature as the registered document or not." An *Explanation* to this section makes it apply retrospectively in favour of a document registered under Act III of 1877 against documents whose registration was optional under the previous Acts (a). Upon this section the Madras High Court holds, that the subsequent registered document must, in all cases, take effect against a previous document dealing with the same property which, being optionally registrable, has in fact not been registered, and that neither express notice of the previous instrument, nor possession under it, operating as implied notice, can make any difference in the case (b), unless the second document is merely fraudulent and collusive (c), or unless the second transaction has been expressly made subject to the first, so that both documents may have full operation; as for instance, where property is sold by a registered instrument subject to the claims of a previous mortgagee under an un-

---

(z) See *per Westropp*, O. J., 6 Bom. 190, and cases cited.

(a) *Lakshman Das v. Dipchand*, 2 All. 851; *Gungaram v. Kallipodo*, 11 Cal. 661; *Muthana v. Alibeg*, 6 Mad. 174; but this explanation has not the effect of giving registration under any of the former Acts a priority over an unregistered document under any of the same Acts which it did not possess under those Acts. *Rupchand v. Davlatrav*, 6 Bom. 495; *Shivram v. Saya*, 13 Bom. 229; *Sriram v. Bhagirath*, 4 All. 227.

(b) *Nulliappa Gounden v. Ibrahim*, 5 Mad. 73; *Kondayya v. Guruvappa*, 5 Mad. 189.

(c) *Narasimulu v. Somanna*, 8 Mad. 167.

registered instrument (*d*). A mortgage for an optional amount, was made in 1872, and was not registered. In 1878 the property was purchased with full notice of the mortgage, and the deed was registered. In 1879 a suit was brought against the mortgagor to enforce the mortgage, and the land was attached in execution of his decree. It was held that the decree and attachment were ineffectual, as before the date of the suit the second document had put an end to the operation of the first as far as the purchaser was concerned. It would have been different if the decree had been before the purchase. Then the unregistered document would have been merged in and superseded by the decree prior to the execution of the registered document. The competition would have been between the decree and the registered document, and a decree relating to land, though unregistered, is by § 50 unaffected by a subsequent registered document, (*e*). On the other hand the Calcutta, Bombay, and Allahabad Courts hold that express notice of an unregistered document, deprives a purchaser under a registered instrument of the priority to which he would otherwise be entitled (*f*). The High Court of Bombay lays it down with equal distinctness that possession under an optionally unregistered document is notice to a subsequent purchaser by a registered document, which of itself deprives him of the benefits of registration (*g*). The contrary doctrine was expressly laid down by the High Court of Calcutta in one case, in which they overruled various decisions of their own Court in which an opposite view had been

(*d*) *Ramachandra v. Krishna*, 9 Mad. 495.

(*e*) *Madar Saheb v. Subbarayulu*, 6 Mad. 88, citing and distinguishing *Koluri Nagabhushanum v. Ammanu*, 3 Mad. 71; *Contra Balinath v. Lachman Das*, 7 All. 888; acc. *Himalaya Bank v. Simla Bank*, 8 All. 23.

(*f*) *Ram Autar v. Dhanauri*, 8 All. 540; *Fazludeen Khan v. Fakir Mahomed*, 5 Cal. 336; *Chundernath v. Bhoyrub Chunder*, 10 Cal. 250; *Abool Hossein v. Raghunath*, 18 Cal. 70; *Shivram v. Genu*, 6 Bom. 515; *Moreswar v. Dattu*, 12 Bom. 569. But see *Bamasunderi v. Krishna Chandra*, 10 Cal. 424, in which the Court seemed to treat the point as yet open to question. As to the amount of notice necessary, see *Bhalu Roy v. Jakhu Roy*, 11 Cal. 667; *Churaman v. Balli*, 9 All. 591. Act IV of 1882, § 8.

(*g*) *Dundaya v. Chenbasapa*, 9 Bom. 427; *Hathi Sing v. Kuverji*, 10 Bom. 105. The possession must be such as is inconsistent with the title on which the second purchaser relies. *Moreswar v. Dattu*, 12 Bom. 569.

taken (*h*). In later cases the same Court appears to have treated possession under an unregistered deed as a fact from which notice of its existence might, but need not necessarily be inferred (*i*). In one of these cases *Garth*, C. J., intimated his opinion that under § 54 of the Transfer of Property Act (IV of 1882), which requires either a registered instrument or delivery of possession in the case of all sales of immovable property, optional registration was virtually abolished, every written instrument requiring to be registered (*k*). Possibly the Act may be read merely as depriving an unregistered instrument of any operation if not followed by possession. If possession is equivalent to notice, and if notice takes away the benefit of registration, the result would be that wherever an unregistered document had any effect it would rank before a registered document of later date.

§ 364. By § 48 of the Registration Act III of 1877, "All non-testamentary documents duly registered under the Act, and relating to any property whether movable or immovable, shall take effect against any oral agreement or declaration relating to such property, unless where the agreement or declaration has been followed by delivery of possession." A deposit of title deeds under a verbal arrangement to secure a debt, has been held not to be an oral agreement or declaration relating to property within the meaning of this section (*l*). Whatever view the Courts take as to the effect of notice under § 50 would apparently be taken as to this section also (*m*).

Oral agreements  
or declarations.

§ 365. Writing is not necessary, under Hindu law, to the validity of any transaction whatever (*n*). Nor is there any

Form of transfer

(*h*) *Fazludeen Khan v. Fakir Mahomed*, 5 Cal. 336.

(*i*) *Narain Chunder v. Dataram*, 8 Cal. 597; *Nani Dibee v. Hafizullah*, 10 Cal. 1073.

(*k*) 8 Cal., p. 612; *Contra Knatu v. Madhuram*, 16 Cal. 622.

(*l*) *Coggan v. Pogose*, 11 Cal. 158.

(*m*) *Chunder Nath v. Bhojrab Chunder*, 10 Cal. 250.

(*n*) *Srinivasammal v. Vijayammal*, 2 Mad. H. C. 37; *Krishna v. Rayappa*, 4 Mad. H. C. 98; *per curiam*, *Jivundas v. Framji*, 7 Bom. H. C. (O. C. J.) 51;

distinction between movable and immovable property as to the mode of granting it (o). Nor are any technical words necessary, provided the intention of the grantor can be made out. Hence, an estate of inheritance will be conferred by words which imperfectly describe such an estate, if an intention to create such an estate appears; and if an estate is given to a man simply without express words of inheritance, it would, in the absence of a conflicting context, carry by Hindu law an estate of inheritance (p). So, the grant of an estate to a man and his children and grandchildren, or from generation to generation, or to a woman and the generations born of her womb, have been held to confer an absolute estate (q). A grant for years to a particular person enures to the benefit of that person's heirs after his death (r). A bequest to A for life, with unlimited powers of willing away or appointing to the property, has been treated as a gift of an absolute estate (s). So a grant from a husband to his widow was held absolute, where it stated that she was to take all his rights without exception, and that neither he nor his heirs were to have any claim to the estate (t). A similar intention will be inferred where the object of the grant, e.g., for building, would be frustrated by a limited possession (u). Such an intention would be negatived when the grantor himself had only a limited estate, and it appeared that the grant was intended to endure so long as that interest lasted, but no longer (v). Or where from the nature of the thing conveyed, an intention to

*Rookho v. Madho*, 1 N.-W. P. 59; *Hurpurshad v. Sheo Dhyal*, 3 I. A. 259; S. C. 26 Suth. 55. Transfer of Property Act (IV of 1882) § 9.

(o) *Per Peel, C. J., Seebkisto v. East India Co.*, 6 M. I. A. 278.

(p) *Per Willes, J., Tagore v. Tagore*, 9 B. L. R. 395; S. C. 18 Suth. 359; *Lekhraj v. Kunhya*, 4 I. A. 223; S. C. 3 Cal. 210; *Churaman v. Balli*, 11 All. 591. Transfer of Property Act (IV of 1882) § 8.

(q) *Bhoobun v. Hurrish*, 5 I. A. 138; S. C. 4 Cal. 23; *Ram Lal v. Secy. of State*, 8 I. A. 46; S. C. 7 Cal. 304; *Harihar v. Uman Pershad*, 14 I. A. 7; S. C. 14 Cal. 296.

(r) *Tej Chund v. Srikanth Ghose*, 3 M. I. A. 261; *Gobind Lal v. Hemendra*, 17 Cal. (P. C.) 686.

(s) *Bai Mamubai v. Dosa Morarji*, 15 Bom. 443; *Javerbai v. Kablibai*, 15 Bom. 326.

(t) *Ram Narain v. Pearay Bhugul*, 9 Cal. 830; See post, § 584

(u) *Gungadhur v. Ayimuddin*, 8 Cal. 960.

(v) *Lekhraj v. Kunhya*, 4 I. A. 223; S. C. 3 Cal. 210.

grant only for the life of the grantee ought to be presumed, as in the case of a jaghire, unless distinct words of inheritance are used (*w*), or an office (*x*), or a gift for maintenance (*y*). Or where the object of the grant was to enable the grantee to perform certain special services, in regard to which the grantor reposed a special confidence in him (*z*). In the case of leases, where no term is fixed, perpetuity cannot be assumed, even where the word "*Mokurruri*" is used, unless there are other circumstances from which such an intention can be inferred (*a*).

§ 366. The Transfer of Property Act (IV of 1882) contains various provisions as to the form of alienation which will modify the Hindu law as to all transactions subsequent to the 1st July 1882.

Statutory provisions as to alienation.

By § 54 A transfer by way of sale "in the case of tangible immovable property of the value of one hundred rupees and upwards, or in the case of a reversion or other intangible thing, can be made only by a registered instrument. In the case of tangible immovable property of a value less than one hundred rupees, such transfer may be made either by a registered instrument or by delivery of the property."

Sales.

By § 59 "Where the principal money secured is one hundred rupees or upwards, a mortgage can be effected only by a registered instrument, signed by the mortgagor and attested by at least two witnesses. Where the principal money secured is less than one hundred rupees, a mortgage may be effected either by an instrument signed and attested

Mortgages.

(*w*) *Gulabdas v. Collector of Surat*, 6 I. A. 54; S. C. 3 Bom. 186; *Ramchandra v. Venkatrao*, 6 Bom. 598; *affd.* 18 I. A. 22; S. C. 15 Bom. 222; *Dosibai v. Ishwardas*, 9 Bom. 561.

(*x*) *Daudsha v. Ismalsha*, 3 Bom. 72.

(*y*) See *post*, § 425.

(*z*) *Kalidas v. Kanhya Lall*, 11 I. A. 218; 11 Cal. 121; *Moulvi Muhammad v. Mt. Fatima Bibi*, 12 I. A. 159; S. C. 8 All. 39.

(*a*) *Sheo Pershad v. Kally Dass*, 5 Cal. 543; *affd.* *Bilasmoni v. Sheo Pershad* 7 I. A. 33; S. C. 8 Cal. 664; *Toolshi Pershad v. Ramnarrain Singh*, 12 I. A. 205; S. C. 12 Cal. 117; *Parmeswar Pertab v. Padmanand Singh*, 15 Cal. (P. C.) 342.



as aforesaid or (except in the case of a simple mortgage, *i.e.*, hypothecation) by delivery of the property. Nothing in this section shall be deemed to render invalid mortgages, made in the towns of Calcutta, Madras, Bombay, Karachi, and Rangoon, by delivery to a creditor or his agent of documents of title to immovable property, with intent to create a security thereon."

## Leases.

By § 107 "A lease of immovable property from year to year, or for any term exceeding one year, or reserving a yearly rent, can be made only by a registered instrument. All other leases of immovable property may be made either by an instrument or by oral agreement."

## Gifts.

By § 123 "For the purpose of making a gift of immovable property, the transfer must be effected by a registered instrument signed by or on behalf of the donor, and attested by at least two witnesses. For the purpose of making a gift of movable property, the transfer may be effected either by a registered instrument signed as aforesaid or by delivery. Such delivery may be made in the same way as goods sold are delivered." (b)

In cases under the old law of gifts it was held that registration of the deed of gift did not amount to, or make up for the want of possession (c). Does the present section dispense with possession? It certainly does not dispense with acceptance of the gift, which is essential under § 122. If then there can be no valid acceptance under Hindu law without possession, actual or symbolical, then § 122 does not alter the Hindu law. But if there can be a sufficient acceptance without possession so as to satisfy § 122, then a registered gift of movable property would be valid under § 123 if accepted, even though Hindu law required delivery

(b) As to gifts by Taluqdars of Oudh, see Act I of 1869, § 13 and cases 11 I. A. 1, 121.

(c) *Vasudev v. Narayan*, 7 Bom. 131; *Dagai Dabee v. Mothura Nath*, 9 Cal. 854.

of possession by the donor, as well as acceptance of the gift by the donee. It will be seen by § 129 that § 122 is not to affect any rule of Hindu law, but that § 123 will not be invalid even though it should do so. The Calcutta High Court has held that delivery of possession of property, whether movable or immovable, is unnecessary, where the deed of gift has been registered (*d*).

---

(*d*) *Dharmodas v. Nistarini*, 14 Cal. 446.

## CHAPTER XI.

### WILLS.

Wills unknown  
to Hindu law.

§ 367. THE origin and growth of the testamentary power among Hindus has always been a perplexity to lawyers. It is admitted that the idea of a will is wholly unknown to Hindu law, and that the native languages do not even possess a word to express the idea (a). In early times, when the family property was vested in the family corporation, and when the members had nothing more than a right of usufruct, the idea that any individual could exercise a power of disposal to commence after his own death, would have been a contradiction in terms. Even in later times, when a greater freedom of disposition had arisen, the principle that a gift could only take effect by possession would seem to oppose an absolute bar to devises. Yet there can be no doubt that from the earliest period of our acquaintance with India we find traces of a struggling towards the testamentary power, often checked, but constantly renewed. It has been common to ascribe this to the influence of English lawyers in the Supreme Courts; but this explanation seems to me untenable. It is very probable that in the Presidency Towns, the example of Englishmen making wills may have stimulated the natives in the same direction, but the King's Judges appear to have been quite neutral in the matter. They were conscious of their ignorance of native law, and anxiously sought the advice of their own pandits (§ 38), and of the Judges of the Company's Courts, and others who were experts in the unknown science. So far were they from grasping at jurisdiction, that they

---

(a) 2 Dig : 516, n. ; 2 Stra. H. L. 418, 220, 431.

absolutely disclaimed it. In 1776 the Supreme Court of Calcutta, after taking time to consider, granted administration to the goods of a Hindu, but on the terms that the administrator should administer according to Hindu law. In 1791 they reconsidered the matter, and decided that probate of the will, or administration of the goods of a Hindu or Muhammedan, could not be granted. It was not till July 1832 that a contrary rule was laid down, and from that date the practice of granting probate and administration to the property of natives was fully established (b). A similar alteration of practice is recorded by Sir *Thomas Strange* as having taken place at Madras (c). The earliest known will of a native is that of the celebrated Omichund. It is dated 1758, a time when the English arms were more in the ascendant than the English Courts (d).

Early instances  
in Supreme  
Courts.

§ 368. It seems to me that the true origin of the testamentary power is to be sought for in that Brahmanical influence, the working of which I have already traced in the law of partition and alienation (e). It displayed itself, especially, in the sanctity attributed to religious gifts, that is gifts to religious men, or Brahmans. These were considered valid where even transfers for value would have been set aside. In other countries gifts try to clothe themselves with the semblance of a sale. Under Hindu law, sales claimed protection by assuming the appearance of a gift (f). It is obvious that a man is never more disposed to pious generosity than in his last days, when the approach of death furnishes him with the strongest motives for investing in the next world that wealth which he can no longer

Origin of wills  
in religious in-  
fluence.

(b) *Re Commula*, Morton, 1; *Goods of Hadjee Mustapha*, *ib.* 74; *Goods of Beebee Muttra*, *ib.* 75.

(c) 1 Stra. H. L. 267.

(d) This will was discussed in a case which came before the Supreme Court of Calcutta in 1793. See Montriou, 321; *per Phear, J., Tagore v. Tagore*, 4 B. L. R. (O. C. J.) 138; Beng. Reg. II. (Collectors and Board of Revenue) and XXXVI of 1793, (Registry for Wills and Deeds) cited by *Macpherson, J. Krishnaramani v. Ananda*, 4 B. L. R. (O. C. J.) 288; *per Norman, J., Tagore v. Tagore*, 4 B. L. R. (O. C. J.) 217.

(e) *Ante*, §§ 219, 237, 238. See particularly the passage from Sir H. S. Maine, cited § 237.

(f) See *Mitakshara*, i. 1. § 32; *Raghunandana*, v, 25.

Early history of  
wills.

enjoy in the present. The acuteness of the Brahman would have readily discovered and utilised this fact. Nothing is more remarkable in the earliest Bengal wills than the enormous amounts which they bestow for religious purposes. The same thing was remarked by Sir *Thomas Strange* in all the wills made by Hindus in Madras, and he observes somewhat cynically, that "the proportion is commonly in the ratio of the iniquity with which the property has been acquired, or of the sensuality and corruption to which it has been devoted" (g). It is probable that such bequests would often take the form of a *donatio mortis causâ*, revocable if the grantor survived, or that they were effected by death-bed dispositions, followed up by immediate delivery of possession. But there are texts of the Hindu sages which contain the actual germ of a will, and which were capable of being developed into a complete testamentary system. *Katyayana* says, "What a man has promised in health or in sickness, for a religious purpose, must be given; and if he die without giving it, his son shall doubtless be compelled to deliver it." And again, "After delivering what is due as a friendly gift (promised by the father), let the remainder be divided among the heirs." And so *Harita* says: "A promise made in words, but not performed in deed, is a debt of conscience both in this world and the next" (h). Such promises, being treated as debts, would be enforced against the heir in exactly the same manner as an ordinary secular debt. At first they would be treated as a moral obligation, and then, by analogy, as a legal obligation. It is significant that the principle seems first to have been applied in favour of pious gifts. But it would rapidly extend to all dispositions of property, to the extent of a man's power of disposing of it. In case of separate and self-acquired property the right would naturally be admitted with little hesitation. It would afterwards be

(g) 2 Stra. H. L. 453.

(h) 2 Dig. 96; 3 Dig. 388; 2 Dig. 171. The only writer, as far as I know, who has remarked the bearing of these texts upon the present question is M. Gibelin. See a very interesting discussion (Vol. ii. Titre. vii), in which he points out that the Hindu will was a native and not an European invention.



applied to the undivided share of a co-heir, or to ancestral property in the hands of a father or sole owner. In each province the rapidity and extent of the growth of the testamentary power would depend upon the degree to which the control of the testator over his property was admitted. This is exactly what took place.

§ 369. The law of devise was, as might be expected, first settled in Bengal, where the power of alienation was most widely extended. The reported cases commence in 1786, and the first two related to divided and self-acquired property, as to which, after reference to the Pandits, the wills were maintained (*i*). In 1792 the Nuddea case, (*k*) which has already been stated (§ 347), was decided in the Sudder Court, and it was followed next year in the Supreme Court by the case of *Dialchund v. Kissory* (*l*), where the property appears to have been self-acquired. In both these cases the Pandits affirmed the right of a father to devise property, whether ancestral or self-acquired, and the former of the two is stated by Mr. Colebrooke to have been accepted as establishing the point. Mr. Sutherland, however, to whom the latter case was referred for his opinion, stated that the will would be only valid as against sons, "provided no part of the property conferred by it were real ancestral property" (*m*). This view was evidently not taken by the profession, for in 1800 a most important case arising out of the *Rajah Nobkissen's* will was litigated in the Supreme Court, where the Rajah, who had a natural-born and an adopted son, bequeathed an ancestral taluq to his adopted son, and the four brothers of such son, thereby depriving his natural son of all interest in the taluq, and his adopted son of four-fifths of his interest. The validity of the will was admitted without dispute, though the adoption was

(*i*) *Munnoo v. Gopee*, Montr. 290; *Russick v. Choitun*, *ib.* 304; 2 M. Dig. 220.

(*k*) *Eshanchund v. Eshorchund*, 1 S. D. 2.

(*l*) Montr. 871; F. MacN. 357.

(*m*) 2 Stra. H. L. 429. See Mr. Colebrooke's own opinions, 2 Stra. H. L. 431, 435, 437.

Their validity  
established in  
Bengal.

contested (*n*). In 1808 the will of *Nemychurn Mullick* was contested in the Supreme Court, and the decree declared "that by the Hindu law *Nemychurn Mullick* might and could dispose by will of all his property, as well movable as immovable, and as well ancestral as otherwise." This case went on appeal upon another point to the Privy Council, but the finding as to the validity of the will was never disputed (*o*). Accordingly, the will of a brother of *Nemychurn*, who died possessed of great wealth, ancestral and self-acquired, was never contested, although by it he almost completely disinherited one of his sons (*p*). In 1812 the *Sudder Pandits*, when consulted as to the validity of an alleged devise by a widow, laid down the general principle, that "the same rule applies to bequests as to gifts; every person who has authority, while in health, to transfer property to another, possesses the same authority of bequeathing it" (*q*). Finally, after the period of doubt caused by the decision in *Bhowanny Churn's* case, the matter was set at rest for ever, as far as Bengal is concerned, by the certificate of the *Sudder Court* in 1831, which has already been set out (§ 347). It is now beyond dispute that in Bengal a father, as regards all his property, and a co-heir, as regards his share, may dispose of it by will as he likes, whatever may be its nature (*r*).

Minor.  
Married woman.

§ 370. A minor has been held in Bengal to be incapable of making a will (*s*). A married woman may make a will of her *stridhana* or any other property which is absolutely at her own disposal. But she cannot devise property inherited from males, since her interest in it ceases at her death (*t*).

(*n*) *Gopee v. Rajkristna*, Montr. 381; S. C. F. MacN. 356.

(*o*) *Ramtoonoo v. Ramgopaul*, F. MacN. 336; S. C. 1 Kn. 245.

(*p*) F. MacN. 350.

(*q*) *Sreenarain v. Bhya Jha*, 2 S. D. 23 (29, 37).

(*r*) *Per* *Ld. Kingsdown, Nagalutchmee v. Gopoo*, 6 M. I. A. 344; *per* *Peacock, C. J., Tagore v. Tagore*, 4 B. L. R. (O. C. J.) 159; *per* *Willes, J., Tagore v. Tagore*, 9 B. L. R. 396; S. C. 18 Suth. 359.

(*s*) *Cossinaut Bysack v. Hurroosoondry*, F. MacN. 81; 2 M. Dig. 198, note.

(*t*) *Teencowree v. Dinonath*, 3 Suth. 49; *Chooneelal v. Jussoo*, 1 Bor. 55 [60]; *Dhoolubh v. Jeeves*, *ib.* 67 [75]; *Umroot v. Kulyandas*, *ib.* 284 [314]; *Venkata Rama v. Venkata Suriya*, 2 Mad. (P. C.) 333.

Both the above points are now affirmed by statute as regards Hindus (*u*).

§ 371. In Southern India wills had a much more chequered career, as might be anticipated from the stricter views entertained as to the family union. During the time Sir *Thomas Strange* was on the Bench no question as to wills arose in such a form as to require a decision. He evidently considered them a mere innovation, though, after consultation with Mr. Colebrooke, he was disposed to think that they might be allowed to the same extent to which a gift *inter vivos* would have been valid (*v*). He cites several futwahs of Madras pandits in which they seem to take the same view. These are all commented upon by Mr. Ellis, whose authority on Madras law and usage ranked very high. He asserted with confidence that no Hindu could make a will which would turn his property after his death into a different course from that which it would have taken by Hindu law. He intimated a very strong doubt whether the Pandits understood what was meant when they were questioned as to the operation of a will (*w*). It is quite certain that in the case which ultimately settled the law, they thought they were being consulted as to the effect of a gift (*x*). The course of decisions in Madras for many years was certainly in accordance with his view. The only case litigated in the Supreme Court was one where a testator had bequeathed part of his self-acquired property for the performance of religious ceremonies (*y*). This would clearly have been valid under the text of Katyayana already cited (§ 368). In the Sudder Court, however, there were numerous decisions. The first was in 1817, but as the devise was in favour of an adopted son, the first question was as to the validity of the

Wills in Southern India.

Early instances doubtful.

(*u*) Act X of 1865, § 46 [Succession] extended to Hindus by Act XXI of 1870, § 2, and see § 3 [Hindu Wills] and Act V of 1881, § 149 [Probate and Administration].

(*v*) *Veerapermall v. Narrain*, 1 N. C. 91; 1 Stra. H. L. 267.

(*w*) 2 Stra. H. L. 217—228.

(*x*) See *post*, § 374. It must be remembered that the Pandits did not speak English, and that their language contained no equivalent for will.

(*y*) *Narrainsamy v. Arnachella*, 1 Stra. H. L. 268, note; *Vallinayagam v. Pachche*, 1 Mad. H. C. 336.

adoption, and as its validity was established, that of the will never arose (z). The next cases arose in 1824 and 1828, and gave rise to much litigation, extending ultimately to the Privy Council. In these a widow sued to set aside two alienations, made by her deceased husband to distant relations, of property which would have otherwise come to her as his heir. In the first case the document is spoken of as a will, but was in terms a deed of gift, and recited that possession had been given. This, however, appears not to have been done. The decision was in favour of the widow, but upon the ground that upon the proper construction of the will the devisee only took as manager for the heir, and was now dead. In their judgment the Court stated as their opinion "that under the Hindu law a man is authorised to dispose of his property by will, which under the same law he could have alienated during his survivorship by any other instrument" (a). This, of course, was purely *obiter dictum*. In the second case, possession under the gift was established. The property was self-acquired, and the question was correctly put to the pandits, whether a gift of self-acquired property made by a man without male issue was valid as against a widow, who was left an heir to other property to a large extent. The pandits answered that the gift was valid, and the Court so decided. This case was confirmed by the Privy Council. There, too, though the document is spoken of as a will, the transaction is treated as an alienation, and its validity is rested on the opinion of the Hindu law officers, who had dealt with it purely as such (b). In an intermediate case the question was whether a will would be valid if it left the whole of a partible zemindary to one of two sons. The Court decided that the document really left it to the two sons as joint heirs. But they said, "The Court have repeatedly decided that the will of a Hindu is of no validity or effect whatever, except so far as it may be

*Dictum of  
Sudder Court.*

*Early instances  
doubtful.*

(z) *Arnachellum v. Iyasamy*, 1 Mad. Dec. 154.

(a) *Mulrauze Vencata v. Mulrauze Lutchmiah*, 1 Mad. Dec. 438, 449.

(b) *Mulrauze v. Chellakany*, 2 Mad. Dec. 12, *affirmed*, 2 M. I. A. 54.



sistent with Hindu law" (c). Later still the same Court treated a will, by which a grandfather was asserted to have left landed property to his wife to the prejudice of his sons, as being absolutely invalid as against their sons, *i.e.*, his own grandsons (d).

§ 372. So far there really had been no actual decisions, but the tendency of the Sudder Judges had certainly been to accept the opinions of Sir *Thomas Strange*, Mr. *Colebrooke*, and the pandits, that the legality of a will must be tried by the same tests as that of a gift; for instance, that it would be valid if made to the prejudice of a widow, invalid if made to the prejudice of male issue. At this time Madras Reg. V of 1829 (Hindu Wills) was passed. It recited that wills were instruments unknown, and had been made so as to be totally repugnant, to the authorities prevailing in Madras; it then repealed a former regulation which had authorised the executors of the will of a Hindu to take charge of his property, and enacted that for the future Hindu wills should have no legal force whatever, except so far as they were in conformity with Hindu law, according to authorities prevalent in the Madras Presidency. This regulation appears to have induced the Judges to regard wills as being wholly inoperative. Wills were not only set aside where they prejudiced the issue, as by an unequal distribution of ancestral property between the sons (e); but the Court also laid down that where a man without issue bequeathed his property away from his widow and daughters, such a will would be absolutely illegal and void, unless they had assented to it (f). These decisions would appear to have put wills completely out of Court. But in the very next year a case was decided which ultimately proved to be the commencement of a complete revolution on the point. The circum-

Tendency of opinion.

Reg. V of 1829.

Validity of wills denied.

(c) *Sooranany v. Sooranany*, 1 Mad. Dec. 495.

(d) *Yejnamoorthy v. Chavaly*, 2 Mad. Dec. 16.

(e) *Moottoovengada v. Toombayasamy*, Mad. Dec. of 1849, 27.

(f) *Tullapragadah v. Croredy*, 2 Mad. Dec. 79; *Seracawmy v. Vaneyummal*, Mad. Dec. of 1850, 50.



stances attending it were so singular as to merit a little detail.

Current reversed.

*Nagalutchmy v. Nadaraja.*

§ 373. The suit was by a widow to recover her husband's estate, which consisted in part of ancestral immovable property. The defendants set up a will executed by the deceased, by which he constituted them executors and managers of his estate, and, after providing for his wife and daughters, left the rest of his property to religious and charitable uses, with a proviso that if his wife, then pregnant, bore a son, the estate should revert to him on his coming of age. The will was found to be genuine, but the widow set up an authority to adopt a son in the event of a daughter being born. The Civil Judge consulted the Sudder Pandits, and asked whether the will was valid, and if so, whether it would be invalidated by the authority to adopt, if actually given. The Pandits answered, "The will referred to in the question is valid under the Hindu law, the testator having thereby bequeathed a portion of his estate for the maintenance of his wife, and other members of his family, whom he was bound to protect, and directed the remainder to be appropriated to charitable purposes in the event of his wife, who was then pregnant, not being delivered of a son. If the testator had really given his wife verbal instructions to adopt a son in the event of her not bearing male issue, her compliance with those instructions would, of course, invalidate the will according to the Hindu law, it being incompetent for the testator who authorised the adoption of a son to alienate the whole of his estate, and thereby injure the means of the maintenance of his would-be heir." The Civil Judge found against the alleged authority to adopt, and decided in favour of the will. His decision was given in 1849, before the decision of the Sudder Court last quoted. In appeal to the Sudder Udalt, the widow urged that under Reg. V of 1829 (Hindu Wills) the will was void. The case was heard by a single Judge, who affirmed the decree of the lower Court. In regard to the validity of the will, he said, "The third objection taken by the appel-

lant is that the will is illegal, because the widow is the party to whom the law gives the estate. The Court have referred to all the authorities quoted by the appellant in support of this position, and find that although the opinions regarding wills of Hindus generally are conflicting, yet that the majority of them are against the argument of the appellant. It is unnecessary to cite all the opinions given on the subject, and the Court will content itself with referring to the case of *Ramtoonoo Mullick v. Ramgopaul Mullick* (Morl. Dig., p. 39, Nos. 3 & 4), in which it was held that a Hindu might, and could, dispose by will of all his property, movable and immovable, and as well ancestral as otherwise, and this decision was affirmed on appeal by the Judicial Committee of the Privy Council. Questions, however, regarding the legality of the will now under discussion were referred to the law officers of the Court, to whom the legislature have assigned the duty of declaring the law on such matters, and they distinctly stated their opinion, that it is a valid and good instrument. The arguments, therefore, of the appellant that it is not recognizable under the provisions of Reg. V of 1829, cannot be sustained" (g).

§ 374. Upon this decision, Mr. *Strange*, lately a Judge of the Madras Sudder and High Courts, remarks (h), "This decision was passed by a single Judge, confessedly ignorant of the law. He sought to guide himself by authorities, but found them conflicting. Supporting himself by the opinion of the Pandits, and a judgment by the Calcutta Supreme Court, affirmed by the Privy Council, he upheld the will then in issue, which appointed trustees to the testator's property, to the prejudice of his widow. The Pandits then applied to, are the same who have since declared that no Hindu can make a will, and they explain that they gave the opinion rested on in the above case under the idea that they were called upon to test the will by the power the testator had to

Criticised by  
Mr. Strange.

---

(g) *Nagalutchmy v. Nadaraja*, Mad. Dec. of 1851, 226.  
(h) *Stra. Man.* § 176.

deal with the property during his lifetime, in the manner he had done by will." Certainly no particular authority can be allowed to the decision of the Sudder Court. It is impossible to imagine where the learned Judge could have found the conflicting decisions he referred to, unless among the Bengal reports, and the case of *Ramtoonoo v. Ramgopaul* was, of course, upon this point of no authority whatever in Madras. The only Madras authority he could have found was the *dictum* in *Mulrauze Vencata v. Mulrauze Lutchmiah*, (1 Mad. Dec. 449,) which laid down the broad principle that whatever a man may do by act *inter vivos*, he may do by will. Probably this principle accounts for the mode in which the question appears to have been put to the Pandits, and for their misapprehension as to the point on which their opinion was required. That there must have been some misapprehension appears, not only from Mr. *Strange's* statement, made after personal consultation with them, but from a subsequent *futwah* of theirs, in which the very distinction is taken between a gift and a will. In 1852 they pronounced that "A man may in his lifetime alienate his property to the prejudice of his widow, leaving her the means of maintenance; but he cannot make arrangements that such arrangement shall take place after his death, since his widow would be entitled to what he died possessed of" (i).

Founded on  
mistake of Pan-  
dits.

Confirmed on  
appeal.

Privy Council  
decision.

§ 375. However, the case went, on appeal, to the Privy Council, and was there affirmed. Their Lordships said (k), "It may be allowed that in the ancient Hindu law, as it was understood through the whole of Hindustan, testamentary instruments, in the sense affixed by English lawyers to that expression, were unknown; and it is stated by a writer of authority (Sir *Thomas Strange*) that the Hindu language has no term to express what we mean by a will. But it does not necessarily follow that what in effect, though not in form, are testamentary instruments, which are only to

(i) Sudder Pandits, 19th July, 1852; *Stra. Man.* § 178.

(k) *Nagallutchmee v. Gopoo*, 6 M. I. A. 309, 344. See too *per* *Ld. Kingsdown*, *Bhoobum Moyee v. Ram Kishore*, 10 M. I. A. 308; S. C. 3 Suth. (P. C.) 15.

come into operation, and affect property, after the death of the maker of the instrument, were equally unknown. However this may be, the strictness of the ancient law has long since been relaxed, and throughout Bengal a man who is the absolute owner of property may now dispose of it by will as he pleases, whether it be ancestral or not. This point was resolved several years ago by the concurrence of all the judicial authorities in Calcutta, as well of the Supreme as of the Sudder Court (l). No doubt the law of Madras differs in some respects, and amongst others with respect to wills, from that of Bengal. But even in Madras it is settled that a will of property, not ancestral, may be good. A decision to this effect has been recognized and acted upon by the Judicial Committee (m), and, indeed, the rule of law to that extent is not disputed in this case. If, then, the will does not affect ancestral property, it must be, not because an owner of property by the Madras law cannot make a will, but because, by some peculiarity of ancestral property, it is withdrawn from the testamentary power. It was very ingeniously argued by the respondent's counsel, that in all cases where a man is able to dispose of his property by act *inter vivos*, he may do so by will; that he cannot do so when he has a son, because the son, immediately on his birth, becomes coparcener with his father; that the objection to bequeathing ancestral property is founded on the Hindu notion of an undivided family; but that where there are no males in the family the liberty of bequeathing is unlimited. It is not necessary for their Lordships to lay down so broad a proposition, as they think it safer to confine themselves to the particular case before them. Under the circumstances of testator's family when he made his will and codicil, and having regard to the instruments themselves, the Pandits

---

(l) This evidently refers to the certificate of the Sudder Judges to the Supreme Court in 1831. See *ante*, § 347.

(m) See the case of *Mulraz v. Chalekany*, 2 M. I. A. 54, and the two cases in the Sudder Court, *Mulrauze Vencata v. Mulrauze Lutchmiah*, 1 Mad. Dec. 438, and *Mulrauze v. Chellakany*, 2 Mad. Dec. 12, *ante*, § 371, where it is shown that both were cases of gift; the one which was affirmed in the P. C. having undoubtedly been followed by possession given to the donee in the life of the donor.



to whom this question was properly referred by the Court—the Pandits of the Sudder Dewanny Udalut—have declared their opinion that these instruments are sufficient to dispose of ancestral estate; that opinion has been affirmed by two Judges successively, of whom it is but justice to say that they appear to have examined the subject very carefully, and after much consideration to have pronounced very satisfactory judgments, though in one or two incidental observations which have fallen from them their Lordships may not entirely concur.”

Change effected  
by it.

§ 376. This decision undoubtedly gave a new direction to the law of Madras as regards wills. Being a decision of the Court of final appeal, it ought to have been impossible ever again to lay down the principle, that a will could have no operation, and must be treated as wholly invalid, if its directions were opposed to the rules of succession which would have prevailed in its absence. The decision, no doubt, was expressly based upon the opinion of the Pandits, and the judgments of two Judges. The former appears to have been founded on a misconception, and the latter upon the erroneous application of decisions given under one system of law, to a case which ought to have been governed by a wholly different system. But there can be little doubt that the decision was in unconscious conformity to the popular feeling, a feeling which aimed at increased liberty in regard to property, and which showed itself by attempts to alienate it in ways unknown to the law of the *Mitakshara*. In fact, the people of Southern India were trying, perhaps without knowing what they did, to take upon themselves the powers which *Jimuta Vahana* and his disciples had conferred upon the Hindus of Bengal. But beyond the fact that their Lordships, as it were, gave vitality to wills, the actual effect of the decision was very narrow. It carefully refrained from asserting that the power of bequest was co-extensive with that of alienation *inter vivos*. It laid down that a man, who had in other ways



provided for his wife and daughters, might devise ancestral immovable property as he pleased to their prejudice. It seemed to assume that he could not do so as against male descendants. It neither affirmed, nor denied, the further doctrine of the Pandits, that, if he had given authority to adopt, his devise would be invalid as against a son adopted in pursuance of such authority (*n*).

§ 377. The decree of the Judicial Committee was pronounced in 1856, and in 1852 and subsequent years several decisions of the Madras Sudder Court are recorded, which seem to have been passed in perfect unconsciousness of their own decree in 1851. In the first case (*o*) a person who is described as the son of the cousin-german of the testator, sued to set aside a will by the deceased in favour of the foster son. The property in this case was certainly not ancestral. It had come to the testator from his brother, to whom it had been bequeathed by his maternal grandmother. He might therefore have disposed of it by gift at his pleasure (§ 318). The Sudder Pandits said, "As the Hindu law does not recognize a foster son, it was not legal that F. (the testator) should constitute H. (the special appellant) his foster son, and make a will accordingly, nor is it consistent with the Shaster that H. should perform F.'s funeral rites. Such performance on his part is legally ineffectual, and cannot entitle him to the property of F., which must go to F.'s sapinda kinsmen, who are included in the order of succession to the property of a person who died leaving no male issue." The Sudder Court affirmed the correctness of this exposition, but dismissed the suit on the ground that the plaintiff was not the testator's heir. In 1855 and 1859 the Sudder Court again broadly laid down the rule that a will was of no effect unless it took effect by possession during the donor's lifetime; that as a mere will

Later decisions.

Sudder Court  
refuse to act on  
Privy Council  
decision.

(*n*) See F. MacN. 151, 228; *Durma v. Coomara*, Mad. Dec. of 1852, p. 111.  
(*o*) *Samy Josyen v. Rumien*, Mad. Dec. of 1852, p. 60.

it created no title, and could not affect the inheritance (p). In 1861 there were three cases, in all of which the wills were set aside as being opposed to Hindu law. In two of these cases the will was made to the prejudice of the testator's widow, as in the Privy Council case. The latest case is said to have been exactly similar to that of *Nagallutchmy v. Nadaraja*; but the Sudder Court refused to be bound by that decision, holding that it had been based upon an opinion of the Pandits, which was given under a misapprehension, and which the law officers had afterwards retracted (q).

Harmony restored by

High Court decision.

§ 378. In 1862 the High Court was constituted in Madras, and the question shortly came again before a tribunal which was more willing to be bound by the decisions of the Privy Council than its predecessor. Here the testator, who had no male issue, had bequeathed the bulk of his property, movable and immovable, to a distant relation, allotting what was admitted to be a sufficient maintenance to his legal representative, his widow. No possession had been given, and confessedly the disposition could only operate as a will. There was no finding whether the property was ancestral or self-acquired, but the Chief Justice said it must be assumed to be the former. The Court reviewed all the previous decisions, and affirmed the will. They said, "It is not necessary for us here to consider and lay down any general rule as to how far, or under what circumstances the law gives to a Hindu the power of disposal by will. But we may observe, that now that the legal right to make a will is settled, there seems nothing in principle or reason opposed to the exercise of the power being allowed co-extensively (as stated in some of the cases, and forcibly urged in *Nagallutchmy v. Nadaraja*) with the independent right of gift or

(p) Stra. Man. § 177; *Chocalinga v. Iyah*, Mad. Dec. of 1859, 85; *Kasale v. Palaniayi*, ib. 247. See, too, *Bogaraz v. Tanjore Venkatarav*, Mad. Dec. of 1860, 115.

(q) *Muttu v. Annavaiyangar*, Mad. Dec. of 1861, 67; *Virukumara v. ib.* 147; *Vallinayagam v. Pachche*, 1 Mad. H. C. 838, note.

other disposal by act *inter vivos*, which by law or established usage, or custom having the force of law, a native now possesses in Madras. To this extent the power of disposition can reasonably be considered to be in conformity with the respective proprietary rights of the possessor of property, and of heirs and coparceners, as provided and secured by the provisions of Hindu law" (r). This decision, of course, put an end to all discussion as to the capacity of a testator in Madras to make a binding will. The extent of that capacity will be considered further on (§ 380).

§ 379. The same silent revolution appears to have taken place in the Bombay Presidency. In a very early case in which the pandits were consulted they said, "There is no mention of wills in our Shasters, and therefore they ought not to be made;" and proceeded to point out that the owner of property could only dispose of it in a manner, and to the persons, directed by law (s). Accordingly, the Shastries declared wills to be invalid by which a man devised property away from his wife and daughters, though he provided for their maintenance, putting it on the general principle that the wife was heir, and therefore the will was ineffectual (t). And, similarly, where the will was in favour of one of two sisters' sons, to the exclusion of a third sister, and the second son of the second sister (u). In all these cases, it will be observed, a gift would have been perfectly valid. These decisions ranged from 1806 to 1820. When the current changed I am unable to state; but in 1866 *Westropp, J.*, said, "In the Supreme Court the wills of Hindus have been always recognized, and also in the High Court, at the original side. Whatever questions there may formerly have

Wills originally  
not recognized  
in Bombay.

Validity of  
in Bombay.

(r) *Vallinayagam v. Pachche*, 1 Mad. H. C. 326, 339; *Ashutosh v. Doorga Churn*, 6 I. A. 182; S. C. 5 Cal. 438; S. C. 5 C. L. R. 296.

(s) 2 Stra. H. L. 449.

(t) *Deo Bae v. Wan Bae*, 1 Bor. 27 [29]; *Goolab v. Phool*, *ib.* 154 [173]; *Gungaram v. Tappee*, *ib.* 372 [412].

(u) *Ichharam v. Prumanund*, 2 Bor. 471 [515]. For cases where the persons disinherited may possibly have been coparceners; see *Tooljaram v. Nurbheram*, 1 Bor. 380 [421]; *Hureewulubh v. Keshowram*, 2 Bor. 6 [7]; and *Man Bae v. Krishnee*, *ib.* 124 [141].

been as to the right of a Hindu to make a will relating to his property in the Mofussil, or as to the recognition of wills by the Hindu law, there can be no doubt that testamentary writings are, as returns made within the last few years from the Zillahs show, made in all parts of the Mofussil of this Presidency; but, as might have been expected, much more frequently in some districts than in others, and this Court at its appellate side, has, on several occasions, recognized and acted on such documents" (v).

Extent of the  
testamentary  
power.

§ 380. The extent of the testamentary power, after being subject to much discussion, has at length been finally settled by decisions, and by express legislation. Whatever property is so completely under the control of the testator that he may give it away during his lifetime, he may also devise by will. Hence, a man may bequeath his separate, or his self-acquired, property; and one who, by the extinction of coparceners, holds all his property in severalty, may devise it, even in Malabar, so as to defeat the claims of remote heirs (w). So, a woman may dispose by will of such parts of her *stridhanum* as are during her life absolutely under her own control (x). She cannot dispose of property which she has inherited from a male, and as to which her estate is limited by the usual restrictions (y). A member of an undivided family cannot bequeath even his own share of the joint property, because "at the moment of death, the right by survivorship is at conflict with the right by devise. Then the title by survivorship, being the prior title, takes precedence to the exclusion of that by devise" (z).

(v) *Narottam v. Narsandás*, 3 Bom. H. C. (A. C. J.) 8.

(w) *Beer Pertab v. Maharajah Rajender*, 12 M. I. A. 38; S. C. 9 Suth. (P. C.) 15; *Narottam v. Narsandás*, 3 Bom. H. C. (A. C. J.) 6; *Alami v. Komu*, 12 Mad. 126. The same rule appears to prevail in the Punjab. Punjab customs, 34, 68. Punjab Customary law, 111. 94.

(x) *Venkata Rama v. Venkata Suriya*, 2 Mad. (P. C.) 333.

(y) *Bai Devkore v. Amritram*, 10 Bom. 372.

(z) *Per curiam, Villa Butten v. Yamenamma*, 8 Mad. H. C. 6; *Gooroova v. Narrainsawmy*, ib. 13; *Narottam v. Narsandás*, 3 Bom. H. C. (A. C. J.) 6; *Gangubai v. Ramanna*, 3 Bom. H. C. (A. C. J.) 66; *Udaram v. Ranu*, 11 Bom. H. C. 76; *Lakshman v. Ramchandra*, 7 I. A. 181; S. C. 5 Bom. 48. This rule applies in favour of a son in *gremio matris* as much as it does in the case of a son in *esse*. *Hanmant Ramchandra v. Bhimacharya*, 12 Bom. 105.



And on the same principle, a devise by one of several widows of property to which she is entitled jointly with her co-widows, is invalid (a). The cases which decide this latter point are all from Madras and Bombay. But they would, of course, have been followed by the Bengal Courts in cases under the Mitakshara law, since they do not admit the right of a coparcener even by sale, much less by gift, to dispose of his own undivided share during his lifetime, without the consent of those jointly interested in it (§ 337). The same result is arrived at by legislation. Act XXI of 1870 (Hindu Wills) extends to Hindus, Jains, Sikhs and Buddhists various provisions of the Succession Act, X of 1865, which relate to wills; but § 3 provides "that nothing herein contained shall authorise a testator to bequeath property which he could not have alienated *inter vivos*, or to deprive any persons of any right of maintenance of which, but for § 2 (the extending section) he could not deprive them by will; and that nothing herein contained shall affect any law of adoption or intestate succession." The probate and administration Act V of 1881, which also applies to Hindus, provides by § 4, that "nothing herein contained shall vest in an executor or administrator any property of a deceased person which would otherwise have passed by survivorship to some other person."

§ 381. So far we have been treating of the testator's power to devise as it relates to the persons to whom he may devise, that is, his power to alter the order of succession as it would arise in the event of intestacy. But a completely different question arises as to his power to alter the nature of the estate which will vest in his devisee, that is, to create an estate of a different species from that to which the law would give rise. As to this, the rule is that, so far as he has the power of bequest at all, he may not only direct who shall take the estate, but may also direct what quantity of estate they shall take, both as regards the object

Estate must be one allowed by Hindu law.

---

(a) *Gurivi Reddi v. Chinamma*, 7 Mad.



matter to be taken, and the duration of time for which it is to be held, and he may also arrange, so that on the termination of an estate in one person, the estate shall pass over, wholly or in part, to another person. But this liberty is shackled by the condition that no one limitation, either as regards the person who is to take, or the estate that is to be taken, shall violate any of the fundamental principles of the Hindu law (b). Therefore the person who is to take must be capable of taking, and the estate which he is given must be an estate recognized by the Hindu law, and not encompassed with limitations or restrictions opposed to the nature of the estate given. And though trustees may be employed to facilitate a legal form of bequest, they cannot be made use of so as to carry out indirectly what the law does not allow to be done directly.

**Shifting estate.**

§ 382. The first point was laid down by implication in the case of *Soorjeemoney Dossee v. Denobundo Mullick* (c), and expressly in the case of *Tagore v. Tagore* (d). In the former case the testator, a Hindu resident in Calcutta, by the 5th clause of his will left his property to his five sons in such a manner as would, if there had been nothing more, have made them absolute owners. By the 11th clause he declared that if any of his five sons should die without male issue, his share should pass over to the sons then living or their sons, and that neither his widow nor his daughter, nor his daughter's son, should get any share out of his share. The event which he contemplated took place. One of the sons died, leaving no male issue. Under the law of Bengal the widow would inherit his share, and she claimed it, notwithstanding the will, on the ground that the bequest to the son was absolute, and the gift over invalid. The claim was rejected in the Supreme Court, and on appeal the Lord

(b) See *per Turner, L. J.*, *Sonatun Bysack v. Juggutsoondree*, 8 M. I. A. 85.

(c) 6 M. I. A. 526; S. O. 4 Suth. (P. O.) 114; 9 M. I. A. 123.

(d) 4 B. L. R. (O. C. J.) 103, on appeal in the (P. O.) 9 B. L. R. 377; S. O. 18 Suth. 359; I. A. Supp. Vol. 47.

Justice *Knight Bruce* said (e), "Whatever may have formerly been considered the state of that law as to the testamentary power of Hindoos over their property, that power has now long been recognized, and must be considered as completely established. This being so, we are to say, whether there is anything against public convenience, anything generally mischievous, or anything against the general principles of Hindoo law, in allowing a testator to give property, whether by way of remainder, or by way of executory bequest upon an event which is to happen, if at all, immediately on the close of a life in being. Their Lordships think that there is not; that there would be great general inconvenience and public mischief in denying such power, and that it is their duty to advise Her Majesty that such a power does exist." The bequest above cited was in fact exactly the arrangement which the Mitakshara law would have made for the devolution of the testator's property. If the effect of his will had been permanently to impress upon his property, in the hands of all its successive holders, the law of inheritance prescribed by the Mitakshara in place of that of the Daya Bhaga which governed the family, the will would undoubtedly have been invalid according to the doctrines laid down in the Tagore case. But the case which arose for decision was simply that of a gift to a person in existence, with a proviso that in a certain event the property should pass over to another person also in existence. This was the ordinary case of a gift made with a condition annexed fixing its duration (f). A bequest absolute in one event, for life in another. It is, however, undecided whether the Hindu law allows an estate to be given subject to conditions subsequent, upon the happening of any of which an estate, which has once vested, would be divested. And whether the gift over of an estate

Devise with gift over.

(e) 9 M. I. A. 135.

(f) See the case explained, 4 B. L. R. (O. C. J) 192, and 9 B. L. R. 399; S. C. 18 Suth. 359; see, also, *Bhoobum Moyee v. Ram Kishore*, 10 M. I. A. 279, 308, 311; S. C. 3 Suth. (P. C.) 15; *Bhoobun v. Hurrish*, 5 I. A. 186; S. C. 4 Cal. 78; *Kumar Tarakeswar v. Kumar Shoshi*, 10 I. A. 51; S. C. 10 Cal. 952; *Kristoromoney v. Narendro*, 16 I. A. 29; S. C. 16 Cal. 383.

on events which may happen not upon the close of a life in being, but at some uncertain time during its continuance, would not also be void (g).

Executory  
bequest.

383. The language of the Judicial Committee which might be taken as laying down the general rule that an executory bequest would always be valid by Hindu law where it would be valid by the law of England, was much relied on in a subsequent case of great importance, where an attempt was made to push the right of bequest to an extent greater than would be allowed even in England. This was the case of *Jatindra Mohun Tagore v. Ganendra Mohun Tagore* (h). There the testator, who had property, ancestral and self-acquired, real and personal, producing an income of 2½ lacs, commenced his will by reciting that he had already provided for his only son, and that he was to take nothing whatever under his will. He then vested the whole of his estate in trustees with provisions for their number being constantly maintained. After providing for numerous legacies he proceeded to direct the course in which the *corpus* of the property should devolve. The key to this was to be found in his express wish that the bulk of the property should neither be diminished nor divided. To effect this he directed that the legacies and annuities should be paid gradually out of the income; and while this process was going on, the trustees were to hold the property, paying only the balance of the yearly income to "the person entitled to the beneficial enjoyment of the real property." As soon as all charges upon the estate were paid off, the trustees were to convey the real estate to the use of the person who should, under the limitations of the will, be entitled to it, subject to the limitations therein expressed, so far as the then condition of circumstances would permit, and so far only as such limitations could be introduced into a deed of conveyance or settlement without infringing

Tagore case.

(g) *Ram Lal v. Secy. of State*, 8 I. A. 46, 63; S. C. 7 Cal. 304.  
(h) 4 B. L. R. (O. C. J.) 103, on appeal in the (P. C.) 9 B. L. R. 377; S. C. 18 Suth. 359; S. C. I. A. Supp. Vol. 47.

upon any law against perpetuities which might then be in force. The person beneficially interested in the real estate was to be ascertained by reference to the following limitations :— Tagore case.

1. To the defendant Jatindra for life.
2. To his eldest son, born during the testator's life time, for life.
3. In strict settlement upon the first and other sons of such eldest son in tail male.
4. Similar limitations for life and in tail male upon the other sons of Jatindra, born in the testator's life time, and their sons successively.
5. Limitations in tail male upon the sons of Jatindra born after the testator's death.
6. "After the failure or determination of the uses and estates hereinbefore limited to the defendant Surendra for life."
7. Like limitations for his sons and their sons.
8. Upon failure or determination of that estate, like limitations in favour of the sons of Lalit Mohun, who was dead at the making of the will, and their sons. The will expressly adopted primogeniture in the male line through males, and excluded women and their descendants, and all rights of provision or maintenance of either man or woman. It also forbade the application of any rule of English law whereby entails might be barred, showing an intent that each tenant, though of inheritance, should be prohibited from alienation. The personalty was practically to pass under similar limitations to the person who would from time to time be entitled to the realty.

The only provision made by the testator for the plaintiff, his son, consisted of property producing Rs. 7,000 per annum, settled upon him at his marriage. His being

disinherited arose from his having subsequently become a Christian. Of course under Act XXI of 1850 (Freedom of Religion) this circumstance was no bar to his claim as heir.

At the time of the testator's death, Jatindra, the head of the first series of estates, had no son, nor had he any during the suit.

Surendra, the head of the second series of estates, had a son, Promoth Kumar, who was born in the life time of the testator.

Lalit Mohun, the head of the third series, was dead at the making of the will, but left a grandson, Suttendra, born during the life time of the testator, and capable of taking under the will. These were the only persons beneficially interested under the limitations of the real estate.

Objections  
raised.

The son, as might have been expected, sued to set aside this will, except as to the legacies ; contending, *1st*, that it was wholly void as to the ancestral estate ; *2nd*, that in any case the father was bound to provide him with an adequate maintenance, the adequacy being estimated, not with reference to his own actual wants, but to the magnitude of the estate ; *3rd*, that the whole framework of the will, resting as it did on a devise to trustees, was void, since the Hindu law recognized no distinction between legal and equitable estates ; *4th*, that the life estate to Jatindra was void, since a Hindu testator could bequeath nothing less than what was termed "his whole bundle of rights ;" *5th*, that at all events the estates following upon this life estate were void, as infringing the law against perpetuities ; and *6th*, that as to everything after the life estate there was an intestacy, and the plaintiff was entitled as heir-at-law, notwithstanding the express words of the will that he was to take nothing

Tagore case.



§ 384. The first four points were disposed of with little difficulty. The original and appeal Courts were of opinion that the power of a father in Bengal to bequeath all his property, of every sort, was beyond discussion, and that it went so far as to exclude the son even from maintenance (i). The Privy Council did not enter upon this question, being of opinion that in any case the maintenance actually allotted to the son was adequate (k). The 3rd objection was also set aside (l). The Judicial Committee said (m), "The anomalous law which has grown up in England of a legal estate which is paramount in one set of Courts, and an equitable ownership which is paramount in Courts of Equity, does not exist in, and ought not to be introduced into, Hindu law. But it is obvious that property, whether movable or immovable, must for many purposes be vested more or less absolutely in some person or persons for the benefit of other persons, and trusts of various kinds have been recognized and acted on in India in many cases (n). The distinction between 'legal' and 'equitable' represents only the accident of falling under diverse jurisdictions, and not the essential characteristic of a possession in one for the convenience and benefit of another." As to the 4th objection, the Courts dismissed it also. *Peacock*, C. J., referring to a doubtful expression of the Judicial Committee in *Bhoom Moyee's* case (o), and the express decision in *Rewun Persad v. Radha Beeby* (p), said, "If a testator can disinherit his son by devising the whole of his estate to a stranger, there seems to be no reason why he should not be able to divide his estate by giving particular and limited interests in the whole of the property to different persons in existence, or who may come into existence during his

Father's power of devise

may be exercised through trustees.

Estate may be divided by limitations.

(i) 4 B. L. R. (O. C. J.) 132, 159.

(k) 9 B. L. R. 413; S. C. 18 Suth. 359.

(l) 4 B. L. R. (O. C. J.) 134, 161; *Krishnaramani v. Ananda*, 4 B. L. R. (O. C. J.) 278, 284, explaining the remarks of the C. J., in *Kumara Asima v. Kumara Krishna*, 2 B. L. R. (O. C. J.) 36.

(m) 9 B. L. R. 401; S. C. 18 Suth. 359. See *Seedee Nazeer v. Ojoodhya*, 8 Suth. 399; *Peddammuthulaty v. Timma Reddy* 2 Mad. H. C. 272.

(n) See *Gopeekrist v. Gungapersaud*, 6 M. I. A. 53.

(o) 10 M. I. A. 311; S. C. 3 Suth. (P. C.) 15.

(p) 4 M. I. A. 137; S. C. 7 Suth. (P. C.) 35.

life time, to be taken in succession, as well as by giving his whole interest or bundle of rights in particular portions of land included in his estate to different persons (*q*).

Devise must conform to ordinary law of property.

385. The 5th point was decided in favour of the plaintiff, not upon any application of the English doctrine of perpetuities, which was held to be founded upon special considerations which had no place in Hindu law (*r*), but upon the general principle that the kind of estate tail which the testator wished to create was one wholly unknown and repugnant to Hindu law (*s*). That he was in fact trying to introduce a new law of inheritance, which should make all the subsequent holders of the estate take it in an order, and with restrictions and exemptions, wholly opposed to the principles of law which governed the testator and his family. Their Lordships of the Privy Council observed (*t*): "The power of parting with property once acquired, so as to confer the same property upon another, must take place either by inheritance or transfer, each according to law. Inheritance does not depend on the will of the individual owner; transfer does. Inheritance is a rule laid down (or, in the case of custom, recognized) by the State, not merely for the benefit of individuals, but for reasons of public policy. Domat., 2413. It follows directly from this that a private individual who attempts by gift or will to make property inheritable otherwise than the law directs, is assuming to legislate, and that the gift must fail, and the inheritance take place as the law directs. This was well expressed by Lord Justice Turner in *Soorjeemoney Dossee v. Denobundo Mullick* (*u*): 'A man

(*q*) 4 B. L. R. (O. C. J.) 166; on appeal in the (P. C.) 9 B. L. R. 405; S. C. 18 Suth. 359.

(*r*) *Tagore v. Tagore*, 4 B. L. R. (O. C. J.) 167; *Goberdhun v. Shamchand, Bourke*, 282; *Kumara Asima v. Kumara Krishna*, 2 B. L. R. (O. C. J.) 11, 82. As to religious perpetuities, see post, § 395.

(*s*) 4 B. L. R. (O. C. J.) 171, 212.

(*t*) 9 B. L. R. 394, 396; S. C. 18 Suth. 359. See *Sonaton Bysack v. Juggut Soondree*, 8 M. I. A. 78; *Shoshi v. Tarokessur*, 6 Cal. 421; *affd.* *Kumar Tara-keswar v. Kumar Shoshi*, 10 I. A. 51; S. C. 10 Cal. 952; *Surya Row v. Gungadharma*, 13 I. A. 97; *Shookmoy v. Monohari*, 7 Cal. 269; *affd.* 12 I. A. 103; S. C. 11 Cal. 684. *Kristoromoney v. Narendro*, 16 I. A. 29; S. C. 16 Cal. 383.

(*u*) 6 M. I. A. 555, *sic.*; S. C. 4 Suth. (P. C.) 114. But these words are not to be read in the indement referred to. Cf. 8 M. I. A., p. 420.

cannot create a new form of estate, or alter the line of succession allowed by law, for the purpose of carrying out his own wishes or policy.' . . . It follows that all estates of inheritance created by gift or will, so far as they are inconsistent with the general law of inheritance, are void as such, and that by Hindu law no person can succeed thereunder as heir to estates described in the terms which in English law would designate estates tail." Tagore case.

§ 386. The result, therefore, was that the life estate to Jatindra was valid, but the estates to successive holders would be void if they must be held as coming in as heirs in tail. It was, however, contended that successive persons might be regarded as successive donees for life, having the power and subject to the restrictions sought to be imposed by the will upon the successive heirs in tail (r). If so, they also would defeat the rights of the plaintiff as heir-at-law. Estate tail invalid.

These donees fell into two classes : 1st, those not in existence at the death of the testator, but who might come into existence before the first life estate fell in ; 2nd, those who were in existence at his death.

Jatindra had no sons alive at the death of the testator. But, of course, he might have sons, and default of natural-born sons might adopt, as under the will each successive taker was authorized to do. The second and third series of estates were also represented by persons living at the testator's death.

It was held that none of these could take. Not the possible issue of Jatindra ; because the donee must be a person capable of taking at the time when the gift takes effect, and must either in fact, or in contemplation of law (w), be in existence at the death of the testator (x). Not the existing Donee must be in existence at death.

(r) 9 B. L. R. 396 ; S. C. 18 Suth. 359.

(w) That is when in embryo at the death, or adopted subsequently to death, under authority given before it. 9 B. L. R. (P. C.) 397 ; S. C. 18 Suth. 359.

(x) 4 B. L. R. (O. O. J.) 188, 191, 221 ; S. C. on appeal in the P. C. ; 9 B. L. R. 396—400 ; S. C. 18 Suth. 359 ; *Krishnamani v. Ananda*, 4 B. L. R.

Trust for illegal purpose invalid.

representatives of the 2nd and 3rd series of estates, because they were only to take “after the failure or determination” of the previous series, and these words were held to mean the actual exhaustion of the line of Jatindra in conformity with the will, and not its incapacity to succeed by reason of the illegality of the will. Consequently, the event on which they were to take had never arisen and never could arise (y). Finally, it was held that all the bequests must be looked on as if they had been made directly to the persons who were the subjects of them, and that the intervention of trustees made no difference, since that which could not be done directly, could not be done indirectly by the medium of a trust (z). The result was that the plaintiff, the heir-at-law, was held entitled to the whole estate after the life of Jatindra, subject to the payment of legacies and annuities.

Directions for accumulation.

§ 387. This case has been cited at great length on account of the numerous points decided by it, and also as establishing in the most authoritative manner that the power of devise by a Hindu is limited, as to the objects and subjects of the bequest, by the general purposes of Hindu law. On this ground, wills directing an estate to go in an order of succession which should exclude female heirs, or heirs by adoption, (a) or wills containing trust to accumulate the proceeds of the property have been held invalid. In one will, the trust was to accumulate for ninety-nine years, and no direction was given as to the appropriation of the fund at the end of the time (b). In another, the fund was to accumulate till it reached three lakhs, and was then to be divid-

(O C. J.) 231, 279, over-ruling *Arumugam v. Ammi Ammal*, 1 M. H. C. 400; *Bramamayi v. Jages*, 8 B. L. R. 400; *Ramguttee v. Kristo*, 20 Suth. 472; *Soudaminy v. Jagesh*, 2 Cal. 262; *Mangaldas v. Krishnabai*, 6 Bom. 38; *Chundi Churn v. Rani Sidheswari*, 15 I. A. 149; S. C. 16 Cal. 71. Succession Act X of 1865, § 92—98.

(y) 9 B. L. R. 409; S. C. 18 Suth. 359.

(z) 4 B. L. R. (O. C. J.) 162, 195; on appeal, 9 B. L. R. 402; S. C. 18 Suth. 359; *Kumara Asima v. Kumara Krishna*, 2 B. L. R. (O. C. J.) 11; *Krishnaramani v. Ananda*, 4 B. L. R. (O. C. J.) 274; *Rajender v. Sham Chund*, 6 Cal. 106.

(a) *Kumar Tarakeswar v. Kumar Shoshi*, 10 I. A. 51; S. C. 10 Cal. 952; *Surya Rao v. Gungadhara*, 13 I. A. 97; S. C. 9 Mad. 499.

(b) *Kumara Asima v. Kumara Krishna*, 2 B. L. R. (O. C. J.) 11.

ed, and the process of accumulation to recommence (c). Such provisions not only create an estate held in a manner, and for purposes, foreign to Hindu law, but are also repugnant to the very nature of property, as forbidding its enjoyment by the owner, or, indeed, putting property in a position to have no owner at all. As Mr. Justice *Norman* remarked in the former case (d), "A testator cannot, in giving his property by will, impose conditions in contravention of the objects for which property exists, or contrary to the policy of the law. For instance, suppose an estate were given to a man on condition that it should be allowed to relapse into a jungle, or never be cultivated, no one could doubt that such a condition would be void." So, a will would be invalid which forbade alienation within the limits incidental to the estate created (e), or prohibited partition by the persons entitled to divide (f), or attempted to free property from any of the burthens incident to it by law, such as liability to debts, or maintenance of those whose support is a burthen upon the estate (g). So, it has been held in Madras by Mr. Justice *Holloway* that a clause in a will whereby the enjoyment of the property by the son, who was heir-at-law, was postponed beyond the period of minority was invalid, on the ground that this was, *protanto*, taking away from the son a right of property which the law of the Mitakshara vested in him (h). A similar decision was given upon a Bengal will, where the testator had attempted to postpone the enjoyment of the shares of his grandchildren until they had attained twenty-one, on the ground that by

Illegal conditions.

Ineffectual provisions.

(c) *Krishnaramani v. Ananda*, 4 B. L. R. (O. C. J.) 231; *Shookmoy v. Monohari*, 7 Cal. 269; *affd.* 12 I. A. 103; S. C. 11 Cal. 684.

(d) 2 B. L. R. (O. C. J.) 25.

(e) 2 B. L. R. (O. C. J.) 25; *Nitai Charan v. Ganga*, 4 B. L. R. (O. C. J.) 265, note; *Promotho v. Radhika*, 14 B. L. R. 175; *Ashutosh v. Doorqa Churn*, 6 I. A. 182; S. O. 5 Cal. 438; S. O. 5 C. L. R. 296; *Gokool Nath v. Issur Lochun*, 14 Cal. 222. Act IV of 1882, § 10, 11, (Transfer of Property).

(f) *Nubkissen v. Hurrishchunder*, F. MacN. 323; *Mokoondo v. Gonesh*, 1 Cal. 104; *Rajender v. Shamchund*, 6 Cal. 106.

(g) *Sonatun Bysack v. Sreemutty Juggutsoondree*, 8 M. I. A. 66, 76. See post, § 424. The doctrine of election applies to wills in India. *Mangaldas v. Ranchhoddas*, 14 Bom. 438.

(h) *Devardja v. Venayaga and Cunniah Chetty v. Lutchmenarasoo*, both decided in the Original Court, May 23, 1867, MS. See, too, *Mokoondo v. Gonesh*, 1 Cal. 104; *Gosling v. Gosling*, John., 265.



Hindu law an estate cannot remain in suspense, or without an owner (i). But, of course, a father in Bengal could delay, just as he could defeat, the rights of his issue, by interposing a valid estate previous to theirs (k).

Form of will  
immaterial.

§ 388. As regards form, the will of a Hindu may be oral, though, of course, in such a case the strictest proof will be required of its terms (l). So, a paper drawn up in accordance with the instructions of the testator, and assented to by him, will be a good will, though not signed (m). And if a paper contains the testamentary wishes of the deceased, its form is immaterial. For instance, petitions addressed to officials, or answers to official enquiries, have been held to amount to a will (n). Even a statement in a deed executed by a widow in pursuance of the instructions of her late husband and containing an assertion of his last wishes as to the devolution of his property has been held to be good evidence of a nuncupative will by the husband (o). And a will may be revoked orally, or in any other manner by which it might have been made (p). Nor are technical words necessary. The single rule of construction in a Hindu, as in an English, will, is to try and find out the meaning of the testator, taking the whole of the document together, and to give effect to this meaning. In applying this principle, special care must be taken not to judge the language used by a Hindu according to the artificial rules which have been applied to the language of Englishmen, who live under a different system of law and in a different state of society (q). A devise in general terms, without

Intention is the  
guide of inter-  
pretation.

(i) *Bramamayi v. Jages*, 8 B. L. R. 400; *Callynauth v. Chundernath*, 8 Cal. 378; S. C. 10 C. L. R. 207.

(k) *Hurrosoondery v. Cowar*, Fulton, 398.

(l) *Beer Pertab v. Maharajah Rajender*, 12 M. I. A. 2; S. C. 9 Suth. (P. O.) 15; ante, § 365. See now the Hindu Wills Act, XXI of 1870, which applies to Hindus in Bengal, and the towns of Madras and Bombay.

(m) *Tara Chand v. Nobin Chunder*, 3 Suth. 138; *Radhabai v. Ganesh*, 3 Bom. 7.

(n) *Shumshul v. Shewukram*, 2 I. A. 7; S. C. 14 B. L. R. 226; *Hurpurshad v. Sheo Dhyal*, 3 I. A. 259; S. C. 26 Suth. 55; *Kalian v. Sanwal*, 7 All. 163; *Haidar Ali v. Tasadduk*, 17 I. A. 82; S. C. 18 Cal. 1.

(o) *Chintaman v. Moro Lakshman*, 11 Bom. 89.

(p) *Pertab v. Subhao*, 4 I. A. 228; S. C. 3 Cal. 426.

(q) See *per Turner*, L. J., *Soorjeemoney v. Denobundo*, 6 M. I. A. 550; S. C.

words of inheritance, or with words imperfectly describing an estate of inheritance, will pass the entire estate of the testator, unless a contrary intention appears from the context (r). On the other hand, stronger words, and a more evident intention, would be required to pass an absolute estate, where the bequest was to a woman, and especially where it would operate to the prejudice of the testator's issue (s). But although every effort will be made to carry out the wishes of the testator, where they are ascertainable and legal, the Court cannot make a new will for them. Therefore, a will must fail if its terms are so vaguely expressed that it is impossible to ascertain what are the testator's objects (t). And if the intention of the testator is obviously to do something that is illegal, the Court will not put a non-natural construction upon his language, so as to turn an illegal into a legal arrangement (u). The result, of course, will be an intestacy as to so much of the property as has been ineffectually disposed of, and the residue will go to the heir-at-law, however positive the expression of the testator's wish may have been that he should not take. The estate must go to somebody, and there is no one to whom it can go except the heir-at-law. As *Peacock*, C. J., said in the *Tagore* case, "A mere

where vague, or illegal.

4 Suth. (P. C.) 114; per *Ld. Kingsdown*, *Bhoobum Moyee v. Ram Kishore*, 10 M. I. A. 308; S. C. 3 Suth. (P. C.) 15; *Lakshmibai v. Ganpat*, 4 Bom. H. C. (O. C. J.) 151; *Lallubai v. Mankuvarbai*, 2 Bom. 408.

(r) Per *Willes*, J., *Tagore v. Tagore* 9 B. L. R. 395; S. C. 18 Suth. 359; *Sursutty v. Poorno*, 4 Suth. 55; *Broughton v. Pogose*, 12 B. L. R. 74; S. C. 19 Suth. 181; *Vullubhdas v. Thucker Gordhandas*, 14 Bom. 360. Succession Act X of 1865, § 82.

(s) *Rabutti v. Sibchunder*, 6 M. I. A. 1; *Lukhee v. Gokool*, 13 M. I. A. 209; S. C. 3 B. L. R. (P. C.) 57; S. C. 12 Suth. (P. C.) 47; *Shumshul v. Shewukram*, 2 I. A. 7, 14; S. C. 14 B. L. R. 226; *Bhagbutti v. Chowdry*, 2 I. A. 256; S. C. 24 Suth. 168; *Lakshmibai v. Hirabai*, 11 Bom. 69; *affd.* p. 573; *Prosunno v. Tarrucknath*, 10 B. L. R. 267; S. C. *sub nomine*, *Tarrucknath v. Prosono*, 19 Suth. 48; *Kollany v. Luchmee*, 24 Suth. 395; *Jeewun v. Mt. Sona*, 1 N. W. P. 66; *Punchoomoney v. Troyluckoo*, 10 Cal. 342.

(t) *Sandial v. Maitland*, *Fulton*. 475. See *Kumara Asima v. Kumara Krishna*, 2 B. L. R. (O. C. J.) 38; *Tagore v. Tagore*, 4 B. L. R. (O. C. J.) 198; *Jarman's Estate*, 8 Ch. D. 584.

(u) *Tagore v. Tagore*, 9 B. L. R. 407; S. C. 18 Suth. 359; per *Lord Selborne*, 5 App. Ca. p. 719. See as to the proper interpretation to be put upon wills, where questions of remoteness arise, *Arumugam v. Ammi Ammall*, 1 Mad. H. C. 400; *Bramamayi v. Jages*, 8 B. L. R. 400; *Soudaminey v. Jogesh*, 2 Cal. 262; *Kherodomoney v. Doorgamoney*, 4 Cal. 455; *Ram Lall Sett v. Kanai Lal*, 12 Cal. 663, *ante*, § 356.

**Disinheritance.** expression in a will that the heir-at-law shall not take any part of the testator's estate is not sufficient to disinherit him, without a valid gift of the estate to some one else. He will take by descent, and by his right of inheritance, whatever is not validly disposed of by the will, and given to some other person (v).” On the other hand, it is not necessary that a will should contain an express declaration of a testator's desire or intention to disinherit his heirs, if there is an actual and complete gift to some other person capable of taking under it (w).

A devise which cannot take effect at all is as if it had never been made. Consequently the property devised passes to the heir. The rule of the English Common law that an undisposed of residue vests in the executor beneficially, does not apply in case of a Hindu will (x). The case of a devise to a class of persons, which fails as to some, has already been discussed (§§ 354—356). Where a testator leaves a legacy absolutely as regards his estate, but restricts the mode of the legatee's enjoyment to secure certain objects for the benefit of the legatee, if the objects fail, the absolute gift prevails (y).

**Possession.** § 389. As possession under a devise is not necessary to its validity, so neither is it necessary that the legatee should be capable of assenting to it. Therefore, a bequest in favour of an idiot or an infant will be valid. And so it will be in any other case, although the legatee would have been incapable of inheriting from some personal disability (z).

The Hindu  
Wills Act.

§ 390. Under the combined operation of the Hindu Wills Act (XXI of 1870) § 2, and the Probate and Administration

(v) 4 B. L. R. (O. C. J.) 187; S. C. on appeal, 9 B. L. R. 402; S. C. 18 Suth. 359; *Promotho v. Radhika*, 14 B. L. R. 175; *Lallubhai v. Mankuvarbai*, 2 Bom. 488.

(w) *Prossunno v. Tarrucknath*, 10 B. L. R. 267; S. C. 19 Suth. 48, disapproving of *Rooploll v. Mohima*, ib. 271, note.

(x) *Ante*, § 386. *Lallubhai v. Mankuvarbai*, 2 Bom. 388.

(y) *Administrator-General of Bengal v. Apcar*, 3 Cal. 553.

(z) *ooldebharain v. Mt. Wooma, Marsh*, 357.

Act (V of 1881) § 154, numerous sections of the Indian Succession Act (X of 1865) (a), are extended to all wills and codicils made by any Hindu, Jain, Sikh or Buddhist, on or after the 1st day of September 1870, within the territories subject to the Lieutenant-Governor of Bengal, or the local limits of the ordinary original civil jurisdiction of the High Courts at Madras and Bombay, and to all such wills and codicils made outside those territories and limits, so far as relates to immovable property situate within such territories or limits. The primary result is to abolish all forms of wills except those written and attested as prescribed by the Succession Act. To guard against the dangers which might arise from the application to persons under one law of a complicated series of provisions intended for persons governed by a wholly different law, § 3 provides that nothing in the Act shall authorise a testator to bequeath property which he could not have alienated *inter vivos*, or to deprive any persons of any right of maintenance of which, but for § 2 of the Act, he could not deprive them by will, or shall affect any law of adoption or intestate succession, or shall authorise any Hindu, &c., to create in property any interest which he could not have created before the first of September 1870. Under this last clause it has been held that notwithstanding the express words of § 99 of the Succession Act, which is one of those extended by the Wills Act, a Hindu cannot make a bequest to a person unborn at the death, but born between that date and the termination of a previous estate after which his interest is to take effect (b). Saving clause.

(a) The sections so extended are the following: 46, 49, capacity to make, revoke or alter a will; 48, effect of fraud, &c.; 50, 51, mode of execution; 57—60, or revocation or revival; 55, witness not disqualified by interest; 61—67, 82, 83, 85, 88—98, construction of will; 99—103, void bequests; 106—108, vesting of legacies; 109, 110, onerous; 111, 112, contingent; and 113—124, conditional bequests; 125—127, bequests with directions as to application or enjoyment; 128, bequests to executor; 129—136, specific; and 137, 138, demonstrative legacies; 139—153, ademption; 154—157, liabilities attaching to legacies; 158, general bequests; 159, bequests of interest or produce; and 160—163, of annuities; 164—166, legacies to creditors or portioners; 167—177, election; 187, necessity of probate for executor or legatee. See also as to the Registration and Deposit of Wills Act III of 1877, § 40—46.

(b) *Alangamonjori v. Sonamoni*, 8 Cal. 637.

Act I of 1869, § 13 also contains a provision requiring wills made by taluqdars in Oudh in certain cases to be executed and attested three months before the death of the testator and registered within one month after execution (c).

Probate and  
Administration  
Act.

§ 391. The Probate and Administration Act (V of 1881) applies to all Hindus (d) and persons exempted under § 332 of the Succession Act, no matter when they died, but does not render invalid any transfer of property duly made before the 1st of April 1881; but, except in cases to which the Hindu Wills Act applies, no Court beyond the limits of the towns of Calcutta, Madras and Bombay, and the territories of British Burmah shall receive applications for probate or letters of administration unless authorised by the Local Government with the sanction of the Governor-General. By § 149 it is provided that nothing in the Act shall validate any testamentary disposition which would otherwise have been invalid; invalidate any such disposition which would otherwise have been valid; deprive any person of any right of maintenance to which he would otherwise have been entitled; or affect the Administrator-General of Bengal, Madras or Bombay.

§ 392. Previous to the Hindu Wills Act, it was held that the executors of a Hindu did not, in the character merely of executors, take any estate properly so called, in the property of the deceased;—or in other words, that the mere nomination of executors, though followed by probate, did not of itself confer any estate on the executor, further than the estate he might have by the express words of the will, or as heir of the testator. The grant of probate or letters of administration to a Hindu took effect only for the purpose of recovering debts and securing debtors paying the same, except so far as was otherwise provided by Act XXVII

(c) See as to this section *Ajudhia Buksh v. Mt. Bukmin Kuar*, 11 I. A. 1; *Haji Abdul v. Munshi Amir Haidar*, 11 I. A. 121; Act X of 1885.

(d) This term includes Jains, *Bachebi v. Makhan*, 8 All. 55.



of 1860 (e). The Hindu Wills Act incorporated § 179 of Act X of 1865 which provided that "the executor or administrator, as the case may be, of a deceased person, is his legal representative for all purposes, and all the property of the deceased vests in him." Also § 187 which provides that no right as executor or legatee can be established in any Court of Justice unless probate or letters of administration shall have been granted (f). The Act V of 1881 repeals § 179 as part of Act XXI of 1870 but reenacts it as part of itself. The result is that in all cases coming within the Hindu Wills Act or the Probate Act, the executor or administrator as such is the legal representative of the deceased, and statutory owner of his property, except such as would otherwise have passed by survivorship to some other person (g).

(e) *Shaik Moosa v. Sheik Essa*, 8 Bom. 241, p. 252; *Ardesir v. Hirabai*, ibid. 474, p. 479; *Lallubhai v. Mankuverbai*, 2 Bom., p. 406.

(f) This section is not incorporated in Act V of 1881. Therefore as regards Hindu Wills prior to 1st September 1870 though probate may be granted, it is not necessary. *Krishna Kinkur v. Panchuram*, 17 Cal. 272. Probate cannot be refused on the ground that the will is illegal or void. *Hormusji v. Dhanbaiji*, 12 Bom. 164.

(g) Act V of 1881, § 4. As to whether a creditor can apply for revocation of probate, see *Nilmoni v. Umanath*, 10 I. A. 80. As to wills made before 1st September 1870, see *Krishna Kinkur v. Rai Mohun*, 14 Cal. 37.

## CHAPTER XII.

### RELIGIOUS AND CHARITABLE ENDOWMENTS.

Religious gifts  
favoured.

§ 393. GIFTS for religious and charitable purposes were naturally favoured by the Brahmans, as they are everywhere by the priestly class. Sancha lays down the general principle that "wealth was conferred for the sake of defraying sacrifices" (a). Gifts for religious purposes are made by Katyayana an exception to the rule that gifts are void when made by a man who is afflicted with disease and the like, and he says that if the donor dies without giving effect to his intention, his son shall be compelled to deliver it (b). This is an exception to the rule that a gift is invalid without delivery of possession. The Bengal pandits state that this principle applies even against a son under the Mitakshara law, though his assent would be indispensable if the gift was for a secular object; they seem, however, to limit the application of the rule to a gift of a small portion of the land (c). Similarly in the N.-W. Provinces the Court affirmed the right of a father, even without his son's consent, to make a permanent alienation of part of the ancestral property as provision for a family idol, provided the grant was made *bonâ fide*, and not with an intention to injure the son (d). In Western India grants of this nature have been held valid; even when made by a widow, of land which descended to her from her husband, and to the prejudice of her husband's

---

(a) 3 Dig. 484.

(b) 2 Dig. 96. See Manu, ix. 323; Vyasa, 2 Dig. 189; Mitakshara, i. 1, § 27, 32

(c) See futwah, *Gopal Chand v. Babu Kunwar*, 5 S. D. 24 (29); Mitakshara, i. 1, § 28.

(d) *Raghunath v. Gobind*, 8 All. 76.

male heirs (e). And so a grant by a man to his family priests, to take effect after the life estate of his widow, was decided to be good (f).

§ 394. The principle that such gifts can be enforced against the donor's heirs, would naturally slide into a practice of making them by will (§ 368). It is probable that as Brahmanical acuteness favoured family partition as a means of multiplying family ceremonies, so it fostered the testamentary power as a mode of directing property to religious uses, at a time when the owner was becoming indifferent to its secular application. Many of the wills held valid in the Supreme Court of Calcutta have been remarkable for the large amounts they disposed of for religious purposes (g). In one case arising out of *Gokulchunder Corformah's* will, where practically the whole property had been assigned for the use of an idol, the Court declared the will proved, but wholly inoperative, except as regards a legacy to the stepmother of the testator (h). Sir F. MacNaghten suggests that the will might properly have been cancelled, as, upon its face, the production of a madman. No reason can be offered why such a will should be set aside in Bengal, merely because the whole property was devoted to religious objects. In the case of *Radhabullubh Tagore v. Gopeemohun Tagore*, which was decided in Calcutta the very next year (1811), the right of a Hindu so to apply the whole of his property, seems to have been admitted (i).

§ 395. The English law, which forbids bequests for superstitious uses, does not apply to grants of this character

Effected by will.

Superstitious uses not forbidden,

(e) *Jugjeevun v. Deosunkur*, 1 Bor. 394 [436]; *Kupoor v. Serukram*, ib. 405 [448]; but see *Umbashunker v. Tooljaram*, 1 Bor. 400 [442]; *Muhalukmee v. Kripashookul*, 2 Bor. 510 [557]; *Ramanund v. Ramkissen*, 2 M. Dig. futwab, at p. 117. See too, post, § 586.

(f) *Keshoor v. Mt. Ramkoonwar*, 2 Bor. 314 [345.]

(g) F. MacN. 323, 331, 336—347, 349, 350, 371; *Ramtonoo v. Ramgopal*, 1 Kn. 245. The same thing was remarked by Sir Thomas Strange as a feature in the wills made by Hindus in Madras. 2 Stra. H. L. 453.

(h) F. MacN. 320, App. 58.

(i) F. MacN. 335.

nor perpetuities.

Colourable religious endowment.

in India, even in the Presidency Towns (*k*), and such grants have been repeatedly enforced by the Privy Council (*l*). Nor are they invalid for transgressing against the rule which forbids the creation of perpetuities. "It being assumed to be a principle of Hindu law that a gift can be made to an idol, which is a *caput mortuum*, and incapable of alienating, you cannot break in upon that principle by engrafting upon it the English law of perpetuities (*m*)."<sup>1</sup> In fact both the cases in which the Bengal High Court in 1869 set aside the will as creating secular estates of a perpetual nature, contained devises of an equally perpetual nature in favour of idols, which were supported (*n*). But where a will, under the form of a devise for religious purposes, really gives the beneficial interest to the devisees, subject merely to a trust for the performance of the religious purposes, it will be governed by the ordinary Hindu law. Any provisions for perpetual descent, and for restraining alienation, will, therefore, be void. The result will be to set aside the will, as regards the descent of the property, leaving the heirs-at-law liable to keep up the idols, and defray the proper expenses of the worship (*o*). *A fortiori* will this rule apply, where the estate created is in its nature secular, though the motive for creating it is religious (*p*).

Tenure in trustee.

§ 396. As an idol cannot itself hold lands, the practice is to vest the lands in a trustee for the religious purpose, or to impose upon the holder of the lands a trust to defray

(*k*) *Das Mercus v. Cones*, 2 Hyde, 65; *Andrews v. Joakim*, 2 B. L. R. (O. C. J.) 148; *Judah v. Judah*, 5 B. L. R. 433; *Khusalchand v. Mahadevgiri*, 12 Bom. H. C. 214. *Rupa Jagshet v. Krishnaji*, 9 Bom. 169.

(*l*) *Ramtonoo v. Ramgopal*, 1 Kn. 245; *Jewun v. Shah Kubeerood-deen*, 2 M. I. A. 390; S. C. 6 Suth. (P. C.) 3; *Sonatun Bysack v. Juggutsoondree*, 8 M. I. A. 66; *Juggutmohini v. Mt. Sokheemoney*, 14 M. I. A. 289; S. C. 10 B. L. R. 19; S. C. 17 Suth. 41.

(*m*) *Pre Markby, J., Kumara Asema v. Kumara Krishna*, 2 B. L. R. (O. C. J.) p. 47. See as to the application of the rule to cases not under Hindu Law, *Fatma Bibi v. Advocate-General, Bombay*, 6 Bom. 42; *Limji v. Bapuji*, 11 Bom. 441.

(*n*) *Tagore v. Tagore*, 4 B. L. R. (O. C. J.) 103, in the P. C., 9 B. L. R. 377; S. C. 18 Suth. 359; *Krishnaramani v. Ananda*, 4 B. L. R. (O. C. J.) 231; *Brojosoondery v. Luchmee Koonwaree*, 15 B. L. R. (P. C.) 176 note.

(*o*) *Promotho v. Radhika*, 14 B. L. R. 175; *Phate v. Damoodar*, 8 Bom. 84.

(*p*) *Anantha v. Nagamuthu*, 4 Mad. 200.

the expenses of the worship (*q*). Sometimes the donor is himself the trustee. Such a trust is, of course, valid, if perfectly created, though, being voluntary, the donor cannot be compelled to carry it out if he has left it imperfect (*r*). But the effect of the transaction will differ materially, according as the property is absolutely given for the religious object, or merely burthened with a trust for its support. And there will be a further difference where the trust is only an apparent, and not a real one, and where it creates no rights in any one except the holder of the fund. (*s*)

§ 397. The last case arises where the founder applies his own property to the creation of a pagoda, or any other religious or charitable foundation, keeping the property itself, and the control over it, absolutely in his own hands. The community may be greatly benefited by this arrangement, so long as it lasts, but its continuance is entirely at his own pleasure. It is like a private chapel in a gentleman's park, and the fact that the public have been permitted to resort to it, will not prevent its being closed, or pulled down, provided there has been no dedication of it to the public. It will pass equally unencumbered to his heirs, or to his assignees in insolvency. He may diminish the funds so appropriated at pleasure, or absolutely cease to apply them to the purpose at all (*t*). In short, the character of the property will remain unchanged, and its application will be at his own discretion.

Another state of things arises where land or other property is held in beneficial ownership, subject merely to a

Trust imperfect.

Property held under trust.

(*q*) See *futwah* in *Kounla Kant v. Ram Huree*, 4 S. D. 196, (247). It is said, however, that a trust is not required for this purpose. *Manohur Ganesh v. Lakhmiram*, 12 Bom. p. 263.

(*r*) See *Lewin, Trusts*, p. 61.

(*s*) *Acc. per curiam*, 11 All. p. 22-27.

(*t*) *Howard v. Pestonji, Perry*, O. C. 535; *Venkatachellamiah v. P. Narainapah*, Mad. Dec. of 1853, 104; S. C. Mad. Dec. 1854, 100; *Chemmanthatti v. Meyene*, Mad. Dec. of 1862, 90; 2 W. MacN. 103; *Brojosoondery v. Luchmee Koonwaree*, in the P. C., 15 B. L. R. 176, (note); S. C. 20 Suth. 95; *Delroos v. Nawab Syud*, 15 B. L. R. 167, affirmed in P. C. 3 Cal. 324; *Sub nomine, Ashgar v. Delroos*.



trust as to part of the income, for the support of some religious endowment. Here again the land descends and is alienable, and partible (u), in the ordinary way, the only difference being that it passes with the charge upon it (v). The same rule would apply where the owner retained the property in himself, but granted the community or part of the community an easement over it for certain specified purposes (w).

Absolute  
dedication of  
property.

Powers of  
trustee.

The remaining case is the one first named, where the whole property is devoted, absolutely and in perpetuity, to the religious purposes. Here, of course, the trustee has no beneficial interest in the property, beyond what he is given by the express terms of the trust. He cannot encumber or dispose of it for his own personal benefit, nor can it be taken in execution for his personal debt. But he may do any act which is necessary or beneficial, in the same manner and to the same degree as would be allowable in the case of the manager of an infant heir. He may, within those limits, incur debts, mortgage and alien the property, and bind it by judgments properly obtained against him (x). And he may lease out the property in the usual manner, but he cannot create any other than proper derivative tenures and estates conformable to usage; nor can he make a lease, or any other arrangement which will bind his successor, unless the necessity for the transaction is completely established (y).

(u) *Ram Coomar v. Jogender*, 4 Cal 56. *Suppammal v. Collector of Tanjore*, 12 Mad. 387, p. 391.

(v) *Mahatab v. Mirdad*, 5 S. D. 268 (313), approved by P. C., 15 B. L. R. p. 178; *sup. note* (t) *Futtoo v. Bhurrit*, 10 Suth 299; *Basoo v. Kishen*, 13 Suth. 200; *Sonatum Bysack v. Juggutsoondree*, 8 M. I. A. 66. *Sheikh Mahomed v. Amarchand*; 17 I. A. 28; S. C. 17 Cal. 498.

(w) *Jaggamoni v. Nilmoni*, 9 Cal. 75.

(x) *Prosunno v. Golab*, 2 I. A. 145; S. C. 14 B. L. R. 450; *Konwur v. Ramchunder*, 4 I. A. 52; S. C. 2 Cal. 341; *Kalee Churn v. Bungshac*, 15 Suth. 339; *Khusalchand v. Mahadevgiri*, 12 Bom. H. C. 214; *Fegredo v. Mahomed*, 15 Suth. 75; *Shankar Bharati v. Venkapa Naik*, 9 Bom. 422. *Bishen Chand v. Syed Nadir*, 15 I. A. 1; S. C. 15 Cal. 329. In Bombay, it has been held that although the rents of a religious endowment may be alienated, the corpus of the property is absolutely inalienable; *Narayan v. Chintaman*, 5 Bom 393; *Collector of Thana v. Hari*, 6 Bom. 546. *Shri Ganesh v. Keshavarav*, 15 Bom. 625. This is no doubt the general rule, but see *per curiam*, 4 I. A., p. 62.

(y) *Radhabullabh v. Juggutchunder*, 4 S. D. 151 (192); *Shibessourcee v.*

§ 398. The devolution of the trust, upon the death or default of each trustee, depends upon the terms upon which it was created, or the usage of each particular institution, where no express trust-deed exists (z). Where nothing is said in the grant as to the succession, the right of management passes by inheritance to the natural heirs of the donee, according to the rule, that a grant without words of limitation conveys an estate of inheritance (a). The property passes with the office, and neither it nor the management is divisible among the members of the family (b). Where no other arrangement or usage exists, the management may be held in turns by the several heirs (c). Sometimes the constitution of the body vests the management in several, as representing different interests, or as a check upon each other, and any act which alters such a constitution would be invalid (d). Where the head of a religious institution is bound to celibacy, it is frequently the usage that he nominates his successor by appointment during his own lifetime, or by will (e). Sometimes this nomination requires con-

Devolution of trust.

*Mothooranath*, 13 M. I. A. 270; S. C. 13 Suth. (P. C.) 18; *Juggessur v. Roodro*, 12 Suth. 299; *Tahboonissa v. Koomar*, 15 Suth. 228; *Arruth v. Juggurnath*, 18 Suth. 439; *Mohunt Burm v. Khashee*, 20 Suth. 471; *Bunwaree v. Mudden*, 21 Suth. 41. Where an unlawful alienation has been made by a trustee of a religious endowment the statute of limitation begins to run from the appointments of his successor. *Mahomed v. Ganapati*, 13 Mad. 277; *Vedapurath v. Vallabha*, ib. 402.

(z) *Greedharee v. Nundkishore*, Marsh. 573; affd., 11 M. I. A. 428; S. C. 8 Suth. (P. C.) 25; *Muttu Ramalinga v. Perianayagam*, 11 I. A. 209; *Janoki v. Gopal*, 10 I. A. 32; S. C. 9 Cal. 766; *Genda v. Chatur*, 13 I. A. 100, 9 All. 1; *Appasami v. Naqappa*, 7 Mad. 499; *Rangachariar v. Yegna Dikshatur*, 13 Mad. 524.

(a) *Chutter Sein's case*, 1 S. D. 180 (239); *Venkatachellamiah v. P. Narainapah*, Mad. Dec. of 1853, 104. See *Tagore case*, 4 B. L. R. (O. C. J.) 182 9 B. L. R. (P. C.) 395; S. C. 18 Suth. 359; per curiam, 5 Cal., p. 79. *Nanabhai v. Shriman Goswami*, 12 Bom. 331.

(b) *Jaafar v. Aji*, 2 Mad. H. C. 19; *Kumarasami v. Ramalinga*, Mad. Dec. of 1860, 261.

(c) *Nubkissen v. Hurrishunder*, 2 M. Dig. 146. See *Anundmoyee v. Boykantnath*, 8 Suth. 193; *Ramsoondur v. Taruck*, 19 Suth. 28; *Mitta Kunth v. Neerunjun*, 14 B. L. R. 166; S. C. 22 Suth. 437; *Mancharam v. Pranshankar*, 6 Bom. 298. There is nothing to prevent a female being manager. See *Moottoo Meenatchy v. Villoo*, Mad. Dec. of 1858, 136; *Joy Deb Surniah v. Huroputty*, 15 Suth. 282. See *Hussain Beebee v. Hussain Sherif*, 4 Mad. H. C. 23; *Pun-Customs*, 88; unless the actual discharge of spiritual duties is required; *Mujavar v. Hussain*, 3 Mad. 93. Special custom is necessary, *Janokes v. Gopaul*, 2 Cal. 365; affd., 10 I. A. 32; S. C. 9 Cal. 766.

(d) *Rajah Vurmah v. Kavi Vurmah*, 4 I. A. 76; S. C. 1 Mad. 235. See *Teramath v. Lakshmi*, 6 Mad. 270.

(e) *Hoogly v. Kishnanund*, S. D. of 1848, 253; *Soobramaneya v. Aroomooga*,

firmation by the members of the religious body. Sometimes the right of election is vested in them (*f*). In no case can the trustee sell or lease the right of management, though coupled with the obligation to manage in conformity with the trusts annexed thereto (*g*), nor is the right saleable in execution under a decree (*h*). It has, however, been held in Bombay that there is no objection to an alienation of a religious office, made in favour of a person standing in the line of succession, and not disqualified by personal unfitness. Such an alienation is in fact little more than a renunciation of the right to hold the office (*i*). But, I imagine, that even in such a case, the Court might refuse to ratify the transaction, if it appeared to have been actuated by improper motives. The same rule applies to the sale of religious offices (*k*). It has been decided in Calcutta that a private endowment of a family idol may be transferred to another family, the idol being a part of the gift and the property continuing to be appropriated to its benefit as before (*l*).

**Founder's  
rights.**

§ 399. Unless the founder has reserved to himself some special powers of supervision, removal, or nomination, neither he nor his heirs have any greater power in this respect than any other person who is interested in the trust (*m*). And such powers, when reserved, must be strictly followed (*n*). But where the succession to the office of trustee has wholly failed, it has been held that the right of management reverts

Mad. Dec. of 1858, 38; *Greedharee v. Nundkishore*, 11 M. I. A. 405; S. C. 8 Suth. (P. C.) 25; *Trimbakpuri v. Gangabai*, 11 Bom. 514.

(*f*) *Mohunt Gopal v. Kerparam*, S. D. of 1850, 250; *Narain v. Brindabun*, 2 S. D. 151 (192); *Gossain v. Bissessur*, 19 Suth. 215; *Madho v. Kamta*, 1 All. 539.

(*g*) *Rajah Vurmah v. Ravi Vurmah*, 4 I. A. 76; S. C. 1 Mad. 235, overruling *Ragunada v. Chinnappa*, 4 Mad. Rev. Reg. 109; *Rama Varma v. Raman Nair*, 5 Mad. 89; *Kannan v. Nilakundan*, 7 Mad. 337.

(*h*) *Durga v. Chanchal*, 4 All. 81.

(*i*) *Sitarambhal v. Sitaram*, 6 Bom. H. C. (A. C. J.) 250; *Mancharam v. Pranshankar*, 6 Bom. 298.

(*k*) *Kuppa v. Dorasami*, 6 Mad. 76; *Narasimma v. Anantha*, 4 Mad. 891; *Juggernath Roy v. Pershad Surmah*, 7 Suth. 266; *Dubo Misser v. Srinivas*, 5 B. L. R. 617; *Narayana v. Ranga*, 15 Mad. 183.

(*l*) *Khettur Chunder v. Hari Das*, 17 Cal. 557.

(*m*) *Teertaruppa v. Soonderajien*, Mad. Dec. of 1851, 57; *Lutchmee v. Rookmanee*, Mad. Dec. of 1857, 152; 2 W. MacN. 102.

(*n*) *Advocate-General v. Fatima*, 9 Bom. H. C. 19.

to the heirs of the founder (o). Where no trust has been created, the law will vest the trust in the founder and his heirs, unless there has been some usage or course of dealing which points to a different mode of devolution (p).

A trust for religious purposes, if once lawfully and completely created, is of course irrevocable (q). The beneficial ownership cannot, under any circumstances, revert to the founder or his family. If any failure in the objects of the trusts takes place, the only suit which he can bring is to have the funds applied to their original purpose, or to one of a similar character (r).

Trust irrevocable.

(o) *Jai Bansi v. Chattar*, 5 B. L. R. 181; S. C. 13 Suth. 396; *Sub nomine, Peet Koonwar v. Chuttur*: but see Act XX of 1863, (Native Religious Endowments), *Phate v. Damodar*, 3 Bom. 84; *Hori Dasi v. Secy. of State*, 5 Cal. 228.

(p) *Gossamee v. Ruman Lolljee*, 16 I. A. 137; S. C. 17 Cal. 3.

(q) *Juggutmohini v. Sokheemoney*, 14 M. I. A. 289; S. C. 10 B. L. R. 19; S. C. 17. Suth. 41; *Pubjáb Customs*, 92.

(r) *Mohesh Chunder v. Koylash*, 11 Suth. 143; *Reasut v. Abbott*, 12 Suth. 132; *Nam Narain v. Ramoon*, 23 Suth. 76; *Atty-Genl. v. Brodie*, 4 M. I. A. 190; *Mayor of Lyons v. Adv-Genl. of Bengal*, 3 I. A. 32; S. C. 26 Suth. 1. See Act XX of 1863, *Panchcourrie v. Chumsoolall*, 3 Cal. 563. *Brojomohun v. Hurrolall*, 5 Cal. 700; *Hemangini v. Nobin Chand*, 5 Cal. 788; see as to suits by devotees or others interested in Religious trust; *Radhabai v. Chimnaji*, 3 Bom. 27; *Dhadphale v. Gurav*, 6 Bom. 122. As to suits by or with the permission of the Advocate-General, see Civil Pro. Code X of 1877, § 539; XIV of 1882, § 539. As to suits for the removal of the trustee on the ground of improper conduct, see *Mohun v. Lutchmun*, 6 Cal. 11.

## CHAPTER XIII.

### BENAMI TRANSACTIONS.

Origin of  
Benami.

§ 400. THERE probably is no country in the world except India, where it would be necessary to write a chapter "On the practice of putting property into a false name." Yet this is the literal explanation of a Benami transaction, and such transactions are so common as to have given rise to a very considerable body of decisions. Sir George Campbell says of the Benami system, "The most respectable man feels that if he has not need to cheat any one at present, he may some day have occasion to do so, and it is the custom of the country. So he puts his estate in the name of his wife's grandmother, under a secret trust. If he is pressed by creditors or by opposing suitors, it is not his. If his wife's grandmother plays him false, he brings a suit to declare the trust (a)." In many cases, however, the object of masking the real ownership was not to prepare the means of future fraud, but to avoid personal annoyance and oppression by providing an ostensible owner who might appear in Court, and before the Government officials, to represent the estate. In some instances the practice can only be accounted for by that mysterious desire which exists in the native mind, to make every transaction seem different from what it really is. Whatever be the origin of it, the custom of vesting property in a fictitious owner, known as the Benamidar, has been long since recognized by the Courts of India, and by the Privy Council. Even the familiar principle that a tenant cannot dispute his landlord's title has been made to yield to its influence. A tenant,

---

(a) *Systems of Land Tenure*, 181.



when sued for rent due to his lessor, has been allowed to prove that the person from whom, nominally, he accepted a lease, was only a Benamidar for a third person, to whom the rent was really due (b). And conversely, where a landlord had accepted rent continuously from persons in whose name a lease had been taken for the benefit of their husbands, when the Benamidars were unable to pay, he was allowed to sue the persons really interested in the lease

Tenancy no estoppel.

§ 401. Of course, the law of Benami is in no sense a branch of Hindu law. It is merely a deduction from the well-known principle of equity, that where there is a purchase by A. in the name of B., there is a resulting trust of the whole to A.; and that where there is a voluntary conveyance by A. to B., and no trust is declared, or only a trust as to part, there is a similar resulting trust in favour of the grantor as to the whole, or as to the residue, as the case may be, unless it can be made out that an actual gift was intended (d). In the English Courts an exception is made to this rule, where the person in whose name the conveyance is taken or made is a child of the real owner, when the transaction is presumed to have been made by way of advancement to him. But this exception has not been admitted in India. There the rule is well established, that in all cases of asserted Benami the true criterion is to ascertain from whose funds the purchase-money proceeded. Whether the nominal owner be a child or a stranger, a purchase made with the money of another is *primâ facie* assumed to be made for the benefit of that other (e). It has been suggested, that where a conveyance was taken by a Hindu in the name of a daughter, the probability that it was intended as an advancement would be much stronger

Principles of Benami.

(b) *Donzelle v. Kedarnath*, 7 B. L. R. 720; S. C. 16 Suth. 186.

(c) *Debnath v. Gudadhur*, 18 Suth. 132.

(d) *Lewin, Trusts*, 127, 144. *Standing v. Bowring*, 31 Ch. D. 282. Act II of 1882, § 81, 82 [Trusts].

(e) *Gopeekrist v. Gungapersaud*, 6 M. I. A. 53; *Moulvie Sayyud v. Mt. Bebee*, 18 M. I. A. 232; S. C. 13 Suth. (P. C.) 1; *Bissessur v. Luchmessur*, 6 I. A. 233; S. C. 5 C. L. R. 477; *Nagimbhai v. Abdulla*, 6 Bom. 717; *Ashabai v. Haji Tyeb*, 9 Bom. 115.

than if it were taken in the name of a son ; “ for in a Hindu joint-family the son’s holdings would always remain part of the common stock, whereas the daughters would, on their marriage, necessarily be separated” (*f*). But the existence of any distinction of this sort was denied in a much later case by Mr. Justice *Mitter*. He said, “ So far as the ordinary and usual course of things is concerned, the practice of making benami purchases in the names of female members of joint undivided Hindu families is just as much rife in this country, as that of making such purchases in the names of male members” (*g*). It has been lately held that, in the absence of evidence as to the origin of the purchase money, there is no presumption either way as to whether property purchased in the name of a Hindu wife was her husband’s property or her own. (*h*). But, I imagine, it could hardly be said there was an absence of evidence as to the origin of the purchase money, unless there was evidence that both wife and husband possessed funds from which the purchase might have been made. The decision was reversed upon the evidence by the Privy Council, which found that the purchase was Benami (*i*).

**Strict proof.**

Of course, the assertion that a transaction is not really what it professes to be, is one that will be regarded by the Courts with great suspicion, and must be strictly made out by evidence (*k*). But when the origin of the purchase-money is once made out, the subsequent acts done in the name of the nominal owner will be explained by reference to the real nature of the transaction. The same motive

(*f*) *Obhoy Churn v. Punchanun*, Marsh. 564.

(*g*) *Chunder Nath v. Kristo*, 15 Suth. 357; *Nobin Chunder v. Dokhobala*, 10 Cal. 686.

(*h*) *Chowdrani v. Tariny*, 8 Cal. 545; disapproving of *Bindoo v. Pearee*, 6 Suth. 312; *Narayana v. Krishna*, 8 Mad. 214.

(*i*) *Dharani Kant v. Kristo Kumari*, 13 I. A. 70; S. O. 13 Cal. 181; cf. *Mt. Thakro v. Ganga Pershad*, 15 I. A. 29; S. C. 10 All. 197.

(*k*) *Sreemanchunder v. Gopaulchunder*, 11 M. I. A. 28; S. C. 7 Suth. (P. C.) 10; *Azimut v. Hurdwaree*, 13 M. I. A. 395; S. C. 14 Suth. (P. C.) 14; *Faes Buksh v. Fukesroodeen*, 14 M. I. A. 234; S. C. 9 B. L. R. 456; *Uman Pershad v. Gandharp Singh*, 14 I. A. 127; S. C. 15 Cal. 20. Oral evidence is sufficient, *Palaniyappa v. Arumugam*, 2 Mad. H. O. 26; *Taramonee v. Shibnath*, 6 Suth. 191; *Kumara v. Srinivasa*, 11 Mad. 213.

which dictated an ostensible ownership, would naturally dictate an apparent course of dealing in accordance with such ownership (l).

§ 402. Where a transaction is once made out to be Benami, the Courts of India, which are bound to decide according to equity and good conscience, will deal with it in the same manner as it would be treated by an English Court of Equity (m). The principle is that effect will be given to the real and not to the nominal title, unless the result of doing so would be to violate the provisions of a statute, or to work a fraud upon innocent persons. For instance, the real may sue the ostensible owner to establish his title, or to recover possession (n); and conversely, if the benamidar attempts to enforce his apparent title against the beneficial owner, the latter may establish the real nature of the transaction by way of defence (o). Similarly, creditors who are enforcing their claims against the property of the real owner, will have exactly the same rights against his property held benami as if it were in his real name (p); and conversely, if they seize this estate in execution of a decree against the benamidar, the real owner will be entitled to set aside the execution (q). On the other hand, there are various statutes which provide that in sales under a decree of Court, or for arrears of revenue, the certified purchaser shall be conclusively deemed to be the real purchaser, and shall not be liable to be ousted on the ground that his purchase was really made on behalf of another (r). Such acts, of course, bar the equitable jurisdiction of the Courts,

Effect given to real title.

Violation of statute.

(l) *Beebee Nyamut v. Fuzl Hossein*, S. D. of 1859, 139; *Rohee v. Dindyal*, 21 Suth. 257.

(m) *Ex parte Kahundas*, 5 Bom. 154.

(n) *Thukrain v. Government*, 14 M. I. A. 112.

(o) *Ramanugra v. Mahasundur*, in the P. C., 12 B. L. R. 433.

(p) *Musadee v. Meerza*, 6 M. I. A. 27; *Hemanginee v. Jogendro*, 12 Suth. 236; *Gopi v. Markande*, 3 Bom. 30; *Abdool Hye v. Mir Mahomed*, 11 I. A. 10; S. C. 10 Cal. 616.

(q) *Tara Soonduree v. Oojul*, 14 Suth. 111.

(r) See Act VIII of 1859, § 260 (Old Civil Procedure Code); X of 1877, § 317 (Ditto); Act XIV of 1882, § 317 (New Civil Procedure Code); Act I of 1845, § 21 (Bengal—Revenue Sale); Act XI of 1859, § 36 (Bengal—Zemindary Revenue Sale).

but they will be strictly construed. Therefore if the real owner is actually and honestly in possession, and the benamidar attempts to oust him by virtue of his nominal title, the statute will not prevent the Courts from recognizing the unreal character of his claim (s). And a purchase made by the manager of a Hindu family in his own name, as is usual, would not be considered as coming within the meaning of such statutes (t). It has also been held that these provisions are only intended to prevent the real owner disputing the title of the certified purchaser, and that they do not preclude a third party from enforcing a claim against the true owner in respect of the property purchased as *benami* (u).

Fraud on third parties.

§ 403. Even independently of statute, the Courts will not enforce the rights of a real owner where they would operate to defraud innocent persons. One familiar instance occurs, where the benamidar has sold or mortgaged the property of which he is the ostensible owner, for value, to persons who had no knowledge that he was not the real owner. In such a case the Judicial Committee said, "It is a principle of natural equity, which must be of universal application, that where one man allows another to hold himself out as the owner of an estate, and a third person purchases it for value from the apparent owner in the belief that he is the real owner, the man who so allows the other to hold himself out shall not be permitted to recover upon his secret title, unless he can overthrow that of the purchaser, by showing either that he had direct notice, or something which amounts to constructive notice of the real title, or that there were circumstances which ought to have put him upon an enquiry that, if prosecuted, would have led to a discovery of it" (v). But, of course, notice of the

(s) *Buhuns v. Lalla Buhoree*, 14 M. I. A. 496; S. C. 18 Suth. 157; *Lokhee v. Kalypuddo*, 2 I. A. 154.

(t) See *Tundun v. Pokh Narain*, 5 B. L. R. 546; S. C. 13 Suth. 347; *Bodh Singh v. Gunesh*, in P. C. 12 B. L. R. 317; S. C. 19 Suth. 356.

(u) *Chundra Kaminey v. Ramrutton*, 12 Cal. 302.

(v) *Ramcoomar v. McQueen*, 11 B. L. R. (P. C.) 46, at p. 52; *Luchmun Chunder v. Kalli Churn*, 19 Suth. (P. O.) 292. See too per *Phear, J., Bhugwan*

trust may be implied as well as express, and if a man deals with another who is not in possession, or who is unable to produce the proper documents of title, these facts may amount to notice which will make his transaction be subject to the real state of the title of the person with whom he deals (*w*). In such cases there is no deliberate intention on the part of the real owner to commit a fraud upon any one. But if he deliberately places all the means of committing a fraud in the hands of his benamidar, Equity will not allow him to assert his title to the detriment of a person who has actually been defrauded.

§ 404. A still stronger case is that in which property has been placed in a false name, for the express purpose of shielding it from creditors. As against them, of course, the transaction is wholly invalid (§ 402). But a very common form of proceeding is for the real owner to sue the benamidar, or to resist an action by the benamidar, alleging, or the evidence making out, that the sale was a merely colourable one, made for the express purpose of defrauding creditors. In other words, the party admits that he has apparently transferred his property to another to effect a fraud, but asks to have his act undone, now that the object of the fraud is carried out. The rule was for some time considered to be, that where this state of things was made out, the Court would invariably refuse relief, and would leave the parties to the consequences of their own misconduct; dismissing the plaint, when the suit was brought by the real owner to get back possession of his property (*x*), and refus-

Frauds upon  
creditors.

*v. Upooch*, 10 Suth. 185. See numerous cases, *Rackhaldoss v. Bindoo*, Marsh. 293; *Obhoy v. Panchanun*, ib., 564; *Kally Doss v. Gobind*, ib., 569; *Rennie v. Gunganarain*, 3 Suth. 10; *Nundun v. Tayler*, 5 Suth. 37; *Brojonath v. Koylash*, 9 Suth. 593; *Nidhee v. Bisso*, 24 Suth. 79; *Chunder Coomar v. Hurbuns Sahai*, 10 Cal. 137; cf. *Sarat Chunder v. Gopal Chunder*, ibid. 148, where it was held, that the mere fact of a benami transfer did not amount to a representation which bound the real owner or his heirs as against a purchaser from the benamidar.

(*w*) *Hakeem v. Beejoy*, 22 Suth. 8; *Mancharji v. Kongseoo*, 6 Bom. H. C. (O. C. J.) 59; *Imambandi v. Kumleswari*, 13 I. A. 160, p. 165; S. C. 14 Cal. 109.

(*x*) *Ramindur v. Roopnarain*, 2 S. D. 118 (149); *Roushun v. Collector of Mymensingh*, S. D. of 1846, 120; *Brimho v. Ram Dolub*, S. D. of 1849, 276; *Rajnarain v. Jugunnath*, S. D. of 1851, 774; *Koonjee v. Jankee*, S. D. of 1852,



Frauds upon  
creditors.

ing to listen to the defence, when he set it up in opposition to the person whom he had invested with the legal title (y). And persons who take under the real owner, whether as heirs or as purchasers, were treated in exactly the same manner as he was (z). On the other hand, a contrary doctrine was laid down in more recent cases. In the first of these the plaintiff claimed registration of title as vendee of certain parties, whom the defendant asserted to have been merely benamidars for her, she being actually in possession. The sale by the benamidars was found to be without consideration. It appeared, however, that in a former suit, to which the defendant and the benamidars were all parties, she had maintained that the latter were the real owners. It was also found that the property had been placed in the name of the benamidars by the defendant's late husband for the purpose of defrauding his creditors. On these two grounds the Judge held that the defendant could not now rely on the real state of the title. The High Court of Bengal reversed his judgment on both points. On the latter point, *Couch*, C. J., said: "In many of these cases, the object of a benami transaction is to obtain what may be called a shield against a creditor; but notwithstanding this the parties are not precluded from showing that it was not intended that the property should pass by the instrument creating the benami, and that in truth it still remained in the person who professed to part with it." He then referred to English decisions, and proceeded, "Although, no doubt, it is improper that transactions of this kind should be entered into for the purpose of defeating creditors, yet the real nature of the transaction is what is to be discovered,

838; *Bhowanny v. Purem*, S. D. of 1853, 639; *Ramsoonder v. Anundnath*, S. D. of 1856, 542; *Hurry Sunker v. Kali*, Suth. for 1864, 265; *Aloksoondry v. Horo*, 6 Suth. 287; *Keshub v. Vyasmonce*, 7 Suth. 118; *per curiam*, *Azimut v. Hurdwaree*, 13 M. I. A. 402; S. C. 14 Suth. (P. C.) 14; *Sukhimani v. Mahendranath*, 4 B. L. R. (P. C.) 28, 29; S. C. 13 Suth. (P. C.) 14.

(y) *Obhoychurn v. Treelochun*, S. D. of 1859, 1639; *Ram Lall v. Kishen*, S. D. of 1860, i. 436; *per curiam*, *Ramanurga v. Mahasundur*, 12 B. L. R. (P. C.) 438.

(z) *Luckhee v. Taramonee*, 3 Suth. 92; *Purikheet v. Radha Kishen*, *ib.* 221; *Kaleenath v. Doyal Kristo*, 13 Suth. 87.

the real rights of the parties. If the Courts were to hold that persons were concluded under such circumstances, they would be assisting in a fraud, for they would be giving the estate to a person when it was never intended that he should have it" (a).

§ 405. Possibly the real rule is something intermediate between that which was laid down broadly in this last case, and in those which it appears to over-rule. Where a transaction is once made out to be a mere benami, it is evident that the benamidar absolutely disappears from the title. His name is simply an *alias* for that of the person beneficially interested. The fact that A. has assumed the name of B. in order to cheat X., can be no reason whatever why a Court should assist or permit B. to cheat A. But if A. requires the help of the Court to get the estate back into his own possession, or to get the title into his own name, it may be very material to consider whether A. has actually cheated X. or not. If he has done so by means of his *alias*, then it has ceased to be a mere mask, and has become a reality. It may be very proper for a Court to say that it will not allow him to resume the individuality, which he has once cast off in order to defraud others. If, however, he has not defrauded any one, there can be no reason why the Court should punish his intention by giving his estate away to B., whose roguery is even more complicated than his own. This appears to be the principle of the English decisions. For instance, persons have been allowed to recover property which they had assigned away in order to confer a parliamentary qualification upon a friend, who never sat in parliament; or in order to avoid serving in the office of a sheriff, where they ultimately paid the fine, instead of pleading that they had no property in the country; or where they had intended to defraud creditors, who in fact were never

Principle of decision.

Has fraud gone beyond intention.

(a) *Sreemutty Debia v. Bimola*, 21 Suth. 422, followed *Gopeenath v. Jadoo*, 23 Suth. 42; *Bykunt v. Goboollah*, 24 Suth. 391. See, too, *Birj Mohun v. Ram Nursingh*, 4 S. D. 341, (435); *Param v. Lalji*, 1 All. 403.

injured (b); or in order to avoid the effects of a conviction for a felony, which the grantor supposed he had committed, but which in fact he had not, and could not have committed (c). But where the fraudulent or illegal purpose has actually been effected by means of the colourable grant, then the maxim applies, "*In pari delicto potior est conditio possidentis.*" The Court will help neither party. "Let the estate lie where it falls" (d). But it was suggested by Lord *Eldon* that perhaps this rule would not be enforced in case of one who claimed under the settlor, but was himself not a party to the illegality or fraud (e). And in order to enable the grantee to retain the property, he must expressly set up the illegality of the object, and admit that he is holding for a different purpose from that for which he took the property (f). Even when the case is one in which the Court would not have relieved as matters stood originally, if fresh dealings have taken place between the real owner and the benamidar inconsistent with the ostensible character of the transaction, the former may be precluded from relying on his apparent title (g).

Original pur-  
made as

§ 406. Even before the recent decisions, it was held in Bengal that there was nothing to prevent a man enforcing his rights against a benamidar, where he had made a new purchase, taking the conveyance in the name of a stranger, even though he had done so for the purpose of preventing the property from being seized by creditors. The Court, after referring to the cases already cited, said, "In this case the plaintiff does not seek to render void an act done by him

(b) *Birch v. Blagrave*, Amb. 264; *Cottingham v. Fletcher*, 2 Atk. 156; *Platamone v. Staple*, G. Coop. 250; *Young v. Peachey*, 2 Atk. 254; *Symes v. Hughes*, L. R. 9 Eq. 475; per Lord Westbury, *Tennent v. Tennent*, L. R. 2 Sc. & D 9; *Cecil v. Butcher*, 2 Jac. & W. 565.

(c) *Davies v. Otty*, 35 Beav. 208; *Manning v. Gill*, L. R. 13 Eq. 485. See *Great Berlin Steamboat Co.*, 26 Ch. D. 616.

(d) *Duke of Bedford v. Coke*, 2 Ves. Sen. 116; *Muckleston v. Brown*, 6 Ves. 68; *Chaplin v. Chaplin*, 3 P. W. 233; *Brackenbury v. Brackenbury* 2 Jac. & W. 391; *Doe v. Roberts*, 2 B. & Ald. 367; *Lewin*, 93; *Story*, Eq. Jur. § 298. This seems to be the effect of the Indian Trusts Act, 11 of 1882, § 84. *Chenvirappa v. Puttappa*, 11 Bom 708.

(e) *Lewin*, 93; 6 Ves. 68.

(f) *Haigh v. Kaye*, L. R. 7 Ch. 469.

(g) *Mahadaji v. Vittil Vallal*, 7 Bom. 78.

in fraud, or, in other words, to be relieved from the effect of his own fraudulent act. He simply sues to have a legal act enforced, an act legal in itself, though in the present instance done with a motive of keeping the property out of the reach of his creditors" (*h*). It may also be well to remember that the rules which govern benami transactions have no application to the case of gifts made in contemplation of insolvency, and with the intention of defrauding creditors (*i*). Nor to cases in which property has been sold or handed over to one creditor, in order to defeat an expected execution by another creditor (*k*). If the transfer is really intended to operate, and is not colourable, it is not a benami transaction. Whether it is valid or not, depends upon other considerations.

Insolvency

§ 407. Decrees are conclusive between the parties both as to the rights declared, and as to the character in which they sue. It is allowable for a third person, who was not on the record, to come in and show that a suit was really carried on for his benefit (*l*). So, it is allowable for a person who is on the record, to show that a suit was carried on really against a person who was not a party to it. But where judgment is given in an apparently hostile suit, it is not allowable for either party to come in and assert that the fight was all a sham, and for the defendant on the record to show, that so far from being really a defendant he was the plaintiff, and that so far from judgment having been recovered against him, he had really recovered judgment (*m*). Hence as a general rule it is desirable, if not necessary, that the benamidar should be a party to all suits which affect the property of which he is the nominal owner. But this is not necessary when there is no dispute as to his title being only apparent (*n*). In the absence of any evi-

Effect of decrees.

Benamidar should be a party.

..., *Suboodra v. Bikromadit*, S. D. of 1858, 543, 548.

(i) See *Gnanabhai v. Srinarasa*, 4 Mad. H. C. 84.

(k) *Sankarappa v. Kamayya*, 3 Mad. H. C. 231; *Pullen v. Ramalinga*, 5 Mad. H. C. 368; *Tillakchand v. Jitmal*, 10 Bom. H. C. 206.

(l) *Lachman v. Patniram*, 1 All. 510.

(m) *Bhowabul v. Rajendro*, 13 Suth. 157; *Chenrirappa v. Puttappa*, 11 Bom. 708.

(n) *Kurreemonissa v. Mohabut*, S. D. of 1851, 356.

dence to the contrary, it is to be presumed that a suit brought by a benamidar has been instituted with the full authority of the beneficial owner, and if this is so, any decision come to in his presence would be as much binding upon the real owner, as if the suit had been brought by the real owner himself (o). Where, however, a suit is brought to establish the plaintiff's right to land and for possession, if it appears that he is only benamidar his suit must be dismissed, and it will make no difference that the real owner is a defendant, and gave evidence disclaiming title (p).

---

(o) *Gopinath v. Bhugwat*, 10 Cal. 697, p. 705.

(p) *Hari Gobind v. Akhoy Kumar*, 16 Cal. 364.



## CHAPTER XIV.

### MAINTENANCE.

§ 408. THE importance and extent of the right of maintenance necessarily arises from the theory of an undivided family. Originally, no doubt, no individual member of the family had a right to anything but maintenance. This is still the law of Malabar (*a*), and the case is much the same in an ordinary Hindu family under Mitakshara law prior to partition (§ 268). The head of the undivided family is bound to maintain its members, their wives and their children; to perform their ceremonies, and to defray the expenses of their marriages (*b*). In other words, those who would be entitled to share in the bulk of the property, are entitled to have all their necessary expenses paid out of its income. But the right of maintenance goes farther than this. Those who would be sharers, but for some personal disqualification, are also similarly entitled for themselves and their sons, for their wives, if chaste, and for their daughters. As for instance, those who from some mental or bodily defect are unable to inherit (*c*); illegitimate sons, when not entitled as heirs, even though the connection from which they sprung may have been adulterous (*d*); persons taken in adoption whose adoption has proved invalid, or who have been

Persons who are entitled.

---

(*a*) *Ante*, § 220. As to the rights of the male members of a Malabar Tarwaad to maintenance, see *Bappan v. Makki*, 6 Mad. 259; *Parvati v. Kamaran*, *ibid.* 341; *Kunhammata v. Kunhikutti*, 7 Mad. 233. *Kesava v. Unikkanda*, 11 Mad. 307; *Chandu v. Raman*, *ib.* 378; *Chekkutti v. Pakki*, 12 Mad. 305.

(*b*) *Manu*, ix, § 108; *Narada*, xiii. § 26—28, 33. This right is not founded on contract; and, therefore, a suit for maintenance, where there is no special contract, is not cognizable by a Small Cause Court. *Sidlingapa v. Sidava*, 2 Bom. 624; *Apaji v. Gangabi*, *ib.* 632.

(*c*) *Mitakshara*, ii. 10; *Daya Bhaga*, v. § 10, 11; *D. K. S.* iii. § 7—17; *V. May.*, iv 11, § 1—9; *W. & B.* 751.

(*d*) *Mitakshara*, i. 12, § 3; *Muttusamy v. Venkatasubha*, (*Yetteyapooram Zemindary*) 2 Mad. H. C. 293; *affirmed* 12 M. I. A. 203; *S. C.* 2 B. L. R.

deprived of their full rights by the subsequent birth of a legitimate son (*e*). Whether the same privilege extended to outcasts and their offspring, is a point upon which the authorities differ (*f*). Since Act XXI of 1850 (Freedom of Religion) it has ceased to be a point of any practical importance. Concubines also are entitled to be maintained, even though the connection with them is an adulterous one (*g*). But this liability only exists where the connection was of a permanent nature, analogous to that of the female slaves who in former times were recognized members of a man's family (*h*). *A fortiori* the widows of the members of the family are so entitled, provided they are chaste, and so long as they lead a virtuous life (*i*); and the parents, including the step-mother, and mother-in-law (*k*). The sister, or step-sister, is entitled to maintenance until her marriage, and to have her marriage expenses defrayed. After marriage, her maintenance is a charge upon her husband's family; but, if they are unable to support her, she must be provided for by the family of her father (*l*).

---

(P. C.) 15; S. C. 11 Suth. (P. C.) 6; *Chuoturya v. Sahub Purhulad*, 7 M. I. A. 18; S. C. 4 Suth. (P. C.) 132; *Rahi v. Govind*, 1 Bom. 97; *Viraramuthi v. Singaravelu*, 1 Mad. 306. *Kuppa v. Singaravelu*, 8 Mad. 325; *Hargobind v. Dharam*, 6 All. 329.

(*e*) *Mitakshara*, i, 11, § 28; *Datta Chandrika*, i, § 15. See *ante*, § 163—165.

(*f*) *Mitakshara*, ii, 10, § 1; *Daya Bhaga*, v, § 11, 12; D. K. S. iii, § 14—16; V. May., iv, 11, § 10.

(*g*) *Mitakshara*, ii, 1, § 28; *Daya Bhaga*, xi, 1, § 48; V. May., iv, 8, § 5; 1 Stra. H. L. 174; 2 W. MacN. 119; W. & B. 164; *Khemkor v. Umiashankar*, 10 Bom. H. C. 381; *Vrandavandas v. Yamuna*, 12 Bom. H. C. 229.

(*h*) *Sikki v. Vencatasamy*, 8 Mad. H. C. 144.

(*i*) "Let them allow a maintenance to his woman for life, provided these preserve unsullied the bed of their lords. But if they behave otherwise, the brethren may resume that allowance" (*Narada*, xiii, § 26). This text is said by *Jimuta Vahana* to apply to women actually espoused who have not the rank of wives, but another passage of *Narada* (cited *Smriti Chandrika*, xi, 1, § 34) is open to no such objection. "Whichever wife (*patnī*) becomes a widow and continues virtuous, she is entitled to be provided with food and raiment." See, too, *Smriti Chandrika*, xi, 1, § 47; 2 W. MacN. 112; *Muttammal v. Kamakshy*, 2 Mad. H. C. 337; *per curiam*, *Sinthayee v. Thanakapudayen*, 4 Mad. H. C. 185; *Kery Kolitany v. Moneeram*, 13 B. L. R. 72, 88; S. C. 19 Suth. 367, 7 I. A. p. 151. But see *Honamma v. Timannabhat*, 1 Bom. 559, where it was held that subsequent unchastity did not deprive a widow of a mere starving maintenance awarded by decree, *post*, § 414. See too *Roma Nath v. Rajonimoni*, 17 Cal. 674.

(*k*) 2 W. MacN. 113, 118; W. & B., 234; *per Norman, J.*, *Khetramani v. Kashinath*, 2 B. L. R. (A. C. J.) 15; S. C. 10 Suth. (F. B.) 93; *Cooppummal v. Rookmany*, Mad. Dec. of 1855, 238. *Per curiam* *Savitribai v. Luximibai*, 2 Bom. 597.

(*l*) 2 W. MacN. 118; W. & B., 245, 437.

Misbehaviour, or ex-communication from caste on the ground of misbehaviour, does not of itself disentitle the offender to maintenance (*m*).

§ 409. There is some difference of opinion as to whether the right of maintenance is an absolute obligation, which attaches itself upon certain persons by virtue of their relationship to the destitute individual, or whether it is merely a claim upon the property of those who hold it, by virtue of their possession of the property. It is stated in a text ascribed to Manu, that “A mother and a father in their old age, a virtuous wife, and an infant son, must be maintained, even though doing an hundred times that which ought not to be done” (*n*). So the Mitakshara lays down that “Where there may be no property but what has been self-acquired, the only persons whose maintenance out of such property is imperative are aged parents, wife, and minor children” (*o*). The Smriti Chandrika also expressly states that the obligation to maintain widows is dependent on taking the property of the deceased (*p*). This rule is followed in Madras, where suits for maintenance have been dismissed when brought by a widow against her brothers-in-law, or her father-in-law, who held no ancestral property, or where the only property out of which maintenance could be given was a salary (*q*). So, it has been held in Bengal that the widow of a separated brother is not entitled to be main- How enforced.

Nature and  
extent of obliga-  
tion.

---

(*m*) *Putanvital Seyan v. Putanvital Ragavan*, 4 Mad. 171; *R. v. Marimuttu*, *ibid.* 243.

(*n*) 3 Dig. 406. The last clause is cited in another chapter as meaning that these relations must be maintained even by crime. See *per curiam*, *Savitribai v. Luximibai*, 2 Bom. 597.

(*o*) Mitakshara on Subtraction of Gift, cited *Stra. Man.* § 209; *Subbarayana v. Subbakka*, 8 Mad. 236. A step son is not bound to support his step-mother unless he has family property. *Bai Daya v. Nathu Govindlal*, 9 Bom. 279; *Kedar Nath v. Hemangini*, 13 Cal. 336.

(*p*) Smriti Chandrika, xi. 1. § 34. “In order to maintain the widow, the elder brother or any of the others above mentioned must have taken the property of the deceased; the duty of maintaining the widow being dependent on taking the property.” It is immaterial whether the property is movable or real. *Kamini Dassee v. Chandra Pote*, 17 Cal. 373.

(*q*) *Vudda v. Venkumma*, Mad. Dec. of 1858, 225; *Comarasawmy v. Sellum-maul*, Mad. Dec. of 1859, 5; *Virabadrachari v. Kuppammal*, *ib.* 265; *Brahma-varapu v. Venkamma*, *ib.* 272; *Ammakannu v. Appu*, 11 Mad. 191. See *Visa-latchy v. Annasami*, 5 Mad. H. C. 150, where the point had been left undecided.

Widow of  
deceased co-  
parcener.

tained by the family of her father-in-law, and the same opinion was given by the Bombay High Court, in a case where a deserted wife claimed maintenance from her husband's brothers. Their liability was stated to depend upon their having in their hands any of her husband's property (r). In a case under the Mitakshara law in Bengal, *Kemp, J.*, said, "The question to be decided is, whether the father and son were joint in estate, and whether any joint estate was left which was burthened with the payment of proper maintenance to the plaintiff, the defendant's daughter-in-law" (s). The question was recently examined with great fulness and care by the Courts of the North-West Provinces and of Bengal. In the former the widow of a deceased member of a joint family claimed maintenance from her father-in-law and brothers-in-law. There was admittedly joint ancestral property, but it was contended that the widow could only be maintained out of her husband's property, and that he left none, his interest in it passing to his coparceners. The Court affirmed her claim. They rested it on the ground that the share which her husband had in the property had passed to the defendants, that she could not be in a worse position than the wife of a disqualified heir, who would be admittedly entitled to maintenance; that she might be looked upon as one who, though interested in the property, was disqualified from inheriting it by sex; and that where her husband had an interest in property, out of which she would be maintained during his life, the obligation to maintain her out of that property continued after his death, whether it passed by inheritance or by survivorship (t). It will be observed that it was assumed that there would have been no such obligation if there had been no joint property, or if it had not passed into the hands of the defendants, and the judgments relied much on the passage in the *Smriti Chandrika* (xi. 1, § 34), in which this rule is

(r) *Kumulmoney v. Bodhnarain*, 2 W. MacN. 119; *Ramabai v. Trimbak*, 9 Bom. H. C. 283.

(s) *Hema Kooeree v. Ajoodhya*, 24 Suth. 474.

(t) *Lalti Kuar v. Ganga*, 7 N.-W. P. 261.

laid down. The principle that a widow of a son has no legal claim for maintenance against the separate or self-acquired property of her father-in-law was affirmed by a Full Bench of the Allahabad High Court. They held, however, that the father-in-law was under a moral obligation to provide for the widow out of this property, and that when, upon his death, the property devolved upon his other sons they came under a legal obligation to carry out this moral obligation, and could be compelled to do so (u).

§ 410. The Bengal decision was given on appeal from a judgment of a Full Bench under the following circumstances (v): The plaintiff was the widow of the defendant's son. There was no joint family property, and the son left no property of his own. The only property possessed by the father-in-law was a monthly pension. After her husband's death, the widow went to reside in her own father's house. The suit was brought by her to have a fixed money payment made to her. It was admitted that the defendant was willing to support her in his own house, and that she had not been driven from his house by any ill-treatment. It was held by eleven out of thirteen Judges (*diss. Loch and Kemp, JJ.*) that her claim could not be supported. For the purpose of this ruling, however, it was not necessary to decide whether the father-in-law was under an obligation to give his daughter-in-law lodging, food and raiment. It was only necessary to decide that where she practically refused to accept these, she was not entitled to a fixed monthly allowance. It was admitted by all the Judges that where a person took property, either by inheritance or survivorship, he would be legally bound to maintain those whose maintenance was a charge upon it in the hands of the last holder. But where there was no such property, *Peacock, C. J., Macpherson, Bayley, Glover, JJ.*, were of opinion that there was no legal obligation whatever to

Not entitled to independent allowance,

where no property.

Whether maintenance of widow depends

(u) *Janki v. Nand Ram*, 11 All. 194. This case was approved and followed by the High Court of Bengal, *Kamini Dassee v. Chandra Pote*, 17 Cal. 373.

(v) *Khetramani v. Kashinath*, 2 B. L. R. (A. C. J.) 15; S. C. 10 Suth. (F. B.) 89; *Ramcoomar v. Ichamoyi*, 6 Cal. 36.



on possession  
of property.

maintain the daughter at law, and that the precepts which seemed to enjoin upon relations the duty of maintaining the widows of deceased members were of merely moral obligation. On the other hand, several of the other Judges stated that they offered no opinion as to the right of a dependent widow to receive necessary subsistence in the house of the head of the family. If he allowed her to continue in his house as a member of the family, and if she were an infant, or otherwise unable to maintain herself, it was intimated by *Norman, J.*, that such a state of things would carry with it a legal obligation on the part of the father-in-law, who had taken upon himself the care of her person, and the charge of entertaining her as a member of his family, and on whose protection she was dependent, to provide her with food and the actual necessities of life. But the Civil Courts would have no jurisdiction to interfere with his discretion in determining the manner in which this obligation should be discharged (*w*).

Bombay

§ 411. In Bombay, it was formerly laid down that where a widow of one of the near members of the family, such as a father, son, or brother, is actually destitute, she has a legal right to be maintained by the other members, even though they were separated from her late husband, and possess no assets upon which he or she ever had a claim (*x*). These cases were, however, examined and over-ruled in a later decision, in which a widow, who was living apart from her husband's family, sued his paternal uncle, the nearest surviving male relation of her husband, for a money allowance as maintenance. The Court, after an exhaustive review of the whole law upon the subject, held that the suit must fail for two reasons, either of which would be fatal to her claim; *first*, that the defendant was separated in estate from the plaintiff's husband at the time of his death; and

(*w*) 2 B. L. R. (A. C. J.) p. 48; S. C. 10 Suth. (F. B.), p. 95.

(*x*) *Baee v. Lukmeedass*, 1 Bom. H. C. 18; *Chandrabhagabai v. Kashinath*, 2 Bom. H. C. 341; *Timmappa v. Parmeshriamma*, 5 Bom. H. C. (A. C. J.) 180; *Udaram v. Sonkaboi*, 10 Bom. H. C. 483.

*secondly*, that at the institution of the suit there was not in the possession, or subject to the disposition, of the defendant, any ancestral estate, or estate of the plaintiff's husband, or of his father (*y*).

§ 412. The obligation to maintain a son appears to be limited to the case of his being an infant (*z*), in which case the law of every nation imposes an obligation upon the parent to maintain him, or of his being a co-sharer in the property of which his father is the manager. The mere relationship of father and son imposes no such obligation, where the son has reached an age at which he can support himself. Whether the case might be different if a permanent incapacity to support himself were made out is not clear. A temporary incapacity would certainly entail no such duty (*a*). Where, however, the whole of the family property is impartible, and subject to the law of primogeniture, an adult son is entitled to maintenance, since this is the only mode in which he can obtain any benefit from the ancestral estate (*b*). Rights of son.

§ 413. The maintenance of a wife by her husband is, of course, a matter of personal obligation, arising from the very existence of the relation, and independent of the possession of any property (*c*). And this obligation attaches from the moment of marriage. Where the wife is immature it is the custom that she should reside with her parents, and they maintain her as a matter of affection, but not of obligation. If from inability, unwillingness, or any other cause, they choose to demand her maintenance from her husband, he is bound to pay it (*d*). And, conversely, her Wife to be maintained by husband.

---

(*y*) *Savitribai v. Luximibai*, 2 Bom. 573; *Apaji v. Gangabai*, ib. 632; *Kalu v. Kashibai*, 7 Bom. 127; *Bai Kanku v. Bai Jadav*, 8 Bom. 15; *Adibai v. Cursandas*, 11 Bom. 199.

(*z*) *Ante*, § 409. *Amma Kannu v. Appu*, 11 Mad. 91.

(*a*) *Premchand v. Hulashchand*, 4 B. L. R. Appx. 23; S. C. 12 Suth. 494. So as to grandson, *Mon Mohinee v. Baluck*, 8 B. L. R. 22; S. C. 15 Suth. 498; or adult illegitimate son, *Nilmoney v. Baneshur*, 4 Cal. 91.

(*b*) *Himmat v. Ganpat*, 12 Bom. H. C. 94; *Ramchandra v. Sakharam*, 2 Bom. 346; *post*, § 416.

(*c*) *Ante*, § 409.

(*d*) *Ramien v. Condummal*, Mad Dec. of 1858, 154.

husband is alone liable. No other member of the family, whether joint or separate, can properly be made a party to the suit, unless, perhaps, in cases where he has abandoned her, and his property is in the possession of some other relation. (e).

Bound to reside  
with him.

§ 414. As soon as the wife is mature, her home is necessarily in her husband's house (f). He is bound to maintain her in it while she is willing to reside with him, and to perform her duties. If she quits him of her own accord, either without cause, or on account of such ordinary quarrels as are incidental to married life in general, she can set up no claim to a separate maintenance (g). Nothing will justify her in leaving her home except such violence as renders it unsafe for her to continue there, or such continued ill-usage as would be termed cruelty in an English matrimonial Court (h). For instance, where a Hindu husband kept a Mahomedan woman, the Court considered that this was such conduct as rendered it impossible for the wife to live with him any longer, consistently with her self-respect and religious feelings (i). But I doubt whether the same rule would be applied to the mere keeping of a concubine, which is a matter of familiar usage among Hindus, especially of the higher ranks (k). And the circumstance of a man's taking another wife, even without any of the reasons which are stated as justifying such a course (l), does not entitle a

Wife leaving her  
home.

(e) *Iyagaree v. Sashamma*, Mad. Dec. of 1856, 22; *Rangaiyan v. Kaliyan*; Mad. Dec. of 1860, 86; *Gudimella v. Venkamma*, Mad. Dec. of 1861, 12; *Ramabai v. Trimbak*, 9 Bom. H. C. 283.

(f) See the whole subject discussed in *Dadaji v. Rukmabai*, 9 Bom. 529, reversed 10 Bom. 301, where a wife of mature years, whose marriage had never been consummated, refused to take up her residence with her husband, and it was held that a suit would lie to compel her to do so.

(g) 2 W. MacN. 109; *Kullyanessurce v. Dwarkanath*, 6 Suth. 116; S. C. 2 Wym. 123; *Sidlingapa v. Sidava*, 2 Bom. 634.

(h) *Pudmanabiah v. Moonemmah*, Mad. Dec. of 1857, 138; *Vejayah v. Anjalummaul*, Mad. Dec. of 1853, 223; *Matangini v. Jogendro*, 19 Cal. 84.

(i) *Lalla Gobind v. Dowlut*, 6 B. L. R. Appx. 85; S. C. 14 Suth. 451. As to cases where either party becomes a convert and is therefore repudiated by the other, see Act XXI of 1866, (Native Converts Marriage Dissolution).

(k) Yajnavalkya says (V. May., xx. § 2), "Let the bidding of their husbands be performed by wives; this is the chief duty of a woman. Even if he be accused of deadly sin, yet let her wait until he be purified from it."

(l) See as to these, Manu, ix. § 77—82.

wife to leave her home, so long as her husband is willing to keep her there (*m*). For such a step on his part is one of the incidents of Hindu married life. Of course, a wife who leaves her home for purposes of adultery cannot claim to be maintained out of it, nor to be taken back (*n*). Whether an unchaste wife can be turned out of doors by her husband without any provision whatever seems unsettled. It is stated generally that an unchaste woman may be turned out of doors without any maintenance (*o*). But the passages upon which this *dictum* rests refer to the maintenance either of the wives of disqualified heirs, or of the widows of deceased coparceners (*p*). Vasishttha treats even adultery on the part of a wife as an expiable offence, and states the particular penances by which she is rendered pure again. He adds, "But these four wives must be abandoned, one who yields herself to her husband's pupil or guru, and especially one who attempts the life of her lord, or who commits adultery with a man of a degraded caste." In another passage he says, "A wife though tainted by sin, whether she be quarrelsome, or have left the house, or have suffered criminal force, or have fallen into the hands of thieves, must not be abandoned; to forsake her is not prescribed by the sacred law." "Those versed in the sacred law state that there are three acts only which make women outcasts, the murder of the husband, slaying a learned Brahman, and the destruction of the fruit of their womb" (*q*). It appears pretty certain that no one except her husband, or perhaps her son, is bound to keep an unchaste woman alive. But there are contradictory opinions as to whether her husband is not liable to furnish her with a bare subsistence. The obligation, if it exists, is dependent on the

When unchaste.

(*m*) Manu, ix. § 83; *Virasvami v. Appasvami*, 1 Mad. H. C. 375; *Rajah Row Boochee v. Vencata Neeladry*, 1 Mad. Dec. 366.

(*n*) 2 W. MacN. 109; *Ilata v. Narayanan*, 1 Mad. H. C. 372.

(*o*) V. May., iv. 11, § 12; *Smriti Chandrika*, v. § 43.

(*p*) See Narada, xiii. § 25, 26; *Mitakshara*, ii. 1, § 7; *Viramit.*, p. 174; *Daya Bhaga*, xi. 1, § 48, and *per P. C. Moniram v. Kerry Kolutany*, 7 I. A. 151; S. C. 5 Cal. 776.

(*q*) Vasishttha, xxi. 7—10; xxviii. 2—7.

woman abandoning her course of vice (*r*). Where a decree has been given awarding a bare maintenance to a woman, it has been held that she does not forfeit it by subsequent unchastity. Though it might be different if the maintenance awarded were on the full scale (*s*). This ruling was dissented from in a later case where a widow was declared not entitled even to a starving maintenance on account of her incontinence. There, however, the property out of which she claimed to be maintained had been bequeathed by her father-in-law to her mother-in-law, by whom the action was brought to recover it, and the Court intimated that possibly her husband or her son would be bound to keep her from absolute destitution (*t*). This decision was again followed in a case very similar to that of *Honamma v. Timannabhat*, the widow having obtained a decree for maintenance before her misconduct. The Court held that her subsequent unchastity might be used either as a defence to an action by her to enforce the decree, or as a ground for setting it aside. They relied on the text of Narada referred to in the *Daya Bhaga* (XI. 1, § 48):—"Let them (the husband's relations) allow a maintenance to his women for life, provided they keep unsullied the bed of their lord; but if they behave otherwise, the brother may resume that allowance." This text is pointed out by the Privy Council in *Moniram v. Kerry Kolitany* (*u*), as clearly showing that the right was one liable to resumption or forfeiture as distinguished from the case of a widow's estate by succession (*v*).

For a lawful purpose.

When a wife leaves her husband's home by his consent, he

(*r*) *Bussunt v. Kummul*, 7 S. D. 144 (168); 1 Stra. H. L. 172; 2 Stra. H. L. 39, 309; Stra. Man. § 206; *Muthammal v. Kamakshy Ammal*, 2 Mad. H. C. 337. And consider remarks of H. Ct. *Lakshman v. Ramchandra*, 1 Bom. 560. See texts. 2 Dig. 422—425; Narada, xii. § 91; Yajnavalkya, i. § 70; Viramit., p. 153; *per curiam*, 17 Cal. p. 679.

(*s*) *Honamma v. Timannabhat*, 1 Bom. 559. But see *per curiam*, *Sinthayee v. Thanakapudayen*, 4 Mad. H. C. 185.

(*t*) *Valu v. Gunga*, 7 Bom. 84.

(*u*) 7 I. A. p. 151.

(*v*) *Vishnu Shambhog v. Manjamma*, 9 Bom. 108. The rule applies *a fortiori* in the case of a concubine of a deceased coparcener. *Yashvantrav v. Kashibai*, 12 Bom. 26.



is, of course, bound to receive her again when she is desirous to return, and if he refuses to do so, she will be entitled to maintenance just as if he had turned her out (*w*).

A wife who is unlawfully excluded from her own home, or refused proper maintenance in it, has the same right to pledge her husband's credit, as a wife in England. But the *onus* lies heavily on those who deal with her to establish that she is in such a position (*x*).

§ 415. The same reasons which require a wife to remain under her husband's roof do not apply where she has become a widow. No doubt the family house of her husband's relations is a proper, but not necessarily the most proper, place for her continued residence (*y*). Where she is young, and is surrounded by young men, it may even be more prudent and decorous for her to return to her father's care, and it may, under many circumstances, be not only a safer but a happier home. At all events it is now settled by decisions of the highest tribunal that "all that is required of her is, that she is not to leave her husband's house for improper or unchaste purposes, and she is entitled to retain her maintenance, unless she is guilty of unchastity, or other disreputable practices, after she leaves that residence" (*z*). It does not, however, follow, that the right to choose a separate residence and a money maintenance rests absolutely with the widow, merely for her own pleasure. The Bombay High Court, after a review of all the previous decisions, appears to be of opinion that the Courts have a discretion, "which should be exercised so as not to throw upon the deceased husband's family a needless or oppressive burden at the caprice of the widow or her family." They cited with approval, as containing the true principle

Widow not bound to reside with husband's family.

Widow residing apart.

(*w*) *Nitye v. Soondaree*, 9 Suth. 475.

(*x*) *Virasvami v. Appasvami*, 1 Mad. H. C. 375.

(*y*) 2 Dig. 450.

(*z*) *Pirthee Singh v. Rani Rajkooer*, 12 B. L. R. (P. C.) 238; S. C. 20 Suth. 21, where most of the previous cases are cited; *Visalatchi v. Annasamy*, 5 Mad. H. C. 150; *Kasturbai v. Shivajiram*, 3 Bom. 372, dissenting from *Rango Vinayak v. Yamunabai*, 3 Bom. 44; *per curiam*, 5 Mad. p. 85; *Gokibai v. Lakhmidas*, 14 Bom. 490.

of law, the statement by Colebrooke (2 Stra. H. L. 401) "She does not lose her right of maintenance by visiting her own relations; but a widow is not entirely her own mistress, being subject to the control of her husband's family, who might require her to return to live in her husband's house (a)." If the husband chose by his will to make it a condition, that his widow should reside in his family house, such a direction would be binding, and the continuance of her maintenance would depend upon her obedience (b). A widow cannot insist on residing in any particular house. If she elects to live with her husband's family, she must accept such arrangements for her residence as they make for her (c). In Madras it has been laid down that a widow who, without any special cause, elects to live away from her husband's relations, is not entitled to as liberal an allowance as she would be if, from any fault of theirs, she was unable to live with them (d). But I imagine that her election to live apart from them cannot be visited with anything in the way of a penalty, or forfeiture of her proper rights (e). Under Bengal Law, where a partition takes place between the sons and stepsons of a widowed mother, her claim for maintenance attaches upon the share of her own sons, not upon the whole estate. So long as the estate is undivided the maintenance of all the mothers is a charge upon the whole estate (f).

**All heirs bound.**

§ 416. A female heir is under exactly the same obligations to maintain dependent members of the family as a male heir would have been under by virtue of succeeding to the same estate (g). The obligation extends even to the

---

(a) *Rango Vinayak v. Yamunabai*, 3 Bom. 44; *Ramchandra v. Sagunabai*, 4 Bom. 261.

(b) *Bamasunderi v. Puddomonee*, S. D. of 1859, 457; *Cunjhunnee v. Gopee*, F. MacN. 62; *per curiam*, *Pirthee Singh v. Rani Rajkooer*, 12 B. L. R. 247; S. C. 20 Suth 21. *Mulji Baishanker v. Bai Ujam*, 13 Bom. 218; *Girianna v. Honamma*, 15 Bom. 236.

(c) *Mohun Geer v. Mt. Tota*, 4 N.-W. P. 153.

(d) *Anantaiya v. Savitramma*, Mad. Dec. of 1861, 59.

(e) See cases cited, note (z); *Nittokissoree v. Jogendor*, 5 A. I. 55.

(f) *Hemangini Dasi v. Kedarnath*, 16 I. A. 115; S. C. 16 Cal. 758. *Gunga v. Jeevee*, 1 Bor. 384 [426]; 3 Dig. 460.

King when he takes the estate by escheat, or by forfeiture (*h*). And where the claim to maintenance is based upon the possession of family property, it equally exists though the property is impartible, as being in the nature of a Raj, or a Zemindary in Southern India (*i*). In Bombay it has been held that where a member of an ordinary undivided Hindu family is in a position to sue for a share of the property, he cannot sue for maintenance (*k*). But it is difficult to see why a coparcener, who is willing to continue as a member of an undivided family, should be driven out of it by what must be wrongful conduct on the part of the manager, in refusing him his proper support out of the family funds. Such suits are, of course, very rare, as maintenance would never be refused to a coparcener unless his right as such was denied, in which case he would naturally test his right by suing for a partition.

Right of coparcener to

§ 417. In cases where a man forsakes his wife without any fault on her part, it is said that he is bound to give her one-third of his property, provided that would be sufficient for her maintenance (*l*). In other cases no rule is, or can be, laid down as to the amount which ought to be awarded. In any particular instance the first question would be, what would be the fair wants of a person in the position and rank of life of the claimant? The wealth of the family would be a proper element in determining this question. A member of a family who had been brought up in affluence would naturally have more numerous and more expensive wants than one who had been brought up in poverty. The extent of the property would be material in deciding whether these

Amount.

How determined.

(*h*) Narada, xiii. § 52; *Golab Koonwur v. Collector of Benares*, 4 M. I. A. 246; S. O. 7 Suth. (P. C.) 47.

(*i*) *Muttusawmy v. Vencataswara*, 12 M. I. A. 203; S. C. 2 B. L. R. (P. C.) 15; S. C. 11 Suth. (P. C.) 6; *Katchekaleyana v. Kachivijaya*, *ib.* 495; S. C. 2 B. L. R. (P. C.) 72; S. C. 11 Suth. (P. C.) 33; *ante*, § 412. In the case of the *Pachete Raj* the Court held that there was no law, or custom, which entitled any one but a son or daughter of the deceased Rajah to receive maintenance. *Nilmony Singh v. Hingoo*, 5 Cal. 256.

(*k*) *Himmat Sing v. Ganpat Sing*, 12 Bom. H. C. 96, note.

(*l*) V. May., xx. § 1; *Huree Bhaee v. Nathoo*, 1 Bor. 63 [69]; *Ramabai v. Trimbak*, 9 Bom. H. C. 283.

wants could be provided for, consistently with justice to the other members (*m*). The extent of the property is not, however, a criterion of the sufficiency of the maintenance, in the sense that any ratio had existed between one and the other. Otherwise, as the Judicial Committee remarked (*n*), “a son not provided for might compel a frugal father, who had acquired large means by his own exertions, to allow a larger maintenance than he himself was satisfied to live upon, and than children living as part of his family must be content with.” Every case must be determined upon its own peculiar facts. As regards widows, since they are only entitled to be maintained by persons who hold assets over which their deceased husbands had a claim, (§ 409—411) the High Court of Bombay has ruled that it follows as a corollary, “that the widow is not, at the utmost, entitled to a larger portion of the annual produce of the family property than the annual proceeds of the share to which her husband would have been entitled on partition were he now living” (*o*).

Where widow  
has property.

In calculating the amount of maintenance to be awarded to a female, her own *stridhana* is not to be taken into account, if it is of an unproductive character, such as clothes and jewels. For she has a right to retain these, and also to be supported, if necessary, by her husband's family. But if her property produces an income, this is to be taken into consideration. For her right is to be maintained, and, so far as she is already maintained out of her own property, that right is satisfied (*p*). And it would seem that a member of the family, who has once received a sufficient allotment for maintenance, and who has dissipated it, cannot bring a suit either for a money allowance, or for subsistence out of the

(*m*) *Baisni v. Rup Singh*, 12 All. 558.

(*n*) *Tagore v. Tagore*, 9 B. L. R. p. 413; S. C. 18 Suth. 359; *Bhugwan v. Bindoo*, 6 Suth. 286; *Nittokissoree v. Jogendro*, 5 I. A. 55.

(*o*) *Madhavarav v. Gangabai*, 2 Bom. 639; *Adibai v. Cursandas*, 11 Bom. 199.

(*p*) 1 Stra. H. L. 171; 2 Stra. H. L. 307; *Shib Dayee v. Doorga Pershad*, 4 N.-W. P. 63; *Chandrabhagabai v. Kashinath*, 2 Bom. H. C. 341; *per curiam*, *Savitribai v. Luximibai*, 2 Bom. at p. 584. A mere right of action to recover property under a will is not a legitimate ground for reducing maintenance. *Gokebai v. Lakhmidas*. 14 Bom. 490.

family property (*q*). On the other hand, an allowance fixed in reference to a particular state of the family property may be diminished by order of the Court if the assets are afterwards reduced (*r*), provided the reduction has not arisen from the voluntary act of the person liable for maintenance (*s*). And on the same principle, no doubt, the allowance might be raised, if the property increased.

*Arrears* of maintenance used to be refused by the Madras Sudder Court. But this view has now been over-ruled, and it is settled that such arrears may be awarded, at all events from the date of demand (*t*). Such an award is, however at the discretion of the Court, and arrears may properly be refused where a widow has chosen to live apart from her husband's relations without any sufficient cause, and has then sued not only for a declaration of her right to future maintenance, but for a lump sum as arrears for the period during which she resided with her own family (*u*). The Bombay High Court has lately ruled that, even without a precedent demand, a widow may recover arrears of maintenance for any period, subject to the operation of the law of limitation. That is to say, that a demand and refusal may limit her right to arrears, but is not required to create it (*v*).

§ 418. Another question is, whether the claim for maintenance is merely a liability which ought, in the first place, to be satisfied out of the family property, or whether it is an actual charge upon that property, which binds it in the hands of the holders of the property ?

How far a charge upon the property.

(*q*) *Savitribai v. Luximibai*, 2 Bom. 573.

(*r*) *Rukabai v. Gandabai*, 1 All. 594.

(*s*) *Vijaya v. Sripathi*, 8 Mad. 94.

(*t*) *Venkopadhyaya v. Kavari*, 2 Mad. H. C. 36; *Sakwarbai v. Bhavanjee*, 1 Bom. H. C. 194; *Abalady v. Mt. Lukhymonee*, 2 Wym. 49; *Pirthee Singh v. Ranee Raj Kooer*, 2 N.-W. P. 170; *affirmed*, 12 B. L. R. (P. C.) 238; S. C. 20 Suth. 21; *Jadumani v. Kheytra Mohan*, V. Darp. 884; *Narbadabai v. Mahadev*, 5 Bom. 99.

(*u*) *Rango Vinayak v. Yamunabai*, 3 Bom. 44.

(*v*) *Jivi v. Ramji*, 3 Bom. 207. See as to the effect of limitation upon a decree awarding maintenance, *Lakshuibai v. Bapuji*, 12 Bom. 65. A merely declaratory decree for maintenance cannot be enforced, *Venkanna v. Aitamma*, 12 Mad. 183. Otherwise where the decree specifically awards future maintenance. *Ashutosh Bannerjee v. Lukhimoni*, 19 Cal. 139.



How far a charge upon the property.

There are several texts which prohibit the gift of property to such an extent as to deprive a man's family of the means of subsistence. *Vrihaspati* says (w), "A man may give what remains after the food and clothing of his family; the giver of more (who leaves his family naked and unfed) may taste honey at first, but shall afterwards find it poison. If what is acquired by marriage, what has descended from an ancestor, or what has been gained by valor, be given with the assent of the wife, or the co-heirs, or of the King, the gift is valid." "*Katyayana* declares what may and may not be given. Except his whole estate and his dwelling-house, what remains after the food and clothing of his family a man may give away, whatever it be (whether fixed or movable); otherwise it may not be given" (x). *Iyasa* says (y), "They who are born and they who are yet unborn, and they who are actually in the womb, all require the means of support, and the dissipation of their hereditary maintenance is censured." So a passage ascribed to *Manu* (z) declares, "The support of persons who should be maintained is the approved means of attaining heaven. But hell is the man's portion if they suffer. Therefore let a master of a family carefully maintain them." This *Jimuta Vahana* explains by saying, "The prohibition is not against a donation or other transfer of a small part not in compatible with the support of the family."

Upon these passages, however, it is to be observed: *First*, that they all refer to cases of gift or dissipation, where no consideration exists for the transfer. The same prohibition would not apply to a sale, either for a family necessity, or for value, where the purchase-money would take the place of that which was disposed of. *Secondly*, the penalties suggested seem to be rather of a religious nature, punishing the act, than of a civil nature, invalidating it. *Thirdly*, the very authors who cite these texts treat them as merely

(w) 2 Dig. 131. (x) 2 Dig. 133; 3 Dig. 581. (y) Daya Bhaga, i. § 45.  
(z) Daya Bhaga, ii. § 23, 24, not to be found in the Institutes.

moral prohibitions, and *Jagannatha* points out, acutely enough, as to one text, that the gift cannot be invalid, if the immediate result of it is to taste as honey in the mouth of the donor (a).

§ 419. The question has arisen frequently for decision within the last few years, though it can hardly be said that every point that can be suggested has been set at rest. It seems to be now settled that the claim even of a widow for maintenance is not such a lien upon the estate as binds it in the hands of a *bonâ fide* purchaser for value without notice of the claim (b). As *Phear, J.*, said (c), "When the property passes into the hands of a *bonâ fide* purchaser without notice, it cannot be affected by any thing short of an existing proprietary right; it cannot be subject to that which is not already a specific charge, or which does not contain all the elements necessary to its ripening into a specific charge. And obviously, the consideration received by the heir for the sale of the deceased's property will, so far as the widow's right of recourse to it is concerned, take the place of the property sold." It was also pointed out by the Bombay High Court (d) that the texts which are relied on as making the maintenance a charge upon the inheritance are exactly similar to those which charge it with the payment of debts, the expenses of marriage and funeral ceremonies, and the charges of initiation of younger members. But these charges would admittedly not be payable by a purchaser for value, whether with or without notice of their existence. They also pointed out that such a doctrine would equally invalidate a sale made by the husband himself, as a wife's maintenance is even a stronger obligation than that of maintaining a widow. In fact the Madras Sudder Court did carry out the principle to that full extent, by holding that a sale of property made by a

Does not bind purchaser without notice.

(a) 2 Dig. 182; *Daya Bhaga*, ii. § 28.

(b) *Bhagabati v. Kanailal*, 8 B. L. R. 225; S. C. 17 Suth. 433 note; *Adhiranee v. Shona Malee*, 1 Cal. 365; *Lakshman v. Sarasvatibai*, 12 Bom. H. C. 69; *Lakshman v. Satyabhamabai*, 2 Bom. 494.

(c) 8 B. L. R. 229.

(d) 12 Bom. H. C. p. 77.

husband was invalid, where nothing was left for the maintenance of his wife (*e.*)

Where right has become fixed.

§ 420. Supposing this to be established, it would follow that the purchaser must have notice, not merely of the existence of a right to maintenance—that is, of the existence of persons who did or might require to be maintained—but of the existence of a charge actually created and binding the estate. Otherwise, it is evident that an estate never could be purchased as long as there was any person living whose maintenance was, or might become, a charge upon the property. A decree actually settling the amount of maintenance, and making it a lien upon the property, would, of course, be a valid charge; but not, apparently, a merely personal decree against the holder of the property (*f*). So, if the property was bequeathed by will, and the widow's maintenance was fixed and charged upon the estate by the same will (*g*); or, if by an agreement between the widow and the holder of the estate, her maintenance was settled and made payable out of the estate (*h*), a purchaser taking with notice of the charge would be bound to satisfy it. And the charge, where it exists, is a charge upon every part of the property, and may be made the ground of a suit against any one who holds any part of it (*i*). In a case already quoted, *Phear, J.*, seemed to think that notice of a widow having set up a claim for maintenance against the heir would be sufficient (*k*). But if nothing binds the

Effect of notice.

(*e*) *Lachchanna v. Bapanamma*, Mad. Dec. of 1860, 230.

(*f*) *Per West, J., Lakshman v. Satyabhamabai*, 2 Bom. p. 524; *Adhiranee v. Shona Malee*, 1 Cal. 365; *Saminatha v. Rangathammal*, 12 Mad. 285. Nor would a decree against a member of a joint family in her individual capacity bind the joint family property as against its representative, or other members, not parties to the suit. *Muttia v. Virammal*, 10 Mad. 283.

(*g*) *Prosonno v. Barbosa*, 6 Suth. 253.

(*h*) *Heera Lall v. Mt Kousillah*, 2 Agra, 42. See this case explained, 12 Bom. H. C. 75; *Abadi v. Asa*, 2 All. 162.

(*i*) *Ramchandra v. Savitribai*, 4 Bom. H. C. (A. C. J.) 73. See it explained, *Nistarini v. Makhanlal*, 9 B. L. R. 27; S. C. 17 Suth. 432; 12 Bom. H. C. 73. If the holder of part of the property pays the whole maintenance, his remedy is by a suit for contribution, 4 Bom. H. C. (A. C. J.) 78.

(*k*) 8 B. L. R. p. 229; S. C. 17 Suth. 433, note; *West, J.*, says "We should rather substitute 'notice of the existence of a claim likely to be unjustly impaired by the proposed transaction,'" 2 Bom. p. 517.

estate except a charge, actually created, it is difficult to see how a purchaser could be affected by notice that a widow had a claim which had not matured into a lien. And in a later case *Couch*, C. J., said, "Whatever may be the rights of the younger members of a family, where the estate is inherited by the eldest member, until the maintenance has become a specific charge upon the property, which it might be by a decree of a Court making provision for the payment of the maintenance, and declaring that a part of the property should be a security for it, or by a contract between the parties charging the property with a certain sum for maintenance, we do not see how it can be a charge upon the estate in the hands of a *bonâ fide* purchaser for consideration" (l). Even express notice at an execution sale under the decree that a widow had a claim for maintenance upon the estate, has been held not to affect the rights of the purchaser (m). In a case in which the Crown had confiscated property out of which a widow was being maintained, it does not appear that any charge in the above sense had ever been created. But the decree affirming the maintenance against the Crown was submitted to without opposition (n). Escheat.

§ 421. The whole of this subject was lately examined by *West*, J., in Bombay, in a judgment which collects all the authorities bearing upon the matter. He points out that mere notice of a claim for maintenance, which contains all the elements necessary for its ripening into a specific charge, cannot be sufficient to bind a purchaser, because in the case of a widow under Mitakshara law her claim would always contain such elements. Nor could the rights of the purchaser depend solely upon the question, whether after the sale there was enough property left in the hands of the heir to satisfy her claim? What was honestly purchased was

---

(l) *Juggernath v. Odhiranee*, 20 Suth. 126. See *Goluck v. Ohilla*, 25 Suth. 100; *Sham Lal v. Banna*, 4 All. 296.

(m) *Soorja Koer v. Natha Baksh*, 11 Cal. 102.

(n) *Golab Koonwar v. Collector of Benares*, 4 M. I. A. 246; S. C. 7 Suth. (P. C.) 47. See *Adhiranee v. Shona Malee*, 1 Cal. 373.

free from her claim for ever, and no new right could spring up in the widow by virtue of any subsequent exhaustion of the family funds. His view, apparently, is, that the question will always be, *first*, was the vendor acting in fraud of the widow's claim to maintenance; *secondly*, was the purchaser acting with notice, not merely of her claim, but of the fraud which was being practised upon her claim? He says "If the heir sought to defraud her, he could not by any device in the way of parting with the estate, or changing its form, get rid of the liability which had come to him along with the advantage derived from his survivorship; and the purchaser—taking from him with reason to suppose that the transaction was one originating not in an honest desire to pay off debts, or satisfy claims for which the estate was justly liable, and which it could not otherwise well meet, but in a desire to shuffle off a moral and legal liability,—would, as sharing in the proposed fraud, be prevented from gaining by it; but if, though he knew of the widow's existence and her claim, he bought upon a rational and honest opinion that the sale was one that could be effected without any furtherance of wrong, he has, as against the plaintiff, acquired a title free from the claim which still subsists in full force as against the recipient of the purchase-money" (o).

Transfer of  
Property Act.

This is substantially the effect of the recent Transfer of Property Act (IV of 1882) § 39. "Where a third person has a right to receive maintenance, or a provision for advancement or marriage, from the profits of immovable property, and such property is transferred with the intention of defeating such right, the right may be enforced against the transferee, if he has notice of such intention, or if the transfer is gratuitous; but not against a transferee for consideration and without notice of the right, nor against such property in his hands." Where a transferee is liable, he ceases to be so when the property passes out of his hands (p).

---

(o) *Lukshman v. Satyabhamabai*, 2 Bom. 494, 524; *Kalpagathachi v. Ganapathi*, 3 Mad. 184; *Mahalakshamma v. Venkataratnamma*, 6 Mad. 88.  
(p) *Dharam Chand v. Janki*, 5 All. 389.



§ 422. Debts contracted by a Hindu take precedence over maintenance as a charge upon the estate. Therefore, a purchaser of property sold to discharge debts has a better title than a widow who seeks to charge the estate with her maintenance. And this would be especially so where the property has been acquired in trade, and is held for trading purposes, and seized for the trading debts (*q*). It has been held in Allahabad that a sale to satisfy debts would even take precedence over a charge for maintenance actually and *bonâ fide* created before sale or seizure (*r*). Where a husband under Mitakshara law dies leaving separate property and also joint property, which passes to his coparceners, the widow's claim to maintenance must be met first out of the separate estate, and she cannot come upon the joint property till the separate property is proved insufficient (*s*). Where there is family property which has been partly alienated, it does not appear to be settled whether the widow is bound to sue those of the family who are still in possession of the remainder of the property before she comes upon the purchasers (*t*).

Priority of debts.

Property liable.

§ 423. It has been laid down that there is a distinction between the right of a widow to continue to live in the ancestral family house, and her right over other parts of the property. Accordingly, where a man died leaving a widow and a son, and the son immediately on his coming of age sold the family house, and the purchaser proceeded to evict the widow, the High Court of Bengal dismissed his suit. *Peacock*, C. J., held that the text of *Katyayana* (*u*) was restrictive, and not merely directory, and that the son

Widow's claim on family house.

(*q*) *Natchiarammal v. Gopalakrishna*, 2 Mad. 126; *Adhiranee v. Shona Malee*, 1 Cal. 365; *Johurra v. Sreegopal*, *ib.* 470; *Lakshman v. Satyabhamabai*, 2 Bom. 494.

(*r*) *Sham Lal v. Banna*, 4 All. 296; *Gur Dial v Kaunsila*, 5 All. 367. In neither of these cases, however, does it appear from the report that there was any actual charge created as distinct from the general lien.

(*s*) *Shib Dayee v. Doorga Pershad*, 4 N.-W. P. 63.

(*t*) See *Goluck v. Ohilla*, 25 Suth. 100; *Adhiranee v. Shona Malee*, 1 Cal. 365; *Ram Churun v. Mt. Jasooda*, 2 Agra, H. C. 134: doubted *per curiam*, *Lakshman v. Sarasvatibai*, 12 Bom. H. C. 76.

(*u*) 2 Dig. 133; *ante*, § 418.

Right of widow  
to family house.

could not turn his father's widow out of the family dwelling-house himself, or authorize a purchaser to do so, at all events until he had provided for her some other suitable residence (*v*). And the same has been held in the North-West Provinces, where the son of the survivor of two brothers sold the dwelling-house, in part of which the widow of his uncle was living. The Court held that she could not be ousted by the purchaser of her nephew's rights (*w*). Where, however, a Hindu mortgaged his ancestral dwelling-house, and then died, and his mother and widow were made parties to a suit to enforce the mortgage, the Court held, that the fact that they were dwelling in the house was no objection to a decree for its sale. They appear to have left it an open question whether the purchaser at the sale would be entitled to turn them out of possession (*x*). In a similar case in Madras and Bombay the Court held that the sale must be made subject to the widow's right of residence (*y*), unless the sale was made for a debt binding upon the family, and therefore upon the widow (*z*).

Against volun-  
teer in posses-  
sion of property.

§ 424. So far we have been discussing the case of a purchaser for value. *Phear*, J., in the judgment so often referred to, said, "As against one who has taken the property as heir, the widow has a right to have a proper sum for her maintenance ascertained and made a charge upon the property in his hands. She may also doubtless follow the property for this purpose into the hands of any one who takes it as a volunteer, or with notice of her having set up a claim for maintenance against the heir" (*a*). Both these points have been settled by express decisions. In Madras, where a testator devised all his property by will, without making any provision for his widow, the will was held valid, except

(*v*) *Mangala v. Dinanath*, 4 B. L. R. (O. C. J.) 72; S. C. 12 Suth. (O. C. J.) 35; *folld. Bai Devkore v. Sanmukhram*, 13 Bom. 101.

(*w*) *Gauri v. Chandramani*, 1 All. 262; *Talemand v. Rukmina*, 3 All. 353.

(*x*) *Bhikham v. Pura*, 2 All. 141.

(*y*) *Venkatammal v. Andyappa*, 6 Mad. 130; *Dalsukhram v. Lallubhai*, 7 Bom. 282.

(*z*) *Ramanaden v. Rangammal*, 12 Mad. 260.

(*a*) *Bhagabati v. Kanailal*, 8 B. L. R. 228; S. C. 17 Suth. 438, note.

as to her claim for maintenance, and a reference was directed to ascertain what amount should be set aside for that purpose (b). And so in Bengal, Sir F. MacNaghten, while admitting that a husband can, by will, deprive his widow of her share in the estate, adds, "It cannot be doubted but that her right to maintenance remains in full force—and, if it had been asked for on reasonable grounds, I take for granted that the Court would in this case (as it had in a similar one) have ordered funds sufficient for the purpose of maintaining her, to be set apart out of the whole of her husband's estate" (c). This view was followed by the Supreme Court in a later case, where a Hindu in Bengal left all his property to his three sons, not mentioning his widow. A decree was made for partition in three equal shares between them. The Court held the decree erroneous, as it ought to have awarded a share to the mother for her maintenance. *Grant, J.*, said "Her legal right was not excluded by her husband's will, since her name was not mentioned in his will, and rights so much the favoured object of the Hindu law as that of a widow to maintenance could not be excluded by implication. And so, we are informed by Sir F. MacNaghten, the Court thought, and, if not excluded, they must have subsisted such as the law declared them" (d). And, I imagine, the ruling would be the same even though the testator expressly, and by name, declared that his widow or daughter should not receive maintenance. It has, no doubt, been decided that a father in Bengal may by will deprive his son of any right to maintenance (e). But that is because an adult son has no right whatever to maintenance (f). His only right is as an heir expectant, and that right may be wholly defeated by sale, gift or devise. But the right of a widow to her maintenance arises by marriage,

(b) S. A. 634 of 1871, per *Morgan, C. J.*, and *Holloway, J.*, 8 Mar. 1872, not reported. Acc. *Rasabai v. Sadu*, 8 Bom. (A. O. J.) 98.

(c) F. MacN. 92.

(d) *Comulmo ney v. Rammanath*, Fulton, 189; *Joytara v. Ramhari*, 10 Cal. 638.

(e) *Tagore v. Tagore*, 4 B. L. R. (O. C. J.) 132, 159.  
 , § 409, 412.

and that of a daughter by birth ; it exists during the life of the father, and continues after his death. It is a legal obligation attaching upon himself personally, and upon his property. He cannot free himself from it during his lifetime, and it attaches upon the inheritance immediately after his death. It seems, therefore, contrary to principle to hold that by devising the property to another, he could authorize that other to hold it free from claims which neither he himself nor his heir could have resisted (*g*).

The same principle has been affirmed as against donees. In a case from Allahabad, a husband, during his life, made a gift of his entire estate, without reserving maintenance to his widow, and it was held that the donee took subject to the liability to maintain her (*h*). The same decision was given in Bombay, where a husband had, by gift to his undivided sons by his first and second wives, assigned the whole of his self-acquired immovable property, without making provision for his third wife who was left absolutely destitute. It was held that she was entitled to have her maintenance charged upon this property in the hands of her step-sons, and that this right was not affected by any agreement made by her with her husband during his life (*i*).

Maintenance for life.

§ 425. As a general rule, property allotted for maintenance is resumable at the death of the grantee, the presumption being that the income only was granted, and not the body of the fund (*k*). But, of course, there is nothing to prevent an owner making over a sum of money or landed property

---

(*g*) The High Court of Bengal has held that under Bengal law a husband may dispose of his property by will so as to deprive his widow of her share as partition ; *Debendra v. Brojendra Coomar*, 17 Cal. 886, following *Bhoobunmoyee v. Ramkissore*, S. D. of 1860, i. p. 489, where the Court said, " In Bengal a widow has no indefeasible vested right in the property left by her husband, though she has by virtue of her marriage a right, if all the property be willed away, to maintenance." See also *Sonatun Bysack v. Jugutsaondree*, 8 M. I. A. 66. The side note there is erroneous. What the widow claimed and obtained was her share, and not merely maintenance. See per *Muttasami Aiyar*, 12 Mad. p. 267.

(*h*) *Jamna v. Machul*, 2 All. 315.

(*i*) *Narbadabai v. Mahadeo*, 5 Bom. 99.

(*k*) *Woodoyaditto v. Mukoond*, 22 Suth. 225 ; *Bhavanamma v. Ramasami*, 4 Mad. 193 ; *Uddoy v. Jadublal*, 5 Cal 113 ; *Kachwain v Sarup Chand*, 10 All. 462.

absolutely, in full discharge of all claims for maintenance. And a grant so made would be absolutely at the disposal of the person to whom it was given (l). The validity of such a grant would depend upon the capacity of the person who made it. On the other hand there may be circumstances evidencing that a grant for maintenance was resumable at the pleasure of the grantor (m).

---

(l) *Nursing Deb v. Roy Koylasnath*, 9 M. I. A. 55. Long uninterrupted enjoyment for successive generations would warrant a presumption that (1)  
*Salur Zemindar v. Pedda Pakir Raju*, 4 M  
(m) *Najban v. Chand Bibi*, 10 I. A. 133.



## CHAPTER XV.

### PARTITION.

Division of  
subject.

§ 426. I HAVE already (§ 218—226) discussed the early history of the law of partition. The modern law may be divided into four heads. *First*, the property to be divided; *secondly*, the persons who are to share (§ 430); *thirdly*, the mode of division (§ 447); *fourthly*, what constitutes a partition (§ 453). A few words will have to be added on the subject of re-union. In treating of THE JOINT FAMILY (Chapter VIII.), I have anticipated much that is usually placed under the Law of Partition.

Coparcenary  
property alone  
divisible.

*First.*—The property to be divided is *ex vi termini* the property which has been previously held as joint property in coparcenary (a). Therefore a man's self-acquisition is indivisible (b), and so is any property which he has inherited collaterally, or from such a source that the persons claiming a share obtained no interest in it on its devolution to him (§ 251). Property allotted on a previous partition is of course indivisible as between the separated members or their representatives; but it would be divisible as between those members and their own descendants, unless at the time of partition the father had cut himself off from his own issue, as well as from his collateral relations (§ 252). And as soon as such property has descended a step, it loses its

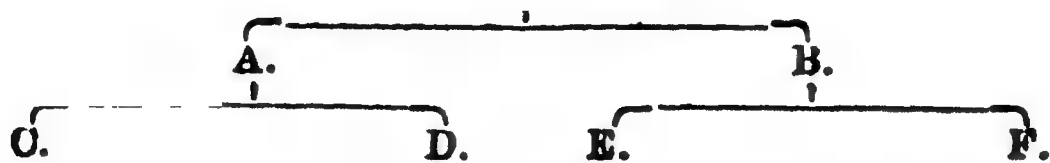
---

(a) As to what is coparcenary property, see *ante*, § 251, *et seq.*

(b) Mitakshara, i. 4; Daya Bhaga, vi., 1; V. May., iv. 7. In Bengal, where a division is made in the life of the father, the father has a moiety of the goods acquired by his son at the charge of the estate; the son who made the acquisition has two shares, and the rest take one apiece. But if the father's estate has not been used, he has two shares, the acquirer as many, and the rest are excluded from participation. Daya Bhaga, ii. § 7; *per Peacock, C. J., Uma Sundari v. Dwarkanath*, 2 B. L. R. (A. C. J.) 287; S. O. 11 Suth. 72.

character of impartibility, and becomes ancestral and joint property in the hands of those who take it. It retains its original character as regards collaterals. For instance, if A. and B. are undivided brothers, and A. makes a separate

Coparcenary property is divisible.



acquisition, it descends to his two sons exclusively. In their hands it is ancestral property, and divisible. But it does not become the property of the coparcenary of which they are members with E and F. Consequently, neither the two latter, nor their descendants, will ever be entitled to share in it, so long as the direct heirs of A. are in existence (c). In one case the Bombay High Court decided that even ancestral movable property was so completely at the disposal of the father, that his own sons could not claim a partition of it. But this decision appears to have been overruled by implication in a later case (d). The whole doctrine on which it rests has been already discussed (§ 310).

§ 427. Other matters were originally declared to be indivisible from their nature, such as apparel, carriages, riding-horses, ornaments, dressed food, water, pasture ground and roads, female slaves, houses or gardens, utensils, necessary implements of learning or of art, and documents evidencing a title to property (e). The ground of the exception seems to have been that they were things which could not be divided *in specie*, that they were originally of small value, and specially appropriated to the individual members of the family; consequently, that if each were left in possession of his own, the value held by one would be balanced by a corresponding value in the hands of another. But as

Property indivisible from its nature.

(c) *Katama Natchiar v. Rajah of Shivaganga*, 9 M. I. A. 539; S. C. 2 Suth. (P. O.) 31; *Periasami v. Periasami*, 6 I. A. 61; S. C. 1 Mad. 312.

(d) *Ramchandra Dada Naik v. Dada Mahadev*, 1 Bom. H. C. Appx. 76 (2nd ed.), *contra*, *Lakshman v. Ramchandra*, 1 Bom. 561; *affd.* 7 I. A. 181; S. C. 5 Bom. 48; *ante*, § 310.

(e) *Mitakshara*, i. 4, § 16—27; *Daya Bhaga*, vi. 2, § 23—30; *V. May.*, v. 7, § 23.

property of this sort increased in value, the strict letter of the texts was explained away, and it was established that where things were indivisible by their nature, they must either be enjoyed by the heirs in turns or jointly, as a well or a bridge; or sold, and their value distributed, or retained by one co-sharer exclusively, while the value of what he retained was adjusted by the appropriation of corresponding values to the others (*f*). Where part of the property consists of idols and places of worship, which are valuable from their endowments, or from the respect attaching to their possessor, the members will be decreed to hold them by turns, the period of tenure being in proportion to their shares in the *corpus* of the property (§ 398). A partition of a dwelling-house will be decreed if insisted on (*g*), but the Court will, if possible, try to effect such an arrangement as will leave it entire in the hands of one or more of the coparceners (*h*). In a later case the Court said “the principle in these cases of partition is, that if a property can be partitioned without destroying the intrinsic value of the whole property, or of the shares, such partition ought to be made. If, on the contrary, no partition can be made without destroying the intrinsic value, then a money compensation should be given instead of the share which would fall to the plaintiff by partition (*i*). ”

**Impartible  
property.**

§ 428. Another class of estates which are indivisible, without being either separate or self-acquired, are those which by a special law or custom descend to one member of the family (generally the eldest), to the exclusion of the other members. The most common instance of this is in the case of ancient Zemindaries, which are in the nature of a Raj or Sovereignty, or which descend to a single member by special family custom (*k*), or royal grants of revenue for

(*f*) Viramit., p. 8; 3 Dig. 876—885.  
 (*g*) *Hullodhur v. Ramnauth*, Marsh. 35.  
 (*h*) *Rajcoomaree v. Gopal*, 3 Cal. 514.  
 (*i*) *Ashinullah v. Kali Kinkur*, 10 Cal. 675.  
 (*k*) See *ante*, § 50, 51.

services, such as jaghirs or Saranjams in Bombay (l). But an estate which is not in the nature of a Raj is not impartible, and does not descend to a single heir, merely because it is a Zemindary, in the absence of a special and binding family custom (m). Another case in which property is *primâ facie* impartible, is where it is allotted by the State to a person in consideration of the discharge of particular duties, or as payment for an office, even though the duties or office may become hereditary in a particular family. An instance of the sort is to be found in the case of lands held under ghatwali tenure in Beerbhoom, which are hereditary but impartible (n). So in Madras, where the office of curnum, or village accountant, has become hereditary, the land attached to the office is not liable to division (o). In Bombay, however, there are numerous revenue and village offices, such as *deshmuk*, *despandya desai* and *patel*, which are similarly remunerated by lands originally granted by the State. These lands have, by lapse of time, come to be considered as purely private property of the family which holds the office, though they are subject to the obligation of discharging its duties, and defraying all necessary expenses. Land of this character is so frequently, though not invariably, partible that it has been decided that in a suit for partition of such property, its nature raises no presumption that it is indivisible. Consequently, the holder of the office and of the land attached to it must rebut the claim for partition by evidence of a local or family usage that the land should be held exclusively by the holder of the office (p).

(l) *Ramchandra v. Venkatrao*, 6 Bom. 598; *Narayan Jagannath v. Vasudev*, 15 Bom. 247. A Saranjam may have been originally partible, or made so by family usage; *Madhavarav Manohar v. Atmaram*, 15 Bom. 519.

(m) *Venkatapetty v. Ramachandra*, 1 Mad. Dec. 495; *Moottoovengada v. Toombayasamy*, Mad. Dec. of 1849, 27; *Jagunnadha v. Konda*, ib. 112; *Moottoovencata v. Munarsawmy*, Mad. Dec. of 1853, 217; *Koernarain v. Dhorinidhur*, S. D. of 1858, 1132. See as to estates confiscated, and re-granted, ante, § 51.

(n) *Hurlall v. Jorawun*, 6 S. D. 169 (204) approved by P. C., *Lelanund v. Govt of Bengal*, 6 M. I. A. 125; S. C. 1 Suth. (P. C.) 20; *Nilmoni v. Bakranath*, 9 I. A. 104; S. C.

(o) *Alymalummaul v. Vencatoovien*, 2 Mad. Dec. 85; *Bada v. Hussa Bhai*, 7 Mad. 236.

(p) Steele, 203, 210, 229. *Shidhojirav v. Naikojirav*, 10 Bom. H. C. 228;

On partition a portion of the property will be set aside sufficient to provide for the discharge of the duties, and the rest will become private property free from all obligations to the State (q). The discontinuance of services attached to an impartible estate does not alter the nature of the estate, and render it partible (r). So, an estate which has been allotted by Government to a man of rank for the maintenance of his rank is indivisible, as otherwise the purpose of the grant would be frustrated. But where it is allotted for the maintenance of the family, then it is divisible among the direct descendants of the family, as the special object is to benefit all equally, not to maintain a special degree of state for one (s). And where an estate is impartible, its income is impartible, and the savings of such income, and the purchases made out of such savings are equally impartible, so long as they remain in the hands of the person out of whose income they proceeded. But as soon as they pass from him to a successor, they become divisible and ancestral property (t).

Raj taken in  
partition.

Although a Raj or Zemindary may be itself indivisible, there is no reason why it should not be taken into a division, as property allotted to a separating member. The result would be that its descent would be governed by the rules which relate to separate property (u). Therefore, in a family governed by the Mitakshara law, it would pass to female heirs in preference to male collaterals (v).

Mode of taking  
account.

§ 429. Having ascertained what property there is to

*Adrishappa v. Gurushidappa*, 7 I. A. 162; S. C. 4 Bom. 494; *Ramrao v. Yeshvantrao*, 10 Bom. 327; *Gopalrao v. Trimbakrao*, ib. 598.

(q) Act XI of 1843, § 15 (Hereditary Officers); *Adrishappa v. Gurushidappa*, *ub sup.*

(r) *Ramrao v. Yeshvantrao*, *ub sup.*

(s) *Viswanadha v. Bungaroo*, Mad. Dec. of 1851, 87, 94, 95; *Booloka v. Comarasawmy*, Mad. Dec. of 1858, 74; *Bodhrao v. Nursing Rao*, 6 M. I. A. 426; *Panchanadayan v. Nilahandayan*, 7 Mad. 191. See Indian Pensions Act, XXIII of 1871.

(t) See *ante*, § 262, and cases in last note.

(u) An instance of the sort occurred in the case of *Runganayakamma v. Bulli Ramaya*, P. C. 5th July 1879.

(v) *Per curiam*, *Katama Natchiar v. Rajah of Shivagunga*, 9 M. I. A. 589; S. C. 2 Suth. (P. C.) 31; *Tekaet v. Tekaetnee*, 20 Suth. 154.



divide, the next step is to ascertain its amount. For this purpose it is necessary first to deduct all claims against the united family for debts due by it (*w*), or for charges on account of maintenance, marriages or family ceremonies, which it would have had to provide for, if it remained united (*x*). When these are set aside, an account must be taken of the entire family property in the hands of all the different members. In general this account is simply an enquiry into the existing assets (*y*). No member can have any claim to mesne profits previous to partition, because it is assumed that all surplus profits have, from time to time, been applied for the family benefit, or added to the family property. No charge is to be made against any member of the family, because he has received a larger share of the family income than another, provided he has received it for legitimate family purposes. Nor can the manager be charged with gains which he might have made, or savings which he might have effected, nor even with extravagance or waste which he has committed, unless it amounts to actual misappropriation. But, of course, advances made to any member for a special private purpose, for which he would have no right to call upon the family purse, or to discharge his own personal debts, contracted without the authority of the other members, or alienations of the family property made by an individual for his own benefit, would be properly debited against him in estimating his share (*z*). And, conversely, money laid out by one member of the family upon the improvement or repair of the property, or for any other object of common benefit, in general constitutes no debt to him from the rest of the family. The money which he expends is probably in itself part of the joint

---

(*w*) Under this head come all the complicated questions discussed, *ante*, § 285, 310, *et seq* as to whether transactions entered into by one member of the family bind the whole.

(*x*) *Ante*, § 301; Yajnavalkya, ii. § 124; Mitakshara, i. 7, § 3—5; Daya Bhaga, i. § 47, iii. 2 § 38—42; V. May., iv. 4, § 4, iv. 6, § 1, 2, v. 4, § 14; 3 Dig. 73, 96, 389; W. & B. 786—792. See as to the eight ceremonies, 3 Dig. 104.

(*y*) *Jugmohundas v. Mangaldas*, 10 Bom. 529.

(*z*) *Ante*. § 269; *Lakshman v. Ramchandra*, 1 Bom. 561; *Konerrav v. Gurav*, 5 Bom. 589; *per curiam*, 11 Mad. p. 248.

property, so that he is merely returning to the family its own. But this presumption might be rebutted. If the funds which he had expended were advanced out of his own self-acquired property, or out of the income of property which by mutual agreement had been set aside for his exclusive enjoyment, an arrangement with his coparceners by which he was to lay out money from his separate funds, and they were to reimburse his outlay, would be valid (a).

Mesne profits.

Mesne profits may be allowed on partition, where one member of the family has been entirely excluded from the enjoyment of the property, or where it has been held by a member of the family who claimed a right to treat it as impartible, and therefore exclusively his own (b). Such a claim, however reasonable and *bonâ fide*, negatives the ordinary presumption that the annually accruing profits have been applied for the benefit of the family, and that the savings have been carried into the family treasury. The same rule applies, where, by family arrangement, the property is held in specific and definite shares, the enjoyment of which has been disturbed (c).

Coparceners.

§ 430. SECONDLY, AS TO THE PERSONS WHO SHARE.—Any coparcener may sue for a partition, and every coparcener is entitled to a share upon partition (d). But some persons are entitled to a share upon a partition who cannot sue for it themselves. Upon these points there are many distinctions between the early and the existing law, and also between the law of Bengal and of the other provinces.

Son during life of father.

In Bengal the son has no right to demand a partition of property held by his father during the life of the latter (§ 224). The Mitakshara, on the other hand, expressly

---

(a) *Muttusvamy v. Subbiramaniya*, 1 Mad. H. C. 309.

(b) *Per curiam*, *Konnerav v. Gurrav*, 5 Bom. p. 595; *Venkata v. Narayya*, 7 I. A. 38, 51; S. O. 2 Mad. 128; *Venkata v. Rajagopala*, 9 I. A. 125; S. C. 5 Mad. 236; *Krishna v. Subbanna*, 7 Mad. 564.

(c) *Shankar Baksh v. Hardeo Baksh*, 16 I. A. 71; S. C. 16 Cal. 397.

(d) As to the persons who are coparceners, see *ante*, § 248.

asserts the right (§ 222). Yet it is remarkable how slowly the right came to be recognized in practice. Sir *Thomas Strange* discusses the subject with an evident leaning against the right (e). Mr. *Strange*, in his *Manual*, treats the right as existing, but as one which, until very recent times, was opposed to public opinion, unless under exceptional circumstances (f). Several of the *futwahs* quoted by West and Bühler affirm that the right only arises where the father is old, diseased or wasteful (g). The High Court of Bombay, in a case already cited, held that as regards movable property at all events the son could not enforce a partition against his father's consent; and in the argument it was stated that no bill for such a purpose had ever been filed in the Supreme Court (h). The right both of a son and a grandson under Mitakshara law to a partition of movable and immovable property in the possession of a father, against his consent, has now, however, been settled by express decisions in Madras, Bengal, the North-West Provinces, and Bombay (i). In the Privy Council the right of the son to compel his father to make a partition of ancestral immovable property has also been recognised as the settled law of all the Presidencies (k). The right of the great-grandson to a division is not expressly stated in any of the early Hindu law-books, but it rests on the same grounds as that of the son, viz., equality of right by birth (l).

Grandson.

Great-grandson.

§ 431. The rights even of unborn sons were originally so Afterborn sons.

(e) 1 Stra. H. L. 179.

(f) Preface, viii.

(g) W. & B. 364, 402, (2nd ed.)

(h) *Ramchandra v. Mahadev*, 1 Bom. H. C. Appx. 76 (2nd ed.)

(i) *Nagalinga v. Subbiramaniya*, 1 Mad. H. C. 77; *Nagalinga v. Vellusamy*, 1 Mad. Law Rep. 76; *Laljeet v. Rajcoomar*, 12 B. L. R. 373; S. C. 20 Suth. 336; *Kaliparshad v. Ramcharan*, 1 All. 159; *Jogul Kishore v. Shib Sahai*, 5 All. 430. See *futwahs*, Bom. Sel. Rep. 41, 42; W. & B. 365, 370, 373, (2nd ed.); per curiam, *Moro Vishvanath v. Ganesh*, 10 Bom. H. C. 463; *Jugmohundas v. Mangaldas*, 10 Bom. 529, 578. This rule has been extended to Khoja Muhammadaus, as being governed by Hindu Law; *Cassumbhoy v. Ahmedbhoy*, 12 Bom. 280, 294.

(k) *Suraj Bunsu v. Sheo Pershad*, 6 I. A., p. 100.

(l) W. & B. 672; *Daya Bhaga*, xi. 1, § 81—43; *Raghunandana*, ii. 24; *Smriti Chandrika*, viii. § 11; *Vivada Chintamani*, 239; *Manu*, ix. § 137; *Viramit.*, p. 90, § 23a; *Sarasvati Vilasa*, § 221; *Sarvadhikari*, 561; *Jolly, Lect.*, 170.

much respected, that when a son was born after a partition had taken place between a father and his sons, the partition was opened up again, in order to give him the share which he would have had if he had then been alive (m). And *Jimuta Vahana* was of opinion that the rule was still applicable where the property to be distributed was inherited from the grandfather, because distribution of such property was illegal so long as the mother was capable of bearing children. Consequently, the rights of an after-born child could not be prejudiced by the illegal act (n). Other writers, however, stated that a son born after a partition could only take his father's share, representing him to the exclusion of the previously divided brethren (o). The *Mitakshara* reconciles the conflict by saying that the latter texts lay down the general rule, while the former are limited to the case of a son who was in his mother's womb at the time of partition. *Jimuta Vahana* takes the same view in cases where the partition is made by the father of his self-acquired property. Therefore, in all cases where the birth of a son would add to the number of sharers, if the pregnancy is known at the time, the distribution should be deferred till its result is ascertained. If it is not known, and a son is afterwards born, a redistribution must take place of the estate as it then stands (p). If the father had divided the whole property among his sons, retaining no share for himself, it is said that the sons, with whom partition has been made, must allot from their shares a portion equal to their own to an after-born son (q).

Right of representation

§ 432. Under Mitakshara law, the right to a share passes

(m) *Vishnu*, xvii. § 3; *Yajnavalkya*, ii. 122; *per curiam*, 11 I. A. p. 179; S. C. 6 All p. 574. See the subject discussed, *Krishna v. Sami*, 9 Mad. 64, p. 70, 77.

(n) *Daya Bhaga*, i. § 45, vii. § 10; *Raghuwandana*, ii. 30, 31, 36. This restriction however is no longer in force, *ante*, § 225.

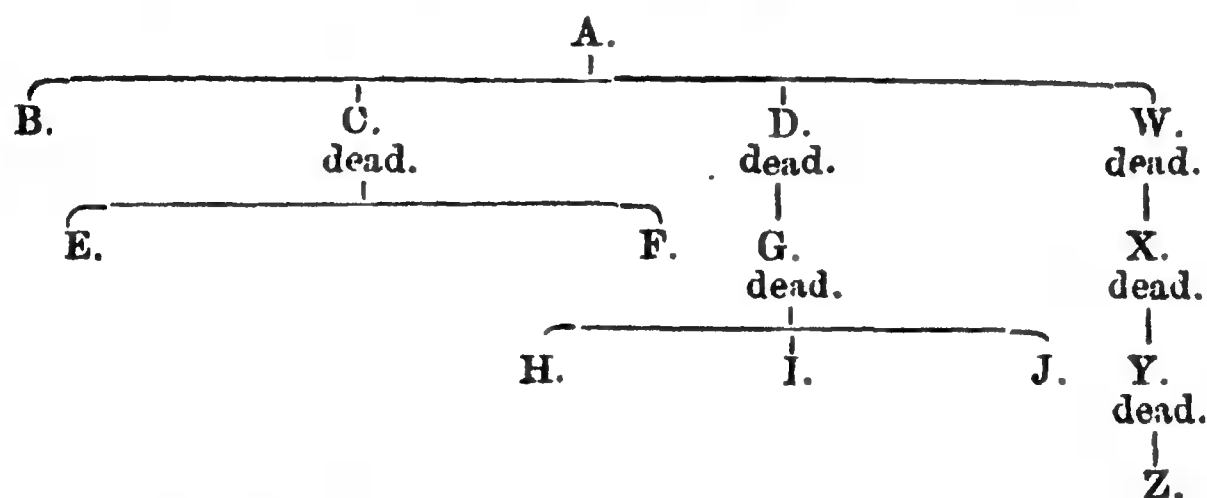
(o) *Manu*, ix. § 216; *Gautama*, xxviii. § 26; *Narada*, xiii. § 44; *Vrihaspati*, 3 Dig. 49, 435; *Nawal v. Bhagwan*, 4 All 427.

(p) *Mitakshara*, i. 6, § 1—12; *Daya Bhaga*, vii. § 4; *V. May*, iv. 4, § 35—37; *Viramit*, p. 92, § 24; *Yekeyamian v. Agniswarian*, 4 Mad. H. C. 307; *Peacock, C. J., Kalidas v. Krishan*, 2 B. L. R. (F. B.) pp. 118—121.

(q) 1 W. MacN. 47.



by survivorship among the remaining coparceners, subject to the rule that where any deceased coparcener leaves male issue they represent the rights of their ancestor to a partition (*r*). For instance, suppose A. dies, leaving a son B., two grandsons E. and F., three great-grandsons H., I., J., and one great-great-grandson Z. The last named will take nothing, being beyond the fourth degree of descent (§ 247). The share of his ancestor W. will pass by survivorship to the other brothers, B., C., D., and their descendants, and enlarge their interests accordingly. Hence B., C., and D. will each be entitled to one-third, E. and F. will take the



third belonging to C., and H., I., J., will take D.'s third. Each class will take *per stirpes* as regards every other class, but the members of the class take *per capita* as regards each other. This rule applies equally whether the sons are all by the same wife, or by different wives (*s*). But if W. had effected a partition with A., then, on his death, his fourth would have passed at once to Z., supposing X. and Y. to have predeceased. The right of any descendant, or set of descendants, to a partition assumes, however, that the ancestors above him or them are dead. C. can compel a partition with

Representation  
arises on death  
of ancestor.

(*r*) It must always be remembered that what passes is not a share, as in Bengal, but the right to have a share on partition, *ante*, § 246.

(*s*) Mitakshara, i. 5, § 1; V. May., iv. 4, § 20–22; Smriti Chandrika, viii. § 1–16; Katyayana, 3 Dig. 7; Devala, ib. 9, 10, 446, 448; Narada, xiii. § 25; 2 Dig. 572, 575, 576; 1 Stra. H. L. 205; 2 Stra. H. L. 351–357; *Moottoovengada v. Toombayasamy*, Mad. Dec. of 1849, 27; *Poorathay v. Paroomal*, Mad. Dec. of 1856, 5; *Manjanatha v. Narayana*, 5 Mad. 362. In some families, however, a custom called *Patni-bhaga* prevails of dividing according to mothers; so that if A. had two sons by his wife B., and three sons by C., the property would be divided into moieties, one going to the sons by B., and the other to the sons by C. *Sumrun v. Khedun*, 2 S. D. 116 (147). This practice prevails locally in Oudh, as evidenced by numerous *Wajib-ul-ars* which I have seen in cases under appeal to the Privy Council. J. D. M.



A., but E. and F. cannot compel a partition during the life of C. Their right arises for the first time, when, by the death of C., his interest in the estates descends upon them. It is evident that they cannot have their own share apportioned without a previous apportionment of the share of C. But the sons or grandsons of C. cannot compel him to proceed to a partition unless he wishes it (*t*).

\*Bengal law.

§ 433. These principles require some modification where the case arises in Bengal. A son can never demand a partition of property held by his father, but as soon as A., in the above diagram, died, his property would descend to his sons and their descendants, and would be divisible among them in the same manner as above stated. If any coparcener dies without male issue, but leaving a widow, a daughter, or daughter's sons, his share will descend to them, and will not lapse into the shares of the other members as it would do under the Mitakshara law (*u*). The principles of this line of succession will be discussed hereafter. It is sufficient here to say that representation does not extend beyond daughters. Daughters of the same class inherit to their father, *per stirpes*. But daughters' sons do not take as heirs to their mother, but as heirs to their grandfather. Consequently no daughter's son takes at all, until all the eligible daughters are dead; and such sons, where they do inherit, take *per capita* and not *per stirpes*. That is to say, if a man has two daughters, A. and B., of whom A. has one son, and B. has five, on the death of the last daughter the six sons will take equally (*v*).

(*t*) Mitakshara, i. 5, § 3; W. & R. 658; 1 W. MacN. 50; 2 W. MacN. 150; 3 Dig. 9, 38, 388; *ante*, § 248; Daya Bhaga, iii. 1, § 19, xi. 6, § 29, Raghunandana, ii. 23, 24; *per curiam*, 11 I. A. p. 179; S. C. 6 All. p. 574; *Apaji Narhav v. Ramchandra*, 16 Bom. (F. B.) 29. The Viramitrodaya appears to be of a contrary opinion. Viramit., p. 90, § 23a. The High Court of Allahabad has held that the grandson, even during the life of his father and grandfather, has a vested interest in the ancestral property which can be realised by a partition, and is saleable under a decree. *Jogul Kishore v. Shib Sahai*, F. B. 5 All. 430, considered and disagreed with by the majority of the Bombay Full Bench, 10 Bom. 29.

(*u*) Daya Bhaga, xi. 1, § 47, 59, 65; 1 W. MacN. 19, 22; *post*, § 438.

(*v*) See *post*, § 519, 520.

§ 434. Illegitimate sons of the three higher classes are entitled to nothing but maintenance (*w*). As regards the illegitimate son of a Sudra there is greater difficulty. It is said that if a partition is made by the father, he may be allotted a share at the father's choice, and that if the partition is made after the father's death, the brethren should make him a partaker of the moiety of a share. The Bengal writers say that where the partition is made by the father himself, or after his death in pursuance of his directions, the share of such an illegitimate son may be equal to that of a legitimate son. This would be natural enough, considering the power which a father in Bengal has in the disposition of his property. *Vijnanesvara* lays down no rule upon the point, but speaks vaguely of "a share." Where there are no legitimate sons, but there are daughters or daughters' sons, the *Mitakshara* says that he is entitled to half a share only; the *Daya Bhaga* and *Daya-krahma-sangraha* say that he shares equally with the daughter's son (*x*): while the author of the *Datta Chandrika* considers that where there is no legitimate male issue, the illegitimate son of a Sudra shares equally with the whole series of heirs down to the daughter's son (*y*). In a Bombay case, where however the point did not arise, it seems to have been the opinion of *Nanabhai Haridas, J.*, that an illegitimate son could enforce a partition as against his brothers, but not as against his father, "seeing that his right to take a share during his father's lifetime is expressly made to depend on the father's choice" (*z*). In Madras it is held that the illegitimate son of a Sudra may enforce a partition against his legitimate brothers, but not against his father, or his father's copar-

Illegitimate  
sons.

(*w*) *Mitakshara*, i. 12, § 3; *Daya Bhaga*, ix. § 28; *V. May.*, iv. § 29—31; *Viramit.*, p. 121, § 17; *Chuoturya v. Sahub Purhalad*, 7 M. I. A. 18; S. C. 4 Suth. (P. C.) 132; *Gajapathy v. Gajapathy*, 2. Mad. H. C. 369, reversed on a different point, 13 M. I. A. 497; S. C. 6 B. L. R. 202; S. C. 14 Suth. (P. C.) 83. The same rule prevails among the Punjab tribes. *Punjab Customary Law*, II. 161.

(*x*) *Yajnavalkya*, ii. § 133, 134; *Mitakshara*, i. 12, § 1, 2; *Daya Bhaga*, ix. § 29, 30; *D. K. S.* vi. § 32—34; 3 Dig. 143; *V. May.*, iv. 4, § 32; *Raghu-nandana*, ii. 39, 40. As to the meaning of the half-share, see *post*, § 504. As to the persons entitled under these texts, *post*, § 501, 502.

(*y*) *Datta Chandrika*, v. § 30, 31. See *post*, § 503.

(*z*) *Sadu v. Baiza*, 4 Bom. pp. 44, 45; *acc. per curiam*, 11 Cal. 714.

ceners, as for instance, his father's brothers, or their sons (a). In Khaudesk a legitimate daughter and an illegitimate son divide the property (b).

Minority not a bar.

Minority.

§ 435. The legality of a partition during the minority of some of the coparceners is recognized by *Baudhayana*, who says that "the shares of sons who are minors, together with the interest, should be placed under good protection until the majority of the owners" (c). One text of *Katyayana* appears to prohibit partition while there is a minor entitled to share (d). But it is quite evident that if such a rule existed, a partition could hardly ever take place. It is now quite settled that a partition made during the minority of one of the members will be valid, and if just and legal will bind him. Of course, his interests ought to be represented by his guardian, or some one acting on his behalf, though I imagine that the fact of his not being so represented would be no ground for opening up the partition, if a proper one in other respects (e). When he arrives at full age he may apply to have the division set aside as regards himself, if it can be shown to have been illegal or fraudulent (f), or even if it was made in such an informal manner that there are no means of testing its validity (g). But a suit cannot be brought by, or on behalf of, a minor to enforce partition, unless on the ground of malversation, or some other circumstances, which make it for his interest that his share should be set aside and secured for him (h). Otherwise he might be thrust out of the family at the very time when he was least able to protect himself.

(a) *Thangam Pillai v. Suppa Pillai*, 12 Mad. 401.

(b) Steele, 180.

(c) *Baudhayana*, ii § 2.

(d) 3 Dig 544.

(e) 2 Stra. H. L. 362; 2 W. MacN. 14; *Deowanti v. Dwarkanath*, 8 B. L. R. 363, note; S. O. Sub nomine, *Deo Bansee v. Dwarkanath*, 10 Suth. 273.

(f) *Nallappa v. Balammal*, 2 Mad. H. C. 182; per curiam, *Lakshmibai v. Ganpat*, 4 Bom. H. C. (O. C. J.) 159; *Deowanti v. Dwarkanath*, 8 B. L. R. 363, note; supra, note (e).

(g) *Kalee Sunkur v. Denendro*, 23 Suth. 68.

(h) 1 Stra. H. L. 206; *Svamiyar v. Chokkalingam*, 1 Mad. H. C. 105; *Alimalammal v. Arunachellam*, 3 Mad. H. C. 69; *Kamakshi v. Chidambara*, ib. 94; *Damoodur v. Senubatty*, 8 Cal. 537; *Thangam Pillai v. Suppa Pillai*, 12 Mad. 401.

An absent coparcener stands on the same footing as a minor. The mere fact of his absence does not prevent partition. But it throws upon those who effect it the obligation to show that it was fair, and legally conducted, and the duty of keeping the share until the return of the absent member (i). The right to receive a share of property divided in a man's absence is laid down as extending to his descendants to the seventh degree. But, of course, it would now be regulated by the law of limitation (k).

Absent members.

§ 436. A wife can never demand a partition during the life of her husband, since, from the time of marriage, she and he are united in religious ceremonies (l). But in former times, where a partition took place at the will of others, the interests of the women of the family, whether wives, widows, mothers, or daughters, were much better provided for than they are at present. Where the partition was made in the father's lifetime, the furniture in the house and the wife's ornaments were set aside for the wife, and where the allotments of the males were equal, and the wives had no separate property, shares equal to those of the sons were set apart for the wives for their lives (m). According to *Harinatha*, however, this right to a share did not arise where the husband reserved two or more shares to himself, as he was entitled to do, as the extra shares were a sufficient provision for his wives (n). And so, where the partition took place after the father's death, the mother and the grandmother were each entitled to a share equal to that of the sons, and the unmarried daughters each to the fourth of a share (o). If the sons chose to remain undivided they had a right to do

Wife.

Right of wife,

mother, and daughter.

(i) 1 Stra. H. L. 206; 2 Stra. H. L. 341; 3 Dig. 544.

(k) *Daya Bhaga*, viii.; D. K. S. ix. See Act XV of 1877, Sched. ii. § 123; 127, 144.

(l) *Apastamba*, xiv. § 16.

(m) *Yajnavalkya*, ii. § 115; *Mitakshara*, i. 2, § 8—10; *Daya Bhaga*, iii. 2, § 31; D. K. S. vi. § 22—31; *Raghunandana*, ii. 13, 14, 18; V. May., iv. 6, § 15. *Viramit.*, p. 57, § 10.

(n) 1 W. MacN. 47. See, too, D. K. S. vi. § 27.

(o) *Vyasa*, *Vrihaspati*, 3 Dig. 12; *Vishnu*, 3 Dig. 15; *Manu*, ix. § 118; *Mitakshara*, i. 7; *Daya Bhaga*, iii. 2, § 29, 34; V. May., iv. 4, § 18, 39, 40. *Viramit.*, p. 79, § 19.



so. The women of the family could never compel a division, and were entitled to no more than a maintenance. This is still the law universally where the father leaves male issue (*p*). But where he leaves no male issue there is, as already observed, a difference between the law of the Mitakshara and that of the Daya Bhaga. Under the former system females never succeed to the share of an undivided member so long as there are male coparceners in existence; under the latter system they do. But according to the doctrines of *Jimuta Vahana*, the shares even of an undivided member are held in a sort of quasi-severalty (§ 348), so that the right of the female heirs to obtain possession of this share is rather a branch of the law of inheritance than of the law of partition (*q*).

Obsolete in  
Southern India.

Rights of  
women in Sou-  
thern India.

§ 437. In Southern India the practice of allotting a share upon partition to wives, widows, or mothers has long since become obsolete. The *Smriti Chandrika*, which admits the right of an aged father, when making a partition with his sons, to reserve a double share for himself, says that if he does not avail himself of this right, he ought to take, on account of each of his wives, a share equal to that taken by himself (*r*). But the right of a father to reserve an extra share for himself in regard to ancestral property is now obsolete (§ 447), and the corresponding practice of reserving a share for wives has also disappeared. The pandits of the Madras Sudr Court, in a case where a man had made a deed of division allotting a share to his son, and another to his wife and daughter, declared that such a division was

(*p*) 2 W. MacN. 65, n.; F. MacN. 45, 57.

(*q*) See the remarks of Jagannatha, 3 Dig. 9. "The right of partition consists in the relation of son to the original possessor and the like. Even the son of the daughter of a man who leaves no male issue, and the son of a mother's sister, are not intended by the term 'undivided,' since they belong to other families." A daughter's son in Bengal would certainly be entitled to have his grandfather's share ascertained and delivered to him (§ 433). But his suit would be more in the nature of an ejectment than of a partition, which implies previous membership in a joint family.

(*r*) *Smriti Chandrika*, iv. § 26—39. This appears also to be the opinion of the author of the *Sarasvati Vilasa*, who cites *Apararka* in support of it, §§ 77, 111—117.



illegal by Hindu law, "inasmuch as a wife and daughter, who have no right to property while a son is alive, are not capable of participating in the property while he is alive" (s). The practice in Madras, as far as my experience goes, is that in making a division during a father's life, no notice is taken of his wife or wives, their rights being included in his, and provided for out of his share. As regards the mother, where partition is made after the death of her husband, the Smriti Chandrika, after discussing the texts already cited, points out that a widowed mother with male issue cannot be entitled to a partition of the heritage, as she is not an heir, but only to a portion sufficient for her maintenance and her religious duties. Consequently, that where she is stated to be entitled to a share equal to that of a son, this must mean such a portion as is necessary for her wants, and which can never exceed a son's share, but which is subject to be diminished, if the property is so large that the share of a son would be greater than she needs, or where she is already in possession of separate property (t). This is in accordance with existing practice. The plaint in a suit for partition in Madras always sets out the names of such widows as are chargeable upon the property, and asks that the amount necessary for their maintenance may be ascertained and set aside for them. This amount, though of course in some degree estimated with reference to the magnitude of the property (§ 417), is never considered to be equal to, or to bear any definite proportion to, the share of sons. Mr. W. MacNaghten states that this exclusion of mothers from a distinct share on partition is peculiar to the Smriti Chandrika, and that according to the Mitakshara and other works current in Benares and the Southern Provinces, not only mothers, but also childless wives are entitled to shares, the term *mâtâ* being interpreted to signify both mother and stepmother (u). The Viramitro-

Benares law.

(s) *Meenatchee v. Chetumbra*, Mad. Dec. of 1853, 61.

(t) Smriti Chandrika, iv. § 4—17; 2 Stra. H. L. 309; *Venkatammal v. Andyappa*, 6 Mad. 130; *per curiam*, 8 Mad. at p 123.

(u) 1 W. MacN. 50. Vyasa expressly lays down that "the wives of the father who have no sons are entitled to equal shares (with the sons of other wives);

Bombay.

daya admits sonless wives to a share when partition is made by the father, but excludes them from a partition made after his death. The ground of the distinction is, that in the former case they take as wives, while in the latter case they can only take as mothers. He seems however to admit that the Mitakshara and the Madanaratna recognise the right of stepmothers to a partition with their sons (*v*). I have been informed on high authority that the usage as regards allotting maintenance instead of shares to mothers, when a partition takes place in Bombay, is the same as that which prevails in Madras. But the futwahs of the pandits lay it down that she is entitled to a share equal to that of a son, and the same view is stated by Mr. Justice West in a well considered judgment in a recent case (*w*). I know of no express decision upon the point in Bombay. The High Court of Bengal has on several occasions decided that, under Mitakshara law, a mother is entitled when a partition takes place to have a share equal to that of a son set apart for her, either by way of maintenance or as a portion of the inheritance, even though the partition takes place in the lifetime of the father (*x*). The same view is taken by the High Court of the North-West Provinces which holds that a Hindu widow, entitled by the Mitakshara to a proportionate share with her sons upon partition, can claim such share, not only *quoad* the sons, but as against an auction purchaser at a sale in execution of the right title and interest of one of the sons before partition (*y*).

Rights of  
women in  
Bengal.

§ 438. Under the law of Bengal the rights of females stand much higher than they do in the other provinces.

---

and so are all the wives of the paternal grandfather." 3 Dig. 12; V. May., iv. 4, § 19, says this includes step-grandmothers also. So also the Mithila school D. K. S. vii. § 7. See 3 Dig. 13; *Damoodur v Senabutty*, 8 Cal. 537.

(*v*) *Viramit*, p. 79, § 19.

(*w*) *Madhowrao v. Yusuuda*, 2 Bor. 454 [468]; W. & B., 2nd ed., 91, 92, 97, 100, 306, 390; *Lakshman v. Satyabhamabai*, 2 Bom. 494, 504.

(*x*) *Judoonath v. Bishonath*, 9 Suth. 61; *Mahabeer v. Ramyad*, 12 B. L. R. 90; S. C. 20 Suth. 192; *Laljeet v. Rajcoomar*, *ib.* 378; S. O. 20 Suth. 386; *Pursid v. Honooman*, 5 Cal. 845; *Sumrun v. Chundar Mun*, 8 Cal. 17; *Krishori v. Moni Mohun*, 12 Cal. 165.

(*y*) *Bilaso v. Dina Nath*, 3 All. 88.

Partition during the life of a father is so uncommon in Bengal, that I can find no authority as to setting aside shares for the wives. The Daya-krama-sangraha seems to limit the right of wives to have such shares to cases where the father makes a partition of his self-acquired property. In such a case, if peculiar property has been already given to one wife, the other wives, whether childless or otherwise, are entitled to have their shares made up to an equal amount. If they have had no peculiar property, then they are to have shares equal to those of sons (z). After the death of the father, the right of the widow depends upon whether the father has left male issue or not, and whether she is a mother or a childless wife. That is to say, she may either be a coparcener before partition, or only entitled to a share in the event of a partition, or entitled in no case to more than maintenance.

Right of widow  
in Bengal.

1. If the father dies leaving no male issue, his widow becomes his heir, whether he is divided or not. She is in the strictest sense a coparcener. She became a member of the same *gotra* with her husband on her marriage, and is the surviving half of his body, as well as his heir (a). She can herself sue for a partition, and need not wait for her share until a partition is brought about by the act of others (b). The Calcutta High Court, however, has laid it down that owing to the special nature of a woman's estate, it would be the duty of a Court, before decreeing partition in favour of a widow, to see that the interests of the presumptive heir be not affected by the decree. The Court ought to be satisfied that it is a *bonâ fide* claim arising from

Where no issue.

(z) D. K. S. vi. § 22—26.

(a) W. & B. 129; Vrihaspati, 3 Dig. 458; Daya Bhaga, xi. 1, § 14 note, 43, 46, 54; D. K. S. ii. 2, § 41.

(b) F. MacN. 39, 59; 1 W. MacN. 49; *Dhurm Das v. Mt. Shama Soondri*, 3 M. I. A. 229, 241; S. C. 6 Suth. (P. C.) 43; *Shib Pershad v. Gunga Monee*, 16 Suth 291; *Soudaminy v. Jogesh*, 2 Cal. 262. Even before partition the widow has an alienable interest which may be enforced by partition by her assignee. *Janoki Nath v. Mothura Nath*, 9 Cal. 580. As to the rights of several widows *inter se*, post, § 510. As to the right of widows among the Jains to demand a partition of their husband's share, see *Sheo Singh v. Mt. Dakho*, 6 N.-W. P. 406, affd. 5 I. A. 87; S. C. 1 All. 688.

such necessities as render partition desirable between two joint owners, and that she would properly represent the interest of the estate, including that of the person who would come after her (c).

Stepmother.

2. If the father dies leaving issue, and a widow who is not the mother of such issue, she is never entitled to more than maintenance. The writers of the Bengal school differ in this respect from those of the other provinces, since they exclude a stepmother from the operation of the texts which speak of the share of a mother. And this exclusion equally applies, whether the widow was originally childless, or was the mother of daughters only, or was the mother of sons whose line has become extinct before partition (d).

Mother.

3. If the father dies leaving male issue, and also a widow who is the mother of such issue, she is only entitled to maintenance until partition, and she can never herself require a partition. But if a partition takes place by the act of others, she will be entitled to receive a share, if the effect of that partition is to break up or diminish the estate out of which she would otherwise be maintained (e). Hence her claim to a share is limited to the two following cases : *first*, when the partition takes place between her own descendants, upon whose property her maintenance is a charge. *Secondly*, when it takes place in respect of property in which her husband had an interest.

Right of mother  
in Bengal.

§ 439. *First*. If a widowed mother has only one son, she can never claim a share from him, and if he comes to a partition with his brothers by another mother, her claim for maintenance is a charge upon his share and not upon the whole estate (f). But if he dies, and his sons come to a division,

(c) *Mohadeay v. Haruk Narain*, 9 Cal. 244, 250.

(d) F. MacN. 41, 57; 1 W. MacN. 50; 3 Dig. 13; D. K. S. vii. § 3, 5, 6; Daya Bhaga, iii. 2, § 30; Raghunanda, ii. 17; *ante*, § 437.

(e) 2 W. MacN. 65, n.; F. MacN. 45, 57, 59; *Bilaso v. Dinanath*, 3 All. 88. Hence until partition she has no alienable interest. See *Judoonath v. Bishonath*, 9 Suth. 61.

(f) *Hemangini Dasi v. Kedarnath*, 16 I. A. 115; S. C. 16 Cal. 758.

then she would be entitled to share with them as grandmother. Similarly, if a man dies leaving three widows, each of whom has one son, and these three sons come to a division, none of the mothers would have a right to a share; because each of them retains her claim intact upon her own son. . But if the sons of one son divide among themselves, their grandmother will be entitled to a share. If the grandsons of all three widows divide, all the grandmothers will be entitled (g). In each case the share of the widow will be equal to the share of the persons who effect the partition. If it takes place between her sons, she will take the share of a son; if between her grandsons, she will take the share of a grandson (h). If a mother has three sons, one of whom dies leaving grandsons, and a partition takes place between the two surviving sons and the grandsons, the mother will be entitled to the same share as if the division had been effected between three sons; that is to say, the property will be divided into four shares, of which the mother will take one, each surviving son will take another, and the grandsons will take the fourth (i). Where the partition takes place between grandsons by different fathers, the matter becomes more complicated. For instance, suppose A.

Grandmother.

Grandmother in Bengal.



to have died leaving a widow and three sons, and these sons to die, leaving respectively two, three, and four grandsons, and that these grandsons come to a division. If their grandmother was dead, the property would be divided into three portions, *per stirpes*, which would again be divided into two, three, and four parts, *per capita* (§ 432). But if the grand-

F. MacN. 39, 41, 54; *Sibbosoondery v. Bussomutty*, 7 Cal. 191.

D K. S. vii. § 2, 4; *Raghunandana*, ii. 19. If she has already been provided for to the extent to which she would be entitled on partition, she takes no more; if to a less extent, she takes as much more as will make up her share. *Jodoonath v. Brojonath*, 12 B. L. R. 385.

(i) *Prawnkissen v. Muttoosoondery*, Fulton, 389; *Gooroopersaud v. Seebchunder*, F. MacN. 29, 52.



mother is alive, she will be entitled to the same share as a grandson. But it is evident that the grandsons by B. take a larger share than those by C., and these again a larger share than those by D. The mode of division, therefore, is stated to be, that the whole property is divided into ten shares, of which the grandmother will take one, the two sons of B. will take three, the three sons of C. will take three, and the four sons of D. will take three. If the widows of B., C. and D. were also living, they would be entitled to shares also. Each widow would take the same as her son. But in order to arrive at this share, a fresh division would have to be made. The three-tenths taken by the sons of B. would be divided into three parts, of which his widow would take one. Similarly, the three-tenths taken by the sons of C. would be divided into four parts, and the three-tenths taken by the sons of D. would be divided into five parts, of which one would go to the respective widows of C. and D., the remainder being divisible among their sons (*k*). The same widow may take in different capacities, as heir of one branch of the family, and as mother or grandmother in another branch. A very complicated instance of this sort is recorded by Sir F. MacNaghten as having been decided in the Supreme Court at Calcutta (*l*).

In one case in Bengal, where a partition was made after the death of all the sons by their widows, it was held that the grandmother had no right to a share. No counsel appeared for the grandmother, and, as might be expected, no precedents were cited. The decision can hardly be looked upon as of much weight, in the face of the direct authority on the other side (*m*).

---

(*k*) F. MacN. 52—54.

(*l*) *Sree Motee Jeemoney v. Attaram*, F. MacN. 64; *Callychurn v. Jonava*, 1 Ind. Jur. N. S. 284; *Jugomohan v. Sarodamoyee*, 3 Cal. 149; *Torit v. Tarapronno*, 4 Cal. 756; *Kristo Bhabiney v. Ashutosh*, 13 Cal. 39.

(*m*) *Rayee v. Puddum*, 12 Suth. 409, affirmed on review, 13 Suth. 66; *contra*, *Sibbosondery v. Bussoomutty*, 7 Cal. 193; *Bhadri Roy v. Bhugwat*, 8 Cal. 649, S. C. 11 C. L. R. 186. See Vyasa and Vrihaspati, 3 Dig. 12, where the right of the grandmother to a share is expressly asserted; and so Jagannatha says, 3 Dig. 27.

Where a partition takes place among great-grandsons only, it is said that the great-grandmother has no right to a share (*n*). But if a son be one of the partitioning parties with great-grandsons by another son, she would take a son's share. And if a grandson and great-grandson divide, she would take a grandson's share (*o*).

Great-grand-mother.

§ 440. *Secondly*. "Partition, to entitle a mother to the share, must be made of ancestral property, or of property acquired by ancestral wealth. Therefore, if the property had been acquired by A., the father of B. and C., and B. and C. come to a division of it, their mother (the widow of A.) shall, but their grandmother shall not, take a share of it. And if the estate shall have been acquired by B. and C. themselves, neither their mother nor grandmother will be entitled to a share upon partition" (*p*).

Wife only shares in husband's property.

§ 441. Where a partition takes place during the life of the father, the daughter has no right to any special apportionment. She continues under his protection till her marriage; he is bound to maintain her and to pay her marriage expenses, and the expenditure he is to incur is wholly at his discretion (*q*). But where the division takes place after the death of the father, the same texts which direct that the mother should receive a share equal to that of a son, direct that the daughter should receive a fourth share (*r*). It is evident, however, that there was much less need to set apart a permanent provision for a daughter than for a widow. The expenses of her marriage, and her maintenance for the very few years that she could remain in her father's family, constituted the only charge that had to be met in respect of her. Hence it was very early considered that the mention of a definite fourth only meant that

Rights of daughter.

Daughter.

3 Dig. 27; F. MacN. 28, 51, doubted by Dr. Wilson, Works, v. 25.

F. MacN. 52.

F. MacN. 51, 54; *Isree Pershad v. Nasib Koor*, 10 Cal. 1017.

Mitakshara, i. 7, § 14.

(*r*) Yajñavalkya, ii. § 124: see *ante*, § 436. As to the mode of calculating the fourth, see Mitakshara, i. 7, § 5-10; 3 Dig. 93, 94; Smṛiti Chandrika, iv. § 84; Wilson, Works, v.

a sufficient amount must be allotted to each daughter to defray her nuptials. This view is combated by *Vijnanesvara*, who maintains that the letter of the law must be respected. The *Smriti Chandrika*, however, evidently inclined to the modern doctrine, as it states that the full fourth is only to be given where the estate is inconsiderable. And it is expressly asserted by the *Madhaviya* and the Bengal writers, and those of the Mithila school (*s*). The practice at present is in conformity with this opinion (*t*).

Where daughters take as joint-heirs, the effect of partition between them comes under the law of succession, and will be discussed hereafter (§ 515).

#### Strangers.

§ 442. A stranger cannot compel a partition, in the sense of compelling any or all of the members of a family to assume the *status* of divided members, with the legal consequences following upon that *status*. But he may acquire such rights over the property of any coparcener as to compel him to separate the whole or part of his interest in the joint property, and so sever the coparcenary in respect of it. This may be effected either by actual assignment, or by operation of law, as by insolvency, or upon a sale in execution of a decree (*u*). How far a member of an undivided family under Mitakshara law can, by his own voluntary act, transfer his rights in the joint property to a stranger, is a matter upon which there is much difference of opinion, and which has already been examined (*v*). But

(*s*) Mitakshara, i. 7, § 11; *Smriti Chandrika*, iv. § 18, 19; *Madhaviya*, § 25, where he misrepresents the opinion of *Vijnanesvara*: *Daya Bhaga*, iii. 2, § 39; *D. K. S.* vii. § 9, 10; *Raghunandana*, iii. 19, 20; 3 *Dig.* 90—94. The *Viramirodaya* argues for the view adopted by the Mitakshara, but sets out the conflicting opinions, *Viramit.*, p. 81, § 21. The *Sarasvati Vilasa* sets out both views, but states the modern doctrine, which is that of *Apararka*, last, though without offering any opinion of his own. § 119—133.

(*t*) *F. MacN.* 55, 98; 1 *W. MacN.* 50. Daughters have no right to claim a share of their mother's property during her life, in cases in which they would be her heirs; *Mathura v. Esu*, 4 *Bom.* 545.

(*u*) *Per curiam*, *Soorjeemoney Dossee v. Denobundoo*, 6 *M. L. A.* 539 S. C. 4 *Suth. (P. C.)* 114; *Deendyal v. Jugdeep*, 4 *L. A.* 247; S. C. 3 *Cal.*

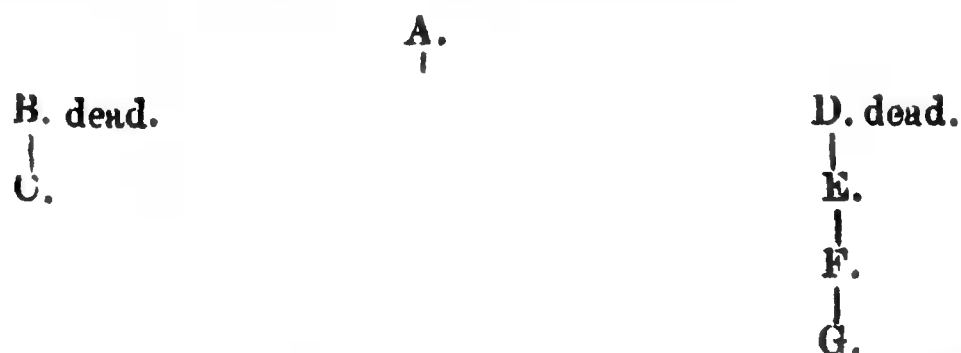
(*v*) *Ante*, § 327, *et seq.*

so far as the right of transfer is recognized it will be enforced, either by putting the purchaser in possession of an undivided interest, or by compelling the owner of the undivided interest to proceed to, or permit a partition, by means of which the hostile right can be satisfied (*w*).

§ 443. Persons who labour under any defect which disqualifies them from inheriting, are equally disentitled to a share on partition (*x*). But except in the case of degradation, which has now been practically abolished by Act XXI of 1850, (Freedom of religion) such incapacity is purely personal, and does not attach to their legitimate issue (*y*). Its effect is to let in the next heir, precisely as if the incapacitated person were then dead. But that heir must claim upon his own merits, and does not step into his father's place. For instance, suppose the dividing parties were C. and F., and that E. were incapacitated but alive, his son F.

Disqualified heirs.

Disqualification is personal.



would be entitled to claim half of the property. But if F. was the incapacitated person, and D., and E. were dead, G. would have no claim, being beyond the limits of the coparcenary (*z*). On the other hand, such disqualification only operates if it arose before the division of the property. One already separated from his coheirs is not deprived of his

Result of its removal.

(*w*) *Anand v. Prankisto*, 3 B. L. R. (O. C. J.) 14; *Rughoonath v. Luckhun*, 18 Suth. 23; *Muddun Gopal v. Mt. Gowrbetty*, 21 Suth. 190; *Lall Jha v. Shaikh Juma*, 22 Suth. 116; *Jhubboo v. Khoob Lall*, *ib* 294; *Alamalu v. Rungasami*, 7 Mad. 588; *Janokinath v. Mothuranath*, 9 Cal. 580; *Rajani Kanth v. Ram Nath*, 10 Cal 244; *Hepin Behari v. Lal Mohun*, 12 Cal. 209.

(*x*) *Mitakshara*, ii. 10; V. May., iv. 11; *Daya Bhaga*, v.; D. K. S. iii. See post, chap. xix, *Ramsahye v. Lalla Laljee*, 8 Cal. 149.

(*y*) *Mitakshara*, ii. 10, § 9—11; *Daya Bhaga*, v. § 17—19. As to adopted sons, see ante, § 99.

(*z*) 2 W. MacN. 42; *Bodhnarain v. Omrao*, 18 M. I. A. 519; S. C. 6 B. L. R. 509; per *L'aucock*, O. J., *Kalidas v. Krishan*, 2 B. L. R. (F. B.) 115;

## Removal of disability.

allotment (a). And if the defect be removed at a period subsequent to partition, the right to share arises in the same manner as, or upon the analogy of, a son born after partition (b). How this analogy is to be worked out is not so clear. If the removal of the defect is to be treated as a new birth at the time of such removal, then the principles previously laid down would apply (c). If the partition took place during the life of the father, and one of the sons were then incapable, he would take no share. But if his defect were afterwards removed, he would inherit his father's share. If, however the partition took place after the father's death, and one of the brothers was excluded as being incapable, and was afterwards cured, his cure could only be treated as a new birth, so as to give him any practical rights, by the further fiction that he was in his mother's womb at the time of the partition. If this analogy could be applied, he would be entitled to have the division opened up again, and a new distribution made for his benefit. But that would be rather a violent fiction to introduce, in a case where the incapacity was removed, possibly many years after new rights had been created by the division, and acted upon. Suppose, however, that the incapable heir was never cured, but had a son who was capable of inheriting. If the son was actually born, or was in the womb, at the time of the partition, he would be entitled to a share, if sufficiently near of kin. But if he was neither born nor conceived at that time, he could not claim to have the partition re-opened. He could only claim to succeed as heir to the share taken by his grandfather; and if the partition took place between the brothers, he could claim nothing more than maintenance (d).

Effect of fraud. § 444. It has been suggested that a coparcener, other-

(a) *Mitakshara*, ii. 10, § 6; *Sevachetumbara v. Parasucty*, Mad. Dec. of 1857, 210.

(b) *Mitakshara*, ii. 10, § 7; *V. May.*, iv. 11, § 2.

(c) *Ante*, § 431.

(d) See this subject discussed by *Pearce*, C. J., *Kalidas v. Krishan*, 2 B. L. R. (F. B.) 118—121, and in *Krishna v. Sami*, 9 Mad. 64. Of course all diff.



wise entitled, may lose his right to a share if he has been guilty of defrauding his coheirs. This view rests upon a text of Manu (e): "Any eldest brother who from avarice shall defraud his younger brother, shall forfeit his primogeniture, be deprived of his share, and pay a fine to the king." This text is explained by *Kalluka Bhatta* and *Jagan-natha* as meaning, that the eldest brother by such fraudulent conduct forfeits his right to the special share to which in early times he was entitled by seniority (f). *Yajnavalkya* and *Katyayana* merely say, that property wrongly kept back by one of the co-sharers shall be divided equally among all the sharers when it is discovered (g). This excludes the idea that the fraudulent person is to forfeit his whole share, or even his share in the property so secreted. The *Mitakshara* discusses the act with reference only to the question of criminality. The author decides that the act is criminal, but does not assert that it is to be followed by forfeiture, and seems to assume that the only result will be that the partition will be opened up, and a fresh distribution made of the property wrongly withheld (h). The other commentators of the Benares school either follow the *Mitakshara*, or pass the point over without special notice (i). On the other hand, the Bengal writers are of opinion, that the act of one coparcener, in withholding part of the property which is common to all, is not technically theft, and is not to be punished by any forfeiture (k). The Madras Sudder Court in one case followed the literal meaning of the text of Manu, and held that it was a complete answer to a suit for partition by a brother, that he had committed a theft of part of the paternal property. In this decision they set aside the opinion of their senior pandit, who was of opinion that the

Fraud of co-  
parcener.

culty would be removed, if the earlier doctrine were sustained which appears to allow a partition to be opened up at any distance of time in favour of an after-born son.

(e) ix. § 213. (f) 2 Dig. 564. (g) *Yajnavalkya*, ii. § 126; 3 Dig. 398.

(h) *Mitakshara*, i. 9. This chapter seems to have been differently understood by Sir Thomas and Mr. Strange, 1 Stra. H. L. 232; Stra. Man. § 273. Messrs. West and Bühler take the view stated in the text, W. & B. 679.

(i) *Smṛiti Chandrika*, xiv. § 4—6; *Madhaviya*, § 54; V. May., iv. 6, § 3; *Viramitrodaya*, p. 245, § 1, 2.

(k) *Daya Bhaga*, xiii. § 2, 8—15; D. K. S. viii.; 3 Dig. 397, 400.

embezzler of common property incurred no forfeiture thereby. The junior pandit had first stated generally, that the person who had embezzled part of the common property forfeited all claim to share in the estate. On giving in his written opinion, he modified this view by limiting the forfeiture to a prohibition of sharing in the portion actually embezzled. This opinion also the Court set aside, preferring that first given (*l*). The Court of the North-West Provinces has arrived at an exactly opposite conclusion, and has laid down that the wrongful appropriation by one brother of part of the joint estate, which the others might have recovered by an action at law, was no bar to a suit by him for partition (*m*). This certainly appears to me to be the sounder view.

Partition  
prohibited.

direction in a will prohibiting a partition, or postponing the period for partition, is invalid, as it forbids the exercise of a right which is essential to the full enjoyment of family property by Hindu law (*n*). On the other hand, an agreement between the members of a Hindu family not to come to a partition might be binding upon themselves. But unless the agreement also contained a condition against alienation, it would not prevent any of the parties to it from selling his share, and would be no bar to a suit by the vendee to compel a partition (*o*). Nor could such an agreement ever bind the descendants of the parties to it (*p*). In Bombay it has been held that it would not even bind the parties themselves (*q*).

Lapse of time.

§ 446. As Hindu law contemplates union and not partition as the normal state of the family, it follows that lapse

(*l*) *Canacumma v. Narasimma*, Mad. Dec. of 1858, 118.

(*m*) *Kalka v. Budree*, 3 N.-W. P. 267. Jolly, Lect. 142.

(*n*) *Nubkissen v. Hurris Chunder*, F. MacN. 323; *Mokoondo v. Gouesh*, 1 Cal. 104; *Jeebun v. Romanath*, 23 Suth. 297; Act IV of 1882, § 10, 11. (Transfer of Property).

(*o*) *Rhamdhone v. Anund*, 2 Hyde, 97; *Anand v. Prankisto*, 3 B. L. R. (O. C. J.) 14; *Anath v. Mackintosh*, 8 B. L. R. 60; *Rajender v. Shum Chund*, 6 Cal. 107.

(*p*) See *Venkataramanna v. Bramanna*, 4 Mad. H. C. 345.

(*q*) *Ramlinga v. Virupakshi*, 7 Bom.

of time is never in itself a bar to a partition. But the Statute of Limitations will operate from the time that a plaintiff is excluded from his share, and that such exclusion becomes known to him (*r*).

§ 447. THIRD, THE MODE OF DIVISION.—The principle of Hindu law is equality of division, but this was formerly subject to many exceptions, which have almost, if not altogether, disappeared. One of these exceptions was in favour of the eldest son, who was originally entitled to a special share on partition, either a tenth or a twentieth in excess of the others, or some special chattel, or an extra portion of the flocks (*s*). Sir H. S. Maine suggests that this extra share was given as the reward, or the security, for impartial distribution ; and refers to the fact that such extra privileges were sometimes awarded to younger sons (*t*), or to the father, as a proof that the right was unconnected with the rule of primogeniture (*u*). It seems to me probable that the double share which the father was allowed to retain for himself (*v*), was the inducement given to him to consent to a partition, at the time when his consent was indispensable (§ 220,) and perhaps also was intended to enable him to support the female members of the family, who would naturally remain under his care. Among the Hill tribes, when a division takes place, the family house sometimes passes to the youngest, sometimes to the eldest, son ; but invariably the son who takes the house takes with it the burthen of supporting the females of the family (*w*). The practice of allotting a larger share to the father would naturally survive, though to a lesser degree, in favour of

Special shares formerly allowed.

Special shares

(*r*) *Thakur Durriao v. Thakur Dari*, 1 I. A. 1 ; *Kali v. Dhununjy*, 3 Cal. 228 ; Act XV of 1877, sched. ii. § 127.

(*s*) *Apastamba*, xiii. § 13 ; *Baudhayana*, ii. 2, § 2—5 ; *Gautama*, xxviii. § 11, 12 ; *Vasistha*, xvii. § 23 ; *Mannu*, ix. § 112, 114, 156 ; *Narada*, xiii. § 13 ; *Devala*, 2 Dig. 553 ; *Vrihaspati*, *ib.* 556 ; *Harita*, *ib.* 558 ; *Yajnavalkya*, ii. § 114 ; *Viramit.*, p. 53, § 9.

(*t*) *Gautama*, xxviii. § 6, 7 ; *Vasistha*, xvii. § 23 ; *Mannu*, ix. § 112.

(*u*) *Early Institutions*, 197.

(*v*) *Narada*, xiii. § 12 ; *Vrihaspati*, 3 Dig. 44 ; *Katyayana*, *ib.* 53 ; *Sancha & Lichita*, 2 Dig. 555.

*Brecks, Primitive Tribes*, 9, 39, 42, 68.

now obsolete.

the eldest son as head of the family. Under the law of the Mitakshara the practice of giving an extra share to the father is now said either to be a relic of a former age, or only to apply to a partition by the father of his own self-acquired property (*x*). As between brothers or other relations absolute equality is now the invariable rule in all the provinces (*y*), unless, perhaps, where some special family custom to the contrary is made out (*z*); and this rule equally applies whether the partition is made by the father, or after his death (*a*).

Other grounds of preference arose in regard to sons of different rank; that is to say, sons by mothers of different caste, or sons of the ten supplementary species. These shared in different proportions, or some absolutely to the exclusion of others (*b*). But these different sorts of sons are long since obsolete (§ 75, 85). The right of a person who has made acquisitions, in which he has been slightly assisted by the joint property, to reserve to himself a double share, has already been fully considered (§ 264).

Where property  
is self-acquired.

§ 448. Hitherto we have been considering the case of joint property, as to which partition was a matter of right and not of favour. There is greater uncertainty where the partition was of property which was divisible as a matter of favour and not of right. Under Mitakshara law this case could only arise where the father chose to divide his self-acquired property among his sons. It is quite clear that

(*x*) Mitakshara, i. 6, § 7; Madhaviya, § 16; V. May., iv. 6, § 12, 13; Viramit., p. 65, § 13. See Smriti Chandrika, ii. 1, § 28—32, 41, where it is said to be allowable on a partition made by an aged parent.

(*y*) Mitakshara, i. 2, § 6. i. 3, § 1—7; Smriti Chandrika, ii. 2, § 2, ii. 3, § 16—24; Madhaviya, § 9; V. May., iv. 6, § 8—11, 14, 17; Daya Bhaga, iii. 2, § 27; D. K. S., vii. § 12, 13; Viramit., p. 60, § 11, p. 70, § 14. The case of an adopted son, where natural born sons afterwards come into existence, has been discussed, *ante*, § 155.

(*z*) *Shen Buksh v. Futteh*, 2 S. D. 205 (340); 2 W. MacN. 16. As to agreements to divide in particular shares, see *Ram Nirunjun v. Prayag*, 8 Cal. 138.

(*a*) *Bhurochund v. Russomunee*, 1 S. D. 28 (36); *Neelkaunt v. Munee*, *ib.* 58 (77); *Taliwar v. Puhlwand*, 3 S. D. 301 (402); *Lakshman v. Ramchandra*, 1 Bom. 561.

(*b*) Mitakshara, i. 8, 11; Daya Bhaga, ix. § 12; D. K. S., vii. § 19; V. May., iv. 4, § 27.



the father might give away this property to any one he chose (§ 350), and it would seem to follow that he might distribute it among his family at his own pleasure. *Vishnu* says, "If a father make a partition with his sons, he does so in regard to his own self-acquired property by his own pleasure" (c). This, of course, may refer to his right of withholding such property absolutely from distribution. Other texts which seem to leave the father a discretion as to allowing larger or smaller shares to his sons, may refer to the practice of giving extra shares to an elder son, an acquirer or the like (d). The interpretation put upon these texts by the Hindu commentators was, that even in regard to self-acquired property, the right of the father to make an unequal distribution could only exist where there was either a legal reason, as in case of an elder son's share, or a moral reason, such as the necessitous state of one of the sons, and that it could never exist where the act emanated from mere partiality or vicious preference (e). The author of the *Smriti Chandrika* sums up his argument upon the point by saying, "It is hence settled that unequal distribution made by the father, even of his own self-acquired property, according to his whims, without regard to the restrictions contained in the *shastras*, is not maintainable, where sons are dissatisfied with such distribution" (f). In a Madras case, where a man had made a division of his self-acquired property, giving about a tenth to his son, and the rest to his wife and daughter, the Sudder Pandits said that such a disposition would be valid as regards the personalty, but not as regards the realty (g). In the Punjab it is held that a man may distribute his self-acquisitions at his own pleasure (h). If the rule is anything more than a moral precept, it must depend upon the distinction, which I will notice presently, between a partition, which

---

(c) xvii. § 1.

(d) *Yajnavalkya*, ii. § 114, 116; *Narada*, xiii. § 15, 16.

(e) 8 Dig. 540, 541, 546; *Mitakshara*, i. 2, § 6, 13, 14.

(f) *Smriti Chandrika*, ii. 1, § 17—24; *Varadrajah*, p. 8; 1 *Strat. H. L.* 194; 2 *W. MacN.* 147, note.

(g) *Meenatchee v. Chetumbra*, *Mad Dec.* of 1853, 61.

(h) *Punjab Cust.* 35.



may be effected by mere agreement, and a gift, which requires delivery of possession.

Bengal law.

§ 449. In Bengal the peculiar doctrines of the *Daya Bhaga* leave a father practically at liberty to dispose of all his property, no matter of what sort, or how acquired, at his own free pleasure, in favour of any one upon whom he chooses to bestow it. One would expect, therefore, to find that, when he chose to distribute it among his sons, he would be at liberty to do so to whatever extent, and in whatever proportions he liked. This, however, is by no means so. *Jimuta Vahana* draws the distinction between self-acquired and ancestral property, saying that in the former case the father may give his sons greater or lesser allotments at his pleasure, but in the latter case his discretion is limited. He cannot reserve more for himself than his double share (*i*). With regard to his sons, he is also under restrictions. If the partition is made at the request of his sons, he is bound to give each an equal share, the legal deduction in favour of the eldest being alone allowed (*k*). If, however, he makes the partition of his own accord, he may make a partial or a total division. The former seems not to come under the rules which govern a legal division. The father appears still to remain the head of the family, and to retain a certain control over the whole property, but allots small portions of it to his sons, retaining the right to take these portions back, if he becomes indigent (*l*). Where, however, the partition is a total one, the same distinction exists between his rights over the ancestral and self-acquired property. As regards the former, the distribution must be equal or uniform, in the sense of not being arbitrary; that is, any inequality in the shares of the sons must be at inequality prescribed, or at least permitted, by the law, as arising from the superior age or merit of the son whom he

By father in  
Bengal.

(*i*) *Daya Bhaga*, ii. § 15—20, 35, 47, 56, 73; D. K. S. vi. § 16; *Raghunananda* ii. 2—6, 26—29.

(*k*) *Daya Bhaga*, ii. § 86.

(*l*) *Daya Bhaga*, ii. § 57; 2 W. MacN. 148; D. K. S. vi. § 8.

prefers (*m*). But as regards the self-acquired property, he may make a distribution according to his own free will, though even in this case the preference must arise from motives recognized by the law, on account of the good qualities or piety of the one who is preferred, or his incapacity, numerous family, or the like (*n*). Whether such reasons are sufficient to authorize an unequal distribution of ancestral property also, does not seem clear. In commenting on the text of *Narada* (xiii. 4), the father, "being advanced in years, may himself separate his sons, either dismissing the eldest with the best share, or in any manner, as his inclination may prompt." *Jimuta Vahana* says that this last clause means something different from the giving of an extra share to the first-born, but that the discretion so allowed is again restrained by the subsequent text (xiii. 16), which forbids a distribution made under improper influences, or contrary to the directions of law (*o*). If these passages apply also to ancestral property, the result would be that the power of distribution, both of ancestral and self-acquired property, would stand on the same footing. The father might divide either sort unequally, if he could find any justifying pretext in the superior qualities, or greater necessities, of the son whom he preferred. The *Daya-krahma-sangraha*, however, limits the right of making an unequal distribution among sons, in consequence of their superior qualifications or greater necessities, to the case of self-acquired property, or ancestral movable property, such as gems, pearls, corals, gold, and other effects (*p*). As regards ancestral landed property, the only inequality it appears to sanction is the special share for the elder son (*q*). In the case of a man's own self-acquired property, he may allot it as he chooses, subject as before to the necessity of showing some

(*m*) *Daya Bhaga*, ii. § 50, 76, 79. See as to extra shares, *ib.* § 37, 42, 74.

(*n*) *Daya Bhaga*, ii. § 74, 76, 82; *Raghunandana*, ii. 4

(*o*) *Daya Bhaga*, ii. § 81—85.

(*p*) *D. K. S.* vi. § 13, 18—20; acc. *Jagannatha*, 3 Dig. 39, 43, and pandits in *Bhowanny Churn v. Ramkaunt*, 2 S. D. 202 (259); 2 W. MacN. 2, 16.

*Ib.* § 21.

proper ground of preference, and an absence of improper motive (r).

§ 450. It is, of course, obvious that where a father is allowed to prefer one son to another on the ground of superior piety or moral qualifications, and is himself constituted as the sole judge of such qualifications, it is merely another way of saying that he may distribute the property as he chooses. A little hypocrisy is all that is needed in order to convert illegality into legality (s). But even as regards ancestral immovable property, the Bengal pandits appear in two cases to have taken the view which is suggested by *Jimuta Vahana*, rather than that which is expressed by the *Daya-krama-sangraha*, and to lay it down that grounds of personal preference, actually existing, will justify a father in preferring one son over another (t). The only question that arises is, whether the pandits in the two last cases were not speaking of a gift, and not of a partition. I think they were. I have already quoted the series of decisions in Bengal which practically affirm the right of a father to do what he wishes with his property. They seem in complete conflict with the opinions of the pandits in the case of *Bhowanny Churn v. Ramkaunt* (u). Now it will be observed that throughout the opinions of the pandits in the latter case, they directed their attention exclusively to the law of partition, and only cited texts bearing upon that law. In the opinions cited in the other cases, and referred to in the remarks on *Bhowanny Churn's* case, they directed their attention as exclusively to the law of gifts, and only cited texts showing the power of an owner of property to dispose of it during his lifetime. The fact is, the two sets of texts

(r) D. K. S. vi. § 8—15. See F. MacN. 242—268. In the Punjab a father appears to have the right to divide the family property among his sons in any proportions which seem fit to him, but if the division is thoroughly unequal, a fresh apportionment will be made after his death. Punjab Customary Law, II 168, 171, 180, 222, 261.

(s) See the opinions of Pandits, quoted F. MacN. 260; 3 Dig. 1.

(t) F. MacN. 260, 265.

(u) 2 S. D. 202 (259); ante, § 347. See this case discussed by Sir F. MacN. p. 288; per curiam, *Lakshmy v. Narasimha*, 8 Mad. H. C. 42, 48; Wilson's Works, v. 76, 81.

are quite irreconcilable. They mark different periods of law. The former are a survival from the time when the power of a father over property was as restricted in Bengal as it is now in the provinces governed by the Mitakshara. These texts probably remained unexplained away, because unequal distributions of a man's whole property continued to be unusual. The texts which forbid alienations of particular portions of it were explained away, because such alienations became common. *Jagannatha* tries to reconcile the two principles which allow a gift to one in preference to another, but forbid a distribution which gives more to one than another (v). His reasoning, so far as I am able to follow it, appears to be, that, where a father proceeds to a partition with his sons, he divests himself of his property, with a view to its vesting again in those who are entitled to share it by virtue of their affinity to him. That being so, it can only vest in such persons, and in such proportions, as the law of partition directs. But when he divests himself of his property in order to make a gift, he immediately vests it again in the person, be it a stranger or otherwise, to whom he delivers the possession. The transaction is valid if it conforms to the law of gifts. Now this is really all that was decided by the case of *Bhowanny Churn v. Ramkaunt*. The pandits were unanimous that as a partition the transaction was bad. In this they were apparently right. They differed as to whether it would have been invalid for want of possession, if, as a partition, it had been legal. As to this it may now be taken that their doubts were unfounded, and that actual possession is not necessary in order to make a partition final and binding (§ 454). The Judges of the Sudder Court accepted their finding that the distribution was illegal. If so, it could only take effect as a series of gifts. But viewed in this light it was inoperative, because there had been no delivery of possession (§ 353). The result would be, that a father under Mitakshara law, in dealing with his self-acquired property,

*Bhowanny  
Churn's case.*

*Result of cases.*



or any other property in which his sons take no interest by birth, and a father under Bengal law in dealing with any property, may distribute it as he likes. If he conforms to the rules of partition, the transaction will be valid by mutual agreement, without actual apportionment followed by possession; but if he does not conform to those rules, then he must deliver the share to each of the sharers, so as to make a valid gift to each.

Where only  
some divide.

§ 451. A partition may be partial either as regards the persons making it, or the property divided. Any one coparcener may separate from the others, but no coparcener, except perhaps the father, can compel the others to become separate among themselves. A father may separate from all or from some of his sons, remaining joint with the other sons, or leaving them to continue a joint family with each other (*w*). It was stated in two Bengal cases, that where one brother separates from the others, and these continue to live as a joint family, it must be presumed that there has been a complete separation of all the brothers, but that those who continue joint have re-united (*x*). But that seems to be merely a question of fact. If nothing appeared but that one brother had taken his share, and left the family, while the other brothers continued exactly as before, it seems to me the proper presumption would be, that there never had been any severance in their interests (*y*). It has been suggested by Messrs. West and Bühler that one Bombay decision (of which they disapprove) lays down that a grandfather can, by his will, enforce a state of division among his grandsons. The case referred to appears to me only to decide, that property may be devised in such a way that the persons to whom it is bequeathed, if they take it under the will, will take it in severalty and not as joint tenants (*z*).

Division  
directed.

(*w*) *Mitakshara*, i. 2, § 2; W. & B. 665.

(*x*) *Judub Chunder v. Benodbeharry*, 1 Hyde, 214; *Petambur v. Hurish Chunder*, 15 Suth. 200; *Kesabram v. Nand Kishore*, 8 B. L. R. (A. C. J.) 7; S. C. 11 Suth. 808.

(*y*) *Upendra Narrain v. Gopeenath*, 1 Cal. 817.

(*z*) W. & B. 195, 668; *Lakshmibai v. Ganpat Morobu*, 4 Bom. H. C. (O. C. J.) 150; S. C. on appeal, 5 Bom. H. C. (A. C. J.) 128.



Such a state of things would be quite consistent with their remaining undivided in other respects. Whether a grandfather could so bequeath property would depend upon the nature of his interest in it. If it was his own exclusive property, of course, he could devise it on any terms he liked. But if it was ancestral property, which would by law descend to his grandsons as coparceners, I doubt whether he could by his will compel them to accept it with the incidents of separate property. The death which severed his interest, would also, as I imagine, terminate his power over the property (§ 380). A different case recently occurred in Madras. A father with three sons by one wife, and two sons by another, executed a document in his last illness, directing the property to be divided into three-fifths, and two-fifths shares, with a small reservation for himself. The Court found that the document was intended to operate from its date as an actual severance, *first*, of the interest of his sons by one wife from that of his sons by another; *secondly*, of the interest of all his sons from his own during his life. Neither his eldest son, who was of age, nor the guardian of his infant sons, were parties to the suit. It was held by the Court that the transaction was a partition which altered the status of the sons though without their consent, by virtue of the special authority of the father. *Muthusawmy Aiyer, J.*, upon a review of the native authorities, said, "According to the Hindu law it is competent to a father to make a partition during his life, and the partition so made by him binds his sons, not because the sons are consenting parties to the arrangement, but because it is the result of a power conferred on him, though subject to certain restrictions imposed in the interest of the family. In cases like this the question is not whether such partition is a contract, like a partition made among brothers after their father's decease, but whether it is a legal transaction, concluded in conformity to the Hindu law" (a).

Even where the division is only between certain members

All must be parties to suit.

---

(a) *Kandasami v. Doraisami*, 2 Mad. 817, 821.

of the family, it is necessary, unless in such a case as that just cited, that all the members should be parties to it, as the interests of all are necessarily affected by the separation of any. And if the partition is effected by decree of Court, all the members must be brought before the Court, either as plaintiffs or defendants (b).

Partition should be complete.

§ 452. Every suit for a partition should embrace all the joint family property (c), unless different portions of it lie in different jurisdictions, in which case suits may be brought in the different Courts to which the property is subject (d); or unless some portion of it is at the time incapable of partition as for instance from being in the possession of a mortgagee (e); or is from its nature impartible, as a Zemin-dary governed by the law of primogeniture (f). And if a member sues for partition of property in the hands of the defendant, he must bring into hotchpot any undivided property held by himself, even though it is out of the jurisdiction of the Court, and thus make a complete and final partition (g). Hence, where there has been a partition at all, the presumption is that it was a complete one, and that it embraced the whole of the family property. Therefore, if property is afterwards found in the exclusive possession of one member of the family, and it is alleged that such property is still undivided and divisible, the proof of such an allegation rests upon the party making it (h). But there

Partition presumed to be complete;

may be partial,

(b) *Narsimha v. Ramchendra*, 1 Mad. Dec. 52; *Pahaladh v. Mt. Luchmun-butti*, 12 Suth. 256.

(c) *Manu*, ix. § 47; *Dadgee v. Wittal*, Bom. Sel. Rep. 151; *Dasari v. Dasari*, Mad. Dec. of 1861, 86; *Ruttun Monee v. Brojo Mohun*, 22 Suth. 333; *Nanabhai v. Nuthabhai*, 7 Bom. H. C. (A. C. J. 46); *per curiam. Narayan v. Nana Manohar*, ib. 178, affirming 2 W. & B. Introd. 17, 2nd ed.; *Trimbak v. Narayan*, 11 Bom. H. C. 71. See *per Phear, J., Padmamani v. Jagadamba*, 6 B. L. R. 140, *sed qy.?* *Haridas v. Pran Nath*, 12 Cal. 566; *Jogendro Nath v. Jugobundhu*, 14 Cal. 122.

(d) *Lutchmana Row v. Terimul Row*, 4 Mad. Jur. 241; *Subba Rau v. Rama Rau*, 8 Mad. H. C. 376. See *Jairam v. Atmaram*, 4 Bom. 482; *Radha Churn v. Kripa*, 5 Cal. 474; *Punchanun Mullick v. Sib Chunder*, 14 Cal. 835.

(e) *Pattaravy v. Audimula*, 5 Mad. H. C. 419; *Narayan v. Panduranq*, 12 Bom. H. C. 148.

(f) *Parvati v. Tirumalai*, 10 Mad. 334.

(g) *Ram Lochun v. Rughoobur*, 15 Suth. 111; *Lalljeet v. Rajcoomar*, 25 Suth. 358; *Hari Narayan v. Ganpatrav*, 7 Bom. 272.

(h) *Narayan v. Nana Manohar*, 7 Bom. H. C. (A. C. J.) 153.

may be a partial division, of such a nature that the coparcenary ceases as to some of the property, and continues as to the rest (*i*). Where such a state of things exists, the rights of inheritance, alienation, &c., differ, according as the property in question belongs to the members in their divided, or in their undivided, capacity (*k*); or, there may be such a partition as amounts to an absolute severance of the coparcenary between the members, although the whole or part of the property is for convenience, or other reasons, left still unapportioned, and in joint enjoyment. In that case, the interest of each member is divided, though the property is undivided. That interest, therefore, will descend, and may be dealt with, as separate property (*l*). Or, lastly, there may be a partition and distribution which is intended to be final, but some part of the family property may have been overlooked, or fraudulently kept out of sight. In such a case, when the property is discovered it will be the subject of a fresh distribution, being divided among the persons who were parties to the original partition, or their representatives; that is, among the persons to whom each portion would have descended as separate property (*m*). But the former distribution will not be opened up again (*n*). Where, however, the whole scheme of distribution is fraudulent, and especially where it is in fraud of a minor, it will be absolutely set aside, unless the person injured has acquiesced in it, after full knowledge that it was made in violation of his rights (*o*).

or imperfect,

or mistaken

Case of fraud.

(*i*) *Acc. Kandasami v. Doraisami*, 2 Mad 324; *per curiam*, 4 M. I. A. 168. The High Court of Bengal seems to think that a partial division may be effected by arrangement, but not by suit. *Radha Churn v. Kripa*, 5 Cal. 474.

(*k*) *Patni Mal v. Ray Manohar*, 5 S. D. 349 (410); *Maccundas v. Ganpatrao*, Perry's O. C. 143; W. & B. 344, 345, 702; F. MacN. 46; 2 Stra. H. L. 387; 1 W. MacN. 53.

(*l*) *Appovier v. Rama Subbaniyan*, 11 M. I. A. 75; S. C. 8 Suth. (P. C.) 1; *Rewun Persad v. Radha Beeby*, 4 M. I. A. 137, 168; S. C. 7 Suth. (P. C.) 85; *Narayan v. Lakshmi Ammal*, 3 Mad. H. C. 289.

(*m*) Manu, ix. § 218; Mitakshara, i. 9, § 1—3; Daya Bhaga, xiii. § 1—3; V. May., iv. 6, § 3; *Lachman v. Sanwal*, 1 All. 543; *ante*, § 444. See as to enlargement of share, where a coparcener dies after decree and pending appeal. *Sakharam v. Hari Krishna*, 6 Bom. 113.

(*n*) Daya Bhaga, xiii § 6; 3 Dig. 400.

(*o*) *Vrihaspati*, 3 Dig. 399; Manu, ix. § 47; Daya Bhaga, xiii. § 5; Mad. Dec. of 1859, 84; *Moro Vishwanath v. Ganesh*, 10 Bom. H. C. 444.

Suit for partition by or against a stranger.

§ 453. Where a stranger to the family acquires a title to a portion of the family property, by purchase or under an execution, he is entitled to be placed in possession jointly with the other members. If he is not satisfied with joint possession, and desires the exclusive possession of a particular portion of the property, his remedy is by suit to compel his vendor to come to a partition, and so give him an absolute title. But he cannot demand a partition merely as to the portion over which he has a claim. The vendor must have a complete and final partition, so that all the family accounts may be taken against him, and all the other members of the family must be made parties to the suit (§ 329). Where the suit for partition is brought by other members of the family, in order to get rid of the joint possession of the stranger, it has been held by the Madras High Court that the suit may be limited to their share in the particular parcel of family property which had been sold (*p*). On the other hand the Calcutta High Court has ruled that in this case, as in all others, the suit must be one for a complete partition, and that this is not a mere technical objection, because on partition of the whole of the joint family property, the whole land so alienated by a single member might fall entirely to the share of the alienor (*q*).

How effected.

§ 454. FOURTH.—As to what constitutes a partition, it is undisputed that it may be effected without any instrument in writing (*r*). Numerous circumstances are set out by the native writers as being more or less conclusive of a partition having taken place, such as separate food, dwelling, or worship; separate enjoyment of the property; separate income and expenditure; business transactions with each other, and the like (*s*). But all these circumstances are

(*p*) *Chinna Sannyasi v. Surya*, 5 Mad. 196.

(*q*) *Koer Husmat v. Sunder Das*, 11 Cal. 396.

(*r*) *Per curiam, Rewun Persad v. Radha Beeby*, 4 M. I. A. 168; S. C. 7 Suth. (P. C.) 35. See as to unregistered deeds of partition in Madras, Act II of 1884.

(*s*) Narada, xiii § 36—43; Mitakshara, ii. 12; Daya Bhaga, xiv.; 3 Dig. 407—429; 2 W. MacN. 170, n. See *Hurish Chunder v. Mokhoda*, 17 Suth. 564. *Murari Vithoji v. Mukund Shivaji*, 15 Bom. 201; *Ram Lall v. Debi Dat*, 10 All. 490.



merely evidence, and not conclusive evidence, of the fact of partition. Partition is a new *status*, which can only arise where persons, who have hitherto lived in coparcenary, intend that their condition as coparceners shall cease. It is not sufficient that they should alter the mode of holding their property. They must alter, and intend to alter, their title to it. They must cease to become joint owners, and become separate owners (*t*). And as, on the one hand, the mere cesser of commensality and joint worship, the existence of separate transactions (*u*), the division of income (*v*), or the holding of land in separate portions (*w*), do not establish partition, unless such a condition was adopted with a view to partition (*x*); so, on the other hand, if the members of the family have once agreed to become separate in title, it is not necessary that they should proceed to a physical separation of the particular pieces of their property. "If there be a conversion of the joint tenancy of an undivided family into a tenancy in common of the members of that undivided family, the undivided family becomes a divided family with reference to the property that is the subject of that agreement, and that is a separation in interest and in right, although not immediately followed by a *de facto* actual division of the subject-matter. This may, at any time, be claimed by virtue of the separate right" (*y*). And in provinces governed by the Mitakshara, if a brother so divided

Intention  
essential.

Apportionment  
unnecessary.

As to the effect of separate performance of religious rites, see Goldstücker, Administration of Hindu law, 53.

(*t*) Mere petitions or declarations of intention are not sufficient. *Mookta Keshee v. Oomabutty*, 14 Suth. 31; S. C. 8 B. L. R. 396, note.

(*u*) *Rewun Persad v. Radha Beeby*, 4 M. I. A. 168; S. C. 7 Suth. (P. C.) 35; *Neelkisto Deb v. Beerchunder*, 12 M. I. A. 540; S. C. 3 B. L. R. (P. C.) 13; S. C. 12 Suth. (P. C.) 21; *Anundee v. Khedoo*, 14 M. I. A. 412; S. C. 18 Suth. 69; *Chhabila v. Jadaibai*, 3 Bom. H. C. (O. C. J.) 87; *Narraina v. Veeraraghava*, Mad. Dec. of 1855, 230; *Garikapati v. Sudam*, Mad. Dec. of 1861, 101; *Kristappa v. Ramasawmy*, 8 Mad. H. C. 25.

(*v*) *Sonatun Bysack v. Juggutsoondree*, 8 M. I. A. 66.

(*w*) *Runjeet v. Kooer*, 1 I. A. 9; *Ambika v. Rukhmani*, 1 All. 437.

(*x*) *Ram Kissen v. Sheonundun*, (P. C.) 23 Suth. 412.

(*y*) *Appovier v. Rama Subbaiyan*, 11 M. I. A. 75; S. C. 8 Suth. (P. C.) 1; *Suraneni v. Suraneni*, 13 M. I. A. 113; S. C. 12 Suth. (P. C.) 40; *Doorga Pershad v. Mt. Kundun*, 1 I. A. 55; S. C. 13 B. L. R. 235; S. C. 21 Suth. 214; *Babaji v. Kashibai*, 4 Bom. 157; *Ashabai v. Haji Tyeb*, 9 Bom. 111; *Tej Pratap v. Champakalle*, 12 Cal. 96; *Adi Deo v. Dukharan*, 5 All. 582; *Anant Balacharya v. Damodhar Makund*, 13 Bom. 25.



should die before actual separation of the property, his widow would succeed to his share (z). On the same principle a decree for a partition dissolves the joint tenure from its date; and it does so equally, although the suit was not in terms a suit for partition, provided the relief given is inconsistent with the continuance of the joint interest (a). And any arrangement by which one member of the family abandons his rights to a share amounts to a partition in respect to the property so abandoned, even though he takes no specific portion in its place (b).

Rarity of  
reunion.

§ 455. REUNION among coparceners, though provided for by the text-books, is of very rare occurrence. Sir. F. MacNaghten states that the Pandits of the Supreme Court of Bengal told him that no instance of the sort had ever fallen within their knowledge, nor had he himself ever met with a case (c). It is obvious that the same reasons which make partitions more frequent will tend to remove all motives for reunion.

Who may  
reunite.

The leading text on this subject is that of *Vrihaspati*. "He who being once separated dwells again through affection with his father, brother, or paternal uncle, is termed reunited." This text is interpreted literally by the *Mitakshara*, and the authorities of Southern India and Bengal, as excluding reunion with other relations, such as a nephew, cousin, or the like (d). The writers of the Mithila school, take these words, not as importing a limitation, but as offering an example. *Vachespatis* says, "The first principle of

(z) *Gajapathi v. Gajapathi*, 13 M I. A. 497; S. C. 6 B. L. R. 202; 14 Suth. (P. C.) 33.

(a) *Joy Narain v. Grish Chunder*, 5 I. A. 228; S. C. 4 Cal. 434; *Chidambaram v. Gouri*, 6 I. A. 177; S. C. 2 Mad. 83. The Bombay High Court holds that a decree for partition does not operate as a severance so long as it remains under appeal. *Sakharam v. Hari Krishna*, 6 Bom. 118.

(b) *Balkrishna v. Savitribai*, 3 Bom. 54; *Periasami v. Periasami*, 5 I. A. 61; S. C. 1 Mad. 312; but see *Appa Pillay v. Runga Pillay*, 6 Mad. 71, where a renunciation by one member of all his interests in the family property was held not to be a partition, and to be invalid as a contract.

(c) F. MacN. 107.

(d) *Mitakshara*, ii. 9, § 3; *Smriti Chandrika*, xii. § 1; *Daya Bhaṅga*, xii. § 8, 4; D. K. S. v. § 4.

reunion is the common consent of both the parties ; and it may either be with the coheirs or with a stranger after the partition of wealth (e).” The Mayukha agrees with him so far as to hold that other persons besides those named by *Vrihaspati* may reunite ; for instance, “ a wife, a paternal grandfather, a brother’s grandson, a paternal uncle’s son, and the rest also.” But it restricts the reunion to the persons who made the first partition (f). This view is followed in Bombay, where it has been held “ that the meaning of the passage of *Vrihaspati* which is the foundation of the law, is, that the reunion must be made by the parties, or some of them, who made the separation. If any of their descendants think fit to unite, they may do so ; but such a union is not a reunion in the sense of the Hindu law, and does not affect the inheritance” (g). No such limitation is to be found in any of the other early writers, who only mention reunion with reference to the law of inheritance. Dr. Mayr looks upon it as an innovation, which grew out of a feeling that it was unjust that a man, by reunion with distant relations, should disappoint the claims of those who would otherwise have succeeded to him, in the event of his dying without issue (h).

§ 456. As the presumption is in favour of union until a partition is made out, so after a partition the presumption would be against a reunion. To establish it, it is necessary to show, not only that the parties already divided lived or traded together, but that they did so with the intention of thereby altering their *status*, and of forming a joint estate with all its usual incidents (i). The circumstance that one of the dividing parties, being a minor, continued to live on in apparent union with his father, would not be conclusive,

Evidence.

(e) *Vivada Chintamani*, 301 ; *D. K. S. v.* § 5.

(f) *V. May.*, iv. § 1.

(g) *Vishvanath v. Krishnaji*, 3 Bom. H. C. (A. C. J.) 69 ; *Lakshmibai v. Ganpat Moroba*, 4 Bom. H. C. (O. C. J.) 166.

(h) Mayr, 130.

(i) 3 Dig. 512 ; *Smriti Chandrika*, xii. § 2 ; *Prankishen v. Mothooramohun*, 10 M. I. A. 403 ; S. C. 4 Suth. (P. C.) 11 ; *Gopal v. Kenaram*, 7 Suth. 35 ; *Ram Huree v. Trihee Ram*, 7 B. L. R. 336 ; S. C. 15 Suth. 442.

or I should imagine, even *primâ facie* evidence of a reunion (*k*).

**Its effect.**

The effect of a reunion is simply to replace the re-uniting coparceners in the same position as they would have been in if no partition had taken place. But with regard to rights of inheritance, there seems to be some distinction between coparceners in a state of original union, and of reunion. These will be discussed hereafter (§ 542).

---

(*k*) *Kuta Bully v. Kuta Chudappa*, 2 Mad. H. C. 235.

## CHAPTER XVI.

### INHERITANCE.

#### *Principles of Succession in Case of Males.*

§ 457. WE have now reached that point in the development of Hindu law in which Inheritance, properly so called, becomes possible. So long as the joint family continued in its original purity, its property passed into the hands of successive owners, but no recipient was in any sense the heir of the previous possessor (§ 246). The Bengal law made considerable inroads upon this system by allowing the share of each member to pass to his own direct heirs or assignees, and in this manner even to pass out of the family (a). But the rule of survivorship still governed the devolution of the share where a coparcener left no near heirs, and determined its amount. When, however, property came to belong exclusively to its possessor, either as being his own self-acquisition, or in consequence of his having separated himself from all his coparceners, or having become the last of the coparcenary, then it passed to his heir properly so-called. It must always be remembered, that the law of Inheritance applies exclusively to property which was held in absolute severalty by its last male owner. His heir is the person who is entitled to the property, whether he takes it at once, or after the interposition of another estate. If the next heir to the property of a male is himself a male, then he becomes the head of the family, and holds the property either in severalty or in coparcenary (§ 244) as the case may be. At his death the devolution of the property is traced from him. But if the

Inheritance  
assumes  
separate pro-  
perty.

---

(a) *Ante* § 433 438.

property of a male descends to a female, she does not, except in Bombay, become a fresh stock of descent. At her death it passes not to her heirs, but to the heirs of the last male holder. And if that heir is also a female, at her death, it reverts again to the heir of the same male, until it ultimately falls upon a male who can himself become the starting point for a fresh line of inheritance (b).

Succession never  
in abeyance.

§ 458. The right of succession under Hindu law is a right which vests immediately on the death of the owner of the property (c). It cannot under any circumstances remain in abeyance in expectation of the birth of a preferable heir, not conceived at the time of the owner's death. A child who is in the mother's womb at the time of the death is, in contemplation of law, actually existing, and will, on his birth, divest the estate of any person with a title inferior to his own, who has taken in the meantime (d). So, under certain circumstances, will a son who is adopted after the death (e). But in no other case will an estate be divested by the subsequent birth of a person who would have been a preferable heir if he had been alive at the time of the death (f). And the rightful heir is the person who is himself the next of kin at that time. No one can claim through or under any other person who has not himself taken. Nor is he disentitled because his ancestor could not have claimed. For instance, under certain circumstances a daughter's son would be heir, and would transmit the whole estate to his issue. But if he died before his grandfather, his son would never take. So, again, a sister's son

---

(b) See this subject discussed, *post*, § 665, *et seq.*

(c) Retirement into a religious life, when absolute, amounts to civil death; 1 Stra. H. L. 185; 2 Dig. 525; V. Darp. 10. As to the presumption that death has taken place, see Act I of 1872, § 107, 108 [Evidence.]

(d) *Per curiam*, *Tagore v. Tagore*, 9 B. L. R. 397; S. C. 18 Suth. 359; *Lakhi v. Bhairab*, 5 S. D. 815 (369); *Beroguh v. Nubokissen*, Sev. 238.

(e) *Ante*, § 171—179.

(f) *Aulim v. Bejai*, 5 S. D. 224 (278); *Kesub v. Bishnopersaud*, S. D. of 1860, ii. 340; *Bamasoondury v. Anund*, 1 Suth. 353; *Kalidas v. Krishan*, 2 B. L. R. (F. B.) 103. These cases must be taken, as overruling others which will be found at 2 W. MacN. 84, 98; *Mt. Solukhna v. Ramdolal*, 1 S. D. 824 (434); *Pran Nath v. Rajah Govind*, 5 S. D. 46 (50); *Sumbochunder v. Gunga*, 6 S. D. 234 (291), and note. See however *Krishna v. Sami*, 9 Mad. 64, *post*, § 555.



will inherit in certain events, though his mother would never inherit. And the son of a leper or a lunatic, or of a son who has been disinherited for some lawful cause, will inherit, though his father could not (g).

§ 459. The principle upon which one person succeeds to another is generally stated to depend on his capacity for benefiting that person by the offering of funeral oblations. As the Judicial Committee remarked in one case, "There is in the Hindu law so close a connection between their religion and their succession to property that the preferable right to perform the *Shradh* is commonly viewed as governing also the preferable right to succession of property; and as a general rule they would be expected to be found in union (h)." I have already (§ 9) suggested that this principle, while universally true in Bengal, is by no means such an infallible guide elsewhere. The question is not only most interesting as a matter of history, but most important as determining practical rights. I shall, therefore, proceed to examine the principles which determine the order of succession both under the *Daya Bhaga* and the *Mitakshara*. In this enquiry I shall reverse the usual order, and examine first the modern, or Bengal, system (i). When we have seen what is the logical result of the doctrine of religious efficacy, it will be easier to ascertain how far that doctrine can be applicable under a system where no such results are admitted.

Principle of religious efficacy.

(g) See *per Holloway, J., Chelikani v. Suraneni*, 6 Mad. H. C. 287, 288; *Balkrishna v. Savitribai*, 3 Bom. 54; and *post*, § 491, 520, 581, 555.

(h) *Soorendronath v. Mt. Heeramonee*, 12 M. I. A. 96; S. C. 1 B. L. R. (P. C.) 26; S. C. 10 Suth. (P. C.) 35; see too *per curiam*, *Katama Natchiar v. Rajah of Shivagunga*, 9 M. I. A. 610; S. O. 2 Suth. (P. C.) 31; *Neelkisto Deb v. Beerchunder*, 12 M. I. A. 541; S. C. 3 B. L. R. (P. C.) 13; S. C. 12 Suth. (P. C.) 21; *Tagore v. Tagore*, 9 B. L. R. 394; S. C. 18 Suth. 359.

(i) The whole doctrine of religious efficacy has been most elaborately discussed, especially by the late Mr. Justice *Dwarkanauth Mitter*, in some decisions of the Bengal High Court, to which I shall frequently refer. *Amrita v. Lakhinarayan*, 2 B. L. R. (F. B.) 28; S. O. *sub nomine Omrit v. Luckhee Narain*, 10 Suth. (F. B.) 76; *Guru v. Anand*, 5 B. L. R. 15; S. C. 13 Suth. (F. B.) 49; *Gobind v. Mohesh*, 15 B. L. R. 35; S. C. 23 Suth. 117; see also V. N. Mandlik, Introduction, xxxvi. and p. 345. A very full account of the whole system of *Shradhs* will be found in Mr. Rajkumar Sarvadhikari's Lectures, pp. 73-128.

Funeral  
offerings.

Sapinda.  
Sakulya.  
Samanodaka.

§ 460. A Hindu may present three distinct sorts of offering to his deceased ancestors; either the entire funeral cake, which is called an undivided oblation, or the fragments of that cake which remain on his hands, and are wiped off it, which is called a divided oblation, or a mere libation of water. The entire cake is offered to the three immediate paternal ancestors, *i.e.*, father, grandfather, and great-grandfather. The wipings, or *lepa*, are offered to the three paternal ancestors next above those who receive the cake, *i.e.*, the persons who stands to him in the fourth, fifth, and sixth degree of remoteness. The libations of water are offered to paternal ancestors ranging seven degrees beyond those who receive the *lepa*, or fourteen degrees in all from the offerer; some say as far as the family name can be traced. The generic name of *sapinda* is sometimes applied to the offerer and his six immediate ancestors, as he and all of these are connected by the same cake, or *pinda*. But it is more usual to limit the term *sapinda* to the offerer and the three who received the entire cake (*k*). He is called the *sakulya* of those to whom he offers the fragments, and the *samanodaka* of those to whom he presents mere libations of water (*l*). Now, upon first reading this statement, one would suppose the theory of descent to be this: that a deceased owner was related in a primary and special degree to persons in the three grades of descent next below himself; in a secondary, and less special degree, to persons in the three grades below the former three; and in a still more remote manner to a third class of persons extending to the fourteenth degree of

(*k*) This narrower signification seems to be unknown to the Mitakshara, see post, § 469, note. This distinction is expressly stated by Baudhayana. (i 5, 11, § 9, 10,) as follows: "The great-grandfather, the grandfather, the father oneself, the uterine brothers, the son by a wife of equal rank, the grandson and the great-grandson—these they call sapindas, but not the great-grandson's son—and amongst these a son and a son's son together with their father are sharers of an undivided oblation. The sharers of divided oblations they call Sakulyas." Raghunandana after explaining this passage, says, that "this relationship of Sapinda (extending no further than the fourth degree) as well as that of Sakulyas, is propounded relatively to inheritance. But relatively to mourning, marriage, and the like, those too that partake of the remnants of oblations are denominated Sapindas," xi. 8.

(*l*) Manu, iii. § 122—125, 215, 216,; v. § 60; ix. § 186, 187; Baudhayana, i. 5, § 1; Daya Bhaga, xi. 1. § 37—42; Viramit., p. 154, § 11; Colebrooke, Essays (ed. 1859), 90, 101—117.

descent. But the actual theory is much more complicated. In the first place, sapindaship is mutual. He who receives offerings is the sapinda of those who present them to him, and he who presents offerings is the sapinda of the person who receives them. Therefore, every man stands as the centre of seven persons, six of whom are his sapindas, though not all the sapindas of each other. He is equally the sapinda of the three above, and of the three below him. Further, a deceased Hindu does not merely benefit by oblations which are offered to himself. He also shares in the benefit of oblations which are not offered to him at all, provided they are presented to persons to whom he was himself bound to offer them while he was alive. As Mr. Justice *Mitter* said, "If two Hindus are bound during the respective terms of their natural life to offer funeral oblations to a common ancestor or ancestors, either of them would be entitled after his death to participate in the oblations offered by the survivor to that ancestor or ancestors; and hence it is that the person who offers those oblations, the person to whom they are offered, and the person who participates in them, are recognized as sapindas of each other" (m).

Theory relationship.

§ 461. The sapindas just described are all *agnates*, that is persons connected with each other by an unbroken line of male descent. But there are other sapindas who are *cognates*, or connected by the female line. The only definition of the cognate, or *bandhu* (if it may be called one), in the *Mitakshara*, is contained in ii. 5, § 3, last clause: "For *bhinna-gotra sapindas* are indicated by the term *bandhu*," or as Mr. Colebrooke translates it, "For kinsmen sprung from a different family, but connected by funeral oblations (n), are indicated by the term cognate." The defini-

Agnates.

Cognates.

Bandhus.

(m) *Guru v. Anand*, 5 B. L. R. 39; S. O. 13 Suth. (F. B.) 49, citing *Daya Bhaga*, xi. 1, § 38. See too the *Nirnaya Sindhu*, cited *Amrita v. Lakhinarayan*, 2 B. L. R. (F. B.) 34; S. C. 10 Suth. (F. B.) 76, and per *Mitter, J.*, in S. C. 2 B. L. R. (F. B.) 32; 3 Dig. 453.

(n) It will be seen hereafter that it is more than doubtful whether *Vijnanesvara* in using the term *sapinda* intended to refer to funeral oblations at all. See post, § 469—472.

Parvana  
Shradh.

tion given by Jimuta Vahana is fuller:—"Therefore a kinsman, whether sprung from the family of the deceased, though of different male descent, as his own daughter's son, or his father's daughter's son, or sprung from a different family, as his maternal uncle or the like, being allied by a common funeral cake, on account of their presenting offerings to three ancestors in the paternal and the maternal family of the deceased owner, is a sapinda" (o). Now, the mode in which cognates come to be connected with the agnates by funeral oblations is by means of that ceremony which is called the *Parvana Shradh*, and which is one of the principal of the series of offerings to the dead. "This ceremony consists in the presentation of a certain number of oblations, namely, one to each of the first three ancestors in the paternal line and maternal lines respectively; or, in other words, to the father, the grandfather, and the great-grandfather in the one line, and the maternal grandfather, the maternal great-grandfather, and the maternal great-great-grandfather in the other" (p). This would give one explanation of the texts which state that sapindaship does not extend on the side of the father beyond the seventh degree, and on the mother's side beyond the fifth (q). The sapinda who offers a cake as *bandhu* is the fifth in descent from the most distant maternal ancestor to whom he offers it. Now, on the principle of participation already stated, any *bandhu* who offers a cake to his maternal ancestors will be the sapinda, not only of those ancestors, but of all other persons whose duty it was to offer cakes to the same ancestors. But the maternal ancestors of A. may be the paternal or maternal ancestors of B., and in this manner A. will be the

(o) D. Bh. xi. 6, § 19; translated by Mr. J. Mitter, 6 Cal. 263.

(p) Per Mr. Justice Mitter, *Guru v. Anand*, 5 B. L. R. 40; S. C. 13 Suth. (F. B.) 49; Daya Bhaga, xi. 6. § 13, 19; Manu, ix. § 132; 3 Dig. 165, note by Colebrooke. It will be observed that the paternal ancestors are counted inclusive of the father; the maternal exclusive of the mother. See too Dattaka Mimamsa, iv. § 72, note by Sutherland.

(q) Vrihat Manu, cited Dattaka Mimamsa, vi. § 9; Gautama, ib. § 11; Yajnavalkya, i. § 53. It is more probable, however, that the original texts simply stated an arbitrary rule as to the degree of affinity which excluded intermarriage. See post, § 469.



*bandhu*, or *bhinna-gotra sapinda* of B., both being under an obligation to offer to the same persons (r).

§ 462. *Lastly*.—Although here I am anticipating the next chapter, a man is the sapinda of his mother, grandmother, and great-grandmother for a double reason ; *first*, because they become part of the body of their respective husbands, and *next*, because the cakes which are offered to a man's male ancestors are also shared in by their respective wives (s). And so the wife is the sapinda of her husband ; both as being the surviving half of his body, and because in the absence of male issue she performs the funeral obsequies

Relationship to females.

Females.

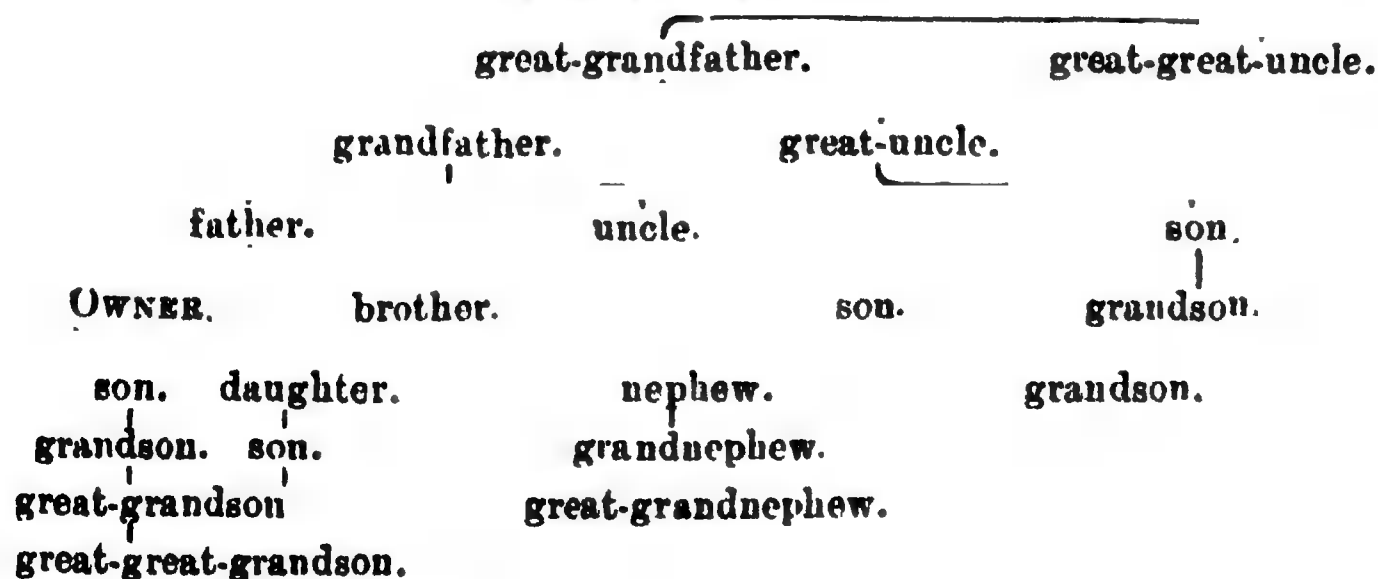
Hence the table of descents will stand as follows :—

Tables of descent.

Sapindas.		Sakulyas.	Samanodakas.
Gotraja (of the same family.)		Bhinna-gotra (of different family.)	
Males. Agnates.	Females.	Bandhus (cognates)	

§ 463. This will all be made clearer by reference to the accompanying diagrams. The OWNER, who is called in the Daya Bhaga the middlemost of seven, is the *sapinda* of his great-great-grandfather.

Gotraja Sapindas.



own son, grandson, and great-grandson, because they offer the

(r) For instance the daughter's son of A's grandson is a *bhinna-gotra sapinda* of the great-great-grandson of the same A. *Manik Chand v. Jagat Sattani*, 17 Cal. 518.

(s) Mann, ix. § 45 ; Daya Bhaga, xi. 6, § 3 ; 3 Dig. 519, 598, 625 ; Colebrooke, Essays, 116 ; *Lallubhai v. Mankuvarbai*, 2 Bom. 420, 440, 445.

(t) Mitakshara, ii. 1, § 5, 6 ; Vivada Chintamani, 290.





cake to him, and they are his *sapindas*, as he receives it from them. But his great-great-grandson is only his *sakulya*. So also he is the *sapinda* of his own father, grandfather, and great-grandfather, because he offers the cake to them, and they are his *sapindas*, because they receive it from him. But he and his great-great-grandfather are only *sakulyas* to each other. Next as regards collaterals. The owner receives no cake from his own brother, but he participates in the benefit of the cakes which the brother offers to his own three direct ancestors, who are also the three ancestors to whom the owner is bound to make offerings. So the nephew offers cake to his own three ancestors, two of whom are the father and grandfather of the owner; and the grandnephew to his three ancestors, one of whom is the father of the owner. All of these, therefore, are the *sapindas* of the owner, though they vary in religious efficacy in the ratio of three, two, and one. But the highest ancestor to whom the great-grandnephew offers cakes is the brother of the owner. He is therefore not a *sapinda*; but he is a *sakulya*, because he presents divided offerings to the owner's three immediate ancestors. Similarly the owner's uncle and great-uncle present cakes to two and one respectively of the ancestors to whom the owner is bound to present them. They are therefore his *sapindas*. But the great-great-uncle is not a *sapinda*, since he is himself the son of a *sakulya*, and presents cakes to persons all of whom stand in the relation of *sakulya* to the owner.

Sapindas and sakulyas.

§ 464. We now come to the *bandhus*, whose relationship is more complicated. There are two classes of *bandhus* referred to by the Bengal writers, and who alone can be brought within the doctrine of religious efficacy (c); those *ex parte paternâ* and *ex parte maternâ*. The first class will be found in the accompanying pedigree. Their *sapindaship* arises from the fact that they offer cakes to their maternal ancestors, who are also the paternal ancestors of the owner.

Bandhus.

(c) Daya Bhaga, xi. 6, § 8—20. D.K.S. i. 10, § 1—20. As to other *bandhus*, see *post*, § 472.

*Bandhus ex  
parte paternâ.*

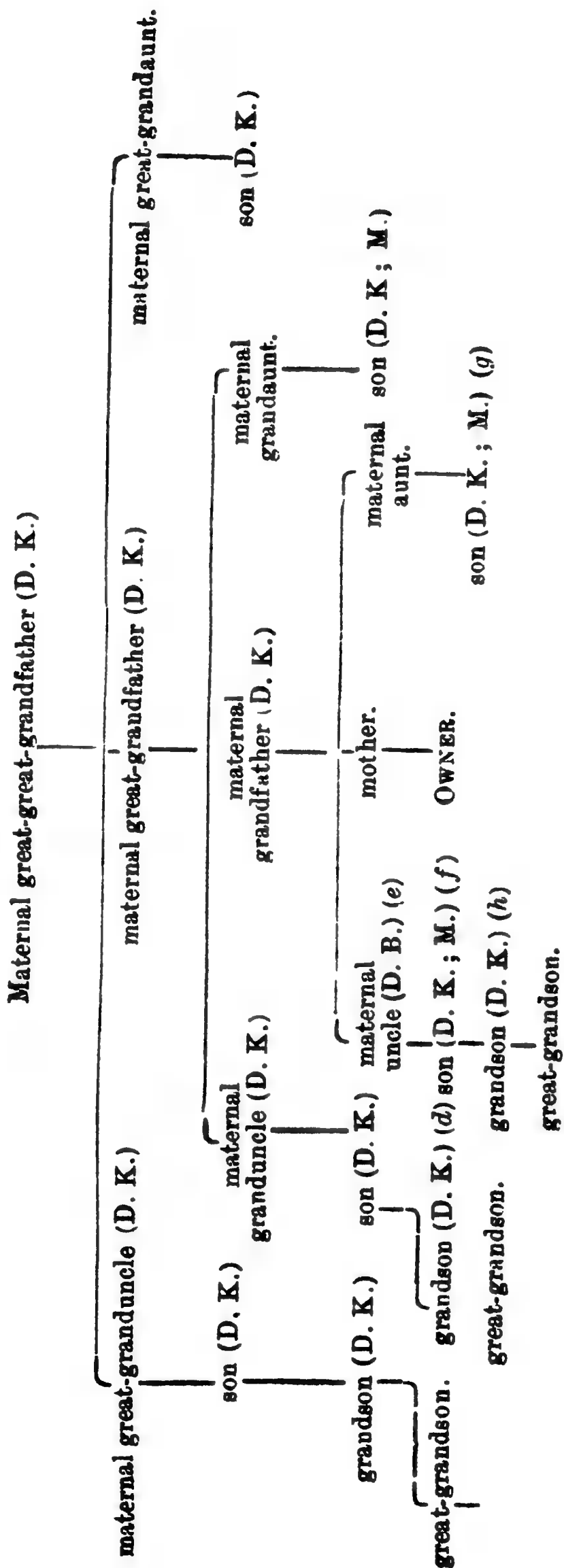
For instance, the sister's son, in addition to the oblations which he presents to his own father, &c., presents oblations to the three ancestors of his own mother, who are also the three ancestors of the owner. The aunt's son presents them to two, and the grandaunt's son to one of his three ancestors. These persons, therefore, all come within the definition of *bandhus*, as being persons of a different family, connected by funeral oblations, though with different degrees of religious merit. But the great-grandaunt's son is not a *bandhu*, because the ancestors to whom he presents cakes are the *sakulyas* only of the owner. Following out the same principle, it will be seen that the grandsons by the female line of the uncle and the granduncle, of the brother and the nephew, are all *bandhus*. But the son of the grandnephew's daughter is not a *bandhu*. Similarly in the decending line, the sons of the owner's daughter, grand-daughter, and great-granddaughter are *bandhus*, as they all present cakes to himself. But the offerings made by the son of his great-great-granddaughter do not reach as far as the owner, and therefore he is not a *bandhu*. It will be observed that the above pedigree always stops with the son of the female relation. The reason of this will be seen on referring to the smaller pedigree in the same sheet. The grandson of the owner's daughter will present cakes to his own paternal ancestors, that is to the owner's grandson, and to X, and Y., and also to his own maternal ancestors, that is to B., C., and D. But none of these are persons to whom the owner is bound to make oblations, and five of them are complete strangers to him. And so, of course, it is in every other similar case.

*Bandhus ex  
parte maternâ.*

§ 465. The *bandhus ex parte maternâ* will be found in the next pedigree. They differ from those just described in being connected with the owner through his maternal ancestors instead of his paternal ancestors. Those on the left side of the pedigree are the agnates of these maternal ancestors, while those on the right side are cognates and are, therefore, removed from the owner by a double descent in

NO. II.

**BANDHUS EX PARTE MATERNÁ.**



(d) *Brajakishor v. Radha Govind*, 3 B. L. R. (A. C. J.) 435; 3 C. 12 Soth. 339.

(e) *Gridhari v. Bengal Government*, 12 M. I. A. 448; S. C. 1 B. L. R. (P. C.) 44; S. C. 10 Suth. (P. C.) 32. He succeeds before the maternal aunt's son. *Mohandas v. Krishnabai*, 5 Bom. 597.

(f) Roanchurn v. Roanchurn, 3 Bom. 697.

*Goluckchunder v. Annand*, 2 S. D. 33 (43); *Trimbury Dibeah v. Rany Koond*, 4 M. I. A. 292; S. C. 7 Suth. (P. C.) 44; *Kassee v. Goluckchunder*, S. D. of 1848, 28.

(a) Derivath = Math.com, e a

(g) *Deyanath v. Muthoor*, 6 S. D. 27 (30); *Rutcheputty v. Rajinder*, 2 M. I. A. 132.  
(h) *Ratna Subba - Ramanna*, 27 C. L. J. 100 (1904).

(h) *Ratna Subbu v. Ponnappa Chetit, 5 Mad. 69.*

the female line. The explanations already given will render it unnecessary to go through the table in detail. The owner is bound to offer cakes to his own maternal grandfather, great-grandfather, and great-great-grandfather, and therefore the other persons who make similar offerings to them, or to any of them, are his *bandhus*. All the males in the table except the great-grandsons on the left are such *bandhus*.

Enumeration is  
not exhaustive.

§ 466. The letters D. B., D. K. and M., attached to the above pedigrees, point out which of the persons there described are specifically enumerated by the Daya Bhaga, Daya-krahma-sangraha and Mitakshara. It will be observed that very few are set out by *Vijnanesvara*; that many unnoticed by him are named by the Daya Bhaga, and still more which are omitted by the Daya Bhaga are supplied by the Daya-krahma-sangraha; but that in table No. I many are wholly passed over who yet come within the definition of *bandhu*, and are even more nearly related than those who are expressly mentioned. The daughter's son is really only a *bandhu*, though he is always placed in a distinct category on grounds which will be stated hereafter (§ 518). But the sons of the granddaughter and great-granddaughter offer oblations direct to the owner himself, which no other *bandhu* does except the daughter's son. Obviously, therefore, they should rank before *bandhus* who only offer to the owner's ancestors. So the son of the grandniece is omitted, though he stands in exactly the same relation to the son of the niece, who is included, as the grandnephew does to the nephew (i). At one time it was supposed that no *bandhu* could be recognized who was not expressly named in the authorities which governed each province. On this ground the sister's son (k), and the granduncle's daughter's son were rejected in Madras (l); and the sons of the grand-

(i) His title has been expressly affirmed, *Kashee Mohun v. Raj Gobind*, 24 Buth. 229.

(k) See post, § 531.

(l) *Kissen v. Javallah*, 3 Mad. H. C. 346.



daughter and great-granddaughter (*m*), and the son of the uncle's daughter in Bengal (*n*). But it is now settled, after an unusually full discussion of the whole subject, that the examples given in the different commentaries are illustrative and not exhaustive, (*o*) and that if any one comes within the definition of a *bandhu*, he is entitled to succeed as such, although he is nowhere specifically named (*p*).

§ 467. I have now pointed out the manner in which the principle of religious efficacy applies to the different male heirs who are recognized by Bengal law. As to the grounds upon which one heir is preferred to another, the following rules may be laid down.

1. Each class of heirs taken before, and excludes the whole of, the succeeding class. "The *sapindas* are allowed to come in before the *sakulyas*, because undivided oblations are considered to be of higher spiritual value than divided ones; and the *sakulyas* are in their turn preferred to the *samanodakas*, because divided oblations are considered to be more valuable than libations of water" (*q*). Principles of precedence.

2. The offering of a cake to any individual constitutes a superior claim to the acceptance of a cake from him, or the participation in cakes offered by him. On this ground the male issue, widow, and daughter's son rank above the ascendants, or the brothers who offer exactly the same number of cakes as the deceased (*r*).

(*m*) 2 W. MacN. 81; *contra*, 3 Dig. 530.

(*n*) *Gobindo v. Woomesh* Suth. Sp. No. 176, overruled by *Guru v. Anand* 5 B. L. R. 15; S. C. 13 Suth. (F. B.) 49.

(*o*) Apararka says that *bandhus* are the sons of the father's sister, mother's sister, and maternal uncle's son, and similar kinsmen. *Sarvadhikari*, 428.

(*p*) *Gridhari v. Bengal Government*, 12 M. L. A. 448; S. C. 1 B. L. R. (P. C.) 44; S. C. 10 Suth. (P. C.) 32; *Amrita v. Lakhinarayan*, 2 B. L. R. (F. B.) 28; S. C. 10 Suth. (F. B.) 76; *Guru v. Anand*, 5 B. L. R. 15; S. C. 13 Suth. (F. B.) 49; *Ratna Subbu v. Ponnappa*, 5 Mad. 69.

(*q*) *Per Mitter, J., Guru v. Anand*, 5 B. L. R. 38; S. C. 13 Suth. (F. B.) 49; approved, *Gobind v. Mohesh*, 15 B. L. R. 47; S. C. 23 Suth. 117; *Degumber v. Moti Lal*, 9 Cal. 563.

(*r*) 3 Dig. 499, 503; *Daya Bhaga*, xi. 1, § 32—40, 43; xi. 2, § 1, 2; xi. 5, § 3.

3. Those who offer oblations to both paternal and maternal ancestors are superior to those who offer only to the paternal. Hence the preference of the whole to the half-blood (*s*).

4. "Those who are competent to offer funeral cakes to the paternal ancestors of the deceased proprietor, are invariably preferred to those who are competent to offer such cakes to his maternal ancestors only; and the reason assigned for the distinction is, that the first kind of cakes are of superior religious efficacy in comparison to the second." And this rule extends so far as to give a preference to one who offers a smaller number of the superior oblations over one who offers a larger number of the inferior sort (*t*).

5. "Similarly, those who offer larger numbers of cakes of a particular description are invariably preferred to those who offer a less number of cakes of the same description; and where the number of such cakes is equal, those that are offered to nearer ancestors are always preferred to those offered to more distant ones."

"The same remarks are equally applicable to the *sakulyas* and *samanodakas*" (*u*).

Cognates not  
postponed to  
Agnates

The result of these rules in Bengal is, that not only do all the *bandhus* come in before any of the *sakulyas* or *samanodakas*, but that the *bandhus* themselves are sifted in and out among the agnates, heirs in the female line frequently taking before very near sapindas in the direct male line, on the principle of superior religious efficacy (*v*). In

(*s*) 3 Dig. 480, 519; Daga Bhaga, xi. 5, § 12.

(*t*) *Per Mitter*, J., 5 B. L. R. 39; *supra* note (*q*); *Gobind v. Mohesh*, 15 B. L. R. 35; S. C. 23 Suth. 117. See this case, *post*, § 537.

(*u*) *Per Mitter*, J., 5 B. L. R. 39; approved, 15 B. L. R. 47; *ante*, note (*q*); *Khettur v. Poorno*, 15 Suth. 482. A person who offers one oblation to the father of the deceased owner is preferred to another who offers two oblations to the grandfather and great-grandfather. Hence the grandnephew ranks before the paternal uncle, and the nephew's daughter's son before the uncle's daughter's son. *Daya Bhaga*, xi. 6, § 5, 6; *Prannath v. Surrut*, 8 Cal. 460.

(*v*) *Daya Bhaga*, xi. 6; D. K. S. i. 10; 3 Dig. 528, 529. See *post*, § 536.

fact, if the test of religious efficacy is once admitted, no other arrangement would be logically possible.

§ 468. When we go a stage back to the Mitakshara, and still more to the actual usage of those districts where Brahmanical influence was less felt, the whole doctrine of religious efficacy seems to disappear. In the chapters which treat of succession, the *Daya Bhaga* and the *Daya-Krahma-Sangraha* appeal to that doctrine at every step, testing the claims of rival heirs by the numbers and nature of their respective offerings. The Mitakshara never once alludes to such a test. No doubt it refers to the distinction between *sapindas* and *samanodakas*, and states that the former succeed before the latter, and that the former offer the funeral cake, while the latter offer libations of water only. But this distinction is stated, not as evidencing different degrees of religious merit, but as marking different degrees of propinquity. The claims of rival heirs are determined by the latter test, not by the former. Persons who confer high religious benefits are postponed to persons who confer hardly any. Persons who confer none whatever are admitted as heirs, for no other reason than that of affinity.

Religious principle not the rule of the Mitakshara.

§ 469. Throughout the Mitakshara Mr. Colebrooke invariably translates the word *sapinda* by the phrase "connected by funeral oblations," and this gives the appearance of a continued reference by the author to religious rites. But there is every reason to suppose that, in using the word *sapinda*, *Vijnanesvara* was thinking of propinquity, and not of religious offerings. In another part of his work, which has not been translated (*w*), where he is commenting on the text of *Yajnavalkya* (i. § 5) which forbids a man to marry his *sapinda*, he defines sapindaship solely as a matter of affinity, without any reference to the capacity to offer

Meaning of 'sapinda.'

(*w*) It will be found in W. & B. 120. It is also referred to by Mr. Justice Mitter, *Amrita v. Lakhinarayan*, 2 B. L. R. (F. B.) 33; S. O. 10 Suth. (F. B.) 76; and by Mr. Justice West *Vijiarangam v. Lakshuman*, 8 Bom. H. C. (O. C. J.) 262, and by *Westropp, C. J.*, in *Lallubhai v. Mankuvarbai*, 2 Bom. 423.

Sapinda denotes  
affinity.

gious oblations, and so as to include cases where no such capacity exists. He says, "*sapinda* relationship arises between two people through their being connected by particles of the one body." Hence he states that a man is the *sapinda* of his paternal and maternal ancestors, and his paternal and maternal uncles and aunts. "So also the wife and the husband, because they together beget one body. In like manner brothers' wives are *sapinda* relations to each other, because they produce one body (the son) with those who have sprung from one body." He then observes that this principle, if carried to its extreme limits, would make the whole world akin, and proceeds to comment on the text of *Yajnavalkya* (x) as follows:—

"On the mother's side, in the mother's line, after the fifth, on the father's side, in the father's line, after the seventh (ancestor), (y) the *sapinda* relationship ceases, and therefore the word *sapinda*, which on account of its etymological import (connected by having in common particles of one body) (z), would apply to all men, is restricted in its signification; and thus the six ascendants, beginning with the father, and the six descendants, beginning with the son, and one's-self (counted) as the seventh (in each case), are *sapinda* relations. In case of a division of the line also, one ought to count up to the seventh (ancestor), including him with whom the division begins (e.g., two collaterals, A. and B., are *sapindas*, if the common ancestor is not further removed from either of them than six degrees), and thus must the counting of the *sapinda* relationship be made in every case" (a).

*Yajnavalkya*, i. § 52, 53, "A man should marry a wife who is not his *sapinda*, one who is further removed from him than five degrees on the side of the mother, and seven degrees on the side of the father."

(y) The narrow signification of *Sapinda* as limited to those who are connected by offerings of the entire cake, and therefore extending only to three degrees on either side of the owner, seems to be unknown to the *Mitakshara*.

(z) *Sapinda* is compounded from *sa* for *samana*, like, equal or the same, and *pinda*, ball or lump. As applied to funeral rites the *pinda* is the ball or lump into which the funeral cake was made up. I am informed by very high Sanskrit authorities that the application of the word *sapinda* in the text is peculiar to *Vijnanesvara*.

(a) It is no doubt in reference to this passage that the *Samskara Mayukha*,

§ 470. It will be remarked that in this passage the author does not notice the distinction between those who offer undivided oblations, and those who offered divided oblations. Nor does he in the corresponding part of his treatise on inheritance (b), where he divides the *Gotraja*, or Gentiles, into two classes only—those connected by funeral oblations of food, extending to seven degrees, and those connected by libations of water, extending to the fourteenth degree, or even further.

Includes  
sakulyas.

Theory of relationship according to the Mitakshara.

From this passage Messrs. West and Bühler draw the conclusions that, “1, *Vijnanesvara* supposes the *sapinda* relationship to be based, not on the presentation of funeral oblations, but on descent from a common ancestor, and, in the case of females, also on marriage with descendants from a common ancestor; 2, That all blood-relations within six degrees, together with the wives of the males amongst them, are *sapinda* relations to each other (c).” And with reference to his definition of *bandhu* (Mitakshara, ii. 5, § 3), they say, “It would seem that *Vijnanesvara* interpreted *Yajnavalkya*’s term *bandhu* as meaning relations, within the sixth degree who belong to a different family;” or at least that all such persons who come under the term *sapinda*, according to the definition given in the *Acharakanda*, are included in the term *bandhu* (d).

§ 471. This preference of consanguinity, or family relationship, to efficacy of religious offerings, is further shown by the rule laid down in the Mitakshara, and the works which follow its authority, according to which the *bandhus*, or relations through a female, never take until the direct male line, down to and including the last *samanodaka*, has been

Agnates exclude  
cognates.

---

in a passage cited in *Lallubhai v. Mankuvarbai*, 2 Bom. 425, says “Hence *Vijnanesvara* and others abandoned the theory of connexion through the rice-ball offering, and accepted the theory of transmission of constituent atoms.”

(b) Mitakshara, ii. 5.

(c) W. & B. 122. See too Dattaka Mimamsa, vi. § 10, 32, where the relation of *sapinda* is said to rest on two grounds, consanguinity and the offering of funeral oblations.

(d) W. & B. 136, 489.



Propinquity,  
not offerings,  
the test of  
heirship.

exhausted (e). A stronger instance than this could not be imagined, since, as has been already shown, many of the *bandhus* are not only *sapindas*, but very close *sapindas*, while the fourteenth from a common ancestor is scarcely a relation at all, and certainly possesses religious efficacy of the most attenuated character. And so, whether the Mitakshara agrees with the Daya Bhaga, or disagrees with it, the reasons offered always show that the governing idea in the author's mind was that propinquity, not religious merit, was the test of heirship. For instance, *Jimuta Vahana* prefers the father to the mother, because he presents two oblations in which the deceased son participates, while the mother presents none (f). *Vijnanesvara* takes exactly the opposite view, on the ground that, "since her propinquity is greatest, it is fit that she should take the estate in the first instance, conformably with the text 'to the nearest sapinda the inheritance next belongs.'" And he goes on to say, "Nor is the claim in virtue of propinquity restricted to *sapindas*, but, on the contrary, it appears from this very text that the rule of propinquity is effectual, without any exception, in the case of *samanodakas*, as well as other relatives, when they appear to have a claim to the succession" (g). So he agrees with *Jimuta Vahana* in preferring the whole blood, among brothers, to the half. But he rests his preference on the same text "to the nearest *sapinda*, &c.," saying, very truly, that "those of the half-blood are

Narada, xiii. § 51; Mitakshara, ii. 5 and 6; Vivada Chintamani, 297—299; V. May., iv. 8, § 22; *Rutheputty v. Rajunder*, 2 M. I. A. 132; *Srimuti Dibeah v. Rany Koond*, 4 M. I. A. 292; S. C. 7 Suth. (P. C.) 44; *Bhyah Ram v. Bhyah Ugur*, 13 M. I. A. 373; S. C. 14 Suth. (P. C.) 1; *Thakoor Jeebnath v. Court of Wards*, 2 I. A. 163; S. C. 23 Suth. 409; *Naraini Kuar v. Chandi Din*, 2 All. 467. See also cases in the N. W. P., cited in the last case, in the Court below, 5 B. L. R. 449; S. C. 14 Suth. 117. Mr. Rajkumar Sarvadhikari, (p. 865,) explains the preference given by the Mitakshara to agnates over cognates, as arising from the principle of religious efficacy, the oblations given by agnate kinsmen being of superior efficacy to those offered by cognate kinsmen. This of course is so, when the offerings of near agnates are contrasted with those of near cognates. It certainly is not so where the offerings of near cognates are contrasted with those of distant agnates, unless some doctrine of religious efficacy is assumed completely different from that elaborated by the Bengal lawyers. Nor is this the principle which determines the preference of agnates to cognates in the Punjab, or among the Jains where the theory of religious efficacy is unknown (§ 475).

(f) Daya Bhaga, xi. 3, § 3.

(g) Mitakshara, ii. 3, § 3, 4.

remote through the difference of mothers ;” while the Daya Bhaga grounds it on the religious principle, that the brother of the whole-blood offers twice as many oblations in which the deceased participates, as the brother of the half-blood (*h*). So the right of a daughter to succeed, is rested by *Jimuta Vahana* upon the funeral oblations which may be hoped for from her son, and the exclusion of widowed, or barren, or sonless daughters, is the natural result (*i*). The Mitakshara follows *Vrihaspati* in basing her claim upon simple consanguinity. “As a son, so does the daughter of a man proceed from his several limbs. How then should any other person take her father’s wealth ?” And he excludes neither the widowed nor the barren daughter, but prefers one to another, according as she is unmarried or married, poor or rich ; that is, according as she has the best natural claim to be provided for (*k*).

§ 472. When we come to the enumeration of *bandhus*, in Mitakshara, ii. 6, it appears pretty clear that they do not depend upon any such principle of community in religious offerings, as is supposed to be laid down in the definition at Mitakshara, ii. 5, § 3 (*l*). It is said, “Cognates are of three kinds ; related to the person himself, to his father, or to his mother, as is declared by the following text :—‘The sons of his own father’s sister, the sons of his own mother’s sister, and the sons of his maternal uncle, must be considered as his own cognate kindred. The sons of his father’s paternal aunt, the sons of his father’s maternal aunt, and the sons of his father’s maternal uncle, must be deemed his father’s cognate kindred. The sons of his mother’s paternal aunt, the sons of his mother’s maternal aunt, and the sons of his mother’s maternal uncles, must be reckoned his mother’s cognate kindred (*m*). Here, by reason of near affinity, the

*Bandhus*.

*Bandhus* do not depend on religious merit.

(*h*) Mitakshara, ii. 4, § 5 ; Daya Bhaga, xi. 5, § 12.

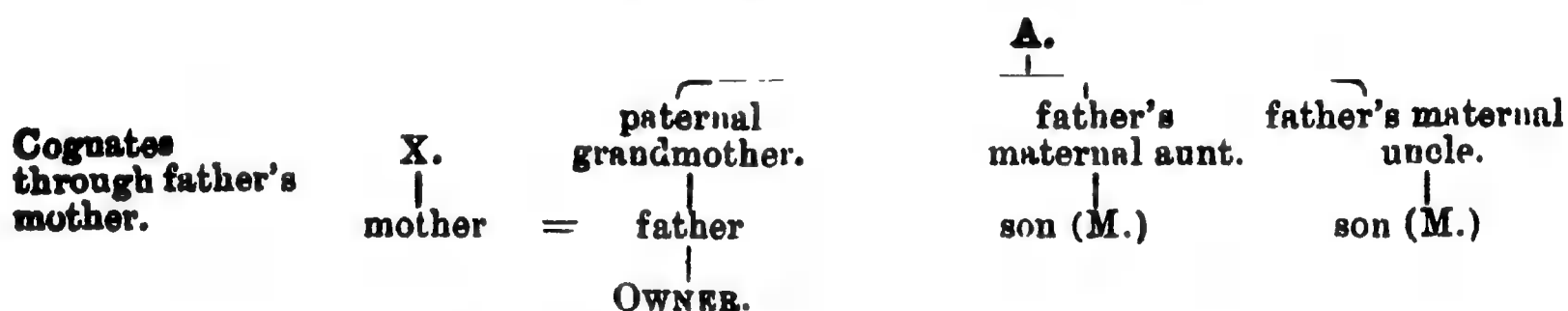
(*i*) Daya Bhaga, xi. 2, § 1—3, 17.

(*k*) Mitakshara, ii. 2, § 2—4 ; Viramit., p. 176, § 1.

(*l*) See *ante*, § 461, 470.

(*m*) This is the correct translation of the text. See 2 W. MacN. 96 ; Smriti Chandrika, xi. 5, § 14 ; *Amrita v. Lakhinarayan*, 2 B. L. R. (F. B.) 87 ; S. C.

cognate kindred of the deceased himself are his successors in the first instance ; on failure of them, his father's cognate kindred, or, if there be none, his mother's cognate kindred. This must be understood to be the order of succession here intended." Now, if we look back to the pedigrees already given (§ 464, 465), we shall find that the sons of the father's sister, and the sons of the father's paternal aunt, come in among the *bandhus ex parte paternâ* of the Bengal scheme, and are indicated by the letter M. So, the sons of his mother's sister, and of his maternal uncle, and of his mother's paternal aunt, come in among the *bandhus ex parte maternâ* and are similarly indicated. The others named by the Mitakshara do not occur in those lists, and are nowhere referred to by any Bengal authority. The accompanying diagrams will show that they could not pos-



sibly be brought within any system which depends on religious merit (*n*). Here it will be seen that the sons of the father's maternal aunt, and of the father's maternal uncle, that is the father's cognate kindred on his mother's side, are only connected with the owner through his paternal grandmother. Now, neither of these persons presents

10 Suth. (F. B.) 76. In Mr. Colebrooke's translation the first clause obviously is incorrectly given.

(*n*) Mr. Rajkumar Sarvadhikari says, in reference to this passage (p. 870) "We at once admit that the father's and the mother's *bandhus*" could not possibly be brought within any system which depends upon religious merits "accruing from parvana rites alone." But they could surely be brought within a system which lays down that "any benefit whatsoever is a sufficient title to inherit." He then points to tables (p. 860) which show that these persons are competent to perform the *ekodishta* or individual rites of the deceased. But so are strangers, such as a pupil, a friend or the king ; that is to say, any one who takes the inheritance is bound, and therefore entitled to perform the personal rites connected with the funeral ceremonies of the deceased, and extending to those held on the anniversary of his death (Raj Sarvadhikari, p. 84). The *bandhus* in question take the inheritance because they are near relations, and having taken it they perform these special rites. But when we come to the Bengal system of succession, which is really founded on the theory of religious benefits, these *bandhus* are excluded. So in Madras the grandson of a paternal

offerings to any one to whom the owner presents them. Their offerings are presented to A. and his ancestors. Those of the owner are presented to his father's line, and to his mother's line, that is, the line of X. (o). Consequently, their offerings are neither shared in by the owner, nor do they operate in discharge of any duty which he is bound to perform. Similarly, the sons of the mother's maternal uncle and aunt, that is the mother's cognate kindred, on

A.

X. = maternal  
grandmother.

Y. = mother.

OWNER.

mother's maternal  
uncle.

son (M.)

mother's maternal  
aunt.

son (M.)

Cognates  
through  
mother's  
mother.

her mother's side, are only connected with the owner through his maternal grandmother. The same observation as before applies to them. Their offerings are presented to A. and his line. Those of the owner are presented to the lines of Y. and X., that is, to his own male ancestors, and those of his mother. Here again there is no conceivable community of religious benefit. On the other hand, when we apply "the reason of near affinity," on which *Vijnanesvara* himself bases the heirship, the whole thing is as simple as possible. The first of the three classes contains the owner's first cousins; the second contains his father's first cousins, and the third contains his mother's first cousins. All of these are postponed to the *samanodakas*, because they are connected through a female, and are therefore members of a different family from that of the owner. But when they are admitted, they are brought in upon natural principles (p.) No other explanation can be required, except by those who persist in distorting the plain meaning of the Mitak-

great-aunt of the deceased inherits to him as a *bandhu*; *Sethurama v. Ponnammal*, 12 Mad. 155, though he would be excluded in Bengal, *ante*, § 464.

(o) This is not only clear on principle (§ 461), but I have ascertained by inquiry from very learned natives both in Bengal and Madras, that a man is under no obligation to present any offerings to his grandmother's ancestors. See too *Jagannatha*, 3 Dig. 602.

(p) The *Viramitrodaya* (p. 200, § 5) distinctly states that the cognates in the above order "by reason of greater propinquity."



shara, in order to find in it something which never was there. The Bombay authorities even go farther than the letter of the Mitakshara, as they include under the term *bandhu* females such as the daughters of a brother or of a sister, who can make no offerings at all (*q*).

Early principles  
of succession.

§ 473. Let us now go a stage further back, and try to find out what was the original law as to religious obligations, and how far it was connected with the right of succession. I have already suggested that the practice of offerings to the dead was connected with that Ancestor worship, which was common to all the leading Aryan races (§ 60). Those offerings would necessarily be made by the direct male descendants of the deceased in the order of their nearness. The character of those offerings, and the strictness of the obligation to make them, would naturally vary according to the remoteness of the offerer from the ancestor. The rule, as we have seen (§ 460), was in accordance with what might have been expected. The devolution of the property would naturally be in exactly the same line, partly because the whole organization of the family would be broken up if its property were allowed to pass through females to persons of a different family or tribe (*r*); and partly because the direct males had a double claim, as being not only the descendants, but the worshippers of the deceased. Collateral relations through females who belonged to a different family, with a different line of ancestors, would be under no obligation to make offerings, and would have no right to inherit. Now this seems to be exactly what is laid down in the early

(*q*) W. & B. 125, 187. See *post*, § 541. I have retained from the first edition (1878) the whole of the reasoning in the preceding paragraphs, which were written at a time when I was not aware that the doctrine which they advocate had been the subject of express decision. The principle that succession under the Mitakshara law depends upon propinquity and not upon religious efficacy has now, however, been settled by distinct rulings. The rule was first laid down in Bombay by the case of *Lallubhai v. Mankuvarbai*, 2 Bom. 388, *affd.* by the P. C. *Lulloobhai v. Cassibai*, 7 I. A. 212; S. O. 5 Bom. 110. The same rule has been applied by the High Court of Bengal to cases in that Presidency governed by the Mitakshara; *Umaid v. Udoi*, 6 Cal. 119; *Ananda Bibee v. Nownit Lal*, 9 Cal. 815, p. 818. See, however, *per Mahmood, J.*, 11 All. p. 212.

(*r*) See Maine, *Ancient Law*, 149; *Punjab Customs*, 11, 16, 25, 37, 48, 51.



treatises. The obligation to offer cakes, divided oblations and libations of water, is set out, and it is also said that the inheritance goes in order to the *sapindas*, *sakulyas*, and *samanodakas*. Immediately after these it passes to strangers, such as the spiritual preceptor, the pupil, learned Brahmans, or the king (*s*). The only person of a different family who is ever stated to be under an obligation to perform funeral rites, or to have a right to inherit, is the daughter's son (*t*). But he is always treated as being in an exceptional position, the reasons for which will be discussed hereafter (§ 518); he does not take as a *bandhu*, which in strictness he is, but very high up in the line of agnates. It would appear then that a man did not inherit because he performed funeral rites, or made religious offerings. He inherited because he was the nearest of kin to the deceased, and he made religious offerings for exactly the same reason. In the majority of cases the heir to the estate would also be a person who was bound to offer the funeral cake. But the mere fact of succession to the estate would carry with it the obligation to perform all rites which were needed for the repose of the deceased, just as it entailed the duty of discharging his debts (*u*). Accordingly, when a pupil is heir, he performs the funeral rites, and it is stated generally, "He who takes the estate shall perform the obsequies" (*v*). Accordingly, Mr. Colebrooke says, "It is not a maxim of the law that he who performs the obsequies is heir, but that he who succeeds to the property must perform them" (*w*). And in a remark appended by him to the case of *Duttnaraen v. Ajeet* (*x*), he says, in reference to the texts just quoted,

Religious duty  
the result, not  
the cause, of  
inheritance.

(*s*) Manu, ix. § 185—189; Apastamba, ii. 14, § 2—5; Baudhayana, i. 5, § 1—8; Gautama, xxviii. § 18; Vasishtha, xvii. § 29—31; Vishnu, xvii. § 4—16; Narada, xiii. § 51. The word *bandhuvas* in the last two authorities is translated by Mr. Colebrooke remoter kinsmen, and appears to refer to persons of the same family.

(*t*) Manu, ix. § 127—133, 139, 140.

(*u*) The due performance of sacrifices was one of the three debts. Manu, v. § 35, 36. Raj. Sarvadhikari, 871.

(*v*) Vrihaspati Smriti, 3 Dig. 545; Vishnu, *ib.* 546; Satatapa, *ib.* 625; Goldstücker, 13; *per curiam*, *Bhyah Ram v. Bhyah Ugur*, 13 M. L. A. 390; S. O. 14 Suth. (P. O. 1; Smriti Chandrika, xi. 5, § 10; note (2); but see *per Mitter*, J., *Guru v. Anand*, 5 B. L. R. 38; S. O. 13 Suth. (F. B.) 49.

(*w*) 2 Stra. H. L. 242.

(*x*) 1 S. D. 20 (26.)

“ These passages do not imply that the mere act of celebrating the funeral rites gives a title to the succession, but that the successor is bound to the due performance of the last rites for the person whose wealth has devolved on him.” This is also the view taken by Dr. Mayr (y). He says, “ The descent of the inheritance was not regulated by the offerings to the dead, as *Gans* supposes. Those offerings, and the whole system of ancestor-worship, date from a period at which the idea of a partition had not arisen. In later times, however, when partition was resorted to, it became necessary to define who should offer the funeral cake, and to whom it should be offered. Naturally this duty fell upon those who took the inheritance (z). In earlier times it would have been impossible to mark out any particular individual, because each succeeding generation stood in the relation of descendant to the whole generation which preceded it, and not any particular person to any other particular person. But when we find in a text of *Manu* that the great-grandson must offer the cake, we may infer that this duty resulted from the fact that he inherited.”

Great-grandson  
the last direct  
heir.

§ 474. The fact that the line of direct descent stopped short at the great-grandson, and then ascended, is generally looked upon as a crucial proof that the Hindu law of inheritance was founded on the principle of religious efficacy. The reason offered for this by the Bengal lawyers is, that those who are more remote in descent present offerings of less religious efficacy. But it seems to me that the matter is capable of a very different explanation. When property no longer passed exclusively by survivorship, the rule of inheritance would naturally be framed upon the analogy of the original system. The right of succession would be limited to the same persons who formerly took by survivorship, but they would take by distinct steps, instead of

(y) *Ind Erbrecht*, 85

(z) See *Goldstücker*, 36 *et seq.*, where he points out that all ceremonies involving expense must be performed by the head of the family, who is in possession of the property.

simultaneously as one body. Now, the persons upon whom the property fell by survivorship were the persons who lived together in the same house, or, at all events, who were so closely connected as to be under the control of one head. It was almost impossible that a single family could ever contain more than four generations in direct descent. If such were in existence, they would probably have quitted the family house. In any case the more remote would be looked upon as less nearly akin to the patriarch than his own brothers, nephews, or grandnephews. These last would be more closely united to him in affection, and more likely to interest themselves in the performance of his obsequies, where such performance was considered a matter of moment. It was natural, therefore, that the inheritance should be kept within the family, first passing to its lower extremity, and then rising again. This is really all that *Manu* says, "For three is the funeral cake ordained. The fourth is the giver. But the fifth has no concern. To the nearest after him in the third degree the inheritance belongs" (a). In the Punjab, where, as I have often remarked, the doctrine of religious efficacy is unknown, the line of direct descent stops short in the same way, and those beyond the third generation from the common ancestor are considered to have no interest in the property which entitles them to object to its alienation (b). That is, they are practically considered to be outside the family. Mr. McLennan has drawn attention to the early Irish law, which appears in a somewhat similar manner to have limited the right of participation in the ancestral property to the fourth generation.

Punjab.

§ 475. I have no information which would enable me to state whether the practice of making offerings to maternal

Succession of cognates.

(a) *Manu*, ix. § 187. Mr. Rajkumar Sarvadhikari (pp. 284, 286) points to this text as marking two conflicting theories of succession, propinquity and religious benefits. To me it seems to contain no reference to any principle but propinquity. Those who offered the funeral cakes were the three nearest to the deceased.

(b) Punjab Cust., 32.

(c) McLennan, 471, 496.

Origin of  
Bengal theory.

ancestors always existed, or whether it was an innovation, springing from the Brahmanical desire to multiply religious ceremonies, and from the principle that "wealth was produced for the sake of solemn sacrifices" (*d*). If it existed as a ceremonial usage, the absence of all reference to it in the law writers shows that it had no legal significance. One thing is quite clear, that it carried with it no right to inheritance, since the persons who presented such offerings could never inherit under the old system of law, until the extinction of the last male in the direct line of descent (§ 471). The Bengal notion of weighing the merits of an offering made by a cognate against an offering made by an agnate, and giving the inheritance accordingly, is an absolute innovation. The theory arose from treating the offering of oblations, and the succession to the estate as cause and effect, instead of antecedent and consequent. The offering of sacrifices to the deceased was really a duty. It grew to be considered the evidence of a right. When this idea became fixed, it was readily applied to all persons who presented such offerings, whatever might be the reason for their presentation. Those principles, which were applied in testing the title of persons who really were heirs, were applied to create a title in persons who were out of the line of heirs. An agnate who presented three cakes to the owner was necessarily nearer than an agnate who only presented one, and was therefore a preferable heir. It came to be assumed that this principle was not limited to agnates, but afforded a means of comparison between agnates and cognates. The application of this principle is the simple distinction between the Mitakshara and the Daya Bhaga. The Mitakshara recognized the difference between the offerings which A. and B. were bound to make to X., but it used the difference in order to ascertain which of the two was nearer to X. in a direct line. The Daya Bhaga considered the directness of

(*d*) Mitakshara, ii. 1, § 14. See *ante*, § 219.

the line as immaterial, if the difference between the offerings was established.

In the Punjab, and among the Sikhs and Jains, the rules of descent appear to be in the main those of the Mitakshara, but the doctrine of religious efficacy is wholly unknown (e).

---

(e) Punjab Cust., 11; *ante*, § 44; Punjab Customary Law, II. 100, 137, 142, 175.



## CHAPTER XVII.

### INHERITANCE.

#### *Principles of Succession in case of Females.*

Early position of women.

§ 476. THE right of women to possess and inherit the family property would necessarily depend upon the organization of the family to which they belonged. Among polyandrous tribes of the promiscuous or Nair type, the head and visible centre of the family was not the father, who was unknown, nor the wife, who had not begun to exist, but the mother (§ 208). The home was the home of the woman and her children. There she was visited by the man who might or might not be the father of her children. His home was in the circle to which his mother belonged. He inherited in one family and his children in another. In Canara, where this system is maintained in its most archaic form, the actual management of the property formerly was, and even now generally is, vested in females. In Malabar the manager is always the eldest male of the family, though succession is traced through females (a). Exactly the reverse would take place in the ordinary undivided family of the Aryan type. The whole property would vest in the males, and be managed by the head of the family for the time being. The woman would be mere dependents upon their husbands and fathers. So long as there were any males in the family, no woman could possibly set up a claim to inherit. It is to this period that the texts must be referred which represent women as absolutely without independent rights. “ Three persons, a

(a) Stra. Man. § 400—404; *Munda Chetty v. Timmaju*, 1 Mad. H. C. 380; *Timmappa v. Mahalinga*, 4 Mad. H. C. 28; *Devu v. Deyi*, 8 Mad. 353; *Mahalinga v. Mariammah*, 12 Mad. 462. See Teulon, 25, where he gives an exactly similar description of the ancient Carians.

wife, a son, and a slave, are declared by law to have no wealth exclusively their own; the wealth which they may earn is regularly acquired for the man to whom they belong" (b). "The father protects a woman in her childhood, the husband during her youth, the son in old age; a woman has no right to independence" (c). *Baudhayana* and *Vasishtha* mention no females in their list of heirs, and the former expressly states, on the authority of a text of the Vedas, that women have no right to inherit (d). The text on which *Baudhayana* relies may, it would appear, be so interpreted as to give no support to his assertion (e); but, of course, this does not detract from the weight to be given to his statement as evidence of the then prevailing usage. His authority is still so far respected, that the schools of Bengal and Benares consider that women can only inherit under some express text (f). In this respect, as it will be seen hereafter, the western lawyers differ (§ 488, 490.)

Women originally without rights.

§ 477. The same causes which led to the break up of the family union would introduce women to the possession of the family property. When partition took place, the fund out of which the women had been maintained would be split into fragments. The natural course would be, either to give an extra share to any member of the family who would make himself responsible for their support, or to allot to them shares out of which they could maintain themselves. This appears to have been what actually took place (g). Similarly, upon the death without issue of a male owner who was the last survivor of the coparcenary, or who had been separated

Growth of their right to property.

(b) *Manu*, viii. § 416.

(c) *Baudhayana*, ii. 2, § 27; *Manu*, ix. § 3. See *Sancha & Lichita*, Dig. 484; and text quoted *Madhaviya*, § 44; *Varada*, p. 39.

(d) *Baudhayana*, i. 5. 11, § 1—14, ii. 2, 3, § 44—46; *Vasishtha*, xvii.

(e) *W. & B.* 126; *Madhaviya*, § 44.

(f) *W. & B.* 126; *Daya Bhaga*, xi. 6, § 11; *Smriti Chandrika*, xi. 5, § 2, 3, 6. *Viramitrodaya*, pp. 174—197; *per Mitter*, J., *Guru v. Anand*, 5 B. L. R., 37; S. C. 13 Suth. (F. B.) 49; *per Westropp*, C. J., *Lallubhai v. Mankuvarbai*, 2 Bom. 418, 428, 438; S. C. on appeal, *Lulloobhoy v. Cassibai*; *per curiam*, 7 I. A. 231; S. C. 5 Bom. 110; *Gauri v. Rukko*, 3 All. 45; *Jagat Narain v. Sheodas*, 5 All. 311; *per curiam*, 9 Cal. 322. V. N. Mandlik, 357, 364. The Madras Court appears in recent decisions rather to doubt the universal application of this rule;—See 5 Mad. p. 249; 8 Mad. pp. 117, 127, 129.

(g) See *ante*, § 436, 447.

Only for maintenance.

from the other members, or whose property had been self-acquired, it would be more natural that his property should remain in the possession of the women of his family for their support, than that they should be handed over with the property to distant members of the family, who might be utter strangers. In this way their right as heirs, properly so called, and not merely as sharers, would arise. But that right would not extend beyond the reason for it, *viz.*, their claim to a personal maintenance. The old preference for the male line over the female (§§ 471, 473) would limit the right, so as to prevent the property passing absolutely out of the family into the hands of male strangers. The woman would not be allowed to become a new stock of descent, so as to transmit the inheritance to her heirs. This is no doubt the foundation of that rule which is assumed in all the works on inheritance, that where a woman inherits to a male, his heirs and not hers take at her death (§ 565).

§ 478. The women who were the actual members of a man's family, and as such entitled to support, would always stand to him in the position of daughter, mother, wife, or sister, taking in under these terms more distant relations of the same class, such as grandmother and the like. The daughter and the mother appear to have been the first to obtain a recognized right to inherit.

Right of daughter.

*Manu* allows a daughter to inherit after her father. But it seems very doubtful whether he did not limit this right to the case of the daughter, specially appointed to raise up a son for him. I have already suggested that a daughter so appointed remained in her father's family, so that her son was his son, and not the son of his actual father (*h*). Naturally such a daughter would be specially favoured, as the descent of property to her would not take it out of the family. Now, the text of *Manu* which states her right of inheritance follows after three texts which relate to the

---

(*h*) See *ante*, § 78; *post*, § 518.

appointed daughter solely. It then proceeds, "The son of a man is even as himself, and as the son such is the daughter (thus appointed). How then (if he have no son) can any inherit his property but a daughter who is closely united with his own soul?" (i). The words in brackets are the gloss of *Kalluka Bhatta*, who evidently understood the text as I do. The same view was taken of it by *Daraiswara*, *Davaswamy*, and *Davarata*, as stated by the *Smriti Chandrika* (k). It is remarkable that in the texts where Manu states the order of succession to a man who has left no issue, he makes no reference to a daughter as an heir (l). The texts would harmonize, if we suppose that in the former passage he was speaking only of a daughter who, by virtue of her special appointment, became his son, as she is stated to be by *Vasishtha* (m). This also accords with the position given to her by *Narada*, who places her after the son, upon the ground that "she continues the lineage. A son and a daughter equally continue the race of their father" (n). This could be strictly true only of an appointed daughter; for the son of any other daughter would be of a different family and a different name, like any other *bandhu*. But when the practice of making an appointed daughter became obsolete (§ 75), the daughter not appointed would naturally fall into the same position, or rather would retain the position which usage had made familiar. Her right would then rest on the simple ground of consanguinity. This is the ground on which it is based by *Vrihaspati* and the *Mitakshara*: "As a son, so does the daughter of a man proceed from his several limbs. How then should any other person take her father's wealth?" (o).

Appointed  
daughter.

479. No distinction is to be found in the earlier sages as to the capacity of one daughter to inherit in preference to another. *Devala* says, "To unmarried daughters a nuptial portion must be given out of the estate of the father;

Grounds of  
precedence  
between  
daughters.

(i) Manu, ix. § 127—130.

(k) Smriti Chandrika, xi. 2, § 16.

(l) Manu, ix. § 185, 217.

(m) Ante, § 73.

(n) Narada, xiii. § 80.

(o) Mitakshara, ii. 2, § 2.

Benares.

Bengal law.

and his own daughter, lawfully begotten, shall take, like a son, the estate of him who leaves no male issue" (p). This suggests the idea that the daughter's right of inheritance arose from the obligation to endow her. Hence *Katyayana* says, "Let the widow succeed to her husband's wealth, and in default of her the daughter inherits, if unmarried or unprovided" (q). *Parasara* enlarges the rule as follows (r). "The unmarried daughter shall take the inheritance of the deceased, who left no male issue, and on failure of her the married daughter." So far, at all events, there is no idea of religious merit. The object of the dowry is to facilitate marriage, and to benefit the daughter (s). Naturally, the daughter who is already set up in the world has a claim inferior to that of one who has her fortune to seek. And similarly, in a competition between married daughters, the preference was given to the poor daughter over the rich one (t). None of the writers of the Benares school, except the *Smriti Chandrika*, absolutely exclude any daughter, or suggest any reason for her inheriting except the simple one of consanguinity (u). The Bengal writers for the first time introduce the idea of religious efficacy. A daughter of course could offer no religious oblations herself, but her right was put upon the ground that she produced sons who could present oblations (v). A reference to *Manu* will show, as might have been expected, that the daughter's son, whose power of offering funeral cakes was considered to be equal to that of a son's son, was the son of the appointed daughter (w). *Jimuta Vahana*, however, laid down that no daughter could inherit unless she had, or was capable of having, male

(p) 3 Dig. 491. See too *Yajñavalkya*, ii. § 135; *Mitakshara*, ii. 1, § 2.

(q) Cited *Smriti Chandrika*, xi. 2, § 20; *Mitakshara*, ii. 2, § 2.

(r) 3 Dig. 490.

(s) See *Vasishtha*, cited *Daya Bhaga*, xi. 2, § 6. Also *Teulon*, 12, note 2, where he points out, that as the degradation of woman consisted in her being a mere object of purchase, so the first step towards her elevation was taken, when the dowry made it no longer necessary that she should be sold.

(t) *Mitakshara*, ii. 2, § 4; *Smriti Chandrika*, xi. 2, § 21; *V. May.*, iv. 8 § 11, 12; *Virāmit*, p. 181.

(u) *Vivada Chintamani*, 291, 292; *V. May.*, iv. 8, § 10; *Madhaviya*, § 36; *Varadrajah*, 34; *Virāmit*, pp. 176—182.

(v) See *per Mitter*, J., *Gunga v. Shumbhoonath*, 22 Suth. 898; *per Jagannatha*, 3 Dig. 194.

(w) *Manu*, ix. § 131—140. See *post*, § 518.



issue, and the natural result was the exclusion of daughters who were widows, or barren, or who appeared to have an incapacity for bringing any but daughters into the world (*x*). This principle is also adopted by the author of the *Smriti Chandrika*, who necessarily excludes barren daughters (*y*). It will be seen that his authority in this respect has not been accepted in Southern India (§ 514). The mode in which these various principles operate will be examined in the next chapter, upon THE ORDER OF SUCCESSION (§ 514).

§ 480. The mother is of course not mentioned as an heir by *Baudhayana*, who excludes all women (*z*), nor by *Apastamba*, *Gautama*, or *Vasishta*; *Narada* states her right to a share on partition by the sons after the death of their father, but does not refer to her as an heir (*a*). Her claim, however, and that of the grandmother, are expressly stated by *Manu* (*b*): “Of a son dying childless (and leaving no widow) the (father and) mother shall take the estate: and the mother also being dead, the paternal (grandfather and) grandmother shall take the heritage (on failure of brothers and nephews).” The gloss of Kulluka as contained in brackets marks the changes in the law since the time of *Manu*. *Vishnu* also inserts the mother in the list of heirs next after the father (*c*), and *Yajnavalkya* places both parents after the daughters (*d*). Her claim is also mentioned by *Vrihaspati* and *Katyayana*, of whom the former places her after wife and male issue, while the latter brings her in after male issue, father or brother (*e*).

Right of  
mother;

As to the ground of her claim, the mother as well as the grandmother and great-grandmother, are certainly sapindas, as sharing with their husbands the cakes which are offered to them by the male issue (*f*). But her claim, and indeed

its origin.

Daya Bhaga, xi. 2, § 1—3; D. K. S. i. 3, § 5.

(*y*) *Smriti Chandrika*, xi. 2, § 10, 21. See *post*, § 514.

(*z*) *Ante*, § 476.

(*a*) *Narada*, xiii. § 12.

(*b*) *Manu*, ix. § 217; cf. § 185, where *Manu* makes the father and then the brothers take.

(*c*) *Vishnu*, xvii. § 7.

(*d*) *Yajnavalkya*, ii. § 136.

(*e*) 3 *Dig.* 502, 506.

(*f*) *Ante*, § 471. Subodhini extends the right of female ascendants to the

that of the father too, is always placed on the ground of consanguinity, and of the merit she possesses in reference to her son, from having conceived and nurtured him in her womb. And by many commentators she is preferred to the father, upon considerations derived from a comparison of the respective degrees in which mother and father share in the composition of the son (*g*), while the Mitakshara prefers her on the ground of greater propinquity (*h*). When we come to *Jimuta Vahana*, however, we find the religious doctrine introduced for the first time. He prefers the father to the mother, because the father offers oblations in which the son participates; and he prefers the mother, who offers none, to the brothers, who offer three, “because she confers benefits on him by the birth of other sons who may offer funeral oblations in which he will participate” (*i*). An argument which obviously would never apply as regards the mother of an only son, or of a son whose brothers had died before him without leaving issue.

#### Right of widow;

§ 481. The growth of a widow's right of succession is much more complicated than that of mother or daughter. Originally of course she shared in the general incapacity for inheritance which affected all women. But her right was recognized later than that of other females who now take after her. Neither *Manu*, *Apastamba*, *Vasishtha* nor *Narada* recognize her right as heir; though they do acknowledge that of the daughter and mother (*k*). *Vishnu*, however, assigns to her a place after male issue (*l*). *Vridhdha Manu*, *Vrihaspati*, *Sancha* and *Lichita* and *Devala* all make her

mother and grandmother of the paternal great-grandfather, and says that the same analogy holds good among the *Samanodakas*. Mitakshara, ii. 5, § 5. Colebrooke's note; *Lullubhai v. Mankuvarbai*, 2 Bom. 433.

(*g*) 3 Dig. 504; Mitakshara, ii. 3; Smriti Chandrika, xi. 3, § 3; Daya Bhaga, xi. 4, § 2; Vivada Chintamani, 293.

(*h*) Mitakshara, ii. 3, § 3; ante, § 471.

(*i*) Daya Bhaga, xi. 4, § 2; D. K. S. i. 6, § 2.

(*k*) See *Manu*, ix. § 185, 212, 217, where Kalluka inserts a gloss in favour of the widow, whose rights are not recognized in the original. See the explanation of Mitakshara, xi. 1, § 35.

(*l*) *Vishnu*, xvii § 4.

heir (*m*). So, of course, does *Yajnavalkya* (*n*), who is followed by his commentator *Vijnanesvara*.

The following account of the manner in which the rights of a widow arose, is taken almost exclusively from Dr. Mayr's dissertation upon the subject (*o*).

§ 482. From the very earliest times the widow was entitled to be maintained by her husband's heirs. When a brother died without issue, or entered a religious order the other brothers were to divide his wealth, except the wife's separate property, and to allow a maintenance to his women for life. But even this maintenance depended upon their living a life of chastity. If they behaved otherwise, it might be resumed (*p*). So *Narada* says (*q*), "when the husband is deceased, his kin are the guardians of his childless widow; in disposing of her, and in the care of her, as well as in her maintenance, they have full power." Even as against the king, when he took by escheat, the widow did not inherit, but he was bound to give a maintenance to the women of such persons (*r*). These passages of *Narada* are of special importance, because, as his work was professedly based upon *Manu*, they show that nothing in *Manu* was then understood as countenancing the right of a widow to inherit.

its origin and growth.

Origin and growth of widow's rights.

§ 483. The next step would naturally be that the amount necessary for the maintenance should be set apart for it, and left at her own disposal. In the case of an escheat the text of *Katyayana* cited above seems to indicate that this was done. And the same course was adopted in case of a parti-

(*m*) 3 Dig. 458, 473, 474, 478; *Katyayana*, *Mitakshara*, ii. 1, § 6.

(*n*) *Yajnavalkya*, ii. 135.

(*o*) Mayr, 179, *et seq.* See too *per curiam*, *Bhau Nanaji v. Sundrabai*, 11 Bom. H. C. 273.

(*p*) *Narada*, xiii. § 25, 26. *Vijnanesvara* explains these texts as applying to the case of a reunited parcener, *Mitakshara*, ii. 1, § 20; but, as Mayr observes, his case had been provided for by the preceding text, § 24.

(*q*) *Narada*, xiii. § 28. See too *Sancha*, 3 Dig. 482.

(*r*) *Narada*, xiii. § 52; *Katyayana*, cited *Mitakshara*, ii. 1, § 27; *Vijnanesvara* remarks upon these passages that the words used for women, "stri" and "yoshit," apply to concubines, which, as Mayr remarks (184), is opposed to innumerable passages.

tion (s). Where the property was very small in amount, the whole would often be handed over to the widow. And so *srikara* and others were of opinion that a widow's right of succession was limited to the case of a small property (t). No such explanation can be given to the texts of *Yajna-vaalkya* and others, which expressly state a woman's right of succession, since they all put her succession on exactly the same footing as that of sons (u). But the view of *Srikara* and those who thought with him, is valuable, from a historical point of view, as showing what the usage was, before the widow's right was firmly established. When it had once become customary to hand over the whole of a small property to a widow, the decision whether a property was sufficiently small would become difficult and invidious. The more wealthy the husband had been, the larger would be the scale of maintenance suitable to his widow, especially when it came to be expected that she should perform her husband's *Shradhs* and discharge the charities to which he had been accustomed (v). Where the relations were themselves adequately provided for, there would often be a strong feeling in favour of leaving the whole property to the widow for her life, and this feeling would naturally exist among all relations of the husband other than the next in succession. They might benefit by the property in the hands of a widow, while they would not do so to the same extent if it fell into the hands of the next male heir.

Influence of  
*niyoga*.

§ 484. The practice of the *niyoga* would also help in the same direction. A passage of *Gautama* (w) is by some translated so as to indicate that a widow was only entitled to succeed if she raised up issue for her husband, in which case her right would be not personal but as guardian for her son. The author of the *Mitakshara* explains the passage, not as making the raising up of issue a condition precedent

---

(s) *Ante*, § 436.

(t) *Mitakshara*, ii. 1, § 81. So among the *Sutlej* chiefs, *Punjab Customs*, 25.

(u) *Mitakshara*, ii. 1, § 36; *Daya Bhaga*, xi. 1, § 6.

(v) *Vrihaspati*, 3 Dig. 458.

(w) *Gautama*, xxviii. § 18, 19. See *Mitakshara*, ii. 1, § 8.



to inheritance, but as offering her an alternative. In either view it is clear that she had the alternative. The male relations would have a strong interest in inducing the widow to refrain from exercising her right, and she would have a specially strong interest in availing herself of it, if she at once became the manager of the property. An obvious compromise would be to allow her to succeed at once to a life-estate in the property, provided she waived the privilege of producing a new and absolute owner. Hence the condition of chastity which the Brahman lawyers engrafted upon her right of succession, a condition which is wholly unsupported by the early texts of the Vedas (*x*).

§ 485. It is impossible now to ascertain when the widow's right of inheritance was first established. *Yajnavalkya* and others already referred to, lay it down absolutely; but the author of the *Mitakshara* (*y*) still thought it necessary to enter into an elaborate discussion of the whole subject, as if it were even in his time an open question. The conclusion he arrives at is, that the widow is entitled to inherit to her husband, if he died separated and not reunited, and leaving no male issue. And this rule is now adopted universally, except where the authority of *Jimuta Vahana* prevails (*z*). The rule seems necessarily to follow from the view taken by the *Mitakshara* of the rights of undivided members. While the husband lived, his wife had only a right to be maintained by him in a suitable manner; after

Widow only  
takes separate  
estate.

Widow is heir  
but not copar-  
cener,

(*x*) Mayr, 181; *ante*, § 88.

(*y*) *Mitakshara*, ii. 1.

(*z*) *Mitakshara*, ii. 1, § 19, 30; ii. 9, § 4; *Smriti Chandrika*, xi. 1, § 24, 25, 53, 54; xii. § 9; *Varadaja*, 34; *Madhaviya*, § 34, 35, says nothing as to division; *Viramit.*, p. 181, ch. iii; *Katama Natchiar v. Rajah of Shivagunga*, 9 M. I. A. 589; S. C. 2 Suth. (P. C.) 31. As to Benares: 2 W. MacN. 21; *Hiranath v. Baboo Ram Narayan*, 9 B. L. R. 274; S. C. 17 Suth. 316; *Chowdhry Chintamun v. Mt. Nowlukho*, 2 I. A. 263; S. C. 24 Suth. 255; *Rup Singh v. Baisni*, 11 I. A. 149; *Mithila, Vivada Chintamani*, 290; *Pudmavati v. Baboo Doolar*, 4 M. I. A. 259, 264; S. C. 7 Suth. (P. O.) 41; *Anundee v. Khedoo*, 14 M. I. A. 416; S. C. 18 Suth. 69. Bombay: V. May., iv. 8, § 6; *Goolab v. Phool*, 1 Bor. 154 [173]; *Govinddas v. Muhelukshumee*, *ib.*, 241 [267]; *Mankoonwur v. Bhugoo*, 2 Bor. 139 [157]; *Gun Joshee v. Sugoona*, 2 Bor. 401 [440]; W. & B. 68. In some cases in the Punjab and among the Jains a widow appears to succeed to her husband's estate, even though undivided. But the general practice seems to follow the *Mitakshara*; *Punjab Customs*, 56; *Sheo Singh v. Mt. Dakho*, 6 N. W. P. 406.



his death, his rights all lapse to his surviving coparceners, and she can have no higher right against them than she had against her husband. The question of heirship for the first time arises in case of a divided member, as it is only in regard to divided property that there can be an heir, properly so called. In other words, the widow can take by succession as heir, but cannot take by survivorship as coparcener (a).

except in  
Bengal.

§ 486. Of course the very foundation of this reasoning fails as regards *Jimuta Vahana*, for he denies the premise, viz., that all the undivided members of the family hold each an unascertained interest in every part of the whole, and that at the death of each that interest passes to the survivors. On the contrary he considers that each has a separate right to an unascertained portion of the aggregate, that is, that each holds as a tenant in common, and not as a joint tenant. That being so, of course, there is no reason to restrain the express words of texts which state the right of a widow to succeed to her husband, by limiting them to the case of a divided member. It is therefore equally settled in Bengal, that a widow succeeds to her husband's share when he is undivided, just as she would to the entire property of one who held as separated (b). But this does not apply in case of the widow of a son who dies before his father, undivided, and leaving no separate property (c); because in Bengal the son is not a co-sharer with his father, and therefore has no interest which can pass to his widow.

She takes self-  
acquired pro-  
perty.

§ 487. Even under the Mitakshara, if a man dies undivided, but leaving property, part of which is his self-acquisition, his widow will succeed to that part, though the rest of his property passes by survivorship to his coparceners.

---

(a) This exclusion of the widow does not take place where the property is that of an ordinary mercantile partnership, and not that of an undivided Hindu family; *Rampershad v. Sheochurn*, 10 M. L. A. 490.

(b) *Daya Bhaga*, xi. 1, § 25, 26, 27; D. K. S. ii. 2, § 41; F. MacN. 5. See cases 1 M. Dig. 316; 3 Dig. 476, 485; per West J., *Lakshman v. Satyabhama-bai*, 2 Bom 508.

(c) F. MacN. 1.

This had been already laid down by the pandits in Bombay, and in a case under the Mithila law, and was finally settled by the Judicial Committee in the Shivagunga case (d). And so where the *status* of division has been established by agreement, but no actual apportionment has taken place, or where part has been apportioned, and not the remainder, in either case the widow inherits as the heir of a divided member, instead of being only entitled to maintenance (e). Partition not completed.

Lastly, a widow will always succeed to the estate of her husband, where that estate does not pass on his death to any other male by survivorship. Therefore, where several daughter's sons take by descent from their maternal grandfather, the widow of each succeeds to her husband, as they take definite, though unascertained shares and not as coparceners with survivorship (f).

§ 488. When the right of a widow was once established, the Hindu lawyers were at no loss for reasons to show that it had always existed. According to *Manu*, upon conception by a wife the husband himself was born again in her, and became one person with her (g). And so *Vrihaspati* says, "Of him whose wife is not deceased, half the body survives. How should another take the property while half the body of the owner lives? (h)." It is obvious that this metaphor has the fault of many other metaphors. It proves too much. If the husband still survives, the sons cannot take. If the widow is looked upon as the continuation of Reasons for widow's succession.

(d) W. & B., 2nd ed., 81, 127; 2 W. MacN. 92; *Katama Natchiar v. Rajah of Shivagunga*, 9 M. I. A. 539; S. C. 2 Suth. (P. C.) 31; *Periasamy v. Periasamy*, 5 I. A. 61; S. C. 1 Mad. 312; followed *Tekait v. Tekaitni*, 5 I. A. 160; S. C. 4 Cal. 190.

(e) *Suraneni v. Suraneni*, 18 M. I. A. 113; S. C. 12 Suth. (P. C.) 40; *Gajapathi v. Gajapathi*, ib., 497; S. C. 6 B. L. R. 202; S. C. 14 Suth. (P. C.) 33; ante, § 454; *Narayan v. Lakshmi*, 3 Mad. H. C. 289; *Patni Mal v. Ray Manohur*, 5 S. D. 349 (410); *Rewun Persad v. Mt. Radha Beeby*, 4 M. I. A. 137, 143, 152; S. C. 7 Suth. (P. C.) 35; *Timmi Reddy v. Achamma*, 2 Mad. H. C. 325.

(f) *Jasoda Koer v. Sheo Pershad*, 17 Cal. 33.

(g) *Manu*, ix. § 8, 45.

(h) 8 Dig. 458. See *Smriti Chandrika*, xi. 1, § 6; *Katama Natchiar v. Rajah of Shivagunga*, 9 M. I. A. 610; S. C. 2 Suth. (P. C.) 31; *Tamburatti Valia v. Vira Rayyan*, 1 Mad. 323.

her husbands' existence, she ought to take even before male issue (*i*). But the widow had also another ground of merit, as offering funeral oblations to her husband. In respect of these *Jimuta Vahana* points out that she was inferior to her sons, as she only performed acts spiritually beneficial to him from the date of her widowhood, while they did so from the date of their birth (*k*). In any point of view it will be seen that the merits of the widow were purely personal, as between herself and her husband. As a mother she has claims on her descendants; but as a widow her claim for anything beyond maintenance is only against her husband. Therefore if her marriage with him has been legally dissolved, or if in consequence of his having become an outcaste, she has exercised the right of abandoning him recognised by Hindu law, her claim to inherit from him is lost (*l*). So also, she can only succeed to his property or rights, that is, to the property which was actually vested in him, either in title or in possession, at the time of his death (*m*). She must take at once at his death, or not at all. No fresh right can accrue to her as widow in consequence of the subsequent death of some one to whom he would have been heir if he had lived. Hence, no claim as heir can be set up on behalf of the widow of a son (*n*), or of a grandson (*o*), or of a daughter's son (*p*), or of a father (*q*), or of a

Only takes husband's property.

Widow is only heir to husband,

(*i*) See *ante*, § 221, where it is suggested that at one time the mother's life-estate may have been interposed before full enjoyment by the sons.

(*k*) 3 Dig. 456, 458; *Daya Bhaga*, xi. 1, § 43.

(*l*) *Sinammal v. Administrator-General*, 8 Mad. 169.

(*m*) *Viramit.*, p. 164. § 13, p. 197, § 2. If his title was vested, though his enjoyment postponed, she will equally take. *Rewun Persad v. Radha Beeby*, 4 M. L. A. 137, 176; S. C. 7 Suth. (P. C.) 85; *Hurrosoondery v. Rajessuree*, 2 Suth. 321.

(*n*) 2 W. MacN. 43, 75, 104; 2 Stra. H. L. 233, 234; *Ayabuttee v. Rajkissen*, 3 S. D. 28 (38); *Rai Sham Bullubh v. Prankishen*, *ib.*, 33 (44); *Himulta v. Mt. Pudo Monee*, 4 S. D. 19 (25); *Monee Mohun v. Dhun Monee*, S. D. of 1853, 910; *Raj Kishore v. Hurrosoondery*, S. D. of 1858, 825; *Ananda Bibee v. Nownit*, 9 Cal. 315; *Bai Amrit v. Bai Manik*, 12 Bom. H. C. 79; Punjab Custom., 64. The claim of a daughter-in-law is supported by Nanda Pandita and by Balam-bhatta, but by no other authorities. Jolly Lect. 199.

(*o*) *Ambawow v. Rutton*, Bom. Sel. Rep. 132.

(*p*) 2 W. MacN. 47.

(*q*) *Vencata v. Venkummal*, 1 Mad. Dec. 210; *Vadrevu v. Wuppuluri*, Mad. Dec. of 1861, 125; *Ram Koonwar v. Ummur*, 1 Bor. 415 [458]; *Bhyrobee v. ...*, 6 S. D. 55 (61).

brother (*r*), or of an uncle (*s*), or of a cousin (*t*). In all of the above cases the contest was between the widow and some other heir, who was held to have a preferential title. In some of the recent cases, however, the widow was excluded under Benares law on the general principle that she did not come within the line of heirs at all (*u*). In the latest case it was held that the Crown would take by escheat in preference to her (*v*). This is undoubtedly the law of Bengal, Benares and Madras (*u*). It is now, however, settled that the law in Bombay is different. The subject is discussed by Messrs. West and Bühler, and their views have been fully adopted by the High Court of Bombay in the case of *Lallubhai v. Mankuvarbai* (*x*). The process of reasoning of the Western lawyers seem to be as follows. They accept the general principle that succession goes in the order of sapindaship, taking the text of *Manu* (ix § 187) with the gloss of *Kulluka*, so that it runs:—"to the nearest *sapinda*, male or female, after him in the third degree, the inheritance next belongs." Then they interpret sapindaship as meaning connection by blood, in the manner explained by *Vijnanesvara* (§ 469), which makes even the wives of brothers be sapinda to each other, because they produce one body with those who have sprung from one body. On the same principle they make the daughter-in-law a sapinda (*y*). Hence "They prefer the sister-in-law to the sister's son, and to a male cousin, and more distant male *sagotra-sapindas*, the paternal uncle's

except in Bombay.

Western India.

(*r*) 2 W. MacN. 78; 2 Stra. H. L. 231; *Yetiraj v. Tayammal*, Mad. Dec. of 1854, 184; *Peddammattu v. Appu Rau*, 2 Mad. H. C. 117; *Jymunee v. Ramjoy*, 8 S. D. 289 (385.)

(*s*) *Upendra v. Thanda*, 3 B. L. R. (A. C. J.) 349; S. C. Sub nomine, *Wopen-dro v. Thanda*, 12 Suth. 263; *Gauri v. Mukko*, 3 All. 45.

(*t*) *Soorendronath v. Mt. Heeramonee*, 12 M. I. A. 81; S. C. 1 B. L. R. (P. C.) 26; S. O. 10 Suth. (P. C.) 35.

(*u*) *Gauri v. Rukko*, 3 All. 45; *Ananda Bibee v. Nownit*, 9 Cal. 315.

(*v*) *Jogdamba Koer v. Secretary of State*, 16 Cal. 367.

(*w*) *Per curiam*, *Lulloobhay v. Cassibai*, 7 I. A. 230; S. C. 5 Bom. 110; *Vithaldas v. Jeshubai*, 4 Bom. 221; *Per West, J.*, 11 Bom. p. 292; *per Muthisami Iyer, J.*, 8 Mad. pp. 119-129.

(*x*) W. & B. 129; 2 Bom. 388; *affd.* 7 I. A. 212; S. O. 5 Bom. 110; following and affirming *Lakshmibai v. Jayram*, 6 Bom. H. C. (A. C. J.) 52; *Vithaldas v. Jeshubai*, 4 Bom. 219.

(*y*) W. & B. 481-486.



widow to the sister, the maternal uncle, and the paternal grandfather's brother, and they allow a daughter-in-law, and a distant gotrajasapinda's widow to inherit." The learned editors remark, "It is however sometimes impossible to bring the authorities which they quote into harmony with their answers (z)." It may be added, that it is equally difficult to bring their answers into harmony with each other. I have given up in despair the attempt to reconcile the futwahs and rulings from Bombay, already cited in this paragraph, with those which will be found below (a). The result of this doctrine is, that "the members of the compact series of heirs specifically enumerated take in the order in which they are enumerated (V. M. iv. 8, § 18) preferably to those lower in the list and to the widows of any relatives, whether near or remote, though where the group of specified heirs has been exhausted the right of the widow is recognised to take her husband's place in competition with the representative of a remoter line (b)." This rule of succession is stated by the Bombay High Court to be deduced, or rather to be deducible, from the Mitakshara, though they admit that the foundation afforded for it by that work is slender, inasmuch as "no widow of a collateral is expressly provided for; the only wife of an ascendant expressly admitted, is one for whom there is an express text." Under the Mayukha, according to Mr. Justice West, such a right "may be called almost shadowy (c)." Yet, curiously enough, in Southern India such a rule admittedly does not exist, while in Western India its acceptation in practice is beyond doubt. It certainly seems to me that this is one of those cases in which usages, which sprung up without any reference to the Sanskrit law books, are now supported by torturing those books so as to draw from them conclusions of which their

---

(z) W. & B., 2nd ed., 181, 195—199.

(a) *Muhalukmee v. Kripashookul*, 2 Bor. 510 [557]; *Jethae v. Mt. Sheo*, ib., 588 [640]; *Bae Umrut v. Bae Koosul*, Morris, 5.

(b) *Nahalchand v. Hemchand*, 9 Bom. 31 at p. 84; *Lallubhai v. Mankuvarbai*, 2 Bom. at p. 445.

(c) *Lallubhai v. Mankuvarbai*, 2 Bom. at p. 447.



authors had no idea (*d*). In the Punjab, on the other hand, Punjab. special family customs exist under which widows are not allowed even to succeed to their husband's estate, or only to a small portion of it (*e*).

§ 489. The relations whom we have been considering Sister. have all had express texts asserting their title as heirs. The widow and mother are also *gotraja sapindas*, both in the meaning of the Mitakshara, as being connected with the deceased owner by affinity, and in the meaning of the Daya Bhaga, as being connected with him by funeral oblations (§ 462). The daughter is a *sapinda*, though not a *gotraja sapinda*, according to the view of *Vijnanesvara*, and although she neither presents nor participates in oblations, she is fitted into the scheme of *Jimuta Vahana* by her capacity for producing a presenter of offerings. The sister stands in a different position from all these. She has no religious efficacy whatever, as she is in no way connected with the funeral offerings to her brother. She is a *sapinda*, as regards affinity, but she is not a *gotraja sapinda*, according to the Benares writers, as she passes into a strange *gotra* immediately upon her marriage. As regards the authority of texts, the matter stands in this way. The sister is stated Text. to take a share, either upon an original partition, or after a reunion (*f*), but this is a different thing from taking as heiress. A passage from *Sancha* and *Lichita* (*g*). "The daughter shall take the female property, and she alone is heir to the wealth of her mother's son who leaves no male issue," would certainly seem to be a direct affirmation of the right of a sister to succeed to her brother. *Jagannatha* explains the latter part of the text as referring to an appointed daughter. The text itself is not cited in any commentary that I am aware of as an authority for her right

Text relating to sister.

(*d*) The Privy Council in affirming the decision in *Lulloobhoy v. Cassibai*, expressly rest the right of the widow "on the ground of positive acceptance and usage," 7 I. A. p. 237; S. C. 5 Bom. 110.

(*e*) Punjab Customs, 25, 48; Punjab Customary Law, II. 142, 237.

(*f*) Manu, ix. § 118, 212; Vrihaspati, 3 Dig. 476; *ante*, § 436; *post*, § 542.

(*g*) 3 Dig. 187.

as an heir, even by the Mayukha, which admits that right. Possibly it may refer to *stridhanum* which had passed from the mother to the son, which, as will be seen hereafter, is sometimes the case (§ 622). *Nanda Pandita*, and *Balam-bhatta*, interpret the text of the Mitakshara which gives the inheritance to *brethren*, as including sisters, so that the brothers take first, and then the sisters (*h*). But this order of succession is opposed to the whole spirit of the Benares law. It is not accepted even by the Mayukha, which makes the sister come in after the grandmother, under a different text (*i*), and the interpretation has been rejected by the Judicial Committee (*k*). It may be taken, therefore, and it appears always to be assumed, that there is no text which in express terms asserts the right of a sister to succeed to her brother. In Bombay, however, her right is now beyond dispute. In Bengal and Benares it seems clear that she has no right at all. In Madras her right has been recently affirmed, by a decision which is certainly opposed to the entire current of authority in Southern India. This will render it necessary to examine the law upon the subject at greater length than the importance of the point would seem to require.

Her right admitted in Bombay.

§ 490. The mode in which the sister's title is made out in Western India, appears to be as follows. She is considered a *sapinda*, as already stated, by virtue of her affinity to her brother (§ 488). She is also considered a *gotraja sapinda*, on the ground that this term is satisfied by her having been born in her brother's family, and that she does not lose her position as a *gotraja* by being born again in her husband's *gotra*, upon her marriage. That being so, her place among the *gotrajas* is determined by nearness of kin, and is settled to be between the grandmother and the

(*h*) Mitakshara, ii. 4, § 1, note. This interpretation is accepted by the Bombay High Court as one ground for admitting a sister to succeed, though they do not follow it to its logical conclusion as fixing her position in the line of heirs. *Kesserbai v. Valab*, 4 Bom. 188, 204.

(*i*) V. May., iv. 8, § 19; *post*, § 541.

(*k*) *Thakoornain v. Mohun*, 11 M. I. A. 386, 402; S. C. 7 Suth. (P. C.) 25.

grandfather (*l*). It is probable that the whole of this reasoning is a mere contrivance to bring a succession, which was established by immemorial usage, into apparent conformity with Sanskrit law. The usage itself is established beyond doubt, and has received the sanction of the Privy Council. And half-sisters succeed as well as sisters of the whole blood, though they come in after whole sisters (*m*). Sisters take equally *inter se*, without any such preference for the unendowed over the endowed, as exists in the case of daughters (*n*).

§ 491. In Bengal it is equally clear, both on principle and authority, that the sister is not an heir. She possesses no spiritual efficacy, and comes under the general text of *Baudhayana* which excludes all females, without being rescued from it by any special text in her favour (*o*). *Jagan-natha* says of her, "It is nowhere seen that sisters inherit the property of their brothers" (*p*). And her exclusion is treated as quite undisputed by both the MacNaghtens and Sir *Thomas Strange* (*q*). There is also a uniform current of decisions to the same effect, extending from 1816 to 1870 (*r*). In one case a *futwah* was given by the Pandits declaring that a sister, though not herself an heir, was entitled to enter upon and hold the estate in trust for a son whom she might afterwards produce, where such a son would be the next heir (*s*). But this decision has been expressly declared not to be law, on the well-established principle that a Hindu estate can never be in abeyance, but must always

Not an heir in  
Bengal.

(*l*) V. May., iv. 8, § 18—20; W. & B. 131, 463; *per West, J.*, *Lallubhai v. Mankuvurbai*, 2 Bom. p. 445; *Westropp, C. J.*, prefers resting her right upon her affinity as *sapinda* even though not a *gotraja*, and upon the express authority of *Vrihaspati* and *Nilakantha*, *ib.* 421.

(*m*) W. & B. 469—470; *Vinayek v. Luxumeebaee*, 1 Bom. H. C. 118; affirmed 2 M. I. A. 516; S. C. 3 Suth. (P. C.) 41; *Sakharam v. Sitabai*, 3 Bom. 353; *Dhondu v. Gangabai*, *ib.*, 369; *Kesserbai v. Valab*, 4 Bom. 188, 198.

(*n*) *Bhagirthibai v. Baya*, 5 Bom. 264.

(*o*) *Daya Bhaga*, xi. 6, § 11.

(*p*) 3 Dig. 517.

(*q*) F. MacN. 4, 7; 1 W. MacN. 35, note; 1 Stra. H. L. 146.

(*r*) 2 W. MacN. 68, 80, 81, 85, 97, 98; *Koonwaree v. Damoodhur*, 7 S. D. 192 (226); *Bamasoondree v. Rajkrishto*, Sev. 742; *Kales Pershad v. Bhoirabee*, 2 Suth. 180; *Anund Chunder v. Teetoram*, 5 Suth. 215; *Rukkini v. Kadarnath*, 5 B. L. R. Appx. 87.

(*s*) *Karuna v. Jai Chandra*, 5 S. D. 46 (50).

vest at once in the person who is, at the time of descent cast, the next heir (*t*).

Nor under  
Benares law.

Sister not re-  
cognized by  
Benares autho-  
rities.

§ 492. As regards the provinces which follow the Mitakshara, both principle and authority seem also to exclude the sister. She is not named in the line of heirs by the Mitakshara or the Viramitrodaya (*u*), nor by the Smriti Chandrika, <sup>41</sup> Madhaviya, the Varadrajah or the Sarasvati Vilasa, none of which even refers to her, except as being entitled to a share upon partition or after reunion. She cannot come in as a *gotraja sapinda* within the meaning of *Vijnanesvara*, because the Hindu law never contemplates a female as remaining unmarried after the period of puberty, and as soon as she does marry, she passes into a different *gotra* (*v*). Nor is there any text in her favour, which is as much required by the Benares school as by that of Bengal (§ 476). I have already noticed the construction of the text of the Mitakshara, which would bring in the sister as included in the term brethren. This has not been approved of by the writers of any school (§ 489). *Nanda Pandita* also proposes to bring in the sister on another principle as being the daughter of the father (*w*). The reasoning would be, a man's own daughter succeeds, as bringing forth the daughter's son. It is now settled that the sister's son—that is, the son of the father's daughter—also succeeds (§ 531). Therefore the father's daughter herself should succeed as bringing him forth. The answer would be, that a man's own daughter succeeds, both because she is his own offspring, and because she produces a son who is of such importance to him, that he is the next male who takes after his own issue. Neither ground would apply to a sister. Not the first of course; nor the second, because, although the sister's son is an heir, he only comes in under the Mitakshara as a *bandhu* after the

(*t*) *Kesub Chunder v. Bishnopersaud*, S. D. of 1860, ii. 340; *ante*, § 458.

(*u*) Mitakshara, ii. 5, § 5, note.

(*v*) Daya Bhaga, xi. 2, § 6; W. & B. 129. See too Daya Bhaga, xi. 6, § 10, where Jimuta Vabana says that Yajnavalkya uses the term *Gotraja* to exclude females related as *sapindas*, and Smriti Chandrika, xi, *Lallubhai v. Mankuvarbai*, 2 Bom. 438.

(*w*) Mitakshara, ii. 5, § 5, note.



last of the *samanodakas*. Further, the fact that the sister's son is an heir does not involve any assumption that his mother must have been an heir also. He takes by his own independent merit, not through her (*x*). Accordingly we find that the son of an uncle's daughter is an heir to the nephew, though the uncle's daughter is not an heir (*y*); the son of a brother's daughter is, but the brother's daughter is not, an heir (*z*); the son of a nephew's daughter is, but the nephew's daughter is not, an heir (*a*).

§ 493. The weight of authority seems also to be against the sister's claim. The opinions of both the MacNaghtens, of Mr. Colebrooke, Mr. Sutherland, and Sir *Thomas Strange*, were opposed to her claim; and a futwah by a Madras Pandit to the same effect is cited by the latter author (*b*). In 1858 a case came before the Madras Sudder Court, in which a sister claimed as heir to her brother, relying on the texts of *Manu* and the authority of *Nanda Pandita* and *Balambhatta*. The Court said, "The Judges of the Sudder Udalt, while admitting that the arguments of the special appellant have much force, and that the texts relative to division after reunion show that under such circumstances a sister has a right of inheritance, from which a presumption might perhaps be drawn that the spirit of the law may possibly not have originally contemplated the exclusion which now prevails, are of opinion that the law is not only too ill defined to admit of such construction, in opposition to existing usage, but must even, if speaking more clearly, be regarded as obsolete and virtually changed, and modified by practice prevailing beyond memory, and acquiesced in by all parties concerned" (*c*). The same claim was set

Adverse  
decisions.

(*x*) See *per Holloway, J., Chelikani v. Suraneni*, 5 Mad. H. C. 288.

(*y*) *Guru v. Anand*, 5 B. L. R. 15; S. C. 18 Suth. (F. B.) 49; *Gosaien v. Mt. Kishenmunnee*, 6 S. D. 77 (90).

(*z*) *Gobind v. Mohesh*, 15 B. L. R. 35; S. C. 23 Suth. 117; *Jogmurut v. Sestulpersaud*, Sev. 433.

(*a*) *Kashee Mohun v. Rajgobind*, 24 Suth. 229; *Radha Pearee v. Doorgu Monee*, 5 Suth. 131.

(*b*) 1 Stra. H. L. 146; 2 Stra. H. L. 243—246; F. MacN. 4, 7; 1 W. MacN. 85, n. See *per Holloway, J., Chelikani v. Suraneni*, 5 Mad. H. C. 288.

(*c*) *Ohinnasamien v. Koottoor*, Mad. Dec. of 1858, 175.



up, with the same arguments and the same result, before the High Court of Bengal in 1863, in a case governed by Mitakshara law. The Court, after referring to *Manu*, ix., § 187, 217, Mitakshara, ii., 4 and 5, 1 Stra. H. L. 146; 1 W. MacN. 35, and a Bengal case, proceed to say, "On the whole, then, we are clearly of opinion that the Vayavastha of the Pandit cannot be set up successfully against the text of the Mitakshara, or the general principles of Hindu law, which exclude sisters, or against the marked omission from our precedents of any decision in favour of such a claim, for more than sixty years" (*d*). This opinion was reiterated by the Bengal High Court after a fresh discussion of the authorities in 1882 (*e*). The same decision was given in 1880 by the Allahabad High Court, also in a case under Mitakshara law, the Court referring to a previous ruling which laid down that according to Mitakshara law none but females expressly named can inherit (*f*).

#### Sister's right

In the Punjab, among the Sikh Jats, the sister is also excluded by long-established and recorded usage, which was affirmed by express decision in 1870 (*g*).

The title of a sister was raised for the first time on appeal to the Privy Council in a case from the North-West Provinces in 1871, but the Judicial Committee refused to enter upon the question (*h*); it was also referred to, but without any expression of opinion, by the Committee in 1876 (*i*).

#### recently admitted in Madras.

§ 494. On the other hand, a sister was for the first time decided to be an heir to her brother in a recent case in the Madras High Court (*k*). Property had devolved on a son, upon whose death it was taken by his mother. She alienated portions of it to strangers, and then died. The

(*d*) *Guman v. Srikanth*, Sev. 460. (*e*) *Jullestur v. Uggur Roy*, 9 Cal. 725.

(*f*) *Jagat Narain v. Sheodas*, 5 All. 311.

(*g*) Punjab Custom, 17.

(*h*) *Koor Goolab v. Rao Kurun*, 14 M. I. A. 176; S. C. 10 B. L. R. 19.

(*i*) *Vellanki v. Venkata Rama*, 4 I. A. 1, 8; S. C. 1 Mad. 174; S. C. 26 Suth. 21.

(*k*) *Kutti Ammal v. Radakristna*, 8 Mad. H. C. 88.

plaintiff, who was one of three sisters, sued to set aside the alienations. These were admittedly invalid beyond the life of the mother. The only question, therefore, was, whether the sister had any title which would support her suit. The Court held that she had. They first declared that she was not a *sapinda*, setting aside the construction put upon the word "brethren" by *Balambhatta*. They then proceeded to say, "Whether the sister is entitled to succeed as a relative of deceased more remote than a *sapinda* is another question. Since the decision of the Judicial Committee in *Gridhari v. The Government of Bengal* (l), the High Court of Madras, following that decision, and the decision of the High Court of Bengal in *Amrita v. Lakhinarayan* (m), of which the Judicial Committee approved, have held (n) that a sister's son is entitled to succeed as a *bandhu*, and that the text and commentary in chap. ii., § 6, of the *Mitakshara* do not restrict the limit of *Bandhus* to the cognate kindred there mentioned, but are to be read as merely offering illustrations of the degree of *Bandhus* in their order of succession. In § 3 of chap. ii. of the *Mitakshara*, § 4, it is said, "Nor is the claim in virtue of propinquity restricted to kinsmen allied by funeral oblations, but on the contrary, it appears from this very text (o) that the rule of propinquity is effectual without any exception in the case of (*samanodakas*) kindred connected by oblations of water, as well as other relations, where they appear to have a claim on the succession." And it is afterwards said in § 7, "If there be no relatives of the deceased, the preceptor, &c., according to the text of *Apastamba*, 'If there be no male issue, the nearest kinsman inherits, or in default of kindred, the preceptor.'" It follows from the above, not only that, in regard to cognates, is there no intention expressed in the law or to be inferred from it, of limiting the right of inheritance to certain specified relationships of that nature, but that, in

Madras High Court decision.

(l) 12 M. I. A. 448; S. C. 1 B. L. R. (P. C.) 44; S. C. 10 Suth. (P. C.) 32.

(m) 2 B. L. R. (F. B.); 28; S. C. 10 Suth (F. B.) 76.

(n) *Chelikani v. Suraneni*, 6 Mad. H. C. 278.

(o) *Manu*, ix. § 187.

regard to other relationships also, there is free admission in the order of succession, prescribed by law for the several classes; and that all relatives, however remote, must be exhausted, before the estate can fall to persons who have no connection with the family. In this view plaintiff must be regarded as a relative entitled to succeed on an equal footing with her sisters, who are relatives of the same degree."

Madras decision  
discussed.

§ 495. This decision will, of course, settle the law in Madras unless reversed. But as it will not be a binding authority upon Mitakshara law in other parts of India, it may be as well to examine its reasoning more closely. The three cases quoted have, of course, no application. They merely decide that male relations, who come within the definition of a bandhu in the Mitakshara (*p*) are not excluded from the mere fact that they are not specifically enumerated in the next section. But if that definition means, as those cases held that it did mean, a person connected by funeral oblations with the deceased, then a sister does not come within the definition, not being "connected by funeral oblations" (*q*). It is also to be remarked that the enumeration in Mitakshara, ii. 6, though not exhaustive as to the individuals, includes none but males, and is, therefore, strong evidence that none but males were supposed capable of satisfying the definition. And the cases cited show that none but

(*p*) Mitakshara, ii. 5, § 3.

(*q*) According to the *Dharma Sindhu Sara* of Kasinatha, a work of the highest authority in the Benares School, among the persons who are competent to perform the funeral rites to a deceased kinsman it is stated that, "on failure of the daughter, and the nephew, the father, the mother, the daughter-in-law and the sister claim the right in succession. In case there are both uterine and stepsisters, the same rules apply to them as to uterine and stepbrothers. On failure of sisters their sons are entitled to this right." Raj. Sarvadhikari, 111. This right to perform ceremonies certainly does not carry with it any right under Benares law to inherit. See as to a daughter-in-law, *ante*, § 488 and as to a sister, *ante*, § 493. Mr. Rajkumar Sarvadhikari, after pointing out that the views of Balambhatta and Nanda Pandita in favour of a sister have met with no acceptance, says (p. 665), "According to the doctrines of the Benares School, then, the married and unmarried daughters of *gotraja-sapindas* are not entitled to inherit." The funeral rites which these females are competent to perform are only the *ekoddishtha* or funeral ceremonies of the individual, ending with the first year's anniversary rites. They are not competent to perform the *parvana* rites, which are the most important of all, and upon the punctual observance of which the peace of the disembodied spirit depends (Raj. Sarvadhikari, 860, 84, 74.)

males could satisfy the definition, as there understood. The judgment, however, goes on to cite two texts as showing (apparently) that other relatives who are neither *gentiles* nor *bandhus* may inherit by virtue of mere propinquity. In the first passage (r), *Vijnanesvara* is weighing the comparative merits of the father and the mother, both of whom are gotraja sapindas. He decides in favour of the latter on the ground of propinquity, and proceeds, in the text cited by the High Court, to remark that this principle of propinquity applies not only to *sapindas*, but to *samanodakas*, "as well as other relatives, when they appear to have a claim to the succession." That is to say, given a rivalry between two persons, both entitled to inherit, the one who is nearest in blood shall take. The text does not attempt to lay down who have a claim to succession. On the contrary, it seems to assume that there may be relatives who would not "appear to have a claim to the succession." It does not define the class of heirs—that, as will be shown immediately, had been done already—but lays down a rule by which one member of the class is to be preferred to another. The word which is translated by Mr. Colebrooke "as well as other relatives," is simply *adi* appended to *samanodakas*, and means the like, or *et cetera* (s). It would be contrary to the ordinary principles of construction to interpret such a word as introducing a completely different genus. The next text proves exactly the opposite of what it is cited for by the High Court. To understand it we must go back a little. The first seven sections of the *Mitakshara*, cap. ii., are merely a commentary on the text of *Yajnavalkya* (t), "The wife, and the daughters also, both parents, brothers likewise and their sons, gentiles, *cognates* (u), a pupil and a fellow-student; on failure of the first among these, the next in order is indeed heir to the estate of one who departed for heaven, leaving no male issue. This rule extends to all

Madras decision discussed.

(r) *Mitakshara*, ii. 3, § 3, 4.

(s) See as to the use of this *adi*, Burnell's Preface to *Varadraja*.

(t) *Yajnavalkya*, ii. § 185; cited *Mitakshara*, ii. 1, § 2.

(u) *Baudhu*, see Goldstücker, 26.



(persons and) classes.” This text recognizes no relatives coming after nephews who are not either gentiles (*gotraja*) or *bandhus*. Sections 1—4 treat of relations up to and including nephews. Section 5, § 1 defines *gotraja*, and § 8 defines *bandhus*. The remainder of section 5 illustrates the succession of gentiles or *gotrajas*. Section 6 illustrates the succession of *bandhus*. It is now settled that these illustrations are not exhaustive, but that any one who comes within the definition may inherit (§ 471). Then comes § 7, which treats of the succession of those who are not relatives at all. It commences, “If there be no relations of the deceased, the preceptor, or on failure of him the pupil, inherits, by the text of *Apastamba*. ‘If there be no male issue, the nearest kinsman inherits, or in default of kindred the preceptor, or, failing him, the disciple.’” The Court infers from this “that in regard to other relationships also” (meaning, apparently, relationships which do not come under the head of cognates) “there is free admittance to the inheritance in the order of succession prescribed by law for the several classes, and that all relatives, however remote, must be exhausted before the estate can fall to persons who have no connection with the family.” That is to say, the Court seems to think that the words, “If there be no relations of the deceased,” let in a new class of relations, who are neither gentiles nor cognates, but who are connected with the deceased by propinquity. It would be rather remarkable if a section which is devoted to strangers should have this effect, and should, by a side wind as it were, bring in an entirely new set of heirs, who are not defined, and of whose very existence there is no previous hint. But the fact is that the word which Mr. Colebrooke has translated “relations” is *bandhu* (v). This makes everything consistent. Section 5 treats of *gotrajas*. Section 6 treats of *bandhus*. Section 7 of those who come in when there are no *bandhu*. There is no third class of persons who, being neither *gotraja* nor *bandhu*, are still relations. In the passage of *Apastamba*,

(v) Goldstücker, 26 ; *per curiam*, 16 Cal. p. 879.



the word translated kinsman and kindred is *sapinda* (w). *Apastamba* does not appear to recognize *bandhus* at all.

§ 496. It certainly seems to me, with the greatest possible respect for the learned Judges of the Madras High Court, that their decision cannot be supported upon the grounds upon which they have put it. Whenever the question arises again, it will probably be found that the claim of the sister can only be made out, either upon the principle on which she is let in by *Nilakantha* and his followers, that is as a *sapinda*, or by excluding from the definition of *bandhu* all reference to funeral oblations, and taking it simply as denoting persons connected by affinity (§ 469). The former position has been denied to her by the Judicial Committee, and by the Madras High Court (x). Whatever may have been the original meaning of the text of *Manu* (ix. § 187), "To the nearest *sapinda* the inheritance belongs," the text must now be read with that of *Yajnaralkya*, and the commentary of the *Mitakshara*, which show that *sapinda*, as opposed to *bandhu*, means one of the same family, and not a person removed from it by marriage (§ 492). On the other hand, if the idea of funeral offerings is excluded from the definition of a *bandhu*, a sister would certainly come within it. But then we should have to consider the whole framework of the *Mitakshara*, as understood and acted upon in Southern India (y) which recognizes no females who are not denoted by special texts. To admit a sister as an heir at this time of day appears to be the very course, to which their Lordships of the Judicial Committee say they have "an insuperable objection," viz., "by a decision founded on a new construction of the words of the *Mitak-*

Heirship of  
sister consi-  
dered.

(w) *Apastamba*, ii. 14, § 2.

(x) *Thakoorain v. Mohun*, 11 M. I. A. 402; S. C. 7 Suth. (P. C.) 25; *Kutti-ammal v. Radakristna*, 8 Mad. H. C. 92.

(y) These qualifying words are added with reference to the view taken of the literal language of the *Mitakshara* by the High Court of Bombay in *Lallubhai v. Mankuvarbai*, 2 Bom. 388; ante, § 488. The Judges seems to admit that their interpretation of the *Mitakshara* is either not accepted in Madras, or is over-ruled by the countervailing authority of the *Smriti Chandrika*; supra, 2 Bom at pp. 318, 338; 2 I. A. 280.

shara, to run counter to that which appears to them to be the current of modern authority'' (2).

Later Madras  
decision.

§ 497. The case of *Kutti Ammal v. Radakrishna*, as well as the above observations upon it, were very fully considered by the Madras High Court in a later case (a), where a conflict arose between a sister and a sister's son, each claiming as heir to the deceased. It was not necessary to decide whether a sister could be heir to her brother, since, assuming that she could be, the Court was of opinion that the male claimant was a preferential heir. Had it been necessary to decide the point, the Court intimated that the criticism in the previous sections would have induced them to remit the point for decision to a Full Bench. They, however, suggested that the decision was right, on the ground that the term *bhinnagotra sapinda* as used by Vijnanesvara meant no more than a person connected by consanguinity, but belonging to a different family, either by birth or by marriage. They seemed disposed to doubt whether the Mitakshara had accepted the doctrine that females could only inherit under an express text, and they appeared to accept the authority of Sancha and Lichita as supplying such a text if one were necessary. Such a view is, of course, thoroughly intelligible and arguable, and is probably the line that would be followed with most chance of success if the case came before the final Court of Appeal. The principle so laid down has been followed by the Madras Court in later cases, while they have held that a father's sister, and a son's daughter, were within the line of possible heirs under the Mitakshara, although they would be postponed to male heirs more remotely connected with the deceased owner (b). It would be urged in reply with much force, that every other Court which professes to administer the Mitakshara law has come to a different con-

(2) *Supra*, 11 M. I. A. 408; *Koor Goolab v. Rao Kurun*, 14 M. I. A. 196; S. C. 10 B. L. R. 1; *Chotay v. Chunno*, 6 I. A. 82; S. C. 4 Cal. 744.

(a) *Lakshmanammal v. Tiruvengada Mudali*, 5 Mad. 241.

(b) *Narasimma v. Mangammal*, 13 Mad. 10; *Nallanna v. Pounal*, 14 Mad. 149.

clusion. That the Madras decisions are opposed to usage and authority in that Presidency, and that in Bombay, where a sister's right is undoubted, it is rested, not upon any conclusions derivable from the Mitakshara, but upon long custom and the express authority of the Mayukha.

Even in Madras a step-sister is not an heir (c).

---

(c) *Kumara Velu v. Virana*, 5 Mad. 29.

## CHAPTER XVIII.

### INHERITANCE.

#### *Order of Succession.*

§ 498. WE now proceed to examine the order of succession under Hindu law, always remembering that it only applies to estates held in severalty, unless in cases governed by Bengal law, where quasi-severalty is the normal condition of each sharer (§ 457). Each of the successive classes takes in default of the preceding. If the estate has once vested in any male he becomes a fresh stock, and on his death the descent is governed by the law of survivorship or of inheritance, according as he has left undivided coparceners or not. Where the estate has vested in a female, or in any number of females in succession to each other, on the death of the last descent is again traced from the last male holder, unless in certain cases under Bombay law, hereafter discussed (§ 565).

#### Issue

ISSUE.—If a man has become divided from his sons, and subsequently has one or more sons born, he or they take his property exclusively (§ 431). If he is undivided from them, his property passes to the whole of his male issue, which term includes his legitimate sons, grandsons, and great-grandsons (a). All of these take at once as a single heir, either directly or by way of representation. Suppose, for instance, a man has had three sons, and dies leaving his

---

(a) Baudhayana, i. 5, 11, § 9; Manu, ix. § 137, 138; Mitakshara, i. 1, § 8, ii. 8, § 1; Apararka cited Sarvadhikari, 649, 9 Cal. 320; Daya Bhaga, iii. 1, § 18, xi. 1, § 81—84; V. May., iv. 4, § 20—22; Viramit., p. 154, § 11; Vivada Chintamani, 295; *per curiam*, *Rutheputty v. Rajunder*, 2 M. I. A. 156; *Bhyah Ram v. Bhyah Ugur*, 15 M. I. A. 378; S. O. 14 Suth. (P. O.) 1.

eldest son A., and B. the son of A.; two grandsons, C.<sup>1</sup> and C.<sup>2</sup>, by his second son, and three great-grandsons, D.<sup>1</sup>, D.<sup>2</sup>, and D.<sup>3</sup>, by his third son; A. takes for himself and B., C.<sup>1</sup> and C.<sup>2</sup> take for themselves, and D.<sup>1</sup>, D.<sup>2</sup>, and D.<sup>3</sup> take for themselves, and these three lines all take at once, and not in succession to each other. The mode in which they take *inter se*, and the nature of the interests which they take, have been discussed already (b). This seems to be an exception to the general rule, that among heirs of different degrees, the nearer always excludes the more remote (c). It really is no exception. It is merely an illustration of the rule that property, which is held as separate is one generation, always becomes joint in the next generation (§ 244). If it is held by a father who is himself the head of a coparcenary, it passes at his death to the whole coparcenary, and not to any single member of it, all of them having under the Mitakshara equal rights by birth. The Daya Bhaga puts forward the same view from its religious aspect. According to it, the son, grandson, and great-grandson, all present religious offerings to the deceased, and all with equal efficacy. There is, therefore, no reason why one should be preferred to the other. But as the grandson presents no offerings while his own father is alive, B. does not take directly, but C. and D. do (d). take simul-  
taneously.

§ 499. Property which is in its nature impartible, as a Raj or ancient Zemindary, can, of course, only descend to one of the issue; which that one is to be will depend upon the custom of the family (§ 51). In general, such estates descend by the law of primogeniture (e). In that case the eldest son is the son who was born first, not the first-born son of a senior, or even of the first married, wife (f). Right of issue.

(b) See *ante* § 422.

(c) *Khetur v. Poorno*, 15 Suth. 482.

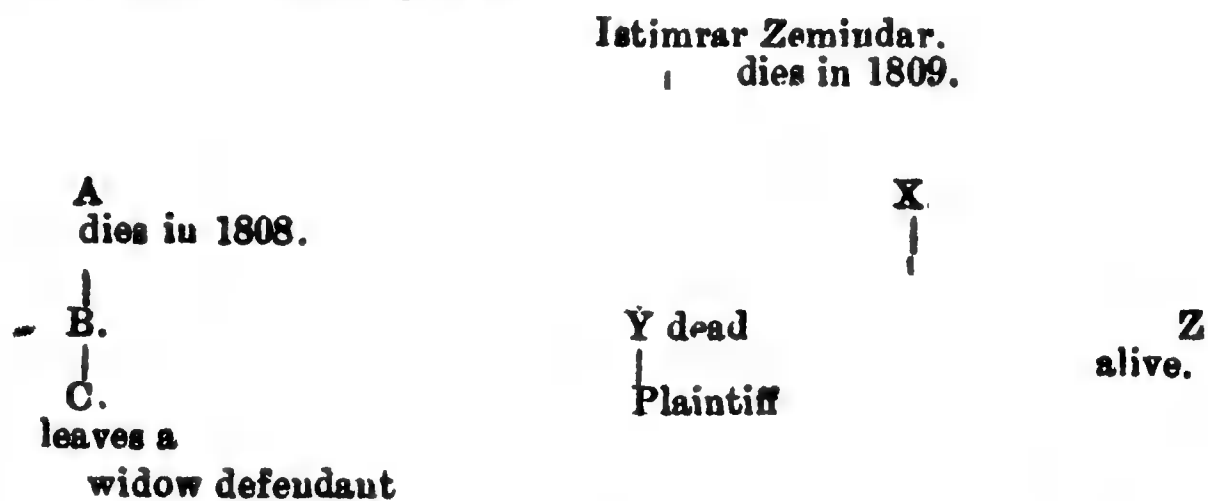
(d) *Daya Bhaga*, iii. 1, § 18, 19.

(e) This presumption of course may be displaced by evidence showing that some other rule prevailed such as selection of the successor. *Ishri Singh v. Baldeo Singh*, 11 I. A. 135. See also *Achal Ram v. Udai Pertab*, post § 501.

(f) *Manu*, ix. § 125, 126; *Rughonath v. Hurrehur*, 7 S. D. 126 (146); *Bhujangrav v. Malojirav*, 5 Bom. H. C. (A. C. J.) 161; *Ramalakshmi v. Sivanan-*



**Primogeniture.** So long as the line of the eldest son continued in possession, the estate would pass in that line (g). That is to say, on the death of an eldest son, leaving sons, it would pass to his eldest son and not his brother. But there is a singular want of authority as to the rule to be adopted where an eldest son, who has never taken the estate, has died, leaving younger brothers, and also sons. The point has been twice argued very lately before the Privy Council, but in neither case was it necessary to decide the question. The only cases that I am aware of in which the point was actually decided, were in Madras. The earlier cases arose in the same family, as will appear from the following pedigree. It only shows so much of the relationship as will render the litigation intelligible.



Here it will be seen that at the death of the Zemindar he left a grandson, B., by an elder son, and a younger son X. The latter got possession of the Zemindary, but B. brought a suit against him, and ultimately recovered possession. There were circumstances in the case which might have justified the decree on other grounds, but on the whole it must be taken that the Provincial Court, which tried the case, went on the broad principle that the son of a predeceased elder son was entitled to the Zemindary in preference to a surviving younger son. No appeal was preferred against the decree. The estate then passed to C., at whose death it was claimed by the plaintiff, as son of Y., the

*tha*, 14 M. I. A. 570; S. C. 12 B. L. R. 396; S. C. 17 Suth. 553; *Pedda Rammappa v. Bangari*, 8 I. A. 1; S. C. 2 Mud. 286. See as to the old law, *ante*, § 87.

(g) See pedigree in *Yenumula v. Ramandora*, 6 Mad. H. C. 93; *Naraganti v. Venkatachelapati*, 4 Mud. 250.

deceased elder brother of Z. The original Court held, amongst other grounds for dismissing the claim, that Z. was a nearer heir than the plaintiff. This decision was reversed by the Madras High Court, which held that by the ordinary law of primogeniture, applicable to impartible estates, the plaintiff represented the eldest line. It will be seen that there was an important distinction between the two disputed successions. In the first case B. was the grandson of the last male holder, and therefore, in an ordinary case of succession, would have as good a claim as his uncle X.; a son and a grandson being considered equally near, and equally efficacious (§ 498). But in the second case the plaintiff and Z. were cousins, and in an ordinary case of collateral succession the nearer takes before the more remote, as for instance, a brother before a nephew (§ 525, 526). This was the view submitted to the Judicial Committee. On the other hand it was argued that the property, though impartible, was still joint family property, and therefore passed by survivorship, in which case Y. was the heir expectant during his life, and at his death his rights passed on to the plaintiff who represented him. The Judicial Committee, however, found that there had been a partition of the whole property during the life of B., under which he took the Zemindary as separate estate. Consequently, the widow of C. was the heir, and it was unnecessary to decide between the claims of the plaintiff and Z (h). Upon principle it would seem, that at the death of each holder the estate would go to the eldest member of the class of persons who, at that time, were his nearest heirs. If so, Z. was certainly nearer to C. than the plaintiff. This seems to have been the ground of the decision of the Judicial Committee, in a case relating to the Tipperah Raj, where

---

(h) *Runganayakamma v. Ramaya*, P. C. 5th July 1879. In the case of *Periasami v. Periasami*, 5 I. A. 61; S. C. 1 Mad. 312, the same point was argued but not decided. There the converse question arose. The Zemindary had been awarded to a person standing in the same position as Z., and the widow, who was defendant, urged that the real heir was a person who stood in the same position as the plaintiff, and whose rights had not been noticed by the High Court.

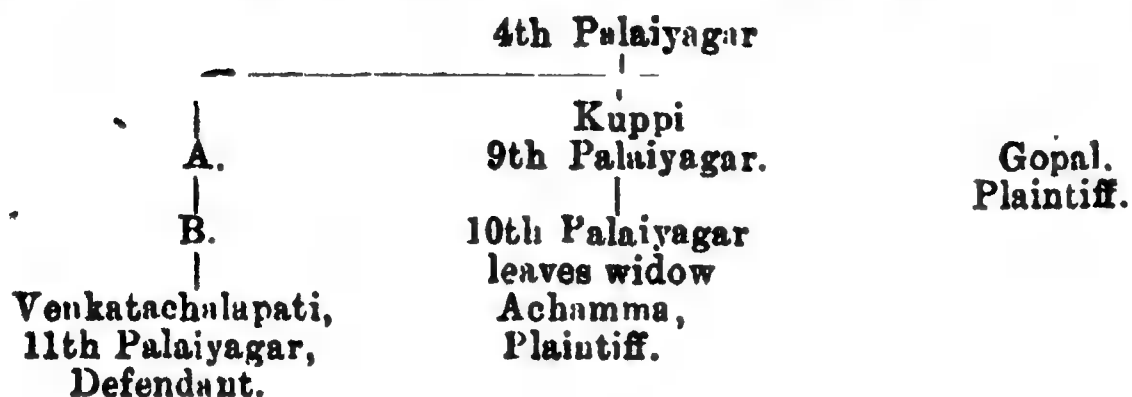
Whole and half-  
blood.

the question was, whether an elder brother by the half blood, or a younger brother by the full blood, would be the next heir to a Raj. They were pressed with the argument that on the death of the previous holder, who was the father both of the deceased Rajah and of the claimants, the Raj had vested in all the brothers jointly, though of course it could only be held by one. If so, of course, all the brothers were equally near to the father, and on the death of one it would survive to the eldest. But the Committee held that in the case of an impartible estate survivorship cannot exist, as being an incident of joint ownership, which is inconsistent with the separate ownership of the Rajah. Therefore, title by survivorship, where it varies from the ordinary rule of heirship, cannot, in the absence of custom, furnish the rule to ascertain the heir to a property which is solely owned and enjoyed, and which passes by inheritance to a single heir. Then, upon the double ground of nearness of kin and religious efficacy, the whole blood was entitled in preference to the half blood (i); that is to say, they held that nothing vested in any member of the family until the death of the last holder, and that at his death the heir was the person who was nearest to him. Some of the language used by their Lordships in their judgment seems inconsistent with the Shivagunga case, and those cases which have followed it (§ 487), but the decrees themselves, and the *ratio decidendi* in each, are perfectly in harmony. The Shivagunga case settled that where an impartible Zemindary was joint property, the heir to it must be sought among the male coparcenary. That is to say, no female nor separated member could succeed. The Tipperah case decided, that amongst these coparceners the person to succeed was the one who was nearest the last male holder at the time of his death, and that the principle of survivorship could not be applied so as to give the succession to a person who was not the nearest heir.

---

(i) *Neelkisto Deb v. Beerchunder*, 12 M. I. A. 523, 540; S. C. 3 B. L. R. (P. C.) 13; S. C. 12 Suth. (P. C.) 21.

§ 500. In a later case, where the succession to one of the Chittur Polliems was disputed, the Madras High Court followed its own decision in *Runganayakamma v. Ramaya*, and refused to be bound by the principle laid down in the Tipperah case. The state of the family is shown by the diagram. On the death of a distant collateral relation,



Kuppi succeeded as 9th Palaiyagar by an arrangement with his elder brother A. The High Court found that the effect of this arrangement was, that the elder consented to resign his immediate right of succession and that of his descendants in favour of Kuppi and his descendants, but that any rights which A. and his line might have on failure of Kuppi and his line were preserved intact. Kuppi was succeeded by his son, who died leaving no issue, a widow Achamma, his uncle Gopal, and his cousin Venkatachalapati. The Government gave the Polliem to the last named person, and he was sued by both the widow and Gopal. The claim of the widow was dismissed on the ground that the family was undivided, and that of Gopal on the ground that the defendant was the nearest heir. The Court held that the ruling in the Tipperah case that co-ownership, and therefore survivorship, did not exist in impartible property, was opposed to the doctrine of the Shivagunga case, and to the ordinary law of Southern India and Benares, respecting the impartible property of a joint family. They laid down the canon that "when impartible property passes by survivorship from one line to another, it devolves not necessarily on the coparcener nearest in blood, but on the nearest coparcener of the senior line" (k).

(k) *Naraganti v. Venkatachalapati*, 4 Mad. 250, 265.



Lineal and ordinary primogeniture.

§ 501. In a later case the Judicial Committee drew a distinction between lineal and ordinary primogeniture, which may perhaps reconcile the apparent conflict of cases (1). The estate was one of the Oudh taluks. Under Act I of 1869 which governs such estates it is provided that each taluq is to be entered in one or other of certain lists, which regulate its mode of devolution. The estate in question was entered in the second list, which is a list of the taluqdars whose estates, according to the custom of the family before 1856, ordinarily devolved upon a single heir. It was not entered in the third list, which included estates regulated by the rule of primogeniture. The plaintiff was the eldest surviving male of the eldest branch of the family of Pirthi Pal from whom descent was to be traced, but there were in existence other males of junior branches of the same family who were nearer of kin to Pirthi Pal than he was. The defendant admittedly had no title. Both Courts found that the estate went by the rule of primogeniture; by which apparently they only meant, that, as between several persons of the same class, the eldest would be entitled to succeed. Both Courts found in favour of the plaintiff, but the Judicial Commissioner seems to have thought that his decision only went in favour of the family as against the defendant, and that the rights of the respective members of the family, *inter se*, would be still open to discussion. The Privy Council reversed the decree of the lower Courts. They pointed out that the plaintiff in ejectment must make out an absolute title in himself. It was necessary therefore for the plaintiff to make out that the estate descended according to the rules of lineal primogeniture as distinguished from descent to a single heir amongst several in equal degree. That when a taluqdar's name was entered in the second list and not in the third, the estate although it is to descend to a single heir, is not to be considered as an estate passing according to the rules of lineal primogeniture. Consequently that the plaintiff had not established a title

---

(1) *Achal Ram v. Udai Pertab*, 11 I. A. 51.



which would enable him to evict a defendant in actual possession.

§ 502. Possibly the following rules may be found to reconcile all the cases :

Suggested  
rules.

1. When an estate descends to a single heir, the presumption is that it will be held by the eldest member of the class of persons, who would hold it jointly if the estate were partible.
2. In the absence of evidence to the contrary, the heir will be the eldest member of those persons who are nearer of kin to the last owner than any other class, and who are equally near to him as between themselves.
3. Special evidence will be required to establish a descent by lineal primogeniture, that is by continual descent to the eldest member of the eldest branch, in exclusion of nearer members of younger branches.
4. The presumption as to primogeniture of either sort may be rebutted by showing a usage that the heir should be chosen on some other ground of preference

§ 503. Illegitimate sons in the three higher classes never take as heirs, but are only entitled to maintenance (§ 434). It is said that by a special usage they may inherit, but in the only cases in which such a special usage was set up it was negatived (m). The illegitimate son of a Sudra may, however, under certain circumstances, inherit either jointly or solely. His rights have already been referred to under the head of Partition (§ 434), but it will be necessary to go a little more fully into them here. His position rest upon two texts. *Manu* says (n), "A son begotten by a man of

Illegitimate  
sons.

(m) *Mohun v. Chumun*, 1 S. D. 28 (37); *Pershad v. Mukhesree*, 3 S. D. 132 (176); *Bhaoni v. Maharaj*, 8 All. 738.

(n) ix. § 179. The words 'by the other sons' in Sir W. Jones' translation are taken from the gloss of Kullaka Bhatta. Dr. Bühler translates the same text,

Illegitimate son  
of a Sudra.

the servile class on his female slave, or on the female slave of his male slave, may take a share of the heritage, if permitted (by the other sons).” *Yajnavalkya* enlarges the rule as follows: “Even a son begotten by a Sudra on a female slave may take a share by the father’s choice. But, if the father be dead, the brethren should make him partaker of the moiety of a share; and one who has no brothers may inherit the whole property in default of daughters’ sons” (o). The first question that arises upon these texts is as to the nature of the connection out of which the illegitimate son contemplated by them must issue. Are the texts to be taken literally, as denoting that the mother must be the slave of the father, or do they denote a son born from a concubine, or the offspring of a merely temporary intercourse? On this point there is a direct conflict of authority.

Whether his  
mother must  
have been a  
slave.

Meaning of  
slave.

§ 504. *Jimuta Vahana*, as translated by Mr. Colebrooke, takes the less strict view. He says in reference to *Manu*, “The son of a Sudra by a female slave, or other unmarried woman, may share, &c. ;” and he paraphrases the text of *Yajnavalkya* by the words “begotten on an unmarried woman, and having no brother, &c.” (p). In a case which arose in Calcutta, Mr. Justice *Mitter* stated that the above passages of the *Daya Bhaga* were incorrectly translated, and that the first passage should run, “The son of a Sudra by an unmarried female slave, &c. ;” and that the second passage should begin, “Having no other brother begotten on a married woman, he may take the whole property.” The Court, therefore, held that the words “son of a female slave” must be literally interpreted, so far as the districts governed by Bengal law were concerned, and that an illegitimate son whose mother was not a slave could not inherit, (q). Now, there seems to be no ground for suppos-

---

“if permitted (by his father).” This agrees with the rule laid down by *Yajnavalkya*.

(o) *Yajnavalkya*, ii. § 133, 134; *Mitakshara*, i. 12, § 1.

(p) *Daya Bhaga*, ix. § 29, 31; 3 Dig. 143.

(q) *Narain v. Rakhal*, 1 Cal. 1; S. C. 23 Suth. 334, citing 1 W. MacN. 18; 2 W. MacN. 15, n.; *Dattaka Chandrika*, v. § 30, followed, after an examination of the Madras and Bombay cases, in *Kirpal Narain v. Sukurmoni*, 19 Cal. 91.

ing that there is any difference in this point between the law of Bengal and the other provinces, as all the authorities rely upon the same texts. As slavery was abolished by Act V of 1843, it follows, if the above construction is sound, that the inheritance of the illegitimate son of a Sudra, born after that date, has now become impossible. On the other hand, the Bombay High Court in an equally recent case, give a literal translation of the text of *Jimuta Vahana*, which exactly corresponds with Mr. Colebrooke's translation (r). So, *Maheśvara* renders the same text: "He being born of an unmarried woman, and having no brother born of a wedded wife," &c. (s). Prosonno Coomar Tagore renders the corresponding passage by *Vachaspati Misra*: "A son of a Sudra by an unmarried woman," (t) and the same rendering is given by Mr. Borradaile of the passage in the *Mayukha* (u). If, however, the proper translation of the passage in the *Daya Bhaga* be that which is given by Mr. Juttice Mitter, then the question would be narrowed to this: What is meant by the term *Dasi*, or female slave? The *Dattaka Mimamsa*, in describing the slave's son (*Dasi putra*), says, "A female purchased by price, who is enjoyed, is a slave. The son who is born on her is considered a slave son" (v). The point is discussed by the Bombay High Court, apparently without any knowledge of the Calcutta case, and they arrive at the conclusion that the word does not necessarily mean anything more than an unmarried Sudra woman kept as a concubine (w). In Madras it has frequently been held that the illegitimate son of a Sudra will inherit, and, although it has not been necessary to decide the point, it has been stated, or assumed, that the mother need not be a slave in the strict sense of that term. In Southern India, at all events, the word *Dasi* is invariably applied to a dancing girl

Meaning of  
slave.

(r) *Rahi v. Govind*, 1 Bom. 110.

(s) *Daya Bhaga*, ix. § 31, note.

(t) *Vivada Chintamani*, 374.

(u) *V. May*, iv. 4, § 32. The *Mitakshara*, i. 12, § 2, and the *Dattaka Chandrika*, v. § 30, only use the term "female slave."

(v) *Dattaka Mimamsa*, iv. § 75, 76.

(w) *Rahi v. Govind*, 1 Bom. 97, followed *Sadu v. Baiza*, 4 Bom. 37, 44.

in a pagoda (x). Finally upon a review of all the authorities, the Madras High Court has ruled that "although the primary meaning of the word *Dasi* was a slave, it included also a concubine, or a woman of the servile class in a secondary sense, and there is reason to hold upon the texts that an unmarried Sudra woman kept as a continuous concubine came within its scope" (y). And the Judicial Committee has also stated, though without reference to this point, that "they are satisfied that in the Sudra caste illegitimate children may inherit" (z). Throughout the *futwahs* recorded by Messrs. West and Bühler, the term slave girl, or *Dasi*, and concubine, appear to be treated as convertible terms (a). The Allahabad High Court follows the Madras and Bombay ruling in preference to that of the Calcutta Judges (b).

Connection  
must be con-  
tinuous, and  
lawful.

§ 505. Probably in former times the permanent concubine was always a slave, that is, a person purchased, or born in the house, and incapable of leaving it at her own free will. But the principle of the rule seems to have been, that as the marriage tie was less strict among Sudras than among the higher classes, so the issue of women who were permanently kept by Sudras, though not actually married to them, was regarded as something between a legitimate son and the mere bastard offspring of a promiscuous, or illegal, intercourse. Accordingly, it has been held that the son born of an absolutely prohibited union, such as an incestuous, or adulterous, connection, could not inherit, even to a Sudra; and it was suggested, though not absolutely decided,

---

(x) *Chendrabhan v. Chingooram*, Mad. Dec. of 1849, 50; *Pandaiya v. Puli*, 1 Mad. H. C. 478, affirmed; *Sub nomina*, *Inderun v. Ramasawmy*, 13 M. I. A. 141; S. C. 3 B. L. R. (P. C.) 1; S. C. 12 Suth. (P. C.) 41; S. C. 4 Mad. Jur. 328; *Muttusamy v. Venkatasubha*, 2 Mad. H. C. 293; S. C. on appeal, 12 M. I. A. 203; S. C. 2 B. L. R. (P. C.) 15; S. C. 11 Suth. (P. C.) 6; *Datti Parisi v. Datti Bangaru*, 4 Mad. H. C. 204; S. C. 4 Mad. Jur. 136; *Krishnamma v. Papa*, *ib* 231; S. C. 4 Mad. Jur. 130. See too *per* Mr. Colebrooke, Stra. H. L. 68.

(y) *Krishnayan v. Muttusami*, 7 Mad. 407, p. 412; *Brindavana v. Kadhamani*, 12 Mad. p. 86.

(z) *Per Giffard, I. J.*, *Inderun v. Ramasawmy*, 13 M. I. A. 159; *supra*, note (x).

(a) W. & B. 375—385.

(b) *Sarasuti v. Mannu*, 2 All. 134; *Hargobind v. Dharam Singh*, 6 All. 329.



that "the intercourse between the parents must have been a continuous one; there must have been an established concubinage, or, in other words, the woman must have been one exclusively kept by the man" (c). In Bombay it is said by the High Court, that the condition that the Sudra woman should never have been married, has in practice been disregarded. But the cases referred to by the Court are all cases in which the subsequent connection with the previously married woman was not an adulterous one, but was sanctioned by usage having the force of law (d).

§ 506. Supposing an illegitimate Sudra to be entitled, the next question would be as to his rights. Upon this the Mitakshara says in explanation of the texts of *Manu* and *Yajnavalkya* (§ 503), "The son begotten by a Sudra on a female slave, obtains a share by the father's choice, or at his pleasure. But after the demise of the father, if there be sons of a wedded wife, let these brothers allow the son of the female slave to participate for half a share, that is, let them give him half as much as the amount of one brother's allotment; however, should there be no sons of a wedded wife, the son of the female slave takes the whole estate, provided there be no daughters of a wife, nor sons of daughters. But if there be such, the son of the female slave participates for half a share only" (e). The Bengal authorities are to the same effect, but say nothing of his right to share with the daughters (f). The only writer who refers to his right where there is a widow, is the author of the *Dattaka Chandrika*. He says, "If any, even in the series of heirs down to the daughter's son, exist, the son by a female slave does not take the whole estate, but on the contrary shares equally

Share of illegitimate son.

(c) *Datti Parisi v. Datti Bangaru*, 4 Mad. H. C., 204, 215; S. C. 4 Mad. Jur. 136; *Vencutachella v. Parvatham*, 8 Mad. H. C. 134; *Rahi v. Govind*, 1 Bom. 97; *Kuppa v. Singaravelu*, 8 Mad. 325; *Dalip v. Ganpat*, 8 All. 387. See ante, § 72.

(d) *Rahi v. Govind*, 1 Bom. 113.

(e) *Mitakshara*, i. 12, § 2.

(f) *Daya Bhaga*, ix. § 29-31; D. K. S. vi. § 32-35; 3 Dig. 143; *Virāmit.*, p. 130, § 22.



## His share

with such heir" (g). This is also the opinion of a pandit whose futwah is given in West and Bühler 383. On the other hand, the editors, in a remark appended to that futwah, say, "The illegitimate son would inherit the whole estate of his father, even though a widow of the latter might be living." This remark is adopted by the High Court of Bombay, and they state that the illegitimate son will also share the property with the daughter and the daughter's son, while there is a widow in existence, subject, of course, to the charge of maintaining the widow (h). The rule was affirmed in a later case also in Bombay (i). There *Manaji*, a Sudra, died leaving a legitimate son *Mahadev*, an illegitimate son *Sadu*, two widows *Baiza* and *Savitri*, and a legitimate daughter *Daryabai*. *Mahadev* and *Sadu* entered into joint possession of the estate, and then *Mahadev* died without issue. It was held that if *Mahadev* had died before his father, *Sadu* would have been entitled to only half a share, i.e., one-third of the property, and the remaining two-thirds would have vested in *Darya* as the legitimate daughter of *Manaji*, and *Baiza* and *Savitri* would have been entitled to maintenance. But that under the actual facts of the case *Mahadev* and *Sadu* took the whole, subject to the maintenance and marriage expenses of the widows and daughter, and that, on the death of *Mahadev*, *Sadu* took the whole by survivorship. The result would be, that wherever there was an illegitimate son, the widow would be entitled to no more than maintenance. Also, that a daughter and a daughter's son would, in such a case, inherit to the exclusion of the widow, and maintain her, though it is a first principle that neither can ever take, except in default of her.

where there  
is a widow.

§ 507. It certainly would require very strong authority to establish such an abnormal state of things. Yet there is absolutely no original authority for it, except the remark of Messrs. West and Bühler, which itself rests upon

(g) *Dattaka Chandrika*, v. § 30, 31.

(h) *Rahi v. Govind*, 1 Bom. 97, 104.

(i) *Sadu v. Baiza*, 4 Bom. 37, 52.

nothing (k). The chapters of the Hindu law-books, which treat of a widow's estate, nowhere suggest such a limitation of her rights. No text writer, no decision, alludes to such a possibility. The passages which discuss the position of an illegitimate son do not even mention the widow, and seem to me not to involve the doctrine of the Bombay High Court, by necessary, or even by probable, implication. Suppose we try a perfectly literal interpretation of the texts upon the subject. *Yajnavalkya* says that an illegitimate son without brothers may inherit the whole estate in default of daughters' sons. The obvious meaning is that until the line, which terminates with a daughter's son, is exhausted, he cannot take the whole estate, but is only entitled to a part of it. *Vijnanesvara* makes this even clearer, by saying that a daughter also excludes him from the whole estate, leaving him still entitled to part. He does not think it necessary to say the same as to the widow, who ranks before the daughter. Then, as to the intermediate period, he is to have a share, which is to be half the share for a son. The literal meaning of this is, that in each given instance you are to ascertain what share he would take if he were legitimate, and then give him half of it. Suppose there is a legitimate son, then, if he also were legitimate, the estate would be divided into moieties, of which each would take one. Being illegitimate, he only takes half of the moiety, leaving the remaining three-quarters to his brother (l). Suppose there is no legitimate son, but a widow, daughter, or daughter's son; now, if he were legitimate, he would take the whole. Being illegitimate,

Share of illegitimate Sudra.

(k) There is a futwah quoted at W. & B. 380, in which illegitimate sons are made to exclude a widow. But the widow in question was one who had been married twice. Such a widow appears not to be entitled to the full rights of a widow married as a virgin. See W. & B. 386.

(l) This is the view taken by one Shastri, W. & B. 382. But according to others the meaning is that the division is to be made so that the legitimate son shall have double the share of the illegitimate, that is, in the case put, the former would have two-thirds and the latter one-third; W. & B. 381, 384; *per curiam*, *Sadu v Baiza*, 4 Bom. 52. A similar difference exists as to the mode in which the fourth share to be received by a daughter on partition was to be calculated, *ante*, § 441, or by an adopted son in the case of the subsequent birth of a legitimate son; *ante*, § 155.

he takes only half, the other half going to the widow, daughter, or daughter's son, respectively. If there are none of these, or upon the extinction of all, he takes the whole. Now this is exactly what *Devanda Bhatta* says in the passage above referred to (*m*). And the same is substantially the view taken by the Bombay Shastries quoted in West and Bühler, though they differ as to the exact proportions taken, and by Mr. W. MacNaghten and *Jagannatha* (*n*). In the first Bombay case the whole discussion was *obiter dictum*, as the Court decided that the claimant did not come within the terms of the texts at all. In the second case the illegitimate had actually taken along with the legitimate son, so as to let in the principle of survivorship. The Madras High Court appears to take the view of the widow's rights which has been suggested above in cases where the property is partible (*o*), and gives the widow the preference over the illegitimate son, where the property is impartible (*p*). In a recent case in Bombay, *Sargent*, C. J. seems to have adopted the view of the above texts which is stated in this paragraph (*q*).

Bastards inherit to each other.

§ 508. Illegitimate sons can only take to their father's estate. They have no claim to inherit to collaterals (*r*). It has also been held by the Madras High Court that they have no claim by survivorship against the undivided coparceners of the father, and therefore cannot sue his brothers and their sons for a partition after his death (*s*). The principle is, that as against the father the illegitimate son can only take by his choice, and therefore is not a joint heir with him, until he has actually been made such by some paternal act (*t*). In the absence of such an act he can

(*m*) *Dattaka Chandrika*, v. § 30, 31.

(*n*) W. & B. 381—386; acc. 1 W. MacN. 18; 3 Dig. 143.

(*o*) 8 Mad. 561.

(*p*) *Parvati v. Thirumalai*, 10 Mad. 334.

(*q*) *Sheagiri v. Girewa*, 14 Bom. 282. In *Khandeish* a legitimate daughter and an illegitimate son share together. Steele, 180.

(*r*) 2 W. MacN. 15, n.; *Nissar v. Kowar*, Marsh, 609.

(*s*) *Krishnayan v. Muttusami*, 7 Mad. 407; *Kanoji v. Kandoji*, 8 Mad. 557; approved 12 Mad. p. 403.

(*t*) *Sadu v. Baizu*, 4 Bom. 37; *per curiam*, 11 Cal. 714.

only take as heir, and survivorship will intercept his claim in that capacity, just as it does that of the widow, daughter, or daughter's son, with whom he would share. If, however, the father leaves legitimate and illegitimate sons, then the legitimate takes in preference to all other heirs and the illegitimate share with him. When they have once taken jointly, on the death of the legitimate son without issue, the illegitimate takes the whole by survivorship, and in this way supersedes the right of the widow (*u*). It is also to be remembered that, as the English rule which prevents bastards tracing to their father has no existence in Hindu law, so the fact of illegitimacy does not prevent bastard brothers claiming to each other. Accordingly, where two take jointly, the estate passes by survivorship in the ordinary way. Still less is there any absence of heritable blood as between bastards and their mother (*v*).

§ 509. WIDOW.—In default of male issue, joint with, or Several widows. separate from, their father, the next heir is the widow (*w*). Where there are several widows, all inherit jointly, according to a text of the Mitakshara, which should come in at the end of ii. 1, § 5, but which has been omitted in Mr. Colebrooke's translation: "The singular number, 'wife,' in the text of *Yajnavalkya*, signifies the kind. Hence, if there are several wives belonging to the same, or different classes, they divide, and take it (*x*)" All the wives take together as a single heir with survivorship, and no part of the hus-

(*u*) *Sadu v. Baiza*, *ub. sup*; *Jogendra v. Nittyanund*, 11 Cal. 702, *affd.* 17 L. A. 128; S. C. 18 Cal. 151, where it was held that the same rule applied to an impartible Raj.

(*v*) *Venkataram v. Venkata Lutchmee*, 2 N. C. 304; *Pandaiya v. Puli*, 1 Mad. H. C. 478; *Mayna Bai v. Uttaram*, 2 Mad. H. C. 197; *Myna Boyee v. Ootaram*, 8 M. L. A. 400; S. C. 2 Suth. (P. C.) 4; W. & B. 455. 11 Mad. p. 397; *Sivasangu v. Minal*, 12 Mad. 277; *Narasanna v. Gangu*, 13 Mad. 133; *per curiam*, 11 Cal. p. 714; *Tara Munnee v. Motee Buneanee*, 7 S. D. 273 (325).

(*w*) Mitakshara, ii. 1; Daya Bhaga, xi. 1, § 43; V. May., iv. 3, § 1—7, Viramit., p. 131, ch. iii. *Ramappa v. Sithammal*, 2 Mad. 182; *Balkrishna v. Savitribai*, 3 Bom. 54. See ante, § 481, *et. seq.* So the widow succeeds at once on renunciation of his rights by the prior heir. *Ruvee v. Roopshunker*, 2 Bor. 656, 665 [713]; *Ram Kannye v. Meernomoyee*, 2 Suth. 49.

(*x*) See as to the omission, Goldstücker, 15; Smriti Chandrika, xi. 1, § note 2; *Tara Chand v. Reeb Ram*, 3 Mad. H. C. 51; Viramit., p. 153.



**Several widows.** band's property passes to any more distant relation till all are dead (*y*). Where the property is impartible, as being a Raj or ancient Zemindary, of course it can only be held by one, and then the senior widow is entitled to hold it, subject to the right of the others to maintenance (*z*). In other cases the senior widow would, as in the case of an ordinary coparcenership, have a preferable right to the care and management of the joint property. But she would hold it as manager for all, with equality of rights, not merely on her own account, with an obligation to maintain the others (*a*).

§ 510. Where several widows hold an estate jointly, or where one holds as manager for the others, each has a right to her proportionate share of the produce of the property, and of the benefits derivable from its enjoyment. And the widows may be placed in possession of separate portions of the property, either by agreement among themselves, or by decree of Court, where from the nature of the property, or from the conduct of the co-widows, such a separate possession appears to be the only effectual mode of securing to each the full enjoyment of her rights. But no partition can be effected between them, whether by consent or by adverse decree, which would convert the joint estate into an estate in severalty, and put an end to the right of survivorship. In the case of *Rindamma v. Venkataramappa* cited below, it was suggested that the widows might possibly enter into such an agreement as would bind each to an absolute surrender of all interest in the share of the other, so as to let in the next heirs of the husband after the death of that other (*b*). It is difficult, however, to see how such an

(*y*) 1 W. MacN. 20; 2 W. MacN. 37; F. MacN. 6; *Berjessory v. Ramconny*, 2 M. Dig. 80; *Rumea v. Bhagee*, 1 Bom. H. C. 66; *Jijoyiamba v. Kamakshi*, 3 Mad. H. C. 424; *Bhugwandeem v. Myna Bae*, 11 M. I. A. 487; S. C. 9 Suth. (P. C.) 23; *Nilamani v. Radhamani*, 4 I. A. 212; S. C. 1 Mad. 290; *Bulakidas v. Keshavlal*, 6 Bom. 85. The contrary opinion of Jimuta Vahana is not now law; *Daya Bhaga*, xi. 1, § 15, 47.

(*z*) *Vutsavoy v. Vutsavoy*, 1 Mad. Dec. 453; *Seenevullala v. Tungama*, 2 Mad. Dec. 40.

(*a*) *Jijoyiamba v. Kamakshi*, *ub. sup.*

(*b*) *Jijoyiamba v. Kamakshi*, *Bhugwandeem v. Myna Bae*. *Nilamani v. Radhamani*, *ub. sup.*, note (*y*); See however *Mt. Sundar v. Mt. Parbati*, 16 I. A. 186. S. C. 12 All. 51; *Rindamma v. Venkataramappa*, 3 Mad. H. C. 268; *Rampiyari v. Mulchand*, 7 All. 114.



agreement could bind the surviving widow, for the benefit of any heir of the husband who was not a party to the contract. On the same principle of joint tenancy with survivorship, no alienation by one widow can have any validity against the rights of the others without their consent, or an established necessity arising under circumstances which rendered it impossible to seek for consent (c). It has, however, been held that a widow can alienate her life interest as against her co-widows, just as she can against the reversioners, and that such alienation can be enforced by partition against them, without prejudice to their rights of survivorship (d).

§ 511. Whatever may have been the ancient law on the subject (§ 88), it is quite clear now that chastity is a condition precedent to the taking by the widow of her husband's estate (e). But a question upon which there has been much conflict of authority arises, whether the incontinence of a widow is like any other ground of disability, which only prevents the inheritance from vesting, or whether it will divest her estate when she has once become entitled to it in possession. The weight of authority in earlier times seems certainly to have been in favour of the latter view, upon the principle, no doubt, that the widow only received her husband's estate for the purpose of providing for his spiritual necessities, and that she would be unable to do so if she were living in a state of guilt. In later times, however, the more secular view prevailed, that a widow's estate was in this respect not different from that of any other limited owner, and could not be defeated by any ground of incapacity intervening after it had once

Effect of want of chastity.

(c) *Bhugwandeem v. Myna Bae*, *ub. sup*; *Vasudeva Singaro v. Vizianagram Rani*, 19 I. A. See *post*, Chap. XX.

(d) *Janokinath v. Mothuranath*, (F. B.) 9 Cal. 580, disagreeing with *Kathaperumal v. Venkabal*, 2 Mad. 174; *Ariyaputri v. Alamelu*, 11 Mad. 304.

(e) *Mitakshara*, ii. 1, § 37—39; *Smriti Chandrika*, xi. 1, § 12—21; *Vivada Chintamani*, 289—91; *V. May.*, iv. 8, § 2, 6, 8, 9; *Daya Bhaga*, xi. 1, § 47, 48, 56. See all the cases discussed, *Kery Kolitany v. Monceram*, 13 B. L. R. 1; S. C. 19 Suth. 367.

vested in possession. The whole law upon the subject was elaborately discussed and examined in a case before the Bengal High Court, in which the latter doctrine was maintained, and this decision was affirmed by the Privy Council. The same ruling had previously been laid down by the Courts of Bombay, the North-West Provinces and the Punjab, and it may be assumed, therefore, to be the general law of India (*f*).

Second  
marriage.

Act authorising  
widow marriage.

§ 512. The second marriage of a widow was formerly unlawful, except where it was sanctioned by local custom (§ 89), consequently it entailed the forfeiture of a widow's estate, either as being a signal instance of incontinence, or as necessarily involving degradation from caste (*g*). Even where second marriages were allowed in Bombay, the wife was compelled to give up the property she had inherited from her first husband (*h*). This seems also to have been the custom among the Tamil tribes, upon the evidence of the Thesawaleme (*i*), and the same principle has been recently applied by the High Court of Madras in the case of a second marriage of a Maraver woman, and of a Lingait Gounden in the Wynaad (*k*). In the case of the Maraver woman they proceeded upon the ground that the Maravers were governed by the general body of Hindu law, except in so far as it could be shown that exceptional usages prevailed. Therefore, that the special usage which allowed a Maraver widow to re-marry, did not prevail over the general principle that a widow could only retain the property of her husband so long as she continued to be the surviving portion of the deceased. In the case of the *Lingait Gounden*

(*f*) *Kery Kolitany v. Moneeram*, 13 B. L. R. 1; S. C. 19 Suth. 367; *affd.* 7 I. A. 115; S. C. 5 Cal. 776; *Parvati v. Bhiku*, 4 Bom. H. C. (A. C. J.) 25; *Nehalo v. Kishen*, 2 All. 150; *Bhawani v. Mahtab*, *ib.*, 171; Punjab customs, 61. See as to the effect of Act XXI of 1850 (Freedom of Religion) upon the unchastity of a widow. *Rajkoonwarees v. Golabees*, S. D. of 1858, 1891.

(*g*) 1 Stra. H. L. 242; W. & B. 110; *Kery Kolitany v. Mooneeram*, 13 B. L. R. 75; S. C. 19 Suth. 367.

(*h*) *Hurkoonwur v. Ruttun Bae*, 1 Bor. 431 [475]; *Treekumjee v. Mt. Laroo*, 2 Bor. 361 [397]; Steele, 26, 159, 168.

(*i*) Theswaleme, i. § 10.

(*k*) *Murugayi v. Viramakali*, 1 Mad. 226; *Koduthi v. Madu*, 7 Mad. 321.

they found a special usage that the widow on her re-marriage ceased to inherit her husband's estate. In an Allahabad case a widow of the Sweeper caste had re-married, and it was found as a fact "that she did what in her caste never had been and was not prohibited by the law to which she was subject, and her marriage was a good and valid marriage." The Court held that she did not forfeit her interest in her husband's property, since the Act of 1856 was passed for the purpose of enabling persons to marry who could not re-marry before the Act and § 2 only applies to such persons (l). In this case no special usage entailing forfeiture was suggested, and no very strong presumption could arise as to the rigorous application of Hindu law to such outcastes as sweepers. The marriage of widows is now legalised in all cases. But the Act which permits it provides that "All rights and interests which any widow may have in her deceased husband's property, by way of maintenance, or by inheritance to her husband or to his lineal successors, or by virtue of any will or testamentary provision conferring upon her, without express permission to re-marry, only a limited interest in such property, with no power of alienating the same, shall, upon her re-marriage, cease and determine as if she had then died; and the next heirs of her deceased husband, or other persons entitled to the property on her death, shall thereupon succeed to the same" (m). It has been held that this section only operates as a forfeiture of existing rights, and creates no disability to take future interests in the family of the widow's late husband. Therefore, that she may succeed as heir to the estate of her son by a first marriage, who had died after her second marriage (n). There has been a conflict of decisions in Calcutta, as to whether the disabling section applies to a Hindu widow, who had ceased to be a Hindu at the time of her second

(l) *Har Saran Das v. Nandi*, 11 All. 330.

(m) Act XV of 1856, § 2 (Hindu Widow Marriage). This Act does not render illegal proceedings of a caste nature, such as exclusion from a temple, founded upon the Act of re-marriage. *Venkatachalapati v. Subbarayadu*, 18 Mad. 298.

(n) *Akora v. Boreani*, 2 B. L. R. (A. C. J.) 199; S. C. 11 Suth. 82; *Rupan v. Hukmi*, Punjab Customs, 99.

marriage. It has been lately decided by a Full Bench that it does (o). There a Hindu widow, who had inherited the estate of her deceased husband, married a second husband who was not a Hindu, in the form provided by Act III of 1872, having previously made a declaration under § 10 of that Act that she was not a Hindu. The Chief Justice stated the opinion of the Full Bench as follows (p. 299),—“Section 1 no doubt relates to marriages between Hindus, but § 2 includes all widows who are within the scope of the Act, that is to say, all persons who being Hindus become widows, and it must follow from this, that if any such widow marries, she is deprived by the section of the estate which she inherited from her deceased husband.”

This decision leaves untouched the questions decided by the Madras Court in the *Lingait Gounden* case, and by the Allahabad Court in the *Sweeper* case. *Wilson, J.* who was one of the referring Judges in the *Calcutta* case, pointed out that the Act of 1856, as explained by its preamble, applied “to all Hindu widows other than those referred to under the words ‘with certain exceptions’ who could without the aid of the Act marry according to the custom of their caste. He would, therefore, have agreed with the Allahabad Court that neither the enabling nor the disabling clauses (§§ 1 and 2) of that Act applied to such exceptional persons. On the other hand, both he and *Banerji, J.* agreed that it was of the essence of a Hindu widow’s estate that it should only continue while held by her as a widow, and that no act of hers could enlarge this estate (p). In the case, therefore, of a widow who could re-marry without the assistance of the Act, the question would still remain, was her estate restricted, either by general law or local usage to the period of her widowhood. If it was, the legality of her second marriage would not prevent the determination of her estate.

(o) *Matangini Gupta v. Ram Rutton Roy*, 19 Cal. 289, over-ruling *Gopal Singh v. Dhungasee*, 3 Suth. 206.

(p) 19 Cal. pp. 292, 293, 295.



It has been laid down in the North-West Provinces that a widow, having minor children, who has re-married is not their mother within the meaning of Act XV of 1856, § 3, so as to entitle her to be made guardian by virtue of her relationship, in the absence of an express appointment by the late husband (*q*).

§ 513. THE DAUGHTER comes next to the widow, taking after her or in default of her (*r*), except where by some special local or family custom she is excluded (*s*). It has been held in Bengal that she is under the same obligation to chastity as a widow; therefore, as the law is now settled, incontinence will prevent her taking the estate, but will not deprive her of it if she has once taken it (*t*). In Bombay, however, it has been held after a full examination of all the authorities bearing on the point, that, under the law prevailing in Western India, a widow is the only female heir who is excluded from inheritance, by incontinence, and the opinion of the Allahabad High Court seems to be in the same direction, though the point has not required an express decision (*u*). It will be observed that the *Daya Bhaga* and the *Daya Krama Sangraha*, which are the leading Bengal authorities, both quote in support of the daughter's right of succession, a text ascribed to *Vrihaspati* which states that she must be virtuous (*v*). The same text is also relied on in the passages in the *Viramitrodaya* and the *Smriti Chandrika* which refer to a daughter's right, while no mention of the qualification is contained in the correspond-

Daughter,

how far she is bound to chastity

(*q*) *Khushali v. Rani*, 4 All. 95. •

(*r*) *Mitakhara*, ii. 2; *Smriti Chandrika*, xi. 2; *V. May.*, iv. 8, § 10; *Vivada Chintamani*, 292; *Daya Bhaga*, xi. 2, § 1, 30; *Viramit.*, pp. 137, 140.

(*s*) See as to such customs, *Perry*, O. C. 117; *Bhan Nanaji v. Sundrabai*, 11 Bom. H. C. 249; *Russic v. Purush*, S. D. of 1847, 205; *Hiranath v. Ram Narayan*, 1 B. L. R. 274; S. C. 17 Suth. 316; *Chowdhry Chintamun v. Mt. Nowlukho*, 2 I. A. 268; S. C. 24 Suth. 255; *Prasijivan v. Bai Reva*, 5 Bom. 482; *Punjab Customs*, 16, 25, 37, 47.

(*t*) 2 W. MacN. 182; *per Mitter*, J., *Kery Kolutany v. Moneeram*, 13 B. L. R. 48; S. C. 19 Suth. 367; *ante*, § 511; *Ramnath v. Durga*, 4 Cal. 550.

(*u*) *Adevyapa v. Rudrava*, 4 Bom. 104; *Deokee v. Sookhdeo*, 2 N.-W. P. p. 363; *Ganga v. Ghasita*, 1 All. 46; followed as regards a mother in *Kojiyadu v. Laksmi*, 5 Mad. 149.

(*v*) 3 Dig. 186; *Daya Bhaga*, xi. 2, § 8; *Daya Krama Sangraha*, i. 3, § 4.



ing passages of the Mitakshara and Mayukha (*w*). This is the more remarkable in the case of the Mitakshara, since the author borrows part of the text of *Vrihaspati*, omitting the clause which requires virtue in the daughter. It may, therefore, well be that in the Bengal school chastity may be essential to a daughter's right to inherit, while it may be unnecessary in Western India. Further, in Bengal there is the authority of *Rughunandana* that the word, 'wife,' in passages relating to the rules of succession, is only illustrative, and applies to females generally. This he expressly states to be the case as to the obligation to chastity (*x*). In considering the question in the Northern parts of India which are governed by the Mitakshara, it will be important to ascertain what weight is to be given to the opinion of the Viramirodaya, while in Southern India similar reference will have to be made to the Smriti Chandrika. It will be seen in the next paragraph that the Smriti Chandrika appears to base its views as to the rights of daughters upon religious principles, which have failed to secure acceptance in Madras. There seems to be no doubt that a daughter will be excluded by incurable blindness or any other ground of disability, such as would disqualify a male (*y*). It must be remembered that a daughter can only inherit to her own father. The daughter of the brother, the uncle, or the nephew is not an heir (§ 491). If a son dies before his father, leaving a daughter, and then the father dies, also leaving a daughter, the inheritance will pass to the daughter of the father (*z*). And so, if one of two undivided brothers under Mitakshara law dies first, leaving a daughter, and afterwards the surviving brother dies childless, the estate will pass to his collateral relations, not to the daughter of the first brother (*a*). Of course, in Bengal the daughter would at once have taken the share of her deceased father.

only inherits to  
her own father,

(*w*) Viramit., p. 179, § 3; Smriti Chandrika, xi. 2, § 26; Mitakshara, ii. 1, § 2; V. May., iv. 8, § 10—12. See *per Westropp*, C. J., 4 Bom. p. 110, *supra*.

(*x*) See *Ramnath v. Durga*, 4 Cal. p. 554.

(*y*) *Bakubai v. Manchhabai*, 2 Bom. H. C. 5.

(*z*) *Sooranamy v. Vencataroyen*, Mad. Dec. of 1853, 157; 2 W. MacN. 176.

(*a*) *Soobba Moodelly v. Auchalay*, Mad. Dec. of 1854, 158.

The case of the father's daughter, claiming as sister, has already been discussed (§ 489). In Bombay, a granddaughter, a brother's daughter, and a sister's daughter are held capable of inheriting, on the principle which prevails in Western India, that females born in the family are *gotraja sapindas* (b). They come in, however, not as daughters but as distant kindred. except in Bombay.

§ 514. The mode in which daughters inherit *inter se* depends upon the school of law which governs the case. The different principles which prevail upon this point in Bengal and the other provinces have been stated already (§ 479). Mr. W. MacNaghten states the order of precedence in the different provinces as follows (c). "According to the doctrine of the Bengal school the unmarried daughter is first entitled to the succession; if there be no maiden daughter, then the daughter who has, and the daughter who is likely to have male issue are together entitled to the succession, and on failure of either of them, the other takes the heritage. Under no circumstances can the daughters who are either barren, or widows destitute of male issue, or the mothers of daughters only, inherit the property (d). But there is a difference in the law as it obtains in Benares on this point; that school holding that a maiden is in the first instance entitled to the property; failing her, that the succession devolves on the married daughters who are indigent, to the exclusion of the wealthy daughters; that in default of indigent daughters, the wealthy daughters are competent to inherit; but no preference is given to a daughter who has, or is likely to have male issue, over a Precedence.

Bengal.

Precedence.

Benares.

(b) W. & B. 495—498. See *ante*, § 488.

(c) 1 W. MacN. 22.

(d) See also 2 W. MacN. 39, 44, 46, 49, 58; V. Darp, 166, 172; Anon, 3 M. Dig. 17; *Rajchunder v. Mt. Dhunmunee*, 3 S. D. 862 (482); *Binode v. Purdhan*, 2 Suth. 176. But since a widow may now re-marry (§ 512) and have male issue, it has been held that even in Bengal widowhood is not *per se* an absolute ground of exclusion. *Bimola v. Dangoo*, 19 Suth. 189. A widowed daughter who, at the time the succession opens, has a son who is dumb, but not shown to be incurably so, may inherit. It was not decided whether she would have been excluded, if it could be shown that the defect was congenital and incurable. *Chara Chunder v. Nobo Sundari*, 18 Cal. 302.

Mithila.

Smriti Chandrika.

daughter who is barren or a childless widow (e). According to the law of Mithila, an unmarried daughter is preferred to one who is married; failing her, married daughters are entitled to the inheritance. But there is no distinction made among the married daughters; and one who is married, and has, or is likely to have male issue, is not preferred to one who is widowed or barren. Nor is there any distinction made between indigence and wealth." The law of the Mitakshara has been also stated in accordance with this view by Mr. Colebrooke and the High Courts of Bengal, Bombay and the North-West Provinces, and by the Privy Council (f). I have already observed (§ 479), that the *Smriti Chandrika* follows the doctrine of religious efficacy so far as to exclude barren daughters, and Madras pandits have stated in accordance with it, that a daughter with male issue excludes a sonless daughter (g). The High Court of Madras, however, upon a full examination of all the authorities, has declined to follow the *Smriti Chandrika* upon this point in preference to the Mitakshara (h).

Several daughters.

Succession of several daughters.

§ 515. Where daughters of the same class exist, they all, except in Bombay, take jointly in the same manner as widows (§ 509) with survivorship (i). If they choose to divide the property for the greater convenience of enjoyment they can do so, but they cannot thereby create estates of severalty, which would be alienable or descendible in any different manner (k). If at the death of the last survivor another class of daughters exists, who have been previously exclud-

(e) Indigence is an absolute term, and is not limited to cases where a daughter, otherwise well off, has received no provision from her father; *Danno v. Darbo*, 4 All. 243. As to Bombay law, acc. *Bakubai v. Manchhabai*, 2 Bom. H. C. 5; *Poli v. Narotum*, 6 Bom. H.C. (A.C.J.) 183; *Jamnabai v. Khimji*, 14 Bom. p. 12.

(f) 2 Stra. H. L. 242; 2 Suth. 176, *supra*; *Uma Deyi v. Gokoolanund*, 5 I. A. 46; 3 C. 3 Cal. 387; *Audh Kumari v. Chandra*, 2 All. 561; *Jamnabai v. Khimji*, 14 Bom. p. 4.

(g) *Smriti Chandrika*, xi. 2, § 21; Stra. Man. § 323; *Doorasamy v. Ramamaul*, Mad. Dec. of 1852, 177. Semb., *Gocoolanund v. Wooma Dass*, 15 B. L. R. 405; S. C. 23 Suth. 340; *affd.* 5 I. A. 46; S. C. 3 Cal. 387.

(h) *Simmani v. Muttammal*, 3 Mad. 265.

(i) *Daya Bhaga*, xi. 2, § 15, 30; V. May., iv. 8, § 10; *Kattama Nachiar v. Dorasinga Tevar*, 6 Mad. H. C. 310.

(k) F. MacN. 55; *per curiam*, *Sengamalathammal v. Valayuda*, 3 Mad. H. C. 317.

ed, they will come in as next heirs, if admissible (l). And although according to Bengal law a childless, or barren, widow cannot inherit originally, still if she has already taken as one of a class of sisters, that which would have been an original disqualification will not prevent her taking the whole by survivorship on the death of her co-heiresses (m). Where property is impartible, the eldest daughter of all the sisters, or of the class which takes precedence, is the heir (n).

In Bombay the text of the Mayukha (iv. 8, § 10) “if there be more daughters than one they are to divide (the estate) and take (each a share)” has been held to support the view that daughters take not only absolute but several estates, which, in the absence of issue, they may dispose of during their lives or by will. Of course where this doctrine prevails there can be neither a joint holding nor survivorship (o). Bombay.

§ 516. It was at one time supposed that an exception to the right of any daughter (otherwise admissible) to succeed before a daughter's son, existed in Bengal. Mr. MacNaghten says: “If one of several daughters who had, as maidens, succeeded to their father's property, die leaving sons, and sisters, or sister's sons, then, according to the law of Bengal, the sons alone take the share to which their mother was entitled, to the exclusion of the sisters, or sisters' sons” (p). This exception rests on the authority of *Srikrishna Tarkalan-kara* alone. In the corresponding passage of the *Daya Bhaga*, the case of the maiden daughter is made no exception to the general rule, that on the death of any daughter the estate which was hers becomes the property of those persons, Exception to rule.

(l) *Dowlut Kooer v. Burma Deo*, 14 B. L. R. 246 (note); S. C. 22 Suth. 55.

(m) *Aumirtolall v. Rajonee Kant*, 2 I. A. 113; S. C. 15 B. L. R. 10; S. C. 23 Suth. 214.

(n) *Kattama Nachiar v. Dorasinga Tevar*, 6 Mad. H. C. 310.

(o) *Bulakhidas v. Keshavlal*, 6 Bom. 85. See post, § 570.

(p) 1 W. MacN. 24; D. K. S. i. 3, § 3; *Bijia Debia v. Mt. Unnapoorna*, 8 S. D. 26 (35); per curiam, *Dowlut Kooer v. Burma Deo*, 14 B. L. R. 246 (note); S. C. 22 Suth. 55; *Kattama Nachiar v. Dorasinga Tevar*, 6 Mad. H. C. 332.



a married daughter or others, who would regularly succeed if she had never existed (*q*). There seems to be no reason for the alleged rule, and the High Court of Bengal has finally decided that the alleged exception does not exist (*r*).

Exclusion of daughters and their issue in Punjab.

§ 517. In Northern India the principle of agnation prevails in its strictest form. Not only are agnates preferred to cognates, but in many tribes of the Punjab cognates are absolutely excluded from succession, so that the landed property of the family may not pass out of the gotra. Even such near relations as daughters and their sons are debarred from inheritance (*s*). In numerous cases from Oudh which have come under my notice in appeal to the Privy Council, the village *wajib-ul-arz* states that whether the property be ancestral or self-acquired, daughters and daughter's children have no right of inheritance. A circular of the Chief Commissioner of Oudh, 42 of 1864, lays down the same rule as regards the great Chattri families of that province.

Position of daughter's son.

Origin of his right.

§ 518. THE DAUGHTER'S SON, though a *sapinda*, is not a *gotraja sapinda*. He is nearer in degree, but exactly similar in class, to a sister's son or an aunt's son, who only come in as *bandhus* (*t*). Yet, according to all systems, even those which prefer the *gotraja sapinda* as far as the seventh degree, and the *Samanodakas* as far as the fourteenth degree, to the *bandhus*, he comes in before brothers and other more remote *sapindas*. The cause of this peculiar favour is to be found in the old practice of appointing a daughter to raise up issue for a man who had none. The daughter so appointed was herself considered as equal to a son. Naturally her son was equivalent to a grandson, and as the merits of son and grandson are equal, he ranked as a son (*u*). Consequently, we find him enumerated among

(*q*) Daya Bhaga, xi. 2, § 30.

(*r*) *Timmoni v. Nibarun*, 9 Cal. 154.

(*s*) Punjab Customs, 72; Punjab Customary Law, II. 80; III. 48.

(*t*) *Ante* § 464. Apararka treats the daughter's son as a mere *bandhu*, and as such postpones him to the *gotraja sapindas*. *Sarvadhikari*, 791.

(*u*) Mann, ix. § 127—136; *Vasishtha*, xvii. § 12; *ante*, § 478.



the subsidiary sons, and taking a very high rank among them, generally second or third (*v*). Subsequently the appointment of a daughter to raise up issue for her father became obsolete (*w*). But the fact of the nearness of daughter and daughter's son remained, and their natural claim to succession on the ground of mere consanguinity recommended itself for general acceptance. The daughter's son ceased to rank as son, but he retained his place next in succession to the daughter, or where there was no daughter (*x*). In some parts of Northern India he is excluded by special custom (*y*).

The daughter's son is not enumerated in the list of heirs by *Yajñavalkya* (*z*), and from this it was at one time suggested by some commentators that his right did not accrue till all those who were enumerated had been exhausted (*a*). Mr. W. MacNaghten also states that he is not recognized as an heir by the Mithila school (*b*). But this seems to be incorrect, even as regards the *Vivada Chintamani*, which appears to admit him after both parents (*c*). It is now settled, however, after an elaborate examination of all the Mithila authorities, that the daughter's son is admitted by them after the daughter just as elsewhere (*d*). Mithila.

§ 519. A daughter's son can never succeed to the estate of his grandfather, so long as there is in existence any daughter who is entitled to take, either as heir or by survivorship to her other sisters (*e*). The reason is that he takes, He succeeds after all daughters.

(*v*) See table, *ante*, § 64.

(*w*) *Smṛiti Chandrika*, x. § 5, 6. See question whether this is so raised, but not decided. *Thakoor Joobnath v. Court of Wards*, 2 I. A. 163; S. C. 15 B. L. R. 190; S. C. 23 Suth. 409.

(*x*) *Mitakshara*, ii. 2, § 6; *Smṛiti Chandrika*, xi, 2, § 28; V. May., iv. 8, § 18; *Daya Bhaga*, xi. 2, § 17—29; D. K. S. i. 4; *Vivada Chintamani*, 294.

(*y*) *Punjab Customs*, 16, 37; *ante*, § 517.

(*z*) *Yajñavalkya*, ii. § 135, 136.

(*a*) *Daya Bhaga*, xi. 2, § 27; D. K. S. i. 4, § 3.

(*b*) 1 W. MacN. 23; and so the pandits, *Pokhnarain v. Mt. Seesphool*, 3 S. D. 114 (153).

(*c*) *Vivada Chintamani*, 294.

(*d*) *Surja Kumari v. Gandhrap*, 6 S. D. 140 (168).

(*e*) *Aumirtolall v. Rajoneekant*, 2 I. A. 113; S. C. 15 B. L. R. 10; S. C. 23 Suth. 214; *Sastri v. Vengu Ammal*, Mad. Dec. of 1861, 137; 1 W. MacN. 24;

Takes *per capita*.

not as heir to any daughter who may have died, but as heir to his own grandfather, and, of course, cannot take at all so long as there is a nearer heir in existence. For the same reason, sons by different daughters all take *per capita* not *per stirpes*; that is to say, if there are two daughters, one of whom has three sons, and the other has four sons, on the death of the first daughter, the whole property passes to the second, and on her death, it passes to the seven sons in equal shares (*f*). And on the same principle, where the estate is impartible, it passes at the death of the last daughter to the eldest of all the grandsons then living, and not to the eldest son of the last daughter who held the estate (*g*). Daughter's sons do not take as coparceners with right of survivorship. Such survivorship only exists where the property has been taken as unobstructed heritage. It is obvious that such a coparcenary could not exist in the cases of sons who might all belong to families differing in gotra from such other, and from that of their maternal grandfather (*h*). It was laid down by the Bengal pandits in one case, that if property passes to daughter's sons, any such sons born afterwards will also take shares, in reduction of the shares already taken (*i*). But this assumes that a daughter capable of producing sons is still alive. If so, the grandsons could not take at all.

Is full owner.

§ 520. A daughter's son, on whom the inheritance has once actually fallen, takes it as full owner, and thereupon he becomes a new stock of descent, and on his death the succession passes to his heir, and not back again to the heir

2 W. MacN. 44, 57; *Ramdan v. Beharee*, 1 N. W. P. 200; *Bajinath v. Mahabir*, 1 All. 608; *Jamiyatram v. Bai Jamna*, 2 Bom. H. C. 10, *contra* is now overruled. See *Lakshmebai v. Ganpat Moroba*, 5 Bom. H. C. (O. C. J.) 139; *Sibchunder v. Sreemutty Treepoorah*, Fulton, 98; *Sant Kumar v. Deo Suran*, 8 All. 365.

(*f*) 1 W. MacN. 24; 1 Stra. H. L. 139; 3 Dig. 501; *Ramdhun v. Kishenkanth*, 3 S. D. 100 (133).

(*g*) *Kattama Nachiar v. Dorasinga Tevar*, 6 Mad. H. C. 310; *Muttu Vaduganadha v. Dorasinga Tevar*, 8 I. A. 99; S. C. 3 Mad. 290. The doctrine stated in the *Sarasvati Vilasa* (§ 632, 655) that property as soon as it passes to a daughter vests at once in that daughter's son and in his son, cannot be now maintained.

(*h*) *Jasoda Koer v. Sheo Pershad*, 17 Cal. 33; *Gopalasami v. Chinnasami*, 7 Mad. 458.

(*i*) *Mt. Solukna v. Ramdolul*, 1 S. D. 324 (434).

of his grandfather (*k*). But until the death of the last daughter capable of being an heiress, he takes no interest whatever, and therefore can transmit none. Therefore, if he should die before the last of such daughters leaving a son, that son would not succeed, because he belongs to a completely different family, and he would offer no oblation to the maternal grandfather of his own father (*l*). Nor can the daughter's daughter ever succeed, except in Bombay, whether her mother has taken or not, because she confers no benefits on her maternal grandfather, and is estranged from his lineage (*m*).

Daughter's son  
has no vested  
right.

Daughter's  
daughter.

§ 521. PARENTS.—The line of descent from the owner being now exhausted, the next to inherit are his parents. And here, for the first time, there is a variance between the different schools of law as to the order in which they take. The right of the mother as an heir was very early recognized (§ 480), but her precedence as regards the father, who was also stated to be an heir, was left uncertain. The Mitakshara gives the preference to the mother on the ground of propinquity, and is followed in Mithila by the Vivada Chintamani; and this is stated by Mr. W. MacNaghten to be the law of Benares and Mithila (*n*). The Smriti Chandrika prefers the father, upon the authority of a text of *Bhrat Vishnu* (*o*). The Madhaviya leaves the point undecided, and Varadrajah, apparently following *Srikrishna*, seems to make both inherit together (*p*). *Sambhu* says that the point is immaterial, as whichever of the two takes will take

Precedence.

3 Dig. 494, 502; *Ramjoy v. Tarrachund*, 2 M. Dig. 79; *Sibta v. Badri*, 3 All. 134.

(*l*) *Daya Bhaga*, xi. 2, § 2; iv. 3, § 34; *Ilias v. Agund Rai*, 3 S. D. 37 (50); *Senkul v. Aurulananda*, Mad. Dec. of 1862, 27; *Dharap Nath v. Gobind Saran*, 8 All. 614; *Strinavasa v. Dandayudapani*, 12 Mad. 411. See to the contrary, but I think erroneously, *Sheo Sehai v. Omed*, 6 S. D. 301 (378); *Doe v. Ganpat*, Perry, O. C. 133. The son of a daughter's son may take in the absence of other heirs as a *bhandhu*. *Krishnaya v. Pichamma*, 11 Mad. 287.

(*m*) *Daya Bhaga*, xi. 2, § 2; F. MacN. 6; W. & B. 477, 496.

(*n*) *Mitakshara*, ii. 3. See Notes by Colebrooke. *Vivada Chintamani*, 293, 294; 2 W. MacN. 55, n.; *ante*, § 471. The *Sarasvati Vilasa* also follows the rule of the *Mitakshara* in preference to that of the *Smriti Chandrika*, § 566—572.

(*o*) *Smriti Chandrika*, xi. 3, § 9. So also *Apararka*, *Sarvadrikari*, 427.

(*p*) *Madhaviya*, § 88; *Varadrajah*, 86. See 3 Dig.

for the benefit of the other (*q*). The Viramitrodaya, while giving a general preference to the doctrine of the Mitakshara, reconciles it with the conflicting text of *Bhrat Vishnu* by making the precedence of father or mother depend on personal merit, which again he appears to test by pecuniary rather than by moral considerations (*r*). In Bengal it is quite settled that the father takes before the mother, both on the express authority of *Vishnu*, and upon principles of religious efficacy (*s*). The Mayukha takes the same view, and a futwah to the same effect is recorded from Poonah. But Messrs. West and Bühler adopt the opposite order on the authority of the Mitakshara and their opinion has been recently confirmed by the High Court (*t*). In Guzerat the father is preferred to the mother on the authority of the Mayukha (*u*).

#### Stepmother.

§ 522. According to Bengal law a stepmother does not succeed to her stepson. This would necessarily be so upon the principles of *Jimuta Vahana*, as she does not participate in the oblations offered by such stepson (*v*). The Mitakshara does not notice the point, but the reasons given by *Vijnanesvara* for allowing the mother to inherit, viz., her close relationship to her son, seem to show that he could only have had the natural mother in view (*w*). The Bengal pandits have, on several occasions, asserted that the word *mata* in the Mitakshara includes a stepmother, and, in accordance with that view, it was decided that a woman in Orissa would inherit to her stepson (*x*). These opinions, however, were reviewed by the Full Bench of the Bengal High Court in a case from Mithila, and it was decided that

(*q*) Smiriti Chandrika, xi. 3, § 8.

(*r*) Viramit., pp. 185—191.

(*s*) Vishnu, xvii. § 6, 7; Daya Bhaga, xi. 3; D. K. S. i. 5; 3 Dig. 502—505; 2 W. MacN. 54; Hemluta v. Goluck Chunder, 7 S. D. 108 (127).

(*t*) V. May., iv. 8, § 14; W. & B. 110, 448; V. N. Mandlik, 360, 378; Balkrishna v. Lakshman, 14 Bom. 605.

(*u*) Khodabai v. Bahdar, 6 Bom. 541.

(*v*) Daya Bhaga, iii. 2, § 30; xi. 6, § 3; D. K. S. vi. § 23; vii. § 3; 2 W. MacN. 62; Lakhi v. Bhairab, 5 S. D. 315 (369); Bhyrobee v. Nubkissen, 6 S. D. 53 (61); Alhadmoni v. Gokulmoni, S. D. of 1852, 563.

(*w*) Mitakshara, ii. 3; acc. 1 Stra. H. L. 144; Kesserbai v. Valab, 4 Bom. 208.

(*x*) 2 W. MacN. 63; Bishenpuria v. Soogunda, 1 S. D. 37 (49); Narainee v. Hirkishor, ib. 89 (52).

a stepmother was equally excluded by the Mitakshara and the Daya Bhaga. The same rule applies *à fortiori* to higher ascendants, such as a grandmother (*y*). In Bombay it has been decided that a stepmother cannot be introduced as an heir under the word "mother," but that she is a more distant heir as the wife of a *gotraja sapinda*, and, therefore, herself a *gotraja sapinda*, according to the doctrines of that Presidency. Her place in the line of heirs has not yet been settled (*z*). In Madras also it has been decided that a stepmother cannot succeed in competition with a *sapinda* of the deceased (*a*).

In Bengal it has been held that the rule which incapacitates an unchaste wife from succession, applies also to a mother. This is based not upon any express text relating to mothers, but upon the authority of *Rughunandan*, who lays it down that the passages in the Daya Bhaga which refer to a wife have a general application to all female heirs. He expressly asserts that in the text of *Katyayana*, "the wife who is chaste takes the wealth of her husband," the word "wife" is illustrative (*b*). On the other hand in Bombay and Madras it has been decided that the condition as to chastity only applies to a widow, and the inclination of the Court of the North-West Provinces seems to be in the same direction (*c*). It is admitted that an estate, once taken by a mother, will not be divested on the ground of unchastity (*d*). Since Act XV of 1856 (Hindu Widow Marriage) a mother will not lose her rights as heiress to her son, by reason of a second marriage previous to his death (*e*).

Disability  
arising from  
unchastity.

§ 523. BROTHERS.—Next to parents come brothers. There Brothers.

(*y*) *Lala Joti v. Mt. Durani*, B. L. R. Sup. Vol. 67 ; S. C. Suth. Sp. No. 173.

(*z*) *Kesserbai v. Valab*, 4 Bom. 188.

(*a*) *Kumaravelu v. Virana*, 5 Mad. 29 ; *Muttammal v. Vengalakshmi*, *ib.* 32 ; *Mari v. Chinnammal*, 8 Mad. 107.

(*b*) *Ramnath v. Durga*, 4 Cal. 550.

(*c*) *Advyapa v. Rudrava*, 4 Bom. 104 ; *Kojiyadu v. Lakshmi*, 5 Mad. 149 ; *Deokee v. Sookhdeo*, 2 N.-W. P., p. 363 ; *Ganga v. Ghasitu*, 1 All. 46 ; *ante*, § 518.

(*d*) See cases in two preceding notes.

(*e*) *Akora v. Boreani*, 2 B. L. R. (A. C. J.) 199 ; S. C. 11 Suth. 82 ; *ante*, § 512.



frequently happens in such cases, the mere physical custody is obtained in the first instance by a false pretence, that will be the offence of cheating, but the subsequent appropriation of it will be theft. It was the duty of a servant daily to ascertain the amount of money required to pay current demands upon his master, and then to obtain the amount from the cashier, and to discharge the claims. He designedly demanded more than the necessary amount from the cashier, paid the charges out of the sum received, and appropriated the balance to himself. It was held that he still retained the balance as a servant, the master's possession being unchanged, and that the misappropriation was theft, whether the excess was originally obtained by a false pretence or not.<sup>1</sup> And so it would be if a man at a railway station, intending to steal a passenger's luggage, induced the passenger to entrust it to him by representing that he was a railway porter. From the moment he got possession of the luggage he would have been guilty of cheating, but from the moment he moved the luggage away from the direction to the train, he would be guilty of theft.<sup>2</sup>

§ 484. In order to maintain a charge of theft, it is not necessary to show that the person out of whose possession the property was taken was the owner, or even had any title to it whatever. If X steals the goods of A, and then Z steals them again from X, both X and Z have committed theft. Under English law much difficulty arose from the necessity of stating whose property the article stolen was, and in the case of theft from a thief the difficulty was got over by holding that the possession of the original owner was unchanged.<sup>3</sup> Under the Code, the question of property is immaterial, but where the person from whom the goods were taken had only the physical custody of them, it would still be advisable to frame a count stating that they were taken out of the possession of the person who is, in law, considered to have had the possession at the time of the taking.<sup>4</sup>

§ 485. Dishonest Intention.—(3) There must be a dishonest intention at the time of the act. The word "dishonest" is defined by s. 24 as involving an intention "of

<sup>1</sup> *Reg. v. Cooke*, L.R., 1 C.C. 295, explaining *Reg. v. Thompson*, 32 L.J. M.C. 57.

<sup>2</sup> 2 East, P.C. 697.

<sup>3</sup> 1 Hale, P.C. 507; 2 East, P.C. 654.

<sup>4</sup> 2 East, P.C. 652.

causing wrongful gain to one person, or wrongful loss to another." A person who removes the goods of another at a fire, with the honest intention of preserving them for the owner, and who subsequently conceals them and denies possession of them, would commit misappropriation under s. 403, but would not be guilty of theft.<sup>1</sup> Nor can there be dishonesty where the defendant does what he *bonâ fide*, though erroneously, thinks he has a right to do. One of the earliest definitions of larceny describes it as "the treacherously taking away from another, movable corporeal goods, against the will of him to whom they do belong;" and then explains, "it is said treacherously, because that if the taker of them conceive the goods to be his own, and that he may well take them, in such case it is no offence, nor in case where one conceive that it pleases the owner of the goods that he takes them."<sup>2</sup> In such cases the maxim *Ignorantia legis neminem excusat* has no application. The ignorance does not operate to excuse the crime, but to show that one of the essential ingredients of the crime is wanting. So, where a servant found fishermen poaching on his master's premises, and seized their nets, which he refused to give up without his employer's orders, the Bengal High Court held that a conviction for theft must be quashed, as it was clear the prisoner was acting *bonâ fide* in the interests of his master without any dishonest intention.<sup>3</sup>

§ 486. It must not, however, be supposed that even a *bonâ fide* claim of right to property in the possession of another will always be a sufficient answer to a charge of theft, if the right claimed cannot be fairly supposed to justify the mode in which it was exercised. "If the property was in the possession of the prosecutor in such a way that he had a right to hold it against the prisoner, that is, that the prisoner could not get it without the consent of the prosecutor, then it would be theft, if the prisoner dishonestly possessed himself of it with the intention of appropriating it."<sup>4</sup> Still less would it be any defence that the accused had a claim for the price of an article which had subsequently been sold to a third person, and had passed into that person's possession.<sup>5</sup> Or, that he took the property in satisfaction of

<sup>1</sup> *Leigh's case*, 2 East, P.C. 694.

<sup>2</sup> *Mirror*, cited 3 Steph. Crim. L. 134; 1 Hale, P.C. 508; *Knight's case*, 2 East, P.C. 510.

<sup>3</sup> *Reg. v. Nobinchunder*, 6 Suth. Cr. 79.

<sup>4</sup> *Per Scotland, C.J., Reg. v. Ammoyee*, 4th Mad. Sess., 1862.

<sup>5</sup> *Reg. v. Chellen*, Scotland, C.J., 4th Mad. Sess., 1862.

a debt due to himself.<sup>1</sup> And so, although a joint owner of an undivided family property can neither be sued, nor indicted, for taking what appears to be more than his own share, because the extent of his rights can only be settled by taking the accounts of the whole coparcenary,<sup>2</sup> it would be theft if he took the goods for the fraudulent purpose of getting any dishonest advantage for himself. For instance, if he secreted any part of the family property for the purpose of appropriating it for his own exclusive benefit; or if, when a division was in progress, he took possession of any articles without the knowledge of the other co-parceners, for the purpose of securing to himself an extra share.<sup>3</sup> And so it would be when the holder of the goods had some interest in them, which authorized him to retain them against the owner. If I pawn my watch it would be theft to take it away from the pawnbroker's shop without repaying the loan.<sup>4</sup> And, similarly, if the effect of the taking were to charge the holder with its price, as when a member of a benefit society entered the room of a person who, was both a member and the manager of the society, with whom a box containing the funds of the society was deposited, and took and carried it away, this was held to be larceny, the manager being answerable to the society for the funds. And a man might even be convicted of stealing his own money from his own servant, if the servant, being ignorant of the manner in which the money was abstracted, would have to make it good.<sup>5</sup> There can be no doubt that a member of a joint family may commit theft by stealing the separate property of one of his co-parceners.<sup>6</sup>

§ 487. Where the dishonest intention is established, it makes no difference in the prisoner's guilt that the act was not intended to procure any personal benefit to himself. In one case a man was indicted for horse stealing, whereupon his companion broke into the prosecutor's stable, took out another horse, drove it into a coal pit and so killed it, with the view of suggesting that a similar accident had happened

<sup>1</sup> *Reg. v. Preonath*, 5 Suth. Cr. 68.

<sup>2</sup> *Jacobs v. Seward*, L.R., 4 C.P. 328. See cases cited, Mayne, Hindu Law, §§ 274, 275.

<sup>3</sup> *Reg. v. Chockanath*, 3rd Mad. Sess., 1864, Bittleston, J.; *Virankutti v. Chiyamu*, 7 Mad. 557, 560; *Reg. v. Ponnurangam*, 10 Mad. 186.

<sup>4</sup> Section 378, illus. (k); *Reg. v. Gangaram*, 9 Bom. 135.

<sup>5</sup> *Reg. v. Webster*, 31 L.J. M.C. 17; S.C. L. & C. 77; *Reg. v. Burgess*, 32 L.J. M.C. 185; S.C. L. & C. 299.

<sup>6</sup> *Empress v. Sitaram*, 3 All. 181.



to the first horse. He was found guilty of stealing, though he had never intended to make any other use of the animal.<sup>1</sup> And, so it was held in Bengal, where the prisoner took the prosecutor's bullocks against his will, and distributed them among the creditors of the latter.<sup>2</sup> In a Bombay case, where a number of Hindus had taken a cow out of the possession of a Mohammedan, to prevent its being killed in violation of their religious principles, it was held by Tyrell, J., that they had not committed the theft which is a necessary element in dacoity, because their intention was not to cause the prosecutor wrongful loss, but to prevent the slaughter of kine.<sup>3</sup> It seems to me, however, that in this case the learned judge confounded intention with motive. The prisoners did intend to cause the prosecutor the loss of his cow wrongfully, that is, without any shadow of lawful excuse. Their motive for doing so was a highly conscientious one, and outweighed in their minds the obvious illegality of the act. In a subsequent case, which was quite undistinguishable, an exactly opposite decision was given, and was based on the true ground, that the law is made to protect temporal rights, whatever may be the motives which lead to their violation.<sup>4</sup>

§ 488. Much difficulty arose in many cases under English law, owing to the rule that there must be "an intention to appropriate the chattel, and exercise an active dominion over it."<sup>5</sup> Under the Code no such questions arise. If the dishonest intention, the absence of consent, and the moving are established, the offence will be complete, however temporary may have been the proposed retention.<sup>6</sup> A recent case in Calcutta, however, has imposed a limitation upon this view, which, if sound, is very important.

The case for the prosecution was, that three head of cattle worth Rs. 60 were removed from the complainant's homestead under the immediate order of the defendant, with a view to coerce the complainant to pay a sum of Rs. 14, which he owed the petitioner as rent. The defence consisted of an absolute denial of the charge, and an assertion

<sup>1</sup> *R. v. Abbage*, Russ. & Ry. 292; see, too, *Reg. v. Wynne*, 18 L.J. M.C. 51; S.C. 1 Den. 365; *Reg. v. Jones*, 1 Den. 188.

<sup>2</sup> *Reg. v. Madaru*, 3 Suth. Cr. 2.

<sup>3</sup> *Reg. v. Raghunath Rai*, 15 All. 22.

<sup>4</sup> *Reg. v. Ram Baran*, 15 All. 299. See ante, § 9A.

<sup>5</sup> Per Lord Campbell, C.J., *Reg. v. Trebilcock*, 27 L.J. M.C. 103; S.C. D. & B. 458.

<sup>6</sup> *Reg. v. Nagappa*, 15 Bom. 344.

that the cattle had been voluntarily handed over by the complainant in part payment of a debt due from him. This defence was found to be false, and the defendant was convicted of theft. Before the High Court it was contended that upon the case for the prosecution the offence of theft had not been committed, and this view was adopted by the High Court, after an elaborate examination of the draft Code of 1837, the reports of the various Commissioners thereon, and the entire series of decided cases bearing on the subject. The result that they arrived at was, that there was nothing in s. 378 which required a wider meaning than that given to it by *illustration (1)*, the effect of which is, that it is theft if a person takes the property of another for the purpose of extorting from the owner, in exchange for the thing taken, something which the taker has no right to claim. It followed then that if the claim was undisputed the taking could not be theft.<sup>1</sup> As the judges admitted that the courts of Madras and Bombay had given the section a more extended meaning, it may be permissible to inquire which meaning harmonizes better with the language used by the Legislature.

§ 489. The High Court of Calcutta relied much on what they termed the history of the law, that is, upon the various forms which the Penal Code had assumed from its first draft in 1837 till it became law in 1860. It appears that Mr. Macaulay and his colleagues contemplated the very case under consideration, and they thought that it was an offence, but that it should be punished not as theft, but as something which they termed "the illegal pursuit of legal rights." When the Code was passed, the latter offence was omitted. It might perhaps be inferred that Sir Barnes Peacock thought the offence was included in some other sections, and that s. 378 was framed for the purpose of including one form of it. Such considerations seem, however, to be of little weight, even if they are admissible, when the courts have to construe the language of a Code which is intended to be complete in itself, and to supersede everything that had gone before.<sup>2</sup> The Court then proceeded to say (p. 676): "The words in the present section, 'whoever intending to take dishonestly any movable property out of the possession of another, moves that property, etc.,' must be read with the

<sup>1</sup> *Prosonno Kumar v. Uday Sant*, 22 Cal. 669.

<sup>2</sup> See the remarks of Lord Herschell in *Bank of England v.agliano* (1891), A.C., p. . . .



definitions in ss. 23 and 24, and the sections will then read, 'whoever with the intention of gaining by unlawful means, property to which he is not legally entitled, moves that property, etc.,' and the question comes to be, whether to gain property by unlawful means, means to gain the thing moved for the use of the gainer, or whether it means the gaining possession of it for a time for a temporary purpose. We think that the first is the more natural meaning of the words, and that, even without the history of this section, that is the meaning we should put upon them; but when we know that it is that which the framers intended them to bear, and that the Legislature refused to sanction the explanation which would have given them a wider meaning, we think the matter becomes abundantly clear."

§ 490. It may be submitted, with great respect to the learned judges, that this reasoning is unsound. There was an undoubted theft in this case if the defendant intended to take the property dishonestly. He did so, if he took it with the intention of causing wrongful gain to himself. Then wrongful gain is gain by unlawful means, of property to which the person gaining is not legally entitled. The property spoken of here is the same property which is spoken of in s. 378. It is the property which, being in the possession of one person, is taken out of his possession without his consent. It is not the property which he hopes to gain in exchange for that property. Whether he is or is not entitled to something else, does not render it lawful for the taker to possess himself of property to which he is not entitled. Illustration (l) shows that the gaining possession of such property by unlawful means is theft, even though a temporary possession only is contemplated. But the judges appear to have only looked at one half of the sections 23 and 24 to which they refer. A person is therein declared to do a thing dishonestly, if he does it with the intention of causing wrongful loss to another. Wrongful loss is the loss by unlawful means, of property to which the person gaining is not legally entitled. The property here spoken of is clearly the complainant's own property. It cannot be disputed that the complainant was in lawful possession of his cows, and that he lost them by unlawful means, and that the defendant was not legally entitled to the cows, and did not suppose that they were his. No one can lawfully walk into his debtor's house, and seize any property he likes, as a material guarantee for the payment

of his debt. The act is unlawful, and the means adopted are unlawful. The defendant if sued in a civil court would have no defence, and the existence of a debt would not even go in reduction of damages. It would appear, then, that every element in the definition of theft was satisfied by the facts of the case.<sup>1</sup> The results following from the decision are certainly not such as to recommend it to general approval.

§ 491. **Without Consent.**—The taking must be without the consent of the person in possession, which is something different from being against his consent (*ante*, §§ 194, 465). There can be no theft where the owner actually consents to, or authorizes the taking. But where the taking is the exclusive and spontaneous act of the prisoner, it is no defence that the owner has offered facilities for it, in order to secure the detection of the thief. For instance, where A conspired with several persons to induce two others, who were ignorant of the design, to rob him on the highway, that he might obtain the reward offered for apprehending highway robbers, and A accordingly went, in pursuance of the agreement, to the place appointed, where the supposed robbery was effected, it was held that no felony had been committed.<sup>2</sup> So, if a person, who desires to steal the property of another, applies to the owner's servant to help him, and the servant tells the master, who desires him to hand over the property to the thief, that he may be taken in the act, this is no theft, as the owner consented to the taking, but the actual taker may be convicted of abetting a theft by the servant.<sup>3</sup> On the other hand, where in a similar case the owner arranged with his watchman to admit the thieves at the outer door, but locked up his counting-house, and a desk in which a quantity of marked money was left, and the prisoners were captured, after they had broken open the locks and carried away the money, their act was held to be larceny.<sup>4</sup>

§ 492. The English lawyers hold, that even where the owner of the property gives it up to another it is still larceny, if he is induced to give it up by a trick; as where a person presented himself at a post-office, and obtained a watch which was lying there, by falsely representing that he

<sup>1</sup> See also cases cited, *ante*, § 487.

<sup>2</sup> *Reg. v. Macdaniel*, 2 East, P.C. 665.

<sup>3</sup> *Per Alderson, B., Reg. v. Bannen*, 1 C. & K., at p. 301; *Reg. v. Troylukho Nath*, 4 Cal. 366.

<sup>4</sup> *Rex v. Eggington*, 2 East, P.C. 666.

was the party to whom it was addressed ;<sup>1</sup> or by a degree of coercion which falls short of what would constitute robbery ; as where the defendant, acting as auctioneer at a mock auction, knocked down an article to a woman who, he knew, had not bid for it, and refused to allow her to leave the room unless she paid for it.<sup>2</sup> In the former case, the consent was clearly ineffectual under s. 90, as being given under a misconception of fact. In the latter case, it is doubtful whether the threatened detention would cause fear of injury within the meaning of that section. But it is very doubtful whether either case could be dealt with as theft under the Penal Code. The English law requires the owner's consent to the change of property in the goods,<sup>3</sup> and that consent may be absent though he assents to the manual possession by another. But the Penal Code seems merely to inquire, whether the removal, if fraudulent, has been without the owner's consent. There certainly has in the above cases been a consent by the owner to the removal, though brought about by fraudulent means. At most, the crime is a constructive theft, and the object of the Code is to get rid of constructive offences. Every instance of the sort would be indictable under s. 490 as cheating. Until, therefore, an authoritative decision has been given, it would be well always to join a count under that section.

§ 493. In the great majority of cases, theft is clandestine, and effected absolutely without the knowledge of the owner. Of course it will be equally theft where the taking is open and unconcealed, provided it is without the consent of the person in possession. Where the taking is effected with any of the circumstances of violence or intimidation stated in s. 390, it will become robbery, but it does not cease to be theft, and where there is any doubt whether the facts of the case will establish a robbery, it is better to add a charge for theft. "No sudden taking of a thing unawares from the person, as by snatching anything from the hand or head, is sufficient to constitute a robbery unless some injury is done to the person."<sup>4</sup> A mere struggle for the possession of the article raised the offence to robbery under English law,<sup>5</sup> but it would still be mere theft under the Code, unless some

<sup>1</sup> *Reg. v. Kay*, D. & B. 231 ; S.C. 25 L.J. M.C. 149.

<sup>2</sup> *Reg. v. McGrath*, L.R., 1 C.C. 205.

<sup>3</sup> *Reg. v. McKale*, L.R., 1 C.C. 129.

<sup>4</sup> 2 East, P.C. 708.

<sup>5</sup> *Davies' case*, 2 East, P.C. 709.



actual hurt, or wrongful restraint was caused or attempted to be caused in the contest.

§ 494. **Moving.**—(4) Lastly, in addition to all the other requisites, there must be a moving of the property with a view to the taking of it. As the essence of the offence consists in the fraudulent taking, that taking must have been commenced. It is not necessary to prove that the goods were removed out of their owner's reach, or were carried away at all from the place in which they were found. Removal, or carrying away, which is a literal translation of the term *asportatio* required by the English law, implies something more than the mere moving, which is required by the Code. For instance, where a man lifted up and set on end a package of linen, which was lying in a waggon, and cut the wrapper to get at its contents, but was apprehended before he had taken anything out; and where a pickpocket got a purse out of the owner's pocket, but was unable to carry it away, because it was attached to his pocket by a string; the judges held that there had been no larceny, "for a carrying away in order to constitute a felony must be a removal of the goods from the place where they were; and the felon must, for the instant at least, have the entire and absolute possession of them."<sup>1</sup> Under the Code the mere cutting down a tree completes the theft.<sup>2</sup> In the case of a post-office letter-carrier, the taking of a letter out of the bag in which letters were carried during delivery, and placing it in his own pocket, was deemed sufficient, the jury having found that he put the letter in his own pocket intending to steal it.<sup>3</sup> And so it was held in Madras, where a letter-sorter, instead of handing a bearing letter out for delivery in the usual course, secreted it on his person, that he might give it to the delivery peon himself, with a view to sharing the postage payable by the addressee. The High Court ruled that by this act he took the letter out of the possession of the post-office authorities, without their consent, for a fraudulent purpose, and therefore committed theft.<sup>4</sup>

§ 495. **Husband and Wife.**—There is one point upon which the Indian courts appear to be in conflict with the English

<sup>1</sup> *Cherry's case*, 2 East, P.C. 556; *Wilkinson's case*, *ibid.*

<sup>2</sup> Section 378, *illus. (a)*, 5 Mad. H.C. Rulings 36.

<sup>3</sup> *Reg. v. Poynton*, L. & C. 247; S.C. 32 L.J. M.C. 29.

<sup>4</sup> *Reg. v. Venkatasami*, 14 Mad. 229.

courts and with each other, viz. upon the question, whether husband and wife can be convicted of stealing from each other. According to English law, husband and wife can bring no criminal charge against each other, and cannot be allowed to give evidence against each other upon any criminal charge, unless in cases where personal injuries have been effected by violence or coercion by the husband upon the wife, or by the wife upon her husband. This doctrine is founded upon the legal identity of husband and wife, which, according to the habit of English lawyers, is disregarded in cases where it would lead to results too flagrantly absurd.<sup>1</sup> Consequently, neither wife nor husband can be convicted of stealing from each other, nor can any one be convicted of receiving from either property stolen by one from the other, because where there is no thief there can be no receiver.<sup>2</sup> Nor can any one be convicted of larceny for assisting a wife to remove her husband's property, even though her intent be wrongfully to deprive her husband of his goods, and although she is about to leave him, provided she is not leaving him for any adulterous purpose.<sup>3</sup> Where, however, a man, acting in concert with a wife, who has committed, or who is about to commit adultery with him, helps her to carry away her husband's goods, he may be convicted of larceny, as the adultery, by revoking the wife's authority to deal with her husband's goods, makes her taking fraudulent from the first.<sup>4</sup> These principles have, however, been to some extent trenchanted upon by the Married Women's Property Acts of 1882 and 1884. By the former Act, 45 & 46 Vict., c. 75, ss. 12, 16, either husband or wife may commit larceny by stealing the separate property of the other, provided such act is done by either while leaving or deserting, or while about to leave or desert, the other. Where criminal proceedings can be taken under this Act, then, under the later Act, 47 & 48 Vict., c. 14, husband and wife may give evidence against each other.

§ 496. As regards India, it might almost be sufficient to say that there is nothing in the Code to warrant the application of the English rules to cases governed by it. *Illus. (o)*

<sup>1</sup> *Reg. v. Lord Mayor of London*, 16 Q.B.D. 772.

<sup>2</sup> *Reg. v. Kenny*, 2 Q.B.D. 307.

<sup>3</sup> *Reg. v. Avery*, Bell, 150; S.C. 28 L.J. M.C. 185.

<sup>4</sup> *Reg. v. Featherstone*, 23 L.J. M.C. 127; S.C. Dears. 369; *Reg. v. Mutters*, L. & C. 511; S.C. 34 L.J. M.C. 54.



to s. 378 has been relied on as showing an intent to adopt at least part of that rule; but that illustration is probably only meant to distinguish the case of one who must necessarily know the wife's authority had ceased, from the case in the preceding illustration, where he might suppose it to exist. Where husband and wife are living together on the usual terms, each possesses, or may reasonably suppose that he or she possesses, a considerable authority to deal with the goods of the other. Acts done under such a belief can never be theft (*ante*, § 485). The limits of such a belief are easily reached. Neither under Hindu nor under Muhammedan law does either party to a marriage obtain any right to the separate property of the other, except in certain clearly defined cases. The same rule is expressly laid down by s. 4 of the Indian Succession Act, X. of 1865, as regards marriages governed by it. By s. 120 of the Indian Evidence Act, I. of 1872, husband and wife are competent in criminal cases to testify for or against each other. There is, therefore, no indication in the law of India of that mystical union of persons by marriage which should render a deliberate theft by one from the other an innocent act.

§ 497. The current of recent authority in India appears to be in favour of this view. In a case under the old law, the Bengal Foujdary Adalat ruled that a Hindu husband cannot be convicted of robbing his wife, the wife, according to the Hindu law, being completely under the control of her husband.<sup>1</sup> And so, Scotland, C.J. directed the jury, that a count which charged a prisoner as a receiver could not be sustained, inasmuch as he had received the goods from the prisoner's wife, and she could not have been convicted of stealing from her husband.<sup>2</sup> On the other hand, it has been laid down in Bombay that a Muhammedan wife may be convicted of stealing from her husband, as there does not exist the same identity of interest between husband and wife under Muhammedan as under English law.<sup>3</sup> And in a Madras case, where two persons were indicted, the one for adultery with and enticing away the wife of the prosecutor and theft of his property, and the other for abetting the enticing and theft; and it appeared that the wife, by means of false keys supplied to her by the second prisoner, got possession of the

<sup>1</sup> *Rex v. Ootumram*, 3 M. Dig. 129, s. 185.

<sup>2</sup> *Reg. v. Venkata Reddy*, 4th Mad. Sess., 1864.

<sup>3</sup> *Reg. v. Khatabai*, 6 Bom. H.C. C.C. 9.

prosecutor's jewels, and handed them over to the prisoner, but the adultery was negatived, the High Court held that it was still open to the jury to say that the prisoner dishonestly took part in the removal of the husband's property.<sup>1</sup> In the latest case on the subject, a Hindu wife, during her husband's absence, removed his property from his house to that of her paramour. On the husband's return he charged them both with theft. Both were convicted, but on appeal the deputy magistrate acquitted the wife on the strength of the illustration (o) to s. 378. The High Court reversed the acquittal. They said: "There is no presumption of law that the wife and husband constitute one person in India for the purpose of criminal law. Theft is an offence against property. And where there is no community of property, each may commit theft in regard to the property of the other. The question is one of intention. If the wife, removing the husband's property from his house, does so with dishonest intention, she is guilty of theft."<sup>2</sup>

§ 498. **Theft by Clerk or Servant.**—Theft is punishable with increased penalties when committed in respect of any property in possession of his master or employer, by any one being a clerk or servant, or being employed in the capacity of a clerk or servant (s. 381). Exactly the same words are used in s. 408, where their meaning will be discussed (*post*, § 518). In their application to s. 381 they are not likely to cause much difficulty. Property is in the possession of a master or employer, if it is in the possession of any other clerk or servant who holds it for the master;<sup>3</sup> or if it has been received by the clerk or servant on account of his master, and has been appropriated to his use, as, for instance, by placing it in a till, cart, barge, granary, or any other place of deposit, for property belonging to his master, or by crediting it to him in account.<sup>4</sup> If, however, the master has never had any possession of the property except by the delivery of it by a third party to the servant for the use of his master, and if the servant has not done any act to change his own original possession into a possession on behalf of the master, his misappropriation of the property

<sup>1</sup> 5 Mad. H.C. Rulings 23. This is directly opposed to the decision in *Reg. v. Avery*, *ante*, § 495.

<sup>2</sup> *Reg. v. Butchi*, 17 Mad. 401. This case is directly opposed to *Reg. v. Kenny*, *ante*, § 495, where the wife was also an adulteress.

<sup>3</sup> *R. v. Murray*, 1 Mood, 276.

<sup>4</sup> *Spears' case*, 2 Leach. 825; *Reg. v. Read*, Dears. 168, 257; S.C. 23 L.J. M.C. 25; *Reg. v. Wright*, D. & B. 431; S.C. 27 L.J. M.C. 65.

to his own use would not be theft under s. 381, but criminal misappropriation under s. 403, or criminal breach of trust under s. 405.<sup>1</sup> In a case where the prisoners, who were burkundauzes, placed on guard over the Police Treasury buildings, stole money in a box which was placed in the building, the Court held that they should be convicted under s. 381, as having stolen the property of their master while being employed as servants.<sup>2</sup> In a similar case, where the prisoners were constables employed to guard the house of a private person, the Court convicted under s. 380, not under s. 381.<sup>3</sup> The reason of the difference was, that in the former case the prisoners were the servants of the Government, to whom the building belonged, while they were not such in the latter case.

§ 499. **Evidence of Theft.**—In cases where no direct proof can be given of the actual taking, the usual evidence of a theft consists in showing that the prisoner was found in possession of, or dealing with the stolen property.<sup>4</sup> The weight to be given to such evidence is purely a question of fact, and may vary from absolute proof to the weakest degree of suspicion.

“It may be laid down generally, that wherever the property of one man which has been taken from him without his knowledge, or consent, is found upon another, it is incumbent on that other to prove how he came by it; otherwise, the presumption is that he obtained it feloniously. This, like every other presumption, is strengthened, weakened, or rebutted, by concomitant circumstances, too numerous in the nature of the thing to be detailed. It will be sufficient to allude to some of the most prominent, such as the length of time which has elapsed between the loss of the property and the finding it again; either as it may furnish more or less doubt of the identity of it; or as it may have changed hands oftener in the mean time; or as it may increase the difficulty to the prisoner of accounting for how he came by it, in all which considerations that of the nature of the property must generally be mingled. So the probability of the prisoner's having been near the spot from whence the property was supposed to be taken at the time, as well as his conduct during the whole transaction,

<sup>1</sup> *Waite's case*, 2 East, P.C. 570; *Baseley's case*, *ibid.* 571.

<sup>2</sup> *Reg. v. Juggurnath Singh*, 2 Suth. Cr. 55.

<sup>3</sup> *Reg. v. Boidnath Singh*, 3 Suth. Cr. 29.

<sup>4</sup> Evidence Act, I. of 1872, s. 114 (a).



both before and after the discovery, are material ingredients in the investigation. But the bare circumstance of finding in one's possession property of the same kind which another has lost, unless that other can from marks, or other circumstances, satisfy the Court and jury of the identity of it, is not in general sufficient evidence of the goods having been feloniously obtained. Though, where the fact is very recent, so as to afford reasonable presumption that the property could not have been acquired in any other manner, the Court is warranted in concluding it is the same, unless the prisoner can prove the contrary. Thus, a man being found coming out of another's barn, and, upon search, corn being found upon him of the same kind with what was in the barn, is pregnant evidence of guilt."<sup>1</sup>

Where property is found in the possession of another immediately after it is missed, the presumption is in general overwhelming that the person is the thief. Lord Hale, however, mentions a case in which a man who was found in possession of a horse on the very day on which it was stolen, was tried and condemned "before a very learned and wary judge," and afterwards executed. About six months after, another man upon conviction for another robbery, "confessed he was the man that stole the horse, and being closely pursued desired a stranger to walk his horse for him, while he turned aside on a necessary occasion and escaped."<sup>2</sup> Lord Hale does not say whether the accused offered this explanation on his arrest, or when first placed before the magistrate. If he did not, he had no one to blame but himself. Thieves in a crowd have been constantly known to transfer their booty to the pocket of the most respectable person near them. False charges of theft are often founded upon similar contrivance. Where the place in which the property is found, is one to which several persons have equal right of access, it cannot be said to be in the possession of any of them. The mere fact of finding property in a family house, can raise no presumption that any one of several males living in the house had brought it there.<sup>3</sup> It would be otherwise, of course, if the property was found in a room, or in a box, exclusively used by any individual member. So, when stolen property was traced to the husband's house, and the wife and husband were shown to have been jointly secreting it, it was held that these facts established no

<sup>1</sup> 2 East, P.C. 656.

<sup>2</sup> 2 Hale, P.C. 289.

<sup>3</sup> *Reg. v. Malhari*, 6 Bom. 731.

original possession by the wife, and that her subsequent conduct only showed a wish to screen her husband.<sup>1</sup>

§ 500. When a considerable interval has elapsed between the theft and the finding, the weight to be attributed to this latter fact will depend on the special circumstances of the case. Where the property lost consisted of two pieces of woollen cloth, in an unfinished state, each about twenty yards, which were missed on the 23rd January, and traced to the prisoner on the 21st March, Patteson, J., said: "I think the length of time is to be considered with reference to the nature of the articles which are stolen. If they are such as pass from hand to hand readily, two months would be a long time; but here it is not so."<sup>2</sup> In another case, a knife, candlestick, watch, eye-glass, and muffineer were all stolen from the same house. A year after, all five articles were found in the possession of the prisoner. Tindal, C.J., pointed out to the jury that it was improbable that this curious selection of articles could all get into the hands of the same person, unless he had something to do with the original taking.<sup>3</sup> At all events, the circumstance required a good deal of explanation, which does not appear to have been given.

§ 501. Where the property stolen can only be identified by its species, it would generally be unsafe to convict the prisoner, unless he can be brought into personal connection with it, either as having just left a place where property of the same kind was stored, as pepper in a warehouse; or where he has been entrusted with goods, such as coal, for delivery, and afterwards is found disposing of similar goods, out of the usual course of business for a person in his position.<sup>4</sup> Lord Hale says: "I would never convict any person for stealing the goods of an unknown person, merely because he would not give an account of how he came by them, unless there was due proof made that there was a felony committed of these goods."<sup>5</sup> But in *Burton's* case, just cited, Maule, J., said: "If a man go into the London Docks sober, without any means of getting drunk, and comes out of one of the cellars very drunk, wherein are a

<sup>1</sup> *Reg. v. De Silva*, 5 N.W.P. 120.

<sup>2</sup> *R. v. Partridge*, 7 C. & P. 551; *Ina Sheikh v. Reg.*, 11 Cal. 160.

<sup>3</sup> *Reg. v. Dovey*, M.S. note by Mr. Greaves, 2 Russ. 278.

<sup>4</sup> *Reg. v. Burton*, Dears. C.C. 282; S.C. 23 L.J. M.C. 52; *Reg. v. Hooper*, 1 F. & F. 85.

<sup>5</sup> 2 Hale, P.C. 290.



million gallons of wine, I think that would be reasonable evidence that he had stolen some of the wine in that cellar, though you could not prove that any wine was stolen, or any wine was missed." And so, if a train had just started from a railway station, and a cooly was found leaving the station with a valuable watch in his waistcloth, of which he could give no reasonable account, I imagine he might be convicted of theft, though the actual owner could not be produced.

§ 502. Extortion (s. 383) agrees with theft in being a mode of dishonestly getting possession of the property of another; and therefore it can never be committed, where the demand, which is the foundation of the charge, is one which the accused *bonâ fide* believed himself entitled to make.<sup>1</sup> The property which is obtained by extortion is not limited, as in theft, to movable property. It is described as "any property or valuable security, or anything signed or sealed which may be converted into a valuable security." A man might commit extortion by compelling another to assign to him an estate, or to create a mortgage or an annuity in his favour. A valuable security is defined by s. 30. The radical difference between theft and extortion or robbery, is, that in the latter cases, the offence is carried out by overpowering the will of the owner, and thereby inducing him to give up his own property. The important question therefore is, what means are so illegal as to convert an innocent, or actionable, proceeding into a crime.

§ 503. As regards extortion, these means are described by the words (s. 383) "whoever intentionally puts any person in fear of any injury to that person or any other, and thereby dishonestly induces the person so put in fear to deliver to any person," etc. The word "injury" is defined by s. 44 as denoting "any harm whatever illegally caused to any person, in body, mind, reputation, or property." It is obvious, however, that no criminal charge could be sustained by a man of ordinary health and vigour, who gave up his property because he was threatened with a blow from a switch, or with the repetition of a story which would bring him into ridicule. The threat must be of an injury which would so put a person into fear as to induce him to deliver his property. Exceptional cases might arise where the person was a child, a nervous woman, or a man in weak

<sup>1</sup> *Reg. v. Abdul Kadar*, 3 Bom. H.C. C.C. 45; 5 Mad. H.C. Rulings 14.

health or advanced old age. Putting aside such cases, the question will be, what is the degree of fear which would justify a person of ordinary strength of mind in giving up his property, in order to escape from the injury with which he was threatened.

This question was for the first time thoroughly examined in a case where the prisoner was charged with robbery, the fact being that the prosecutor had given him the money, under terror induced by a threat that the prisoner would take him before a magistrate and accuse him of having attempted an unnatural offence.<sup>1</sup> The judges held that the charge was made out. The result of the discussion is stated as follows by Sir Edward Hyde East.<sup>2</sup> "On the one hand the fear is not confined to an apprehension of bodily injury; and on the other hand, it must be of such a nature as, in reason and common experience, is likely to induce a person to part with his property against his will, and to put him as it were under a temporary suspension of the power of exercising it through the influence of the terror impressed; in which case, fear supplies, as well in sound reason as in legal construction, the place of force, or an actual taking by violence, or assault upon the person." A threat of charging another with misconduct, not amounting to a crime, but calculated to injure him in his reputation, or in his domestic relations, would come within the section.<sup>3</sup>

§ 504. Threats of bringing criminal accusations are expressly recognized as modes of extortion by ss. 388 and 399, which inflict special punishment, whether the person threatened has yielded or not, where the accusation threatened is of a heinous nature. Extortion is not limited to threats of such accusations, though cases may easily be imagined where the accusation threatened ought not to overpower an ordinary mind. Where a woman was got into a room where a mock auction was going on, and was told that an article was knocked down to her, and that if she did not pay she should go to Bow Street before a magistrate and thence to Newgate, there to be imprisoned till she could raise the money, and then a pretended constable was brought in, and she paid the money for the purpose of obtaining her liberty, a conviction for robbery was set aside. The judges

<sup>1</sup> *Donnolly's case*, 2 East, P.C. 715; S.C. 1 Leach, 229.

<sup>2</sup> 2 East, P.C. 718; see, too, *per* Wilde, B., *Reg. v. Walton*, L. & C. 288; S.C. 32 L.J. M.C. 79.

<sup>3</sup> *Reg. v. Tomlinson* (1895), 1 Q.B. 706.

held "that there was no reason for such a degree of terror in this case as to induce the prosecutrix to part with her money; she might have known that having done no wrong, if she had been taken to prison, the law would have taken her under its protection and set her free. And that the law did not allow the fear of being sent to prison to be a sufficient ground of terror to constitute a robbery."<sup>1</sup> Such a case in India would certainly be robbery under s. 390, as there was an actual wrongful restraint. If, however, there was only a threat, with no immediate power of carrying it out, it would probably be held insufficient to amount to extortion.

In the case of criminal accusations, as in all other cases, the threat may be of injury to another, if it is intended to operate upon the person to whom it is made. Where the prisoner threatened A's father that he would charge A with having committed an abominable offence with a mare, unless he would buy the mare from him for £3 10s., it was held that he had committed an offence under a statute similar to s. 389.<sup>2</sup> And it is immaterial whether the charge is true or false, for the offence consists in using the terrors of the law for the purpose of extracting money.<sup>3</sup>

§ 505. Threats in times of public disturbance to bring a mob down upon the prosecutor's house to destroy it, unless money is given;<sup>4</sup> or threats to cause the loss of an appointment, by the use of influence with the superior of the person threatened, come within s. 383.<sup>5</sup> The seizure and detention of carts of firewood until dues were paid on them, was held not to create a fear of an injury within the meaning of s. 383, even on the assumption that the claim was unfounded.<sup>6</sup> Nor is it extortion to obtain money from a person who believes it to be legally due, though his belief is created by a fraud. The offence is cheating.<sup>7</sup> It has been ruled in Calcutta, that extortion can never be committed unless the owner of the property actually delivers it to the accused, and that it is not sufficient if he takes it away in presence of the prosecutor.<sup>8</sup>

<sup>1</sup> *Rex v. Wood*, 2 East, P.C. 732; cf. *Reg. v. McGrath*, L.R., 1 C.C. 205, where, under rather weaker circumstances, the judges doubted whether a robbery had not been made out.

<sup>2</sup> *Reg. v. Redman*, L.R., 1 C.C. 12.

<sup>3</sup> *Reg. v. Mobarruk*, 7 Suth. Cr. 28.

<sup>4</sup> *Astley's case*, 2 East, P.C. 729; *Brown's case*, *ib id.* 731.

<sup>5</sup> *Meer Abbas Ali v. Omed Ali*, 18 Suth. Cr. 17.

<sup>6</sup> *Reg. v. Abdul Kader*, 3 Bom. H.C. C.C. 45.

<sup>7</sup> *Reg. v. Meajan*, 5 R. J. & P. 147.

<sup>8</sup> *Reg. v. Duleelooddeen*, 5 Suth. Cr. 19.



In the particular instance, it was held that the offence really committed was robbery. But suppose a man enters the room of another, and threatens to accuse him of murder, unless money is paid to him, and then takes up a purse which is lying on the table. If the prosecutor nods to him, and he then carries it away, surely this is a delivery to him; and what difference can it make that the prosecutor simply allows his purse to be carried away, under the influence of fear, without resistance or objection?<sup>1</sup> Where several persons are engaged in the same design to extort money, and some use the threat, while others receive the money, all are guilty of extortion.<sup>2</sup>

§ 506. The fear caused by the threat must be the operating influence which caused the delivery. If the prisoner is already in possession of the property, a subsequent threat which prevents the owner from claiming the return of the property will neither be extortion nor robbery. H. slipped his hand into the prosecutor's pocket, and took his purse. The prosecutor then saw his purse in the hand of H., and demanded it. H. replied, "Villain, if thou speakest of thy purse, I will pluck thine house over thy ears, and drive thee out of the country, as I did John Somers." Upon this he went away with the purse. It was held that if he had used this language before he got possession of the purse, it would have been robbery, but as the theft was complete before the menace, it was only larceny.<sup>3</sup> So, if persons come to rob a man, and make him swear to bring them a sum of money, which he afterwards does; if the subsequent delivery is from a sense of the obligation of the oath, it is not extortion; if from a continuing sense of fear, it is.<sup>4</sup> In one case the prisoner threatened to accuse the prosecutor of an infamous crime. Various negotiations were entered into to buy off the charge, and at last a sum of money was paid to him. The prosecutor deposed that at the beginning of the transaction he apprehended injury to his person and character, but that at the time when he handed over the money he had no such apprehension, but parted with it for the sole purpose of bringing the prisoner to justice. It was held

<sup>1</sup> See 2 East, P.C. 707.

<sup>2</sup> *Reg. v. Shankar Bhagvat*, 2 Bom. H.C. C.C. 417.

<sup>3</sup> *Harman's case*, 1 Hale, P.C. 534, recognized by De Grey, C.J., and Lord Mansfield, C.J., in *Donnolly's case*; 2 East, P.C. 724, 726.

<sup>4</sup> 1 Hale, P.C. 532; 2 East, P.C. 733.

that no robbery was committed, and in India it would be held that there was no extortion.<sup>1</sup>

§ 507. **Robbery** (s. 390) is a special and aggravated form of either theft or extortion. In either case, it is necessary to establish all the facts which are required to make out a complete theft or a complete extortion, as already defined. Extortion becomes robbery "if the offender, at the time of committing the extortion, is in the presence of the person put in fear, and commits the extortion by putting that person in fear of instant death, of instant hurt, or of instant wrongful restraint to that person, or to some other person, and, by so putting him in fear, induces the person so put in fear then and there to deliver up the thing extorted. The offender is said to be present if he is sufficiently near to put the other person in fear of instant death, of instant hurt, or of instant wrongful restraint." Theft becomes robbery if the offender voluntarily causes, or attempts to cause to any person, death, or hurt, or wrongful restraint, or fear of such. It will be observed that the person to whom the injury is caused or threatened need not be the person who is being robbed. A threat by a robber, that he will kill a man's wife or child, if there is an immediate capacity of carrying out the threat, will satisfy the section.<sup>2</sup>

There is, however, an important difference between robbery founded on extortion and robbery founded on theft. In the former case, the entire menace must have been completed before the property was delivered up, and must be the cause of the delivery. In the latter case, it is indifferent whether the violence, or threat of violence has been offered "in order to the committing of the theft, or in committing the theft, or in carrying away, or attempting to carry away, property obtained by the theft." The result is, that, in the former instance, *Harman's* case, cited above (s. 506), is still good law; in the latter instance, it is not.

§ 508. Any violence which comes within the terms of s. 390, and which is used for any of the purposes there specified, will convert theft into robbery, as, for instance, if a person is hurt by the offender in the act of tearing off an ear-ring or nose-ring.<sup>3</sup> So in the case of threats, what is important is the effect reasonably produced upon the mind

<sup>1</sup> *Reane's case*, 2 East, P.C. 734.

<sup>2</sup> *Per Hotham, B.*, 2 East, P.C. 718.

<sup>3</sup> *Lapier's case*, 2 East, P.C. 557.



of the prosecutor, not the actual purpose of the offender to carry out his threat. In *Donnolly's* case, Lord Mansfield, C.J., said: "That it was clear no actual danger to the owner need exist, for if a tinder-box or candlestick were used instead of a pistol, it was still robbery."<sup>1</sup> And, of course, it would be no defence to show that the pistol was unloaded or out of order. Nor is it necessary to show actual threats, if the conduct of the accused implies a threat; as, where a mob came up to a house after the prosecutor had refused to give money to one of the members, and only went away after he had given them the money they asked for.<sup>2</sup> Nor does it make any difference that the article was obtained under the plea of asking for charity, or under colour of a sale, if it was really extorted by such violence, or fear of violence, as amounts to robbery.<sup>3</sup> And it is equally robbery, though the articles were not taken from the person of the owner, if they were taken in his presence, while he was under the influence of the fear caused by the prisoner's conduct.<sup>4</sup>

§ 509. Every robbery involves a completed act of theft or extortion, and therefore the accused must have had such a possession as would constitute either of the above crimes. Where it was found that the prisoner had stopped the prosecutor as he was carrying a feather-bed on his shoulders, and told him to lay it down, or he would shoot him, on which the prosecutor laid the bed on the ground; but before the prisoner could take it up, so as to remove it from the spot where it lay, he was apprehended, the judges were of opinion that the offence was not completed, and the prisoner was discharged.<sup>5</sup> In India he would have been convicted of an attempt, under s. 511. If, however, the accused has even a momentary possession of the article, it is sufficient, though he afterwards drops it, or returns it to the owner.<sup>6</sup>

§ 510. The violence which is necessary to make a robbery, must have been used for one of the purposes mentioned in s. 390. Where a man was trying to steal a horse which was tied to a cart, and the owner stretched his arm to lay hold of it just at the moment when the

<sup>1</sup> 2 East, P.C. 726.

<sup>2</sup> *Taplin's case*, 2 East, P.C. 712.

<sup>3</sup> 1 Hale, P.C. 533; *Simon's case*, 2 East, P.C. 712.

<sup>4</sup> 1 Hale, P.C. 533; 2 East, P.C. 707; *Reg. v. Dulelood*, 19.

<sup>5</sup> *Farrell's case*, 2 East, P.C. 557; 1 Hale, P.C. 533.

<sup>6</sup> *Lapier's case*, 2 East, P.C. 557; *Peat's case*, *ibid.*

cutting the string with a knife, and the prosecutor's wrist was cut, upon which he released his hold, and the prisoner made off with the basket, this was held to be only theft, as the wound was a mere accident. It would have been different if it had been inflicted to make the owner give up his grasp.<sup>1</sup> So, where a thief, finding himself observed, abandoned his booty and ran away, throwing stones at the owner to prevent pursuit, the Madras High Court stated the offence was not robbery.<sup>2</sup> If he had retained the goods, and beaten off pursuit by pelting the pursuers, it would have been robbery.

In robbery, and also in the offence of dacoity (s. 391), which is one of its forms, there can be no conviction where the property was taken by force or menaces, under the *bonâ fide* belief that the prisoners were taking what was their own.<sup>3</sup> But it is no excuse that the prisoners were actuated by moral or religious motives in depriving another of what they knew to be his property.<sup>4</sup>

§ 511. **Criminal Misappropriation** is the act of dishonestly converting to a man's exclusive use, even for a time, the movable property of another, which has come lawfully into the possession of the offender (s. 403). The latter circumstance distinguishes the offence equally from theft and from cheating. It will be observed that all the illustrations given in ss. 403 and 404 are of cases where no contractual relation exists between the owner and the possessor of the property, before the misappropriation takes place. So the section applies where more money than was due was given to the accused, who retained the balance after he found out the mistake.<sup>5</sup> And so it would be if a man called at the post-office for a letter or a parcel which he expected, and the clerk gave him one addressed to a different person with a similar name, and he kept it, after he had found out that it was not intended for him.<sup>6</sup> It may, perhaps, be that s. 403 only applies to such cases, and that s. 405 is intended to govern all cases, where the possession is received upon a distinct understanding as to the mode in which the property is to be dealt with. One

<sup>1</sup> *Reg. v. Edwards*, 1 Cox, 32.

<sup>2</sup> *Weir*, 94 [166].

<sup>3</sup> *Ex parte Karaka Nachiar*, 8 Mad. H.C. 254.

<sup>4</sup> *Reg. v. Ram Baran*, 15 All. 299; *ante*, § 485.

<sup>5</sup> *Reg. v. Ramsoondur*, 2 N.W.P. 475; see *Reg. v. Middleton*, L.R., 2 C.C. 38.

<sup>6</sup> See *Reg. v. Kay*, D. & B. 231; S.C. 25 L.J. M.C. 149.

class of such cases may, however, raise discussion. I have already pointed out that a servant cannot be convicted of theft by taking goods of which the master has never had any possession except through him. For instance, where a clerk is sent out to collect money due on a bill, or a servant to buy and bring home goods. (See *ante*, § 498.) If the money or goods are misappropriated, should the offender be charged under s. 403 or under s. 408? Such cases are treated in England as embezzlement, not breach of trust; as, for instance, where a shopman sold goods over the counter, and received cash, but did not enter the transaction, and pocketed the money.<sup>1</sup> The clerk or servant is in no proper sense of the word a trustee. The money or goods are his master's from the moment he receives them, and if they were stolen from him, they would be alleged in the charge to be the property of the master.<sup>2</sup> The point seems only to have arisen twice in India, and in neither case was there any discussion. An income tax clerk, who received money which he ought at once to have entered in an account, and paid over into the Treasury, misappropriated it. He was convicted under s. 403.<sup>3</sup> In another case, where a post-office clerk had abstracted a letter, in order to receive for himself part of the postage payable upon it, the High Court held that he had committed theft of the letter, and had also attempted to commit criminal misappropriation.<sup>4</sup> The point might be of importance, owing to the great difference in the penalty appropriate to each section.

§ 512. **Finding Property.**—The majority of cases of criminal misappropriation will probably arise in regard to property found (s. 403, Explanation 2). There can, of course, be no criminal misappropriation of things which have actually been abandoned, as the sacred bulls referred to in a previous section (*ante*, § 482), or the newspapers, or remnants of food, which a traveller leaves behind him in a railway carriage. The difficulty arises in regard to articles which have been lost without being abandoned, or which have been abandoned only because they are lost. Where property has been mislaid or forgotten in the owner's house, or upon his premises, or in an article of furniture which still remains his own, the property is still in his possession, and both by English and

<sup>1</sup> *Reg. v. Betts*, Bell, 90; S.C. 28 L.J. M.C. 69.

<sup>2</sup> See 2 East, P.C. 568, 652.

<sup>3</sup> *Reg. v. Ramakrishna*, 12 Mad. 49.

<sup>4</sup> *Reg. v. Venkatasami*, 14 Mad. 229.



Indian law the misappropriation of it is theft (*ante*, § 482). Where valuable articles, which cannot be supposed to have been thrown away, are left in a shop, or in a railway carriage, or hackney coach, or in any similar place, where the owner would naturally come back to look for them, the owner's property remains, though his possession is lost for the time. A person who takes up, and converts to his own use property so found, commits larceny, according to English law,<sup>1</sup> criminal misappropriation, according to the Code. Even where an article of value is dropped in the road, or in a field, and the owner gives it up for lost, merely because he has no hope of being able to find it, he does not thereby lose his property in it, and can recover it by civil suit.<sup>2</sup> In such a case, according to English law, the finder commits theft, if three facts are found against him: first, that he intended to appropriate the property from the first; second, that he believed, at the time he took it, that the owner could be found; and thirdly, that he acquired the knowledge of who that owner was before he converted it to his own use.<sup>3</sup> If any one of these ingredients is found in his favour, he has not committed theft, nor any other crime. Under the Code the guilt of the accused is determined by the state of his mind at the time when he appropriates the property to his own use; that is, when he sells it, realizes it, or in any other way puts it out of his own power to restore it, or when he definitely makes up his mind to keep it at all hazards as his own. If at that time he does not in good faith believe that the real owner cannot be found; or if he takes this final step before he has used reasonable means to discover and give notice to the owner, and has kept the property a reasonable time to enable the owner to claim it, he has committed criminal misappropriation (s. 403, Explanation 2).

§ 513. I do not think it necessarily follows that the finder must be convicted under s. 403, merely on proof that he had taken no steps to discover the owner, or to leave time for an effective claim being made. Where he fails to act in the prescribed manner, he does so at his own risk. If the real owner afterwards comes forward, the accused would be able to set up no defence. If the owner never comes forward,

<sup>1</sup> *Reg. v. West*, Dears. 402; S.C. 24 L.J. M.C. 4; *Reg. v. Moore*, L. & C. 1; S.C. 30 L.J. M.C. 77; *Reg. v. Pierce*, 6 Cox, 117; *Wynne's case*, 2 East, P.C. 664; *Reg. v. Spurgeon*, 2 Cox, 102.

<sup>2</sup> *Reg. v. Peters*, 1 C. & K. 215.

<sup>3</sup> *Per Blackburn, J., Reg. v. Glyde*, L.R., 1 C.C. 133, p. 143.

it would still be open to the tribunal to find, that at the time of the misappropriation there was an owner, who might have made good his claim if the course laid down in Explanation 2 had been followed. It would be equally open to it to come to an opposite conclusion. In a case from Bombay, the accused found a gold mohur in an open plain, in a village near Ahmednagar, and sold it next day to a shroff. The sale was on the 12th October, 1892, the accused was convicted of criminal misappropriation on the 12th December, and up to March 9, 1893, when the case was disposed of by the High Court on Appeal, no one had come forward to claim the property. On this state of facts the High Court reversed the conviction, holding that it was not sufficiently made out that on the 12th October the gold mohur was property at all, in the sense of having any owner.<sup>1</sup> The advantage of following the statutory procedure is, that, in the absence of conclusive evidence to the contrary, every presumption will be made in favour of the accused.

The Calcutta High Court ruled in one case that charges under this section should specify the name of the owner of the property. This may in many cases be impossible. Where it is so, the averment, that the article belongs to some person unknown, will bring that very important fact definitely before the minds of those who have to deal with the case. In the particular instance, the necessary allegation would have disclosed the material circumstance that the prisoner was a joint owner of the chattel he was accused of misappropriating, an admission which would, in the great majority of cases, put an end to the charge.<sup>2</sup>

§ 514. Criminal Breach of Trust.—Whoever, being in any manner entrusted with property, or with any dominion over property, dishonestly misappropriates, or converts to his own use, that property, or dishonestly uses, or disposes of, that property in violation of any direction of law prescribing the mode in which such trust is to be discharged, or of any legal contract, express or implied, which he has made touching the discharge of such trust, or wilfully suffers any other person so to do, commits “criminal breach of trust” (s. 405.) Hence

<sup>1</sup> *Reg. v. Sita*, 18 Bom. 212. The conclusion arrived at by the High Court was by no means a necessary one. Many years ago I was throwing stones into a mountain lake in Ireland, when a much-prized ring followed the stone. Next year, when the water went down, the ring was found, and was duly restored to me.

<sup>2</sup> *Reg. v. Parbutty Churn*, 14 Suth. Cr. 13.



the two ingredients in the offence are, first, an original trust, and, secondly, a dishonest appropriation of the trust property.

A *trust* may be defined as, any arrangement by which one person is authorized to deal with property for the benefit of another. This definition will cover both clauses of the description of a trust given in s. 405. A person is entrusted with property, when he is given the actual possession of it, as the trustee of a marriage settlement, or a banker. He is entrusted with dominion over it, when the possession remains with the owner, but he is given authority to dispose of it under certain conditions, as a shopman, or an agent, with a power of attorney to sell. In general there can be no doubt as to the existence of a trust, or as to the obligations created by it. Difficult questions of this sort often arise in the civil courts, especially in such cases as those of implied trusts, precatory trusts, or voluntary trusts. No criminal liability can arise in such cases if the party acts honestly, though wrongly, under a mistaken view of his duties or rights,<sup>1</sup> or where the entire transaction out of which the alleged trust arises is *bonâ fide* disputed.<sup>2</sup> Where, however, the trust and the dishonest breach of it are both made out, it would be no answer to a charge under these sections that the accused had an interest in the property, provided it was not an interest which justified his mode of dealing with it. There is nothing to prevent one partner being convicted under s. 405 of criminally misappropriating the partnership property.<sup>3</sup> So a mortgager in possession, who wilfully incurs arrears of Government revenue, and allows the property to be sold, and then purchases it *benamee*, with the object of holding it free of the claim of the mortgagee, has committed an offence under the same section.<sup>4</sup> And conversely, where property has been pledged to another, who then makes use of or deals with the property, he will be guilty of breach of trust, according as he is justified in his acts by the terms of the pledge, and, if not justified, according as his conduct is dishonest (s. 24) or not.<sup>5</sup>

§ 515. **Husband and Wife.**—The Madras High Court has held that a married woman cannot be convicted of criminal

<sup>1</sup> 6 Mad. H.C. Rulings 28; *Reg. v. Norman*, C. & M. 501.

<sup>2</sup> *Reg. v. Jaffir Naik*, 2 Bom. H.C. 133.

<sup>3</sup> *Reg. v. Okhoy Coomar*, 13 B.L.R. 307; *Reg. v. Tankard* (1894), 1 Q.B. 548.

<sup>4</sup> *Ram Manick Shaha v. Brindabun Chunder*, 21 Suth. Civ. R. 230.

<sup>5</sup> 3 Mad. H.C. Rulings 6; 6 Mad. H.C. Rulings 28.

breach of trust in respect to her husband's property, since she has a joint possession of it with him.<sup>1</sup> I doubt, however, whether this ruling would be adhered to at present. The subject has already been discussed with reference to a similar ruling as regards theft. (See *ante*, § 495.) I am not aware of any decision as to the liability of a married woman, where a criminal breach of trust has been committed by her in reference to the property of a person who was not her husband. The difficulty, of course, would be felt where the breach of trust arose in consequence of the violation of some legal contract, express or implied, and where the married woman was "disqualified from contracting by any law to which she was subject."<sup>2</sup> It might possibly be held, on the analogy of contracts unsupported by any consideration,<sup>3</sup> that although the married woman could not be compelled to carry out the terms of the trust, she could be punished if she wilfully repudiated those terms, and then disposed of property which did not belong to her as if it was her own.<sup>4</sup> No such difficulty would occur, if the breach of trust consisted "in violation of any direction of law prescribing the mode in which such trust is to be carried out." It has been held in England that a married woman could be convicted of larceny as a bailee, on the ground that a contract was not essential to a bailment, and that it was immaterial whether there was a valid contract or not.<sup>5</sup> If a shopwoman sold goods across the counter, and then kept the price for herself, I do not think it would avail her to prove that she was a married woman. She would certainly have committed criminal misappropriation (*ante*, § 511). Where a person was entrusted with money to buy coals, and he bought them and put them into his cart, and on his way back abstracted part, delivering the remainder as all that the prosecutor was entitled to, a question arose, whether the prisoner could be said to have been entrusted with the property of the prosecutor, so as to satisfy the English statutes. The conviction was affirmed. Some of the judges held that the coals being purchased with money given by the prosecutor for that express purpose, vested in him, and were held by the prisoner

<sup>1</sup> Mad. H.C. Rulings, 10 Nov., 1864; S.C. Weir, 103 [174].

<sup>2</sup> Indian Evidence Act, I. of 1872, s. 11.

<sup>3</sup> *Coggs v. Bernard*, 1 Sm. L. C. 281; *Balfe v. West*, 13 C.B. 466; S.C. 11 C.P. 175.

<sup>4</sup> 11 C.C. 150; *post*, § 519.

on trust for him. Others thought that a specific appropriation by the prisoner was necessary to vest the property in the prisoner, but the Court was unanimous that, if such an express appropriation were necessary, it was made out by the facts.<sup>1</sup>

§ 516. Most of the cases decided in India have turned upon the question whether the facts proved against the accused amounted to a breach of trust. In a case before the Allahabad High Court, it appeared that the Government had made a contract with a Calcutta firm to supply them for two years with an article called *gazzi*, at Rs. 1-12-6 per piece. The prisoner was a Government servant, whose duty it was to certify the article received as being according to sample, to receive the money due, and pay it over to the contractors. It was charged against him that he had induced the contractors to make a new arrangement with him, unknown to the Government, by virtue of which he purchased as much *gazzi* as was required, from an Allahabad firm, at Rs. 1-6 per piece, charging Rs. 1-12-6 to Government, and on receipt of the amount credited the whole as paid to the Calcutta firm, while he really only paid at the rate of Rs. 1-6 to the Allahabad firm, pocketing the difference for himself. The Court held that "if this state of facts had been proved, it amounts to the offence of criminal breach of trust. It is, by whatever technical name it may be called, a stealing of the difference between the two prices by a servant of Government, and a falsification of accounts with the object of proving the crime." As a matter of fact the Court held that such a state of facts had not been proved. Petheram, C.J., went on to make the following observations upon the law of criminal breach of trust, in reference to cases where a servant, employed to pay a bill for his master, obtains a commission or a reduction of the price for his own benefit.

"Now, if the account be an open one, that is, an account of which the items have never been checked or settled, and if the transaction amounts to a taxation of the bill, and a reduction of the price by the servant, it is evident that the servant obtains the reduction for his master; that the money in his hands always remains the master's property, and that if he appropriates it, he steals it. But if the master himself has settled the account with the tradesman for a specific sum, and he sends the servant with the money, and the servant, after making the payment, asks the tradesman

<sup>1</sup> *Reg. v. Bunkall*, 33 L.J. M.C. 75; L. & C. 371.



for a present, then, if the servant takes the present and keeps it, he is not guilty of stealing, because he has no intention to steal; the money is given to him by a person whom he believes has a right to give it. It may be that, according to the strict equitable doctrines of a Court of Chancery, the servant is bound to account to the master for the money. But, however this may be, his act is a very different matter from a criminal offence, and I do not think he can be convicted of criminal breach of trust merely because, by a mere equitable doctrine of the Court of Chancery, it was obligatory on him to render an account.”<sup>1</sup>

In a case arising out of the insolvency of the Himalaya Bank, it appeared that the bank was incorporated under the Indian Companies Act, X. of 1866, by virtue of which it was expressly provided that dividends could only be paid out of profits. In an indictment against the directors and others under s. 409, it was laid down by Edge, C.J., that the directors had dominion over the property of the bank, and were not only entitled but bound to manage its affairs, and to do so in accordance with the terms of the Act and the articles of association; that they were bound not to pay dividends except out of the profits of the bank; and that if they dishonestly, that is, knowingly and intentionally, paid dividends to the shareholders out of the deposits when there were no profits, intending to cause gain to themselves or others, to which they were not entitled, they were guilty of criminal breach of trust as bankers under s. 409.<sup>2</sup>

§ 517. Evidence.—The usual evidence of breach of trust in regard to money received for the purpose of payment over, is either non-payment, or non-accounting, or false accounting. It must be remembered that breach of trust is a definite act, like theft or misappropriation, and that the above circumstances do not constitute it, but merely evidence it. Where it is the duty of the accused to pay over money at once, or at any different periods, his non-payment is *prima facie* evidence that he has wrongfully appropriated it to himself.<sup>3</sup> But this presumption may be negatived by evidence that the delay was caused by forgetfulness, or that it was acquiesced in by the person to whom the money was due.<sup>4</sup> Non-payment, coupled with a false

<sup>1</sup> *Reg. v. Imdad Khan*, 8 All. 120, 135, 138.

<sup>2</sup> *Reg. v. Moss*, 16 All. 88.

<sup>3</sup> *Reg. v. Jackson*, 1 C. & K. 384.

<sup>4</sup> *Reg. v. Ganpat*, 10 Bom. 256.

account, either as to the receipt of the money or its disposal, is conclusive evidence;<sup>1</sup> but even a correct entry of the receipt does not negative breach of trust, if, in fact, the prisoner has converted the money to his own use.<sup>2</sup> Nor is it necessary to prove that any specific sums of money, received on particular dates from particular persons, have been embezzled. Where money is continually coming in and being paid out, such proof would be impossible. It is sufficient if, when the defendant is called on to account, a general deficiency is found, and if the evidence establishes that the general deficiency has resulted from the fraudulent conduct of the party charged.<sup>3</sup> A mere failure to render accounts is not itself a criminal breach of trust, unless it appears on the whole facts that the money is dishonestly withheld, or has been dishonestly converted to the prisoner's use.<sup>4</sup>

§ 518. **Offences by Servants.**—Criminal breach of trust is liable to severer penalties when committed by carriers, wharfingers, or warehouse-keepers (s. 407); by clerks, or servants, or persons employed as such (s. 408); and by public servants, bankers, merchants, factors, brokers, attorneys, or agents (s. 409). No difficulty is likely to arise in reference to the first class. The description of the second class, however, which is identical with that in s. 381, requires a good deal of discussion.

*First.* The word "servant" is employed in its widest acceptation. It has been held to extend to a traveller for a commercial firm,<sup>5</sup> a rate collector,<sup>6</sup> and an assistant overseer of the poor.<sup>7</sup> Whether a particular official is or is not a servant, depends on the relation in which he stands to his employer, and the nature of his occupation.

Therefore, *secondly*, to make out that the accused is a servant, he must be bound to obey the orders of his employer, so as to be under his control. Where he is paid by salary, or where he is bound to devote his whole time to the service of his employer, a very strong presumption

<sup>1</sup> *Watson v. Golab Khan*, 10 Suth. Cr. 28; *Lolit Mohun v. Reg.*, 22 Cal. 313.

<sup>2</sup> *Reg. v. Lister*, D. & B. 118; 26 L.J. M.C. 26.

<sup>3</sup> *Reg. v. Kellie*, 17 All. 153.

<sup>4</sup> *Reg. v. Murphy*, 9 All. 666.

<sup>5</sup> *Reg. v. Bailey*, 12 Cox, 56; *Reg. v. Tite*, L. & C. 29; S.C. 30 L.J. M.C. 142.

<sup>6</sup> *Reg. v. Adey*, 1 Den. 571; S.C. 19 L.J. M.C. 149.

<sup>7</sup> *Reg. v. Carpenter*, L.R., 1 C.C. 29.



arises that he is a servant; but he may be a servant though no such elements exist in the case. "All the authorities seem to show that it is not necessary that there should be a payment by salary—for commission will do,—nor that the whole time should be employed, nor that the employment should be permanent (see s. 27, Explanation)—for it may be only occasional, or in a single instance—if, at the time, the prisoner is engaged as a servant." Hence, where a person was employed by a merchant to obtain orders for him, but was at liberty to obtain them whenever and wherever he wished, and was under no obligation to seek for them at all unless he liked, and was paid by commission, it was held that he was not a servant, although in one case he was bound not to employ himself for any one but the prosecutor, and in the other he was to receive money, and account for it in a stipulated manner.<sup>1</sup> Where a person contracts with another for the performance of certain services, and that other sends his servant to perform them, the latter is not the servant of the person who requires the services, although he is bound to obey him for the time.<sup>2</sup> It is evident, then, that the question whether a man is the servant of another or not depends, not upon the duties which he performs, but upon the capacity in which he performs them. If he does a thing because he is told to do it by a person whom he must obey, he is a servant. If because it is his trade to do it, he is not a servant.<sup>3</sup> A further result follows—that the performance of duties, which are apparently the same, may involve very different obligations. The secretary of an association is its servant, and if he is also made treasurer, though this is not part of the duty of a secretary, he continues to be their servant as treasurer. He is in the position of a cashier. All money which he receives becomes at once the money of his master, and can only be paid out upon his master's orders.<sup>4</sup> But if the association appoint a treasurer from outside, he is not a servant. His duty is to receive and pay out money in the usual course of business and to account for such money, and to be ready to pay over

<sup>1</sup> *Per* Bovill, C.J., *Reg. v. Negus*, L.R., 2 C.C. 34, p. 36; *Reg. v. Bowers*, L.R. 1 C.C. 41. As to cases of merely occasional employment see *R. v. Spencer*, R. & Ry. 299; *R. v. Hughes*, 1 Moody, 370.

<sup>2</sup> *R. v. Haydon*, 7 C. & P. 445; the case of a driver of a hackney coach.

<sup>3</sup> *Reg. v. Hey*, 1 Den. 602.

<sup>4</sup> *Reg. v. Murphy*, 4 Cox, 101; *Reg. v. Proud*, L. & C. 97; S.C. 1 L.J. M.C. 71.

the balance when called on. Subject to this obligation, he may use the specific coins or notes received by him exactly as a banker may.<sup>1</sup>

*Thirdly.* When a person comes in other respects within the definition of a servant, it is no objection that he is also the servant of other employers,<sup>2</sup> nor that he is jointly interested with his employer in the business in which he is a servant.<sup>3</sup>

§ 519. The words "employed as a clerk or servant" are wider than the words which precede them. They cover all cases where a person, whether he is or is not a clerk or servant, undertakes to perform the duties of a clerk or servant, although he is under no contract to perform them, and receives no remuneration for their discharge. C.F. was clerk to a local board. The prisoner was his son, and used to assist him in the duties of his office, and act for him in his absence at the meetings of the board. He was neither appointed nor paid by the board, nor by his father. He embezzled some money which was paid in at his father's office for the use of the board. He was indicted on counts which charged that he "being employed as a clerk of C.F.," embezzled the money of C.F. The conviction was affirmed. Brett, J., said, "The prisoner undertook to do things for his father which a clerk does for his master, and to do them in the way a clerk does them. Now, assuming that there was no contract to go on doing those things, still, as long as he did them with his father's agreement, he was bound to do them with the same honesty as a clerk, because he was employed as a clerk."<sup>4</sup> These words would cover the case of those volunteers who render their services without pay in Government offices, with a view to future appointment.<sup>5</sup>

§ 520. Where a person comes within the language of s. 408, he is punishable if, "being in any manner entrusted in such capacity with property, or with any dominion over property," he commits a criminal breach of trust in respect of it. He must be entrusted with it in his capacity as clerk or servant. If a clerk in an office in the Mofussil was about to go on leave, and his principal entrusted him with money to execute a private commission in the Presidency town,

<sup>1</sup> *Reg. v. Tyree*, L.R., 1 C.C. 177.

<sup>2</sup> *Reg. v. Batty*, 2 Moody, 257.

<sup>3</sup> *Reg. v. Stuart* (1894), 1 Q.B. 310.

<sup>4</sup> *Reg. v. Foulkes*, L.R., 2 C.C. 150.

*Reg. v. Parmeshar Dat*, 8 All. 201.

guilty knowledge.<sup>1</sup> If jewellery was stolen, and the stones were sold to one receiver, and the gold setting to another, each would be punishable under s. 411. But the proceeds of a stolen cheque, or the change given for a stolen bank-note, would not be stolen property.<sup>2</sup> Lastly, the property must retain the character of stolen property at the time it is wrongfully received. In the words of s. 410: "If such property subsequently comes into the possession of a person legally entitled to the possession thereof, it ceases to be stolen property." Therefore, if the owner finds his property on a thief, and then restores it to him that he may sell it to the usual receiver; or if stolen property sent by train or through the post-office addressed to a receiver, is stopped by the authorities on behalf of the owner, and then delivered by them to the receiver, in each case the property has ceased to be stolen property before it reaches his hands.<sup>3</sup> A sale by a thief, even to a *bonâ fide* purchaser, does not give the latter a legal title to the possession of the article sold.<sup>4</sup> Where, however, stolen notes or money are *bonâ fide* changed for the thief, or taken *bonâ fide* from him as a matter of ordinary payment, the transaction is not one of sale, and the receiver is entitled to the legal possession as against the real owner;<sup>5</sup> and the same rule would apply in favour of a person who took, in the ordinary course of business, a negotiable instrument which had been stolen, but which, prior to the theft, had been so drawn or endorsed as to pass from hand to hand by mere delivery.<sup>6</sup>

Where property has been taken from its owner under circumstances which would be theft, except for the provisions of ss. 82—85, the property is not stolen property,<sup>7</sup> but a person who dishonestly kept the property for himself, with knowledge of the facts, would commit criminal misappropriation. If, however, the act of the innocent agent had been instigated by a criminal abettor, the transaction itself would be a theft, though the agent would not be a thief (s. 108). In such a case, the property would be stolen property, and might be the subject of a charge under s. 411.

<sup>1</sup> *Cowell's case*, 2 East, P.C. 617.

<sup>2</sup> *Reg. v. Walkley*, 4 C. & P. 132.

<sup>3</sup> *Reg. v. Dolan*, Dears. 436; S.C. 24 L.J. M.C.; *Reg. v. Schmidt*, L.R., 1 C.C. 15; *Reg. v. Villensky* (1892), 2 Q.B. 597.

<sup>4</sup> Indian Contract Act, IX. of 1872, s. 108, illus. (u).

<sup>5</sup> *Reg. v. Jogessur Mochi*, 3 Cal. 379.

<sup>6</sup> *Bank of Bengal v. Mendes*, 5 Cal. 654.

<sup>7</sup> See *Reg. v. Beyerayi Krishna*, 6 Mad. 373.



§ 523. It is not necessary to prove who the actual thief was, and it is unwise, in framing the charge, to state that the goods were stolen by AB, from whom the prisoner received them; as the prisoner might be held entitled to an acquittal if it appeared that he had not received them from AB, or that AB was not the thief.<sup>1</sup> It is, however, essential to show that there was a criminal possession intermediate between that of the owner and the receiver.<sup>2</sup> This criminal possession must be made out in exactly the same way as if the wrongful taker were on his trial, and in some respects more strictly. No statement or confession by the principal offender is admissible against the receiver, unless it has been made in the presence of the latter, or comes within the express provisions of the Indian Evidence Act; and a plea of guilty stands on no higher footing.<sup>3</sup> The conviction of the principal offender is not conclusive against the receiver, nor is his acquittal conclusive against the Crown, as on the trial of the receiver, the second tribunal might take a different view of either the facts or the law from that taken by the first.<sup>4</sup>

§ 524. **Receiving.**—(2) There can be no receipt of stolen goods, unless they have come into the possession or under the control of the accused. So long as any adverse custody intervenes, the receipt is incomplete. Where the prisoner applied at a carrier's office for a parcel which he knew contained stolen goods, and, upon being shown the parcel, claimed it, upon which he was immediately taken into custody, it was held that there had been no receipt by him.<sup>5</sup> And so it would be if a jeweller was found bargaining with a thief for a stolen watch; and it would make no difference that the jeweller had the watch in his hand to examine it, provided the control over the watch, and the right to claim it back if the bargain went off, remained in the thief.<sup>6</sup> Where, however, such a control exists, manual possession is unnecessary. If a thief brings stolen property into a shop, and the owner of the shop calls his servant, and desires him to take away the goods and pawn them, and the thief hands

<sup>1</sup> *Elsworthy's case*, 1 Lewin, 117; *R. v. Woolford*, 1 M. & Rob. 384.

<sup>2</sup> *Rex v. Cordy*, MS. of Mr. Greaves; 2 Russ. 484; *Ishan Muchi v. Reg.*, 15 Cal. 511.

<sup>3</sup> *R. v. Turner*, 1 Moody, 347; *Reg. v. Cox*, 1 F. & F. 90; Act I. of 1872, s. 30; III. of 1891, s. 4.

<sup>4</sup> *Foster*, Crim. L. 366; *Reg. v. Begarayi Krishna*, 6 Mad. 378.

<sup>5</sup> *Reg. v. Hill*, 1 Den. 453; S.C. 18 L.J. M.C. 199.

<sup>6</sup> *Reg. v. Wiley*, 2 Den. 37; S.C. 24 L.J. M.C. 4.

them to the servant for that purpose, the receipt by the master is complete.<sup>1</sup> Nor is such a control inconsistent with a joint possession by the thief, or any other person, and the receiver. A man's watch was stolen while he was in the company of a woman, of the prisoner, and of some others. Subsequently, the prisoner came to the owner of the watch, and bargained with him for its restoration. The woman was taken into a room by the prisoner, where she found another man, and immediately after she saw the watch on the table. She did not see who put it there, but it was not the prisoner. The jury were told that if they believed that the prisoner knew that the watch was stolen, and at the time when he went with the woman to the room where it was given up, the watch was in the custody of a person with the cognizance of the prisoner, that person being one over whom the prisoner had absolute control, so that the watch would be forthcoming if the prisoner ordered it, there was ample evidence to convict him of receiving the watch with guilty knowledge.<sup>2</sup> Finally, it is not necessary that the receiving should be for the benefit of the receiver. "There is a receiving within the meaning of the Act—whenever a person, knowing that goods are stolen, has possession of them for a bad purpose. It is immaterial whether he claims any property in them."<sup>3</sup> If the prisoner takes the property into his possession for the purpose of concealment, or to assist the thief, it is a sufficient receiving, although he neither seeks nor gains any profit or advantage to himself.<sup>4</sup>

§ 525 A mere acquiescence in, or approval of, a receipt by another person does not amount to a receipt by the person who approves, if the possession or control still continues to be that of the original receiver.<sup>5</sup> But if stolen goods have been placed in the possession of a man's servant or wife, or of any other person on his behalf, though without his knowledge, and if he subsequently, knowing the goods to be stolen, accepts the possession, this makes the receipt his own.<sup>6</sup>

**Retaining.**—Section 411 says: "Whoever dishonestly receives or retains stolen property." Retaining seems to

<sup>1</sup> *Reg. v. Miller*, 6 Cox, 353.

<sup>2</sup> *Reg. v. Smith*, Dears. 494; S.C. 24 L.J. M.C. 135.

<sup>3</sup> *Per Lord Campbell, C.J., Reg. v. Wiley, ub. sup.*

<sup>4</sup> *Reg. v. Davis*, 6 C. & P. 177.

<sup>5</sup> *Reg. v. Dring*, D. & B. 329.

<sup>6</sup> *Reg. v. Woodward*, L. & C. 122; S.C. 31 L.J. M.C. 91.



have the same relation to receiving that criminal misappropriation has to theft. If a man came honestly into possession of stolen property, and then retained it, after he had discovered that it was stolen, he would have committed the offence of dishonestly retaining.<sup>1</sup>

§ 526. **Guilty Knowledge.**—(3) The accused must have known, or have had reason to believe, the property to be stolen (s. 411). The latter phrase is satisfied by something short of actual knowledge.<sup>2</sup> On the other hand it involves more than mere suspicion. In a case under s. 414, where the language is the same, Melvill, J., said: "It was not sufficient to show that the accused was careless, or that he had reason to suspect that the property was stolen, or that he did not make sufficient inquiry to ascertain whether it had been honestly acquired. The word 'believe,' in s. 414, is a very much stronger word than 'suspect,' and it involves the necessity of showing that the circumstances were such that a reasonable man must have felt convinced in his mind that the property with which he was dealing was stolen property."<sup>3</sup> Of course, guilty knowledge is purely a matter of fact, which depends on the circumstances of each particular case; such as the nature of the goods offered for sale, the position in life of the person who offers them, the mode in which he accounted for their possession, the secrecy of the transaction, the absence of inquiry where the facts were obviously suspicious, the low price at which they were bought,<sup>4</sup> the concealment or defacing of the goods after they passed into the possession of the receiver. If an ayah was to offer English jewellery, or a native servant was to offer English plate or wine for sale, and the articles were bought without any inquiry, or upon the strength of answers clearly unsatisfactory, I think the tribunal would have little difficulty in dealing with the case.<sup>5</sup>

§ 527. Under English law it was always open to the prosecution to show, as evidence of guilty knowledge, that the accused had on other occasions received other property from the prosecutor by the same thief;<sup>6</sup> but it was held that

<sup>1</sup> 4 Mad. H.C. Rulings 42.

<sup>2</sup> *Per* Scotland, C.J., *Reg. v. Veeree*, Mad. Sess., April 28, 1862.  
*Reg. v. Rango*, 6 Bom. 402.

<sup>4</sup> 1 Hale, P.C. 620; 2 East, P.C. 765; *Reg. v. Mallory*, 13 Q.B.D. 83.

<sup>5</sup> See, as to the fraudulent possession of stolen property by persons who cannot satisfactorily account for their possession of it, Madras Act, VIII. of 1867, s. 17.

<sup>6</sup> *Reg. v. Dunn*, 1 Mood. 146.

it was not admissible evidence that he had received other property stolen by different thieves from different owners.<sup>1</sup> The latter evidence has always seemed to me to be more damnatory than the former. It is now admissible in England, under certain restrictions, by 34 & 35 Vict., c. 112, s. 19. The Indian Evidence Act, I. of 1872, s. 14, is in accordance with the later view. Illus. (a) gives as an example, the case of a receiver found in possession of a particular stolen article, and proceeds: "the fact that at the same time he was in possession of many other stolen articles is relevant, as tending to show that he knew each and all of the articles, of which he was in possession, to be stolen." It will be observed that the other stolen articles, as to which evidence is offered, are stated to have been in his possession at the same time as the particular article as to which he is charged. This agrees with the decisions on the express wording of the English statute.<sup>2</sup> It does not, however, follow from the illustration that evidence would be inadmissible of previous undoubted receipts of property undoubtedly stolen, although no longer in the possession of the accused. Explanation 2, and illus. (b) contained in s. 1 of the Amending Act, III. of 1891, tend to show the contrary, and also that previous convictions for a similar offence could be proved for the same purpose.

§ 528. The mere fact of recent possession of stolen property is, in general, evidence of theft, not of receipt of stolen property with guilty knowledge (see *ante*, § 499). The effect to be given to such possession is, however, a question not of law but of fact.<sup>3</sup> If it was proved that a house had been broken into at night, and in a few days after the property was found in the possession of a person who was in the habit of making miscellaneous purchases from all who offered to sell, the presumption would be that he had received the goods rather than stolen them. In all such cases charges for theft should be added to charges for receipt, and *vice versâ*. A person found in possession of various pieces of stolen property, even though they were stolen at different times and from different persons, can only be convicted of a single offence under s. 411, unless it can be shown that he received them at different times. Each receipt is a single offence as to all the property then and

<sup>1</sup> *Reg. v. Oddy*, 2 Den. 264; S.C. 20 L.J. M.C. 198.

<sup>2</sup> *Reg. v. Carter*, 12 Q.B.D. 522; *Reg. v. Drage*, 14 Cox, 85.

<sup>3</sup> *Ina Sheikh v. Reg.*, 11 Cal. 160; Indian Evidence Act, s. 114 (a).

there received. Possibly there might be different offences, if a thief, being possessed of different articles of property stolen from different persons, made distinct bargains as to each with the receiver, one after the other.<sup>1</sup>

§ 529. The question whether an offence can be committed under s. 411 in respect to the property of a husband received from the wife,<sup>2</sup> depends upon the question already discussed, whether a wife can steal from her husband (*ante*, § 495). A husband may be convicted of receiving stolen property from his wife, knowing it to have been stolen by her, or by any other person.<sup>3</sup> In the converse case, a wife might be convicted of receiving from her husband. The court might, of course, take the charitable view, that the wife was merely acting under the orders of her husband, and had no knowledge that she was committing a criminal offence.<sup>4</sup>

§ 530. The offence created by s. 411 is liable to severer penalties under s. 412, if the property was known or reasonably believed to have been transferred by the commission of dacoity, or if, being known or believed to be stolen property, it was received from a person whom the accused knew or believed to belong, or to have belonged to a gang of dacoits. The essence of the offence under s. 412 is the special knowledge or belief connecting the property with a dacoity or with dacoits. This must be specially made out.<sup>5</sup> The accused must be a person different from the dacoits. A dacoit who retains the property he has obtained by his dacoity cannot be punished under s. 412 for an offence distinct from the dacoity.<sup>6</sup>

§ 531. A further aggravation of the offence under s. 411 is created by s. 413, where the accused is shown habitually to receive or deal in stolen property.<sup>7</sup> It is difficult to say what sort of evidence will be admissible and sufficient to procure a conviction under this section. At the very least two acts of receiving or dealing in stolen property must be proved or presumed; and these acts must be at some little distance of time, otherwise they could not be taken as

<sup>1</sup> *Ishan Muchi v. Reg.*, 15 Cal. 511; *Reg. v. Makhan*, 15 All. 317.

<sup>2</sup> *Reg. v. Kenny*, 2 Q.B.D. 307.

<sup>3</sup> *Reg. v. McAthey*, L. & C. 250; 32 L.J. M.C. 35.

<sup>4</sup> *Reg. v. De Silva*, 5 N.W.P. 120.

<sup>5</sup> *Reg. v. Samiruddin*, 18 Suth. Cr. 26.

<sup>6</sup> *Reg. v. Abool Hossein*, 1 Suth. Cr. 48.

<sup>7</sup> See, as to the apprehension and punishment of reputed thieves, Madras Act, VII. of 1867, s. 23.



establishing a habit. In a case where a conviction under this section was set aside, the Court said: "We do not think that a man can be said to be habitually receiving stolen goods, who may receive the proceeds of a dozen robberies from a dozen different thieves on the same day, but, in addition to the receipt from different persons, there must be a receipt on different occasions, and on different dates.<sup>1</sup> Where a man had been several times actually convicted this would, of course, be sufficient, and the previous convictions would be the best evidence against him, since having been himself a party he could not dispute them. Previous convictions need not be proved by production of the record. It is sufficient if the fact be certified by the clerk of the court, or other officer having the custody of the records of the court where the conviction took place, or by a certificate signed by the officer in charge of the gaol in which the accused was confined, or by production of the warrant of commitment.<sup>2</sup> Where there have been no convictions the acts which are relied on as evidencing a habit must in general be proved, just as if each were the subject of a separate indictment. Sometimes this might not be absolutely necessary. If it could be shown that a man kept a shop which was frequented by persons who were and who must have been known by him to be thieves; if the nature of the goods which he purchased, the price which he paid, the precautions with which the goods were bought, kept, or disposed of; the contrivances employed in the premises for concealment, for rapid exit, and for preventing entrance, and other similar circumstances gave strong evidence of a general nature of the trade pursued, even a single instance of receiving brought home for the first time might be sufficient to warrant a conviction. But it would always be necessary to watch such evidence very narrowly.

§ 532. Prisoners cannot be tried at the same trial for receiving or retaining under s. 411, and for habitually receiving or retaining under s. 413, these two offences not being offences of the same kind. The proper course would be to try the accused first for the offences under s. 411, and then, if he were convicted, to try him for the offences under s. 413, putting in as evidence the previous convictions under s. 411, and proving the finding of the rest of the property in respect of which no separate charge under

*v. Baburam*, 19 Cal. 190.

<sup>2</sup> Crim. P.C., s. 511.

s. 411 could be made or tried by reason of the provisions of the Crim. P. C., s. 453.<sup>1</sup>

Section 414 is apparently intended to apply to cases where there has not been such a possession as would support a charge against the accused, as a receiver under s. 411. Where there has been such a possession the offence is complete (*ante*, § 524). A charge under s. 414 would in many cases be advisable as an alternative charge, but would not constitute a distinct offence where there was a conviction under s. 411.

§ 533. **Cheating.**—"Whoever, by deceiving any person, fraudulently or dishonestly induces the person so deceived to deliver any property to any person, or to consent that any person shall retain any property, or intentionally induces the person so deceived to do or omit to do anything which he would not do or omit if he were not so deceived, and which act or omission causes, or is likely to cause, damage or harm to that person in body, mind, reputation, or property, is said to 'cheat.'

*Explanation.*—A dishonest concealment of facts is a deception within the meaning of this section" (s. 415).

In order to make out the offence of cheating, it is necessary to establish (1) that some one was deceived, (2) fraudulently or dishonestly, and (3) that by means of such deceit he was induced to change his position.

1. **Deceit.**—Nothing can be more general than the language of the section upon the first point. All it requires is, that there should be a person who deceives, and another person who is deceived. A person is deceived who is led to believe that which is untrue; but a person cannot be sued or indicted for deceiving him, unless he leads the other to believe that which he himself knows to be untrue.<sup>2</sup> No attempt is made to define the nature of the deception, or the mode by which it is carried out, except that it must satisfy the other words of the section, by being fraudulent or dishonest as regards the person who uses it, and by being the operative cause which leads the person upon whom it is used, to do the thing for which it is used. In general, cheating is effected by the direct assertion as a fact of something which is false. Under the Code, it

<sup>1</sup> *Per curiam*, in *re Uttom Koondoo*, 8 Cal. 634.

<sup>2</sup> *Derry v. Peak*, 14 App. Ca. 337; *per Jervis, C.J., Reg. v. Welman*, Dears. 188; S.C. 22 L.J. M.C. 118.



is immaterial whether the fact so asserted is represented as existing, or as about to take place.<sup>1</sup> It is equally cheating if a man obtains credit by falsely representing that he has an estate, or that he is about to come into an estate; that he has a rich wife, or that he is about to marry a rich wife.<sup>2</sup> In many cases, however, the very nature of the transaction implies an assertion. If a shopkeeper sells goods by the pound, or the yard, or the quart, it is implied that the weight or measure conforms to the usage of the place, and it would be cheating to make use of a false weight or measure.<sup>3</sup> So when a man buys goods, and pays for them by cheque; this is not equivalent to a statement that he has funds to that amount then at the bank, because he may intend to pay in money before the cheque can be presented, or he may believe that his cheque will be honoured, even though his account is overdrawn; but it does amount to a representation that he has authority to draw upon the bank, and that his cheque will be paid. If these representations are false to his knowledge, he will have cheated the shopkeeper.<sup>4</sup> The same principle applies where a flash note is passed off as a genuine one,<sup>5</sup> or where the note of a bank that has stopped payment is given in exchange for goods. In the latter case, however, it should be alleged as the deceit, that the note was represented as being of the present value for which it was tendered, as it may possibly turn out to have been of some value, if proved as a debt on the liquidation of the bank.<sup>6</sup>

§ 534. In many cases of sales the law implies an affirmation, upon which the purchaser is entitled to rely, and if he is deceived by its falsity he is cheated. A sale of goods implies that the seller has a right to dispose of the goods.<sup>7</sup> If a thief, or receiver of stolen goods, sells them to a *bonâ fide* purchaser, from whom they may be claimed at any moment by the real owner,<sup>8</sup> he cheats him. A sale of goods by sample implies a warranty that the bulk is equal to the sample,<sup>9</sup> and if they are known by the seller to be

<sup>1</sup> Section 415, illus. (f), (g).

<sup>2</sup> *Reg. v. Howarth*, 11 Cox, 588; *Reg. v. Archer*, Dears. 449.

<sup>3</sup> 1 East, P.C. 820.

<sup>4</sup> *Reg. v. Hazelton*, L.R., 2 C.C. 134.

<sup>5</sup> *Reg. v. Coulson*, 1 Den. 592; S.C. 19 L.J. M.C. 182.

*Reg. v. Smith*, 6 Cox, 314; *Reg. v. Evans*, Bell, 187.

<sup>7</sup> Indian Contract Act, IX. of 1872, s. 109.

<sup>8</sup> *Ibid.*, s. 108, illus. (a).

<sup>9</sup> *Ibid.*, s. 112.

inferior to the sample, he has cheated the purchaser, and it is not necessary to prove that they were not worth the price given for them.<sup>1</sup> The mere sale of an article implies no assertion that it is good of its kind, but it does imply that it is the kind of thing which it is represented as being; for instance, that it is silver, and not merely a composition with some of the qualities of silver.<sup>2</sup> Where the article has obtained a particular denomination, as scarlet cuttings in the China trade, it must be commercially saleable under that denomination.<sup>3</sup> Under Act IV. of 1889, s. 17, a sale of goods to which any trade-mark or description is applied, implies a warranty of the genuineness of the mark, and the truth of the description, unless some express statement in writing to the contrary has been delivered by the seller to the buyer. A person who simply sells an article does not undertake that it shall answer the purpose to which the purchaser intends to put it, or indeed any purpose. But if the purchaser stipulates that it shall be fit for a particular purpose, as, for instance, that a horse shall be fit to carry a lady, it would be cheating to sell him an animal which was known to be a runaway, or a buck-jumper.<sup>4</sup> So, if the very nature of the article indicates that it is intended for a particular purpose, as, for instance, copper sheathing for a ship, or a pole for a carriage, it must be reasonably fit for that purpose.<sup>5</sup> And it would be cheating wilfully to supply sheathing that would corrode on the first voyage, or a pole that would snap on an ordinary emergency.

§ 535. Much difficulty has been felt in England in consequence of the words of the statute 24 & 25 Vict., c. 96, s. 88, which requires that the property shall have been obtained "by a false pretence." These words have been held to mean a false affirmation of an existing fact. Accordingly, it has been decided that untrue praise of an article intended to be bought did not come within the meaning of the statute, provided the affirmation is of what is mere matter of opinion, and did not amount to an assertion of a definite notable fact. On this ground a conviction was held bad, where the prisoner induced a pawnbroker to advance him money upon some spoons, which he represented as

<sup>1</sup> I.P.C., s. 415, illus. (e); *Reg. v. Abbott*, 1 Den. 278.

<sup>2</sup> *Reg. v. Roebuck*, Dears. & B. 24; S.C. 25 L.J. M.C. 101.

<sup>3</sup> Act IX. of 1872, s. 113; *Bridge v. Wain*, 1 Stark. 504.

<sup>4</sup> *Reg. v. Kenrick*, 5 Q.B. 49.

<sup>5</sup> Act IX. of 1872, s. 114; *Randall v. Newson*, 2 Q.B.D. 102.

silver-plated spoons, which had as much silver on them as Elkington's A (a known class of plated spoon), and that the foundations were of the best material. The fact was, that the spoons were plated with silver, but were, to the prisoner's knowledge, of very inferior quality, and were not worth the money advanced upon them.<sup>1</sup> Where, however, the defendant, knowing that a particular piece of jewellery was only 6-carat gold, falsely represented that it was 15-carat gold, and thereby induced the prosecutor to purchase it, this was held to be a statement of a fact, and not of an opinion, and the conviction for cheating was upheld.<sup>2</sup> And so where he represented a packet as containing "good tea," when three-quarters of its contents was matter unfit to drink, and injurious to health.<sup>3</sup>

§ 536. It is probable that in cases under s. 415, the courts will consider, not whether the statement of the accused was an assertion of a fact or of an opinion, but whether the statement itself was false to the knowledge of the person making it, and, being false, was used for the purpose of deceiving, and did deceive. The remarks of Mr. Greaves, the learned editor of Russell on Crimes, upon the above distinction, though they cannot prevail in England against the weight of decided cases, may be considered with advantage when similar cases arise in India. He says,<sup>4</sup> "In order to bring a case within the statute, the following things are alone requisite: (1) A false pretence; (2) an obtaining of property by it; (3) an intent to defraud. And the correct way to determine whether any particular case falls within it is, not to consider each of these things separately, but to look at them all together; for no case is within the statute unless all of them exist in it. One error, in some cases, seems to have been to consider the pretence apart from the finding of the jury, that it was made with intent to defraud. One may extol an article innocently and another fraudulently in similar terms, but the latter alone is within the statute.

"As to the distinction between a representation that articles are better in point of quality, and a representation that they are entirely different from what they really are, there is nothing in the statute which warrants any such distinction. What the statute requires is, that there shall

<sup>1</sup> *Reg. v. Bryan*, D. & B. 265; S.C. 26 L.J. M.C. 84.

<sup>2</sup> *Reg. v. Ardley*, L.R., 1 C.C. 301.

<sup>3</sup> *Reg. v. Foster*, 2 Q.B.D. 301.

<sup>4</sup> 2 Russ. 667, n.



be a false pretence.<sup>1</sup> Then, is a representation as to quality a pretence? Possibly, where such a representation is made on the mere inspection of an article it may be rather a matter of opinion than a pretence. But where it is made with a full knowledge of the quality of the article, it is not opinion (for opinion must cease when knowledge exists), but an affirmation of a known fact—in other words, a pretence.

"As to the remark, that if extolling goods be within the statute, depreciating them must be so also, the answer is, that if a person were to induce an owner to part with his property by falsely representing it as of inferior value, the case would clearly be within the statute if the representation were made with intent to defraud. Suppose a veterinary surgeon represented that a valuable race-horse had a fatal disease when he well knew that it had not, and by that means obtained it at the price of a useless horse, with intent to defraud the owner, the case would clearly be within the statute."

In one respect the Code avowedly renders criminal a class of cases which are not so by English law, viz. where a party induces another to enter into a contract by a false statement as to his own intention to carry out its terms.<sup>2</sup> This may create a great deal of difficulty. Whenever a contract is entered into, each party leads the other to believe that he intends to perform his own part. If he subsequently fails, there will be nothing to prevent an indictment being laid under this section, and the only question will be whether at the time of making the contract he intended to carry it out. In my opinion, the only safe rule to lay down will be, that mere breach of contract is not even *prima facie* evidence of an original fraudulent intention.<sup>3</sup> It will lie upon the prosecution to establish this intention affirmatively; as, for instance, by showing, in the case of a borrower, that he was hopelessly insolvent when he contracted the loan, and had no expectation of being able to repay it;<sup>4</sup> in the case of a contract to deliver goods, that the person never had the means to deliver them, and never took any steps to procure them. It must be recollected that where an act is in itself innocent, but may become unlawful by being done with a

<sup>1</sup> By s. 415, "a deceiving."

<sup>2</sup> See illus. (f) and (g).

<sup>3</sup> Affirmed by the Madras High Court, Cr. P. 90 of 1863, and *per* Scotland, C.J., in *Reg. v. Wilson*, 2nd Mad. Sess., 1870; acc. *Reg. v. Hargovandas*, 9 Bom. H.C. 448; *Reg. v. Kadir Bux*, 3 N.W.P. 16; *Reg. v. Sheodurshun*, *ibid.* 17.

<sup>4</sup> See *ex parte Bayley*, L.R., 8 Ch. 244.

particular intention, or under particular circumstances, the presumption of innocence prevails till the facts which destroy it are proved (see *ante*, § 5).

§ 537. It is not necessary to show that the false representation by which a person is cheated was addressed to him individually, or even that his existence was known to the accused at the time, or that there was any special intention to defraud in particular. In a case where a person answered a fraudulent advertisement, it was laid down that a false pretence made to the public in general is addressed to all persons to whose knowledge it may come, and who may desire to act upon it; and if a particular person, after seeing or hearing it, acts upon it, and goes to the person from whom it proceeds, and, upon the faith of it, parts with his money or goods, it becomes an advertisement to that particular person, who is one of the class of persons for whom it is intended.<sup>1</sup> And so, in a case against officials of an insolvent bank, Edge, C.J., laid it down to the jury, that if they published balance sheets which were, and which they knew to be, materially false, with the view of defrauding the shareholders or depositors by inducing them to leave their money in the bank, when they would otherwise have drawn it out, and if they succeeded in this object, this was the offence of cheating under s. 418.<sup>2</sup>

§ 538. The offence of cheating may be committed by conduct without any words. A well-known instance is that of the defendant who obtained credit in a university town by going into a shop in the cap and gown of an undergraduate.<sup>3</sup> And so, in a case where the defendant had pretended that he was a captain in the East India Service, Coleridge, J., said it would have been sufficient if he had merely appeared in uniform without saying anything about himself.<sup>4</sup> So where the defendant, in the assumed character of a porter from an inn, delivered a parcel, as if it came from the country, with a printed ticket charging carriage and portage, which he received, and the parcel turned out to be a mock parcel, worth nothing, Lord Ellenborough, C.J., said: "I take the defendant to have uttered every word contained in the ticket which he brought with the parcel."<sup>5</sup>

<sup>1</sup> *Per* Lord Russell, C.J., *Reg. v. Silverlock* (1894), 2 Q.B. 766.

<sup>2</sup> *Reg. v. Moss*, 16 All. 88.

<sup>3</sup> *Reg. v. Barnard*, 7 C. & P. 784.

<sup>4</sup> *Reg. v. Wickham*, 10 Ad. & El. 84.

<sup>5</sup> *Reg. v. Douglas*, 7 C. & P. 785, note (a).



In the case of *Ward v. Hobbs*,<sup>1</sup> Bramwell, L.J., said : "Before a man can complain of fraud he must show that there is something done intentionally to deceive him as an individual, or as one of a class, or as one of the public; and it is not enough that he shows certain conduct not done with that view or intent, but which may have that consequence." He put as an instance the case of an extravagant person, for the sake of display, wearing handsome rings and driving a brilliant equipage, and so obtaining credit with his tailor. This, of course, was not a fraud, as the tailor merely drew an inference as to his wealth, from conduct which had no other object than to gratify his own love of show. But if a swindler without any real means set up in a town, hired a handsome house, drove about in a handsome carriage, and lived in an expensive manner, and used the reputation for wealth which he acquired in this way, for the purpose of obtaining goods on credit, this would certainly be cheating, and would at all events be the best evidence, that he had from the first no intention of paying for what he bought.

§ 539. **Concealment of Facts.**—By the Explanation to s. 415 it is declared that "a dishonest concealment of facts is a deception within the meaning of this section." By s. 24 a man is said to do a thing "dishonestly" when he does it with the intention of causing wrongful gain to one person, or wrongful loss to another person. It seems to me, therefore, that no one can be said to have dishonestly concealed facts within the meaning of this Explanation, unless he has wilfully suppressed something which it was his duty, as between himself and the person with whom he is dealing, to disclose. In other words, it must be a concealment of which that other person has a right to complain, and for which he may obtain redress, either by an action for fraud, or by a suit for rescinding the contract. "Fraud must be committed by the affirmance of something not true within the knowledge of the affirmant, or by the suppression of something which is true, and which it was his duty to make known."<sup>2</sup> Apparently, then, the question in all such cases will be, has the defendant concealed something which it was his duty to make known? If not, the gain which he has obtained for himself is not wrongful gain.

<sup>1</sup> 3 Q.B.D. 150, at p. 157; see *post*, § 543.

<sup>2</sup> *Per* Bramwell, B., *Horsfall v. Thomas*, 31 L.J. Ex. 322, p. 328; S.C. 1 H. & C. 90, p. 100.

§ 540. Under the Transfer of Property Act, it is provided that on a sale of movable property, and in the absence of a contract to the contrary, "the seller is bound to disclose to the buyer any material defect in the property, of which the seller is and the buyer is not aware, and which the buyer could not with ordinary care discover." Further, "the seller shall be deemed to contract with the buyer that the interest which the dealer professes to transfer to the buyer subsists and that he has power to transfer the same." Conversely, "the buyer is bound to disclose to the seller any fact as to the nature or extent of the seller's interest in the property of which the buyer is aware, but of which he has reason to believe that the seller is not aware, and which materially increase the value of such interest."<sup>1</sup> Accordingly, a person who sold a house which was apparently in a sound condition, but which was really in a dangerous state; or a person who sold an estate as free of encumbrances, which he had mortgaged to another (s. 415, *illus. (i)*), would commit a fraud if he concealed the defects in his property or title. It will be observed that the clause as to the duties of a buyer differs from that which relates to a seller. The facts which he is so bound to disclose are facts relating, not to the property itself, but to the nature or extent of the seller's interest in it. It seems to be still good law in India that a purchaser commits no fraud by buying a property at its ordinary agricultural value, without disclosing the knowledge which he has acquired that it contains a valuable mine.<sup>2</sup> But he would be guilty of cheating if he bought from a reversioner his interest in the estate, without informing him that the intermediate life estate had just fallen in, and knowing that the vendor was ignorant of the fact.

§ 541. Under "The Transfer of Property Act," s. 108 (a), "The lessor is bound to disclose to the lessee any material defect in the property, with reference to its intended use, of which the former is, and the latter is not aware, and which the latter could not, with ordinary care, discover." It is not clear how far this is intended to alter the law of England. Where a man takes a long lease of a house, he knows that he must for his own sake put it into thorough repair, and he is generally bound by express covenant to do so. In that

<sup>1</sup> Act IV. of 1882, s. 55; § 1 (a); § 2; § 5 (a). An omission to make the disclosures mentioned in §§ 1 (a) and 5 (a) is fraudulent, *id.*, § 6.

<sup>2</sup> *Per* Lord Thurlow, C., *Fox v. Mackreth*, 2 Bro. C.C. 420.

process he usually finds numbers of defects which he had never anticipated, and which would render the house uninhabitable till made good. "In the ordinary case of lessor and lessee there is no implied covenant on the part of the landlord that the building shall be fit for the purpose for which it is let.<sup>1</sup> On the other hand, where a person takes a furnished house for immediate occupation for a limited time, it is implied that it shall be fit for immediate occupation, and the contract is broken if it is not so; as, for instance, if the house is infested with bugs, or if the drains are out of order.<sup>2</sup> There seems no reason why the same principle should not apply to an unfurnished house, where it was known that the new tenant intended immediately to move in his furniture, and commence residence. Such a case would certainly come within s. 108 (a). If a charge of cheating were founded upon this section, it would be necessary to consider very carefully what the intended purpose was, how far it was communicated to the lessor, what statements as to the condition of the house with regard to repair had been made on one side, and asked for on the other, and on whom the obligation to execute all necessary repairs was cast.

§ 542. Several sections of the Contract Act relating to sales of goods have already been discussed.<sup>3</sup> Upon the question now under discussion, s. 116 has an important bearing. "In the absence of fraud, and of any express warranty, the seller of an article, which answers the description under which it was sold, is not responsible for a latent defect in it. *Illustration.* A sells to B a horse. It turns out that the horse had, at the time of the sale, a defect of which A was unaware. A is not responsible for this." Suppose A knew that his horse had a spavin. Would it be a fraud to sell it without calling attention to the fact? If so, it would seem to follow that he would be guilty of cheating. This is certainly not the law of England, and it would require much consideration before it was decided that it had become the law of India.

The English and American law is laid down as follows by Mr. Justice Story: "The general rule, both of law and equity, in regard to concealment is, that mere silence with

<sup>1</sup> *Searle v. Laverick*, L.R., 9 Q.B., p. 131, per Blackburn, J.

<sup>2</sup> *Smith v. Marrable*, 11 M. & W. 5; *Wilson v. Finch Hatton*, 2 Ex. D. 336; see per Kelly, C.B., at p. 342; *Sarson v. Roberts* (1895), 2 Q.B. 395.

<sup>3</sup> See ante, § 534, as to Act IX. of 1872, ss. 109—115.



regard to a material fact which there is no legal obligation to divulge, will not avoid a contract, although it may operate as an injury to the party from whom it is concealed." "Although a vendor is bound to employ no artifice or disguise for the purpose of concealing defects in the article sold, since that would amount to a positive fraud on the vendee; yet, under the general doctrine of *caveat emptor*, he is not bound to disclose any defect of which he may be cognizant, although his silence may operate virtually to deceive the vendee."<sup>1</sup> Both branches of the rule are illustrated by two cases decided by Lord Ellenborough, C.J. In one a vessel was sold with all faults. The seller knew of a latent defect which rendered it unseaworthy, but no attempt was made to conceal the defect. It was held that the sale was effectual, and that the seller had no ground for complaint.<sup>2</sup> An opposite decision was given in an exactly similar case where the defect had been concealed.<sup>3</sup> Both cases were relied on by Brett, L.J.,<sup>4</sup> as establishing the proposition, "that the seller makes no representation as to the quality of the thing he sells by a mere offer of sale, and that he makes no representation that he himself does not know of a defect in the quality."

§ 543. The whole law upon this subject was exhaustively discussed in the case of *Ward v. Hobbs*, which was finally decided in the House of Lords.<sup>5</sup> There the defendant was owner of a herd of pigs, which was attacked by typhoid fever. Many of the herd died, and he then sent the rest for sale in a public market. The conditions of sale stated that no warranty was given, and that the lots were to be taken with all faults. The pigs had no outward appearance of disease, but the jury found as a fact, which was the basis of the subsequent decisions, that the defendant knew that the pigs had a disease dangerous to life, and were worthless when sold. Almost immediately after removal, the pigs sickened and died of typhoid fever, and infected other pigs belonging to the purchaser, which also died. On these

<sup>1</sup> Story, Contracts, ss. 511, 551, cited and approved by Lord O'Hagan; 4 App. Ca., p. 26. I have not been able to verify these quotations in the only edition of Story to which I have had access—that of 1847, where the corresponding passages are rather differently worded. Lord O'Hagan evidently cited a very much earlier edition.

<sup>2</sup> *Baglehole v. Walters*, 3 Camp. 154.

<sup>3</sup> *Schneider v. Heath*, 3 Camp. 506.

<sup>4</sup> 3 Q.B.D., p. 161.

<sup>5</sup> 2 Q.B.D. 331; 3 Q.B.D. 150; 4 App. Ca. 13.

facts it was held by the House of Lords, affirming the decision of the Appeal Court: *First*, that a sale made with the express condition that the article was sold without a warranty, and with all faults, negatived any suggestion of a representation by the seller that it was free from, or was believed to be free from faults. *Secondly*, that no representation as to health could be inferred from the fact that the sale of diseased animals was made punishable by statute. *Thirdly*, that if express conditions of sale as above, are accompanied by a statement by the owner that, to the best of his belief, the article sold is free from some particular defect, and it is proved that he knew of such defect, then an action of deceit will lie for the false representation. Upon a further question, as to the effect of a mere sale in open market without any express condition that the article was to be taken with all faults, Lord Cairns, C., said:<sup>1</sup> "I observe that in a late case in the Queen's Bench," Mr. Justice Blackburn seems to have thrown out an opinion, that in a case of that kind, there being nothing on one side in the way of statement or negation, and there being simply the fact of a man sending diseased animals to a public market to be sold, that must be held to be a representation by conduct that the animals were free from disease, and that the person so sending might be liable for the consequences of that representation, if it turned out to be untrue. I repeat that I desire, so far as I am concerned, to hold myself unpledged if such a case had to be considered." Should such a case arise again, it will, no doubt, be urged with much force, that although an express statement that an article is to be taken with all faults is conclusive against a representation of quality, there is no case in which such a statement has been held necessary. The principle is laid down generally, that except in the cases already stated (*ante*, §§ 534, 542), if a buyer wishes for a guarantee of goodness he must get it, and that none can be assumed where none is given. In a case exactly similar to that suggested by Blackburn, J., where the owner of a glandered horse sent it for sale by public auction without notice of the disease, and, as far as appears from the report, without any statement that it was sold with all faults, and it communicated the disease to other horses of the purchaser, an action against the seller which disclosed those facts was held bad on

<sup>1</sup> 4 App. Ca., p. 22.<sup>2</sup> *Bodger v. Nichols*, 28 L.T. 441.



demurrer.<sup>1</sup> It would, of course, be different, where by any trade custom a certain degree of quality is understood, in the absence of a statement to the contrary. As, for instance, where it was found to be a custom in the tea trade, that where goods were sea-damaged, the fact should be stated in the catalogue of sale, and sea-damaged goods were sold without any such mention, the sale was held to be a fraud.<sup>2</sup> So, if a buyer communicated to the seller his belief that he was purchasing an article of a particular quality, the sale to him without removing this false impression would be held to be a representation by conduct that it was well founded.<sup>3</sup> Nor has the doctrine of *caveat emptor* any application to the cases in which the law implies full confidence; as, for instance, contracts of insurance, or dealings between persons who occupy a relation of special confidence to each other, as solicitor and client, and the like.

§ 544. The above decisions at common law are in conformity with a later decision in equity.<sup>4</sup> There an action was pending between two parties, and proposals for a compromise were made. Shortly before an interview between F., the plaintiff's solicitor, and the defendant and his solicitor to settle the terms of compromise, F. received a telegram informing him of the result of certain proceedings in the action favourable to the defendants, but did not disclose the information before the terms were agreed to. It was held that the settlement was not affected on the ground that a material fact was suppressed, there being no obligation on F. to disclose what he knew. The Court cited the language of Sir E. Fry:<sup>5</sup> "Mere silence as regards a material fact, which the one party is not under an obligation to disclose to the other, cannot be a ground for rescission, or a defence to a suit for specific performance." Also the words of Lord Campbell, L.C.:<sup>6</sup> "There being no fiduciary relation between vendor and purchaser in the negotiation, the purchaser is not bound to disclose any fact exclusively within his knowledge, which might reasonably be expected to influence the price of the subject to be sold. Simple reticence does not

<sup>1</sup> *Hill v. Balls*, 2 H. & N. 299; S.C. 27 L.J. Ex. 45.

<sup>2</sup> *Jones v. Bowden*, 4 Taunt. 846.

<sup>3</sup> *Hill v. Gray*, 1 Stark. 434; *Keates v. Cadogan*, 10 C.B. 591; S.C. 20 L.J. C.P. 76.

<sup>4</sup> *Turner v. Green* (1895), 2 Ch. 205.

<sup>5</sup> *Treatise on Specific Performance*, 3rd edit., s. 705.

<sup>6</sup> *Walters v. Morgan*, 3 D. F. & G., p. 718.

amount to a legal fraud, however it may be viewed by moralists. But a single word, or, I may add, a nod or a wink, or a shake of the head, or a smile from the purchaser, intended to induce the vendor to believe the existence of a non-existing fact, which might influence the price of the subject matter to be sold, would be sufficient ground for a Court of Equity to refuse specific performance of the agreement."

§ 545. On the whole, it appears to me that s. 116 of the Contract Act was intended to reproduce the law of England, and that the illustration cannot be held to alter its effect, by rendering mere silence as to a known defect a fraud. In fact, the section exactly corresponds with the statement of the English law by Baron Parke.<sup>1</sup> "In the bargain or sale of an existing chattel, by which the property passes, the law does not (in the absence of fraud) imply any warranty of the good quality or condition of the chattel so sold. The simple bargain and sale, therefore, of the ship does not imply any contract that it is then seaworthy, or in a serviceable condition. But the bargain and sale of a chattel as being of a particular description, does imply a contract that the article sold is of that description." If this is so, then mere silence as to a known defect would not be a deception within the meaning of s. 415, though an active concealment of it would be.

§ 546. **Fraudulent Intention.**—(2) There must be a dishonest or fraudulent intention (see P.C., ss. 24, 25). Therefore, where a person who had agreed to sell land set out to register the conveyance, but fell ill on the way, and sent on the defendant, who, by personating him, had the deed registered in his name, it was held the defendant had committed an offence under s. 93 of the Registration Act, XX. of 1866, but that he was not guilty of cheating by personation under s. 419.<sup>2</sup> And so it has been held that a student who, by presenting a false certificate of character, induced the university authorities to allow him to appear at an examination, had not committed an offence under s. 415, inasmuch as his intention was not to cause wrongful gain to himself, or wrongful loss to any one.<sup>3</sup> If, however, the object of the false representation had been to obtain a certificate entitling

<sup>1</sup> *Barr v. Gibson*, 3 M. & W. 390, at p. 399.

<sup>2</sup> *Reg. v. Luthi Bewa*, 2 B.L.R. A. Cr. 25; S.C. 11 Suth. Cr. 24.

<sup>3</sup> *Reg. v. Haradhan*, 19 Cal. 380.

him to anything which could not be obtained without it, such a certificate has been held by the High Court of Allahabad to be property within the meaning of s. 463, which is substantially the same as s. 417, and therefore the act would be cheating.<sup>1</sup>

§ 547. Cases have occurred in which the defendant has committed an act, which admittedly came within the definition of cheating, in order to secure for himself, or some one else, some advantage, to which he considered that they were entitled. In one case the following curious state of facts appeared. The prosecutor owed the prisoner's master a sum of money, of which the latter could not obtain payment, and the prisoner, in order to secure to his master the means of paying himself, had gone to the prosecutor's wife in his absence, and told her that his master had bought of her husband two sacks of malt, and had sent him to fetch them away, upon which she delivered them up. Coleridge, J., told the jury: "Although, *primâ facie*, every one must be taken to have intended the natural consequence of his own act, yet if, in this case, you are satisfied that the prisoner did not intend to defraud the prosecutor, but only to put it in his master's power to compel him to pay a just debt, it will be your duty to find him not guilty. It is not sufficient that the prisoner knowingly stated that which was false, and thereby obtained the malt. You must be satisfied that the prisoner at the time intended to defraud the prosecutor."<sup>2</sup>

This *dictum* was a good deal relied on in a case at Madras. There the prisoner had confessed the fact that he had introduced an overcharge for coolies, and obtained money thereby. He attempted, however, to set up as a defence that he had paid certain money out of his own pocket on a contract for goods supplied to the Railway Company; that, through a mistake in his accounts, he had omitted to charge it at the proper time, and that afterwards, being afraid of incurring blame for this irregularity, he had adopted this indirect way of reimbursing himself. Hence, no fraud was practised upon his employers, the only result of the false pretence being that they had paid money for one thing which was really due for another. Bittleston, J., refused to receive the evidence, on the ground that it could form no defence. On the above case being cited, he distinguished it on two

<sup>1</sup> *Reg. v. Soshi Bhusan*, 15 All. 210, p. 217.

<sup>2</sup> *Reg. v. Williams*, 7 C. & P. 354.



grounds: *First*, that, in the case quoted, the debt was admitted to be a just one, whereas here it had never been even brought to the knowledge of the Railway Company. *Secondly*, that in the former case it did not appear that the prisoner ever intended to deprive the owner permanently of his malt, but merely to detain it temporarily, as a means of putting the screw upon him, to make him pay.<sup>1</sup>

In a more recent case, the defendant was indicted for obtaining a carriage from the prosecutor by false pretence. He admitted the fact, but said the prosecutor owed him money, and that he got the carriage in order to compel payment. Bittleston, J., in charging the jury, said: "I advise you not to convict unless you are satisfied that the prisoner obtained the property, intending absolutely to apply it to his own use. If you think he did not obtain it with the intention of keeping it, but of putting a screw upon the prosecutor, to make him pay the money due by him, then I think he is not guilty of the offence. The prosecutor admits that there was a debt due, and there is evidence of an arbitration between them as to a money dispute. If you think it was merely a trick resorted to for the purpose of pressure, then I recommend you to acquit. It is very dangerous to convict upon a criminal charge, where the case comes merely to a matter of civil dispute."<sup>2</sup>

It will be remembered that the above indictments were under the English law. I am, however, inclined to think that all such cases would come under s. 415. The offence under this section consists of cheating a person into delivery of the property, and the mode in which it was intended to use it, or the length of time during which it was to be kept, seem to me to be immaterial. It was different under the English statute. There the crime consisted in obtaining the article by false pretences "with intent to cheat or defraud any person of the same." It might fairly be said that there was no such intention if the possession of the article was not to be permanent, and if no loss in respect of it was ever to be inflicted upon the owner. Under the present Code the test is the honesty of the means by which the change of possession was effected, not the object which the accused had in view. Even in England, it is no defence to a charge of cheating that the prisoner, when he got the

<sup>1</sup> *Reg. v. Longhurst*, 4th Mad. Sess., 1858.

<sup>2</sup> *Reg. v. Sheikh Ahmed*, 4th Sess., 1860, Madras.



goods into his possession by the false pretence, intended to pay for them, whenever it should be in his power to do so.<sup>1</sup>

§ 548. **Evidence of Previous Acts.**—Where the question is, whether the defendant made the false statement with an intention to cheat, evidence that he had made similar false statements a short time previously, and obtained money by them, is admissible, if it tends to show that on the occasion, which is the subject of inquiry, he was acting with a guilty knowledge; if not, it is inadmissible. For instance, where a prisoner was charged with obtaining money from a pawnbroker by the false pretence that a piece of worthless jewellery consisted of real stones, evidence that he had two days before obtained money from another pawnbroker on the pledge of a chain, which he represented as real gold when it was not, was held to be rightly received. The Court said: "It tends to show that he was pursuing a course of similar acts, and thereby it raises a presumption that he was not acting under a mistake. It is not conclusive, for a man may be many times under a similar mistake, or may be many times the dupe of another; but it is less likely he should be so more often than once, and every circumstance which shows he was not under a mistake on any one of these occasions strengthens the presumption that he was not on the last."<sup>2</sup> And so in a similar case, evidence of the same sort was received, and also of the fact that, when arrested, the prisoner was found to have in his possession twenty-six other chains of an equally worthless character.<sup>3</sup>

On the other hand, where the false pretence alleged was that the prisoner had authority to receive money, evidence that he had a few days before obtained another sum of money by a similar false pretence as to his authority was held inadmissible.<sup>4</sup> As Blackburn, J., remarked in *Francis'* case,<sup>5</sup> "There the alleged false pretence was an assertion of authority to receive the money, and the question was authority or no authority. The evidence was wholly irrelevant." The facts in the last case established that the prisoner had been expressly forbidden to receive the money; therefore no question as to guilty intention could arise. But if upon the facts it might have been doubted

<sup>1</sup> *Reg. v. Naylor*, L.R., 1 C.C. 4; see also discussion, *ante*, § 547.

<sup>2</sup> *Reg. v. Francis*, L.R., 2 C.C. 128.

<sup>3</sup> *Reg. v. Roebuck*, D. & B. 24; S.C. 25 L.J. M.C. 101.

<sup>4</sup> *Reg. v. Holt*, 30 L.J. M.C. 81; S.C. Bell, 200.

L.R., 2 C.C. 130.

he did not really suppose that he was authorized to receive payment, then I imagine evidence would have been properly admitted to show that on a former occasion he had not only set up such an authority, but had given a false account of the mode in which the authority had been conferred on him.<sup>1</sup>

§ 549. **Object of Fraud.**—The fraud must have brought about one or other of the results mentioned in s. 415. Where the object of the offence is to obtain the possession of property, it is immaterial whether the property belongs to the person cheated or not. It is an offence to obtain land from a Revenue officer by falsely pretending that it is waste;<sup>2</sup> and so it would be, if remissions of revenue were obtained by a false representation that the crops were damaged. Where the offence charged consists in causing the person deceived to do or omit to do anything which he would not have done unless deceived, it is necessary to go on and show that the act or omission damaged him in some one of the ways specified in s. 415. For instance, to induce a high caste man to marry a low caste woman, by pretending that she was of a higher caste, is cheating by personation within the meaning of s. 416.<sup>3</sup> Where, however, a person who wanted to get into the police falsely represented that he belonged to a different district, in order to evade the rule which prohibited the enlistment of residents of the district, it was held that he had not committed the offence of cheating; the act done by the person deceived could not damage him in mind, body, or reputation.<sup>4</sup> But if the forbidden results are obtained by the fraud, it is immaterial that the prisoner had promised to do something which was absolutely impossible; as for instance, to procure something that was desired by means of witchcraft.<sup>5</sup>

§ 550. **Fraud must be effectual.**—Finally, it is necessary to show that the person practised on was really deceived, and that it was in consequence of being so deceived, that he did the act desired. The offence would not be committed, if he saw through the fraud, and handed over the property in order

<sup>1</sup> See *ante*, § 527; Indian Evidence Act, I. of 1872, s. 14; Act III. of 1891, s. 1; *Reg. v. Parbhudas*, 11 Bom. H.C. 90.

<sup>2</sup> 6 Mad. H.C. Rulings 12.

<sup>3</sup> *Reg. v. Dabee Sing*, 7 Suth. Cr. 55.

<sup>4</sup> *Reg. v. Dwarka Prasad*, 6 All. 97. See, to the same effect, and on the same ground, *Mojey v. Reg.*, 17 Cal. 606.

<sup>5</sup> *Reg. v. Giles*, L. & C. 502; S.C. 34 L.J. M.C. 502.

to prosecute the prisoner; <sup>1</sup> or if he did not rely upon the statement which was made being true, but believed that in any case he would be paid his money; <sup>2</sup> or if he exercised his own judgment upon the statement made by the defendant as to the value of the article offered to him, and advanced him the money, because he considered that the article was worth it, and not because the defendant said it was.<sup>3</sup> In all such cases, however, though a complete offence has not been committed under s. 415, the prisoner might be convicted of an attempt to commit it, under s. 511.<sup>4</sup> Of course no offence at all has been committed, if the prisoner has managed to effect his object without making any false statement to any one. It would be cheating for a person to pass into a railway carriage, or an Exhibition, by falsely pretending to the official in attendance that he had a proper ticket; but if he managed to get in unobserved, he would have made no pretence, and committed no offence under the Code.<sup>5</sup>

§ 551. **Mischief.**—"Whoever, with intent to cause, or knowing that he is likely to cause, wrongful loss or damage to the public or to any person, causes the destruction of any property, or any such change in any property, or in the situation thereof, as destroys or diminishes its value or utility, or affects it injuriously, commits 'mischief.'

"*Explanation 1.*—It is not essential to the offence of mischief that the offender should intend to cause loss or damage to the owner of the property injured or destroyed. It is sufficient if he intends to cause, or knows that he is likely to cause, wrongful loss or damage to any person by injuring any property, whether it belongs to that person or not.

"*Explanation 2.*—Mischief may be committed by an act affecting property belonging to the person who commits the act, or to that person and others jointly" (s. 425).

The offences punishable under ss. 426—440 vary according to the character of the objects injured, and the amount of damage caused, but they are all governed by the definition given in the above section. The essence of every such

<sup>1</sup> *Reg. v. Mills*, D. & B. 205; S.C. 26 L.J. M.C. 79.

<sup>2</sup> *Reg. v. Dale*, 7 C. & P. 352.

<sup>3</sup> *Reg. v. Roebuck*, D. & B. 24; S.C. 25 L.J. M.C. 101.

<sup>4</sup> *Reg. v. Roebuck*, *ub. sup.*

<sup>5</sup> *Reg. v. Dayabhoy*, 1 Bom. H.C. 140; *Reg. v. Mehervanji*, 6 Bom. H.C. C.C. 6.



offence is that it should have been caused wilfully and with a knowledge that it was wrongful; therefore mere negligence, such as allowing cattle to stray into adjoining premises, though punishable under special acts, is not an offence within s. 425.<sup>1</sup> Further, it is not sufficient that the act should have been intended to cause some wrongful damage; it must have been intended to cause that particular form of damage which consists in injuriously affecting property. If a man throws a stone, or fires a shot at another, and the missile injures property, he has not committed mischief, unless he aimed in such a direction that he must have known that the natural consequences of his act would be to do the damage complained of; although that was not his wish, yet if he was reckless whether he did it or not, and mischief has followed, he is answerable for the result.<sup>2</sup> Nor is damage punishable under s. 425 when it is committed in the *bonâ fide* exercise of a right, reasonably supposed to exist.<sup>3</sup> On the other hand, a mere claim of right is not sufficient, if the facts so clearly negative the claim as to make the assertion of it to the injury of another an additional wrong.<sup>4</sup> "It is the duty of the Criminal Court to determine what was the intention of the alleged offender, and if it arrives at the conclusion that he was not acting in the exercise of a *bonâ fide* claim of right, then it cannot refuse to convict the offender, assuming, of course, that the other facts are established which constitute the offence."<sup>5</sup> It is also necessary to show that the subject-matter which was injured was, at the time, the property of some other person, otherwise no one can be damaged, and no one can be wronged.<sup>6</sup> Mischief may, however, be committed in respect of property which is valueless for its primary purpose, such as a document which is absolutely void as a security, provided it can be used for any purpose, as evidence of any collateral matter, so as to be of some use to owner.<sup>7</sup>

<sup>1</sup> *Re Aruz Sircar*, 10 Suth. Cr. 29; *Forbes v. Girish Chundra*, 6 B.L.R. Appx. 3; S.C. 14 Suth. Cr. 31; *Reg. v. Bai Baya*, 7 Bom. 126; *Reg. v. Shaik Raju*, 9 Bom. 173; 6 Mad. H.C. Rulings 37.

<sup>2</sup> *Reg. v. Pembliton*, L.R., 2 C.C. 119, p. 122.

<sup>3</sup> *Bakar Halsana v. Dinobandhu*, 3 B.L.R. A. Cr. 17; S.C. 12 Suth. Cr. 1.

<sup>4</sup> *Ramakrishna Chetti v. Palaniyandi*, 1 Mad. 262; *Reg. v. Jagaunath*, 10 Bom. 183.

<sup>5</sup> *Per Turner, J., Reg. v. Budh Singh*, 2 All. 101, p. 103.

<sup>6</sup> *Bhagiram Dome v. Abar Dome*, 15 Cal. 388; *Romesh Chunder v. Hiru Mondal*, 17 Cal. 852; see ante, § 482.

<sup>7</sup> *Reg. v. Vyapuri*, 5 Mad. 401.



§ 552. It is not necessary to the offence of mischief that the damage done to the property should be of a destructive character. Where goods were in process of removal, and the accused came and threw them out of the cart upon the road, a conviction under s. 425 was maintained. The Court said that the inconvenience caused to the owner of the goods, by the unlawful change of their situation, did diminish their utility, as goods on their way to their destination. "We think it is not necessary that the damage required by the section should be of a destructive character. All that is necessary is, that there should be an invasion of right, and diminution of the value of one's property caused by that invasion, which must have been contemplated by the doer when he did it."<sup>1</sup>

§ 553. Mischief may be committed by a joint owner of property, where the act is in its nature malicious and wanton, and one which could have had no other object than the injury or destruction of the property to the detriment of the other joint owners.<sup>2</sup> It may also be committed in respect of a man's own property, where another person has an interest in it which the owner is bound to protect. "This damage need not, necessarily, consist in the infringement of an existing present and complete right, but it may be caused by an act done now, with the intention of defeating and rendering infructuous a right about to come into existence." Accordingly, where an estate had been sold for arrears of revenue, and the usual deposit had been paid, and the owner, with a view to cause loss to the purchaser, cut down fruit trees before the expiration of the sixty days, when the certificate of sale would be granted, it was held that he was properly convicted under s. 425.<sup>3</sup> And so it would be in the case of a Hindu widow, in respect of her husband's estate; for, though she is the full owner of it, she is not entitled to commit waste. It would be otherwise as regards the male owner of an absolute and unrestricted estate. He would not commit mischief even if he destroyed it wantonly, for the purpose of injuring the prospects of the contingent heir. Such an act would not be wrongful, for the heir has no right to anything except what is in existence at the death of the owner. He is entitled to step into the shoes of the owner,

<sup>1</sup> *Juggeshwar Dass v. Koylash Chunder*, 12 Cal. 55.

<sup>2</sup> *Per curiam*, 3 B.L.R. A. Cr., p. 20.

<sup>3</sup> *Dharma Das v. Nasseruddin*, 12 Cal. 660.

but the owner is not bound to leave him any shoes to step into. This was the principle on which a curious case was decided in Bombay. The owner of a dead bullock buried the carcase. The magistrate found that it was a recognized custom for the Máhár to take, as his right, the skin of any deceased bullock of the village, and that the accused had buried the bullock with the express object of destroying the skin and preventing the complainant from getting it: He therefore convicted him of mischief. West, J., in reversing the conviction, said: "The owner asserted his right to the carcase when dead, and, being in possession, might retain such possession, if supported by any colour of right, until a better title was made to the property. This being so, the act was not one to be dealt with under the criminal law, but one for which the remedy was to be sought in the civil court."<sup>1</sup> Still less is it mischief to do, without payment, any act which the defendant has a right to do on payment: the injury consists, not in the result of the act, but in intercepting the money payable for doing it.<sup>2</sup>

§ 554. The Madras High Court has held in two cases that an act, which is not mischief when it is done, does not become mischief because, to the knowledge of the doer, it will probably cause wrongful injury to some one else. In one case the act consisted in damming up a river, which would probably cause the prosecutor's lands to be inundated. In another case it consisted in opening up a sluice, so as to divert to the defendant's land water which ought to flow to the land of the prosecutor.<sup>3</sup> In neither case had any actual loss happened to any one at the time of the charge, and of course no offence was committed. In each case, apparently, the only property that was actually changed was the land of the accused, and, so far as the situation of the water was altered, that water, if it was the property of any one, was the property of the defendant, so long as it was on his own land. But as soon as the act complained of did cause an injury to the prosecutor, of the nature described in s. 425, I think the offence charged would be committed, provided the damage was one which the doer had contemplated at the time he did the act, and which was in itself wrongful.

<sup>1</sup> *Reg. v. Govinda Punja*, 8 Bom. 295.

<sup>2</sup> 5 Mad. H.C. Ruling 30.

<sup>3</sup> 4 Mad. H.C. Ruling 15; 7 Mad. H.C. Ruling 39; *contra*, apparently, *re Ram Golam Sing*, 6 Suth. Cr. 59.

'There are numerous cases in which a man has a perfect right to do a particular act upon his own land, and no one can complain of it, until some injurious consequence follows from it. As soon as such a consequence follows, the injury, and not the original act, becomes a cause of action.<sup>1</sup> In such a case the mischief would consist, not in making the bund, or in opening the sluice, but in flooding or withering up the prosecutor's crops.

§ 555. **Criminal Trespass.**—"Whoever enters into or upon property in the possession of another, with intent to commit an offence, or to intimidate, insult, or annoy any person in possession of such property; or, having lawfully entered into or upon such property, unlawfully remains there with intent thereby to intimidate, insult, or annoy any such person, or with intent to commit an offence, is said to commit 'criminal trespass'" (s. 441).

The first clause of this section says nothing as to the character of the entry upon property, which, coupled with the intent, converts it into a criminal trespass. The second clause, however, obviously draws a distinction between the lawful entry, which subsequently becomes unlawful, and an original entry of a different character. I conceive that this clause of the section must be limited to cases where the entry is in itself part of the unlawful act, and is either expressly or impliedly against the will of the owner of the property.<sup>2</sup> For instance, suppose a man were to go upon the premises of another with intent to steal his money, to abduct his daughter, to lame his horse, or the like, here the entry would be inseparably connected with the offence aimed at, and would be against the will of the owner.

Of course, an authority to enter may be revoked, either expressly or by implication. No authority to remain can be assumed to last after the person who was authorized to enter for one purpose, proceeds to employ this opportunity in the commission of an offence, for which he has got the permission of the owner of the property. Therefore, if a guest, who was invited to an entertainment, were to secrete himself in the house when it was over, for the purpose of committing theft, this would be an "unlawful remaining in the house with intent to commit an offence," and, therefore, would be "house-trespass." But if he employed himself, in

<sup>1</sup> *Backhouse v. Bonomi*, 9 H.L.C. 503; *Mitchell v. Darley Main Colliery Co.*, 11 App. Ca. 127.

<sup>2</sup> See *per* Straight, J., *re Gobind Prasad*, 2 All., at p. 466.



conjunction with the proprietor, in illicit coining, this would be indictable as a substantive offence, but the mere continuance in the house could not be called "an unlawful remaining" in it, since of itself it was not unlawful.

§ 556. The offence of criminal trespass is only committed where some criminal intent is present to the mind of the person charged, and, under some sections of this chapter (ss. 449, 451, 454, 457), the punishment varies according as the prisoner is convicted of intending to commit one crime or another. Of course, there must be circumstances in the case which lead to the presumption that the prisoner had any criminal intent, or the particular intent with which he is charged, as no criminal intent can be assumed in the absence of proof. But it must not be assumed that for this purpose it will always be necessary to adduce independent evidence different from that which makes out the substantive offence. For instance, if a man is found in the middle of the night in another's house, this of itself is ample evidence to convict him, not merely of house-breaking by night, but of doing so with intent to commit theft. On the other hand, independent circumstances might lead to the conclusion that his object was to commit adultery, or even murder. So, if a party were found enjoying themselves at a picnic upon another man's land, this would not be even *prima facie* evidence of a criminal trespass. But if it was shown that they had gone there in open defiance of a previous prohibition, that might be taken as evidence of an intent to insult or annoy.<sup>1</sup>

An entry upon land which a man believes to be his own will not be a criminal trespass, though the land was in the possession of another, if the object really was to assert a right over it, and not to intimidate, insult, or annoy, the other,<sup>2</sup> unless under circumstances which amount to the offence of unlawful assembly.<sup>3</sup> And so, where a man had been exercising a right of fishery for a considerable time, alleging a prescriptive right, the mere fact of continuing to do so after a notice of prohibition is not criminal trespass.<sup>4</sup>

<sup>1</sup> *Kalash Chunder v. Reg.*, 16 Cal. 657; *Golap Pandey v. Boddam*, *ibid.* 715; *re Shib Nath Banerjee*, 24 Suth. Cr. 58; *Balmakand Ram v. Ghansam Ram*, 22 Cal. 391.

<sup>2</sup> *Reg. v. Ram Dyal*, 7 Suth. Cr. 28; *Reg. v. Kalinauth*, 9 *ibid.* Cr. 1; *Reg. v. Chooramoni*, 14 *ibid.* Cr. 25; *Reg. v. Budh Singh*, 2 All. 101; *re Gobind Prasad*, 2 All. 465.

<sup>3</sup> See s. 141, *ante*, § 288; *Empress v. Raj Coomar*, 3 Cal. 573.

<sup>4</sup> *Reg. v. Shistidhur*, 9 B.L.R. Appx. 19; S.C. 18 Suth. Cr. 25.



§ 557. The words "intimidate" and "insult" refer, I suppose, in general, to such criminal acts as are defined by ss. 503 and 504 of the Code.<sup>1</sup> It has been suggested by Mr. Collett,<sup>2</sup> that upon this construction the words are superfluous, since criminal intimidation and insult are already provided for by the former words, "with intent to commit an offence." It is, no doubt, possible to conceive cases in which insult or intimidation, which was obviously wrongful, as being without any apparent legal excuse, would fall short of the definitions in Chapter XXII. Such cases, when coupled with trespass on possession of property, may perhaps have been contemplated by the framers of the Code, but would be very rare. The word "annoy" obviously cannot be limited to cases within s. 510, which presupposes a state of intoxication. Any proceeding by which a person wilfully intrudes upon the property of another, with the intention of disturbing his privacy, or setting at defiance his right to exclude trespassers from his house or land, would come within the term. Further, "the word 'annoy,' in s. 441, must be taken to mean annoyance that would generally and reasonably affect an ordinary person, not what would specially and exclusively annoy a particular individual."<sup>3</sup> In a case where the accused had enclosed and commenced to cultivate a portion of a burial-ground, but no specific intent such as is mentioned in s. 441 was established, the Madras High Court held that the offence of criminal trespass was made out, since there was evidence of his intention to annoy the portion of the public entitled to use the burial-ground; "for the intent of the defendant must be inferred from the nature of his acts. And it is scarcely possible to conceive acts more calculated to cause annoyance, especially to superstitious people attaching sanctity to the relics of mortality, than the act of ploughing up a burial-ground."<sup>4</sup> I should have imagined that the intent which the law would infer from cultivating another man's land, would be merely an intent to procure wrongful gain for one's self, and that a further intent to annoy would have to be made out by something like special evidence. Where a ratepayer forced his way into a room where municipal commissioners were sitting, in order to urge them to.

<sup>1</sup> See *per* Straight, J., 2 All., p. 466.

<sup>2</sup> Comments on the Penal Code, 134.

<sup>3</sup> *Per* Straight, J., *re* Gobind Prasad, 2 All., p. 467.

<sup>4</sup> 6 Mad. H.C. Rulings 25.

review an assessment made upon them, it was held that, however annoying his entrance might be, it could not be treated as having been effected with any of the intents necessary to constitute a criminal trespass.<sup>1</sup>

§ 558. Under s. 40 of the Code, the word "offence," when used in s. 441, denotes a thing punishable under this Code, or under any special or local law, when, in the last-named case, the act is punishable with imprisonment for a term of six months, whether with or without fine. An act which is merely unlawful, in the sense that it is forbidden by civil law, and that redress can be obtained for it by damages, is not an offence within the meaning of the section. Therefore, entry upon land with intention to do that which the civil law will prevent or punish, does not constitute criminal trespass. For instance, the cultivation of Government waste-land without permission,<sup>2</sup> or the re-entry upon land from which a person has been ejected by civil process,<sup>3</sup> or the entering of an Exhibition building without a ticket,<sup>4</sup> or breaking open a door at an illegal hour for the purpose of effecting an arrest or a distraint,<sup>5</sup> or following game upon land for the purpose of killing it, even in defiance of previous warnings,<sup>6</sup> are not acts which of themselves, and without proof of any further intent, are punishable under s. 441, or under any other section of which a criminal trespass forms an essential part.<sup>7</sup> An act which is not in itself an offence, may, however, become so under s. 188, if committed in disobedience to an order lawfully made by a public servant; and the mere entry upon land, with a view to the doing of something forbidden, will be a criminal trespass without proof of any further intent.<sup>8</sup>

§ 559. **Possession.**—The property wrongfully entered upon must have been at the time in the possession of another. This means an actual, not a merely constructive possession, such as might be set up by a person who claims property which he has vacated, or from which he has been ousted,<sup>9</sup> or who is

<sup>1</sup> *Chandi Pershad v. Evans*, 22 Cal. 123.

<sup>2</sup> 4 Mad. Jur. 205; S.C. Weir, 117 [198].

<sup>3</sup> 6 Mad. H.C. Rulings 19.

<sup>4</sup> *Reg. v. Mehervanji*, 6 Bom. H.C. C.C. 6.

<sup>5</sup> *Empress v. Jotharam*, 2 Mad. 30.

<sup>6</sup> *Chunder Narain v. Farquharson*, 4 Cal. 837. In this case the boundary was disputed.

<sup>7</sup> *Re Gobind Prasad*, 2 All. 465.

<sup>8</sup> 5 Mad. H.C. Rulings 17.

<sup>9</sup> *Iswar Chandra v. Sital Das*, 8 B.L.R. Appx. 62.

one of a number of persons who have a right to be in a particular place at a particular time.<sup>1</sup> It must be such a possession as is contemplated by s. 145 of the Crim. P.C., 1882 ;<sup>2</sup> not necessarily a bodily possession, but a possession by means of a servant or a tenant, who holds the whole of the property of which possession is claimed by authority of, or under a title derived from, the person claiming to be in possession. A mere symbolical possession, by entering upon the land and setting up a tent upon it, or by affixing a notice, or demanding possession, is not sufficient.<sup>3</sup> So, where a person is entitled to do certain acts, such as mining, at any points which he may select over a large territory, he has no possession except at the particular spots which he has begun to work upon.<sup>4</sup> Similarly with regard to fishing. The infringement of an exclusive right of fishery in a public river, or in a public tank, can never be a criminal trespass, as the river or tank cannot be in the exclusive possession of any one, and a right of fishery is not property, of which any one can be said to be in possession, within the meaning of s. 441.<sup>5</sup>

§ 560. The Madras High Court in one case supported a conviction for criminal trespass upon a burial-ground. They said, "the person (corporate) in possession of the burial-ground is the portion of the public entitled to use the burial-ground."<sup>6</sup> Of course there are many cases where a burial-ground is undoubtedly in the possession of an owner, as for instance a churchyard, or when it belongs to a Cemetery Company or a Municipality. When, however, an unoccupied piece of land in a village is appropriated by long usage or common consent to the purpose of burial, it is doubtful whether, in accordance with the above decisions, it can be in the possession of any one, and matters are not advanced by calling the public a corporation, which it is not. Possibly each individual grave might be said to be in the possession of the individual who appropriated it, or of his representatives. In another case, where the alleged criminal

<sup>1</sup> *Chandi Pershad v. Evans*, 22 Cal. 123.

<sup>2</sup> *Pcr Straight, J.*, 2 All., p. 467, where he refers to the corresponding s. 530 of the Crim. P.C., X. of 1872.

<sup>3</sup> *Sutherland v. Crowdy*, 18 Suth. Cr. 11; *ex parte Fletcher*, 5 Ch. D. 809; *Reg. v. Thacoor Dyal Sing*, 3 Cal. 320.

<sup>4</sup> *Bejoy Nath Chatterjee v. Bengal Coal Co.*, 28 Suth. Cr. 43.

<sup>5</sup> *Reg. v. Charu*, 2 Cal. 354; Mad. H.C. Pro., 25 Oct., 1879; Weir, Sup. 8 [202].

<sup>6</sup> 6 Mad. H.C. Rulings 25.



trespass was upon a public footpath, the same court held the conviction bad, because the accused was himself entitled to the use of the footpath. Had he not been so entitled, the Court appears to have thought, on the authority of the last case, that the offence would have been committed.<sup>1</sup> It is difficult to see how a public footpath or highway can, as such, be in the possession of any one. The soil generally belongs to the owner of the adjoining land, subject to an easement for the benefit of the public, who can use it for no other purpose.

§ 561. Cases of some difficulty have arisen in India under sections corresponding to s. 145 of the Crim. P.C., 1882, and s. 9 of the Specific Relief Act, I. of 1877, where a dispute as to possession has taken place between the trespasser and the rightful owner, or between two persons claiming under conflicting titles. As similar questions might arise under s. 441 of this Code, the first requires some examination.

A mere trespasser cannot obtain what is known in law as possession, by the act of entry, or even by the continuance of that act, so long as the act is disputed and resisted. This is well illustrated by the case of *Brown v. Dawson*.<sup>2</sup> There the trustees of a school, who had the right to dismiss the master, but were bound to give him notice, turned him out without notice, and therefore wrongfully. He might have refused to go, but he went out quietly, and gave up his room. The next day, the 1st of July, he returned and broke open the room, and took possession. The trustees at once gave him notice to quit, and on the 11th ejected him. He brought an action of trespass, founded on his last possession; the trustees relied on their previous possession. Whichever party could establish possession between the 1st and 11th of July was entitled to succeed. It was held that the plaintiff must fail. Lord Denman, C.J., said: "A mere trespasser cannot, by the very act of trespass, immediately and without acquiescence, give himself what the law understands by possession against the person whom he ejects, and drive him to produce his title, if he can without delay reinstate himself in his former possession. Here, by the acquiescence of the plaintiff, the defendants had become peaceably and lawfully possessed as against him. He had re-entered by a trespass; if they had immediately sued him for that trespass, he certainly could not have made out a plea denying their possession. What

<sup>1</sup> 6 Mad. H.C. Rulings 26.

<sup>2</sup> 12 A. & E. 624.



he could not have done on the 1st of July, he could as little have done on the 11th, for his tortiously being on the spot was never acquiesced in for a moment, and there was no delay in disputing it." Accordingly, in a case under s. 530 of the Crim. P.C. of 1872 (corresponding to s. 145 of the Act of 1882), the High Court of Bengal ruled that the ouster by one person of another who was in lawful possession of property, can give the former no right to be kept in possession. "The magistrate must look back to possession which may be termed peaceful. He must go back to the time when the dispute originated, not to the result of the dispute itself."<sup>1</sup> Where, however, the possession has been obtained peacefully under a *bonâ fide* claim of right, the legality of the possession does not depend upon the goodness of the title, where possession or no possession is the only question at issue.<sup>2</sup>

§ 562. The effect of possession re-taken by the rightful owner is completely different. "As soon as a person is entitled to possession, and enters in the assertion of that possession, or, which is exactly the same thing, any other person enters by command of that lawful owner so entitled to possession, the law immediately vests the actual possession in the person who has so entered. If there are two persons in a field, each asserting that the field is his, and each doing some act in the assertion of the right of possession, and if the question is, which of these two is in actual possession, I answer, the person who has the title is in actual possession, and the other person is a trespasser. They differ in no other respect."<sup>3</sup> This statement of the law was cited and followed by Lord Selborne in the following case.<sup>4</sup> Lows was the mortgagee in fee of a house, which the mortgagor had leased to Telford, who took possession. By English law this lease was absolutely ineffectual against the mortgagee, who was entitled to take possession whenever he chose, without legal process. Lows proceeded to the house by night, broke into it, and took possession, in the absence of

<sup>1</sup> *Reg. v. Mohesh Chunder*, 4 Cal. 417; 6 Mad. H.C. Rulings 13; *Dudabhai Narsibhai v. Sub-Collector of Broach*, 7 Bom. H.C. A.C. 82, in reference to s. 15 of Act XIV. of 1859, which corresponds to the Specific Relief Act, I. of 1877, s. 9.

<sup>2</sup> *Dastur v. Fell*, 6 Bom. H.C. C.C. 30. I think the statement in the text conveys the real meaning of the judgment better than the side-note to the case, which appears to me liable to misconstruction.

<sup>3</sup> *Per Maule, J., Jones v. Chapman*, 2 Exch. 821.

<sup>4</sup> *Lows v. Telford*, 1 App. Ca. 414, pp. 426, 427.

the lessee. Immediately afterwards, Telford, with others, made his way in by the window, and tried forcibly to resume possession. He was indicted for a forcible entry, and the question in the subsequent civil suit was, whether he was properly so indicted, which again turned upon the question whether Lows was in lawful possession. It was held that he was. Lord Selborne said: "He had the legal title. He had (when no one was present to oppose him) effected an actual entry into the premises, beyond all doubt for the purpose of taking possession, and he, by himself and his servants, had already acquired such a dominion and control over the property when the lessee first came upon the ground, that the respondents could not enter it without putting a ladder against the house, and getting in through the window. I cannot doubt that the possession was legally complete and exclusive, and that it was forcibly disturbed by the respondents."

§ 563. In the particular case the mortgagee was able to recover possession peacefully, but Lord Selborne treated that point as immaterial, and referred, with approval, to the language of Parke, B., in *Harvey v. Bridges*,<sup>1</sup> where "it is pointed out, that so far as relates to the fact of possession, and its legal consequences, it makes no difference whether it has been taken by the legal owner forcibly or not."<sup>2</sup> It must be remembered, that this doctrine only applies to the effect of the change of possession for civil purposes. In India, as in England, the forcible dispossession of another, even by the lawful proprietor, may be punishable under s. 141 of the Code (*ante*, § 288). And in India, differing from the law of England, the result of such a dispossession may be frustrated, if the person so dispossessed, otherwise than in due course of law, brings a suit within six months from the date of the dispossession to recover possession.<sup>3</sup> Unless the latter course be adopted, the person who has regained possession retains all the advantages legally attaching to that possession.<sup>4</sup>

§ 564. Where a person who is not entitled to take posses-

<sup>1</sup> 14 M. & W. 442.

<sup>2</sup> 4 App. Ca., p. 426; *acc. per* Erle, C.J., *Blades v. Higgs*, 30 L.J. C.P. 346; S.C. 10 C.B. N.S. 713; *Kunhi Komarapen v. Changarachan*, 2 Mad. H.C. 313.

<sup>3</sup> Act I. of 1877, s. 9; *Kalee Chunder v. Adoo Shaikh*, 9 Suth. Civ. 602; *Sayaji v. Ramji*, 5 Bom. 446.

<sup>4</sup> *Lillu v. Annaji*, 5 Bom. 387.

sion enters upon property, he gets possession of nothing except that over which he exercises actual physical control, as he has no other title to which his possession can relate.<sup>1</sup> Conversely it would seem to follow, that a person who has a legal title, and who takes possession by virtue of that title, would get possession of everything to which that title extends, unless some effective resistance limited the possession.

This section does not appear to include any cases of trespass to movable property. The language is inconsistent with such a construction, particularly the words "having lawfully entered into or upon such property, unlawfully remains there."

§ 565. **House-Trespass.**—"Whoever commits criminal trespass by entering into, or remaining in, any building, tent, or vessel used as a human dwelling, or any building used as a place for worship, or as a place for the custody of property, is said to commit house-trespass.

"*Explanation.*—"The introduction of any part of the criminal trespasser's body is entering sufficient to constitute house-trespass" (s. 442).

There must, however, be an entry into the house; merely getting upon the roof is not sufficient.<sup>2</sup>

The only part of the section which is likely to cause difficulty is the phrase "used as a human dwelling." There is no difference, as to the penalty, whether the place is used for a human dwelling or for the custody of property, and any doubt will generally be solved by framing two charges, in which the place is differently described.

§ 566. **Human Dwelling.**—"The essence of a human dwelling is that it should furnish a residence for the owner of the premises, or his family, or servants, or some other person who occupies for that purpose, with his permission. Its primary purpose may be to supply a place for carrying on some trade or occupation; as if a tradesman lives in his shop, or a lawyer lives in his chambers; but, incidentally, it must be a place in which somebody lives; not a place to which he resorts occasionally, or by day only, and then goes away at night. Lord Hale says that if the shopkeeper, or his servant, usually or often lodge in the shop at night, it is then a dwelling-house, in which a burglary may be com-

<sup>1</sup> *Per Mellish, L.J., ex parte Fletcher*, 5 Ch. D. 809.



mitted; but it would be otherwise if he never lodges there, but only works or trades therein in the daytime, and he or his servants never lodge there at night.<sup>1</sup> This was so decided in the case of *Reg. v. Eggington*.<sup>2</sup> There a large pile of buildings consisted of a centre building and two wings, owned by Boulton. The centre building was used by him as a manufactory, with the necessary counting-houses, storehouses, and the like. The wings were occupied as residences by Boulton, his partner, and one of his subordinates. There was no internal communication between the central building and the wings. The centre building was broken into and plundered. It was held that it was not the dwelling house of Boulton, or of any one else. Nor does a house become the dwelling house of another, because he passes the night there for some special purpose, as when he is put in there to watch over the property, and not merely as a place to sleep in.<sup>3</sup>

§ 567. It is not necessary that the residence should be continuous. If a man has several residences, and passes from one to another; or if he leaves his residence for some temporary purpose, as business or a journey, it is still his dwelling house, though no one is left behind.<sup>4</sup> If, however, the owner has quitted his residence without any intention of returning, and has left none of his family or servants behind, it has ceased to be his dwelling house.<sup>5</sup> On the same principle, if a man has bought or hired a house as a residence, but has not yet begun to live in it, himself or any of his family or servants, this is not his dwelling house, though he has put his furniture or goods into it.<sup>6</sup>

The term dwelling house includes not only that portion of the premises which is used for purposes of habitation, but also the outhouses, such as barns, stables, cow-houses, dairy houses, and the like, if they are part of the principal messuage, belonging to it and used with it, and as appurtenant to it. It is not necessary that they should be connected with the principal building. If they are within the curtilage or fence of the principal building, that is conclusive as to their being parts of the dwelling house; but the absence of such a fence is immaterial, if in fact the outlying portions are adjoining to the mansion, and occupied with it. Whether

<sup>1</sup> 1 Hale, P.C. 558.      <sup>2</sup> 2 East, P.C. 494.      <sup>3</sup> 2 East, P.C. 497, 499.

<sup>4</sup> 1 Hale, P.C. 556; *R. v. Murry*, 2 East P.C. 496.

<sup>5</sup> *R. v. Nutbrown*, Foster, Crim. L. 76.

<sup>6</sup> See cases cited 2 East, P.C., s. 12, p. 497; 1 Hawk. P.C. 133.



they are portions of the dwelling house is a question of fact, and must be found affirmatively.<sup>1</sup>

§ 568. Where house-trespass is charged as having been committed in respect of a dwelling house, the name of the owner should be alleged. Upon this Sir Edward Hyde East says,<sup>2</sup> "If the rule by which to ascertain this ownership may be compressed with sufficient discrimination into a small compass, I should say generally, that where the legal title to the whole mansion remains in the same person; there, if he inhabits it either by himself, his family, his servants, or even by his guests, the indictment must lay the offence to be committed against his mansion. And so it is, though he let out apartments to inmates, who have a separate interest therein, if they have the same outer door or entrance into the mansion in common with himself. But if distinct families be in the exclusive occupation of the house, and have their ordinary residence or domicile there, without any interference on the part of the proper owner; or if they be only in possession of parts of the house as inmates to the owner, and have a distinct and separate entrance; then the offence of breaking, etc., their separate apartments must be laid to be done against the mansion-house of such occupiers respectively."

Any error or mistake in alleging the ownership of the dwelling would be properly amended under ss. 226, 227 of the Criminal Procedure Code (see *post*, § 693).

When the offence is charged as having been committed in a place used for the custody of property, the place must be one which can be properly described as a building. A large, detached, circular receptacle for grain, constructed of straw, with an opening at the top, and situated in a back yard, was held not to be "a place for the custody of property" within the meaning of this section. Therefore, the offence of housebreaking could not be committed in respect of it. The offence really committed was the dishonest breaking open of a closed receptacle containing property, under s. 461.<sup>3</sup>

§ 569. Further varieties of the offence of house-trespass consist of lurking house-trespass (s. 443), the essence of which is its clandestine character, and housebreaking

<sup>1</sup> 1 Hale, P.C. 558; 1 Hawk. P.C. 134; 2 East, P.C. 492.

<sup>2</sup> 2 East, P.C. 500. The cases upon which his rule is based will be found in pp. 500—507; 1 Hawk. P.C. 134, 135.

<sup>3</sup> 11 H.C. 457.

(s. 445). The various modes in which the latter offence may be committed, are so minutely described and illustrated that further comment would be unnecessary. It will be observed by the Explanation that the breaking into, or out of any out-house or building occupied with a house, will only be considered as a breaking of the principal house, if there is an immediate internal communication between the two. Where, however, the outlying house is itself used as a human dwelling, or as a place for the custody of property, the absence of such communication is immaterial. It is only important where the house actually broken into does not come within the definition in s. 442, except constructively, as being an adjunct to the principal house.

Further aggravations of all these offences are provided for by ss. 449-460, according to the heinousness of the offences contemplated by the trespasser, or the degree of violence prepared for or actually inflicted. The special offences punishable under ss. 458, 459, and 460, are only committed if the house-trespass or housebreaking has actually been completed. An attempted offence, as, for instance, where the accused was detected while making a hole in the wall of the house, does not enable the increased penalty to be inflicted.<sup>1</sup>

By s. 460, if one of several persons who are jointly committing lurking house-trespass by night, or housebreaking by night, shall voluntarily cause, or attempt to cause, death or grievous hurt to any person, every person jointly concerned in the house-trespass or housebreaking shall be specially punished.

The liability under this section becomes absolute upon every person jointly concerned in the house-trespass or housebreaking, even though death, or grievous hurt, was neither the common object of the offenders, nor contemplated by them as likely to result.<sup>2</sup>

<sup>1</sup> *J. v. Ismail Khan*, 8 All. 649.

<sup>2</sup> *Reg. v. Sabed Ali*, 11 B.L.R. 355; S.C. 20 Suth. Cr. 5.

## CHAPTER XII.

## OFFENCES OF FALSIFICATION.

- I. Coining, §§ 570—575.
- II. Forgery, §§ 576—591.
- III. Merchandise Marks, §§ 592—601.

§ 570. **Coining.**—The offences comprised in this chapter, though very different in character, all agree in this, that the intention of the offender is to produce, or to pass off upon another, something which professes to be what it really is not. Chapter XII. of the Code deals with two sorts of money, viz. coin, and the Queen's coin, as defined by s. 230; and different degrees of penalties are in general applied to the same offence, when committed as regards the last sort.

The offence of counterfeiting, or knowingly performing any part of the process of counterfeiting coin, is punishable by ss. 231 and 232.

The word "counterfeit," as used in this Code, is defined by s. 28 to involve an intention, by means of that resemblance, to practise deception, or a knowledge that it is likely that deception will thereby be practised. And such an intention, or knowledge, will always be inferred from the mere fact of counterfeiting, unless under circumstances which conclusively negative it. Such circumstances must be so rare that it is unnecessary to imagine instances.

The same definition provides that it is not essential to counterfeiting that the imitation should be exact. And this provision is, of course, peculiarly necessary in this country, where the ignorance of the people might enable even a clumsy imitation to prove successful, while the low state of coining science renders it probable that no counterfeit will be minutely accurate. Accordingly, a trifling variation from the real coin in the inscription, effigies, or arms was held under the corresponding English statute not

to remove the offence out of the statute.<sup>1</sup> And so it was held in another case, where the ingenious device was adopted of making coins without any impression whatever, in imitation of the smooth, worn money then in circulation.<sup>2</sup> But it will still be necessary to show that the article produced, or partly produced, was a counterfeit, that is, that it was such a resemblance as might be received as the coin for which it was intended to pass, by persons using the caution customary in taking money. This caution, of course, will vary according to the class of persons among whom it may be supposed that it was intended to pass. Accordingly, where the prisoner had counterfeited the resemblance of a half-guinea upon a piece of gold previously hammered, but it was not round, nor would it pass in the condition in which it then was, the judges held the offence to be incomplete.<sup>3</sup> Nor is a mere medal counterfeit coin, though fraudulently represented to an ignorant person as being money.<sup>4</sup>

§ 571. The absence of apparent resemblance may possibly arise merely from the process being imperfectly carried out. If that be so, there will still be an offence under this section. And even if the metal in which the counterfeit was made was completely different from that of the coin represented, it would still be a question of fact whether this difference did not arise merely from the manufacture having been interrupted in an early stage.<sup>5</sup> Copper or lead may be washed over so as afterwards to bear a sufficiently strong resemblance to silver or gold. But I conceive that no conviction could be supported where it was plain that the thing actually made was never intended to result in a coin, but was merely an experiment as a step towards future productive efforts.

It is seldom possible, and never necessary, to show that the defendant has been caught in the act of counterfeiting. The act will generally have to be inferred, from such evidence as the possession of tools, dies, or metal necessary for the purpose; or from finding some coins finished, and others unfinished, or different coins in a different state of completion.<sup>6</sup> The mere possession of counterfeit coin by a

<sup>1</sup> See *Reg. v. Robinson*, 34 L.J. M.C. 176; S.C. L. & C. 604.

<sup>2</sup> *Welsh's case*, 1 East, P.C. 164.

<sup>3</sup> *Varley's case*, 1 East, P.C. 164.

<sup>4</sup> *Rulings of Mad. H.C.*, 1864, on s. 240.

<sup>5</sup> *Mad. H.C. Rulings*, 17 Nov., 1863; S.C. Weir, 71 [94].

<sup>6</sup> *Reg. v. Roberts*, Dears. 539; S.C. 25 L.J. M.C. 17.



person who has had nothing to do with its manufacture may be an offence under subsequent sections (237—243), but is not punishable under s. 231.

The offence constituted by this section consists in the fact of the counterfeiting. It is not necessary to show that the coins were uttered, or that there was any attempt to utter them. Making a counterfeit coin, to see whether it would answer the purpose, or even as a specimen to put in a cabinet, would be sufficient.<sup>1</sup>

§ 572. Making or selling any die or instrument for the purpose of being used for counterfeiting coin, is punishable under ss. 233 and 234. A person who is employed by a coiner to make coining instruments, and who informs the authorities, and, in concert with them, proceeds in the execution of the task to effect the detection of the offender, is, of course, not guilty. The person who employed him would be punishable as an abettor.<sup>2</sup>

Under s. 235 it is an offence to be in possession of any instrument or material for the purpose of using it for counterfeiting coin, or with the knowledge or belief that it was intended to be so used. Under this section, it will be a question whether the instruments or material were such as could and would be used for such criminal purposes. The rudeness of the contrivance is no importance, if the object is found as a fact.<sup>3</sup>

§ 573. Coining instruments, or materials, will be in a man's possession when they are in any box or place which is under his control, and whether they are used for his benefit or not, provided it is shown that he is aware of their existence and character. And the same article may be in the possession of several persons, if they are acting in concert, and each of them have a guilty knowledge of the character and existence of the thing in question.

In one case, a prisoner, named Weeks, was indicted with four others for having unlawfully in their custody and possession a coining mould. It appeared that the police entered the prisoner's house in his absence, and there found the other prisoners, two of whom attacked the police, while the two others, one of whom was the wife of Weeks, snatched up something from the table and threw it into the fire.

<sup>1</sup> 1 East, P.C. 165; *Reg. v. Roberts*, *ub. sup.*

<sup>2</sup> *R. v. Bannen*, 2 Moody, 309.

<sup>3</sup> *Ridgeley's case*, 1 East, P.C. 171.

This was found to be the coining mould, which formed the subject of the indictment. Other implements and materials suitable for making moulds were found in other parts of the house. The prisoner came back to the house after the capture was made. It was proved that he had passed off a bad half-crown thirteen days before. The jury found Weeks guilty of being knowingly, and without lawful excuse, in possession of the coining mould, and the Court affirmed the conviction, saying, "We are all of opinion that there was sufficient evidence to be left to the jury on the charge of felony. In order to prove the guilty knowledge, evidence was admissible of other substantive felonies committed by the prisoner."<sup>1</sup>

The "other substantive felonies" which are admissible to prove guilty knowledge, must, of course, be crimes of a similar character,<sup>2</sup> and not too remote in point of time. The fact that a man has committed a robbery is no proof that he is a coiner, though the fact that he has passed off a leaden rupee a few days previously would be. Nor would the circumstance that a man had passed off a false rupee a year ago be any evidence that another now found in his possession was known to be counterfeit. For any man through whose hands money passes might meet with such accidents at such distances of time. But the possession of other pieces of base coin, or the fact that base coin has been passed off by the same defendant at other times, either before or after the offence charged in the indictment, will be evidence of such a guilty knowledge.<sup>3</sup>

§ 574. There are three classes of offences created by ss. 239—243: *First*, passing off coin known from the first to be counterfeit. *Secondly*, passing off such coin which was for the first time discovered to be counterfeit after its receipt. *Thirdly*, being in wrongful possession of coin known all along to have been counterfeit. Further subdivisions of classes first and third arise, according as the counterfeit coin is the Queen's or otherwise.

With regard to ss. 239 and 240, it has been held "that the offence for which punishment is provided is not the offence committed by the coiner. The words 'which at the

<sup>1</sup> *Reg. v. Weeks*, 30 L.J. M.C. 141; S.C. L. & C. 18.

<sup>2</sup> See Indian Evidence Act, I. of 1872, s. 15.

<sup>3</sup> *Rex v. Wylie*, 1 Bos. & P. N.R. 92; *Rex v. Harrison*, 2 Lewin, 118; *Reg. v. Foster*, Dears. 456; S.C. 24 L.J. M.C. 134; *Reg. v. Nur Mahomed*, 8 Bom. 223.

time he became possessed of it he knew to be counterfeit' point to a person other than the coiner, that is to say, the person who procures, or obtains, or receives counterfeit coin. It is against such a person that the section is directed."<sup>1</sup>

The delivery must be "fraudulently, or with intent that fraud may be committed." A person delivers false coin fraudulently if he cheats the person to whom it is delivered; he delivers it with intent that fraud may be committed, if he puts it in the power of that person, whether he is an accomplice or an innocent agent, to pass it off upon some one else who may lose by it. It was held in England that no offence was committed by giving a counterfeit half-crown to a woman who asked for charity, as she was not defrauded by it.<sup>2</sup> This decision is obviously doubtful, as the woman would necessarily have tried to get some one else to take the coin as genuine. Accordingly, in a later case, where the prisoner had given a counterfeit coin to a girl with whom he had connection, the offence was held to be complete. The former decision was cited, and distinguished by the judges as a case of mere charity, but they doubted its being sound law.<sup>3</sup> In a later case, Alderson, B., said that it had been overruled, and that the intent to defraud would be inferred by law from the passing off a false coin as a good one.<sup>4</sup> Nor does it make any difference that the person to whom the coin is tendered refuses to receive it.<sup>5</sup>

§ 575. The offence under s. 241 consists in trying to pass off as genuine a coin which the accused has honestly received, but has subsequently found out to be counterfeit. No offence is committed where the coins are not delivered as genuine. A vagrant entered a shop for drink. The shopkeeper, supposing that he had come to commit theft, shut the door and called for a watchman. The vagrant ran away, and meeting one Munglee put some coins into his hand, and told him to keep them for him. The coins turned out to be counterfeit. A conviction under s. 241 was set aside, as it did not appear that he had passed the coins as genuine, or induced Munglee to receive them as genuine.<sup>6</sup>

The mere possession of counterfeit coin is an offence under ss. 242 and 243, even though no attempt is made to pass it off, provided it can be shown that it was kept for a

<sup>1</sup> *Reg. v. Sheobux*, 3 N.W.P. 150.

<sup>2</sup> *R. v. Page*, 8 C. & P. 122.

<sup>3</sup> *Reg. v. Anon*, 1 Cox, 258.

<sup>4</sup> *Reg. v. Ion*, 2 Den. 481.

<sup>5</sup> *Reg. v. Welsh*, 2 Den. 78; S.C. 20 L.J. M.C. 101.

<sup>6</sup> *Reg. v. Soorut*, 4 N.W.P. 62.



fraudulent purpose, and was originally obtained with a guilty knowledge. The mere fact of a single base coin being found in a party's possession would not, without further evidence, be sufficient to create a presumption that he knew it to be counterfeit when he obtained it, and intended to make a fraudulent use of it. But where a considerable number of base coins is found in any man's possession, the presumption of guilt would be sufficient to make a conviction lawful, unless the possession could in some manner be explained or accounted for (*ante*, § 573).

§ 576. **Forgery.**—"Whoever makes any false document or part of a document, with intent to cause damage or injury to the public or to any person, or to support any claim or title, or to cause any person to part with property, or to enter into any express or implied contract, or with intent to commit fraud, or that fraud may be committed, commits forgery" (s. 463).

"A person is said to make a false document—

*First.*—Who dishonestly or fraudulently makes, signs, seals, or executes a document or part of a document, or makes any mark denoting the execution of a document, with the intention of causing it to be believed that such document or part of a document was made, signed, sealed, or executed by, or by the authority of a person, by whom or by whose authority he knows that it was not made, signed, sealed, or executed, or at a time at which he knows that it was not made, signed, sealed, or executed; or

*Secondly.*—Who, without lawful authority, dishonestly or fraudulently, by cancellation or otherwise, alters a document in any material part thereof, after it has been made or executed either by himself or by any other person, whether such person be living or dead at the time of such alteration; or

*Thirdly.*—Who dishonestly or fraudulently causes any person to sign, seal, execute, or alter, a document, knowing that such person by reason of unsoundness of mind or intoxication cannot, or that by reason of deception practised upon him, he does not, know the contents of the document, or the nature of the alteration.

*Explanation 1.*—A man's signature of his own name may amount to forgery.

*Explanation 2.*—The making of a false document in the name of a fictitious person, intending it to be believed that the document was made by a real person, or in the name of



a deceased person, intending it to be believed that the document was made by the person in his lifetime, may amount to forgery " (s. 464).

In order to establish the charge of forgery, it is necessary to show that the accused has produced something which is a "false document" within the meaning of s. 464, and that he has done so with some of the intents described in s. 463.

§ 577. The term "document" is defined by s. 29 in a manner which seems to include every substance upon which any letters or marks are inscribed, in a manner capable of conveying an idea to the mind of a person who is able to understand them. A picture inscribed with the name of an artist, and thereby purporting to be painted by him, would be a document within s. 29, and might be a false document within s. 464.<sup>1</sup> It is not necessary that the document should be legal evidence of the matter expressed in it. It is sufficient if it was intended to be evidence. That is, if it was put forward by the person making or using it, as containing statements upon which the person to whom it is submitted might and ought to rely.<sup>2</sup>

**False Document.**—A document is a false document if it purports to be signed, sealed, or otherwise authenticated by a person who did not so execute it, and who did not authorize any one else to execute it on his behalf. In general, no forgery could be committed by a person who, with the authority of another, signs the name of that other. If, however, the nature of the transaction involved a representation that the document was actually signed by the person whose signature it bore, and if the signature by any other person would be a fraud, then the signature of that person's name, even without his authority, by another in order to help him in committing that fraud, would be forgery. So it was held, where the accused personated a student at an examination, in collusion with him, and signed his name to an examination paper.<sup>3</sup>

§ 578. A document is also a false document although the signature is genuine, if the contents of the document which are authenticated by the signature are, by means of some fraud, different from that which the executing party intended

<sup>1</sup> The contrary has been held in England, upon the narrower construction given there to the word "document" (*Reg v. Closs*, D. & B. 460; S.C. 27 L.J. M.C. 54).

<sup>2</sup> *Reg. v. Shifait Ali*, 2 B.L.R. A. Cr. 12; S.C. 10 Suth. Cr. 61.

<sup>3</sup> *Rea. v. Annasami*. 12 Mad. 151.

them to be. This may be effected, either by altering a document which has already been executed, or by fraudulently inducing a person to sign a document containing matter different from that which he supposed it contained. In either case, it is evident that the words of the name are no more an authentication of the matter above them, than if they had been cut off a letter and pasted upon the document. A question has been raised whether the same rule applies to a mere non-feasance; as where a person who is employed to draw up a will designedly omits one of the legacies. The English lawyers apparently hold that the mere omission does not constitute a forgery, unless such omission makes a material alteration in other parts of the will; as where, by the omission of a prior life-estate to A, a present fee is passed to B, instead of a remainder, as was intended.<sup>1</sup> Such a case, however, appears clearly to come within the third clause of s. 464. The document which the testator executes is not his will, inasmuch as it does not carry out his wishes; and so I conceive it would be, if the draughtsman, for some fraudulent purpose, left out part of the testator's estate, leaving it to pass by intestacy, instead of according to his will. As Serjeant Hawkins says: "In this case the first inquiry should be, with what intention the omission was made."

§ 579. It is not forgery for a man to make a deed which contains a false statement, but it is forgery for him to make a false deed; as, for instance, by ante-dating a document, "to make a man's own act appear to have been done at a time when it was not done, and by force of such a falsity to give it an operation which in truth and justice it ought not to have."<sup>2</sup> And so it is forgery for a man to sign his own name to a document, in order that it may be supposed to be, and that it may take effect as, a document executed by another person of the same name. For as regards him, the document is an absolutely false document.<sup>3</sup> It is not forgery to execute in one's own name, at the request of another, a document different in its operation from that which the other expected, unless there is something in the document which binds the other. As, for instance, where a debtor was asked by his creditor to enter in the creditor's account-book an acknowledgment of indebtedness, and he entered, in a

<sup>1</sup> 1 Hawk. P.C. 265; 2 East, P.C. 856.

<sup>2</sup> 3 Bac. Abr. 745, affd.; *Reg. v. Ritson*, L.R., 1 C.C. 200; *Moheshur Bux v. Bhikha Chowdhry*, 5 Suth., p. 64.

<sup>3</sup> *Mead v. Young*, 4 T.R. 28.

language unknown to the creditor, a statement that he had discharged the debt in full. The offence really committed was that of attempting to cheat, or fabricating false evidence.<sup>1</sup>

§ 580. Signing a document with the name of a fictitious person may or not be a fraud, and if it is a fraud, it may or may not be a forgery. If a person for any purpose is passing by a false name, and in that name writes an order for goods, or for the payment of money, intending to pay for the goods, or expecting that his money order will be honoured, this is neither a fraud nor a forgery, even though in the result the goods are not paid for, and the order is not cashed. Where, however, a person signs a fictitious name with a fraudulent purpose, this will generally be cheating, and may, but not necessarily, be forgery. In *Dunn's case*,<sup>2</sup> the judges laid down the following principles: "First, that if a person give a note or other security as his own note or security, and the credit thereupon be personal to himself without any relation to another, his signing such a note with a fictitious name may indeed be a cheat, but will not amount to forgery; for in that case it is really the instrument of the party whose act it purports to be, and the creditor had no other security in view. But, secondly, that if a note be given in the name of another person, either really existing or represented so to be, and in that light it obtain a superior credit, or induce a trust which would not have been given to the party himself, it is then a false instrument, and punishable as forgery." Accordingly, when the prisoner, Robert Martin, gave a cheque drawn in the name of William Martin, a fictitious person, upon a bank in which there was no account answering to that signature, but the prosecutor took the cheque believing that it was drawn in the prisoner's name, the Court, following the ruling in *Dunn's case*, held that no forgery had been committed.<sup>3</sup> Where, however, the prisoner has written an endorsement or receipt on a bill of exchange in a fictitious name, either in order to add to the apparent value of the document, or to avoid being traced as the person who had negotiated it, this is forgery; and it makes no difference that the bill itself is perfectly genuine, and that, being already endorsed in blank, no further endorsement was necessary, if, as a matter of fact, the prisoner could not have got it cashed,

<sup>1</sup> *Reg. v. Kunju Nayar*, 12 Mad. 114.

<sup>2</sup> 1 Leach, 57; S.C. 2 East, P.C. 961, 962.

<sup>3</sup> *Reg. v. Martin*, 5 Q.B.D. 34.



without writing upon it what was supposed to be his real name.<sup>1</sup>

§ 581. The fabrication of that which purports to be a true copy, and which is intended to be used as such, but which is really a false copy, is a forgery within the meaning of s. 463.<sup>2</sup> But the preparation of a draft of a document, which is about to be forged, and which is never itself intended to be used for any other purpose, is neither a forgery, nor an attempt at forgery. It might, under certain circumstances, be charged as an abetment of a forgery, if committed in conjunction with others.<sup>3</sup> The mere fact that a person presents a document with a genuine endorsement upon it, and obtains cash by representing that it is his endorsement and that he is the person entitled to the money, would be cheating, but is not forgery, though so eminent a judge as Ashurst, J., once thought it was forgery.<sup>4</sup>

In charging a forgery under either of the special sections, 466, 467, it is well to add a count describing the document simply as a false document, so as to guard against the possibility that the document may turn out to be something different from what is alleged. For instance, although it is not necessary that a forged bank-note should be an accurate resemblance of a genuine one,<sup>5</sup> it is necessary that it should be such a document as would have been a bank-note, if the signature had been genuine.<sup>6</sup>

§ 582. **Fraudulent Intent.**—Assuming the document to come within the definition in s. 464, it is further necessary to show that it was made with some one of the dishonest intentions specified in s. 463. It is not, however, required, in order to constitute in point of law an intent to defraud, that the person committing the offence should have present in his mind an intention to defraud a particular person, if the consequences of the act would necessarily, or possibly be to defraud any person; but there must, at all events, be a possibility of some person being defrauded by the forgery, if successful.<sup>7</sup> I add the last two words, which are not in

<sup>1</sup> *Bolland's case*, 2 East, P.C. 958; *Taft's case*, *ibid.* 959; *Taylor's case*, *ibid.* 960; *Reg. v. Pera Raju*, 13 Mad. 27.

<sup>2</sup> *Per Peacock, C.J., Essan Chunder v. Baboo Prannauth*, Marshall, 270; S.C. Suth. F.B. 71; 2 Hay. 236.

<sup>3</sup> *Reg. v. Padala Venkatasami*, 3 Mad. 4.

<sup>4</sup> *Hevey's case*, 2 East, P.C. 856.

<sup>5</sup> See s. 28, Explanations 1, 2.

<sup>6</sup> 1 Hale, P.C. 184; 2 East, P.C. 950; *R. v. Jones*, 2 East, P.C. 883.

<sup>7</sup> *Per Crosswell, J., Reg. v. Marcus*, 2 C. & K. 356.



the judgment quoted from, because the intention of the accused must be judged by the result which he expected, not by that which took place, or which could have taken place. Therefore it is no answer to an indictment for forgery that the instrument was invalid, or that it described the estate which it professed to convey by a wrong name,<sup>1</sup> or that it purported to be the will of a person who was still living, and was therefore wholly inoperative.<sup>2</sup> And so, in a case where the prisoner was charged with forging a transfer of railway shares held by one Hanstock, and it appeared that his name was upon the register, but that it was probable he had no title to the shares, the conviction was held good. Maule, J., said: "The Recorder seems to have thought that, in order to prove an intent to defraud, there should have been some person defrauded, or who might possibly have been defrauded. But I do not think that at all necessary. A man may have an intent to defraud, and yet there may not be any person who could be defrauded by his act." As an illustration, he put the case of a person forging the name of another to a cheque upon bankers where he had no account.<sup>3</sup> And so it has been held in Calcutta, that forgery is committed by a man who fabricates a false document at the request of another, who is merely laying a trap for him, and where the document would never have been used at all.<sup>4</sup> Of course there can be no intention to defraud where no wrongful result was intended, or could have arisen, from the act of the accused. Accordingly, the Allahabad High Court held that it was not forgery to alter the number by which land was wrongly described on a deed of sale by substituting the right number, and that using the deed so altered as evidence in a suit was not punishable under s. 471.<sup>5</sup> Also that it was not forgery to fabricate receipts for rent, in place of genuine receipts which had been lost;<sup>6</sup> or for the manager of an estate to sign the name of the proprietor to a petition to the Mamlatdar, requesting his summary assistance under Reg. XVII. of 1827, for the recovery of rent from the tenants of the proprietor.<sup>7</sup> In this case the manager probably considered.

<sup>1</sup> 1 Hawk. P.C. 265; *Crooke's case*, 2 East, P.C. 921.

<sup>2</sup> *Crogan's case*, 2 East, P.C. 948.

<sup>3</sup> *Reg. v. Nash*, 2 Den. 493; S.C. 21 L.J. M.C. 147.

<sup>4</sup> *Haradhan Maiti v. Reg.*, 14 Cal. 513.

<sup>5</sup> *Reg. v. Fateh*, 5 All. 217.

<sup>6</sup> *Reg. v. Sheo Dyal*, 7 All. 459.

<sup>7</sup> *Reg. v. Bhavanishankar*, 11 Bom. H.C. 3.

honestly that he had authority to sign the name of the proprietor.

§ 583. Upon this question, as to what is a fraudulent intent, there have been various decisions in India, founded on the strict language of s. 463, and of the defining clauses 24 and 25, which are not always consistent with each other, and which, perhaps, would not have been anticipated by the framers of the Penal Code. It is admitted that the fabrication of a document, which is part of the machinery by which a fraud is carried out, is itself a forgery. As, for instance, where a postmaster misappropriated the value of a money order, and forged a receipt purporting to have been granted by the payee. "There was clearly an intention to cause wrongful loss to Government, by conveying the false impression that the receipt contained an acknowledgment of payment by the payee; and the fact of misappropriation, in our opinion, merely shows that there was an intention to cause wrongful gain to himself. A debtor who forges a release to screen himself from liability to pay the debt, cannot be said not to be guilty of forgery, because he intended, by the forgery, to cover a dishonest purpose."<sup>1</sup> On the other hand, there is a series of decisions to the effect, that where an offence has been completed, the falsification of public records, in a manner which, in other respects, comes within the definition of forgery, wants the necessary ingredient of fraud, because the intention of the accused is merely to screen himself from punishment; and this intention does not come within the words "fraudulently or dishonestly" as explained by the Code.<sup>2</sup> On the same ground, it was held not to be forgery to alter the date of a document which was too late to be registered, so as to make it appear that it was in time;<sup>3</sup> or to concoct a sunnud purporting to be granted by a native rajah, conferring a title of dignity upon the accused, which he used for the purpose of inducing a settlement officer to recognize his title to that dignity;<sup>4</sup> or to send in to the university authorities a false certificate of character, which was necessary to entitle him to present himself at the Entrance Examination.<sup>5</sup>

<sup>1</sup> *Reg. v. Sabapati*, 11 Mad. 411.

<sup>2</sup> *Reg. v. Lal Gumul*, 2 N.W.P. 11; *Reg. v. Jageshur Pershad*, 6 N.W.P. 56; *Reg. v. Shankar*, 4 Bom. 657; *Reg. v. Jiwanand*, 5 All. 221; *Reg. v. Mazhar Husain*, 5 All. 553; *Reg. v. Girdhari Lal*, 8 All. 653; *Abdul Hamid v. Reg.*, 13 Cal. 349.

<sup>3</sup> *Reg. v. Mir Ekrar Ali*, 6 Cal. 482.

<sup>4</sup> *Jan Mahomed v. Reg.*, 10 Cal. 584.

<sup>5</sup> *Reg. v. Haradhan*, 19 Cal. 380.

§ 584. On the other hand, the accused was held to be properly convicted under s. 464, where, being candidate for a clerkship in the sub-divisional office at Budruck, he first forged a letter of recommendation from the sub-divisional officer to the Collector, and then forged another letter from the Collector to the sub-divisional officer, stating that the Collector had selected him for the post. The Court said: "Whether or not, under the circumstances mentioned above, the appellant may be said to have fabricated these documents 'dishonestly,' it is clear to us that he fabricated them fraudulently within the meaning of the definition of that word given in the Indian Penal Code. His object was to obtain the vacant post in the sub-divisional office at Budruck. His intention, therefore, in making these two false documents was to obtain some pecuniary advantage by deceiving the sub-divisional officer as well as the Collector."<sup>1</sup> This case, no doubt, came expressly within the words of s. 463, and illus. (k) to s. 464, but is important as showing the view taken of the word "fraudulently." In a later case from Allahabad, the facts differed very little from those in *Reg. v. Haradhan*,<sup>2</sup> from which the Court expressly dissented. There a candidate for admission to the Queen's College, Benares, twice presented a false certificate, purporting to be granted by the Principal of the Canning College, Lucknow. The first time he succeeded by means of it in obtaining permission to attend a second course of lectures at Benares, without attending the previous course. On the second presentation, when the fraud was detected, he would have obtained a certificate which would have entitled him to attend an examination for pleadership at Calcutta. The Court held that the document was a forgery, and that on each presentation the defendant had committed an offence under s. 471. Edge, C.J., said, in reference to illus. (k), s. 464, "We can see no difference in principle between the case of a man making a false certificate in order to obtain employment, and the case of a man making a false certificate in order to obtain admission to a law class. In each case the intention is to deceive another person, and thereby to obtain an advantage, or a privilege, which without such deception could not have been obtained. We are consequently of opinion that the document in question was a false document within the meaning of s. 464 of the Indian Penal Code." He then expressed the opinion of the Court,

<sup>1</sup> *Abdul Hamid v. Reg.*, 13 Cal. 349.

<sup>2</sup> 19 Cal. 380.



dissenting from that of Norris, J., in *Reg. v. Haradhan*, that the word "claim" in s. 463 was not limited to a claim to property, but might be a claim to anything, as, for instance, to a wife or child, or to be admitted to attendance at a college class, or to an examination at a university. Also, that the certificate which was sought on the second presentation was "property" within the meaning of the same section; and finally, as regards every part of the transaction, "that the document in question was made with intent that fraud might be committed."<sup>1</sup>

§ 585. If it should ever be thought advisable to review the decisions cited in § 583, it might be well to consider, whether the courts did not rely too exclusively on the word "dishonestly" in s. 464, as requiring an intention to cause wrongful gain to one person or wrongful loss to another, without reference to the term "fraudulently," which clearly means something different.<sup>2</sup> Taking ss. 463 and 464 together, all that is required for the crime of forgery is, that a man should fraudulently make a document, whose contents profess to be authenticated by a person who did not authenticate them, with intent to commit fraud. The word "fraudulently" is only defined by s. 25, as the act of a person who does it with intent to defraud. No definition is given of the terms "fraud" or "defraud." The Bombay and the Allahabad High Courts have, with reference to ss. 463 and 464, accepted the statement of Le Blanc, J., in *Haycraft v. Creasy*,<sup>3</sup> that "by fraud is meant an intention to deceive, whether it be from any expectation of advantage to the party himself, or from ill-will towards the other, is immaterial."<sup>4</sup> Now, looking at the above cases, can there be any doubt that in each of them a gross fraud was perpetrated by the accused upon the authorities who had to consider: whether he had committed a criminal offence, whether they were justified in registering his document, or according to him a title of dignity, or admitting him to the benefit of a university, by his supplying to them, as the materials for their decision, documents which were absolutely untrue? Can it also be doubted that in each case the accused sought an advantage for himself which he valued, and would have purchased, at a sum infinitely above, say, Rs. 10? If, then, it would have been an undoubted forgery

<sup>1</sup> *Reg. v. Shoshi Bhashan*, 15 All. 210.

<sup>2</sup> See *per* Norris, J., 9 Cal., p. 60.

<sup>3</sup> 2 East, p. 108.

<sup>4</sup> 13 Bom., p. 514; 15 All., p. 218.



if the document had been fabricated for the purpose of obtaining Rs. 10, how can it be less forgery because the object sought was something not measurable by money, but of far greater value? If each of these cases was not a fraud, the English language has ceased to have any meaning. But if it was a fraud, then the requirements of ss. 463 and 464 are satisfied. This was the view taken by the Calcutta High Court in the latest case upon the point, where an agent had paid into the collectorate a smaller sum than he had received as Government revenue, and then altered the receipt given to him, so as to make it appear that he had paid in the full amount.<sup>1</sup>

§ 586. Publication of a forged document is a separate offence under s. 471, but is no part of the offence created by s. 463. The very making, with such fraudulent intent, and without lawful authority, of any instrument which is the subject of forgery, is of itself a sufficient completion of the offence even before publication, and of consequence before any actual injury sustained: for though publication be the medium by which the intent is usually made manifest, yet it may be proved as plainly by other evidence."<sup>2</sup>

§ 587. Joint Acts.—Where several persons join in the concoction of a forged document, each of them is guilty of the offence of forgery, if he has the knowledge and intention which is required by the Code; and where each of them takes a distinct part in the fabrication, as where one makes the paper, another engraves the plate, a third fills in the contents, and a fourth imitates the signature, it makes no difference in the guilt of any one of them, that he does not know how or by whom the remaining portion of the forgery is to be effected.<sup>3</sup>

§ 588. Using False Document as Genuine.—“Whoever fraudulently or dishonestly uses as genuine any document which he knows, or has reason to believe, to be a forged document, shall be punished in the same manner as if he had forged such document” (s. 471).

The document must, previous to its use, possess all the qualities of a forged document. Suppose a person fabricated

<sup>1</sup> *Lolit Mohun v. Reg.*, 22 Cal. 313.

<sup>2</sup> 2 East, P.C. 855; Pro. Mad. H.C., 7th April, 1866; S.C. Weir, 122 [210]; *Reg. v. Shifait Ali*, 2 B.L.R. A. Cr. 12; S.C. 10 Suth. Cr. 61.

<sup>3</sup> *R. v. Bingley*, R. & Ry. 446; *R. v. Dade*, 1 Moody, 307; *R. v. Kirkwood*, 1 Moody, 304; P.C., s. 37.

a document for the purpose of using it in some manner which the Court would hold not to be fraudulent within the meaning of s. 463,<sup>1</sup> and were afterwards to use it for a clearly fraudulent purpose; or suppose a person were to amuse himself by forging a friend's signature to a cheque, and throw it aside, and that it was then picked up by some one else, who presented it for payment, would an offence under s. 471 have been committed? The case has never arisen, and never may arise. When it does, it would be well to add a count for attempting to commit the offence, upon which the prisoner would certainly be convicted.

Any use of a forged document, which involves a representation by the accused that it is genuine, and a belief by the party accepting it that it is so, will satisfy the section, if the act is done fraudulently or dishonestly. The presentation of a forged document for registration, and obtaining registration, would be "using" it within the meaning of s. 471.<sup>2</sup>

§ 589. Where a person has used as genuine a document which he knew to be forged, and the case is one in which its acceptance as genuine would cause a fraud, the Court is bound to assume that he meant to defraud.<sup>3</sup> The use of a forged document will be fraudulent under this section, even though the document itself was unnecessary for the case of the party who uses it, and though in fact he has a perfectly good title without it. It is evident that a person who produces forged documents in support of a good case, is trying to gain by fraudulent means an advantage which he fancies he would not gain without such means.<sup>4</sup> Where a prisoner forged receipts for the payment of rent in lieu of genuine receipts which had been lost, and then used the forged receipts as genuine, the High Court of Allahabad annulled a conviction under s. 471, on the ground that the document had never been a forged document, not having been made with any fraudulent or dishonest intent.<sup>5</sup> A similar decision was given by the same Court in the following circumstances. The creditor of a police-constable applied to the district superintendent to order a monthly deduction from his pay till the debt was satisfied. The superintendent made the order, which he had no right to do. The constable then forged

<sup>1</sup> See *Reg. v. Syed Husain*, 7 All. 403; *post*, § 589.

<sup>2</sup> *Reg. v. Azimooddeen*, 11 Suth. Cr. 15.

<sup>3</sup> *Reg. v. Hill*, 8 C. & P. 274; *Reg. v. Cooke*, 8 C. & P. 582.

<sup>4</sup> *Reg. v. Dunum Khazu*, 9 Cal. 53.

<sup>5</sup> *Reg. v. Sheo Dayal*, 7 All. 459.

a receipt for the debt, and produced it as an answer to the deduction. The Court held that as the direct object of using the forgery was to prevent an illegal deduction from his pay, there was no reason to infer that any further use was intended to be made of the receipt, and therefore that no offence under s. 471 had been committed.<sup>1</sup> It is obvious, however, that such cases must be very rare, and require very close scrutiny. If, in this instance, the Court had arrived at the less charitable opinion, that the constable intended to use the receipt in answer to any steps which the creditor might take towards enforcing his debt, it is probable that justice would not have been unduly strained.

§ 590. **Guilty Knowledge.**—Whether the person who makes use of a forged document knew it to be forged, is a mere question of fact. Where a forged document is put forward in support of, or in resistance to a claim, there can hardly ever be any doubt that the person immediately instrumental in putting it forward knew it was forged. Where, however, the party directly interested is a woman, especially a *purdah-nashin* lady, or a minor, or a person whose affairs are managed by agents, the presumption need not be very strong that such person was actually cognizant of the fraud practised on his behalf. In the case of mercantile documents which pass from hand to hand, the person who uses them may be perfectly ignorant of the forgery. Here the rule of the Evidence Act becomes important, that “when there is a question whether an act was accidental or intentional, or done with a particular knowledge or intention, the fact that such act formed part of a series of similar occurrences, in each of which the person doing the act was concerned, is relevant.”<sup>2</sup> Accordingly, where a man was charged with uttering a forged bank-note on the 16th of June, evidence was received that on the 20th of March he had uttered another bank-note, forged by the same hand, in the same manner and with the same materials, and that other similar bank-notes, with the prisoner’s endorsement upon them, were found in the files of the bank, as having been presented and paid, though the dates upon which they were so paid could not be proved. It was held that the evidence was properly received, subject, however, to observations on the weight of it, which would be more or less considerable according to the number of the other notes, the distance of time at

<sup>1</sup> *Reg. v. Syed Husain*, 7 All. 403.

<sup>2</sup> Evidence Act, I. of 1872, s. 15, illus. (c); Act III. of 1891, s. 2.



which they were put off, and the situation in life of the prisoner, so as to make it more or less probable that so many notes should pass through his hands in the way of business.<sup>1</sup>

§ 591. Under ss. 474, 475, and 476, the possession of any document of the description mentioned in s. 466 or s. 467, or of any incomplete document of that description, which was intended to be afterwards made a complete forgery, knowing it to be forged, and with the intention of fraudulently or dishonestly using it as genuine, is specially punishable. The intention to make a fraudulent use of the forged document is an essential element in this offence. This intention can seldom be directly proved. Where the forged document is capable of being fraudulently used, and is found in the possession of a person who is interested in making a fraudulent use of it, I conceive that a conviction would be warranted, unless the defendant accounted for his possession of the instrument. Suppose, for instance, that a forged release were to be found in the possession of a debtor, or a forged will or conveyance in the possession of a claimant to an estate, this would be sufficient to throw upon each the burden of showing that he came innocently by the document. But, where either accounts for his possession of the instrument in a manner which is equally consistent with his knowledge or ignorance of its fraudulent character, there the presumption of innocence will arise again. For instance, the mere fact that the purchaser of an estate is in possession of title-deeds, some of which are shown to be forgeries, would be no evidence whatever of his guilt; for, in the absence of evidence as to their origin, the natural inference is that they were handed to him by the vendor as constituting the title, and, if so, the proper presumption would be that he took them innocently.<sup>2</sup> The finding of forged documents in the possession of another person in the same village, whose only connection with the accused was, that he was called as his witness, and was alleged to belong to his faction, is not evidence of guilty knowledge against the accused. Nor is the fact that such evidence shows that forgery was common in the village a relevant fact as against him.<sup>3</sup>

§ 592. **Fraudulent Marks on Merchandise.**—The whole law

<sup>1</sup> *R. v. Balls*, Russ. & Ry. 132; *Reg. v. Colclough*, 15 Cox, 92.

<sup>2</sup> See Mad. S.U. Dec., of 1859, p. 65; and see *Reg. v. Lokenath*, Suth. Sp. Cr. 12; *Reg. v. Abaji Ram Chandra*, 16 Bom. 165.

<sup>3</sup> *Reg. v. Abaji Ram Chandra*, 15 Bom. 189.



as to "Fraudulent" Marks on Merchandise now rests in India on Act IV. of 1889, as amended by Act IX. of 1891, and this law is again borrowed from the English statute, 50 & 51 Vict., c. 28, the most important sections in the Indian Act being identical in language with those in the English statute. The law on this subject deals with three different matters: First, trade-marks, as defined by the amended s. 478 of the Penal Code; secondly, property marks, as defined by s. 479; and thirdly, trade descriptions, as defined by Act IV. of 1889, s. 2 (2). Of these the first indicates the manufacturer of the goods; the second, their owner; the third, their quantity, quality, or origin. The framework of the Act is as follows: It defines what is meant by using a false trade-mark or property mark, or applying a false trade description.<sup>1</sup> It then creates the following offences: (1) using a false trade or property mark, or applying to merchandise a false trade description;<sup>2</sup> (2) counterfeiting a trade or property mark;<sup>3</sup> (3) being in possession of materials for counterfeiting;<sup>4</sup> (4) selling, or possessing for sale, or for trade or manufacture, goods with counterfeit trade or property mark, or false trade description;<sup>5</sup> (5) deceiving a public servant by false marks;<sup>6</sup> (6) removing, defacing, or altering any property mark.<sup>7</sup> In addition to the penalties prescribed by the various sections of the Act, the goods may be forfeited, and the costs of the prosecution may be ordered to be paid by the defendant to the prosecutor.<sup>8</sup> Finally provisions are inserted for the protection of persons who unintentionally contravene the provisions of the Act, and servants,<sup>9</sup> while a period of limitation is fixed for prosecutions.<sup>10</sup> The abetment by a person in India of offences under the Act committed out of India, is punishable as the acts abetted had been committed in India.<sup>11</sup>

§ 593. Trade-mark.—Where a trade-mark has been registered under Part IV. of the statute, 46 & 47 Vict., c. there can be no doubt as to its validity. In other cases there is often a good deal of doubt. A trade-mark, independent of statutory recognition, is generally a matter of slow and often of unconscious growth. A man makes

<sup>1</sup> I.P.C., ss. 480, 481; IV. of 1889, ss. 4, 5.

<sup>2</sup> I.P.C., s. 482; IV. of 1889, s. 6.

<sup>4</sup> I.P.C., s. 485.

<sup>6</sup> I.P.C., ss. 487, 488.

<sup>9</sup> ss. 9, 14.

<sup>3</sup> I.P.C., ss. 483, 484.

<sup>5</sup> I.P.C., s. 486; IV. of 1889

<sup>7</sup> I.P.C., s. 489.

<sup>8</sup> IV. of 1889, ss. 8, 18 (3).

<sup>11</sup> s. 22.

particular article. If it is a new genus or species he gives it a distinctive name. If it is a well-known article he gives it no name. Gradually his article acquires public favour, and is sought for, and gets to be known in the market either by its distinctive name, or by some other appellation given to it by the maker, or by the customers, which distinguishes it from similar articles made by other people. Sometimes the manufacturer puts a special device, or name, or description upon his trade labels. Any such distinguishing sign, when it has come to be recognized as indicating that the particular article is manufactured by a particular person, becomes his trade-mark, and is entitled to protection as such. It must be remembered that what is protected is the trade-mark, not the article. Unless the article is patented, any one who likes may manufacture exactly the same thing in the same way; but he must sell it as his own manufacture, not as the manufacture of the proprietor of the trade-mark. On the other hand, a name which simply indicates the sort or quality of the article is not a trade-mark, and may be adopted by any one who makes an article of that sort or quality. The man who first made what he called a Wellington boot, or a Hansom cab, acquired no right to the exclusive use of the name. This was the distinction which was taken in the case of the *Singer Machine Manufacturers v. Wilson*.<sup>1</sup> There the plaintiff was a company which represented the rights of a Mr. Singer of New Jersey, who was the manufacturer of various types of sewing machines, to which he gave his name. The defendant, a sewing machine manufacturer, advertised his machines, one of which he described as "The Singer Sewing Machine," but he put upon each machine a plate which described it as made by himself. On the trial of a suit for an injunction against the use of the name "Singer Sewing Machine" by the defendant, the latter contended that the name merely meant a machine of a particular construction, which, as it was not patented, he had a perfect right to make. The plaintiff contended that the term was understood in the trade as meaning that each machine had been made by his firm.<sup>2</sup> The Court decided that each party would be entitled to a decree, if he could make out the state of facts which he set up, and the case was remanded for a decision upon those facts. The same question arose in a case where the plaintiff

<sup>1</sup> 3 App. Ca. 376.<sup>2</sup> See *per* Lord Cairns, C., pp. 383—385.

claimed the exclusive use of the term "camel-hair belting" as a common law, that is unregistered, trade-mark. Lindley, L.J., said: "The first question is, what does 'camel-hair belting' denote? If it denotes belting only made by the plaintiffs, the defendants have no right to sell their belting by the same name, unless they take sufficient precautions to prevent buyers from being misled. But if the expression, 'camel-hair belting,' denotes a particular kind of belting which any one can make, then any one who makes that kind of belting may call it by that name."<sup>1</sup>

§ 594. The essence of a trade-mark consists in the idea which it conveys to the mind of a purchaser as to the origin of the article. Therefore the use of another trade-mark which, though differing from it in many particulars, would be likely to be confounded with it, is fraudulent and illegal. And it does not in the least matter that the original trade-mark gives no indication of the maker, if it has become associated in the mind of the public with an article of a particular make. A particular starch, which was first made in a little village called Glenfield, was given the name of "GLENFIELD Double Refined Powder Starch," and acquired a great reputation, being generally known as "Glenfield Starch." Its manufacture was then removed to another place, but the same name was preserved. Another manufacturer, named Currie, then set up in Glenfield, and on his labels he described the article as Double Refined Powder Starch, Currie & Co., Starch & Corn Flour Manufacturers, GLENFIELD. The latter word was put at the bottom of the label instead of at the top, as in the plaintiff's label, and there were other minor differences. It was held by the House of Lords that the difference was merely colourable, the object being to induce the public to purchase the defendant's starch as being the original Glenfield starch.<sup>2</sup> A similar decision was given in another case, where a favourite yarn shipped to India had obtained the name of *bhé-hathi* yarn, from two elephants which were prominent on the label. The use by a rival manufacturer of a label similar in colour and shape, and also bearing upon it two elephants, was prohibited as a fraudulent imitation, though the labels when put side by side were readily distinguishable.<sup>3</sup>

A distinctive mark may be adopted by a person who is

<sup>1</sup> *Reddaway v. Bentham* (1892), 2 Q.B. 639, p. 643.

<sup>2</sup> *Wotherspoon v. Currie*, L.R., 5 H.L. 514.

<sup>3</sup> *Johnston v. Orr-Ewing*, 7 App. Ca. 219.



not the manufacturer, but the importer of goods, and he will acquire the property in that mark as indicating that all goods which bear it have been imported by him. The circumstance that he has only imported them into one market does not deprive him of his property in the mark in other markets.<sup>1</sup>

§ 595. **Trade Name.**—There is a distinction between a trade-mark and a trade name. “A name may be so appropriated by use, as to come to mean the goods of the plaintiffs, though it is not, and never was, impressed on the goods, or on the packages in which they are contained, so as to be a trade-mark properly so-called, or within the recent statutes. Where it is established that such a trade name bears that meaning, I think the use of that name, or one so nearly resembling it as to be likely to deceive, as applicable to goods not the plaintiffs’, may be the means of passing off those goods as and for the plaintiffs, just as much as the use of a trade-mark; and I think the law, so far as not altered by legislation, is the same.”<sup>2</sup> Such a trade name, if applied to goods in the manner stated in Act IV. of 1889, s. 5, would apparently be punishable as a false trade description. Where a mineral-water manufacturer issued water of his own manufacture in bottles bearing the name of a rival manufacturer, he was held punishable for applying a false trade description to his goods. The language in the English and Indian Acts as to trade descriptions is precisely the same.<sup>3</sup>

§ 596. A trade-mark which has once been private property, may, by long and undisputed public use, cease to be such. “The test for determining whether a word which was once a trade-mark has become *publici juris*, is given by Mellish, L.J., in *Ford v. Foster*.<sup>4</sup> “I think the test must be, whether the use of it by other persons is still calculated to deceive the public; whether it may still have the effect of inducing the public to buy goods not made by the original owner of the trade-mark as if they were his goods. If the mark has once come to be so public and in such universal use that nobody can be deceived by the use of it, and can be induced from the use of it to believe that he is buying the goods of the original trader, it appears to me, however hard to

<sup>1</sup> *Lavergne v. Hooper*, 8 Mad. 148; *Ralli v. Fleming*, 3 Cal. 417.

<sup>2</sup> *Per* Lord Blackburn, *Singer Manufacturing Co. v. Loog*, 8 App. Ca. 15, p. 32.

<sup>3</sup> *Wood v. Burgess*, 24 Q.B.D. 162.

<sup>4</sup> L.R., 7 Ch., at p. 628.



some extent it may appear on the trader, yet, practically, as the right to a trade-mark is simply a right to prevent the trader from being cheated by other persons' goods being sold as his goods by the fraudulent use of the trade-mark, the right to the trade-mark must be gone."<sup>1</sup> *A fortiori*, such a right will be lost if the owner of the mark has acquiesced in the use of it by another, and led him to believe that all claim to it by the original owner had been abandoned.<sup>2</sup>

§ 597. *Trade Description.*—Where a person is charged under s. 6 of the Merchandise Marks Act, with applying a false trade description to goods, it is not necessary to show that the trade description was physically attached to the goods. This was so held upon the construction of statute 50 & 51 Vict., c. 28, s. 5 (1) (*d*), which is verbatim the same as s. 5 (1) (*d*) of the Indian Act. There a brewer, having received an order for six barrels of beer, delivered six casks of beer into the customer's cellar, and at the same time delivered at his house an invoice, in which the casks were described as barrels. The term "barrel," in the beer trade, means a cask containing thirty-six gallons. One of the barrels contained a considerably smaller quantity. It was held that the brewer might be properly convicted of applying a false trade description to the barrel. Pollock, B., said: "The definition of the word 'apply,' in s. 5, seems to suggest that it is not to be confined to a physical application; for it provides that a person shall be deemed to apply a trade description to goods who, *inter alia*, 'uses it in any manner calculated to lead to the belief that the goods in connection with which it is used are described by that trade description.' No doubt the description must be used in connection with goods; but I think we should be cutting down the intention of the Act, if we were to hold that the delivery of an invoice or other description of goods, at the time of, or immediately after, the delivery of the goods themselves, was not a use in connection with the goods within the meaning of the section."<sup>3</sup> And so, if an invoice referred to the goods by a trade name, this would be within s. 6, if the trade name "designated or described the goods" so as to amount to a representation that they were made by a particular manufacturer.<sup>4</sup> It is probable:

<sup>1</sup> Cited and followed by Lindley, L.J. (1892), 2 Q.B., p. 643.

<sup>2</sup> *Lavergne v. Hooper*, 8 Mad. 149.

<sup>3</sup> *Budd v. Lucas* (1891), 1 Q.B. 408.

<sup>4</sup> See *Wood v. Burgess*, 24 Q.B.D. 162; *ante*, § 595.

that an advertisement or notice, that goods sold in a shop were articles manufactured by A. B., followed by a sale of them without anything more said, might also be held to be the use of a false trade description in connection with such goods.<sup>1</sup>

§ 598. **Fraud.**—Where an injunction is applied for to restrain the unauthorized use of a trade-mark, it is unnecessary to show any fraudulent intention. A trade-mark is property, and even an innocent interference with it will be restrained.<sup>2</sup> Where, however, an action is brought for damages, it is essential to prove a fraudulent intent,<sup>3</sup> and *a fortiori* where a criminal charge is made. In cases punishable under ss. 482, 487, 488 of the Penal Code, and s. 6 of Act IV. of 1889, fraud is an essential element in the case, but in each instance a person who has done the acts is punishable, unless he proves that he acted without intent to defraud.

The fraud which constitutes the offence under these sections, is either a fraud upon the owner of the mark which is imitated, or upon the purchaser, who is induced to buy something different from what he believed that he was buying. If fraud upon the owner of the mark is suggested, it is unnecessary to show actual damage to him. Where the defendants were sued for marking their cutlery with the name and device of a well-known firm of cutlers, the judge was held to have rightly directed the jury in telling them that they had only to consider two questions: first, whether the marks put upon the defendants' goods were calculated to lead an ordinary person to think that the marks were the marks of the plaintiffs, denoting their manufacture; secondly, whether the defendants falsely, and with intent to deceive, represented, by means of this similarity, that the knives they sold were of the plaintiffs' manufacture. Wilde, C.J., said: "As to the proof of damage, it is sufficient in actions of this kind to show that such acts have been done as were here proved, and that they were done with the intention, and that the natural result of them was to prejudice the plaintiffs. If the defendants adopted these marks, knowing they were calculated to induce persons to believe the goods

<sup>1</sup> See *per* Lord Cairns, C., 3 App. Ca., p. 389.

<sup>2</sup> *Millington v. Fox*, 3 Myl. & Cr. 338, *affd.* *Singer Machine Manufacturers v. Wilson*, 3 App. Ca., pp. 391, 396, 400; *Sommerville v. Schembri*, 12 App. Ca. 453; *Ewing v. Grant*, 2 Hyde, 485.

<sup>3</sup> *Crawshay v. Thompson*, 4 M. & G. 357.

they made and sold were goods manufactured by the plaintiffs, that is sufficient proof of damage.”<sup>1</sup> If, on the other hand, a fraud upon the purchaser is suggested, it is not necessary to show that the article actually supplied was in any way inferior to that which it purported to be. Certain manufacturers of powder contracted with Government to supply powder. Owing to an accident, they were unable to manufacture it themselves, and, accordingly, they bought German powder, put it into Government barrels, and labelled it with their own name and the description of the powder they had contracted to supply. The powder was fully equal to what they had contracted for. It was held that they were properly convicted under a section of the English statute, which corresponds to s. 6 of Act IV. of 1889. Lord Coleridge, C.J., said: “The Act is directed against the abuse of trade-marks, and the putting off on a purchaser of, not a bad article, but an article different from that which he intends to purchase, and believes he is purchasing. That, I think, is the meaning of the word ‘defraud’ in this Act of Parliament; and in that sense only there was in the present case an intent to defraud.” Mathew, J., said: “The Act makes a new offence by providing that every person who applies any false trade description to goods shall be guilty of an offence against the Act. The words ‘without intent to defraud’ apply to cases where a person uses a particular mark, without any intent in so doing, to induce a buyer to accept goods which might otherwise be rejected.”<sup>2</sup>

§ 599. An intention to defraud is not negatived by showing that the immediate purchasers of the article which bears the false mark or description were not, and were known by the vendor not to be deceived by it. If it was sold to them with the intention or knowledge that they should sell it again to persons who would be taken in by it, that is a sufficient fraud.<sup>3</sup> The intention to defraud will be judged according to the effect that the representation, however conveyed, or whatever form it may assume, will be likely to produce. This, again, will depend largely upon the class of

<sup>1</sup> *Rodgers v. Nowill*, 17 L.J. C.P. 52, p. 56; S.C. 5 C.B. 109, p. 125; *Blofield v. Payne*, 4 B. & Ad. 410; see Lord Blackburn, *Singer Manufacturing Co. v. Loog*, 8 App. Ca., at p. 29.

<sup>2</sup> *Starey v. Chilworth Gunpowder Co.*, 24 Q.B.D. 90.

<sup>3</sup> *Per* Lord Hatherley, C., *Wotherspoon v. Currie*, L.R., 5 H.L., at p. 517; *per* Lord Selborne, C., *Singer Manufacturing Co. v. Loog*, 8 App. Ca., at p. 18.



persons to whom it is addressed. Where the persons likely to be influenced judge mainly by the eye, a similarity of device will be more important than any amount of counter-vailing written matter, which would probably not be understood.<sup>1</sup> So also persons unaccustomed to a critical examination of written documents may be easily taken in by marked similarity of description, without looking at minor statements which may alter its effect.<sup>2</sup> On the other hand, no intention to defraud would be assumed where the document was in the nature of a trade description, addressed exclusively to expert wholesale dealers, who could not possibly misunderstand it, and which, in the ordinary course of business, would never reach any less experienced eyes.<sup>3</sup>

§ 600. **Burthen of Proof.**—How far, then, in cases under s. 482 of the Code, and s. 6 of Act IV. of 1889, is the Crown relieved of the necessity to prove fraud, by the provision that the defendant shall be convicted unless he proves that he acted without intent to defraud? The answer to this will depend upon the facts of each particular case. The prosecution must start by proving that the mark or description is, in fact, false. Where it is exactly the same as that of the goods which it untruly claims to be, as in the case of the soda-water or gunpowder, mentioned in §§ 595 and 598, the intention to produce a false belief will be assumed, unless it is rebutted. Where, however, the imitation is not actual, but constructive, as in the cases referred to in § 594, the Crown must prove that it was reasonably calculated to produce a false belief. Not that it might be taken for another mark or description, but that in all fair probability it would be taken for it. Here, again, the facts lead to a presumption that fraud was intended, which the defendant must repel. Practically, the Crown must always make out a *prima facie* case of fraud. The defendant must show that in the particular case he neither intended to commit a fraud, nor had any reason to believe that a fraud would be committed.

§ 601. Nothing is said about fraud in ss. 483, 484, or 485, because the very definition of counterfeiting (s. 28) implies fraud. I imagine that these sections apply to actual, not to constructive imitations. The imitation need not be

<sup>1</sup> *Johnston v. Orr-Ewing*, 7 App. Ca., at p. 225.

<sup>2</sup> *Singer Manufacturing Co. v. Wilson*, 3 App. Ca. at p., 890.

<sup>3</sup> *Per Lord Selborne, C., Singer Manufacturing Co. v. Loog*, 8 App. Ca., at pp. 20, 26.



exact, but it must be intended to represent the very thing which is imitated, and not merely a completely different thing, which an ignorant person might mistake for it.

Section 486 of the Code, and s. 7 of Act IV. of 1889, seem to apply to persons who have been the victims of a fraud practised by some one else. To exonerate themselves they must be prepared to prove three distinct matters, marked (a) (b) (c). It is difficult to see the difference between acting innocently and acting without intent to defraud. It may perhaps mean that the defendant's mind was absolutely blank as to all facts from which fraud could have been inferred.

Act IV. of 1889, s. 8, applies to persons who have been the innocent instruments employed in carrying out a fraud by the prime mover in the fraud. Section 18 (3) also protects a mere servant who has acted innocently under orders, and who has given full information against the master.

## CHAPTER XIII.

## OFFENCES RELATING TO MARRIAGE.

- I. Considerations on Marriage and Divorce, §§ 602—621.
- II. Cohabitation under Pretence of Marriage, § 622.
- III. Bigamy, §§ 623—634.
- IV. Adultery, §§ 635—638.
- V. Enticing away a Married Woman, §§ 639—641.

§ 602. BEFORE examining the particular offences created by Chapter XX. of the Penal Code, it will be necessary to offer some remarks on certain questions which affect the validity of a marriage or divorce. It is obvious that a man who was charged under s. 494 would be entitled to say that his former marriage was unlawful *ab initio*, or that it had been lawfully determined. If the charge were under s. 497 he would be equally entitled to dispute the validity of the marriage whose rights he was accused of violating.

**Marriage.**—Where the marriage in dispute has been celebrated in India, if the parties are Hindu, Buddhist, Muhammedan, Sikh, Jain, or Jew, the validity of the marriage will be governed by the law of the respective parties, or by such custom having the force of law as can be made out. The marriages of persons, one or both of whom are Christians, are regulated by the Indian Christian Marriage Act, XV. of 1872, amended by Act II. of 1891. Parsee marriages are governed by Act XV. of 1865, and the re-marriages of Hindu converts by the Native Converts Marriages Dissolution Act, XXI. of 1866, while Act III. of 1872 provides for persons who do not profess the Christian, Jewish, Hindu, Muhammedan, Parsi, Buddhist, Sikh, or Jain religions.

§ 603. Where the courts of one country have to consider the validity of a marriage contracted in another country, the general principle is that laid down by Lord Brougham

in *Warrender v. Warrender*.<sup>1</sup> "A marriage good by the laws of one country is held good in all others where the question of its validity may arise. For the question always must be, Did the parties intend to contract marriage? And if they did that which, in the place they are in, is deemed a marriage, they cannot reasonably, or sensibly, or safely be considered otherwise than as intending a marriage contract. This is the general rule of law." And it makes no difference that the marriage, if celebrated in the same manner in the country to which the parties belong would have been invalid, or even that the foreign country was sought for the express purpose of avoiding the difficulties thrown in the way of marriage by the law of their own country. This was the case with the well-known Gretna Green marriages, till they were dealt with by Act of Parliament. In *Dalrymple v. Dalrymple*,<sup>2</sup> a question arose as to the validity of a Scotch marriage contracted by mere verbal assent, and without any religious celebration, one of the parties being an English gentleman, not otherwise resident in Scotland than as being quartered there with his regiment. Sir W. Scott said: "Being entertained in an English court, it must be adjudicated according to the principles of English law applicable to such a case. But the only principle applicable to such a case by the law of England is, that the validity of Major Gordon's marriage rights must be tried by reference to the law of the country where, if they exist at all, they had their origin." And conversely, where a clandestine marriage in France, between two minors, British subjects, was celebrated in a manner which by the law of England was irregular, but not void; and which by the law of France was absolutely null and void, it was decided that it must be treated as null and void in England also, since the English law sanctioned and adopted as the rule of decision the law of France.<sup>3</sup>

§ 604. An exception to this rule was suggested by Lord Stowell in *Ruding v. Smith*.<sup>4</sup> There a marriage had been celebrated at the Cape of Good Hope, a year after its surrender to the English, by the chaplain of the British garrison, under a licence from the Commander-in-Chief. The husband was twenty-one, and by Dutch law he was not entitled to marry without the consent of his parents till

<sup>1</sup> 2 Cl. & F. 488, at p. 530.

<sup>2</sup> 2 Hagg. Consist. 54, at p. 58.

<sup>3</sup> *Scrimshire v. Scrimshire*, 2 Hagg. Consist. 395.

<sup>4</sup> 2 Hagg. Consist. 331, recognized by Sir W. P. Wood, V.C., in *Armitage v. Armitage*, L.R., 3 Eq. 343.

thirty, and in other respects the formalities of the Dutch law were not complied with. Lord Stowell said: "It is true, indeed, that English decisions have established this rule, that a foreign marriage, valid according to the law of the place where it is celebrated, is valid everywhere else; but they have not, *e converso*, established that marriages of British subjects, not good according to the law of the place where they are celebrated, are universally, and under all possible circumstances, to be regarded as invalid in England. It is, therefore, certainly to be advised that the safest course is always to be married according to the law of the country, for then no question can be stirred; but if this cannot be done on account of legal or religious difficulties, the law of the country does not say that its subjects shall not be married abroad. And even in cases where no difficulties of that insuperable magnitude exist, yet, if the contrary practice has been sanctioned by long acquiescence and acceptance of the one country that has silently permitted such marriages, and of the other that has silently accepted them, the courts of this country, I presume, would not incline to shake their validity upon these large and general theories." "The libel here states a case of marriage as nearly entitled to the privileges of strict necessity as can be."<sup>1</sup>

§ 605. When we speak of a marriage which is valid in the country where it takes place being valid everywhere, this must be understood as referring to the mode in which it is celebrated, not to the substance of the marriage contract itself. Marriage means a different thing in Christian and in non-Christian countries, and when either of the parties to a marriage is a Christian, the question for a Christian court is not whether the marriage was valid where it took place, but whether that which was called a marriage in one country is the same thing which we call a marriage. As Lord Brougham said in the case already cited:<sup>2</sup> "Marriage is one and the same thing, substantially, all the world over. Our whole law of marriage assumes this; and it is important to observe that we regard it as a wholly different thing, a different *status* from 'Turkish or other marriages among infidel nations, because we clearly never would recognize the plurality of wives, and consequent validity of second

<sup>1</sup> See also, for similar cases, *R. v. Inhabitants of Brampton*, 10 East, 282; *Beamish v. Beamish*, 9 H.L. Ca. 274.

<sup>2</sup> *Warrender v. Warrender*, 2 Cl. & F. 438, at p. 533.



marriages standing the first, which second marriages the laws of those countries authorize and validate." When, therefore, a Christian enters into a marriage in a non-Christian country, it is not necessarily valid because it is a good marriage in that country, nor is it necessarily invalid because it does not profess to be a Christian marriage. The sole question is, whether the contract entered into between the parties was intended by them to be a "marriage as understood in Christendom, which for this purpose may be defined to be, the voluntary union for life of one man and one woman to the exclusion of all others."<sup>1</sup>

§ 606. These principles are very clearly illustrated by two cases, in one of which the marriage was held invalid, while in the other it was held valid. In the former case<sup>2</sup> a question arose as to the legitimacy of the child of C. Bethell, a domiciled English subject, who went through the form of marriage with Teepoo, a woman of the Baralong tribe in Bechuanaland, according to the custom of the Baralong tribe, and had issue by her. It was proved that the Baralongs had not any religion, nor any religious customs, and that polygamy was allowed in that tribe. Upon these facts, and with reference to the authorities above cited, it was held that the union of the parties, although it might bear the name of a marriage, and the parties of it might be designated husband and wife, was not a valid marriage according to the laws of England. On the other hand, in a suit brought to establish the legitimacy of the issue of a marriage celebrated in Japan, according to Japanese procedure, between a domiciled Englishman and a Japanese lady, the marriage was held valid. It was proved by a professor of law in Japan that the petitioner was precluded by the marriage from intermarrying with any other woman during the subsistence of the said marriage. The president, Sir James Hannen, after adopting the definition of marriage given by Lord Penzance, said: "Though throughout the judgments that have been given on this subject, the phrases 'Christian Marriage,' 'Marriage in Christendom,' or some equivalent phrase has been used, that has only been for convenience to express the idea. But the idea which was to be expressed was, that the only marriage recognized in Christian countries and in Christendom is the marriage of the exclusive kind I have mentioned,

<sup>1</sup> *Per* Lord Penzance, *Hyde v. Hyde*, L.R., 1 P. & D., at p. 133.

<sup>2</sup> *Re Bethell* 38 Ch. D. 255.

and here it was proved that in Japan marriage was of that character.”<sup>1</sup>

§ 607. It is scarcely necessary to say that this rule only applies to the marriage of a Christian. If the English courts had to consider the marriage of a Hindu or Muhammedan, they would decide it according to the law of his *status*. If, however, a Muhammedan were to marry an Englishwoman according to the law of the Koran, as has sometimes happened in late years, although the marriage would be perfectly valid according to Muhammedan law, it is very questionable whether an English, or even an Indian court, would recognize it as giving rise to any rights or liabilities on her part. Where a man who contracted a Mormon marriage, and had then abandoned Mormonism, sued his wife for a divorce, the court refused to grant it, on the ground that the ceremony had not produced the relation of marriage between the parties.<sup>2</sup> The question would be, can an Englishwoman, by any act of her own, get rid of the personal incapacity to contract a polygamous marriage? This seems to turn upon the considerations stated in the following sections.

§ 608. Mr. Justice Story, while recognizing the general principle above stated, that a marriage, valid by the law of the country where it is celebrated, is valid everywhere, says: “The most prominent, if not the only known exceptions to the rule, are those marriages involving polygamy and incest; those positively prohibited by the public law of a country from motives of policy;<sup>3</sup> and those celebrated in foreign countries by subjects entitling themselves, under special circumstances, to the benefit of the laws of their own country.”<sup>4</sup> “In respect to the first exception, that of marriage involving polygamy and incest, Christianity is understood to prohibit polygamy and incest, and therefore no Christian country would recognize polygamy or incestuous marriages.”<sup>5</sup> The English courts, as has been

<sup>1</sup> *Brinkley v. Atty.-Gen.*, 15 P.D. 76.

<sup>2</sup> *Hyde v. Hyde*, L.R., 1 P. & D. 130.

<sup>3</sup> As, for instance, marriages contracted in violation of the Royal Marriage Act, 12 Geo. III., c. 11 (*The Sussex Peerage case*, 11 Cl. & F. 25).

<sup>4</sup> See as to marriages celebrated abroad by a British consul, stat. 12 & 13 Vict., c. 68; or by a British clergyman or chaplain, 4 Geo. IV., c. 91. See also various Marriage Confirmation Acts (Chronological Table of Statutes, 11th ed., Appx. xi.).

<sup>5</sup> Story, Conf. L., ss. 113<sup>a</sup>, 113<sup>b</sup>, 114.

shown, not merely consider a polygamous marriage unlawful, but treat it as not coming within their definition of marriage. Suppose, then, that a Muhammedan in England contracted a marriage with an Englishwoman. The question would be, what was the nature of the contract entered into? If the marriage was celebrated in a church or before a Registrar, it would be a Christian, not a polygamous marriage, and would be valid as such. If, however, the marriage were celebrated in the mosque at Liverpool by a Muhammedan Cazi, it would purport to be a Muhammedan marriage, with all its incidents. It would be perfectly good by Muhammedan law, but it would be invalid and a nullity by the law of the country where it took place, and therefore, according to international law, it ought to be treated as invalid everywhere. If such a marriage took place in British India, and if the Englishwoman was a professing Christian, it would be invalid, unless it was celebrated under Act XV. of 1872. And under s. 88 of that Act, no marriages are valid which are forbidden by the personal law of either of the parties. Apparently, then, the only cases in which a difficulty could really arise would be, first, if the woman, having previously adopted the law of the Koran, had married according to Muhammedan ceremonial in British India; or, secondly, if the marriage had taken place in a native State. In either case the question would probably depend on the domicile of the woman at the time of marriage, as being English or otherwise.

§ 609. The effect of domicile upon the decision of such cases has been much considered where the objection to the marriage was that it was of an incestuous character. In *Brook v. Brook*,<sup>1</sup> two domiciled British subjects, being a widower and the sister of his deceased wife, went to Denmark and married, marriages between persons so related being legal in that country. Their marriage was held void in England. Lord Campbell, C., said: "Although the forms of celebrating the foreign marriage may be different from those required by the law of the country of domicile, the marriage may be good everywhere. But if the contract of marriage is such in its essentials as to be contrary to the law of the country of domicile, and it is declared void by that law, it is to be considered as void in the country of domicile, though not contrary to the law of the country in

<sup>1</sup> 9 H.L. Ca. 193. at pp. 207, 212, 214.



which it was celebrated." "It is quite obvious that no civilized state can allow its domiciled subjects or citizens, by making a temporary visit to a foreign country, to enter into a contract to be performed in the place of domicile, if the contract is forbidden by the law of the place of domicile as contrary to religion, or morality, or any of its fundamental institutions. A marriage between a man and the sister of his deceased wife, being Danish subjects domiciled in Denmark, may be good all over the world, and this might likewise be so, even if they were native-born English subjects, who had abandoned their English domicile." A similar decision was given in a case where the widower being a domiciled British subject married his deceased wife's sister, who was resident and domiciled in Frankfort, at the place of her domicile, where such marriages were lawful. In this case the widower was a native of Hesse Cassel, where such marriages were also lawful, but subsequently became naturalized and domiciled in England.<sup>1</sup>

§ 610. The judgment in *Brook v. Brook* was expressly rested by Lord Campbell on the ground, that various statutes of the reign of Henry VIII. had declared such marriages to be contrary to God's law, and that the same view must be taken in all courts and proceedings of the kingdom; and not on the ground that the stat. 5 & 6 Will. IV., c. 54, had declared such marriages to be *void ab initio*, instead of being merely voidable as they had been before. He intimated his opinion, that on this ground even the Danish courts, if the question came before them, would decide against the validity of the marriage. It was from the latter point of view that the next case had to be considered.<sup>2</sup> There two Portuguese subjects, who were first cousins to each other, came to reside in England in 1858, and in 1866 they were married in London. In 1873 they returned to Portugal, and subsequently the lady petitioned to have her marriage set aside as being null and void. It was admitted that by the law of Portugal marriages between first cousins were held to be incestuous, and therefore illegal, though they might be celebrated under a Papal dispensation. Both cousins were Portuguese by domicile when they came to England, and the case was argued on the supposition (which turned out to be erroneous) that the domicile of both parties continued to be Portuguese at the time of the

<sup>1</sup> *Mette v. Mette*, 1 Sw. & Tr. 416; S.C. 28 L.J. P. & M. 117.

<sup>2</sup> *Sottomayor v. De Barros*, L.R., 2 P.D. 81; 3 P.D. 1.



marriage. On this assumption the Court of Appeal held that the marriage was void. They said:<sup>1</sup> "The law of a country where a marriage is solemnized must alone decide all questions relating to the validity of the ceremony by which the marriage is alleged to have been constituted; but, as in other contracts,<sup>2</sup> so in that of marriage, personal capacity must depend upon the law of domicile. And if the laws of any country prohibit its subjects within certain degrees of consanguinity from contracting marriage, and stamp a marriage between persons within the prohibited degrees as incestuous, this, in our opinion, imposes on the subjects of that country a personal incapacity, which continues to affect them so long as they are domiciled in the country where this law prevails, and renders invalid a marriage between persons, both, at the time of their marriage, subjects of and domiciled in the country which imposes this restriction, wherever such marriage may have been solemnized." "Our opinion on this appeal is confined to the case where both the contracting parties are, at the time of their marriage, domiciled in a country, the laws of which forbid their marriage. All persons are legally bound to take notice of the laws of the country where they are domiciled. No country is bound to recognize the laws of a foreign State when they work injustice to its own subjects. And this principle would prevent the judgment in the present case being relied on as an authority for setting aside a marriage between a foreigner and an English subject domiciled in England, on the ground of any personal incapacity not recognized by the law of this country."

§ 611. When the case came on for an investigation of the facts, the Probate and Divorce Court found that the husband, who was respondent, had acquired an English domicile at the time of the marriage, and therefore held that it was valid, affirming the rule stated by Mr. Dicey at p. 223 of his work on Domicil: "A marriage celebrated in England is not invalid on account of any incapacity of either of the parties, which, though enforced by the law of his or her domicile, is of a kind to which our courts refuse recognition."<sup>3</sup> The principle of the judgment went very much beyond that of the Appeal Court, and the President would evidently have given

<sup>1</sup> L.R., 3 P.D., at pp. 5—7.

<sup>2</sup> In the later stage of the case, Sir J. Hannen disputed the soundness of this law as relating to contracts (L.R., 5 P.D., at p. 100).

<sup>3</sup> L.R., 5 P.D. 94, at p. 104.

the same decision if both parties had retained their Portuguese domicil. He adopted, not only the decision, but the reasoning of Sir Cresswell Cresswell in *Simonin v. Mallac*.<sup>1</sup> There a Frenchman of twenty-nine and a French girl of twenty-two, both domiciled in France, came over to England to be married, in order to evade the French law which renders persons of that age incompetent to contract marriage without the consent of their parents. On their return to France, the French courts declared the marriage void. A suit was then brought in England for a similar purpose, but was dismissed. The Court held that where the marriage itself was one which might lawfully be contracted, the personal capacity to enter into such a marriage must be judged in the courts of the country where it was celebrated, by the laws of that country alone. This decision was also recognized by the Court of Appeal,<sup>2</sup> but was put on the narrow ground that consent was part of the marriage ceremonial. A similar decision was given by the court of the domicile in an Irish case.<sup>3</sup> There an Irish statute enacted that any marriage had, without the consent of the parents or guardian, where either of the parties was under twenty-one, should be absolutely null and void, and might be set aside by suit. An Irish minor went to Scotland, and there married a Scotch lady without the consent of her father. Such a marriage was good by Scotch law. On a suit brought in Ireland to declare the marriage void, it was held valid, on the ground that as both parties were of the age of consent, and as the marriage was valid by the law of Scotland, it could not be impeached in the country where the husband was domiciled. It would have been otherwise if the union had been prohibited by the law of Ireland as being contrary to the Word of God.

§ 612. In *Brook v. Brook*,<sup>4</sup> Lord Campbell, C., expressed the opinion that the Act 5 & 6 Will. IV., c. 54, which rendered marriages with a deceased wife's sister void, and not merely voidable, would not extend to any conquered colony in which a different law of marriage prevailed. Accordingly, it has been held that the statute does not extend to India, even within the Presidency towns.<sup>5</sup> The obligation upon Englishmen not to contract such marriages

<sup>1</sup> 2 Sw. & Tr. 67; S.C. 29 L.J. P. & M. 97.

<sup>2</sup> L.R., 3 P.D., p. 7.

<sup>3</sup> *Steele v. Braddell*, Milward, Ece. Rep. 1, cited and approved by Lord Campbell in *Brook v. Brook*, 9 H.L. Ca., p. 216.

<sup>4</sup> 9 H.L. Ca., at p. 214.

<sup>5</sup> *Das Mercas v. Cones*, 2 Hyde, 65.

does not, however, depend upon that statute, but upon the law which prevailed in England before it was passed. Accordingly, those who are governed by that law come under the same prohibition if they contract such marriages in India. Further, the English law, as declared by the statutes of Henry VIII., was itself only a branch of the general Ecclesiastical law, which then and still prevails in many parts of Christendom; and this binds many classes of Christians who are not subject to English law. The question has arisen in India in both ways. In *Lopez v. Lopez*,<sup>1</sup> the parties who had contracted such a marriage were East Indians, members of the Roman Catholic Church, and married according to its rites. In a suit by the husband for a declaration of nullity of marriage, the question arose, what was the meaning of s. 19 of the Divorce Act, IV. of 1869, which authorized such a declaration on the ground that "the parties are within the prohibited degrees of consanguinity (whether natural or legal) or of affinity." The Full Bench of the Calcutta Court, upon an examination of the whole course of matrimonial legislation for India, held that it was not intended to introduce the English law of prohibited degrees to persons not already governed by it, and that "the prohibited degrees for the parties to this marriage were not the degrees prohibited by the law of England, but those prohibited by the customary law of the class to which they belong, that is to say, the law of the Roman Catholic as applied in this country." That law, it appeared, prohibited such marriages unless a dispensation was obtained from the Archbishop of Calcutta. Three years later, in a case where such a marriage was celebrated between domiciled English people, members of the Church of England, Mr. Justice Straight held it invalid, on the ground that the parties were subject to the law of their domicile.<sup>2</sup> In an exactly similar case which arose in 1890 in Calcutta,<sup>3</sup> Wilson, J., while not deciding whether the marriage was rendered illegal by the law of the domicile, decided that it was necessarily bad, as being opposed to the law of the Church of England.<sup>4</sup>

§ 613. **Evidence of Marriage.**—The fact of marriage, like any other fact, must be proved by the person whose case

<sup>1</sup> 12 Cal. 706.

<sup>2</sup> *Pimen v. Hindhaugh*, cited 16 All., p. 215.

<sup>3</sup> *Hilliard v. Mitchell*, 17 Cal. 324.

<sup>4</sup> See also *Reg. v. Robinson*, 16 All. 212, at p. 215.



requires it to be established. In offences under Chapter XX. of the Code, the burthen rests on the prosecution. If a man, being charged with rape, asserts that the woman was his wife, the burthen would rest on him. The amount of proof which establishes such a *prima facie* case as is sufficient, unless it is displaced, varies according to the nature of the proceeding, and according to the sort of evidence which may naturally be expected in each particular instance. As Lord Cranworth said in the *Breadalbane* case:<sup>1</sup> "If the validity of the parents' marriage should be disputed, it might become necessary for the person claiming as their child to establish its validity. And inasmuch as in England all marriages are solemnized in public, and publicly recorded, it is reasonable to require the claimant to give positive evidence of its celebration, or else to explain why he is unable to do so." In civil cases, however, such evidence, though it is the most satisfactory, is not necessary. As the Judicial Committee said in such a case from Ceylon:<sup>2</sup> "According to the Roman law, there was a presumption in favour of marriage, rather than of concubinage. It does not, therefore, appear to their Lordships that the law of Ceylon is different from that which prevails in this country, viz. that where a man and woman are proved to have lived together as man and wife, the law will presume, unless the contrary be clearly proved, that they were living together in consequence of a valid marriage, and not in a state of concubinage." Mere reputation that such persons were married, entertained by friends and neighbours, is sufficient for this purpose; and even if the reputation be divided, it is still admissible for whatever it is worth.<sup>3</sup> Upon this point, however, the Indian Law of Evidence is more strict, as mere opinion is inadmissible, even in civil cases, as proof of marriage, unless it is evidenced by conduct, or is a statement of a deceased person who had special means of knowledge.<sup>4</sup>

§ 614. In criminal cases it is different. Where the fact of a marriage is an essential element in the offence charged, the prosecution must make out their case completely, and not by mere inference. Although in the great majority of cases people who live together as man and wife do so because they are man and wife, there are very numerous exceptions,

<sup>1</sup> L.R., 1 H.L. Sc., at p. 200.

<sup>2</sup> *Sastry Velaidar v. Sambecetty*, 6 App. Ca. 364, at p. 371.

<sup>3</sup> *Lyle v. Ellwood*, 19 Eq. 98.

<sup>4</sup> Act I. of 1872, s. 32; cl. (5), (6), s. 50.



and the prisoner has a right to call upon the Crown to exclude those exceptions. The rule upon this point was laid down by Lord Mansfield in the case of *Morris v. Miller*.<sup>1</sup> That was an action for *crim. con.*, that is, a suit for damages for adultery with the plaintiff's wife. There the plaintiff was unable to prove the actual marriage either by any registry, or by witnesses who were present when it took place. But he proved articles between the man and his wife made after marriage, for the settling of the wife's estate with the privity of the relations on both sides. He proved cohabitation, that the lady bore her husband's name, and was received as such by everybody. He also proved that the defendant confessed that she was Captain Morris's wife, and that he had committed adultery.<sup>2</sup> Lord Mansfield, C.J., said: "We are all clearly of opinion that in this kind of action, an action for *crim. con.*, there must be evidence of a marriage in fact. Acknowledgment, cohabitation, and reputation, are not sufficient to maintain this action. But we do not at present define what may or may not be evidence of a marriage in fact. This is a sort of criminal action. There is no other way of punishing this crime at common law. It shall not depend upon the mere reputation of a marriage which arises from the conduct and declarations of the party himself. In prosecutions for bigamy a marriage in fact must be proved."

§ 615. This rule has been followed in India. The Indian Evidence Act, s. 50, provides that opinion evidenced by conduct shall not be sufficient to prove marriage in prosecutions under Chapter XX. of the Code. In a case under s. 498, the Calcutta High Court held that living together as man and wife was sufficient evidence of marriage to throw upon the prisoner the obligation to displace it.<sup>3</sup> This case, however, was formally overruled by a Full Bench of the same court in a prosecution under s. 497. There the only evidence of the marriage was the statement of the prosecutor, "She is my wife by marriage," and the statement of the woman, "I am married to Somea"—the prosecutor. The Court held the evidence insufficient. They said: "The provisions of the Evidence Act, s. 50, seem to point out very

<sup>1</sup> 4 Burr. 2057.

<sup>2</sup> See as to the insufficiency in a case of bigamy of an admission by the defendant that he had been previously married (*Reg. v. Savage*, 13 Cox, 178, by Lush, J.).

<sup>3</sup> *Reg. v. Wazira*, 8 B.L.R. Appx. 63; S.C. 17 Suth. Cr. 5.

plainly, that where the marriage is an ingredient in the offence, as in bigamy, adultery, and the enticing of married women, the fact of the marriage must be strictly proved in the regular way.”<sup>1</sup> A similar decision was given in Allahabad, where the evidence was exactly the same, with the addition of a statement by the prisoner before the committing magistrate, “Parbattia is the wife of Dubri.” Straight, J., following the decision last quoted, said: “The judge should have required some satisfactory proof, independent of the very vague assertions of Dubri and Parbattia, to show that the ceremony of marriage, as recognized among *Kachis*, had taken place between them; and his remark that ‘the evidence clearly establishes that Parbattia is the lawful wife of Dubri, *Kachi*,’ was obviously made without sufficient care or reflection.”<sup>2</sup> The principle laid down in both these cases, that satisfactory evidence of an actual marriage must be given, is, of course, correct, and in the case which was overruled no such evidence had been offered. But it is difficult to see why the evidence in the later cases was considered insufficient. In the Full Bench case, Garth, C.J., merely said, “The fact of the marriage must be strictly proved in the regular way.” In the Allahabad case, Straight, J., seems to have thought evidence should have been offered to show that the ceremonies used were sufficient for the purpose of a *Kachi* marriage. The ordinary evidence of a marriage is that of persons who swear that they were present at it, and that the parties now concerned are the same whom they saw married. If there is any doubt whether the marriage was a legal one, they are cross-examined, and if their answers leave the matter in doubt, of course the case breaks down. It is difficult to see why the evidence of the alleged husband and wife themselves, if given with sufficient particularity as to time, place, and circumstances, and subject to cross-examination, should not be enough to prove a fact of which they might possibly be the only available witnesses, and as to which their evidence, if believed, was conclusive. In neither of the two cases does their evidence appear to have been in any way questioned, by cross-examination or otherwise. In a Madras case, where the evidence of a marriage was that of the husband, the wife, and the mother of the latter, given in just the same bald and meagre manner, the Madras High Court held it to

<sup>1</sup> *Reg. v. Pitambur Singh*, 5 Cal. 566.

<sup>2</sup> *Reg. v. Kallu*, 5 All. 233.

be sufficient, and refused to be bound by the Calcutta and Allahabad decisions.<sup>1</sup>

§ 616. Where an actual marriage has been celebrated with the *bonâ fide* intention of making the parties man and wife, the Court will presume everything that is necessary to make the marriage formally legal, on the principle *omnia præsumuntur rite esse acta*.<sup>2</sup> In two cases of bigamy, in one of which the marriage was performed in a Wesleyan chapel, in the other in a building adjoining a church which was under repair, the Court presumed that the places were duly registered and duly licensed.<sup>3</sup> In this respect there appears to be no difference between civil and criminal cases. Where a marriage had been celebrated by a duly authorized clergyman in a private house, where it would have been unlawful without a licence from the Bishop, and there was no evidence of any licence: and the Bishop swore that to the best of his recollection he did not give any licence, and that he would not have given one in the particular case, as the parties had been living together in concubinage, the House of Lords held that the presumption in favour of marriage must prevail.<sup>4</sup> So in a Calcutta case, where a marriage would have been unlawful by reason of the affinity of the parties, without a dispensation from the Roman Catholic Archbishop, the Court assumed that such a dispensation had been given.<sup>5</sup> In all these cases the clergyman would have been acting in violation of a perfectly well-known duty, and would have been liable to punishment if he had married the parties without the necessary authority.

§ 617. Where either party relies upon a foreign marriage as being valid by the law of the country in which it was celebrated (see *ante*, § 603), he must not only prove the fact of the marriage, but that it was good by the law of the place where it was performed. Foreign law is a fact which must be proved by experts, that is, by persons specially skilled in it, either by virtue of their profession as lawyers, or as holding some office which requires a special knowledge of the branch of law which is to be proved.<sup>6</sup> Where it was

<sup>1</sup> *Reg. v. Subbarayan*, 9 Mad. 9.

<sup>2</sup> See Indian Evidence Act, I. of 1872, s. 114, cl. (e).

<sup>3</sup> *Reg. v. Manwaring*, D. & B. 132; S.C. 26 L.J. M.C. 10; *Reg. v. Cresswell*, 1 Q.B.D. 446.

<sup>4</sup> *Piers v. Piers*, 2 H.L. C. 331.

<sup>5</sup> *Lopez v. Lopez*, 12 Cal. 706.

<sup>6</sup> *Sussex Peerage case*, 11 Cl. & F., at p. 134.



necessary to prove the validity of a Scotch marriage, it was held that the evidence of the sister of one of the parties, to the effect that she had been married in the same way, and that people in Scotland were always so married, was not merely insufficient, but inadmissible.<sup>1</sup> And the same decision was given where the evidence offered was that of the Roman Catholic priest who performed the marriage, who said that he had performed it in accordance with the law of Scotland, and that he had celebrated numerous marriages in the same way during a period of twelve years.<sup>2</sup> On the other hand, where it was proved that a marriage was performed in Illinois between two Roman Catholics, who were English subjects, by a Roman Catholic priest, in a Roman Catholic church, after the publication of banns, according to a marriage service read from a book, it was held by the majority of the Irish judges to be valid, without any evidence of the law of Illinois. The decision was put upon the ground that the evidence showed a marriage which was valid by English law, and by the law of the Roman Catholic Church, and that it must be assumed, in the absence of evidence to the contrary, that it was not contrary to the law of Illinois.<sup>3</sup>

According to English practice, foreign law must be proved by the oral evidence of the expert relied on. In India the Court may inform itself, or receive information, by means of published collections of the law or law reports of the foreign country, or by the opinions of experts to be found in their works.<sup>4</sup>

§ 618. **Divorce.**—The courts of a man's domicile have complete jurisdiction over his matrimonial *status* in regard to divorce, and their decisions, and all the consequences flowing from them, ought to be accepted by the courts of every other nation. "As a general rule, it may be stated that jurisdiction in matters matrimonial depends upon the domicile of the parties to a marriage at the time of the commencement of the proceedings for a divorce. The English Divorce Court has jurisdiction to dissolve the marriage of any parties domiciled in England at the commencement of such proceedings, and this independently of the residence of the parties, the allegiance of the parties,

<sup>1</sup> *Reg. v. Povey*, Dears. 32; S.C. 22 L.J. M.C. 12.

<sup>2</sup> *Reg. v. Savage*, 13 Cox, 178.

<sup>3</sup> *Reg. v. Griffin*, 14 Cox, 308.

<sup>4</sup> Evidence Act, I. of 1872, ss. 38, 45, 60, 84, 87.



the domicile of the parties at the time of the marriage, the place of the marriage, or the place where the matrimonial offence or offences have been committed.”<sup>1</sup> A remarkable illustration of this rule will be found in the case of *Wilson v. Wilson*.<sup>2</sup> There both parties, at the time of their marriage, and up to the date of their final separation, were resident and domiciled in Scotland. The marriage was in Scotland, and the adultery was in Scotland. Some time after the separation, the husband took up his residence and became domiciled in England. He then brought his suit for divorce in the English court, and it was held by Lord Penzance that the court not only had jurisdiction, but that it was the proper court to sue in. At one time it was supposed that the decision in *Lolley's case*<sup>3</sup> had settled, that no foreign court could dissolve a marriage celebrated in England for a ground which would not, in England, justify a divorce *a vinculo matrimonii*. This notion, however, was finally overruled by the House of Lords in the case of *Harvey v. Farnie*.<sup>4</sup> There a domiciled Scotchman came to England and there married an English lady. They went to Scotland to live, and the wife obtained in the Scotch court a divorce *a vinculo matrimonii* on the ground of the husband's adultery, which in England would only have justified a judicial separation. He returned to England, where he married another English lady during the life of the former. It was held that both the divorce and the second marriage were good. Lord Selborne pointed out that the term “English marriage,” as used in *Lolley's case*, meant a marriage which, being entered into by a domiciled Englishman, became exclusively subject to English law; that the resort to the Scotch court, in his case, was merely collusive, and that he had undergone no change of domicile which would justify the action of that court.

§ 619. It is equally well settled that no foreign court can effectually divorce parties who, at the commencement of the suit, are only temporary residents within their jurisdiction. Such a decree may operate in the country where it is given, but it will be disregarded by the courts of the domicile, or of any other country. This was first held in England in *Lolley's case*.<sup>5</sup> There a domiciled Englishman was indicted

<sup>1</sup> *Per* Lopez, L.J., *Gould v. Gould* (1892), P. 240.

<sup>2</sup> L.R., 2 P. & D. 435.

<sup>3</sup> Russ. & Ry. 237; *post*, § 619.

<sup>4</sup> 8 App. Ca. 43; see *per* Lord Selborne, at p. 50.

<sup>5</sup> Russ. & Ry. 237.

or bigamy, he having married a wife in Liverpool, and, afterwards, having married another woman in the same place during the life of the first. He pleaded that he had gone to live in Scotland, and that there his first wife had obtained a divorce *a vinculo matrimonii* from him on the ground of his adultery. The plea was held bad for the reasons above stated. Similar decisions were subsequently given by the House of Lords.<sup>1</sup> Conversely, the English court refused to grant a divorce where the original domicile, marriage, and cohabitation was in Jersey, and the husband then abandoned his wife and acquired a new domicile in America. The allegation that the wife, after her desertion, had acquired a domicile in England, assuming it to be legally possible, was held insufficient, as it appeared that the husband had never come within the jurisdiction of the English tribunal.<sup>2</sup> So the English courts have invariably refused to recognize divorces granted by the American courts, at the suit of a wife against a husband who was not domiciled within the American jurisdiction.<sup>3</sup>

§ 620. It has been several times laid down in the Scotch and English courts, that, for the purpose of founding valid proceedings for divorce, there might be a matrimonial domicile, which was something short of a complete and actual domicile, and something more than a mere temporary or collusive residence. It was defined as being the permanent matrimonial home of the parties for the time being.<sup>4</sup> This doctrine, however, was finally set aside by a decision of the Privy Council in a recent case from Ceylon.<sup>5</sup> The plaintiff was a member of the Ceylon Civil Service, but it was admitted that he retained his English domicile. While on leave of absence, he married a French lady in London, with a view to resuming his residence in Ceylon, as, in fact, he did. Several years afterwards he sued her for a divorce, charging three acts of adultery—one committed on a steamer returning from Europe to Ceylon, one in France,

<sup>1</sup> *Dolphin v. Robins*, 7 H.L. C. 390; *Shaw v. Gould*, L.R., 3 H.L. 55.

<sup>2</sup> *Le Sneur v. Le Sneur*, 1 P.D. 139.

<sup>3</sup> *Shaw v. Atty.-Gen.*, L.R., 2 P. & D. 156; *Green v. Green* (1893), P. 89.

<sup>4</sup> *Pitt v. Pitt*, 4 McQueen, 627; *Brodie v. Brodie*, 2 Sw. & Tr. 259; S.C. 30 L.J. P. & M. 185; *Niboyet v. Niboyet*, 4 P.D. 1.

<sup>5</sup> *Le Mesurier v. Le Mesurier* (1895), A.C. 517. The Board on this occasion was designedly constituted so as to include the leading English, Scotch, and Irish law lords, so that it was practically a session of the House of Lords as well as of the Judicial Committee.

and a third in Ceylon. It was found by the Committee that the Ceylon courts had jurisdiction to grant a divorce *a vinculo*, and the Procedure Code authorized any husband to sue for a divorce on the ground of adultery, in the court in which he was resident. It was admitted that there was no rule of the Roman-Dutch law, which was the *lex loci*, which authorized, nor any statutory provision which conferred a jurisdiction to divorce persons not domiciled in the island. It was contended, however, that international law recognized such a jurisdiction in the courts of the matrimonial domicile, and undoubtedly, if such a domicile could exist, it would have been created by the facts of the case. This contention was overruled. Their lordships admitted "that there were unquestionably other remedies for matrimonial misconduct short of dissolution, which, according to the rules of the *jus gentium*, might be administered by the courts of the country in which spouses, domiciled elsewhere, were for the time resident:" for instance, alimony, in the case of desertion, or judicial separation in the case of cruelty. "In order to sustain the competency of the present suit, it was necessary for the appellant to show that the jurisdiction assumed by the District Court was derived, either from some recognized principle of the general law of nations, or some domestic rule of the Roman-Dutch law. If either of those points were established, the jurisdiction of the District Court would be placed beyond question, but the effect of its decree divorcing the spouses would not be the same. When the jurisdiction of the court was exercised according to the rules of international law, as in the case where the parties had their domicile within its forum, its decree dissolving their marriage ought to be respected by the tribunals of every civilized country." "On the other hand, a decree of divorce *a vinculo*, pronounced by a court whose jurisdiction was solely derived from some rule of municipal law peculiar to its forum, could not, when it trenched upon the interests of any other country, to whose tribunal the spouses were amenable, claim extra-territorial authority." Their lordships then proceeded to examine the theory of a matrimonial domicile as distinguished from a domicile of succession, and concluded by stating that they had "come to the conclusion that, according to international law, the domicile for the time being of the married pair afforded the only true test of jurisdiction to dissolve the marriage."



§ 621. It will be observed that in this case no jurisdiction to dissolve such marriages had been conferred by the Colonial Legislature, and no discussion arose as to what the effect of such an authority might have been. The question might, however, very easily arise in regard to Indian divorces. By Act IV. of 1869, s. 2, the Indian courts are authorized to grant divorces *a vinculo matrimonii*, where the marriage has been celebrated or the matrimonial offence has been committed in India. Of course the Indian Divorce Act has no authority in the English courts, and a person so divorced, if domiciled in England, might find, if he married again, that his children would be treated as illegitimate, and that he himself was indictable for bigamy. Should such a case arise, its decision would probably turn upon the answer to the question, whether the exercise of such a jurisdiction trenched upon the interests of the mother country. In one respect it might be said to do so, as a *status* governed by the law of England would be liable to be dissolved for reasons for which it could not be dissolved by English law. On the other hand, it might be argued that the Indian legislation is only a branch of Imperial legislation. The Act of 1869 was passed in a council, whose powers were given by an Act of Parliament, and every member of which was directly appointed by the Crown. It was assented to by a Viceroy who was the immediate representative of the Crown. It might have been disallowed, and therefore was really confirmed, by the Crown acting under the advice of its Government for the time being. The object of the Act was to provide for the rights of European British subjects, the great majority of whom were well known to be domiciled in England. It would seem, therefore, that a jurisdiction conferred in this way must have been intended to be effectual, and it could not be so unless it was concurrent with the English jurisdiction, and entitled to full recognition by the English courts.

§ 622. **Cohabitation under Pretence of Marriage.**<sup>1</sup>—It is difficult to see the distinction between the offence created by s. 493 and those under the three following sections. Every one who, knowing that he is already married to a woman still living, marries another woman who believes that he can lawfully marry her, does by deceit cause a man who is not lawfully married to believe that she is

<sup>1</sup> I.P.C., s. 493.



lawfully married to him. This is exactly what takes place in ninety-nine cases out of a hundred where a man commits what in England is called bigamy, and in India is defined by s. 494. As cohabitation may be assumed to follow upon a bigamous marriage, this makes up the complete offence under s. 493. The offence defined by s. 495 is only a special form of the deceit which is an essential under s. 493. It might be suggested that s. 493 is intended to meet the case of a man who goes through a mock marriage, which he knows to be a mere nullity, but which he represents to be a genuine and binding marriage. This, however, is specially provided for by s. 496, unless the element of cohabitation following upon the marriage, which is specified in s. 493 and omitted in s. 496, may be supposed to make the difference. Perhaps again it may be intended to draw a distinction between cases which are possible under s. 494, where a man really, though mistakenly, believes that he is justified in marrying again, and cases in which he acts with the full knowledge that he is not so entitled. Or perhaps the distinction may be between ss. 493 and 496, and that under the latter section the deceit consists in bringing about a marriage known at the time to be invalid, while under the former section the deceit consists in acting upon a marriage which was supposed to be valid but afterwards found out to be invalid. I confess to having no opinion on the subject, and I know of no case in which the section has been discussed.

§ 623. **Bigamy.**—The offence which is defined by s. 494 consists in marrying again, *first*, while the person so marrying has a husband or wife living, and *secondly*, where the second marriage is void by reason of its taking place during the life of such husband or wife. *First*, the words “husband or wife” mean persons who are legally such. Suppose a man marries A, and then marries B during the life of A, and then marries C; he commits bigamy by his marriage with B, and again by his marriage with C, if A is still living. But if A had died before the marriage with C, but B was still living, he would not have committed bigamy, because B was never his wife.<sup>1</sup> A marriage which is voidable but not void is a good marriage till it is set aside, and the existence of such a marriage where both parties were living would render a second marriage by either

Hale, P.C. 693; *Reg. v. Willshire*, 6 Q.B.D. 366.

bigamous.<sup>1</sup> As, for instance, a marriage contracted under such fraud or deceit as would justify a court in setting it aside,<sup>2</sup> would not entitle the party so deceived or coerced to marry again while the first marriage was in force. Where, however, the option has been exercised, as where a Muhammedan girl, who was given in marriage before puberty, elected to set aside the marriage after puberty, she would commit no offence under s. 494 by marrying again.<sup>3</sup>

§ 624. Not only must the first marriage have been originally legal, but it must be in legal force at the time of the second marriage. The Explanation states that "this section does not extend to any person whose marriage has been declared void by a court of competent jurisdiction." Nothing is said as to the case of marriages which have been severed without decree, by some process recognized by the law or usage of the parties to the marriage. The right of Muhammedans to divorce their wives without legal process is undoubted,<sup>4</sup> and no wife so divorced could be indicted for marrying again. Numerous cases have occurred in which Hindus, charged under s. 494, have pleaded that their former marriage had been put an end to by a proceeding in the nature of a divorce. In a Bombay case the Court held that the custom had been made out, but that the divorce was bad as not being in compliance with the custom.<sup>5</sup> In Calcutta the defence was held to be good.<sup>6</sup> In other cases the plea was held bad on the ground that the particular custom relied on was bad, as being contrary to public policy.<sup>7</sup> In no case was it suggested that a judicial divorce was in all cases necessary.

§ 625. It is an essential element in the offence that the case should be one "in which such marriage is void by reason of its taking place during the life of such husband or wife." Persons to whom polygamy is permissible, are not within the law. Therefore a Hindu or Muhammedan man would

<sup>1</sup> *R. v. Jacobs*, 2 Moody, C.C. 140.

<sup>2</sup> *Scott v. Sebright*, 12 P.D. 21.

<sup>3</sup> *Badal Aurat v. Reg.*, 19 Cal. 79.

<sup>4</sup> MacN. M.L. 59, 296.

<sup>5</sup> *Reg. v. Umi*, 6 Bom. 126.

<sup>6</sup> *Jukni v. Reg.*, 19 Cal. 627. See, as to the validity of such divorces, *Sankaralingam Chetty v. Subban Chetti*, 17 Cal. 479; *Uji v. Hathi*, 7 Bom. H.C. A.C. 133; *Sitaram v. Mt. Aheer*, 11 B.L.R. 129; S.C. 20 Suth. 49; 1 Stra. H.L. 52; 2 MacN. H.L. 126.

<sup>7</sup> *Reg. v. Karsan Goja*, 2 Bom. H.C. 124. See, for a correction in the report, *Reg. v. Manohar*, 5 Bom. H.C. C.C. 18; *Reg. v. Samblu*, 1 Bom. 347.

not be punishable under s. 494, but a Hindu or Muhammedan female would, since their law admits a plurality of wives, but not of husbands.<sup>1</sup> With some of the hill tribes, as, for instance, the Todas of the Nilghiris, the case is just the opposite, each woman becoming successively the wife of all the brothers of the family.

§ 626. Another question which has been decided in England, but has not arisen in India, is this: Whether a second marriage would come within the statute where it was void for some reason applicable solely to the facts of the particular case, and not merely by reason of its being of a bigamous character. In an Irish case<sup>2</sup> the second marriage was void by statute, as being celebrated by a Roman Catholic priest between a Protestant, who falsely represented himself to be a Roman Catholic, and a Roman Catholic. The Court of Criminal Appeal held that the second marriage was not a marriage at all, and therefore that there could be no conviction for bigamy. This case was disapproved of in one which came before the English Court of Crown Cases Reserved.<sup>3</sup> There the second marriage was contracted by the man with the niece of his deceased wife, and was therefore void under the statute 5 & 6 Will. IV., c. 54, s. 2. It was contended on the authority of *Reg. v. Fanning*, but in opposition to several older English cases, that there was no bigamy. This contention was overruled. Cockburn, C.J., pointed out that the object of the English statute was not to prevent polygamy, that is, the co-existence of two real wives, which was impossible by our law, but bigamy, that is, the co-existence of a real and an unreal wife. "It is obvious that the outrage and scandal involved in such a proceeding will not be less, because the parties to the second marriage may be under some special incapacity to contract marriage. The deception will not be less atrocious, because the one party may have induced the other to go through a form of marriage known to be generally binding, but inapplicable to their particular case."

"In thus holding it is not at all necessary to say that forms of marriage unknown to the law, as was the case in *Burt v. Burt*,<sup>4</sup> would suffice to bring a case within the

<sup>1</sup> *Reg. v. Judoo*, 6 Suth. Cr. 60; *Government of Bombay v. Ganga*, 4 Bom. 330.

<sup>2</sup> *Reg. v. Fanning*, 10 Cox, 411.

<sup>3</sup> *Reg. v. Allen*, L.R., 1 C.C. 367.

<sup>4</sup> 2 Sw. & T. 88; S.C. 29 L.J. P. & M. 133, a case of a Scotch marriage celebrated in Australia, no evidence being given that such marriages were recognized by local law.



operation of the statute. We must not be understood to mean that every fantastic form of marriage to which parties might think proper to resort, or that a marriage ceremony performed by an unauthorized person, or in an unauthorized place, would be a marrying within the meaning of the 57th section of 24 & 25 Vict., c. 100. It will be time enough to deal with a case of this description when it arises. It is sufficient for the present purpose to hold, as we do, that where a person already bound by an existing marriage goes through a form of marriage, known to and recognized by the law as capable of producing a valid marriage, for the purpose of a pretended and fictitious marriage, the case is not the less within the statute by reason of any special circumstances, which, independently of the bigamous character of the marriage, may constitute a legal disability in the particular parties, or make the form of marriage resorted to specially inapplicable to their individual case."

This latter decision was again approved and followed by the Irish Court in *Reg. v. Griffin*.<sup>1</sup> The statute upon which all these cases rested,<sup>2</sup> provides that "whoever, being married, shall marry any other person during the life of the former husband or wife, shall be guilty of felony." Does the addition of the words which are found in s. 494, make those cases inapplicable? It seems to me that it does not. Each statute is intended to punish bigamy, but the latter at the same time protects polygamy, where it is allowable. The Penal Code was passed before the decision in *Reg. v. Fanning*, and after the earlier English cases,<sup>3</sup> in which the doctrine affirmed in *Reg. v. Allen* was laid down. These cases must have been familiar to Sir B. Peacock, who passed the Penal Code, and there appears to be nothing in the language of s. 494 to show that a different doctrine was intended to be introduced.

§ 627. **Conflict of Laws.**—The various marriage laws which exist in India, and the possibility that the same person may become subject to different laws, may give rise to curious questions under s. 494. In one case a Hindu girl, who had been baptized in her infancy, and had afterwards reverted to Hinduism, married a Hindu, who subsequently discarded her on account of the baptism. She was then re-admitted into the Christian Church, and married a Christian, her first

<sup>1</sup> 14 Cox, 308.

<sup>2</sup> 24 & 25 Vict., c. 100, s. 57.

<sup>3</sup> *Reg. v. Penson*, 5 C. & P. 412; *Reg. v. Brawn*, 1 C. & K. 144.



husband being still alive. It was held that she had committed bigamy.<sup>1</sup> The same decision was given where a Hindu married woman became a convert to Muhammedanism, and then married a Muhammedan.<sup>2</sup> In each case the conclusion was necessary, as soon as it was found that the first marriage was not dissolved by the change of religion. The following case occurred in Madras. A Christian convert married a wife according to the rites of the Christian religion. He then relapsed into Hinduism and married a second wife, a heathen, according to Hindu usages, his first wife being still alive. The Sessions Judge convicted him under s. 494, but the conviction was quashed on appeal by the High Court.<sup>3</sup> Holloway, J., considered that it was evident that if the prisoner had really come under Hindu law, then his second marriage was not void by reason of the former having taken place, since the Hindu law permits of polygamy. If, however, he still continued under Christian law, then his marriage according to Hindu ceremonial was a mere nullity, and the second marriage was void from its inherent invalidity, and not by reason of the continuance of the former marriage. Innes, J., said: "If, in becoming a Christian, a man took upon himself the obligation of monogamy, i.e. if the Christian religion restricted him, on his embracing it, to one wife, then I should say that if such person married while still a Christian, he could not afterwards throw off his obligations by a mere change of religion. But I do not think that a profession of Christianity, *ipso facto*, imposes any such obligation, though, doubtless, the tendency of Christianity is adverse to polygamy." "Then it does not appear to one that the Hindu law could regard the second marriage as void by reason of the wife of the first marriage being still alive, since the Hindu law, in re-admitting the prisoner to caste, would altogether ignore the status which he had just abandoned, together with all obligations contracted under it, and would not recognize anything as a marriage which was not entered upon by him as a Hindu, and with Hindu forms and ceremonies."

§ 628. Should such a case occur again, it would be necessary to consider much more fully what is the *status* of a native Christian in India. The obligation of monogamy imposed upon a Christian arises, not, as Mr. Justice Innes.

<sup>1</sup> *re Millard*, 10 Mad. 218.

<sup>2</sup> *In re Ram Kumari*, 13 Cal. 264.

H.C. Appx. vii.; 4 *ibid.*, Appx. iii.

supposed, from the Christian religion, but from the universal law of Christendom founded upon that religion. That law attaches absolutely and permanently to every inhabitant of a Christian country, so long as he is domiciled in such a country. Domicil in India carries with it no such obligation, each class of the community being governed by their own law and usage. Native Christians are bound by the laws and usages of the particular class to which they attach or assimilate themselves, so far as those practices can be reconciled with the profession of Christianity.<sup>1</sup> The obligation of monogamy is certainly a part of the customary law of every class of native Christians, and it is of the essence of every marriage that can be called a Christian marriage (*ante*, § 605). Can a native Christian, who has contracted such a marriage, throw off its obligations, and entitle himself to another wife, merely by becoming a Muhammedan or Hindu? As between himself and his wife he certainly cannot. Such conduct would, under s. 10 of the Indian Divorce Act, entitle the first wife to a divorce. Independently of the Divorce Act, there can, I suppose, be no doubt that a matrimonial court would treat such second marriage as adultery, for which it would grant the first wife a judicial separation. If the intercourse of a man with a so-called wife can be treated as adulterous, it can only be because his marriage is void, and, in the particular case, that could only be because of the previous marriage. The suggestion of Mr. Justice Holloway that if Christian law was still binding upon the Christian after he had become a Hindu, the same law would treat the second marriage as absolutely void, seems to be irrelevant to a charge of bigamy, according to the decision in *Reg. v. Allen* (*ante*, § 626). A person who professes to be a Hindu, and who may be reasonably supposed to be one, and who contracts a Hindu marriage with a Hindu woman, does an act which is apparently legal; and if, in consequence of circumstances peculiar to himself, it is not legal, he commits the very offence which is the essence of bigamy.

§ 629. Exactly the same point occurred before the Allahabad Court, and came on appeal to the Privy Council, in a case in which it was not necessary to decide it. A lady of native extraction married a European British subject, in a Christian church, and during his life professed Christianity.

<sup>1</sup> *Abraham v. Abraham*, 9 M.L.A. 195; S.C. 1 Suth. P.C. 1; *Lopez v. Lopez*, 12 Cal. 706; *ante*, § 612.

After her husband's death, she formed a connection with a Christian, who is described as an inferior clerk in the Judges' Court, and was probably an East Indian. He was also married, according to Christian law, to a Christian woman, who was still living. In order to legalize their illicit connection, it occurred to him and the widow to become Muhammedans, and then to marry. These facts came out incidentally in the course of an application relating to the guardianship of the daughter of the widow. In delivering the judgment of the committee, Lord Justice James said: "The High Court expressed doubts of the legality of the marriage, which their lordships think they were well warranted in entertaining."<sup>1</sup>

§ 630. Several cases have occurred in India of Englishmen, married in the Christian manner to European wives, adopting Muhammedanism, and then marrying again during the life of the first wife. It seems to me that such second marriage would be punishable under s. 494. If the English domicile still continued, the personal *status* would absolutely forbid such second marriage (*ante*, § 605). Even if an Indian domicile had been assumed, it would, I think, make no difference. The *status* of an Englishman domiciled in India is a Christian *status*, and is governed by all the laws universally recognized in Christendom, which have been adopted in India as regards Christians. Monogamy is certainly one of them. If an Englishman became actually, and not merely colourably, a Muhammedan, it may possibly be that the courts would judge his future proceedings according to the law of his adoption. But it is a very different thing to assert that they would allow him to cast off an obligation which he had previously contracted, and which, at the time of the contract, was indissoluble by any act of his own.

§ 631. **Evidence of Life.**—The continued life of the first husband or wife must be proved, like any other fact. If the case is tried by a jury, this question must be left to them upon all the evidence in the case. If by a judge without a jury, it must be decided by him subject to the usual right of appeal. A prisoner was indicted for bigamy, and it was proved that she left her husband in 1843, and married again in 1847. No evidence was offered as to whether the first husband was alive or not in 1847. No

<sup>1</sup> *Skinner v. Orde*, 14 M.I.A. 309, at p. 321.



evidence was given as to his age. Lush, J., directed the jury that he must be assumed to be still alive. This direction was held to be erroneous. The Court said: "In an indictment for bigamy, it is incumbent on the prosecution to prove to the satisfaction of the jury that the husband or wife, as the case may be, was alive at the date of the second marriage. That is purely a question of fact. The existence of the party at an antecedent period may or may not afford a reasonable inference that he was living at the subsequent date. If, for example, it were proved that he was in good health on the day preceding the second marriage, the inference would be strong, almost irresistible, that he was living on the latter day, and the jury would, in all probability, find that he was so. If, on the other hand, it were proved that he was then in a dying condition, and nothing further was proved, they would probably decline to draw that inference. Thus the question is entirely for the jury. The law makes no presumption either way."<sup>1</sup> In a later case this singular state of facts appeared. The prisoner married A in 1864, and B in 1868, A being still alive. He was convicted of bigamy. He then married C in 1879, and D in 1880, C being still alive. He was indicted in respect of the last marriage, his wife C being still alive. It is evident that if A was still alive at the time of the marriage with C, the latter never was his wife. No evidence was offered that A was either alive or dead in 1879, and the jury convicted the prisoner without any finding on that head, apparently on the principle that the prisoner should have proved she was alive. The conviction was set aside. The Court held that there were conflicting presumptions; first, that A, who was alive in 1868, was still alive in 1879; secondly, that the prisoner, in marrying C, was doing an innocent act. That upon these facts the jury should have found whether A was alive in 1879 or not. That it was not for the prisoner to prove she was alive. Lord Coleridge, C.J., said: "The prisoner was only bound to set up the life. It was for the prosecution to prove his guilt."<sup>2</sup> The same decision would, no doubt, have been given in India under s. 107 of the Evidence Act, I. of 1872. If *Lumley's* case were to occur in India, the jury would probably be told that although there was a presumption in favour of the continuance of

<sup>1</sup> *Reg. v. Lumley*, L.R., 1 C.C. 196.

<sup>2</sup> *Reg. v. Willshire*, 6 Q.B.D. 366.



life, this did not relieve them from the necessity of finding that the husband was actually alive, and that, in considering this question, they would have to remember that the prosecution was bound to establish the guilt of the prisoner, and that her innocence should be assumed till the contrary was proved.

**632. Absence for Seven Years.**—Even where the former husband or wife is still alive, no offence is committed under s. 494 “if such husband or wife, at the time of the subsequent marriage, shall have been continually absent from such person for the space of seven years, and shall not have been heard of by such person as being alive within that time; provided the person contracting the subsequent marriage shall, before such marriage takes place, inform the person with whom such marriage is contracted, of the real state of facts so far as the same are within his or her knowledge” (s. 494, Explanation). In reference to the English statute, which contains a proviso exactly similar to the first part of the above clause, Lush, J., in pronouncing the judgment of the Court of Crown Cases Reserved, said: “Where the only evidence is that the party was living at a period which is more than seven years prior to the second marriage, there is no question for the jury. The proviso in the Act, 24 and 25 Vict., c. 100, s. 57, then comes into operation, and exonerates the prisoner from criminal liability, though the first husband or wife be proved to have been living at the time when the second marriage was contracted. The Legislature, by this proviso, sanctions a presumption that a person who has not been heard of for seven years is dead.”<sup>1</sup> In order to raise this presumption, however, it must appear that the parties have been continually absent from each other for seven years. Where the only evidence was that the prisoner married his first wife in 1865, that they lived together for some time, but how long was not shown, and that he married a second wife in 1882, and no proof of any actual separation between the first wife and the prisoner was offered, the Court held that the presumption of life continued, and that the prosecution was not bound to show that the prisoner knew that his wife was alive within seven years of his second marriage.<sup>2</sup> Where a separation of seven years or more is established, the burthen

<sup>1</sup> *Reg. v. Lumley*, L.R., 1 C.C. 196; *ante*, § 631; Evidence Act, I. o 1872, s. 108.

<sup>2</sup> *Reg. v. Jones*, 11 Q.B.D. 118.

of proving that the prisoner knew of his wife's existence within seven years rests on the prosecution.<sup>1</sup> Such knowledge is a question of fact, and must be distinctly found. A finding that the prisoner had the means of acquiring knowledge, if he had chosen to use them, is not sufficient. Such facts might justify a finding that the accused did know that his wife was alive, but is not equivalent to such a finding.<sup>2</sup>

§ 633. A different case from any of those just discussed is where a man marries again within seven years after he has heard of his wife, but believing on reasonable grounds that she is dead. Such a case occurred in England under a statute, 24 & 25 Vict., c. 100, s. 57, which is almost *verbatim* the same as the first clause in the Explanation to s. 494. There the Court held that although the case came within the literal terms of the statute, the defendant was excused by virtue of his *bonâ fide* mistake at fact. Under Indian law a similar decision would no doubt be given under s. 79 in the chapter on General Exceptions."

The further proviso that the prisoner must have communicated his knowledge of the facts of the case to the person whom he was about to marry, goes beyond the English law. The burthen of proving such a communication would apparently rest on the prisoner.<sup>4</sup>

§ 634. Jurisdiction.—Where a charge is brought under s. 494, the offence consists in the second marriage, and is committed in the place where the second marriage took place. Consequently it can only be tried by a court which has jurisdiction over such an offence when committed in such a place. This was decided in the reign of Charles II.<sup>5</sup> The same ruling was affirmed by the Privy Council in a case from Australia.<sup>6</sup> There a Colonial statute provided that "Whosoever being married marries any other person during the life of the former husband or wife, where-soever such second marriage takes place, shall be liable, etc." The appellant was married in N.S. Wales to his first wife. He was divorced from her in Missouri, where he married his second wife during the life of the first. He

<sup>1</sup> *Reg. v. Curgerwen*, L.R., 1 C.C. 1.

<sup>2</sup> *Reg. v. Briggs*, D. & B. 98; S.C. 26 L.J. M.C. 7.

<sup>3</sup> *Reg. v. Tolson*, 23 Q.B.D. 168; *ante*, § 123.

<sup>4</sup> Evidence Act, I. of 1872, ss. 105, 106.

<sup>5</sup> *Kelyng*, 79; 1 Hale, P.C. 693.

<sup>6</sup> *Macleod v. Atty.-Gen. of New South Wales* (1891), A.C. 455.

was indicted for bigamy in N.S. Wales under the above statute, and convicted, the judge having directed the jury that the American court could not dissolve the Australian marriage. The conviction was set aside by the Judicial Committee, on the ground that the offence, if committed at all, was committed in Missouri and beyond the jurisdiction of the Australian court. If the statute intended to give such a jurisdiction, which their Lordships held it did not, it was so far *ultra vires* and void.

No court shall take cognizance of any offence falling under ss. 493—496, both inclusive, of the Indian Penal Code, except upon a complaint made by some person aggrieved.<sup>1</sup> The brother-in-law of a woman who has committed bigamy is not a person aggrieved under that section.<sup>2</sup>

§ 635. **Adultery** is defined by s. 497 as being sexual intercourse with a person who is, and whom the defendant knows, or has reason to believe, to be the wife of another man, without the consent or connivance of that man, such sexual intercourse not amounting to rape. Exactly the same questions would arise as to the original or continued validity of the marriage as have been already discussed under the head of bigamy.

A different question arises where it is admitted that a ceremony of marriage took place, but where it is asserted that, by the custom of the country, the woman was at liberty, notwithstanding it, to have intercourse with any one at her pleasure. Here the essence of the objection is, that no marriage, within the meaning of the Code, ever took place.<sup>3</sup> In a case under the Alya Santana law of Canara, where it is customary to celebrate marriages, but the woman is at liberty to leave her husband at her own pleasure, and to marry again, the Court held that there was no marriage which would support a conviction under s. 498. Referring with approval to the case last cited, they said: "The customary cohabitation of the sexes under the Alya Santana law appears to us to do no more than create a casual relation, which the woman may terminate at her pleasure, subject perhaps to certain conventional restraints among the more respectable classes."<sup>4</sup>

The belief of the defendant as to the woman being the

<sup>1</sup> Crim. P.C., 1882, s. 198.

<sup>2</sup> *Reg. v. Bai Rukshmoni*, 10 Bom. 340.

<sup>3</sup> *Hegadi v. Tonga*, 4 Mad. H.C. 196.

<sup>4</sup> *Koraga v. Reg.*, 6 Mad. 374.



wife of another is a question of fact. Where a husband brought a suit against his wife for restitution of conjugal rights, and a decree was given in his favour, leaving her the option either to return to her husband or to pay him a sum of money, and she took the latter course, after which the alleged adultery took place, it was held that the defendant might have believed the woman was free to marry, and, if so, had committed no offence.<sup>1</sup>

§ 636. **Evidence of Adultery.**—In a case in Calcutta<sup>2</sup> a question was raised in the course of the trial as to the evidence necessary to establish sexual intercourse. It was contended that the same proof was required as in the case of rape, viz. of actual penetration. The point was reserved, but it became unnecessary to decide it. It is plain that the words in the Explanation to s. 375 are limited to cases of rape, and also that the object of them was the same as in stat. 9, Geo. IV., c. 74, s. 66, viz. to do away with proof of emission which used formerly to be required; the object of the provision is to limit, not to extend, the evidence for the prosecution. I conceive the rule will be exactly the same as it is in the Divorce Court, where intercourse is inferred from acts of guilty familiarity, or even from opportunities sought for, and created by, the parties under circumstances which leave no reasonable doubt of criminal intention. Of course, stronger evidence will be required under this Code than in the English Divorce Court, for the wife can be called as a witness against the adulterer under s. 497, whereas she cannot in a suit for dissolution of marriage. But her admissions, or confessions, out of court will not be evidence against him.<sup>3</sup>

§ 637. **Connivance.**—Another question arises as to the nature of the evidence which will amount to *consent*, or *connivance*, on the husband's part. In the case of *Allen v. Allen*,<sup>4</sup> the law upon this point was laid down as follows: "To find a verdict of connivance, you must be satisfied from the facts established in evidence that the husband so connived at the wife's adultery as to give a willing consent to it. Was he, or was he not, an accessory before the fact? Mere negligence, mere inattention, mere dullness of apprehension, mere indifference will not suffice; there must be an intention on his part that she should commit adultery. If such a state of things existed as would, in the apprehension of

<sup>1</sup> *Reg. v. Manohar*, 5 Bom. H.C. C.C. 17.

<sup>3</sup> *Robinson v. Robinson*, 29 L.J. Mat. 178.

<sup>2</sup> *Reg. v. Ward*, 1862.

<sup>4</sup> 30 L.J. Mat. 2.



reasonable men, result in the wife's adultery—whether that state of things was produced by the connivance of the husband, or independent of it—and if the husband, intending that the result of adultery should take place, did not interfere when he might have done so to protect his own honour, he was guilty of connivance.”

In a later case,<sup>1</sup> Cresswell, J., laid down the law a little more cautiously. He said: “I think that to establish connivance it is requisite, not that the party conniving should be actually an accessory before the fact, so as to have taken any active measures to bring about the result of adultery, but that he should be cognizant that such a result would follow from certain transactions that he approved of and consented to; and that, therefore, on the principle *volenti non fit injuria*, he cannot complain of any act he passively assented to.”

But where the husband, after some angry discussion with his wife respecting the impropriety of her conduct, told her that she could not lead this life any longer, and that she must either give up her paramour or give him up, and that she could not live with him any longer if she continued her intimacy with the former, after which she deliberately left her husband, with full knowledge on his part that she was going to join the adulterer, and without his making any effort to prevent it, this was held not to amount to connivance. Sir C. Cresswell said: “I cannot construe that into a willing consent that the adultery should be committed. It is an unwilling consent, given because she would not comply with the condition he insisted upon of giving up the improper intimacy. By connivance I understand the willing consent of the husband, that the husband gives a willing consent to the act, although he may not be an accessory before the fact; that, although he does not take an active part towards procuring it done, he gives a willing consent and desires it to be done. What this man desired was, not that the act should be done, but that she should not torment him by keeping up an intimacy of this character, and at the same time living with him as his wife, and that she should give up the one or other.”<sup>2</sup>

The Penal Code merely uses the word “consent,” not “willing consent;” but I conceive that the above construction must be put upon the term. An unwilling consent

<sup>1</sup> *Glennie v. Glennie*, 32 L.J. P. & M. 17.

<sup>2</sup> *Marris v. Marris*, 31 L.J. Mat. 69; S.C. 2 Sw. & Tr. 530.

is not a consent at all. It is simply a submission to what is unavoidable.

On the other hand, evidence of merely passive acquiescence in a state of adultery after full knowledge of it, and without taking any steps to procure redress, has been held to be evidence of consent amounting to connivance, so as to disentitle the acquiescing party to a divorce;<sup>1</sup> because a divorce is only granted when the applicant is feeling and suffering under a sense of wrong, when the complaint is preferred. But it may be questioned whether, under the Penal Code, an *ex post facto* acquiescence can be used except as evidence of an acquiescence previous to the act. If there was no consent, or connivance, up to the time the act was committed, then the offence is complete, and it is difficult to see how it can be obliterated by any subsequent consent.

§ 638. This section is intended to protect the husband's rights, and, therefore, any consent, or connivance, which shows an abandonment by the husband of his claim to continence on the part of his wife, will bar an indictment, even though the consent, or connivance, be to a different adultery from that which is specifically charged. Therefore, it is held that a consent to his wife's adultery with one man is a bar to proceedings in the Divorce Court against another man, or against the same man for a subsequent act of adultery.<sup>2</sup> This rests on the presumption that an assent once given continues. But a case might occur where a sinful wife might become reconciled to her husband, and resume a life of chastity, while he might resume his efforts to protect her virtue, and then, I conceive, the right to prosecute would revive.

Can a second prosecution be maintained against the same man for adultery with the same woman, she not having in the mean time returned to her husband's protection? The case actually arose in the 4th Sessions of 1864, Bombay, and Hore, J., directed the jury that the prosecution was maintainable, and that the former conviction was rather an aggravation of the offence. There the woman had left her home before the first conviction, and lived in the prisoner's house the whole time he was undergoing his sentence; and the adultery complained of in the second prosecution was committed in that house as soon as the prisoner was released.

<sup>1</sup> *Boulting v. Boulting*, 33 L.J. Mat. 33; S.C. 3 Sw. & Tr. 329.

<sup>2</sup> *Gipps v. Gipps*, 32 L.J. Mat. 78; S.C. in House of Lords; 33 *ibid.* 161; S.C. 11 H.L. Ca. 1.

With great respect for the learned judge, I conceive that no prosecution was maintainable. As Lord Chelmsford said in the case of *Gipps v. Gipps*:<sup>1</sup> "It must be borne in mind that the offence of adultery is complete in a single instance of guilty connection with a married woman. It is the first act which constitutes the crime, and though the adulterous intercourse between the parties should continue for years there is not a fresh adultery upon every repetition of the guilty acts, although all and each of them may furnish evidence of the adultery itself. The inference which I draw from this view of the subject is, that if a husband, having the right to divorce his wife for adultery, abandons that right in consideration of a sum of money received from the adulterer, he can never afterwards be a petitioner for a divorce on the ground of his wife's criminal intercourse with the same person."

It seems to be an equally legitimate inference that a husband who, having a right to institute a prosecution for adultery, does so, and enforces the full penalty of the law against the offender, cannot punish him a second time for a renewal of intercourse which inflicts no fresh injury upon himself. Of course, it would be different if he had condoned the offence, and taken the wife back again into his society.<sup>2</sup>

§ 639. **Taking or enticing away a Married Woman.**—The offence constituted by s. 498 consists in (1) taking or enticing away, or concealing, or detaining, (2) with intent that she may have illicit intercourse with any person, (3) any woman who is or is known or believed to be the wife of any other man, (4) from that man, or from any person having the care of her on behalf of that man. The elements of the crime are the same as those of kidnapping from lawful guardianship, as defined by s. 361,<sup>3</sup> except as to the intent. The section is intended to protect the rights of the husband. The consent of the wife is perfectly immaterial. The fact that she goes away with another man of her own accord, as generally happens, is no excuse for him, provided his part in the transaction can be characterized as taking or enticing her away. In a case where the jury found as a fact that the woman asked the prisoner to allow her to go with him, that all the solicitation proceeded from her, and that the prisoner for some

<sup>1</sup> 33 L.J. Mat. 169.

<sup>2</sup> See *per* Lord Westbury, 33 L.J. P. & M., at p. 164.

<sup>3</sup> See the discussion upon that section, *ante*, §§ 448—454.



time refused to yield to her request, but that finally he met her when she left her husband's house, and went off with her by railway; it was held that the offence was complete. Scotland, C.J., said, "If whilst the wife is living with her husband a man knowingly goes away with her in such a way as to deprive the husband of his control over her with the intent stated in the section, that I think is a taking from the husband within the meaning of the section. The wife's complicity in the transaction is no more material on a charge under this section than it is on a charge of adultery."<sup>1</sup> The same rule applies where the offence charged is that of enticing away a married woman. In this case the defendant is an active agent in the transaction, but the enticing may exist though the wife is willing and ready to be enticed. Therefore, where a procuress induced a married woman of twenty to leave her husband, and the facts showed that "she had made her deliberate choice, and was determined of her own free will to leave her husband and become a prostitute in Calcutta," the Bengal High Court held that no conviction could be maintained under s. 366, but that there was quite sufficient evidence to convict the prisoner of enticing under s. 498, "for whatever the wife's secret inclinations were, she would have had no opportunity of carrying them out had not the prisoner interfered."<sup>2</sup> It is, however, necessary that the final act which severs the connection between the wife and her husband should be one in which the defendant takes part, either by way of influence, advice, or assistance. If a woman of her own accord, and without any persuasion or inducement held out to her by the defendant, and without any complicity on his part, were to leave her husband and go to the defendant, who allowed her to remain with him, this would not be an offence under s. 498. Though it might be his moral duty to restore her to her home, the statute does not say that he shall restore her, but only that he shall not take her away.<sup>3</sup>

§ 640. The words "conceal or detain" refer to some active conduct on the part of the accused beyond that of merely permitting her to remain in his house. It is possible to conceal a woman with her own consent, but it is not possible to detain her when she is willing to remain. In such a case the Madras High Court said: "The words of

<sup>1</sup> *Reg. v. Kumarasami*, 2 Mad. H.C. 331.

<sup>2</sup> *Reg. v. Srimotee Poddee*, 1 Suth. Cr. 45.

<sup>3</sup> *Reg. v. Olifier*, 10 Cox, 402; *ante*, § 452.



the section, 'conceals or detains,' may and were, we think, intended to be applied to the enticing and inducing a wife to withhold or conceal herself from her husband, and assisting her to do so, as well as to physical restraint or prevention of her will or action. Depriving the husband of his proper control over his wife for the purpose of illicit intercourse is the gist of the offence, just as it is of the offence of taking away a wife under the same section, and a detention occasioning such deprivation may be brought about simply by the influence of allurements and blandishments. Here there is no reasonable evidence to show that the woman had not perfect freedom to leave the house, or that any illurement, or persuasion was required or used, to induce her to remain."<sup>1</sup> The words "such woman" in this clause of the section do not mean "such woman so enticed as aforesaid," but do mean "such woman whom he knows or has reason to believe to be the wife of any other man."<sup>2</sup> If a woman were to come to another person without his doing any act amounting to a taking or enticing, and he were then to conceal or detain her with the intent defined, he would have committed an offence under s. 494.

The wording of the section as to intent shows that the offence may be committed either by an intending adulterer, or by a procurer who intends to pass the woman on to some other person.

§ 641. It is essential to the offence that the woman should be taken from the husband or some one who has the care of her on his behalf. *Primâ facie* a wife who is conducting herself properly is always under the control, or in the legal possession of her husband. It is not essential that he should be living with her. He may be absent on business, or his employment may compel him to live apart.<sup>3</sup> Nor can it make any difference whether the house is hired by him, or by her, or by some one else, so long as it is occupied by her as his wife, living under his protection, and subject to his rights over her. If, however, the wife had abandoned her husband, and was living apart from and in defiance of him, and *a fortiori* if she had taken to a criminal life, it could not be said that by any act of another she was taken or enticed from her husband.<sup>4</sup>

<sup>1</sup> *Re Sundara Dass Tevan*, 4 Mad. H.C. 20.

<sup>2</sup> *Reg. v. Niader*, 10 All. 480.

<sup>3</sup> *Mutty Khan v. Mungloo*, 5 Suth. Cr. 50.

<sup>4</sup> See *Reg. v. Gunder Singh*, 4 Suth. Cr. 6; and cases cited, *ante*, § 451.

Where it is doubtful which of the offences enumerated in the section the accused has committed, the finding may be in the very words of the section, though such a finding should be avoided if possible.<sup>1</sup>

No court shall take cognizance of an offence under s. 497 or s. 498, except upon a complaint made by the husband of the woman, or in his absence by some person who had care of such woman on his behalf at the time when such offence was committed.<sup>2</sup> But the death of the husband does not terminate a prosecution which has been once instituted by him.<sup>3</sup> The fact that the husband has appeared as a witness to prosecute a prisoner charged with committing rape upon his wife, does not amount to such a complaint by him as will sustain an alternative charge against the same prisoner for committing adultery with the wife.<sup>4</sup>

<sup>1</sup> *Reg. v. Mothoora Nath*, 22 Suth. Cr. 72.

<sup>2</sup> Crim. P.C., s. 199.

<sup>3</sup> 4 Mad. H.C. Appx. lv.

<sup>4</sup> *Empress v. Kallu*, 5 All. 233.

## CHAPTER XIV.

- I. Defamation, §§ 642—673.  
II. Criminal Intimidation and Annoyance, §§ 674—679.

§ 642. **Defamation.**—The law upon the subject of Defamation may be conveniently discussed under the following heads :—

*First.*—What is defamation, where nothing is known about the facts of the case except what is necessary to explain the real meaning of the imputation complained of? (§§ 643—648).

*Second.*—What are the cases in which an imputation which is *primâ facie* defamatory, is not punishable as such? (§§ 649—667).

*Third.*—What is the making or publishing of an imputation? (§§ 668—670).

*Fourth.*—What are the respective functions of judge and jury upon a trial for defamation? (§§ 671—673).

*First.*—The law upon the first point is laid down as follows in s. 499 of the Penal Code :—

“Whoever, by words either spoken or intended to be read, or by signs, or by visible representations, makes or publishes any imputation concerning any person, intending to harm, or knowing, or having reason to believe, that such imputation will harm the reputation of such person, is said, except in the cases hereinafter excepted, to defame that person.

*Explanation 1.*—It may amount to defamation to impute anything to a deceased person, if the imputation would harm the reputation of that person if living, and is intended to be hurtful to the feelings of his family or other near relatives.

*Explanation 2.*—It may amount to defamation to make an imputation concerning a company, or an association, or collections of persons as such.

*Explanation 3.*—An imputation in the form of an alternative, or expressed ironically, may amount to defamation.

*Explanation 4.*—No imputation is said to harm a person's reputation, unless that imputation, directly or indirectly, in the estimation of others, lowers the moral or intellectual character of that person, or lowers the character of that person in respect of his caste or of his calling, or lowers the credit of that person, or causes it to be believed that the body of that person is in a loathsome state, or in a state generally considered as disgraceful.

It will be observed that this section makes no distinction between oral and written defamation. Also that it only applies to attacks made upon individuals. Imputations of a seditious character directed against the Government are provided for by s. 124A, which has been already discussed (*ante*, §§ 277—281). Blasphemous libels are not punishable at all, unless so far as they consist in words or acts which constitute an offence under s. 298.

§ 643. The mode in which the imputation is conveyed is quite immaterial. The words may even profess to be words of praise, provided they are so framed as to show that an opposite meaning is intended. As Buller, J., said:<sup>1</sup> "Upon occasions of this sort I have never adopted any other rule than that which has been frequently repeated by Lord Mansfield to juries, desiring them to read the paper stated to be a libel as men of common understanding, and say whether in their minds it conveys the idea imputed." Exactly the same rule applies where the imputation is not contained in a statement, written or spoken, but in some representation or by signs. Where the meaning of the imputation is ambiguous, or where it does not on its face apply to the complaint, evidence is admissible to explain its meaning, or to show who was the person really meant. Where a person is slandered by insinuation, or without mention of his name, it is everyday's practice to call witnesses and ask them whom they understood to be aimed at by the libellous matter. The ultimate question, whether the complainant really was intended, is of course a question of fact for the tribunal.<sup>2</sup> In all such cases the English practice is to state in the charge the meaning which the prosecution intends to affix to the libel, by means of averments which are technically called innuendoes. These are unnecessary where the libel on its face is clear and specific. Where it

<sup>1</sup> *Rex v. Watson*, 2 T.R. 206.

<sup>2</sup> *Per* Lord Mansfield, *R. v. Shipley*, 4 Doug. 164; *Lefanu v. Malcolmson*, 1 H.L. Ca. 637; *per* Lord Campbell, at p. 668.



is ambiguous, such averments appear to be material and necessary, as without them the defendant would not know what charge he had to meet, and therefore if the prosecution fails to make out the meaning which it has attached to the statement, the Crown cannot repudiate it at the trial and set up another meaning.<sup>1</sup> Of course this might be done by altering or amending the charge in the manner authorized by the Criminal Procedure Code (ss. 226—232; *post*, § 693). The office of an innuendo is to explain the meaning which the defamatory matter was intended to convey, and was capable of conveying; not to extend its natural meaning, or to add to it some meaning which it is incapable of bearing. “Suppose the words to be ‘a murder was committed in A’s house last night,’ no introduction can warrant the innuendo, ‘meaning that B committed the murder,’ nor would it be helped by the finding of the jury for the plaintiff. For the Court must see that the words do not and cannot mean it, and would arrest the judgment accordingly.”<sup>2</sup> On the other hand, the meaning of any words, representation, or signs, is that which they would convey to persons of ordinary common sense, who are possessed of the information which would enable the statement to be understood. This is the meaning which affects the complainant, and the defendant is not allowed to set up any non-natural sense different from that which the rest of mankind would understand by what he said or did.<sup>3</sup>

§ 644. These principles received a remarkable illustration in the recent case of *Monson v. Tussaud*.<sup>4</sup> Mr. Monson had been tried in Scotland for the murder of Lieutenant Hambrough, who was found with his brains blown out in the course of a shooting party. The theory of the prosecution was that he had been shot by Mr. Monson; that of the defence was that his gun had gone off by accident. The jury returned a verdict of “not proven,” which meant that they could not make up their minds whether the prisoner was innocent or guilty. The defendant was the proprietor of a well-known waxwork exhibition. A figure representing Mr. Monson, and near to which was a gun, described as his, was exhibited by the defendant in a room next to one known as the

<sup>1</sup> *Williams v. Stoll*, 1 C. & M. 675.

<sup>2</sup> *Per curiam*, *Solomon v. Lawson*, 8 Q.B. 823; *per Lord Campbell*, *Lefanu v. Malcolmson*, *ub. sup.*; see, further, *post*, § 672.

<sup>3</sup> See the cases cited, *ante*, § 278; *Reg. v. Ramanand*, 3 All. 664.

<sup>4</sup> (1894), Q.B. 671.

Chamber of Horrors. In the same room with him were figures of Napoleon I., Mrs. Maybrick, a convicted murderess, Pigott, a perjured witness and suicide, and Scott, who had been accused as an accomplice of Monson in the murder. The Chamber of Horrors was devoted to murderers and relics connected with murders. In it was a representation of the place where the body of Lieutenant Hambrough was found, with a description, "Ardlamont Mystery. Scene of the Tragedy." Mr. Monson sued Tussaud, alleging that the whole exhibition was a libel on him. An application for an injunction pending the hearing was made and granted by Mathew and Collins, JJ., who held that the exhibition was so managed as necessarily to convey the imputation that the plaintiff was connected with a crime, and not that he was a spectator of an accident. On appeal, further affidavits were filed, which tended to show that the plaintiff was himself a consenting party to the exhibition, and mainly on the strength of these the injunction was dissolved. Lord Halsbury, however, expressed his entire approval of the judgments below, and the other judges do not seem to have disapproved of them. When the case came on for hearing, on the 30th of January, 1895, Lord Russell, C.J., in the course of his charge to the jury, said: "Could any one doubt that the exhibition conveyed in a clear and unmistakable way, 'This is Monson, the man who was tried for the murder of Cecil Hambrough by a jury in Scotland; was not acquitted of that crime; and against whom a verdict of "not proven" only was passed.' If it meant that—and it could not mean anything else—could the jury have any hesitation in saying that it was a libellous publication?"<sup>1</sup>

§ 645. Truth of Libel.—Nothing is said in the definition of a defamatory imputation to imply that it must be false. For this purpose it is necessary to resort to the first Exception: "It is not defamation to impute anything which is true concerning any person, if it be for the public good that the imputation should be made or published. Whether or not it is for the public good is a question of fact."

The result of the definition and of the Exception is to assimilate the law of India to that of England, since Lord Campbell's Act, 6 & 7 Vict., c. 96. The general rule in

<sup>1</sup> Reported in the *Times*, and more fully in the *Daily Graphic*, of Jan. 31, 1895. The jury found a verdict for the plaintiff, but assessed the damages to his character at one farthing.

England was that, on an indictment for libel, its truth could not be pleaded as a defence to the charge, nor even proved after conviction in mitigation of punishment, though it might be shown for that purpose that the defendant, when he published the charges contained in the libel, believed, and had reasonable ground to believe, that the charges were true.<sup>1</sup> Under Lord Campbell's Act, which is, in substance, the same as the above Exception, the defendant was allowed in such a case to prove that the statement was true, and that it was for the public benefit that the matters alleged should be published. Both parts of the plea have to be established. A remarkable instance of the success of such a defence was the collapse of the prosecution brought against the Marquis of Queensberry by Oscar Wilde, in 1895. The same doctrine once existed in civil cases, where the action was for slander in writing,<sup>2</sup> though it has long since been settled that in all suits for defamation the truth of the libel may be pleaded as a justification. Even in such cases, however, the purely wanton raking up of the past events of a man's life appears not to be always capable of justification. In an early case,<sup>3</sup> the plaintiff sued for defamation, the defendant having said of him, "He is a thief, and why will you take his part." The plea was that the plaintiff had stolen a sheep; to which it was replied, that the King had issued a general pardon, and that he came within its terms. This replication was held good, even though the defendant did not know of it, on the ground that a royal pardon cleared the offender of the crime and infamy. The Court said, that a person who did not know of a secret pardon, might arrest a man for felony, "because it is an advancement of justice, but so it is not to call him a thief, for that is neither necessary, nor advanceth nor tends to justice." In a recent case, where, in an interchange of amenities between newspaper editors, one called the other a felon-editor, and was sued accordingly, it was pleaded that the defendant had been convicted of felony and sentenced to twelve months' imprisonment. Replication that the conviction had taken place many years ago, and that the plaintiff had endured his punishment, and by virtue of stat. 9 Geo. IV., c. 32, s. 3, was in the same position as if he had been pardoned. The replication was held good. The Court, referring to *Cuddington's* case, said that the

<sup>1</sup> *R. v. Halpin*, 9 B. & C. 65.

<sup>2</sup> 5 Bac. Abr. 203.

<sup>3</sup> *Cuddington v. Wilkins*, Hob. 81.



Legislature deliberately adopted the view of the judges; it was considered to be proper that a person who had endured the punishment for his offence, should not be liable to have reflections made upon him. Such questions could be put in cross-examination, where it was necessary, for purposes of justice, to test his credibility, "but needlessly to rake up the past misfortunes of another person, shows a malignant and wicked frame of mind."<sup>1</sup> In *Monson's* case (*ante*, § 644), Lord Halsbury, after citing the above decisions, said: "It seems to be thought that because it could be said that it was true that the applicant was tried for murder, this is of itself a sufficient answer. It seems to me that this is no answer at all. Because the applicant was tried for murder, and because the circumstances of the trial are commonly known by the report of proceedings in a court of justice—privileged, be it observed, because they are such reports,—this does not justify the unauthorized and unproved repetition as a narrative of circumstances of suspicion, or of evidence, which certainly were urged by the proper authority, as showing that he was guilty of murder."<sup>2</sup>

Even where it is for the public benefit—that is, for the benefit of a portion of the public—that certain facts should be made known, the privilege conferred by Exception 1 may be taken away, if the facts are disseminated to a circle of readers wider than those who can possibly be interested in the facts communicated. This would warrant a finding that the statement was not for the good of the public actually addressed.<sup>3</sup>

Where it is intended to rely on the truth of a libel as a defence to the charge, it is necessary to plead specially justifying it, so that the prosecutor may know what the case is that he has to meet, and he will be entitled to full particulars where the charge does not of itself supply them.<sup>4</sup> Where the prosecutor is examined as a witness, he should be distinctly cross-examined upon all the facts which it is intended to prove against him.<sup>5</sup>

§ 646. **Intention to injure.**—By s. 499 the person who defames another must be "intending to harm, or knowing,

<sup>1</sup> *Leyman v. Latimer*, 3 Ex. D. 352.

<sup>2</sup> (1894), 1 Q.B., p. 685. See also the remarks of Sir James Stephen, 2 Steph. Crim. L. 385.

<sup>3</sup> *Reg. v. Janardhan Damodhar*, 19 Bom. 703.

<sup>4</sup> *Speck v. Phillips*, 5 M. & W. 279.

<sup>5</sup> *Reg. v. Dhum Singh*, 6 All. 220.



or having reason to believe, that such imputation will harm the reputation" of the person defamed. It is probable that this clause throws no greater burthen upon the prosecution than arises under English law from the word "malicious," which is part of the definition of a libel. "In the English law of libel, malice is said to be the gist of action for defamation. And though it is true that by malice, as necessary to give a cause of action in respect of a defamatory statement, legal and not actual malice is meant, while by legal malice, as explained by Bayley, J., in *Bromage v. Prosser*,<sup>1</sup> is meant no more than the wrongful intention which the law always presumes as accompanying a wrongful act without any proof of malice, yet the presumption of law may be rebutted by the circumstances under which the defamatory matter has been uttered or published."<sup>2</sup> In a case where it was found as a fact that the defendants by their servant had published a libel, Lord Esher said: "If the matter stood there without more the law would infer malice, the meaning of which really is that it does not signify what the motive of the person publishing the libel was, or whether he intended it to have a libelious meaning or not."<sup>3</sup> The mode of rebutting the inference of malice is by disproving the state of things from which the law infers malice, either by showing that the statement is not a libel at all, or that it comes within one of the classes of cases to which no legal presumption of an intention to injure is attached. "The accused may be able to show that, though the matter is defamatory, it was published on a privileged occasion, or he may be able to avail himself of the statutory defence that the matter complained of was true, and that its publication was for the public benefit; and those classes of cases were meant to be excluded from the purview of the section by the use of the word 'maliciously.'"<sup>4</sup> Hence the question for the jury, in cases tried by a jury, is whether the statement complained of is a libel, and the correct mode of putting this question to them is that stated by Best, J., in *R. v. Burdett*.<sup>5</sup> "With respect to whether this was a libel, I told the jury that the question whether it was

<sup>1</sup> 4 B. & C., at p. 255.

<sup>2</sup> *Per* Cockburn, C.J., *Wason v. Walter*, L.R., 4 Q.B. 73, at p. 87.

<sup>3</sup> *Nevill v. Fine Arts Insurance Co.* (1895), 2 Q.B. 156, at p. 168.

<sup>4</sup> *Per* Lord Russell, C.J., on the construction of the Libel Act, 1843, 6 & 7 Vict., c. 96, s. 5; *Reg. v. Munslow* (1895), 1 Q.B. 758, at p. 761.

published with the intention alleged in the information was peculiarly for their consideration; but I added that this intention was to be collected from the paper itself, unless the import of the paper were explained by the mode of publication, or any other circumstances. I added that if it appeared that the contents of the paper were likely to excite sedition and disaffection, the defendant must be presumed to intend that which his act was likely to produce." When the fact of a libel is found according to these directions the case is over, unless the defendant sets up some special defence. "The judge ought not to leave to the jury whether the defendant intended by a libel to injure the plaintiff. Every man is presumed to intend the natural and ordinary consequences of his act. If the tendency of the publication was injurious to the plaintiff, the law will assume that the defendant, by publishing it, intended to produce the injury which it was calculated to effect."<sup>1</sup>

§ 647. It seems to me that there is nothing in the language of the Code which leads to any different conclusions. When a defendant says that he did not intend to damage the reputation of the prosecutor, what does he mean? Does he mean that he did not intend by his language to convey anything that would harm the character of the prosecutor; or that he was justified in saying what he did, but that his object was not to injure the complainant, but to discharge a duty; or, that in using language of a defamatory nature, he had no wish to hurt him, and did not suppose he would be hurt? It is obvious that in the first case what he really asserts, is, that a false construction has been put upon his words. *Primâ facie*, a man's words must be judged according to the meaning which is ordinarily put upon them. But in every country there are numerous terms of abuse which literally convey the imputation of a crime, but which, when used by one angry man to another, merely show that he wants to insult him, and are understood to mean nothing more. So the mere fact that defamatory words are used as a jest is in itself no defence, for, as Sergeant Hawkins says, "Jests of this kind are not to be endured, and the injury to the reputation of the party grieved is in no way lessened by the merriment of him who makes so light of it."<sup>2</sup> But it would be very material to show that the words were spoken

<sup>1</sup> *Per* Lord Tenterden, C.J., *Haire v. Wilson*, 9 B. & C. 643; *R. v. Harvey*, 2 B. & C. 267, *per* Holroyd, J.

<sup>2</sup> 1 Hawk. P.C. 546.

as a jest to persons who received them as a jest, for this would show that they never had a defamatory meaning. And in this respect there will be a great difference according as the words are spoken to a few, or to a large and mixed company, or according as they are written or spoken. Words used jestingly to a few friends will be understood as they were meant. The same words spoken in public will be taken up by half of the hearers as solemn earnest. Again, a man who speaks will be judged according to the effect produced on those to whom he speaks. He is not answerable for the effect produced on those to whom his words are repeated, unless he intended them to be repeated,<sup>1</sup> or addressed them to a person whose duty it was to repeat them.<sup>2</sup> A person who writes, addresses a wider audience, and is responsible for the acceptation in which his language will be received by the general public who read his words.<sup>3</sup> Possibly it might be a good defence to show that the defendant did not understand his own words, as, for instance, if he was using a language with which he was imperfectly acquainted. In all such cases the real defence is that the words used had not a defamatory meaning, and before there can be a conviction this defence must have been negatived by those upon whom the decision depends. The question of intention, as an independent line of defence, can in this point of view never arise.

The second line of defence is a perfectly good one. It amounts to saying that the case comes within one of the Exceptions to the general rule. When this is made out, an express intention to injure must be established by the Crown, and cannot be assumed (*post*, §§ 655—657).

The third line of defence is obviously untenable. It is not necessary to show that the defendant intended to hurt the man he maligns. It is sufficient under the Code to show that he knew, or had reason to believe, the imputation would do harm. This must be judged of by the nature of the act done, just as if the accused had stabbed the prosecutor with a knife. As Sir James Stephen says: "I don't think the rule in question is really a rule of law, further or otherwise than as it is a rule of common sense. The only possible way of discovering a man's intention is by looking at what he actually did, and by considering what must have

<sup>1</sup> *Parkes v. Prescott*, L.R., 4 Ex. 169.

<sup>2</sup> *Kendillon v. Maltby*, 1 C. & Mar. 493.

*r v. Clement*, 10 B. & C. 472; *ante*, § 278.



appeared to him at the time the natural consequence of his conduct.”<sup>1</sup>

§ 648. In order to bring within the terms of this section defamatory matter relating to a deceased person, it will be necessary to show, not only that the deceased might have complained of it, but also that it was written, or spoken, with the intention of insulting his surviving relations. I conceive that the words “intended to be hurtful,” etc, in Explanation 1, must be taken as meaning an express and primary intention, as distinguished from a legal and implied intention. It would be indictable to rake up the vices of a dead man for the sake of deliberately wounding his family; but no statements, however injurious, would be criminal, if made in the course of a *bonâ fide* history, or biography, the subject of which was dead.<sup>2</sup>

Where proceedings are taken for the defamation of a company or association, the matter complained of must be such as damages its reputation as such (Explanation 2). “The words complained of, in order to entitle a corporation or company to sue for libel or slander, must injuriously affect the corporation or company as distinct from the individuals who compose it. A corporation or company could not sue in respect of a charge of murder, or incest, or adultery, because it could not commit those crimes. The words complained of must attack the corporation or company in the method of conducting its affairs, must accuse it of fraud or mismanagement, or must attack its financial position.”<sup>3</sup> Where a collection of persons is defamed as such, there must be some definite body of persons, capable of being identified, and to the whole of whom it can be asserted that the defamatory matter applies. Otherwise no distinct issue could be presented for trial, and the defendant would not know what charge he had to meet. Where the defendants were indicted for publishing a false and scandalous libel against divers good subjects of the King to the jurors unknown, the indictment was held bad; as the jury could not say that the libel was false and scandalous, when they did not know the persons of whom it was spoken, nor could they say that any one was defamed

<sup>1</sup> 2 Steph. Crim. L. 111; see *per* Mahmood, J., *Dawan Singh v. Mahip Singh*, 10 All., pp. 451, 456.

<sup>2</sup> *R. v. Topham*, 4 T.R. 122, *per* Lord Kenyon.

<sup>3</sup> *Per* Lopes, L.J., *South Hetton Coal Co. v. North-Eastern News Association* (1894), 1 Q.B. 133, at p. 141.



by it.<sup>1</sup> On the other hand, an indictment was held good which defamed all the English bishops,<sup>2</sup> and all the clergy in Durham.<sup>3</sup> This was the ground of the decision in the *Nil Durpan* case, which caused much excitement in Calcutta many years ago. There, the pamphlet said, "I present the indigo planters' mirror to the indigo planters' hands. Now let every one of them, having observed his face, erase the freckle of the stain of selfishness from his forehead." Upon these words Sir B. Peacock is reported to have observed: "This certainly appears to me to represent to the indigo planters that if they look into this paper, they would see a true representation each of himself. Is not this a reflection on a certain class? Each of them was to look at it to find his own picture."

And, again, the Chief Justice said: "It is unnecessary to decide in this case which of the indigo planters was alluded to in this publication, because every one of them is asked to look into the mirror. Any one of them could say, 'I am one of the men alluded to, and I have thereby suffered damages which I wish to recover.' Then comes the question as to the class itself. Is this court to be inundated with suits from each individual member of that class? Has not the class itself a right to be protected in a criminal prosecution, to obviate the necessity of each party suing separately? I therefore think the class has been sufficiently described."<sup>4</sup>

Where a libel which is really aimed at an individual professes to refer to an undefined class of persons, evidence may be adduced to show who is the person referred to, and the libel will then be treated as against him alone.<sup>5</sup>

§ 649. *Exceptions.*—The cases in which an imputation, *primâ facie* defamatory, may be excusable are stated in the Exceptions which complete s. 499. Of these the first has been already discussed (*ante*, § 645). The remaining Exceptions are as follows:—

*Second Exception.*—It is not defamation to express in good faith any opinion whatever respecting the conduct of a public servant in the discharge of his public functions, or respecting his character, so far as his character appears in that conduct, and no farther.

<sup>1</sup> *R. v. Orme*, 1 *Ld. Raym.* 486.

<sup>2</sup> *R. v. Baxter*, 1 *Ld. Raym.* 879.

<sup>3</sup> *R. v. Williams*, 5 *B. & A.* 595.

<sup>4</sup> *Sup. Court, Calcutta*, July 24, 1861.

<sup>5</sup> *Sup. Court, Calcutta*, July 24, 1861.

*Third Exception.*—It is not defamation to express in good faith any opinion whatever respecting the conduct of any person touching any public question and respecting his character, so far as his character appears in that conduct, and no farther.

*Fourth Exception.*—It is not defamation to publish a substantially true report of the proceedings of a court of justice, or of the result of any such proceedings.

*Explanation.*—A justice of the peace, or other officer holding an inquiry in open court preliminary to a trial in a court of justice, is a court within the meaning of the above section.

*Fifth Exception.*—It is not defamation to express in good faith any opinion whatever respecting the merits of any case, civil or criminal, which has been decided by a court of justice, or respecting the conduct of any person as a party, witness, or agent, in any such case, or respecting the character of such person, so far as his character appears in that conduct, and no farther.

*Sixth Exception.*—It is not defamation to express in good faith any opinion respecting the merits of any performance which its author has submitted to the judgment of the public, or respecting the character of the author, so far as his character appears in such performance, and no farther.

*Explanation.*—A performance may be submitted to the judgment of the public expressly, or by acts on the part of the author which imply such submission to the judgment of the public.

*Seventh Exception.*—It is not defamation in a person having over another any authority, either conferred by law, or arising out of a lawful contract made with that other, to pass in good faith any censure on the conduct of that other in matters to which such lawful authority relates.

*Eighth Exception.*—It is not defamation to prefer in good faith an accusation against any person to any of those who have lawful authority over that person, with respect to the subject-matter of accusation.

*Ninth Exception.*—It is not defamation to make an imputation on the character of another, provided that the imputation be made in good faith for the protection of the interests of the person making it, or of any other person, or for the public good.

*Tenth Exception.*—It is not defamation to convey a caution in good faith to one person against another, provided that

such caution be intended for the good of the person to whom it is conveyed, or of some person in whom that person is interested, or for the public good.

Now it will be seen on an examination of these Exceptions, and of the illustrations annexed, that they all resolve themselves into two classes of cases: *First*, reports of, or comments upon the acts of public men or matters of public interest; this includes Exceptions 2, 3, 4, 5 and 6. *Second*, communications made to another in the discharge of a duty or interest in the person who makes it. The ninth Exception states a general principle, of which Exceptions 7, 8 and 10 are only particular instances. This second class includes the whole of what are known to the English law as communications made on a privileged occasion. It will be convenient to consider these first.

§ 650. **Privilege.**—The phrase “privileged communication” is a loose but convenient way of denoting a communication made on a privileged occasion. As Parke, B., said: “The term ‘privileged communication’ is not perhaps quite a correct expression. The proper meaning of a privileged communication is only this: that the occasion on which the communication was made rebuts the inference *primâ facie* arising from a statement prejudicial to the character of the plaintiff, and puts it on him to prove that there was malice in fact; that the defendant was actuated by personal spite or ill-will, independent of the occasion on which the communication was made.”<sup>1</sup> An occasion is privileged when the person who makes the communication has an interest, or a duty, legal, moral, or social, to make it to the person to whom he does make it, and the person who receives it has a corresponding duty or interest to hear it. Both these conditions must exist in order that the occasion may be privileged.<sup>2</sup> It is further essential that the statement complained of should be delivered in the honest belief that the party was performing his duty in making the communication.<sup>3</sup> The words “moral or social duty” have been defined by Lindley, L.J., as meaning “a duty recognized by English people of ordinary intelligence and moral principle,

<sup>1</sup> *Wright v. Woodgate*, 2 C.M. & R., p. 577.

<sup>2</sup> *Per* Lord Esher, *Pullman v. Hill* (1891), 1 Q.B. 524, p. 527; *per* Lord Campbell, C.J., *Harrison v. Bush*, 5 E. & B. 844; S.C. 25 L.J. Q.B. 25.

<sup>3</sup> *Per* Erle, C.J., *Whitely v. Adams*, 15 C.B. N.S. 392; S.C. 33 L.J.



but at the same time not a duty enforceable by legal proceedings, whether civil or criminal.”<sup>1</sup> Anything which a person may say or write in maintaining his own interests may also be said or written by his solicitor, or agent, or any other person to whom the protection of those interests is entrusted.<sup>2</sup> “When once a confidential relation is established between two persons with regard to an inquiry of a private nature, whatever takes place between them, relevant to the same subject, though at a time and place different from those at which the confidential relation began, may be entitled to protection as well as what passed at the original interview; and it is a question for the jury whether any farther conversation on the same subject, though apparently casual and voluntary, does not take place under the influence of the confidential relation already established between them, and is therefore entitled to the same protection.”<sup>3</sup>

§ 651. Probably the most instructive and exhaustive judgment on the subject of privilege is that of Willes, J., in *Henwood v. Harrison*.<sup>4</sup> The following instances of the application of the rule may be useful. An employer published a weekly circular addressed to his servants, in one issue of which the dismissal of a servant for misconduct, and the charges alleged against him were stated.<sup>5</sup> A *guru* addressed a letter to the villagers directing that a woman should be excommunicated for illicit intercourse with a man of a lower caste.<sup>6</sup> Both statements were held privileged. They are instances of Exception 7. So where petitions were presented by the creditors of a defendant in a suit suggesting that the claim was collusive;<sup>7</sup> or by villagers praying for retention of a village moonsiff, and asserting that a Zemindar who was trying to get him removed was actuated by improper motives.<sup>8</sup> These would come under Exception 8. Statements attributing unprofessional conduct to a

<sup>1</sup> *Stuart v. Bell* (1891), 2 Q.B., p. 350.

<sup>2</sup> *Baker v. Carrick* (1894), 1 Q.B. 838.

<sup>3</sup> *Per Pollock, C.B., Beatson v. Skene*, 5 H. & N. 838, at p. 855; S.C. 29 L.J. Ex. 430.

<sup>4</sup> L.R., 7 C.P. 606.

<sup>5</sup> *Hunt v. Great Northern Ry. Co.* (1891), 2 Q.B. 189; *Somervill v. Hawkins*, 10 C.B. 583; S.C. 20 L.J. C.P. 131.

<sup>6</sup> *Basumati Adhikarini v. Budram Kolita*, 22 Cal. 46.

<sup>7</sup> *Hinde v. Baudry*, 2 Mad. 13.

<sup>8</sup> *Venkata Narasimha v. Kotayya*, 12 Mad. 374.



medical man;<sup>1</sup> a letter by the defendant to the complainant's partner accusing the complainant of misappropriating money which ought to have been paid over to the defendant,<sup>2</sup> were held privileged under Exception 9. Under the same head would come the case of statements made in the course of judicial or quasi-judicial proceedings, which will be referred to hereafter (*post*, § 658); as, for instance, statements made before a panchayet which was investigating the imputations made upon the character of a villager.<sup>3</sup> On the same ground, where an insurance company intimated to the owner of a ship, that if the plaintiff continued in command they would refuse to insure it. The communication was protected, as it appeared that the company had been informed that he was of intemperate habits.<sup>4</sup>

A typical instance of cases protected by Exception 10 is that of characters given, or statements made in reference to the character of a servant or other person in a subordinate position, made by his former employer to one who is about to engage him, or by one who has taken him into his service to the person who recommended him. Such statements are privileged, whether asked for or volunteered; but when volunteered, this is a circumstance which may be taken into consideration with reference to a question of actual malice.<sup>5</sup>

§ 652. **Mutuality of Interest.**—Numerous cases have arisen out of the rule, that the person who receives a communication made by a person interested in any matter must himself have a corresponding interest. For instance, after an election the defeated candidate or his constituents have an interest in exposing any malpractices which have affected the election. But if they address their complaints to the newspapers, or to persons who have no authority to afford redress, their complaints, if untrue, will be defamatory, even if they *bonâ fide* suppose that the person addressed has authority in the matter.<sup>6</sup> But if the person addressed has an interest or a duty which would require him to examine into the truth of the charge, and to take steps to have the offender punished, a communication to him is privileged, though he is not the immediate authority through whom

<sup>1</sup> *Reg. v. McLeod*, 3 All. 342.

<sup>2</sup> *Reg. v. Slater*, 15 Bom. 351.

<sup>3</sup> *Re Goomdappa*, 7 Mad. 36.

<sup>4</sup> *Hamon v. Falle*, 4 App. Ca. 247.

<sup>5</sup> *Pattison v. Jones*, 8 B. & C. 578; *Child v. Affleck*, 9 B. & C. 403; *Fryer v. Kinnersley*, 33 L.J. C.P. 96; S.C. 15 C.B. N.S. 422.

<sup>6</sup> *Dickeson v. Hilliard*, L.R., 9 Ex. 79; *Hebditch v. McIlwaine* (1894),

redress is administered.<sup>1</sup> The same principle applies where, in the process of making a communication on a privileged occasion, the matter is divulged to persons who are strangers to the matter. A communication which would be protected if made by A to B in his own room, or by letter, would be defamatory if made in the presence of a general company, or by telegram or postcard.<sup>2</sup> It is not defamation for a man to communicate to his own wife statements affecting the character of a servant.<sup>3</sup> The decision was put on the ground that husband and wife are one person; but the more sensible reason appears to be, that the matter was one in which husband and wife are equally interested. So if a man is making, in presence of another person, a serious charge against him, he is justified in calling in a third person for his own protection to witness what takes place.<sup>4</sup> Where the defendant, a member of a board of guardians, at a meeting where the claims of one of the servants of the board came under consideration, grounded his opposition to the claim on a statement that the servant had been robbing public money, and the jury found that the words were spoken honestly, in the discharge of a public duty and without malice, it was held that the privilege attaching to the occasion was not affected by the presence of reporters, over whom the defendant had no control, and whom he could not remove.<sup>5</sup>

§ 653. The same question has arisen several times where in the ordinary course of business a letter passes under the eyes of different persons before it reaches its destination. In *Pullman v. Hill*<sup>6</sup> the defendants wrote a defamatory letter to the plaintiff, who was a member of a mercantile firm. The letter was *primâ facie* privileged, but it was dictated to a shorthand clerk, who then copied it out by a typewriter, from which it was press-copied by an office boy. On reaching the plaintiff's firm, it was opened in the usual course of business by one clerk, and shown to another, before it reached the principal for whom it was intended. These circumstances were held to deprive the letter of its protection. The Court held that neither the practice of

<sup>1</sup> *Harrison v. Bush*, 5 E. & B. 844; S.C. 25 L.J. Q.B. 25.

<sup>2</sup> *Williamson v. Freer*, L.R., 9 C.P. 393; *Reg. v. Sri Vidya Sankara*, 6 Mad. 381; *Thiagaraya v. Krishnaswami*, 15 Mad. 214.

<sup>3</sup> *Wennhak v. Morgan*, 20 Q.B.D. 635.

<sup>4</sup> *Taylor v. Hawkins*, 16 Q.B. 308; S.C. 20 L.J. Q.B. 313.

<sup>5</sup> *Pittard v. Oliver* (1891), 1 Q.B. 474. <sup>6</sup> (1891), 1 Q.B. 524.

business nor the necessities of the case made any difference. A person who writes of another what is *prima facie* libellous must at his own peril keep it from all persons to whom he is not privileged to show it. This case was distinguished in a later one, where a solicitor acting for his client wrote to the plaintiff a letter containing matter defamatory of her, and gave it to his clerk to copy. It was held that this did not destroy the privilege. Lopes, L.J., said: "The ground of the decision in *Pullman v. Hill* was, that it was not the usual course in a merchant's business to write letters containing defamatory statements, and to communicate them to a clerk in the office. I adhere to what I said in that case as to there being neither a duty nor an interest in a merchant to make such a communication as was there made. The case of a solicitor seems to me to be certainly different. The business of a solicitor's office could not be carried on unless it were communicated to the clerks in the office, and it is common knowledge that such is the usual course."<sup>1</sup> And so if it was necessary or proper to communicate matter to a large number of persons, and the occasion is such that if the matter is defamatory it would be privileged, it is allowable to have the matter printed for circulation, as being a necessary and reasonable mode of communicating it to those who have an interest in receiving it.<sup>2</sup> No doubt the same decision would be given if, on a privileged occasion, it became necessary to use the telegraph. As, for instance, if one police-officer had to direct another to arrest a supposed criminal who was about to leave the country.

654. **Good Faith.**—It will be remarked that in Exceptions 7, 8, 9, and 10, it is always stated that the imputation must be made in good faith. Taking the ordinary meaning of the words, this is nothing more than is required by the English law. "To entitle matter otherwise libellous to the protection which attaches to communications made in the fulfilment of a duty, *bona fides*, or, to use our own equivalent, honesty of purpose, is essential; and to this again two things are necessary: first, that the communication be made not only in the course of duty, that is, an occasion which would justify the making of it, but also from a sense of duty; secondly, that it be made with a

<sup>1</sup> *Bopsius v. Goblet Frères* (1894), 1 Q.B. 842.

<sup>2</sup> *Lawless v. Anglo-Egyptian Co.*, L.R., 4 Q.B. 262; *Andrews v. Nott-Bower* (1895), 1 Q.B. 888.



belief in its truth.”<sup>1</sup> So Lord Esher said: “Though what is said amounts to a slander, it is privileged, provided the person who utters it is acting *bonâ fide*, in the sense that he is using the privileged occasion for the proper purpose, and is not abusing it.”<sup>2</sup> Under the Penal Code, however, by s. 52, “nothing is said to be done or believed in ‘good faith,’ which is done or believed without due care and attention.” Then by s. 105 of the Indian Evidence Act, when a person is accused of any offence, the burthen of proving the existence of circumstances bringing the case within any special exception or proviso contained in any other part of the same Code, or in the law defining the offence, is upon him, and the Court shall presume the absence of such circumstances.” It is probable that in practice this definition of good faith will make little difference in the proof required in England and in India. Due care and attention in arriving at any belief is exactly the same thing as reasonable and probable cause, which it has been decided depends upon the whole circumstances of the case, and not upon the omission to make any specific inquiry which might have thrown light upon it.<sup>3</sup> It will, however, in many cases affect the procedure at the trial. According to English law, “It is for the defendant to prove that the occasion was privileged. If the defendant does so, the burthen of showing actual malice is cast upon the plaintiff; but unless the defendant does so, the plaintiff is not called upon to prove actual malice.”<sup>4</sup> The reason of this is, that in English law the essence of the offence is an intention to do a wrongful act. As soon as it appears that the occasion was privileged, the intention which the law infers from the defamatory nature of the statement is rebutted, and then an express intention must be made out (*ante*, § 650). But the privileged character of the occasion carries with it no presumption that the accused had made the statement, not only innocently, but after due care and attention. Apparently, therefore, till this has been shown the burthen of proof is not shifted from the defendant to the plaintiff. Accordingly, it has been held in India that in order to establish a *primâ facie* case in his favour, the defendant must show, not only that he believe

<sup>1</sup> *Per* Cockburn, C.J., *Dawkins v. Lord Paulet*, L.R., 5 Q.B., at p. 102; *per* Lord Coleridge, C.J., *Stevens v. Simpson*, 5 Ex. D. 53.

<sup>2</sup> *Royal Aquarium Society v. Parkinson* (1892), 1 Q.B., at p. 443.

<sup>3</sup> *Perryman v. Iister*, L.R., 4 H.L. 521.

<sup>4</sup> *Per* Lord Esher, *Hebditch v. McIlwaine* (1894), 2 Q.B., p. 58.



"It is true that the facts proved are consistent with the presence of malice, as well as with its absence. But this is not sufficient to entitle the jury to have the question of malice left to the jury; for the existence of malice is consistent with the evidence in all cases, except those in which something inconsistent with malice is shown in evidence; so that to say that in all cases where the evidence was consistent with malice it should be left to the jury, would be in effect to say that the jury might find malice in any case in which it was not disproved, which would be inconsistent with the admitted rule that in case of privileged communications malice must be proved, and therefore its absence presumed till such proof is given. It is certainly not necessary, in order to enable a plaintiff to have the question of malice submitted to the jury, that the evidence should be such as necessarily leads to the conclusion that malice existed, or that it should be inconsistent with the non-existence of malice; but it is necessary that the evidence should raise a probability of malice, and be more consistent with its existence than its non-existence."

§ 657. The use of extravagant and excessive language in conveying imputations which are themselves privileged, has been held to destroy the privilege. In one case this was so held, even though *bona fides* was found, and malice was negatived.<sup>1</sup> Possibly this would be so under the Code, if the words were held not to have been used with due care and attention, and therefore not in good faith (*ante*, § 654). Under English law, however, the better view seems to be that the only questions in such a case are, privilege or no privilege, malice or no malice. A man who is making a statement on a privileged occasion may incorporate with it statements against others, or even against the party concerned, which are wholly irrelevant to the privileged occasion, and as to which there is no privilege at all.<sup>2</sup> But when there is only an excessive statement having reference to the privileged occasion, and which therefore comes within it, then the only way in which the excess is material is as being evidence of malice. If the jury refuse to find malice, a finding that the language was excessive is not one from which malice can be inferred by law. If the law did infer so, it would often be inferring what is not true. A

<sup>1</sup> *Fryer v. Kinnersley*, 15 C.B. N.S. 422; S.C. 33 L.J. C.P. 96.

<sup>2</sup> *Warren v. Warren*, 1 C.M. & R. 250.

man may use excessive language and yet have no malice in his mind.<sup>1</sup>

Evidence of other libels upon the prosecutor, either before or after the libel complained of, is admissible for the purpose of proving actual malice. The more the evidence approaches to the proof of a systematic practice, the more convincing is it. The circumstance that the other libels are more or less frequent, or more or less remote from the time of the publication of that in question, merely affects the weight, not the admissibility of the evidence.<sup>2</sup>

§ 658. **Absolute Privilege.**—There are some cases in which the privilege is so absolute as to amount to a complete immunity, even where there is the most express malice. One of these cases is that of speeches made in Parliament or petitions addressed to Parliament.<sup>3</sup> This, however, appears to be part of the ancient law and custom of Parliament, which cannot be claimed by subordinate legislative assemblies, unless they have been expressly endowed with Parliamentary privileges.<sup>4</sup> Of course if any charge of defamation was made against a member of an Indian Legislative Assembly, or a person petitioning it, the case would come under Exception 9, and the presumption in favour of good faith would be overwhelming.

A more common instance is the immunity attaching to statements made in judicial proceedings. Neither party, witness, counsel, jury, nor judge, can be put to answer civilly or criminally for any words used orally or in writing, in the discharge of his respective functions.<sup>5</sup> The rule applies to every court of justice, as, for instance, to a County Court, or the court of a coroner;<sup>6</sup> and to proceedings held under a Bankruptcy Act on the examination of a debtor who was held in custody.<sup>7</sup> The same doctrine extends to cases where

<sup>1</sup> See *per* Lord Esher, *Nevill v. Fine Arts Insurance Co.* (1895), 2 Q.B., p. 170; *per* Lopes, L.J., *ibid.*, p. 172; *Cowles v. Potts*, 34 L.J. Q.B. 247, 250; *Spill v. Maule*, L.R. 4 Ex. 232.

<sup>2</sup> See the answers of the judges in *Barrett v. Long*, 3 H.L. Ca. 395; *Hemmings v. Gasson*, E.B. & E. 348; S.C. 27 L.J. Q.B. 352.

<sup>3</sup> 1 Com. Dig. 390; *per* Ld. Denman, *Stockdale v. Hansard*, 9 A. & E., p. 114.

<sup>4</sup> *Doyle v. Falconer*, L.R., 1 P.C. 328; *Speaker of Legislative Assembly of Victoria v. Glass*, L.R., 3 P.C. 560.

<sup>5</sup> *Per* Lord Mansfield, *R. v. Skinner*, Loffts, 55; *Hart v. Gumpach*, L.R., 4 P.C., p. 464.

<sup>6</sup> *Scott v. Stansfield*, L.R., 3 Ex. 220; *Thomas v. Chirton*, 2 B. & S. 475; S.C. 31 L.J. Q.B. 139.

<sup>7</sup> *Ryalls v. Leader*, L.R., 1 Ex. 296.

there is an authorized inquiry which, though not before a court of justice, is before a tribunal which has similar attributes, as a military court of inquiry,<sup>1</sup> or a Medical Council to which a statutory jurisdiction had been given to adjudicate on cases of professional misconduct.<sup>2</sup> It does not apply to proceedings of a municipal body, although they are deciding a question entrusted to them by statute, upon which they take evidence in an informal manner, and upon which they have to exercise a judicial discretion.<sup>3</sup>

The immunity of parties and witnesses applies to all statements which they make in that capacity during the course of the judicial proceeding,<sup>4</sup> whether given in open court, or by way of pleading or affidavit.<sup>5</sup> That of counsel extends to all persons who act in that capacity, whether barristers, pleaders, vakeels, or attornies.<sup>6</sup>

§ 659. This immunity is not based on any presumption, however violent, that the words spoken have been uttered in good faith. They rest upon the higher principle that it is essential to the full and fearless administration of justice, that those who are protecting their own interests, or discharging duties in a judicial proceeding, should be under no apprehension of ulterior proceedings from the opposite party. "It is not a desire to prevent actions from being brought in cases where they ought to be maintained that has led to the adoption of the present rule of law; but it is the fear that if the rule were otherwise, numerous actions would be brought against persons who were merely discharging their duty."<sup>7</sup> This rule still leaves ample protection against abuse. A judge who exceeds his duty is liable to censure and removal by the Executive. A false witness may be prosecuted for perjury. An advocate may be reprimanded and stopped in court by the presiding judge, and his conduct may be brought to the notice of the authority which controls his branch of the profession.<sup>8</sup> Accordingly, it is long since established that no proceedings for libel or slander can be brought against judge, party, or

<sup>1</sup> *Dawkins v. Lord Rokeby*, L.R., 7 H.L. 744.

<sup>2</sup> *Allbutt v. General Council of Medical Education*, 23 Q.B.D. 400.

<sup>3</sup> *Royal Aquarium Society v. Parkinson* (1892), 1 Q.B. 431, p. 442.

<sup>4</sup> As to the meaning of this phrase, see *ante*, §§ 325—327.

<sup>5</sup> *Henderson v. Broonshead*, 4 H. & N. 569; S.C. 28 L.J. Ex. 360.

<sup>6</sup> *Mackay v. Ford*, 5 H. & N. 792; 22 L.J. Ex. 404.

<sup>7</sup> *Per Fry, L.J., Munster v. Lamb*, 11 Q.B.D., p. 607.

<sup>8</sup> See Indian Evidence Act, I. of 1872, s. 150.



witness, in respect of words spoken in the course of a judicial proceeding, although they are uttered falsely and maliciously, and without reasonable and probable cause.<sup>1</sup> The same rule to its fullest extent was laid down as to counsel in *Munster v. Lamb*,<sup>2</sup> in which the whole law upon the subject was reviewed by the Court of Appeal. There Brett, M.R., said (p. 599): "For the purposes of my judgment, I shall assume that the words complained of were uttered by the solicitor maliciously, that is to say, not with the object of doing something useful towards the defence of his client. I shall assume that the words were uttered without any justification, or even excuse, and from the indirect motive of personal ill-will or anger towards the prosecutor, arising out of some previously existing cause; and I shall assume that the words were irrelevant to every issue of fact which was contested in the court where they were uttered; nevertheless, inasmuch as the words were uttered with reference to, and in the course of the judicial inquiry which was going on, no action will lie against the defendant, however improper his behaviour may have been."

§ 660. A privilege of so wide an extent must be strictly limited in the cases to which it applies. If a judge, whether sitting on the bench or not, hears and answers applications for advice by parties who have no cause pending over which he has jurisdiction, his remarks have nothing but the ordinary and limited privilege.<sup>3</sup> And this would apply to any case where the judge chooses to make observations, which have no bearing upon any judicial proceeding in which he is engaged. So the statements in a writ of summons have not the same immunity as would apply to a plaint or written statement.<sup>4</sup> The same principle was applied where a party, who was defended by counsel, chose to interfere during the examination of a witness, and make grossly defamatory remarks upon his character.<sup>5</sup> So the mere fact that a man

<sup>1</sup> As to judges, see *Scott v. Stansfield*, L.R., 3 Ex. 220; and per Brett, M.R., *Munster v. Lamb*, 11 Q.B.D., pp. 603, 608, overruling the dictum of Lord Denman in *Kendillon v. Maltby*, 1 Car. & M. 402; *Anderson v. Gorrie* (1895), 1 Q.B. 668; ante, § 129. As to witnesses, *Revis v. Smith*, 18 C.B. 126; S.C. 25 L.J. C.P. 195; *Henderson v. Broomhead*, 4 H. & N. 569; S.C. 28 L.J. Ex. 360; *Seaman v. Netherclift*, 1 C.P.D. 540; 2 C.P.D. 53.

<sup>2</sup> 11 Q.B.D. 588.

<sup>3</sup> *McGregor v. Thwaites*, 3 B. & C. 24; per Lord Campbell, C.J., *Lewis v. Levy*, 27 L.J. Q.B., p. 283; S.C. E. B. & E. 537.

<sup>4</sup> *Bank of British North America v. Strong*, 1 App. Ca. 307.

<sup>5</sup> *Hayes v. Christian*, 15 Mad. 414.



is standing in the witness-box does not protect statements which he might make, not as part of his evidence, nor in his character of witness, though if they are made in that character, they would not be deprived of immunity because they were irrelevant to the inquiry before the court.<sup>1</sup> Still less would there be any privilege where the witness had left the witness-box and finished his deposition.<sup>2</sup>

§ 661. The language of Exceptions 7 and 9 certainly does not import any such absolute immunity as is recognized by English law. Each of those Exceptions uses the term "good faith" as an element in the definition, and this is repeated in each of the illustrations annexed. Accordingly, in a case where a party to a criminal prosecution had used defamatory expressions against the opposite party with reference to the charge, and, as a part of the proceeding, the statements were held to be punishable, as not being made with due care and attention, and, therefore, not in good faith.<sup>3</sup> In a later case, where a defendant in a civil suit had filed a petition, asking that a witness might be recalled for further examination, and in the petition made defamatory statements against him, the Calcutta Court held that he was properly convicted under s. 500, and was not protected by Exception 9, as he had not acted in good faith. Phear, J., based his judgment upon the fact that the Penal Code alone should be looked to, and not the English cases, so far as they went beyond the provisions of s. 499.<sup>4</sup> On the other hand, it has been expressly laid down by the Judicial Committee, as regards civil suits in India, that, on grounds of public policy, "witnesses cannot be sued in a civil court for damages in respect of evidence given by them upon oath in a judicial proceeding. The ground of it is this: that it concerns the public and the administration of justice that witnesses, giving their evidence on oath in a court of justice, should not have before their eyes the fear of being harassed by suits for damages, but that the only penalty which they should incur, if they give evidence falsely, should be an indictment for perjury."<sup>5</sup> Of course the rule as regards witnesses is only an instance of

<sup>1</sup> *Per* Cockburn, C.J., and Bramwell, J.A., *Seaman v. Netherclift*, 2 C.P.D. 53.

<sup>2</sup> *Dawan Singh v. Mahip Singh*, 10 All., p. 455.

<sup>3</sup> *Reg. v. Pursoram Doss*, 2 Suth. Cr. 36; 3 Suth. Cr. 45; and see *per* Straight, J., *Abdul Hakim v. Tej Chander Makerji*, 3 All. 15.

<sup>4</sup> *Greene v. Delauney*, 14 Suth. Cr. 27.

<sup>5</sup> *Baboo Gunnessh Dutt Singh v. Mungneeram Chowdhry*, 11 B.L.R. 321, p. 328, followed *Bhikumber v. Becharam*, 15 Cal. 264.

the wider rule already discussed. Hence the English rule, to its full extent, has been followed by the Indian courts in suits against a judge,<sup>1</sup> party, or witness, for defamatory expressions used in the conduct of a suit.<sup>2</sup> It would be singular if the public policy which forbids such persons to be harassed by civil suits, would allow them to be harassed by prosecution.<sup>3</sup> Accordingly, where an application was made to the High Court of Madras, to call upon counsel to answer for language used by him while defending his client on a criminal charge, the application, so far as it came within the controlling powers conferred by s. 10 of the Letters Patent, was refused, and Collins, C.J., laid down the general principle, following *Munster v. Lamb*, "that an advocate in this country cannot be proceeded against, either civilly or criminally, for words uttered in his office of advocate."<sup>4</sup> The same principle was laid down by the same court where a witness had been convicted for defamation. Collins, C.J., referring to the English cases and the *dictum* in *Hinde v. Baudry*,<sup>5</sup> said: "The judges there said that the principle of public policy guards the statement of a witness against an action whether the statements were malicious or not. I think the same observations will apply if the criminal law is set in motion, and proceedings taken under s. 500 of the Indian Penal Code. If the petitioner gave false evidence, he can be punished for that offence."<sup>6</sup> The same ruling was followed where a man who had answered questions put to him by the police under s. 161 of the Criminal Procedure, was indicted for defamation.<sup>7</sup> These cases again were followed in Bombay, where witnesses had been convicted under s. 500 for statements contained in their depositions.<sup>8</sup>

In a subsequent case before the same court,<sup>9</sup> a pleader had been convicted of defamation for the very mild offence of calling the witnesses for the prosecution "loafers." The decision was reversed, as the High Court held that if the word was defamatory, there was no evidence of express

<sup>1</sup> *Raman Nayar v. Subramanya*, 17 Mad. 87.

<sup>2</sup> *Nathji Muleshvar v. Lalbhai*, 14 Bom. 97.

<sup>3</sup> See *per* Shephard, J., 11 Mad., p. 479.

<sup>4</sup> *Sullivan v. Norton*, 10 Mad. 28, p. 35.

<sup>5</sup> 2 Mad. 13.

<sup>6</sup> *Manjaya v. Sessa Setti*, 11 Mad. 479.

<sup>7</sup> *Reg. v. Govinda Pillai*, 16 Mad. 235.

<sup>8</sup> *Reg. v. Babaji*, 17 Bom. 127; *Reg. v. Balkrishna*, 17 Bom. 573.

<sup>9</sup> *Re Nagarji Trikamji*, 19 Bom. 340.

malice, which could not be presumed, and that in the absence of such proof, "a court, having due regard to public policy, would be extremely cautious before it deprived the advocate of the protection of Exception 9." As to the question under discussion, however, the Court seemed inclined to revert to the early decisions, which laid down that the English law could not be resorted to where it went beyond the terms of s. 499. They considered that judges were already protected by s. 77 of the Code, and that witnesses were protected by Exception 9, unless where they deliberately stated what they knew to be untrue. In such a case, they ought to be charged for giving false evidence, on the general principle laid down in *Reg. v. Gundry*,<sup>1</sup> that it is an invasion of the law to treat an aggravated as an ordinary offence, and thus introduce a different jurisdiction, or a lower scale of punishment.

On the whole, it cannot be said that the law as to parties or counsel is finally settled in India.<sup>2</sup>

§ 662. **Public Reports.**—It must not be supposed that, whenever one person is protected in making a defamatory statement, another person will be protected in publishing it. Whether he may do so or not will depend upon a completely different question, whether the persons whom he addresses, if limited in number, or the general public, if the matter appears in a public print, have such a right or interest to know the particular matter as will justify its being spread abroad. The strongest case of this sort is that of judicial proceedings. These are provided for by the fourth Exception: "It is not defamation to publish a substantially true report of the proceedings of a court of justice, or of the result of any such proceedings.

"*Explanation.*—A justice of the peace, or other officer holding an inquiry in open court, preliminary to a trial in a court of justice, is a court within the meaning of the above section."

As to such reports, Lord Halsbury, C., said: "The ground on which the privilege of accurately reporting what takes place in a court of justice is based is, that judicial proceedings are in this country public, and that the publication of

<sup>1</sup> 13 Bom. 502; see also *post*, § 698.

<sup>2</sup> The Privy Council in a recent case expressed a strong opinion that the direct words of an Indian Act ought not to be frittered away by reference to English cases laying down a different rule (*Norendra Nath v. Kamalbasini*, 23 I.A. 18).



what takes place there, even though matters defamatory to an individual may thereby obtain wider circulation than they otherwise would, is allowed, because such publication is merely enlarging the area of the court, and communicating to all that which all had the right to know." It follows that the report must fairly represent to the reader what he would have learnt for himself if he had been present. The report of the evidence on one side without the evidence on the other; of the examination of a witness without the cross-examination; of the summing-up or judgment, where such summing-up or judgment gave only a one-sided view of the case, would not be a fair report, and therefore would not be privileged.<sup>1</sup> It is not, however, necessary that the report should be complete, in the sense of being *verbatim*, if it is substantially fair and correct.<sup>2</sup>

It was held in a case in England that the privilege of publishing proceedings of courts of justice was not absolute, and that if it was shown that the report was sent to a paper for the mere purpose of injuring the person concerned, he would be liable to an action.<sup>3</sup> This, however, seems opposed to the language of Lord Halsbury, in a much later case above quoted. In Exception 4 nothing is said as to good faith, the only requisite being that the report should be substantially true. Such a report may, however, be punishable under s. 292, if it contains obscene matter.<sup>4</sup>

As to preliminary proceedings, see *Ryalls v. Leader*,<sup>5</sup> and *Kimber v. Press Association*.<sup>6</sup>

§ 663. Reports of debates in Parliament are privileged on the same principle as judicial proceedings, viz. on the public policy which entitles every one to know what is going on in Parliament.<sup>7</sup> But, again, the report must be a fair one. The report of a single speech which contains defamatory matter, without the others which might explain or contradict it, is not privileged, unless the speech is *bonâ fide* published by a member for the benefit of his constituents. In that case there is the mutuality of interest which creates privilege.<sup>8</sup> In

<sup>1</sup> *MacDougall v. Knight*, 14 App. Ca. 194, p. 200; *Flint v. Pike*, 4 B. & C. 473, p. 482.

<sup>2</sup> *Hoare v. Silverlock*, 9 C.B. 20.

<sup>3</sup> *Stevens v. Sampson*, 5 Ex. D. 53.

<sup>4</sup> *R. v. Carlisle*, 3 B. & A. 167; *Steele v. Brannan*, L.R., 7 C.P. 261.

<sup>5</sup> L.R., 1 Ex. 296.

<sup>6</sup> (1893), 1 Q.B. 65.

<sup>7</sup> *Wason v. Walter*, L.R., 4 Q.B. 73.

<sup>8</sup> *R. v. Creevy*, 1 M. & S. 273; *per Cockburn, C.J.*, L.R., 4 Q.B.D. 1



the great case of *Stockdale v. Hansard*,<sup>1</sup> which led to a conflict between the House of Commons and the courts of law, the Queen's Bench decided that the House of Commons had no privilege entitling them to publish papers of a defamatory nature, not being the statement of their own actual proceedings. Such publications are now directly authorized by 3 & 4 Vict., c. 9. The judgment of Lord Denman upon the law apart from statute, is always referred to as embodying the soundest principles of law.<sup>2</sup>

Reports of the proceedings of a quasi-judicial body, which is entrusted with the control of persons and matters, in which the public are interested, and in respect of which they are entitled to information, are also privileged.<sup>3</sup> So are Government proceedings relating to matters of national importance; as, for instance, where the Admiralty published a minute after the loss of the turret-ship *Captain*, to explain the circumstances under which it had been sent out, and the general policy of the Board as to the construction of the Navy, which contained a letter reflecting upon the plans of a naval architect.<sup>4</sup> Whether a report of the proceedings of a municipal body, in the course of which aspersions are cast upon an individual, would have any privilege on the ground of public interest, seems not quite settled.<sup>5</sup> No such privilege exists where an *ex parte* statement is made as to a person who is not present to defend himself, and as to which no proof is offered and no decision is given.<sup>6</sup> Even where the public body is directed by statute to publish an annual statement of its proceedings, this does not authorize a report by anticipation of the proceedings at a particular meeting, at which charges are made, which might in the authorized annual statement be rebutted or explained.<sup>7</sup> The charge delivered by a Bishop to his clergy is privileged as between himself and them, and if he is attacked in public in respect of anything supposed to have been said in such charge, he is justified in sending the charge to the newspapers in self-defence.<sup>8</sup>

<sup>1</sup> 9 A. & E. 1.

<sup>2</sup> See *per* Willes, J., in *Henwood v. Harrison*, L.R., 7 C.P., p. 625; *per* Cockburn, C.J., *Wason v. Walter*, L.R., 4 Q.B., p. 86.

<sup>3</sup> *Allbutt v. Council of Medical Education*, 24 Q.B.D. 400.

<sup>4</sup> *Henwood v. Harrison*, L.R., 7 C.P. 606.

<sup>5</sup> See *Davidson v. Duncan*, 7 E. & B. 229; S.C. 26 L.J. Q.B. 104; doubted in *Davis v. Duncan*, L.R., 9 C.P. 396.

<sup>6</sup> *Purcell v. Sowler*, 2 C.P.D. 215.

<sup>7</sup> *Popham v. Pickburn*, 7 H. & N. 891.

<sup>8</sup> *Laughton v. Bp. of Sodor and Man*, L.R., 4 P.C. 495.

It is probable that in India similar decisions would be given in all the above cases under Exceptions 9 and 10.

§ 664. **Fair Comment.**—In all the cases previously discussed the nature of the privilege consists in this: that statements of a defamatory nature, embodying assertions of fact which are not true, are yet protected by virtue of the occasion on which, and the purpose for which they were made. There is, however, a completely different class of cases which is provided for by the following clauses of the Code.

*Second Exception.*—It is not defamation to express in good faith any opinion whatever respecting the conduct of a public servant in the discharge of his public functions, or respecting his character, so far as his character appears in that conduct, and no farther.

*Third Exception.*—It is not defamation to express in good faith any opinion whatever respecting the conduct of any person touching any public question and respecting his character, so far as his character appears in that conduct, and no farther.

*Fifth Exception.*—It is not defamation to express in good faith any opinion whatever respecting the merits of any case, civil or criminal, which has been decided by a court of justice, or respecting the conduct of any person as a party, witness, or agent, in any such case, or respecting the character of such person, as far as his character appears in that conduct, and no farther.

*Sixth Exception.*—It is not defamation to express in good faith any opinion respecting the merits of any performance which its author has submitted to the judgment of the public, or respecting the character of the author, so far as his character appears in such performance, and no farther.

*Explanation.*—A performance may be submitted to the judgment of the public expressly, or by acts on the part of the author which imply such submission to the judgment of the public.

It will be seen that in all these cases what is protected is opinion not assertion, and that only in regard to persons or things which affect the public by their nature or their interest. They are all particular instances of the general principle of English law, that fair comment upon public men, or upon matters of public interest is not libellous. In the language of Parke, B: "There is a difference between publications relating to public and private individuals.

Every subject has a right to comment on those acts of public men which concern him as a subject of the realm, if he do not make his commentary a cloak for malice and slander; but any imputation of wicked or corrupt motives is unquestionably libellous.”<sup>1</sup> Cases which come within this rule are not privileged, in the sense of being libels which cannot be punished. They are not libels at all. They are acts done in the exercise of a right, given by our constitution though not by the constitution of other countries, and upon which, more than upon anything else, depends the reality of what we call liberty. “The defence in such a case is that the words are not defamatory, that fair and proper criticism is not libel. It is only, as was said by Bowen, L.J., in *Merivale v. Carson*,<sup>2</sup> when the writer goes beyond the limits of fair criticism that his criticism passes into the region of libel at all.”<sup>3</sup> When, therefore, such a defence is set up, it is necessary to show (1) that the matter was of public interest; (2) that the statements of fact were accurate; and (3) that the comment was fair.

§ 665. Matters are of public interest either by their own nature, or because the person criticized has chosen to make them so. Matters connected with the state of the nation, the government, the administration of justice, the management of municipalities, the character and conduct of public men are necessarily such. So is the sanitary condition of the cottages let by a Colliery Company to its workmen;<sup>4</sup> the professional behaviour of a medical practitioner;<sup>5</sup> the conduct and management of a church by its incumbent,<sup>6</sup> the acts and language of persons attending a public meeting for a public object.<sup>7</sup> The mode in which a purely private charity is managed is not a matter of public interest.<sup>8</sup>

The private life and opinions of any one are not matter of public interest, unless so far as they affect his fitness for the discharge of any public duties. Exceptions 2 and 3 appear to limit criticism of the character of a public servant

<sup>1</sup> *Parmiter v. Coupland*, 6 M. & W. 105.

<sup>2</sup> 20 Q.B.D., p. 283.

<sup>3</sup> *Per Lopes, L.J., South Hetton Coal Co. v. North-Eastern News Association* (1894), 1 Q.B., at p. 141.

<sup>4</sup> *South Hetton Coal Co. v. North-Eastern News Association* (1894), 1 Q.B. 133.

<sup>5</sup> *Allbutt v. Council of Medical Education*, 23 Q.B.D. 400.

<sup>6</sup> L.R., 1 Q.B. 699.

<sup>7</sup> *Davis v. Duncan*, L.R., 9 C.P. 396.

<sup>8</sup> *Gathercole v. Miall*, 15 M. & W. 319.



or public man to his conduct in such capacity. Cases in which it was for the public good to publish acts of private misconduct which showed his unfitness for his position, would be protected by Exception 1. A man may make his private life or opinions public property by writing a book about them, and he may make his management of his private business public property, by publishing advertisements or handbills about it.<sup>1</sup>

§ 666. It is essential to this defence that the alleged facts upon which the criticism rests should be accurate. The comment must not be based upon a perverted text. "There is no doubt that the public acts of a public man may lawfully be made the subjects of fair comment or criticism, not only by the Press but by all members of the public. But the distinction cannot be too clearly borne in mind, between comment or criticism and allegations of fact, such as that disgraceful acts have been committed or discreditable language used. It is one thing to comment upon or criticise, even with severity, the acknowledged or proved acts of a public man, and quite another to assert that he has been guilty of acts of misconduct."<sup>2</sup> Nor has a newspaper any greater licence in this respect than a private individual. In the case last cited, a newspaper editor had received a deputation, which came up London to complain of certain alleged offences committed by a public man, and, having heard their statements, published an article which assumed, falsely, that they were true. In *Campbell v. Spottiswoode*,<sup>3</sup> the *Saturday Review*, in criticising letters, in which the owner of a religious paper sought subscriptions for it, as a means of converting the Chinese, imputed to him that he had published a false subscription list. The jury found that this was untrue, but that the writer of the article did believe the imputations in it to be well founded. This was held to be no justification. Blackburn, J., pointed out that this was not a case of privilege in which such a defence was admissible. Crompton, J., said: "I have always in my experience heard it laid down that although you may attack a public person for anything he has done publicly, the moment you go beyond that and impute wickedness to him, then you come within the rule with regard to all who publish a libel, which is

<sup>1</sup> *Paris v. Levy*, 9 C.B. N.S. 342; S.C. 30 L.J. C.P. 11.

<sup>2</sup> *Per* Lord Herschel, C., *Davis v. Shepstone*, 11 App. Ca. 187, p. 190; *Purcell v. Sowler*, 2 C.P.D. 215.

<sup>3</sup> 3 B. & S. 769; 32 L.J. Q.B. 185.



that you must prove that the imputations are true." Nor is it any justification that the false statement had appeared in and been copied from another newspaper.<sup>1</sup>

§ 667. Lastly, the criticism must be fair. Probably no better explanation of what is fair criticism could be furnished than the summing up of Cockburn, C.J., in the case of *Wason v. Walter*,<sup>2</sup> which was held by the Court to be perfectly correct. "The jury were told that they must be satisfied that the article was an honest and fair comment on the facts. In other words, that, in the first place, they must be satisfied that the comments had been made with an honest belief in their justice; but this was not enough, inasmuch as such belief might originate in the blindness of party zeal, or in personal or political aversion. That a person taking upon himself publicly to criticize and condemn the conduct or motives of another, must bring to the task not only an honest sense of justice, but also a reasonable degree of judgment and moderation, so that the result may be what a jury shall deem, under the circumstances of the case, a fair and legitimate criticism on the conduct and motives of the party who is the object of the censure."<sup>3</sup> In an action against a paper which had published a criticism on a play, Bowen, L.J., said: "It must be assumed that a man is entitled to entertain any opinion he pleases, however wrong and exaggerated or violent it may be, and it must be left to the jury to say, whether the mode of expression exceeds the reasonable limits of fair criticism. In the case of literary criticism, it is not easy to conceive what would be outside that region, unless the writer went out of his way to make a personal attack on the character of the author he was criticizing. In such a case the writer would be going beyond the limits of criticism altogether, and therefore beyond the limits of fair criticism. If he imputes to the author that he has written something which he has not written, that would be a misdescription of the work. A jury would have the right to consider the latter beyond the limits of fair criticism."<sup>4</sup> So, it is not fair comment upon the acts of a public man to state truly facts

<sup>1</sup> *Re Howard*, 12 Bom. 167.

<sup>2</sup> L.R., 4 Q.B., p. 96.

<sup>3</sup> See also summing up of Bramwell, B., in *Kelly v. Sherlock*, L.R., 1 Q.B. 689, cited and approved in *Kelly v. Tinling*, L.R., 1 Q.B. 699, and per Lord Esher, *South Hetton Coal Co. v. North-Eastern News Association* (1894), 1 Q.B., p. 140.

<sup>4</sup> *Merivale v. Carson*, 20 Q.B.D. 275.

which suggest discreditable conduct, and knowingly to suppress other facts which show that the suggestion was unfounded.<sup>1</sup> It must also be remembered that in this, as in all other cases of alleged libel, the meaning to be put upon the criticism is not that which the author may have had in his mind, but the impression which would be produced upon the mind of an unprejudiced reader, who reads the article straight through, knowing nothing about the case beforehand.<sup>2</sup>

§ 668. Publication. — The last element in the law of defamation is that the imputation should be made or published. Whatever the difference may be between making and publishing, each act must have the quality of communicating the defamatory matter to some third person. So long as such matter is unknown to any one but the author of it, no imputation is made at all. So long as it is only made to the person defamed, it cannot harm his reputation, unless he himself chooses to divulge it, in which case the harm is his own act, not that of the defamer. It is probable that the words "make and publish" are only different phases of the idea which is conveyed in English law by the term "publication." A man makes an imputation when it is disseminated by the very act which brings it into existence, as when he utters it in the presence of others, or makes a sign, or chalks up a representation which conveys a defamatory idea. He publishes it when he gives currency to defamatory matter which had previously existed, as by repeating a conversation, or by posting a letter, or printing an article in a newspaper. In *Pullman v. Hill*,<sup>3</sup> Lord Esher said, with reference to written matter, "What is the meaning of 'publication'? The making known the defamatory matter, after it has been written, to some person other than the person of whom it is written. If the statement is sent straight to the person of whom it is written, there is no publication of it, for you cannot publish a libel of a man to himself.<sup>4</sup> If there was no publication, the question whether the occasion was privileged does not arise. If the writer of a letter locks it up in his own desk, and a thief comes and breaks open the desk, and takes away

<sup>1</sup> *Reg. v. Rakde*, 4 Bom. 298.

<sup>2</sup> *Per Lopes*, L.J. (1894), 1 Q.B., p. 143.

<sup>3</sup> (1891), 1 Q.B., p. 527.

<sup>4</sup> *Acc. Komul Chunder v. Nobin Chunder*, 10 Suth. 184; *Reg. v. Taki Husain*, 7 All. 205.

the libel and makes its contents known, I should say there would not be a publication. If the writer of a letter shows it to any person other than the person to whom it is written, he publishes it." In the case from which these remarks are taken, the publication consisted in the giving a letter to be copied, where the privilege attaching to the occasion did not authorize such a step.<sup>1</sup> Sending a libel to a man's wife is a sufficient publication.<sup>2</sup> Where several persons unite in an act of defamation, as where one states the libellous matter, another writes it down, a third carries it away, and a fourth prints it, each is guilty of the publication.<sup>3</sup> But this does not apply to one who is an innocent agent in carrying out part of the transaction; as, for instance, a porter who carries libellous handbills in ignorance of their contents;<sup>4</sup> or a mere newsvendor who does not know, and had no reason to know the contents of the paper;<sup>5</sup> or a compositor who sets up the type of a libel mechanically, and without any intelligent perception of its meaning.<sup>6</sup>

§ 669. Under English law a person who sells, in the ordinary way of his business, any defamatory publication is liable both civilly and criminally, even though he proves that he knew nothing of its nature, and supposed it to be of an innocent character. This was well illustrated in one of the political prosecutions of the last century. Cuthell was a bookseller, who only dealt in old and rare books, and who never dealt in political works. He had often published books of a learned theological nature for the Rev. Gilbert Wakefield, and finally published the production for which he was indicted, supposing it to be one of the same stamp. It turned out to be a flaming political pamphlet. For this he was prosecuted, and, according to the fashion of the time, the indictment charged him with every rebellious and wicked intention which the draftsman could imagine. The Attorney-General told the jury that if a man publishes a libel, his knowledge of its contents is only material in estimating his punishment, just as it would be in the case of a chemist who by mistake sold poison instead of medicine.

<sup>1</sup> *Ante*, § 653; *Heckford v. Galstin*, 2 Hyde, 274.

<sup>2</sup> *Wenman v. Ashe*, 13 C.B. 836; S.C. 22 L.J. C.P. 190.

<sup>3</sup> 5 Bac. Abr. 206; Penal Code, ss. 34, 37; *ante*, §§ 229—231; *Reg. v. Mancherji*, 10 Bom. 97; *ante*, § 281.

<sup>4</sup> *Day v. Bream*, 2 M. & Rob. 54.

<sup>5</sup> *Emmens v. Pottle*, 16 Q.B.D. 354.

<sup>6</sup> *Reg. v. Mertens*, so held by Stephen, J., 2 Steph. Crim. L. 362, n.



Erskine delivered an ingenious and elaborate argument in support of the proposition, that even if he had published negligently and inadvertently, he ought to be acquitted if he was found to have none of the intentions which were stated in the indictment. Lord Kenyon, C.J., in charging the jury, met all this with the simple remark, "God only knows the hearts of men, and we can collect their meaning only from what they do. These are fallible modes of arriving at knowledge; but we have no better, and we must pronounce men innocent or guilty according to this standard."<sup>1</sup> The ground of this rule appears to be, either that the law could be set at defiance if a person could disperse libels abroad with impunity, by concealing the import of them from an illiterate publisher;<sup>2</sup> or that a person who makes a profit out of his business is bound at his peril to conduct it in such a manner as not to be injurious to others (*ante*, §§ 15, 16, 280). The severity of the law was mitigated in England as regards newspapers and other periodical publications by allowing the defendants to prove, among other things, that the libel had been inserted without actual malice, and without gross negligence.<sup>3</sup> In a very recent case an action for libel was brought against the Trustees of the British Museum, because they had allowed a pamphlet containing a libel on the plaintiff to be lent in the ordinary manner to one of the public for perusal. The case was dismissed, on the ground that the defendants had only done what the statute under which they acted required them to do. It was admitted by the Court that a person who sold books across the counter, or who delivered them to be sold in the street, would be liable, even though ignorant of their contents; but it was said that no case had been cited in which a private person, who innocently lent a book out of his library, had been held liable as publishing a libel.<sup>4</sup>

Under the Penal Code a person is only liable for making or publishing an imputation when he does so "intending to harm, or knowing or having reason to believe" that such imputation will do harm. These words cannot mean less than the wilful intention to do a wrongful act (*ante*, § 646), or the connivance at, or tacit permission to publish libels of the sort complained of, which would amount to an authority

<sup>1</sup> *R. v. Cuthell*, 21 St. Tri. 641, pp. 655, 663, 674.

<sup>2</sup> 1 Hawk. P.C. 545.

<sup>3</sup> 6 & 7 Vict., c. 96, s. 2.

<sup>4</sup> *Martin v. Trustees of British Museum*, 10 Times L.R. 338.



to publish any particular libel.<sup>1</sup> Accordingly, in a charge against a newspaper editor, the Madras High Court held "that it would be a sufficient answer to the charge in this country, if the accused showed that he entrusted in good faith the temporary management of the newspaper to a competent person during his temporary absence, and that the libel was published without his authority, knowledge, or consent."<sup>2</sup> The law was laid down according to the strict English rule by Stuart, C.J., in Allahabad. The only authority referred to was an English text-book, and no notice was taken of the special terms of s. 499.<sup>3</sup>

§ 670. The place of publication is only material with regard to jurisdiction. Where a libel is posted in one district, and received and opened in another, the offence of publication takes place, and may be tried in the latter district.<sup>4</sup> In *Burdett's* case, the libel was written in Leicester, and was delivered unsealed by A to B in Middlesex, there being no evidence as to where or how A received it. The case was tried in Leicester, and it was held that it might be assumed that A received it in Leicester, and that whether it was delivered to him open or sealed, there was a publication in Leicester.<sup>5</sup> Where a libel is put into course of delivery in one district, and is actually delivered in another district, the case would come within ss. 179 or 182 of the Criminal Procedure Code and be triable in either district (see *post*, § 707).

Under Act XXV. of 1867, s. 5, the printer and publisher of a newspaper is required to make an official declaration that he is such. By s. 7 the production of an authenticated copy is sufficient evidence, unless the contrary is proved, as against the person whose name is subscribed to such declaration, that he is the printer or publisher, as the case may be, of every portion of every periodical work of a corresponding title. Such evidence throws upon the defendant the burthen of disproving the actual publication by himself, and leaves it open to him to show any circumstances which would negative the presumption of intent, which the law infers from such publication.<sup>6</sup>

<sup>1</sup> *Reg. v. Holbrook*, 4 Q.B.D. 442; *ante*, § 280.

<sup>2</sup> *Ramasami v. Lokanada*, 9 Mad. 387. See P.C. ss. 501, 502.

<sup>3</sup> *Reg. v. McLeod*, 3 A.L. 342, p. 345.

<sup>4</sup> *Reg. v. McLeod*, 3 All. 342.

<sup>5</sup> *R. v. Burdett*, 4 B. & A. 95.

<sup>6</sup> *Ramasami v. Lokanada*, 9 Mad. 387.

§ 671. **Province of Judge and Jury.**—Every charge of defamation contains assertions of fact and assumptions of law. It is the business of the jury to find whether the assertions are true, and of the judge to direct them as to whether the assumptions are sound. The practice in India is substantially the same as that in England since Fox's Libel Act, 32 Geo. III., c. 60; that is to say, the judge directs the jury as to the law, leaving them to find the facts, and their verdict ought to be such as the judge directs to be appropriate to the facts arrived at by them.<sup>1</sup> It is competent, however, to the jury to disregard the directions of the judge, and their verdict will still be good till it is set aside in the manner provided by law.<sup>2</sup> There are some cases, however, in which the law is so clear that it leaves no question for the jury, and then it is the duty of the judge absolutely to withdraw the case from their consideration, and to direct them what verdict they should find. This generally happens where the verdict ought to be one of acquittal. It is very important to distinguish the two classes of questions, as the right of appeal, whether the case has been tried by a jury or only by a judge, may depend largely upon whether the mistake complained of is one of law or of fact.

§ 672. Where there is no question of privilege, the only points for decision are, whether the accused published the statement ascribed to him with the intent necessary under the Code, and whether the statement is defamatory. The first point is purely a question of fact for the jury; the second is a mixed question of law and fact. It is for the judge to say whether the statement can be a libel; it is for the jury to say whether it is a libel. In *Capital and Counties Bank v. Henty*,<sup>3</sup> Lord Selborne, C., said: "In *Sturt v. Blagg*,<sup>4</sup> Wilde, C.J., said, 'It is the duty of the judge to say whether a publication is capable of the meaning ascribed to it by an innuendo; but when the judge is satisfied of that, it must be left to the jury to say whether the publication has the meaning so ascribed to it.' If the judge, taking into account the manner and the occasion of the publication, and all other facts which are properly in evidence, is

<sup>1</sup> Crim. P.C., ss. 297, 298, 299; *post*, § 768.

<sup>2</sup> *Post*, § 781. As to the English practice, see the summing up of Best, J., in *R. v. Burdett*, 4 B. & A., p. 120; and *per* Parke, B., *Parmiter v. Coupland*, 6 M. & W. 105.

<sup>3</sup> 7 App. Ca. 741.

<sup>4</sup> 10 Q.B. 899, at p. 908.

not satisfied that the words are capable of the meaning ascribed to them, then it is not his duty to leave the question raised by the innuendo to the jury." In the same case Lord Blackburn quotes from a judgment of Lord Mansfield, in *R. v. Shipley*,<sup>1</sup> as follows: "Every circumstance which tends to prove the meaning is every day given in evidence, and the jury are the only judges of the meaning," and then goes on to say: "If the words were reasonably capable of a meaning which in the opinion of the Court would be libellous on the plaintiffs personally, I think there can be no doubt that it ought to have been left to the jury to say whether the words bore that meaning."<sup>2</sup> It must be remembered that the dictionary sense of the words is not necessarily that which gives their meaning in the particular instance. That sense may be perfectly harmless and yet the words may be used so as to convey an offensive suggestion; or the sense may be in the highest degree defamatory, and yet the words as used may convey nothing beyond banter. It is for the jury to say what was meant, if that meaning can reasonably be affixed upon what was said.

§ 673. Where the defence is that the occasion was privileged, this in general admits that, except for the privilege, everything which would make out the charge has been established or is admitted. "The question whether the occasion is privileged, if the facts are not in dispute, is a question of law only, for the judge not for the jury. If there are questions of fact in dispute upon which this question depends, they must be left to the jury, but when the jury have found the facts, it is for the judge to say whether the occasion is privileged."<sup>3</sup> "Where privilege exists the burthen of proof of actual malice is cast upon the person who complains." "The jury in civil cases, equally as in criminal cases, are the proper tribunal to determine the question of libel or no libel. This was affirmed by the Declaratory Act of 1792, and has been often recognized. But it is not competent for the jury to find that upon a privileged occasion relevant remarks, made *bonâ fide* and without malice, are libellous. It would be abolishing the law of privileged discussion, and deserting the duty of the Court to decide upon this and every other question of law,

<sup>1</sup> 4 Doug. 164.

<sup>2</sup> Cited and followed in *Nevill v. Fine Arts Insurance Co.* (1895), 2 Q.B., p. 158.

<sup>3</sup> *Per* Lord Esher, *Hebditch v. McIlwaine* (1894), 2 Q.B., p. 58.



if we were to hand over the discussion of privilege or no privilege to the jury. In actions of libel, as in other cases where questions of fact, when they arise, are decided by the jury, it is for the Court first to decide whether there is any evidence upon which a rational verdict for the affirmant can be found.”<sup>1</sup> Where there is neither internal nor extrinsic evidence of malice or want of good faith which can reasonably be left to the jury, it is the duty of the judge to direct the jury, as a matter of law, that they should find for the defendant.<sup>2</sup>

The same rule exists where the defence is that the case is not a libel at all, but a fair comment upon a matter of public interest. Whether the matter commented on is one of public interest, is for the Court to decide. Whether the comment is fair and *bonâ fide* is essentially a question for the jury, provided there is any evidence upon which they can so find. Whether there is any evidence upon which such a conclusion can be arrived at is again a question for the Court, but if there is any such evidence, the decision as to the effect of such evidence is wholly for the jury.<sup>3</sup>

The further questions as to the effect of a misdirection by the judge, or an improper finding by the jury, will be discussed hereafter (§§ 768 and 781).

§ 674. Criminal Intimidation.—Chapter XXII. of the Code contains various provisions, of which the most important are ss. 503, 504, 508 and 509.

By s. 503, Whoever threatens another with any injury to his person, reputation, or property, or to the person or reputation of any one in whom that person is interested, with intent to cause alarm to that person, or to cause that person to do any act which he is not legally bound to do, or to omit to do any act which that person is legally entitled to do, as the means of avoiding the execution of such threat, commits criminal intimidation. *Explanation.*—A threat to injure the reputation of any deceased person in whom the person threatened is interested, is within this section.

The injury threatened by this section is substantially the same as that which is the essence of extortion (s. 383; *ante*,

<sup>1</sup> *Per Willes, J., Henwood v. Harrison*, L.R., 7 C.P., p. 626.

<sup>2</sup> *Nevill v. Fine Arts Insurance Co.* (1895), 2 Q.B. 156; see *per Lopes, L.J.*, 171.

<sup>3</sup> *South Hetton Coal Co. v. North-Eastern News Association* (1894), 1 Q.B., *per Lopes, L.J.*, pp. 141, 143; *Kelly v. Tinling*, L.R., 1 Q.B., *per Cockburn, C.J.*, p. 701.



§ 503). The objects aimed at are, however, wider under s. 503 than under s. 383, and the offence is complete by the attempt, although nothing is effected by it.

The word "injury" is defined by s. 44 as denoting any harm *illegally* caused to another. Therefore, it will not be an offence to threaten another with an action, or indictment, which might lawfully be preferred against him.<sup>1</sup> Though if he obtained money by the threat, it would apparently be punishable under ss. 388 and 213.

A question which has arisen under this section, is as to the criminality of pronouncing a *bonâ fide* sentence of excommunication or exclusion from caste. There can be no criminality where such a sentence is legal; that is to say, where it is justified by the usages of the class or sect to which the complainant has voluntarily submitted, though it may not be one which the civil law would enforce.

"There can be no criminal intimidation where the injury of which complaint is made is the hardship arising from a conventional punishment, which a spiritual superior, acting in the exercise of his authority as regulated by the custom of the caste, is competent to inflict. The custom implies a common submission to his authority, and, assuming that there was an error of judgment on his part, the error cannot be accepted as sufficient for turning a case of conventional discipline into a criminal offence. It is not denied that the pronouncing a man out of caste is a conventional mode of vindicating caste usages. Nor does it appear that the respondent acted in this case officiously, or before instructions were solicited from him by his orthodox disciples."<sup>2</sup>

Where the legality of the sentence is itself a matter of dispute, it is one which must be decided by the court. Where, however, such illegality is at the same time under the consideration of a competent civil court, it is advisable that the criminal court should suspend its proceedings until the vital question has been decided in a manner which will bind both parties.<sup>3</sup>

§ 675. Very important questions have arisen in England under a statute similar to s. 503, which is part of the legislation defining the rights of workmen against their employers. By 38 and 39 Vict., c. 86, s. 7, "Every person

<sup>1</sup> *Reg. v. Moroba*, 8 Bom. H.C. C.C. 101.

<sup>2</sup> *Per Muttusawmy Aiyar, J., Reg. v. Sri Vidya Sankara*, 6 Mad. 381, 388.

<sup>3</sup> *In re Paul DeCruz*, 8 Mad. 140.

who, with a view to compel any other person to abstain from doing, or to do, any act which such other person has a legal right to do or abstain from doing, wrongfully and without legal authority, uses violence to or intimidates such other person or his wife or children, or injures his property" is liable to conviction and punishment. In one case under this section,<sup>1</sup> Gibson and Lawson were both working under the same shipbuilding company. Gibson was a member of the National Society, Lawson of the Amalgamated Society. The members of the latter society resolved that they would strike unless Gibson left his society and joined theirs. He refused, and his employers dismissed him, to avoid a strike. The magistrate refused to convict Lawson, who was the mouthpiece of the Amalgamated Society, and the medium through which it communicated with Gibson. On appeal the Queen's Bench held that he was right. No violence had been used to him, and the question was, whether the conduct of the defendants amounted to intimidation. The Court held, upon a review of the Trades Union Legislation, that it did not. Strikes were legal by that legislation, and they held that the word "intimidate" must imply at least a threat of personal violence.

In another case,<sup>2</sup> the pressure was applied directly to the employer. The defendants' union threatened him that unless he ceased to employ non-union men they would call out the union men, which they accordingly did, and the latter all struck work. No violence was threatened, and no immoderate language was used, but the men quietly ceased work, causing of course great inconvenience and loss to their employer. In this case the magistrate convicted, and the High Court reversed his conviction, for the reasons already given. They considered that the harm which incidentally followed to the employer from the conduct of his workmen, which was itself legal, and which was intended to protect their own supposed interests, was not illegal, and that the combination of many to do that which was lawful in each, could not be considered criminal under the law of conspiracy.

Should similar cases arise in India, it seems to me that they would not be punishable under s. 503. The question would then turn upon the word "injury." Injury, as already observed, is defined by s. 44 of the Code as harm illegally

<sup>1</sup> *Gibson v. Lawson* (1891), 2 Q.B. 545.

<sup>2</sup> *Curran v. Treleavan*, *ibid.*

caused. Where no criminal breach of contract was concerned, the threat to leave work in a body would be as lawful in India as in England, and the harm resulting from carrying out the threat would not be illegal harm. If, however, under the particular circumstances, leaving work as threatened would be unlawful, so that harm resulting from it would be illegal harm, and therefore injury, a farther question would arise, whether the loss to trade and general inconvenience and expense resulting from a strike, would be injury to property within the meaning of s. 503. It might be argued, and probably with success, that property in that section means some specific, tangible property. If a man threatens illegally to dismiss his servant or agent, can he be said to threaten injury to his property?

§ 676. It is essential to the commission of an offence under the second clause of this section, that the person to whom the threat is addressed should be interested in the person to whom the injury is threatened. A petition was sent to a Revenue Commissioner containing a threat that a certain forest officer would be killed if he were not removed. It was found as a fact that the Commissioner had neither official nor personal interest in the forest officer. This being so, it was held that no conviction under ss. 503 or 507 could be maintained.<sup>1</sup> The gist of the offence consists in the pressure put upon the mind of the person upon whom the threat is intended to operate. But if the person threatened is indifferent to him, he will obviously be indifferent to the threat.

The threat need not be directly addressed to the party whom it is intended to influence. It is sufficient, although it is addressed to others, if it is intended to reach the ears of the party threatened, and is used with any of the intentions stated in the section.<sup>2</sup>

§ 677. A special form of intimidation is rendered punishable by s. 508, where a person induces or attempts to induce another to believe that he, or some person in whom he is interested, will become, or will be rendered by some act of the offender, an object of Divine displeasure, if he does, or does not do, some act which he is legally entitled to do or to omit doing. The words "by some act of the offender" must be read with the verb "become" as well as with the

<sup>1</sup> *Reg. v. Mangesh Jivaji*, 11 Bom. 376.

<sup>2</sup> Rulings of Mad. H.C. of 1865 on s. 503; S.C. Weir, 132 [226]; *Chunder v. Gour Chunder*, 15 Cal. 671.



verb "be rendered." A man who persuades another that by his prayers or incantations he will be able to cause the deity to withhold rain or to send a destructive storm, would come within the section. He would not be punishable if he merely induced the other to believe that by refusing to comply with his wishes he was doing a sinful act, which would bring him within the ordinary course of Divine punishment.

The mere pronouncing of a sentence of excommunication, or exclusion from caste, does not come within this section. "A person who is excommunicated does not become an object of Divine displeasure by the act of the priest who pronounces the sentence. The proceeding purports to be a declaration that the person on whom it is passed has, by his own act, committed sin and rendered himself an object of Divine displeasure, and it also purports to be a sentence of interdiction from the means of grace administered by the clergy until on repentance and submission those privileges are restored."<sup>1</sup> "The accused did not threaten the complainant that he would do any act to render him an object of Divine displeasure. As the spiritual superior of the complainant, he passed on him a temporal sentence, which is customarily pronounced on those who violate caste usages, but offered to restore him to caste privileges on submission. To constitute the offence punishable under this section, it must be shown that the respondent threatened to do a future act, or illegally to omit to do an act, and that by such threat he induced or attempted to induce the person threatened to believe that by that act or illegal omission the person threatened, or some one in whom the person threatened was interested, would become an object of Divine displeasure."<sup>2</sup>

§ 678. Criminal Provocation.—Section 504 renders punishable any person who intentionally insults, and thereby gives provocation to any person, intending or knowing it to be likely that such provocation will cause him to break the public peace, or to commit any other offence. The essence of this offence consists in the effect which it is likely to produce upon the person to whom the provocation is addressed, not upon any other person who may be present or who may come to know it.

It is no answer to a charge under this section that the person insulted was in such a state of terror as to feel no

<sup>1</sup> *Per* Turner, C.J., *in re Paul DeCruz*, 8 Mad., p. 145.

<sup>2</sup> *Per* Turner, C.J., *Reg. v. Sri Vidya Sankara*, 6 Mad., p. 394.



disposition to break the peace, provided the provocation was such as would naturally have that result.<sup>1</sup> What would be the effect if the insults were addressed to a clergyman, or to a lady, who would not be likely to break the peace? If it was probable that such person would get some one else to take an illegal revenge on their behalf, the requirements of the section would be satisfied.

§ 679. **Insult to Female Modesty.**—By s. 509, whoever, intending to insult the modesty of any woman, utters any word, makes any sound or gesture, or exhibits any object, intending that such word or sound shall be heard, or that such gesture or object shall be seen by such woman, or intrudes upon the privacy of such woman, shall be punished with simple imprisonment for a term which may extend to one year, or with fine, or with both.

This section assumes the modesty of the woman and an intention to insult it; therefore no offence will have been committed where the woman is of a profession, or character, which negatives the existence of scrupulousness. Nor, I conceive, would there be any offence, even though the woman were virtuous, if, under the circumstances of the case, the man *bonâ fide* and reasonably believed that his advances would be well received and would lead to ulterior results. For in such a case his intention would not be to insult, but to solicit or excite. It is obvious, too, that each case must be judged of according to the degree of intimacy and the rank in life of the parties. That which would be an insult to the modesty of the lady might be none in the case of her ayah.

What is an "intrusion upon the privacy of a woman?" In the case of a Muhammedan, or a Hindu female of rank, probably any chamber in which she is may be considered a place of privacy. With the European this would not be so, unless in rooms to which males have no implied right of admission. But where the only overt act consists in such an intrusion, how is the intention to insult her modesty to be evidenced, or may it be assumed? I fancy it may be assumed where the intrusion is so unlawful and takes place under such circumstances that no other intention is fairly conceivable; as, for instance, if a man were to gain admission to a lady's sleeping apartment under circumstances which negatived an intention to steal. In other cases the intention would have to be proved by independent evidence as, for instance, his conduct while there.

<sup>1</sup> *Reg. v. Jogaya*, 10 Mad. 353.

## CHAPTER XV.

## ATTEMPTS TO COMMIT OFFENCES.

680. PRIOR to the completion of a crime three stages may be passed through. *First*, an intention to commit the crime may be conceived. *Secondly*, preparation may be made for its committal. *Thirdly*, an attempt may be made to commit it. Of these three stages the mere forming of the intention is not punishable under the Penal Code. Nor is the preparation for an offence indictable. "Between the preparation for the attempt and the attempt itself there is a wide difference. The preparation consists in devising or arranging the means or measures necessary for the commission of the offence; the attempt is the direct movement towards the commission after the preparations are made. To illustrate: a party may purchase and load a gun, with the declared intention to shoot his neighbour; but until some movement is made to use the weapon upon the person of his intended victim there is only preparation and not an attempt." Accordingly, in the case which gave rise to the above remarks, it was held, that declarations of an intent to contract an incestuous marriage, followed by elopement for the avowed purpose and sending for a magistrate to perform the ceremony, did not amount to an attempt to contract the marriage. That there could be no attempt until the parties stood before the magistrate about to begin the ceremony.<sup>1</sup> And so it was held in Allahabad, that the publishing of banns was not an attempt to commit bigamy.<sup>2</sup> And in Madras, that a woman could not be convicted of attempting to commit suicide on proof that she ran towards a well saying she would fall into it, but was caught before she reached it.<sup>3</sup>

<sup>1</sup> *People v. Murray*, cited 1 Bishop, § 686, n. 3.

<sup>2</sup> *Reg. v. Peterson*, 1 All. 316.

<sup>3</sup> *Reg. v. Ramakka*, 8 Mad. 5.

§ 681. The real difficulty arises in determining where a given act, or set of acts, passes from preparation into an indictable attempt. In America the rule has been laid down, "that the attempt can only be manifested by acts which would end in the consummation of the offence, but for the intervention of circumstances independent of the will of the party." Sir James Stephen, in his Digest of Criminal Law, art. 49, defines an attempt to commit a crime, as "an act done with intent to commit that crime, and forming part of a series of acts which would constitute its actual commission if it were not interrupted. The point at which such a series of acts begins cannot be defined, but depends upon the circumstances of each particular case." Section 511 of the Code offers no definition of an attempt beyond the statement which renders punishable "whoever attempts to commit an offence punishable by this Code with transportation or imprisonment, or to cause such an offence to be committed." It seems to me, however, that little assistance can be obtained from American or English definitions in deciding questions upon s. 511. English lawyers and the authors of the Code appear to look upon attempts to commit crime from a different point of view. The former treat an attempt as a definite fact, and consider whether that fact is in its nature criminal. The latter treat an attempt as a continuous proceeding, and go on to determine when that proceeding assumes a criminal character. "Whoever attempts to commit an offence punishable by this Code with transportation or imprisonment, or to cause such an attempt to be committed, *and in such attempt does any act towards the commission of the offence,*" shall be punished, etc. Apparently an attempt is not necessarily criminal. It becomes so when the attempt reaches a point at which an act is done towards the commission of the offence. This is evidently the point to which attention should be directed. A man is not punished for an attempt which, in the language of the Code, seems to mean nothing more than trying to commit a crime; but when he has done something definite in pursuance of his design he is punished, not for what he has done, but with regard to what he would have done if he had succeeded. The question then is in every instance, at what stage on the way to a completed offence does a person do an act towards the commission of it?

§ 682. In many cases there is no difficulty. For instance, where a man does an act which would immediately result.



in the commission of a crime, but for the interposition of some external agency; as where the accused pointed and tried to pull the trigger of a revolver, which was wrested from his hand;<sup>1</sup> or where a man, with the intention of stealing in a shop, broke through the roof, but was disturbed before he could enter the shop.<sup>2</sup> Another equally clear case is, where the accused has done everything in his power to effect the criminal purpose, but has been frustrated by some unforeseen physical difficulty; as where a man puts his hand into the owner's pocket, and finds it empty;<sup>3</sup> or writes a letter inciting to crime, which was received by the person to whom it was addressed, but handed over unread to another.<sup>4</sup> In a recent case in England a question was raised, whether a person could be convicted of attempting to do that which, by a presumption of law, the Court was bound to hold that he could not do; as, for instance, where a boy under fourteen was charged with rape. Those very experienced judges, Hawkins and Cave, JJ., declined to entertain the doubt.<sup>5</sup> A very similar question arises, and is equally settled against the accused, where the entire offence has been committed as far as the prisoner was concerned, but, from some collateral circumstance unknown to him, is incomplete as an offence at law; as where a person steals property, or obtains it by cheating, the owner consenting to the offence in order to detect the prisoner, not being influenced by the false statement.<sup>6</sup>

§ 683. Where the commission of an offence requires the performance of a series of acts, and the person commences this series with the view to carry it out to its completion, it appears to me that he has, in the language of s. 511, done an act towards the commission of the offence, in the attempt to commit the offence. By a series of acts, I mean those acts which are the direct and immediate means of effecting the criminal design, as distinguished from remote or preliminary proceedings, such as purchasing false jewels for sale as real, inquiring into the place where a

<sup>1</sup> *Reg. v. Duckworth* (1892), 2 Q.B. 83.

<sup>2</sup> *Reg. v. Bain*, L. & C. 129; S.C. 31 L.J. M.C. 88.

<sup>3</sup> Section 511, illus. (a), (b). The contrary decisions in England have now been overruled (*Reg. v. Brown*, 24 Q.B.D. 357).

<sup>4</sup> *Reg. v. Ransford*, 13 Cox, 9.

<sup>5</sup> *Reg. v. Williams* (1893), 1 Q.B. 320.

<sup>6</sup> *Reg. v. Roebuck*, D. & B. 205; S.C. 25 L.J. M.C. 101; *Reg. v. Hensler*, 11 Cox, 570; see, too, *Reg. v. Khandu*, 15 Bom. 194; *ante*, §§ 491, 550.



soucar keeps his money, and the like. Where the servant of a contractor who was sent to deliver meat put a false weight into the scale, with the intention of appropriating the difference, but was detected in the act, it was held that he was rightly convicted of an attempt to steal. Erle, C.J., said: "It is said, however, that the evidence here does not show any such proximate overt act as is sufficient to support the conviction for an attempt to steal the meat. In my opinion there are several overt acts, which brought the attempt close to completion. These were the preparation of the false weight, the placing it in the scale, and the keeping back the surplus meat. It is almost the same as if the prisoner had been sent with two articles, and had delivered one of them as if it had been two. To complete the crime of larceny there only needed one thing—the beginning to move away with the property."

Blackburn, J., said: "I am of the same opinion. There is, no doubt, a difference between the preparation antecedent to an offence and the actual attempt. But if the actual transaction has commenced, which would have ended in the crime if not interrupted, there is clearly an attempt to commit the crime. Then, applying that principle to this case, it is clear that the transaction which would have ended in the crime of larceny, had commenced here."<sup>1</sup> So, where the accused was found in the act of digging behind the house of the prosecutor, and, when arrested, had in his possession a quantity of salt, and it was alleged that he was intending to put the salt into the hole, in order to lay a charge against the prosecutor under the salt laws, the Court held that if the intent was made out, he would have been guilty of an attempt to fabricate false evidence.<sup>2</sup> In another case, the defendant, a money-lender, who had been offended by one Chatur Singh, threatened he would make him pay Rs. 50. Subsequently the defendant sent one of his own debtors to buy a stamp, with instructions that he should represent himself to be Chatur Singh, and give the address of Chatur Singh and the other usual particulars, which were endorsed on the stamp. The Court found that the defendant had purchased the stamp for the purpose of using it as evidence in a judicial proceeding against Chatur Singh. The theory was that some document binding the

<sup>1</sup> *Reg. v. ...*

*v. Eaglesesman*, Leigh and Cave, 140, 145; 8.C. 31 L.J. M.C. 89;

*Reg. v. ...*, Dears. 515; 8.C. 24 L.J. M.C. 158.

*da*, 4 N.W.P. 133.

latter would have been written upon it. The High Court held that, as soon as a stamp purporting to be sold to Chattr Singh had been purchased, an act had been done towards the commission of the offence of fabricating false evidence, which was properly charged as an attempt.<sup>1</sup> In the case of *Government of Bengal v. Umesh Chunder*,<sup>2</sup> it appeared that the defendant wrote to the Currency Office in Calcutta, enclosing the halves of two currency notes, stating that the other halves were lost, and inquiring what steps should be taken for the recovery of the value of the notes. The Currency officers were aware that the amount of the notes had already been paid to the holder of the other halves, and did not intend, under any circumstances, to pay the new applicant. They sent him, however, the usual form of claim to be filled up. He filled it up, signed it, and sent it in. Upon these facts, the fraudulent character of the proceeding being made out, it was held that the first letter of application was merely a preparation, but that the filling in and forwarding the official form was an attempt to cheat, and that it was not the less so because the Currency Office was quite determined not to be cheated.

§ 684. In a case in Bengal it appeared that incendiarism had on several occasions occurred in a village, produced by a ball of rags with a piece of burning charcoal in it. The prisoner was found in possession of a ball of that description containing burning charcoal, concealed in his dress. At the time he was seized he was engaged in a dispute with the other villagers, who charged the previous acts as having been done by his caste, and who were proceeding to drag him to the police. The ball dropped out while they were hustling him about. Glover, J., thought that it must be assumed "that a person going about at night, provided with an apparatus specially fitted for committing mischief by fire, intends to commit that mischief, and that he has already begun to move towards the execution of his purpose, and that is sufficient to constitute an attempt." Mitter, J., was of an opposite opinion. He said: "In order to support a conviction for attempting to commit an offence of the nature described in s. 511, it is not only necessary that the prisoner should have done an overt act 'towards the commission of the offence,' but that the act itself (that is, the overt act) should have been done 'in the attempt' to commit

<sup>1</sup> *Reg. v. Mula*, 2 All. 105.

<sup>2</sup> 16 Cal. 310.

it (that is, the offence.)”<sup>1</sup> It certainly seems to me that Mr. Justice Mitter was right. The prisoner probably intended to commit arson, and had prepared to commit it, but I cannot see that he had attempted to commit it. It is quite possible that the discussion among the villagers, showing that their suspicions were aroused against himself and his caste, would have induced him to give up his design and never make any attempt. In the following case, the Allahabad High Court decided in favour of the prisoner. There a practice existed in the town of Muthura, that octroi duty imposed on goods passing out of the town should be refunded by the following process. The goods about to be exported were taken to the central office, where a representation of their contents, as being non-dutiable, was made. If the office accepted this representation, a refund certificate was granted, which was endorsed by the outpost clerk when passing the goods, and on taking the certificate so endorsed to the central office, the duty paid to the outpost clerk would be returned. The defendant took three kuppas, or skins, to the central office, and made a statement as to one which would have entitled him to a certificate. The clerk examined the contents, and found the statement was untrue, and thereupon handed over the offender to the police. He was convicted of an attempt to cheat. The conviction was reversed by Brodhurst, J., on the ground that the certificate alone would not have entitled him to money, or have caused damage or loss to any one, and that before doing any of the further acts necessary for this purpose, he might have changed his mind and proceeded no further.<sup>2</sup> The former ground for decision is opposed to the ruling of the same court in *Reg. v. Soshi Bhushan*,<sup>3</sup> that a certificate is property within the meaning of s. 463, which is substantially the same as s. 417. On the second ground, the decision appears to be equally questionable. The defendant was certainly intending to cheat. The first of the series of steps necessary for that purpose was to obtain a certificate, which could only be obtained by means of a false statement, which he made. If he had got his certificate he might undoubtedly have done nothing further, in which case he would not have actually carried out his design. But was he attempting to cheat at the time he made his statement to the central office, and was this statement “an act done towards the

<sup>1</sup> *Reg. v. Doyal*, 3 B.L.R. A. Cr. 55.

<sup>2</sup> *Reg. v. Dhundi*, 8 All. 304.

<sup>3</sup> 17 All., p. 217.



commission of the offence"? If so, he had completed the offence under s. 511, and it was immaterial that he might never have completed one under s. 417.

§ 685. This case was cited with apparent approval in a later case, when the same court acted upon the principles just suggested. The facts are not very clearly stated, but it would appear that one Asad Ali had obtained administration to the estate of his brother Husain Ali Khan, and had by some process caused a Government promissory note, No. 9764, which was really the property of one Muhammed Husain Ali Khan, to be entered in the letters of administration as part of the estate of the deceased. The note seems to have been in the possession of the Comptroller-General, and McCrea, the defendant, joined Asad Ali in an attempt to induce that official to deliver it to him, or to Asad Ali, as representing Husain Ali Khan. Many letters were written by McCrea to the Comptroller-General, which were not relied on; but the judge in charging the jury directed their attention "notably to the acts committed by the prisoner in making use of the letters of administration granted to Asad Ali Khan, and in the preparation of a so-called copy of the lost note, and its production before the city magistrate in October, 1891." The scheme failed, and McCrea was convicted of an attempt to cheat, and the conviction was upheld on appeal. Both judges expressed their opinion that the offence, punishable under s. 511, extended to a much wider range of cases than would be deemed punishable as offences under English law.<sup>1</sup> Blair, J., said: "It seems to me that that section uses the word 'attempt' in a very large sense; it seems to imply that such an attempt may be made up of a series of acts, and that any one of those acts done towards the commission of the offence, that is conducive to the commission, is itself punishable, and though the Act does not use the words, it can mean nothing but punishable as an attempt. It does not say that the last act which would form the final part of an attempt in the larger sense is the only act punishable under the section. It says expressly that whosoever in such attempt, obviously using the word in the larger sense, does any act, etc., shall be punishable. The term 'any act' excludes the notion that the *final* act, short of actual commission, is alone punishable, and the notion that any

<sup>1</sup> Following Sir C. Turner in *Reg. v. Ramsarun*, 4 N.W.P. 46; *post*, § 686.



of the other acts would be without the range of this section is probably derived from the rulings in the English cases cited by Mr. Reid.”<sup>1</sup>

§ 686. Several cases have been decided in India as to the point of time at which an inchoate forgery becomes an attempt. In one case the accused, “intending to procure the preparation of a forged document, had a copy prepared, procured a stamp paper on which the document was to be written, and applied to a witness to furnish him with a Telegu date corresponding to an English date; it may be presumed for insertion in the document he intended to get written.” The Court cited with approval the ruling in *People v. Murray* (*ante*, § 680), and said, “Neither can the prisoner be convicted of an attempt to commit forgery, inasmuch as although he had an intention and made the preparation to commit, he had not proceeded so far as to do an act towards the commission of the offence.”<sup>2</sup> This case was clear enough, but a further element was added in an Allahabad decision, which is frequently cited.<sup>3</sup> There the prisoner, intending to forge a document professing to be executed by one Chotak, had engaged a writer to accompany him to a place where he said Chotak would be found, and had also got one Chetoo to purchase a stamped paper for a bond, and to represent himself as Chotak, whereby the stamp vendor endorsed the stamp with a statement that it had been sold to Chotak. The prisoner was convicted of an attempt to commit forgery. On appeal, Turner, J., said: “I do not see that in procuring the attendance of a writer, in purchasing the stamped paper, in causing Chetoo to represent himself to the stamp vendor as Chotak, and in procuring the endorsement, the appellant had gone beyond the stage of preparation, and therefore I hold the conviction must be quashed. If a word of the instrument which he intended to forge had been written, I should have held the conviction right.” In *Reg. v. Mula* cited, § 683, Turner, J., who decided both cases, distinguished the former from the latter as follows: “The endorsement of the stamp vendor forms no part of the document which it may be assumed

<sup>1</sup> *Re Petition of R. McCrea*, 15 All. 173, pp. 178, 181. An application to the Privy Council to allow an appeal against this decision was refused on general grounds. The Judicial Committee expressed no opinion as to the soundness of the decision (*Ex parte McCrea*, 20 I.A. 90; S.C. 15 All. 810).

<sup>2</sup> *Reg. v. Padala Venkatasami*, 3 Mad. 4.

<sup>3</sup> *Reg. v. Ramsarun*, 4 N.W.P. 46.

it was the intention of the person who procured the endorsement to make on the face of the stamp paper. The offence of forgery (*i.e.* in *Ramsarun's* case) had, therefore, not proceeded beyond the stage of preparation, but in the case now before the Court there had been an actual fabrication; something had been done." . . . "I do not say that in the case cited (*i.e.* *Ramsarun's* case) the accused should have been discharged. Had the point been taken, the Court might have held the accused guilty of the offence of which the petitioner had been convicted." The argument which Turner, J., foreshadowed as one which might have been successful in procuring the conviction of Ramsarun was obviously this: that as soon as the stamp was handed over to Chetoo, a fraudulent document had actually come into existence by the official endorsement which it bore that it had been sold to Chotak, and that this was not merely a preparation for a forgery, like buying a blank stamp, in the market, but was the first step in the series of acts by which the intended forgery would have been carried out.

§ 687. In a later Calcutta case,<sup>1</sup> it appeared that the prisoner had given orders to the Burdwan Press to print one hundred receipt forms, similar to those formerly used by the Bengal Coal Company; that he corrected one proof of those forms, and was suggesting further corrections in a second proof, in order to assimilate the form to that at present used by the Company, when he was arrested. The report does not state whether the form purported to be issued by the Bengal Coal Company for coals supplied by it, but it is consistent with the judgment that it did. A conviction for attempting to commit forgery was set aside. Garth, C.J., said: "I have already said that, in my opinion, the printed form was not in itself a false document, and that it would not have become a false document, or part of a document, according to the definition in s. 464, until the seal or signature of the Bengal Coal Company had been forged upon it, so as to make it appear that such seal or signature was that of the Bengal Coal Company. The prisoner, therefore, would not be guilty of the offence of forgery until the printed form had thus been converted into a false document; and for the same reason I think that he would not be guilty of an attempt to commit forgery until he had done some act towards making one of the forms a false document. If, for instance, he had been caught in

<sup>1</sup> *Reg. v. Riasat Ali*, 7 Cal. 352.

the act of writing the name of the Company upon the printed form, and had only completed a single letter of the name, I think that he would have been guilty of the offence charged, because, to use the words of Lord Blackburn,<sup>1</sup> "the actual transaction would have commenced, which would have ended in the crime of forgery, if not interrupted." But as it was, all that he did consisted in mere preparation for the commission of the crime."

According to this decision, if Ramsaran, in the case cited above, had written out the whole of the document, with genuine signatures of a writer and witnesses, he would have committed no offence till he had begun to forge the name of Chotak. Both these decisions were disapproved by the Court in *McCrea's* case, cited above. In exactly such a case, where a stamp had been purchased in the name of one Kehri, whose name was endorsed upon it by the vendor, and where the commencement of a bond in his name had been written, the Allahabad High Court considered that everything necessary to make out an attempt had been done.<sup>2</sup>

§ 688. From the foregoing remarks it will appear, that to constitute an attempt, there must be an intention to commit a particular crime, a commencement of the commission, and an act done towards the commission. Sometimes the act done may be innocent, except for the intention; as, for instance, putting money into a man's pocket, in order to charge him with theft.<sup>3</sup> Sometimes it may be criminal; as, for instance, an attempt to rob, commenced by an assault. But in either case, if the act is to be aggravated by the particular intent assigned, that intent must be proved, as being the essence of the offence, and though it may be presumed from the surrounding circumstances, it cannot be assumed. For instance, if a man is found in a house at midnight, it might, under one set of circumstances, be the fair presumption that he came to steal; under another set, that he came to commit adultery; under a third set of circumstances, no presumption of any criminal intent might arise. Where a particular intent is charged, as constituting an attempt to commit a specific crime, it is not necessary that there should be any evidence of the intent besides the circumstances connected with the abortive act itself. But unless those circumstances, coupled with the other evidence (if any), establish, not only some criminal

<sup>1</sup> In *Reg. v. Cheeseman*, cited *ante*, § 683.

*v. Kalyan Singh*, 16 All. 409.

<sup>3</sup> 1 Bishop, § 685.



intent, but the particular criminal intent which has been charged, the prisoner must be acquitted.

Hence, also, the particular intention must last until such an act has been done, as would, by its union with the intention, constitute a criminal attempt. But as soon as this stage has been reached, the criminal attempt is complete. Should the party then abandon the prosecution of the offence, from fear, fatigue, repentance, or any other cause, he will still be punishable for the attempt. For instance, if a man goes to a place armed, intending to commit murder, but when he is there does not find his enemy, or, having found him, shrinks from attacking him, this would not be an attempt.<sup>1</sup> So, if he went to a house with implements of housebreaking, intending to commit burglary, but on reaching the door, heard cries of distress, and broke in to rescue the sufferer, this would neither be housebreaking nor an attempt at it. But if a thief, having entered a house in order to steal, finds a dying man inside and then gives up his criminal object, and remains in the house merely to assist him, he would still be indictable for an attempt to steal in a dwelling-house.<sup>2</sup> And it has been so ruled in America, where, in cases of attempt to commit rape, the prisoner had voluntarily desisted before consummating his object.<sup>3</sup>

§ 689. An attempt to do an act which, if accomplished, would not be an offence under the Penal Code, cannot be an offence under s. 511.<sup>4</sup>

Where a prisoner has been indicted for committing any offence, the jury may find him not guilty of committing, but guilty of attempting to commit the offence under this section.<sup>5</sup>

An attempt to commit an offence punishable with whipping is not so punishable.<sup>6</sup> Nor can a person who is convicted of an attempt to commit an offence under Chapter XII. or XVII. be subjected to extra punishment under s. 75 in consequence of a previous conviction under those chapters. This only applies to cases where both convictions have been punishable under those chapters.<sup>7</sup>

<sup>1</sup> *Reg. v. McPherson*, 1 D. & B. 201.

<sup>2</sup> 1 Bishop, §§ 366, 664, 692.

<sup>4</sup> *Reg. v. Mangesh Jivaji*, 11 Bom. 376.

<sup>3</sup> *Ibid.*, §. 664, n. 5.

<sup>5</sup> *Crim. P.C.*, s. 238.

<sup>6</sup> *Calcutta H.C. Crim. Letter*, 425 of 1864; *Reg. v. Yella*, 8 Bom. H.C. C.C. 37.

<sup>7</sup> *Reg. v. Moonesawmy*, per Bittleston, J., 1st Mad. Sess., 1865; *Empress v. Nana Rahim*, 5 Bom. 140; *Empress v. Ram Dayal*, 8 All. 778.



## CHAPTER XVI.

## PLEADING.

- I. Form of Charge, § 690—692.
- II. Alteration and Amendment, §§ 693—698.
- III. Joinder of Charges, §§ 699—702.
- IV. Joinder of Defendants, §§ 703, 704.
- V. Pleas:
  - 1. Want of Jurisdiction, §§ 705—728.
  - 2. Previous Acquittal or Conviction, §§ 729—734.

**§ 690. Form of Charge.**—Chapter XIX. of the Criminal Procedure Code contains the following provisions :—

221. Every charge under this Code shall state the offence with which the accused is charged.

If the law which creates the offence gives it any specific name, the offence may be described in the charge by that name only.

If the law which created the offence does not give it any specific name, so much of the definition of the offence must be stated as to give the accused notice of the matter with which he is charged.

The law and section of the law against which the offence is said to have been committed shall be mentioned in the charge.

The fact that the charge is made is equivalent to a statement that every legal condition required by law to constitute the offence charged was fulfilled in the particular case.

In the Presidency towns the charge shall be written in English; elsewhere it shall be written either in English or in the language of the court.

If the accused has been previously convicted of any offence, and it is intended to prove such previous conviction for the purpose of affecting the punishment which the Court is competent to award, the fact, date, and place of the previous conviction shall be stated in the charge. If such

statement is omitted, the Court may add it at any time before sentence is passed.

222. The charge shall contain such particulars as to the time and place of the alleged offence, and the person (if any) and the thing (if any) in respect of which it was committed, as are reasonably sufficient to give the accused notice of the matter with which he is charged.

223. When the nature of the case is such that the particulars mentioned in ss. 221 and 222 do not give sufficient notice to the accused person of the matter with which he is charged, the charge shall also contain such particulars of the manner in which the alleged offence was committed as will be sufficient for that purpose.

224. In every charge words used in describing an offence shall be deemed to have been used in the sense attached to them respectively by the law under which such offence is punishable.

The application of these sections is further pointed out by the illustrations. Section 221, illus. (a) and (b), shows that the allegation that a person has committed a particular offence implicitly negatives his coming within any of the provisos or general Exceptions which would excuse or modify it. Further, the Evidence Act, I. of 1872, s. 105, provides that "when a person is accused of any offence, the burden of proving the existence of circumstances bringing the case within any of the general Exceptions in the Indian Penal Code, or within any special Exception or proviso contained in any other part of the same Code, or in any law defining the offence, is on him, and the Court shall presume the absence of such circumstances."<sup>1</sup>

§ 691. Where a person is charged with any aggravated form of a particular offence, whether the aggravating matter is contained in a separate section, or in a distinct clause of the general section, the charge should allege that he has done the particular thing which constitutes the aggravation of the offence, so as specially to call his attention to the fact which, if proved, will subject him to special punishment.<sup>2</sup> On the same principle, where an offence has no specific name, and can only be described by its definition, every part of

<sup>1</sup> *Re Shibo Prosad Pandah*, 4 Cal. 124; *Reg. v. Dhum Singh*, 6 All. 220.

<sup>2</sup> As to s. 75, *Reg. v. Dorasami*, 9 Mad. 284; s. 221, 5 Suth. Cr. Letter 6; s. 388, 5 Suth. Cr. Letter 4; s. 392, 1 Suth. Cr. Letter 11; s. 467, *Reg. v. Gungaram*, 6 Bom. H.C. C.C. 43.

the definition which indicates a separate ingredient in the offence should be recited in the charge.<sup>1</sup> So also sufficient particulars of the mode in which an offence is committed must be stated to show the accused what the case is which he has to meet. It is not necessary to tell a person who is charged with murdering AB, whether he cut off his head or blew his brains out. It is necessary to tell a man who is accused of giving false evidence, where he gave it and what he said which is asserted to be false.<sup>2</sup>

§ 692. The mode of proceeding where a previous conviction is charged with a view to s. 75 of the Penal Code, is laid down in the Criminal Procedure Code, s. 310.

(a) The part of the charge stating the previous conviction shall not be read out in court, nor shall the accused be asked whether he has been previously convicted as alleged in the charge, unless and until he has either pleaded guilty to, or been convicted of, the subsequent offence.

(b) If he pleads guilty to, or is convicted of, the subsequent offence, he shall then be asked whether he has been previously convicted, as alleged in the charge.

(c) If he answers that he has been so previously convicted, the judge may proceed to pass sentence on him accordingly; but if he denies that he has been so previously convicted, or refuses to, or does not, answer such question, the jury or the Court and the assessors (as the case may be) shall then inquire concerning such previous conviction, and in such case (where the trial is by jury) it shall not be necessary to swear the jurors again.

Notwithstanding anything in this section, evidence of the previous conviction may be given at the trial for the subsequent offence, if the fact of the previous conviction is relevant under the provisions of the Indian Evidence Act, 1872 (Act IV. of 1891, s. 9).

Except in the last-named case, the fact of the previous conviction must be found as a fact by the jury, or, if there is none by the Court, before sentence is passed, and therefore it cannot be added to the charge after sentence is passed. A mere verbal statement in court that the prisoner had been

<sup>1</sup> See, as to s. 149, 4 Suth. Cr. Letter 10; 5 Suth. Cr. Letter 1; s. 211, 2 Suth. Cr. Letter 2; s. 239, 5 Suth. Cr. Letter 7; Crim. P.C., s. 221, illus. (d).

<sup>2</sup> Crim. P.C., s. 223, and illustrations. As to s. 193, *Reg. v. Jamurma*, 7 N.W.P. 137; *Reg. v. Maharaj Misser*, 7 B.L.R. Appx. 66; s. 248, 2 Suth. Cr. Letter 11; s. 342, 5 Suth. Cr. Letter 7.

previously convicted, followed by an admission on his part that the fact was so, is not sufficient.<sup>1</sup>

Forms of charges are given in the Crim. P.C., Sched. V. To prevent any failure of justice from non-compliance with those forms, or with the above provisions, it is further provided by the Crim. P.C., s. 225, that "No error in stating either the offence or the particulars required to be stated in the charge, and no omission to state the offence or those particulars, shall be regarded at any stage of the case as material, unless the accused was misled by such error or omission." It is for the Court to consider whether the accused was misled.<sup>2</sup>

§ 693. **Alteration and Amendment of Charge.**—By the Crim P.C., s. 226, when any person is committed for trial without a charge, or with an imperfect or erroneous charge, the Court, or, in the case of the High Court, the clerk of the Crown, may frame a charge, as the case may be, having regard to the rules contained in this Code as to the form of charges.

227. Any court may alter any charge at any time before judgment is pronounced, or, in the case of trials before the Court of Sessions or High Court, before the verdict of the jury is returned or the opinions of the assessors are expressed.

Every such alteration shall be read and explained to the accused.

228. If the charge framed or alteration made under ss. 226 or 227 is such that proceeding immediately with the trial is not likely, in the opinion of the Court, to prejudice the accused in his defence or the prosecutor in the conduct of the case, the Court may, in its discretion, after such charge or alteration has been framed or made, proceed with the trial as if the new or altered charge had been with the original charge.

229. If the new or altered charge is such that proceeding immediately with the trial is likely, in the opinion of the Court, to prejudice the accused or the prosecutor as aforesaid, the Court may either direct a new trial or adjourn the trial for such period as may be necessary.

230. If the offence stated in the new or altered charge is

<sup>1</sup> *Reg. v. Rajcoomar Bose*, 19 Suth. Cr. 41; *Reg. v. Esan Chander Dey*, 21 Suth. Cr. 40; *Reg. v. Sheik Jakir*, 22 Suth. Cr. 39.

<sup>2</sup> See the illustrations to s. 225; and *Reg. v. Rakhma*, 10 Bom. H.C. C.C. 373.



one for the prosecution of which previous sanction is necessary, the case shall not be proceeded with until such sanction is obtained, unless sanction has already been obtained for a prosecution on the same facts as those on which the new or altered charge is founded.

231. Whenever a charge is altered by the Court after the commencement of the trial, the prosecutor and the accused shall be allowed to recall or re-summon, and examine with reference to such alteration, any witness who may have been examined.

232. If any Appellate Court, or the High Court in the exercise of its powers of revision or of its powers under Chapter XXVII., is of opinion that any person convicted of an offence was misled in his defence by the absence of a charge or by an error in the charge, it shall direct a new trial to be had upon a charge framed in whatever manner it thinks fit.

If the Court is of opinion that the facts of the case are such that no valid charge could be preferred against the accused in respect of the facts proved, it shall quash the conviction.

§ 694. The object of these sections is to secure that justice shall be done between the Crown and the prisoner in regard to the facts proved against him before the committing magistrate, and in respect of which he has been committed to take his trial. Justice would be frustrated if it was necessary to try him upon a charge which did not apply completely, or at all, to the offence which the facts alleged against him would establish, or if charges were omitted which might turn out upon the trial to be more properly borne out by the evidence than those upon which he had been committed. None of these sections, however, allows of trying a prisoner for an offence which is not only distinct from that made out against him by the magistrate, but which could not be proved by the evidence taken before him. The following case arose in Madras: a murder occurred, and one Chiruthayi was committed for trial under s. 201, for assisting in burying the body; and the appellant under s. 202, for not giving information of the murder. At the trial the appellant pleaded guilty; but the judge, influenced by facts which had come to his knowledge in the murder case, added a fresh charge against him under ss. 109 and 201, and then, under protest from the appellant, required him to plead to it. He then tendered a pardon to Chiruthayi,

and, upon her evidence, convicted the appellant. The High Court set aside the conviction. They pointed out that, except in the case of certain offences committed before it, or under its own cognizance,<sup>1</sup> a court of session cannot take cognizance of any offence unless the accused person has been committed by a magistrate. The court can draw up a charge for any offence which it considers proved by the evidence taken before the committing magistrate, but it cannot draw up a charge for an offence for which, upon that evidence, the prisoner could not have been committed, and then call fresh evidence to support the new charge, and convict upon it. The result of such a proceeding would be to dispense with a committal, and to unite the two stages into one. They held that the action of the judge in adding the charge was *ultra vires*, and was not a mere error of procedure, but an improper assumption of jurisdiction.<sup>2</sup>

§ 695. The words "committed for trial without a charge," in s. 226, are not confined to cases where a prisoner has been committed without any charge being drawn up; they also apply to cases in which there is no charge of such an offence as the sessions judge, or the clerk of the Crown, may think the prisoner ought to be tried for on the evidence against him.<sup>3</sup> Where the prisoner is likely to be prejudiced by a new charge being brought against him, the proper time to take the objection would be when he is called upon to plead to the charge. Section 227 refers to cases where, after the plea has been recorded, circumstances arise which induce the Court to alter the charge during the course of the trial. 'This will generally happen when some variance arises between the evidence and the charge, or where circumstances of aggravation are proved, which may render it expedient to charge an offence of a particular character as being punishable under a different section of the Code. It will be observed that s. 227 only speaks of altering a charge, and says nothing about adding one.\* Whether a new charge can be added after the trial has commenced is a point on which there is a conflict of decisions. In 1871 a prisoner had been committed to the court of session on a charge under s. 477. In the course of the trial the judge added another charge

<sup>1</sup> Crim. P.C. of 1872, ss. 435, 472, 474; Crim. P.C. of 1882, ss. 477, 478, 480.

<sup>2</sup> *Rama Varma Raja v. Reg.*, 3 Mad. 351; see also *Reg. v. Waris Ali*, 3 N.W.P. 337; *post*, § 695.

<sup>3</sup> *Reg. v. Appana Subhana*, 8 Bom. 200.

under s. 193, and allowed proof of a deposition, in which the prisoner had given evidence in a former trial, that the security, which was the subject of the charge under s. 477, had been returned to its owner. The prisoner was convicted of both offences. Turner, J., in quashing the conviction, said: "Although a sessions judge has power to alter or amend a charge, he cannot add an entirely new charge, which is not even cognate to the charge on which an accused person has been committed for trial. The judge might have directed the commitment of the accused on a charge under s. 193, or he might, at the former trial, himself have committed the accused, but he could not, on the trial of the accused for an offence under s. 477, add a charge under s. 193."<sup>1</sup> In 1884 two prisoners, Appa and Raghu, were tried on the following charges: (1) that they both committed murder; (2) that Appa murdered, and that Raghu abetted him in the murder; (3) that Raghu murdered, and that Appa abetted him. On the trial Raghu was admitted as Queen's evidence, and the case proceeded against Appa alone. The jury returned a verdict of guilty, and then explained that they found Appa "guilty of abetment—of abetment generally." The judge refused to accept the verdict, and pointed out that Appa was only charged with abetting Raghu. The jury said that they had supposed he was charged with abetment generally. Upon this the Advocate-General applied to add a charge of "abetment of murder, committed by some person or persons unknown." This charge was allowed under s. 227. It was not read and explained to the accused, who was represented by counsel, but counsel was asked if he wished for a new trial on the amended charge. Counsel replied in the negative, but asked that the point should be reserved, whether the amendment could be made. The original and added charges were then read out separately to the jury, who found the prisoner guilty on the new charge. On the appeal, it was contended by the Crown that the word "charge" in s. 227 meant the aggregate of all the separate offences for which the prisoner was tried, and that the addition of a new count to the indictment was merely an alteration of the charge. The majority of the Court, Scott, J., dissenting, said: "We think that, upon the proper construction of this Code, 'charge' is used in s. 227 as the statement of a specific charge, and that the learned judge was wrong in framing a new charge in

<sup>1</sup> *Reg. v. Waris Ali*, 8 N.W.P. 337.



addition to the original charges." The Court, however, considered that there was no reason why the charge of abetment originally preferred against Appa should not have been altered by substituting for the name of Raghu the general words given in the new charge. Such an alteration appears to come strictly within the object of s. 227. Hence, the error was one of form, and not of substance, and therefore, under s. 537 of the Criminal Procedure Code, the Court declined to interfere with the conviction.<sup>1</sup> In 1886 two men were committed for trial to the sessions court for killing one Jaisukh. At the trial the judge added a charge under s. 323 for an assault on a man named Chiddu, which took place as part of the transaction in which Jaisukh was killed. The prisoners were convicted of both charges. On appeal, the proceeding was supported under s. 226, which apparently only refers to the framing of a charge before the trial. Even upon this view, Edge, C.J., held that the judge had no power to act as he did; he said: "In this case the prisoners were not committed 'without a charge,' for they were sent up on a charge on which they have been actually convicted. Nor can it be said that the charge was an 'imperfect' charge, for it disclosed a separate offence. Nor yet is it an 'erroneous' charge, for the evidence shows that the offence as charged was established. I therefore consider that the offence, as charged, does not come within the terms of s. 226 of the Criminal Procedure, and I consider that the adding of this charge was an irregularity in the proceedings." The Court, however, considered that under s. 537 of the Criminal Procedure Code the irregularity was not one which would warrant a reversal of the sentence, as it did not appear that it had caused any failure of justice.<sup>2</sup> In a case before the same court in 1887, the prisoner was charged with offences under ss. 467 and 471. At the end of the case for the prosecution, when the counsel for the prisoner had submitted that there was no case to go to the jury, Straight, J., ordered the clerk of the Crown, under s. 227 of the Criminal Procedure Code, to frame a new charge for fabricating false evidence under s. 193. To this the prisoner's counsel objected, citing the Bombay case, *Reg. v. Appa Subhana*, by which Straight, J., refused to be bound. Neither of the cases in his own court, *Reg. v. Waris Ali*, nor *Reg. v. Kharga*, were brought to his notice. The prisoner

<sup>1</sup> *Reg. v. Appana Subhana*, 8 Bom. 200, p. 211.

<sup>2</sup> *Reg. v. Kharga*, 8 All. 665.



was acquitted of the original charges, and convicted of the new one. No appeal appears to have been brought.<sup>1</sup> It is submitted that this decision, if cited as an authority hereafter, may deserve reconsideration.

An alteration of the charge under s. 227 includes a withdrawal by a sessions judge of a charge which he had himself framed, and added to the charges already sent up by the committing magistrate. No withdrawal of a charge made by the committing magistrate, which amounted to a quashing of his commitment, could be made by any authority except the High Court.<sup>2</sup>

§ 696. No amendment can be made in the charge under s. 227 after a verdict or the opinion of the assessors has been given. In *Reg. v. Appa Subhana* already referred to,<sup>3</sup> it was held that the amendment, if otherwise admissible, was in time until the verdict was recorded. The judge was authorised, under the Criminal Procedure Code, s. 303, to ask the jury such questions as are necessary to ascertain what their verdict is. Till those questions had been answered, and a verdict had been accepted founded on their answer, and on any explanations by the judge resulting from their answer, the final verdict which the judge was bound to record had not been delivered.

The course permitted by s. 228 of proceeding immediately with the trial, after a new or altered charge has been made under ss. 226 or 227, will in general only be adopted where the charges are so closely related that they are only different ways of looking at the same facts, so that a defendant, who has come prepared to meet the charge on which he was committed, will be under no disadvantage in meeting the new or amended charge.<sup>4</sup> Where, however, the new charge would raise different questions of law, or would admit of a different defence upon the facts, the Court should always act under s. 229.<sup>5</sup>

§ 697. Conviction of an Offence not charged.—Even where no amendment of charge has been made, a failure of justice is provided against by the following sections of the Criminal Procedure Code:—

237. If, in the case mentioned in s. 236 (see *post*,

<sup>1</sup> *Reg. v. Gordon*, 9 All. 525.

<sup>2</sup> *Dwarka Lal v. Mahadeo Rai*, 12 All. 551; Crim. P.C., s. 215.

<sup>3</sup> 8 Bom. 200; *ante*, § 695.

<sup>4</sup> *Reg. v. Govind Babli*, 11 Bom. H.C. 278.

<sup>5</sup> *Reg. v. Govindas Haridas*, 5 Bom. H.C. C.C. 76.

§ 699), the accused is charged with one offence, and it appears in evidence that he committed a different offence for which he might have been charged under the provisions of that section, he may be convicted of the offence which he is shown to have committed, although he was not charged with it.

*Illustration.*

A is charged with theft. It appears that he committed the offence of criminal breach of trust, or that of receiving stolen goods. He may be convicted of criminal breach of trust, or of receiving stolen goods (as the case may be), though he was not charged with such offence.

238. When a person is charged with an offence consisting of several particulars, a combination of some only of which constitutes a complete minor offence, and such combination is proved but the remaining particulars are not proved, he may be convicted of the minor offence, though he was not charged with it.

When a person is charged with an offence, and facts are proved which reduce it to a minor offence, he may be convicted of the minor offence, although he is not charged with it.

Nothing in this section shall be deemed to authorize a conviction of any offence referred to in ss. 198 or 199 when no complaint has been made as required by that section.

*Illustrations.*

(a) A is charged, under s. 407 of the Indian Penal Code, with criminal breach of trust in respect of property entrusted to him as a carrier. It appears that he did commit criminal breach of trust under s. 406 in respect of the property, but that it was not entrusted to him as a carrier. He may be convicted of criminal breach of trust under s. 406.

(b) A is charged, under s. 325 of the Indian Penal Code, with causing grievous hurt. He proves that he acted on grave and sudden provocation. He may be convicted under s. 335 of that Code.

Section 237 will only apply where the same facts are capable of being viewed in different ways, so as to constitute different offences. Section 238 applies where a failure to prove certain facts leaves evidence sufficient to prove a lesser offence, which is indicated by the charge. For instance, where the prisoners were charged under s. 149, combined with s. 325, with being members of an unlawful assembly and committing grievous hurt, and the jury disbelieved the evidence as to the unlawful assembly, it was

held that they were properly convicted of grievous hurt.<sup>1</sup> “The graver charge in such a case gives to the accused notice of all the circumstances going to constitute the minor one of which he may be convicted. The latter is arrived at by mere subtraction from the former. But when this is not the case; where the circumstances embodied in the major charge do not necessarily, and according to the definition of the offence imputed by that charge, constitute the minor offence also, the principle no longer applies, because notice of the former does not necessarily involve notice of all that constitutes the latter. The section is not intended to apply to a collateral offence. It is not open to a court to find a man guilty of the abetment of an offence on a charge of the offence itself.”<sup>2</sup>

§ 698. The mode in which a charge is framed may have a very important effect upon the jurisdiction to try it. For instance, a charge of culpable homicide not amounting to murder may be tried by an officer who could not take cognizance of a charge of murder. Where there is evidence which might convert the minor into the graver offence, it is not absolutely illegal for the magistrate to try the case himself under s. 209 of the Criminal Procedure; but this is a course which he ought rarely to adopt, and never when the evidence clearly points to a more serious offence of the same *genus* beyond his jurisdiction.<sup>3</sup> Where, however, a general offence created by one section is treated in the Code as a specific offence, punishable more severely under a different section if it is perpetrated by particular means or upon a particular object, if the evidence shows that the specific offence has been committed, the charge ought to be framed under it, especially if it alters the jurisdiction.<sup>4</sup>

§ 699. Joinder of Charges.—This is provided for by the following sections of the Criminal Procedure Code:—

233. For every distinct offence of which any person is accused there shall be a separate charge, and every such charge shall be tried separately, except in the cases mentioned in ss. 234, 235, 236, and 239.

<sup>1</sup> *Government of Bengal v. Mahaddi*, 5 Cal. 871.

<sup>2</sup> *Per West, J.*, in a case where a man charged with murder had been convicted under Crim. P.C., 1872, s. 457, of abetment of the same murder (*Reg. v. Chand Nur*, 11 Bom. H.C. 240).

<sup>3</sup> *Reg. v. Paramanda*, 10 Cal. 85; *Weir*, 701; *ante*, § 661.

<sup>4</sup> *Re Madurai*, 12 Mad. 54.



*Illustration.*

A is accused of a theft on one occasion, and of causing grievous hurt on another occasion. A must be separately charged and separately tried for the theft and the causing grievous hurt.

234. When a person is accused of more offences than one of the same kind, committed within the space of twelve months from the first to the last of such offences, he may be charged with, and tried at one trial for, any number of them not exceeding three.

Offences are of the same kind when they are punishable with the same amount of punishment under the same section of the Indian Penal Code, or of any special or local law.

235. I.—If, in one series of acts so connected together as to form the same transaction, more than one are committed by the same person, he may be charged with, and tried at one trial for, every such offence.

II.—If the acts alleged constitute an offence falling within two or more separate definitions of any law in force for the time being, by which offences are defined or punished, the person accused of them may be charged with and tried at one trial for each of such offences.

III.—If several acts, of which one or more than one would by itself or themselves constitute an offence, constitute when combined a different offence, the person accused of them may be charged with and tried at one trial for the offence constituted by such acts when combined, or for any offence constituted by any one, or more, of such acts.

Nothing contained in this section shall affect the Indian Penal Code, s. 71.<sup>1</sup>

236. If a single act or series of acts is of such a nature that it is doubtful which of several offences the facts which can be proved will constitute, the accused person may be charged with having committed all or any such offences; and any number of such charges may be tried at once, or he may be charged in the alternative with having committed some one of the said offences.

240. When more charges than one are made against the same person, and when a conviction has been had on one or more of them, the complainant, or the officer conducting the prosecution, may, with the consent of the Court, withdraw the remaining charge or charges, or the Court of its

<sup>1</sup> For a full discussion of this section, see Part I., note to s. 71.



own accord may stay the inquiry into, or trial of, such charge or charges. Such withdrawal shall have the effect of an acquittal on such charge or charges, unless the conviction be set aside, in which case the said court (subject to the order of the court setting aside the conviction) may proceed with the inquiry into or trial of the charge or charges so withdrawn.

§ 700. Under s. 233, charges for receiving stolen property, under s. 411, and for habitually receiving such property, under s. 413, must be tried separately.<sup>1</sup> Charges of the same kind, as defined in s. 234, may, however, be tried together within the limits prescribed by that section. It will be observed that the definition of "offences of the same kind" is different in s. 234 from what it was in the corresponding section 453 of the Crim. P.C. of 1872. The cases decided under the latter section will, therefore, be no longer applicable.<sup>2</sup> It is not necessary that the offences should be against the same person.<sup>3</sup> The limitation to three offences only applies to the number which may legally form part of a single trial. Any amount of offences, wherever and however committed, may be charged against an offender, and tried consecutively, provided the trials are separate.<sup>4</sup> Further, a single offence may be committed in respect of several distinct matters. A prisoner was charged on one trial for three distinct acts of breach of trust, in respect of three sums deposited in the Savings bank. One of the three charges was in respect of a sum of Rs. 195, which was paid in on two occasions by a depositor. The prisoner's books stated—falsely, as it was found—that he had paid out Rs. 150 and Rs. 45 on different dates to the depositor. It was argued that, if guilty, he had committed two offences in regard to the Rs. 195, and therefore the trial was bad, as four offences, not three, had been united. The Court held that there was nothing to show that the whole Rs. 195 had not been embezzled at once, the false entries being merely made to conceal a single offence.<sup>5</sup> So the using of eleven

<sup>1</sup> *Reg. v. Uttom Koondoo*, 8 Cal. 634; see *Reg. v. Hanmanta*, 1 Bom. 610.

<sup>2</sup> See *Reg. v. Itwaree Dome*, 6 Suth. Cr. 83; *Manu Miya v. Reg.*, 9 Cal. 371.

<sup>3</sup> *Manu Miya v. Reg.*, *ub. sup.*; *Reg. v. Juala Prasad*, 7 All. 174. The conflicting decision, *Reg. v. Murari*, 4 All. 174, being upon s. 453 of the Act of 1872, is no longer an authority.

<sup>4</sup> *Reg. v. Dononjoy*, 3 Cal. 540.

<sup>5</sup> *In re Luchminarain*, 14 Cal. 128.

forged documents, by filing them together in a suit with a written statement, is one offence, not eleven offences.<sup>1</sup>

Where, however, different acts are done in the course of the same transaction, whether they constitute distinct offences or whether in combination they form a more aggravated offence, they may be tried together under s. 235; as, for instance, rioting, and hurt committed in the riot. But there is nothing illegal in trying them separately.<sup>2</sup>

§ 701. There appears to be a difference of opinion as to the consequences of trying several offences together in violation of s. 233 of the Criminal Procedure Code. In some cases the Court has held that the convictions resulting from the trial should be upheld, where it appeared that the prisoners had not been prejudiced in their defence by the course improperly adopted.<sup>3</sup> In other cases the Calcutta High Court has held that the conviction was bad, and that a new trial was necessary.<sup>4</sup> Where two cross cases of rioting were heard one after the other, the accused in each case being examined as witnesses for the prosecution in the other, but in other respects the cases were treated as one case, the arguments in each case being heard together, and the opinions of the assessors being taken at one time, it was held that this course was irregular, but that, as it did not prejudice the accused, no new trial was necessary by virtue of s. 537.<sup>5</sup> Even where a joint trial is permitted, the Court should take care that the accused are not prejudiced by such a course being taken, and should at all times be anxious to lend a willing ear to any application for separation of charges, and for separate trials upon separate charges.<sup>6</sup>

§ 702. The form of an alternative charge under s. 236 is given in Sched. V. (4) of the Criminal Procedure Code, and the mode of pronouncing judgment is laid down in s. 367. An alternative charge is only allowed where a single act, or series of acts, is of such a nature that, if proved, it would be doubtful which of several offences would be constituted. Where, at the end of the trial, the judge believes the facts, but is doubtful as to the application of the law to the facts,

<sup>1</sup> *Reg. v. Raghu Nathu Das*, 20 Cal. 413.

<sup>2</sup> *In re Ameruddin*, 8 Cal. 481.

<sup>3</sup> *Reg. v. Hanmanta*, 1 Bom. 610; *Reg. v. Sreenath Kur*, 8 Cal. 450; *Reg. v. Ramanna*, 12 Mad. 273; *Reg. v. Mulna*, 14 All. 502.

<sup>4</sup> *Reg. v. Itwaree Dome*, 6 Suth. Cr. 83; *in re Luchminarain*, 14 Cal. 128; *Reg. v. Chandi Singh*, *ibid.* 395.

<sup>5</sup> *Reg. v. Chandra Bhuiya*, 20 Cal. 537.

<sup>6</sup> *Per Norris, J., Manu Miya v. Reg.*, 9 Cal. 371.

he may pronounce an alternative judgment. If he is doubtful whether sufficient facts have been proved to make out any one of the charges, he must acquit.<sup>1</sup> Where he finds facts which are sufficient to make out one or more charges, but rejects those facts which are essential to the others, he must acquit upon the latter, and find, either positively or alternatively on the former.<sup>2</sup> The special case of alternative charges for giving false evidence has already been discussed (*ante*, §§ 315, 317).

§ 703. Joinder of Defendants is regulated by the Criminal Procedure Code, s. 239. "When more persons than one are accused of the same offence, or of different offences committed in the same transaction, or when one person is accused of committing any offence, and another of abetment of, or attempt to commit, such offence, they may be charged and tried together, or separately, as the Court thinks fit; and the provisions contained in the former part of this chapter shall apply to all such charges."

In order to enable several persons to be tried together under the second clause of the above section, it is necessary to show that they were engaged in the same transaction, with such a common intention as would make each person liable for the acts of the others under s. 34 of the Penal Code. Otherwise, their offences are distinct, and their grounds of defence would be equally distinct.<sup>3</sup> Where defendants are tried together for offences which are distinct, the conviction will be quashed.<sup>4</sup> Even in a case where the offences are only technically distinct, as where several persons unite in giving false evidence in the same proceeding, the same result will follow. The union of all in the same trial must necessarily prejudice each by depriving him of the evidence of the others.<sup>5</sup> Where the offences charged arise out of the same transaction, if the interests of two sets of defendants are conflicting, there ought to be separate trials. For instance, where two opposing parties commit a breach of the peace, a riot, or the like, each party ought to be tried separately from the other, as each will have a separate defence.

<sup>1</sup> *Wafadar Khan v. Reg.*, 21 Cal. 955.

<sup>2</sup> *Reg. v. Jamurma*, 7 N.W.P. 137.

<sup>3</sup> *Porasu Naik*, M. H.C. Pro., 23rd April, 1883, Weir, 901; *Reg. v. Sheik Bazu*, B.L.R., Sup. Vol. 750; S.C. 8 Suth. Cr. 47; see *ante*, § 700.

<sup>4</sup> *Pulisanki Reddi v. Reg.*, 5 Mad. 20.

<sup>5</sup> *Reg. v. Anant Ram*, 4 All. 293; *Reg. v. Bhavanishankar*, 5 Bom. H.C. C.C. 55; 3 Mad. H.C. Rulings 32; *Reg. v. Maharaj Misser*, 7 B.L.R. Appx. 66.



A joint trial will, however, not be absolutely illegal, but will be set aside if it appears that the parties have been prejudiced in their defence.<sup>1</sup> And any proceeding by which the trials are apparently separate, but really mixed up together, will be equally objectionable. In a case where the opposing parties were sent up for trial under distinct committals, the judge, with the consent of the pleaders, adopted this singular course. He first heard the witnesses for the prosecution in the first case, and then heard the witnesses for the prosecution in the second case; he then similarly heard the witnesses for the defence in each case separately, and the arguments of pleaders. He then summed up both cases to the same jury, who returned a single verdict upon all the defendants. It was held that this was practically trying all the defendants together, and that in a case heard by a jury the defendants must necessarily be prejudiced in their defence. The convictions were quashed and a new trial ordered.<sup>2</sup> So, where four persons were charged with giving false evidence, and the judge, while professing to try each defendant separately, heard the evidence of the witnesses only once, it was held that this was substantially one trial.<sup>3</sup>

§ 704. When it is said in s. 239 that several persons may be tried together for different offences arising out of the same transaction, it is implied that all the offences charged arose out of, or were connected parts of the common transaction. It is not sufficient that the transaction common to all gave rise to a state of things which furnished an opportunity for distinct offences. The police were pursuing an investigation, in the course of which they arrested one Hanma, his wife Rakhma, and his son-in-law Yelliah. The four accused were charged with ill-treating and wrongfully confining Hanma between the 5th and 18th of January. This was held by the High Court to be one transaction. The same four were charged with ill-treating and wrongfully confining Yelliah between the 15th and 23rd of January. This again was held to be a single transaction. Three of the accused were charged with a renewed confinement of Yelliah between the 8th of February and the 9th of March. This was held to be a different transaction from the preceding. One of the accused was charged with ill-treating Rakhma on the 14th of January, and the same man and

<sup>1</sup> *Reg. v. Sheikh Bazu, ub. sup.*; *Reg. v. Abdul Kadir*, 9 All. 452.

<sup>2</sup> *Hossein Buksh v. Reg.*, 6 Cal. 96.

<sup>3</sup> *Nathu Sheikh v. Reg.*, 10 Cal. 405.



another of the accused with wrongfully confining her on the 15th of January. These were held to be two transactions, and not to form part of the transactions in which Hanma or Yelliah were wronged. All the prisoners were tried jointly for the offences arising out of all these separate transactions. It was held that this procedure was improper; that the prisoners had been prejudiced by it; and the convictions of those who appealed were set aside, and a new trial ordered.<sup>1</sup>

§ 705. **Pleas.—Want of Jurisdiction.—British Subject.**—Want of jurisdiction may be pleaded either in reference to the person, or to the offence, or to the judge. The liability of persons not subject to the local jurisdiction of the Indian courts to be held in India has already been discussed in Part II., Chap. II. In general, the immunity of such persons rests on the fact that the offence itself was outside the jurisdiction, a matter which is also considered in the same chapter. The exemption of European British subjects from the jurisdiction of the local courts has been reduced to very narrow limits in recent years. The term “European British subject” is defined by the Criminal Procedure, s. 4 (u), to mean—

“(1) Any subject of Her Majesty born, naturalized, or domiciled in the United Kingdom of Great Britain and Ireland, or in any of the European, American, or Australian colonies or possessions of Her Majesty, or in the Colony of New Zealand, or in the Colony of the Cape of Good Hope, or Natal.

“(2) Any child or grandchild of any such person by legitimate descent.”<sup>2</sup>

Any magistrate, who is in other respects authorized to do so, may entertain a complaint against a European British subject, and issue process to compel his appearance; but such process can only be made returnable before a magistrate having jurisdiction to inquire into or try the case.<sup>3</sup> “No magistrate, unless he is a justice of the peace, and (except in the case of a District magistrate or Presidency magistrate) unless he is a magistrate of the first class and a European British subject, shall inquire into or try any charge against a European British subject.”<sup>4</sup> “No judge presiding in a Court of Session (except the Sessions judge)

<sup>1</sup> *Reg. v. Fakirapa*, 15 Bom. 495.

<sup>2</sup> See *De Geer Stone*, 22 Ch. D. 243.

<sup>3</sup> Crim. P.C., s. 445.

<sup>4</sup> Crim. P.C., s. 443, amended by Act III. of 1884, s. 3.

shall exercise jurisdiction over a European British subject unless he himself is a European British subject; and, if he is an Assistant Sessions judge, unless he has held the office of Assistant Sessions judge for at least three years, and has been specially empowered in this behalf by the Local Government.”<sup>1</sup> “No Magistrate other than a District Magistrate or Presidency Magistrate shall pass any sentence on a European British subject other than imprisonment for a term which may extend to three months, or fine, which may extend to one thousand rupees, or both; and a District Magistrate may not pass any such sentence other than imprisonment for a term which may extend to six months, or fine, which may extend to two thousand rupees, or both.”<sup>2</sup> “No Court of Session shall pass on any European British subject any sentence other than a sentence of imprisonment for a term which may extend to one year, or fine, or both.”<sup>3</sup> By s. 447 of the Criminal Procedure Code, “When an European British subject is accused of an offence before a magistrate, and such offence cannot, in the opinion of such magistrate, be adequately punished by him, and is not punishable with death or with transportation for life, such magistrate shall, if he thinks that the accused ought to be committed, commit him to the Court of Session, or, in the case of a Presidency Magistrate, to the High Court.

“When the offence which appears to have been committed is punishable with death or with transportation for life, the commitment shall be to the High Court.”

Similarly, by s. 449, when the accused has been committed to the sessions, “If at any time after the commitment and before signing judgment the presiding judge thinks that the offence which appears to be proved cannot be adequately punished by such a sentence, he shall record his opinion to that effect, and transfer the case to the High Court. Such judge may either himself bind over, or direct the committing magistrate to bind over, the complainant and witnesses to appear before the High Court.”

§ 706. Special provisions are made for the trial by jury of European British subjects who claim to be so tried, by the Criminal Procedure Code ss. 451, 451A, 451B, and 452, as amended by Act III. of 1884, ss. 7 and 8.

Where a European British subject has been declared to

<sup>1</sup> Crim. P.C., s. 444, amended by Act III. of 1884, s. 4.

<sup>2</sup> Crim. P.C., s. 446, amended by Act III. of 1884, s. 5.

<sup>3</sup> Crim. P.C., s. 449.

be a vagrant, or convicted under ss. 22 or 23 of the Vagrant Act, he forfeits all the special privileges of a British subject, and is liable as if he were a European who is not a British subject."<sup>1</sup>

Any person who is about to be dealt with by a magistrate or session judge in a manner which would be unlawful if he were a European British subject, must, if he wishes to assert his privilege, claim to be dealt with as a European British subject, and state the grounds of such claim to the magistrate before whom he is brought for the purposes of inquiry or trial. A wrong decision on his claim forms a ground of appeal in the case of conviction, or, if he is committed for trial, he may renew the objection before the court to which he is committed.<sup>2</sup> If he fails to make, or renew his claim, as the case may be, he will be held to have relinquished his claim, and his conviction or committal will then be legal, though, if his claim had been maintained, it would have been without jurisdiction. It must, however, appear that his rights as a British subject had been distinctly made known to him, and that he was able to exercise his choice and judgment whether he would or would not claim those rights.<sup>3</sup> He will also lose the benefit of all the special procedure under Chapter XXXIII. of the Crim. P.C., including the right to revision by the High Court.<sup>4</sup> The provision that he must state the grounds of his claim appears to be directory and not imperative. In a case before the Allahabad High Court,<sup>5</sup> a prisoner claimed to be dealt with as a European British subject, but did not state the grounds of his claim. The magistrate, without recording any finding upon the claim, dealt with his case as if he were not a European British subject. The High Court remanded the case for a finding upon the point. It then appeared that he was a European British subject, and the Court thereupon quashed the conviction, and remitted the case for disposal *de novo*, holding that they had no jurisdiction to examine the case upon its merits.

A European British subject who is unlawfully detained in custody by any person, may apply to the High Court which would have jurisdiction over him in respect of any offence committed by him at the place where he was detained, and the High Court may thereupon issue orders,

<sup>1</sup> Act IX. of 1874, s. 30.

<sup>2</sup> Crim. P.C., s. 453.

<sup>3</sup> *In re Quiros*, 6 Cal. 83; *Reg. v. Bartlett*, 16 Mad. 308.

<sup>4</sup> *Reg. v. Grant*, 12 Bom. 561.

<sup>5</sup> *Empress v. Berrill*, 4 All. 141.



which will have effect throughout the territories subject to their appellate criminal jurisdiction, and such other territories as the Governor-General in Council may direct.<sup>1</sup> This section assumes that the detention is unlawful. Neither under it, nor under any other law, does the High Court possess a power of appeal or revision over the sentences of courts outside British India.<sup>2</sup>

§ 707. **Local Jurisdiction.**—The jurisdiction of the Mofussil courts, with the exception of the special jurisdiction conferred by Act XXI. of 1879, s. 8, and the Criminal Procedure Code, s. 188 (*ante*, § 30), and of the admiralty jurisdiction which they have recently acquired (see *ante*, § 39), depends upon the offence having been committed within their local limits.<sup>3</sup> For this purpose, however, the offence is considered as having been committed either where the act was done, or where the consequence ensued.<sup>4</sup> Therefore, if a wound was given in one zillah, of which the sufferer died in another zillah, the offender might be tried in either. So, a person who posts a libel may be tried either in the district in which he posted it,<sup>5</sup> or in the district where, in consequence of the posting, it was received and read.<sup>6</sup>

Where the prisoner was charged with having, at Calcutta, abetted the waging of war against the Queen, and was tried and convicted at Patna, the conviction was affirmed, and the jurisdiction of the Patna Court upheld on two grounds: *first*, because he was a member of a conspiracy, in pursuance of which certain illegal acts were done in Patna by others, and such acts, being in furtherance of the common purpose, were his acts; *secondly*, because the prisoner had sent money by hundis from Calcutta to Patna, and until the money reached its destination, the sending continued on the part of the prisoner, and was, therefore, a sending of the money within the Patna district.<sup>7</sup>

“When an act is an offence by reason of its relation to any other act which is also an offence, or which would be an offence if the doer were capable of committing an offence, a charge of the first-mentioned offence may be inquired into

<sup>1</sup> Crim. P.C., ss. 456—458; *Ward v. The Queen*, 5 Mad. 33.

<sup>2</sup> *Empress v. Hurrokole*, 9 Cal. 288.

<sup>3</sup> Crim. P.C., s. 177; *Hursu-Mahapatro v. Dinobundo*, 7 Cal. 523.

<sup>4</sup> Crim. P.C., s. 179.

<sup>5</sup> *R. v. Burdett*, 4 B. & A. 143.

<sup>6</sup> *R. v. Johnson*, 7 East, 65; *Reg. v. Kally Doss Mitter*, 5 Suth. Cr. 44.

<sup>7</sup> *Reg. v. Amir Khan*, 9 B.L.R. A. Cr. 36; 17 Suth. Cr. 15.



or tried by a court within the local limits of whose jurisdiction either act was done.”<sup>1</sup> Therefore, abettors may be tried either in the district in which they abetted the offence, or in that where it was committed.<sup>2</sup>

Receivers may be tried in any district in which they have had possession of the property, or in which the theft may be tried.<sup>3</sup> So, where the offence is a continuing one, as, for instance, the theft or misappropriation of property which is carried into several districts successfully, the offender may be tried in any district in which he continues the offence.<sup>4</sup>

§ 708. The offence of concealing or confining a person who has been kidnapped or abducted (s. 368), may be tried either in the district where the confinement or concealment took place, or in that where the kidnapping or abduction was committed.<sup>5</sup>

“When it is uncertain in which of several local areas an offence was committed; or where an offence is committed, partly in one local area and partly in another; or where an offence is a continuing one, and continues to be committed in more local areas than one; or where it consists of several acts done in different local areas, it may be inquired into or tried by a court having jurisdiction over any of such local areas.”<sup>6</sup> In this section the term “local area” only applies to an area over which the Criminal Procedure Code applies. It gives no jurisdiction in respect of offences committed out of British India.<sup>7</sup>

Act XVIII. of 1862, s. 35 (now repealed), provided that a person, “accused of any offence alleged to have been committed on a journey, or on any voyage, in British India,” may be tried in the High Court, “if any part of the journey or voyage shall have been performed within the local limits of the jurisdiction of such Court.” In a case before the Madras High Court, two railway guards were indicted under s. 27 of the Railway Act, XVIII. of 1854. It appeared that on a journey up to Madras, and some considerable distance from it, they were discovered to be in a state of intoxication, and were both removed from the train, another guard being placed in charge. One of the prisoners remained

<sup>1</sup> Crim. P.C., s. 180.

<sup>2</sup> *Ibid.*, illus. (a). See, as to abetment by letter, *Reg. v. Sheodial*, 16 All. 389; as to abetment of offences under the Merchandise Marks Act, IX. of 1891, s. 22.

<sup>3</sup> Crim. P.C., s. 180, illus. (b).

<sup>4</sup> Crim. P.C., s. 181.

<sup>5</sup> Crim. P.C., s. 180, illus. (c).

<sup>6</sup> Crim. P.C., s. 182.

<sup>7</sup> *Lichitranund Dass v. Bhugbat Perai*, 16 Cal. 667.

that night at the station where he had been taken out. The other prisoner, as the train was moving off, broke away from the peon in whose custody he was, jumped into the train, and so was taken on to Madras. They were convicted at the sessions, but on a special case reserved by Bittleston, J., it was held that the court had no jurisdiction to try them. They were East Indians, and s. 35 did not apply, the journey upon which the offence was committed having, in the case of each, terminated beyond the limits of the High Court.<sup>1</sup>

A similar decision was given in Bengal under s. 67 of the Crim. P.C., 1872, now s. 183. Under *illus. (a)* (now omitted) it is stated that "an offence committed on a journey or voyage, may be inquired into and tried in any district through which the person by whom the offence was committed, or the person against whom, or the thing in respect of which the offence was committed, passed in the course of that journey or voyage." Two persons were going by rail from Bombay to Calcutta. The offence was committed by one against the other before reaching Allahabad. At that town both stopped, and afterwards proceeded to Calcutta by different trains, the accused after one day's stay, and the prosecutrix after two days. It was held that there was no jurisdiction in Calcutta, and that to bring the case within the section the journey must be continuous from one terminus to another, regard being had, for the purpose of estimating the continuity, to all the ordinary incidents affecting journeys of the particular kind which may be under consideration.<sup>2</sup>

Thuggee, murder as a thug, dacoity, dacoity with murder, and escape from custody may be tried where the accused is in custody.<sup>3</sup>

The High Courts are also, by s. 23 of the Letters Patent, given an extraordinary criminal jurisdiction over all offences committed within the limits of their appellate jurisdiction, on charges preferred by the Advocate-General, or by any magistrate or other officer specially empowered by the Government in that behalf.

§ 709. Nothing in these sections can be held to confer

<sup>1</sup> *Reg. v. Malony*, 1 Mad. H.C. 193.

<sup>2</sup> *Reg. v. Piran*, 13 B.L.R. Appx. 4; S.C. 21 Suth. Cr. 66. The stopping of a vessel at one of its ports of call on a continuous voyage is not a breaking of the journey (*Reg. v. Abdool Alee*, 25 Suth Cr. 45).

<sup>3</sup> Crim. P.C., s. 181.

jurisdiction over an offence which is committed out of India by a person who is not subject to Indian jurisdiction. Where a native of Kolapur, a foreign State, was convicted in Satara of abetting in Kolapur the commission of a murder in Satara, it was held that the conviction could not be sustained under s. 66 of the Act of 1872, which corresponds to s. 180 of the Act of 1882. The Court pointed out that the prisoner was not one of the classes subject to British jurisdiction. That his offence was wholly committed in a foreign State, and that both the Criminal Procedure Code and the Penal Code were limited to offences committed in India.<sup>1</sup> And, conversely, the abetment in British India by a British subject, of an offence committed in a foreign State, is not an offence punishable under the Penal Code, and is therefore not triable in India.<sup>2</sup> So a person, not a British subject, who is found in possession in a native State of property taken by dacoity in British India, is not punishable in British India unless it can be shown, either that he took part in the dacoity, or that he received the stolen property with guilty knowledge within British jurisdiction.<sup>3</sup> Nor can a person be convicted of either a theft or a dacoity committed out of British India, by virtue of his continuing in possession of the stolen property after he has come within British jurisdiction.<sup>4</sup> Where the original act was not a triable offence, the continued possession of the property is not a constructive continuance and renewal of the same offence. The same law has been laid down where a foreigner who had received goods out of the British territory was indicted as a receiver within that territory, and the Court stated that even a continued possession of them within the jurisdiction would not make him amenable to our courts.<sup>5</sup> The same construction would, I imagine, be put upon the present s. 181. But retaining stolen property with a knowledge that it was stolen is an offence different from the receiving, and a foreigner who has stolen, or received stolen property in a foreign State, and who brings it into British India, and therein retains it with a guilty knowledge, may be convicted in any British district in which he is.

<sup>1</sup> *Reg. v. Pirthai*, 10 Bom. H.C. 356; *Reg. v. Natwarai*, 16 Bom. 178; *re Mukund*, 19 Bom. 72.

<sup>2</sup> *Reg. v. Ganpatra Ramchandra*, 19 Bom. 105.

<sup>3</sup> *Reg. v. Kirpal Singh*, 9 All. 523.

<sup>4</sup> *Reg. v. Sakhya Govind*, 1 Bom. 50; *Reg. v. Adiragadu*, 1 Mad. 71.

<sup>5</sup> *Reg. v. Bechar*, 4 Bom. H.C. 38.



found in possession of the property.<sup>1</sup> The difficulty which was raised by the Bombay High Court<sup>2</sup> as to treating property stolen abroad, as being stolen property within the meaning of s. 410, has now been removed by the Amendment Act, VIII. of 1882, s. 8.

§ 710. **Irregular Exercise of Jurisdiction.**—Failure of justice arising from technical errors is provided against by the following sections of the Criminal Procedure Code.

531. “No finding, sentence, or order of any criminal court shall be set aside merely on the ground that the inquiry, trial, or other proceeding in the course of which it was arrived at or passed, took place in a wrong sessions division, district, subdivision, or other local area, unless it appears that such error occasioned a failure of justice.”<sup>3</sup> This section, however, only applies to localities governed by the Criminal Procedure Code, and has no operation where jurisdiction has been wrongly assumed in respect of offences committed out of British India.<sup>4</sup> It does apply to a case where a sessions judge, who has jurisdiction over an offence, inadvertently tries it in a place outside the limits of his sessions district, but within the limits of his general jurisdiction.<sup>5</sup>

Section 532. If any magistrate or other authority, purporting to exercise powers duly conferred, which were not so conferred, commits an accused person for trial before a Court of Session or High Court, the court to which the commitment is made may, after perusal of the proceedings, accept the commitment if it considers that the accused has not been injured thereby, unless, during the inquiry and before the order of commitment, objection was made on behalf either of the accused or of the prosecution to the jurisdiction of such magistrate or other authority.

If such court considers that the accused was injured, or if such objection was so made, it shall quash the commitment, and direct a fresh inquiry by a competent magistrate.

In a case upon the corresponding section of Act X. of 1872, where a sessions judge had accepted a commitment from the magistrate of Hamirpur for an offence which was

<sup>1</sup> *Reg. v. Sakhya Govind*, *ub. sup.*; *Empress v. Shunker Gope*, 6 Cal. 307; *Reg. v. Abdul Latib*, 10 Bom. 186; *Reg. v. Daya Bhima*, 13 Bom. 147.

<sup>2</sup> *Empress v. Moorga Chetty*, 5 Bom. 338.

<sup>3</sup> *Reg. v. Ingle*, 16 Bom. 200.

<sup>4</sup> *Bichitranund Dass v. Bhugbat Perai*, 16 Cal. 667.

<sup>5</sup> *Reg. v. Fazl Azim*, 17 All. 36.



really committed in Fatehpur, saying that he had no choice in the matter, as the prisoner was not prejudiced by the commitment, the Allahabad High Court directed the prisoner to be released, and to be handed over to the Fatehpur authorities. They said: "That section contemplates the contingency of a case which has been inquired into at the proper place, as indicated by s. 63 (now s. 177), being committed to the proper court of session by a particular magistrate not duly empowered by law to make such a commitment. In the present instance, none of the Hamirpur magistrates had jurisdiction to inquire into the offence. The proceedings in the case were illegal *ab initio*, and are accordingly quashed."<sup>1</sup>

§ 711. **Sanction for Prosecution.**—In the case of certain offences under the Penal Code, it is made a condition precedent to a prosecution that leave should have been granted by some particular authority.

No charge of an offence punishable under ss. 121A or 124A shall be entertained by any court unless the prosecution be entertained by order of, or under authority from, the Local Government.<sup>2</sup>

No prosecution against any magistrate, military officer, police officer, soldier, or volunteer for any act purporting to be done under Chapter IX. of the Criminal Procedure Code, shall be instituted in any criminal court, except with the sanction of the Governor-General in Council.<sup>3</sup>

No court shall take cognizance—

(a) of any offence punishable under ss. 172—188 (both inclusive) of the Indian Penal Code, except with the previous sanction, or on the complaint, of the public servant concerned, or of some public servant to whom he is subordinate;

(b) of any offence punishable under ss. 193, 194, 195, 196, 199, 200, 205, 206, 207, 208, 209, 210, 211, or 228 of the same Code, when such offence is committed in, or in relation to, any proceeding in any court, except with the previous sanction, or on the complaint, of such court, or of some other court to which such court is subordinate;

(c) of any offence described in s. 463, or punishable under ss. 471, 475, or 476 of the same Code, when such offence has

<sup>1</sup> *Reg. v. Jagan Nath*, 3 All. 258, doubted in *Reg. v. Fazl Azim*, 17 All. 36; and see *contra*, *Reg. v. Abbi Reddi*, 18 Mad. 402.

<sup>2</sup> Act XXVII. of 1870, s. 14.

<sup>3</sup> Crim. P.C., s. 132.

been committed by a party to any proceeding in any court in respect of a document given in evidence in such proceeding, except with the previous sanction, or on the complaint, of such court, or of some other court to which such court is subordinate.

The sanction referred to in this section may be expressed in general terms, and need not name the accused person; but it shall, so far as practicable, specify the court or other place in which, and the occasion on which, the offence was committed.

When sanction is given in respect of any offence referred to in this section, the court taking cognizance of the case may frame a charge of any other offence so referred to which is disclosed by the facts.

Any sanction given or refused under this section may be revoked or granted by any authority to which the authority giving or refusing it is subordinate; and no such sanction shall remain in force for more than six months from the date on which it was given.

For the purposes of this section, every court other than a Court of Small Causes, shall be deemed to be subordinate only to the court to which appeals from the former court ordinarily lie.

The Courts of Small Causes in the Presidency towns shall be deemed to be subordinate to the High Court, and every other Court of Small Causes shall be deemed to be subordinate to the Court of Session for the Sessions Division within which such Court is situate.<sup>1</sup>

No court shall take cognizance of any offence punishable under Chapter VI. of the Indian Penal Code, except s. 127, or punishable under s. 294A of the same Code, unless upon complaint made by order of, or under authority from, the Governor-General in Council, the Local Government, or some officer empowered by the Governor-General in Council in this behalf.<sup>2</sup>

When any judge, or any public servant not removable from his office without the sanction of the Government of India, or the Local Government, is accused as such judge or public servant of any offence, no court shall take cognizance of such offence, except with the previous sanction of the Government having power to order his removal, or of some officer empowered in this behalf by such Government, or of some court or other authority to which such judge or public

<sup>1</sup> Crim. P.C., s. 195.

<sup>2</sup> *Ibid.*, s. 196.

servant is subordinate, and whose power to give such sanction has not been limited by such Government.

Such Government may determine the person by whom, and the manner in which, the prosecution of such judge or public servant is to be conducted, and may specify the court before which the trial is to be held.<sup>1</sup>

§ 712. The words in ss. 195 and 197, "no court shall take cognizance," "except with the previous sanction," etc., differ slightly from those which were employed in the corresponding ss. 466—470 of Act X. of 1872. Both were probably intended to negative the legality of any retrospective or implied sanction, such as was contemplated by Holloway, J., as sufficient under s. 167 of the Criminal Procedure Act of 1861, and held by the High Court of Bombay to be sufficient under ss. 168 and 169 of the same Act.<sup>2</sup> Accordingly, it has been held that the sanction is a condition precedent to any proceedings being taken in regard to the offences specified, and that a conviction obtained without such sanction must be quashed.<sup>3</sup> It has also been held in Bengal that the error was not remedied by a section corresponding to s. 537 of the Crim. P.C. of 1882. "The error in this case has been committed neither in the charge nor in the proceedings on trial. The error has been committed at the commencement, and no proceedings should have taken place previous to sanction being given."<sup>4</sup> In a Bombay case governed by Crim. P.C., s. 197, the accused had been committed to the High Court without any sanction by Government, but after committal and before trial the necessary sanction was given. The High Court held that if no sanction had been obtained, there would be no jurisdiction, but that under the special circumstances the commitment was only irregular, and that the judge presiding in the Court of Criminal Sessions to which the prisoner had been committed had power in his discretion, under s. 532 of the Crim. P.C., to accept the commitment and to proceed with

<sup>1</sup> *Ibid.*, s. 197.

<sup>2</sup> *Reg. v. Kristna Rao*, 7 Mad. H.C. 58; *Reg. v. Ganu*, 5 Bom. H.C. C.C. 38; *Reg. v. Muhammad Khan*, 6 Bom. H.C. C.C. 54.

<sup>3</sup> *Reg. v. Makima Chandra*, 7 B.L.R. 26, under the Act of 1861; 8 Mad. H.C. Rulings 2, under the Act of 1872; *in re Thathayya*, 12 Mad. 47, under the Act of 1882.

<sup>4</sup> *Reg. v. Makima Chandra*, *ub. sup.*; *Rajchunder Mozoomdar v. Gourchunder*, 22 Cal. 176. A contrary decision was given by a single judge in Allahabad, apparently without reference to the Bengal decision (*Reg. v. Matabadal*, 15 All. 392).



the trial.<sup>1</sup> A complete absence of sanction up to conviction would vitiate the whole proceedings. "A magistrate may in such a case receive a complaint of the nature mentioned against a public servant, and, if he think right, may make a preliminary inquiry into the truth of the complaint; but he is not authorized to cause the attendance of the accused, or to take any evidence against him, until he has obtained the necessary sanction. Until the sanction is obtained, the magistrate has no jurisdiction, and a conviction founded on evidence taken without jurisdiction would be bad."<sup>2</sup>

§ 713. Section 195 of the Crim. P.C. contemplates two sorts of proceedings—a private prosecution and an official prosecution. In the former case a sanction is necessary. It is not a direction to prosecute, and ought not to be expressed so as to lead the person obtaining it to suppose that he is bound to prosecute. It is only a permission to him to act in the matter at his own discretion and on his own responsibility.<sup>3</sup> The intention of the Legislature in requiring that a prosecution by a private party must be sanctioned is to enable the court to see whether there is good ground for the application, or whether it is made solely for the purpose of harassing the accused or preventing any further legal proceedings which he may be entitled to take.<sup>4</sup> No proceeding by the court which has tried a case, whereby it recommends or directs a magistrate to investigate any matter with a view to criminal proceedings to be taken by him, can be taken as a sanction to a private individual to prosecute.<sup>5</sup>

§ 714. Sanction under s. 195 (b), (c) is only necessary where the offence has been committed in or in relation to a proceeding in a court. It is not required when a false document was presented to a registrar, or a false charge was preferred to the police, or false evidence has been given in an investigation conducted by the police.<sup>6</sup> Under s. 195 (c), no sanction is necessary where the offence is alleged to have been committed by persons who were only witnesses in the

<sup>1</sup> *Reg. v. Morton*, 9 Bom. 288.

<sup>2</sup> *Reg. v. Parshram Keshav*, 7 Bom. H.C. C.C. 61.

<sup>3</sup> *Re Giridhari Mondul*, 8 Cal. 435.

<sup>4</sup> *Reg. v. Mahomed Hossain*, 16 Suth. Cr. 37; *Gyan Chunder v. Protub Chunder*, 7 Cal. 208; *Reg. v. Sheikh Beari*, 12 Mad. 232.

<sup>5</sup> *Kripu Nath v. Grish Chunder*, 16 Cal. 730.

<sup>6</sup> *Reg. v. Ramdarry Singh*, 10 Suth. Cr. 5; *re Giridhari Mondul*, 8 Cal., p. 439; *Reg. v. Sham Lall*, 14 Cal., p. 715; *Ramasami v. Reg.*, 7 Mad. 292; *Reg. v. Irbasata*, 4 Bom. 479; *Reg. v. Ismal*, 11 Bom. 659.



suit, as they do not fall within the meaning of "parties to the proceeding" in that clause.<sup>1</sup> Where the charge is against a public servant, sanction is only required under s. 197, where the act complained of derives its special significance from the fact that it was done by a public servant. No sanction is required for acts which a person, being a public servant, commits as a private individual.<sup>2</sup>

§ 715. Sanction under s. 195 can only be granted by the court before which the offence was committed, or some court to which it is subordinate.<sup>3</sup> As a general rule, application should be first made to the court before which the offence was committed.<sup>4</sup> If the incumbent of the court is changed, the court still remains the same for this purpose.<sup>5</sup>

In the sections of Act X. of 1872 corresponding to s. 195, the power to sanction was given to "any civil or criminal" court in which the proceeding had taken place. These sections were held by the Allahabad High Court to apply to a revenue court.<sup>6</sup> The same decision was given by the Calcutta Court on the present section, which says "any court." They said: "Having regard to the obvious purpose for which s. 195 was enacted, we think that the widest possible meaning should be given to the word 'court,' as therein mentioned, and that it would include a tribunal empowered to deal with a particular matter, and authorised to receive evidence bearing on that matter, in order to enable it to arrive at a determination."<sup>7</sup> A Mamlutdar's Court, under Bombay Act, III. of 1876, and a Village Moonsiff's Court, under Madras Reg., IV. of 1816, can grant sanction in respect of offences committed before them.<sup>8</sup> As to whether a registrar or sub-registrar under Act III. of 1877 is a court, there are conflicting decisions. Three different High Courts have held that "he is not," on the ground that his functions in the cases in which he is authorised to take evidence are administrative, and not judicial.<sup>9</sup> On the other hand, the Madras High Court, in two decisions, has held that he is such a court.<sup>10</sup>

<sup>1</sup> *Eddara Virana v. Reg.*, 3 Mad. 400.

<sup>2</sup> *Reg. v. Lakshman*, 2 Bom. 481.

<sup>3</sup> *Re Kasichunder*, 6 Cal. 440.

<sup>4</sup> *Re Rajah of Venkatagiri*, 6 Mad. H.C. 92.

<sup>5</sup> 7 Mad. H.C. Rulings 12.

<sup>6</sup> *Reg. v. Sabsukh*, 2 All. 533.

<sup>7</sup> *Raghoobuns Sahoy v. Kokil Singh*, 17 Cal. 872.

<sup>8</sup> *Re Savanta*, 5 Bom. 137; *Reg. v. Venkayya*, 11 Mad. 375.

<sup>9</sup> *Reg. v. Subba*, 11 Mad. 3; *Reg. v. Tulja*, 12 Bom. 36; *Reg. v. Ramlall*, 15 All. 141.

<sup>10</sup> *Re Venkatachella Pillai*, 10 Mad. 154; *Atchayya v. Gungayya*, 15 Mad. 138 F.B.

For the purposes of s. 195, "every court, other than a Court of Small Causes, shall be deemed to be subordinate to the court to which appeals from the former court ordinarily lie." It makes no difference that the particular proceeding in which the offence took place would have been appealable to a higher tribunal. Therefore the court of a subordinate judge is subordinate to the district court, although the amount at issue in the suit would have made the appeal lie direct to the High Court.<sup>1</sup> A magistrate of the first class is subordinate to the magistrate of the district,<sup>2</sup> but the assistant Collector is not.<sup>3</sup> He is subordinate to the Collector, and the Collector is subordinate to the district judge.<sup>4</sup>

§ 716. "Sanction should not be given by any court without first examining the evidence. The object of giving the power to sanction is to secure, as far as possible, that no man shall be prosecuted unless the court hearing the case, or a superior court, is satisfied that it is a proper case to put the party on his trial." Therefore, where the calendar is called for under s. 435 of the Criminal Procedure Code, as the evidence on which the sentence is founded is not before the examining officer, he cannot sanction a prosecution for any matter connected with it.<sup>5</sup> Nor can a judge sanction a prosecution for forgery, where the forgery has not been found by himself, but by an arbitrator to whom the question had been referred, whether a bond was executed or not. Before giving his sanction he should make an independent inquiry, so as to satisfy himself that there were materials to justify a prosecution.<sup>6</sup> In general, this inquiry is made during the progress of some judicial proceeding, either by the court which hears the evidence, or by the superior court which has all the evidence before it. Sometimes, however, as in the case of applications for sanction to prosecute under s. 211 of the Penal Code, the original proceeding has stopped short before the whole evidence in support of the alleged false charge has been heard. In such a case it has frequently been held that it is illegal to sanction a prosecution, till the original complainant has been allowed to bring forward all the testimony on which he relied in support

<sup>1</sup> *Reg. v. Lakshman*, 2 Bom. 481; *re Anant Ramchandra*, 11 Bom. 438; *Maduray Pillay v. Elderton*, 22 Cal. 487.

<sup>2</sup> *Re Gur Dayal*, 2 All. 205; *Reg. v. Padmanath Pal*, 2 Bom. 384.

<sup>3</sup> *Reg. v. Narotam Das*, 6 All. 98.

<sup>4</sup> *Hari Prasad v. Debi Dial*, 10 All. 582.

<sup>5</sup> *Reg. v. Kuppu*, 7 Mad. 560.

<sup>6</sup> *Parsotam Lal v. Bijai*, 6 All. 101.

of his accusation.<sup>1</sup> Where the judge who tries the case to the end proceeds afterwards to sanction a prosecution, no notice need be given to the party against whom sanction is granted.<sup>2</sup> But where the whole proceedings have terminated, and the application for sanction is made to another judge, who has not heard the case, notice of the application ought to be given, as the latter judge might possibly take a different view from his predecessor.<sup>3</sup>

§ 717. Where a case was amicably settled without any evidence being offered, and afterwards sanction was given to prosecute one of the parties for a false statement contained in a petition filed by him in the course of the suit, Garth, C.J., said: "If a case is settled without any evidence being gone into, it seems to me that the court in which the suit was brought has no opportunity of judging of the *bona fides* of the claim or defence; and if it has any power at all under such circumstances, which I very much doubt, to give its sanction to criminal proceedings against either party, I think it would be guilty of a great impropriety and indiscretion in so doing."<sup>4</sup> This case was relied on by the Madras High Court in support of a ruling that "it was not competent to the judge, on an application for sanction, to go beyond the record to determine whether sanction ought to be given, when the record itself disclosed no foundation whatever for the charges."<sup>5</sup> It is evident, however, that if this rule were imperative, no prosecution could ever be brought for perjury or forgery committed in a suit, founded on evidence which came to light after its termination. Suppose, for instance, that a charge of rape is made and prosecuted to conviction, and it is subsequently ascertained that at the time of the alleged offence the prosecutrix was at a different place, could it be contended that this fact, because it does not appear upon the record, is not one which might be placed before the sessions judge, as a ground for his sanctioning a prosecution under ss. 195 or 211? The rule itself, and the two cases

<sup>1</sup> *Reg. v. Shibo Behara*, 6 Cal. 584; *re Gauri Sahai*, 6 All. 114; *re Govindan*, 7 Mad. 224; *Reg. v. Sheikh Beari*, 10 Mad. 232; *Kedarnath Das v. Mohesh Chunder*, 16 Cal. 661; see *contra Gyan Chunder v. Protab Chunder*, 7 Cal. 208, where Prinsep, J., puts his decision on the fact that the complainant had not asked the sanctioning magistrate to inquire into his case.

<sup>2</sup> *Reg. v. Sheikh Beari*, *ub. sup.*

<sup>3</sup> *Abhilakh Singh v. Khub Lall*, 10 Cal. 1100.

<sup>4</sup> *Re Kasi Chunder Mozamdar*, 6 Cal. 440.

<sup>5</sup> *Zamindar of Sivagiri v. Reg.*, 6 Mad. 29.



above cited, have since been disapproved of by a later decision of the High Court of Bengal.<sup>1</sup>

§ 718. The sanction may be in general terms, but it must be so expressed as to point to a definite prosecution, and to define the prosecution to which it points. It is not sufficient that it should grant a roving commission to the applicant to find out what offence, if any, has been committed, and to commence proceedings in respect of it.<sup>2</sup> It must not only specify the court, or other place, in which, and the occasion on which the offence was committed, but it should state the offence intended to be charged in general terms, though the details need not be given.<sup>3</sup> The court should specify the particular act or acts of forgery, and the particular words which constitute the perjury, for which permission to prosecute is given,<sup>4</sup> and the section or sections of the Penal Code under which it authorises criminal proceedings to be taken.<sup>5</sup> This, of course, does not prevent the court in which the trial takes place from framing a charge for any other offence which the facts may disclose. The court is not bound to name the accused person, nor to inquire into all the persons who are implicated in the offence;<sup>6</sup> but this renders it all the more necessary so to limit the sanction, that all who are implicated may have notice that they are put on their defence. Where, however, the sanction is expressly limited to certain definite persons by name, it may be held that even under the words of the present Code a prosecution of any other person would not be admissible.<sup>7</sup> Where the offence of giving false evidence is charged in the alternative, sanction is necessary as regards each branch of the alternative.<sup>8</sup>

Sanction is required for the prosecution, not for the prosecutor. Therefore its validity is not affected by the death of the petitioner on whose prayer it was granted.<sup>9</sup>

§ 719. There is no period of limitation for applications

<sup>1</sup> *Shashi Kumar v. Shashi Kumar*, 19 Cal. 345.

<sup>2</sup> *Baperam Surmah v. Gouri Nath Dutt*, 20 Cal. 474.

<sup>3</sup> *Re Balaji Sitaram*, 11 Bom. H.C. 34.

<sup>4</sup> 10 Suth. Cr. 41; *re Jivan Ambaidas*, 19 Bom. 362.

<sup>5</sup> *Re Parsotam Lall*, 6 All. 101.

<sup>6</sup> *Re Govindan*, 7 Mad. 224.

<sup>7</sup> *Reg. v. Rajkishore Roy*, 15 Suth. Cr. 55; *Reg. v. Mahima Chandra*, 7 B.L.R. 26.

<sup>8</sup> *Re Balaji Sitaram*, 11 Bom. H.C. 34; *Reg. v. Dala Jiva*, 10 Bom. 190.

<sup>9</sup> *Re Thathayya*, 12 Mad. 47.



for sanction to prosecute.<sup>1</sup> No sanction under s. 195 remains in force for more than six months from the date on which it is given. When the prosecution has commenced within six months, it may then go on till it is completed.<sup>2</sup> After the expiration of the six months without active steps being taken, no fresh sanction can be granted.<sup>3</sup> Where the judge who tried the case out of which the application for sanction arose has refused the sanction, it seems extremely doubtful whether a sanction given by his successor would be valid.<sup>4</sup>

Any sanction given or refused under s. 195 may be revoked or granted by any authority to which the authority giving or refusing it is subordinate. This power of revocation may be exercised by the High Court either by way of appeal or revision,<sup>5</sup> and either where the order of sanction is absolutely illegal, or where it is made by an improper exercise of discretion.<sup>6</sup> The jurisdiction conferred by a sanction actually granted is valid till the sanction is set aside by a competent authority, and the legality of the sanction cannot be questioned by any other authority.<sup>7</sup>

§ 720. Where no application for sanction has been made, or where the court to which it is made prefers to set on foot a public prosecution,<sup>8</sup> the court may proceed by way of complaint under s. 195. It has been laid down in Allahabad and Bombay that a complaint under s. 195 must be shaped according to the provisions of s. 476, both as to the previous inquiry that is necessary, and as to the magistrate to whom the case is to be sent.<sup>9</sup> Therefore, if the court which makes the complaint directs an inquiry to be made by a magistrate of a lower than the first class, the latter has no jurisdiction.<sup>10</sup>

<sup>1</sup> *Reg. v. Adjudhia Singh*, 10 All. 350.

<sup>2</sup> *Gulab Singh v. Debi Prasad*, 6 All. 45.

<sup>3</sup> *Darbari Mandar v. Jagoo Lal*, 22 Cal. 573. See, as to the expiration of the six months during the court holidays, *Raj Chunder Mozumdar v. Gour Chunder*, 22 Cal. 176.

<sup>4</sup> *Darbari Mandar v. Jagoo Lal*, *ub. sup.*

<sup>5</sup> *Khepu Nath v. Grish Chunder*, 16 Cal. 730.

<sup>6</sup> *Reg. v. Shibo Behara*, 6 Cal. 584; *Reg. v. Sabsukh*, 2 All. 533; *Kedar-nath Das v. Mohesh Chunder*, 16 Cal. 661.

<sup>7</sup> *Reg. v. Irad Ally*, 4 Cal. 869.

<sup>8</sup> See, as to the grounds for adopting the latter course, *per Aikman, J.*, 16 All., p. 83.

<sup>9</sup> *Ishri Prasad v. Sham Lall*, 7 All. 871; *Reg. v. Rachappa*, 13 Bom. 109.

<sup>10</sup> *Reg. v. Yendava Chandramma*, 7 Mad. 189; *Reg. v. Kuppu*, *ibid.*, 560. See, as to the illegality of a court proceeding under s. 476, *proprio motu*, in a matter not pending before it, *Reg. v. Kuppu*, *ub. sup.*; *re Mathura Das*, 16 All. 80.

As a general rule, the same necessity exists for making a preliminary inquiry as to the guilt of the accused party previous to a complaint, as there would be previous to granting sanction, where the court which makes the complaint has not already got sufficient evidence before it.<sup>1</sup> There is, however, a difference between the language of the Criminal Procedure Code of 1872, s. 471, which directed the court to make "such preliminary inquiry as may be necessary," and of s. 476 of the present Code, which directs it to make "any preliminary inquiry which may be necessary." Such an inquiry is therefore not compulsory, if under the facts of the case it is not necessary.<sup>2</sup>

A complaint made under s. 195 cannot be revoked by a higher authority. The prosecution so instituted must take its regular course, though of course the magistrate to whom the case is referred may dismiss the charge if it is not made out by the evidence.<sup>3</sup> The High Court can, however, deal with any illegality in the proceedings which follow upon the complaint either by way of appeal or revision.<sup>4</sup>

§ 721. Under s. 197, the words "not removable from office without the sanction of Government" only apply to the preceding words "any public servant." Therefore, a district moonsiff cannot be prosecuted on any complaint made against him as a judge without sanction under this section.<sup>5</sup> But no sanction is required for the prosecution of a police patel in Bombay, in consequence of the change in his position made by recent local legislation.<sup>6</sup>

"The above section, by implication, vests in the court or authority to whom the judge or public servant not removable, etc., is subordinate, the power of sanctioning or directing such prosecution. It does not say that the Government must give the power, but that it shall exist unless limited or reserved. Every court or authority, therefore, has it, unless there is a limitation."<sup>7</sup> "There is no provision that the sanction must be in writing. It is, no doubt, very

<sup>1</sup> *Reg. v. Baijoo Lall*, 1 Cal. 450; *Government v. Karimdad*, 6 Cal. 496; *Khepu Nath v. Grish Chunder*, 16 Cal. 730; *Reg. v. Gunga Ram*, 8 All. 38.

<sup>2</sup> *Baperam Surma v. Gouri Nath Dutt*, 20 Cal. 474; *Reg. v. Malabadal*, 15 All. 392.

<sup>3</sup> *Reg. v. Rachappa*, 13 Bom. 109; *re Mathura Das*, 16 All. 80.

<sup>4</sup> *Re Mathura*, *ub. sup.*; *Khepu Nath v. Grish Chunder*, 16 Cal. 730.

<sup>5</sup> 6 Mad. H.C. Appx. xxii.

<sup>6</sup> *Empress v. Bhugwan*, 4 Bom. 357.

<sup>7</sup> See *Reg. v. Malhar*, 7 Bom. H.C. C.C. 64, accord.

desirable that such sanction or direction should be put in writing and attached to the record, but it is by no means legally imperative."<sup>1</sup>

Where the Local Government limits its sanction by directions as to the person by whom, and the manner in which, a charge is to be preferred, these directions must be strictly carried out, and the court cannot entertain charges preferred by any other person, or in any other manner.<sup>2</sup>

By a Madras Notification, of the 27th of August, 1873, the power to direct or sanction the entertainment of complaints of offences committed in their public capacity by subordinate magistrates (tahsildars and deputy tahsildars) has been restricted to the Board of Revenue.

By a Madras Notification, of the 13th of September, 1873, the like power, in regard to all other classes of magistrates, is reserved to the Governor in Council.

No prosecution for the offence of giving false evidence in any statement made by a person to whom a pardon has been tendered shall be entertained without the sanction of the High Court.<sup>3</sup>

Lastly, "No court shall take cognizance of an offence falling under Chapter XIX. or Chapter XXI. of the Indian Penal Code, or under ss. 493—496 (both inclusive) of the same Code, except upon a complaint made by some person aggrieved by such offence."<sup>4</sup>

§ 722. *Interest in Judge.*—Another ground of exemption from jurisdiction arises from the Criminal Procedure Code, s. 555. "No judge or magistrate shall, except with the permission of the court to which an appeal lies from his court, try or commit for trial any case to or in which he is a party, or personally interested; and no judge or magistrate shall hear an appeal from any judgment or order passed or made by himself.

*Explanation.*—A judge or magistrate shall not be deemed to be a party or personally interested, within the meaning of this section, to or in any case, merely because he is a Municipal Commissioner." Nor shall he be disqualified for trying an offence against the Cantonment Act, because he is a member of the Cantonment Committee, or is the com-

<sup>1</sup> *Per Holloway, J., Reg. v. Kristna Rau*, 7 Mad. H.C. 58; S.C. Weir, 1st edit., p. 283, 2nd edit., p. 389; *Reg. v. Narayanasami*, *ibid.* 182.

<sup>2</sup> *Reg. v. Vinayak*, 8 Bom. H.C. C.C. 32.

<sup>3</sup> Crim. P.C., s. 339; *Reg. v. Dala Jiva*, 10 Bom. 190.

<sup>4</sup> Crim. P.C. 198.



manding officer of the cantonment, or because he has ordered or approved the prosecution.<sup>1</sup>

The principle laid down in this section is one of universal jurisprudence, and applies to every official, however high in rank. Where a Canal Company brought a suit which was decreed in their favour by the Vice-Chancellor, and his decree was affirmed on appeal by the Chancellor, Lord Cottenham, and it turned out that he was a shareholder in the company, his decree was set aside.<sup>2</sup> The rule was laid down lately by Bowen, L.J., as follows:<sup>3</sup> "Nothing can be clearer than the principle of law that a person who has a judicial duty to perform, disqualifies himself from performing it if he has a pecuniary interest in the decision which he is about to give, or a bias which renders him otherwise than an impartial judge. If he is an accuser, he must not be a judge. If he has a pecuniary interest in the success of the accusation, he must not be a judge. When such a pecuniary interest exists, the law does not allow any further inquiry as to whether or not the mind was actually biassed by the pecuniary interest. The fact is established, from which the inference is drawn, that he is interested in the decision, and he cannot act as a judge. But it must be in all cases a question of substance and of fact whether one of the judges has in truth also been an accuser. The question must be: Has the judge whose impartiality is impugned taken any part whatever in the prosecution, either by himself or by his agents."

§ 723. The strongest ground of disqualification is pecuniary interest. When it is established, it is conclusive. In all other cases which might exercise an influence, it is necessary to go on and show that it is probable they would do so. In one case, where it was suggested that a conviction was bad because it was passed by justices who were trustees of certain societies, whose money was invested on the security of the litigating corporation, the objection was overruled. Blackburn, J., after pointing out that the trustees had no personal interest in the matter, said: "There is no doubt that any direct pecuniary interest, however small, in the subject of inquiry, does disqualify a person from acting as a judge in the matter." "Wherever there is a real

<sup>1</sup> Act XIII. of 1889, s. 12.

<sup>2</sup> *Dimes v. Grand Junction Canal Co.*, 3 H.L. Ca. 759.

<sup>3</sup> *Leeson v. General Council of Medical Education*, 43 Ch. D. 866, at p. 384.



likelihood that the judge would, from kindred or any other cause, have a bias in favour of one of the parties, it would be very wrong for him to act; and we are not to be understood to say that where there is a real bias of this sort the court would not interfere." "Circumstances from which a suspicion of favour may arise do not produce the same effect as a pecuniary interest."<sup>1</sup> The fact that a person has been mixed up with a case as an adviser, or common friend of the contending parties, is not sufficient. Stephen, J., said: "The question is whether Mr. Farrant had such a substantial interest other than pecuniary, as to make it likely that he would have a real bias."<sup>2</sup> Where such circumstances exist, it is not necessary to find that they would warp the judgment of the individual judge. It is enough if they might do so. It is essential to the sound administration of justice that confidence should be felt in those who dispense it, and that no case should be decided by any one upon whose impartiality any doubt can be felt. As Lord Esher, M.R., observed: "The question of incapacity is to be one of substance and of fact, and therefore it seems to me that the man's position must be such that, in substance and in fact, he cannot be suspected. Not that any perversely minded person cannot suspect him, but that he must bear such a relation to the matter that he cannot reasonably be suspected of being biassed."<sup>3</sup>

§ 724. When it is laid down that a man may not be at once a prosecutor and a judge, it is to be remembered that the term "prosecutor" has several shades of meaning. No one could suppose that a man may try a prisoner for an offence committed against himself, or his wife, or a member of his own family.<sup>4</sup> A prosecution may be carried on by a corporation, such as a bank, railway company, or canal company, in which the judge is a shareholder. Here he is again disqualified if he has, as such shareholder, any pecuniary interest in the result of the litigation. Again, the judge may be a member of a body created to discharge public functions, such as a Municipality, a Conservancy

<sup>1</sup> *Reg. v. Rand*, L.R., 1 Q.B. 230. For a case in which such a bias was held to exist, see *Reg. v. Meyer*, 1 Q.B.D. 173.

<sup>2</sup> *Reg. v. Farrant*, 20 Q.B.D. 58.

<sup>3</sup> *Allinson v. General Council of Medical Education* (1894), 1 Q.B. 750, at p. 759; *Serjeant v. Dale*, 2 Q.B.D. 558.

<sup>4</sup> Bom. H.C. Rulings, 15th Feb., 1887, 25th August, 1887, 27th Feb. 1890, cited *Sohni*, Crim. P.C., 3rd edit., p. 356.

Board, or a Council, whose duty it is to maintain the discipline of a particular profession. Here the mere fact of membership will not be a disqualification if the judge has taken no active part in bringing about or directing the prosecution.<sup>1</sup> If, however, he has done so, then the prosecution is his; and although he may derive no personal benefit from a conviction, still he has the real or assumed bias which arises from the fact, that he is leading a body which considers itself aggrieved by the defendant, and is trying to punish him.<sup>2</sup> Accordingly, it has been several times held in India that a conviction for an offence under a Municipal Act, in which the chairman or a salaried officer of the corporation had sat as a justice, was illegal, and should be set aside, notwithstanding the proviso at the end of s. 555. The object of the proviso was to enable a municipal commissioner to act as a judge, he having no interest in the matter beyond that which attached to the discharge of a public duty. It did not apply to the case of a person who, from his intimate connection with the corporation, had an interest, pecuniary or personal, which was likely to bias him in the matter of the prosecution.<sup>3</sup> The same construction has been put upon a similar proviso of an English statute.<sup>4</sup> A magistrate who has special charge of some particular Government interest, such as opium, excise, salt, forests, or the like, is not disqualified from exercising jurisdiction over offences in regard to such matters.<sup>5</sup>

§ 725. A still weaker case than any of the above is that of a judge, against whom it is merely objected that he had, in his magisterial capacity, been concerned in prosecuting the case in its earlier stages. It is evident that here there is no question of pecuniary or personal interest; but it is quite possible that an official who has begun by taking up the partisan view of a policeman, may find it difficult to assume the even impartiality of a judge. In such a case the officer is not incapacitated from trying the charge; but it is so undesirable, both for himself and for the defendant, that he should do so, that where it is possible

<sup>1</sup> *Leeson v. General Council of Medical Education*, 43 Ch. D. 366; *Altinson v. Same* (1894), 1 Q.B. 750; *Reg. v. Ferozsha Pestonji*, 18 Bom. 442.

<sup>2</sup> *Reg. v. Milledge*, 4 Q.B.D. 332.

<sup>3</sup> *Wood v. Corporation of Calcutta*, 7 Cal. 322; *Nobin Krishna v. Chairman of Suburban Municipality*, 10 Cal. 194; *Kharak Chand Pal Tarack Chunder*, *ibid.* 1030.

<sup>4</sup> *Reg. v. Handsley*, 8 Q.B.D. 383.

<sup>5</sup> *Re Ganeshi*, 15 All. 192.

the matter should be disposed of by some independent authority.<sup>1</sup> There may, however, be cases in which an executive officer has been so mixed up in a case, has expressed such a strong opinion upon it, and has so advised active proceedings in the matter, that it would be absolutely improper that he should take a judicial part in any later stage of it.<sup>2</sup> If the conduct of the prosecuting officer was in any way mixed up with that of the prisoner, so that he could be in any way affected by the defence set up, this would at once make him an interested party, so as to impose an absolute disqualification upon him as a judge.<sup>3</sup> In no case can the same person combine the functions of prosecutor and judge in the same trial.<sup>4</sup>

In some very rare instances it may happen that a fact which is important to a case is only known to the judge who is trying it. Where this occurs, the knowledge of the judge can only be utilised by his giving evidence as a witness.<sup>5</sup> In such a case the judge is a competent witness, and is not disqualified from trying the case by the fact that he gives evidence, although the necessity for his doing so furnishes the strongest possible reason for his not sitting upon it.<sup>6</sup> It is obvious that the evidence of an official, who descends from the bench to the witness-box, and then returns from the witness-box to the bench, cannot be dealt with in the interests of the prisoner like any other evidence. Accordingly, it has been held by the Calcutta High Court that a magistrate cannot himself be a witness in a case in which he is the sole judge of law and of fact. The judges were divided as to the result of his being so. Markby, J., thought that the conviction should necessarily be set aside. Prinsep, J., was of opinion that this circumstance alone would not necessarily vitiate the proceedings, if, after setting aside his evidence, there was enough left to support the conviction.<sup>7</sup>

§ 726. In *Dimes v. Grand Junction Canal Co.*,<sup>8</sup> Baron Parke, in delivering the opinion of the judges, stated that a

<sup>1</sup> *Re Het Lal Ray*, 22 Suth. Cr. 75; *Reg. v. Hira Lal Das*, 8 B.L.R. 422.

<sup>2</sup> *Lobari Domini v. Assam Ry.*, 10 Cal. 915; *Alu Nathu v. Gagubha*, 19 Bom. 608.

<sup>3</sup> *Reg. v. Bholanath Sen*, 2 Cal. 23.

<sup>4</sup> *Reg. v. Gungadhur Bhunjo*, 3 Cal. 622.

<sup>5</sup> See Indian Evidence Act, I. of 1872, s. 121.

<sup>6</sup> *Reg. v. Mukta Singh*, 4 B.L.R. A. Cr. 15; *Reg. v. Bholanath Sen*, 2 Cal. 23.

<sup>7</sup> *Reg. v. Donnelly*, 2 Cal. 405.

<sup>8</sup> 3 H.L. 759.



decree given by a judge who was an interested party was not void, but only voidable, and that the decree itself, and all acts done under it, were valid unless and until it was set aside. This may throw some light upon a question which was raised in *Reg. v. Bholanath Sen*,<sup>1</sup> as to whether the prisoner could waive the objection to the judge trying the case. If the fact of an interest absolutely destroyed the jurisdiction of the court, it is quite clear that no consent could confer a jurisdiction which did not exist.<sup>2</sup> But if there was an absolute want of jurisdiction, the decree would be void, and not voidable. The better view seems to be that which is stated by Couch, C.J., in delivering the judgment of the Full Bench in *Reg. v. Hira Lall Das*: "It is not a question of want of jurisdiction so much as of a disability arising from interest to exercise his jurisdiction in the particular case." In the course of the argument the same judge said: "The practice in England is that if a justice is interested in the subject-matter of the suit, he discloses his interest, and leaves the parties to decide whether they are willing to abide by his decision in the case."<sup>3</sup> On the other hand, the impolicy of putting it upon the parties in a criminal case in India to waive their objections is very great. As the Court said in *Reg. v. Bholanath Sen*:<sup>4</sup> "In the Mofussil most prisoners, not properly defended, would probably assent to any irregularity which the judge or magistrate trying them chose to suggest. There would be an end to all procedure if such an assent were held to warrant material and important irregularities."

§ 727. The general principle that no one should be judge in a case in which he is himself interested, is also recognized in s. 487 of the Criminal Procedure Code.

"Except as provided in ss. 477, 480, and 485, no judge of a criminal court or magistrate, other than a judge of a High Court, the Recorder of Rangoon and the Presidency magistrates, shall try any person for any offence referred to in s. 195, when such offence is committed before himself, or in contempt of his authority, or is brought under his notice as such judge or magistrate in the course of a judicial proceeding.

Nothing in ss. 476 or 482 shall prevent a magistrate

<sup>1</sup> 2 Cal. 23.

<sup>2</sup> *Minakshi Naidu v. Subramaniya Sastri*, 14 I.A. 160; S.C. 11 Mad. 26.

<sup>3</sup> 8 B.L.R., pp. 424, 431.

<sup>4</sup> 2 Cal., at p. 31.



empowered to commit to the Court of Session or High Court, from himself committing any case to such court, or shall prevent a Presidency magistrate from himself disposing of any case, instead of sending it for inquiry to another magistrate."

The High Court of Madras has held that the disqualification contained in this section is personal, and does not extend to the court when occupied by different incumbents. Therefore an offence referred to in s. 195, when committed before a court filled by A, may be tried by the same court when filled by B.<sup>1</sup> Curiously enough, under the wording of the section, a contrary result is arrived at when the same person fills different courts. It has been decided by a Full Bench of the Calcutta High Court that, in s. 487, "effect must be given to the words 'as such judge or magistrate;' and the meaning of the section must be taken to be, that when an offence referred to in s. 195 of the Crim. P.C. has been committed before a judge of a criminal court or magistrate, or in contempt of his authority, or brought under his notice in the course of a judicial proceeding, he cannot himself try such offence." Therefore it was held that A. B., as sessions judge, had jurisdiction to try a case under s. 196 of the I.P.C., although he had himself sanctioned the prosecution in his character as district judge.<sup>2</sup> This decision overrules so much of the ruling in *Madhub Chunder v. Novodeep Chunder*<sup>3</sup> as decided the same point in an opposite way. It leaves that case untouched, however, so far as it decided, first, that the trial of an appeal is included in the words "shall try any person;" and, secondly, that the hearing of an appeal from an order refusing sanction to prosecute was "a judicial proceeding" within the meaning of the Criminal Procedure Code.

A sessions judge cannot try an offence of giving false evidence committed before himself in another criminal case.<sup>4</sup>

§ 728. When a prisoner is charged in the alternative with giving false evidence, either in a deposition before court A or in one before court B, if he is also found guilty in the alternative, it cannot be alleged as to either court that the offence was not committed before it, and therefore neither

<sup>1</sup> Anon, 1 Mad. 305.

<sup>2</sup> *Reg. v. Sarat Chandra*, 16 Cal. 766, following *Empress v. De Silva*, 6 Bom. 479, and followed by *Reg. v. Rajji Daji*, 18 Bom. 380.

<sup>3</sup> 16 Cal. 121.

<sup>4</sup> *Reg. v. Makhdam*, 14 All. 354.

court can try the offence.<sup>1</sup> If either court could find affirmatively that the false statement was really given before the other court, the charge ought to be amended, and a finding upon the amended charge would be unobjectionable.

The enlarged words contained in s. 487 have got rid of the difficult questions which arose under s. 473 of the Act of 1872, as to what offences could be said to have been "committed in contempt of the authority of the court."<sup>2</sup> As regards all offences referred to in s. 195, there are now only three cases in which a court other than a High Court, etc., can try an offence committed before itself, etc., viz. in cases provided for by ss. 477, 480, and 485.<sup>3</sup>

§ 729. **Previous Acquittal or Conviction.**—The law upon this point is contained in the Criminal Procedure Code, s. 403.

"A person who has once been tried by a court of competent jurisdiction for an offence, and convicted or acquitted of such offence, shall, while such conviction or acquittal remains in force, not be liable to be tried again for the same offence, nor on the same facts for any other offence for which a different charge from the one made against him might have been made under s. 236, or for which he might have been convicted under s. 237.<sup>4</sup>

"A person acquitted or convicted of any offence may be afterwards tried for any distinct offence for which a separate charge might have been made against him on the former trial under s. 235, para. 1.<sup>5</sup>

"A person convicted of any offence constituted by any act causing consequences which, together with such act, constituted a different offence from that of which he was convicted, may be afterwards tried for such last-mentioned offence, if the consequences had not happened, or were not known to the court to have happened, at the time when he was convicted.

"A person acquitted or convicted of any offence constituted by any acts may, notwithstanding such acquittal or conviction, be subsequently charged with, and tried for, any other offence constituted by the same acts which he may

<sup>1</sup> *Sundriah v. Reg.*, 3 Mad. 254. The apparently conflicting decision in *Reg. v. Nomal*, 4 B.L.R. A. Cr. 9, was given under a section of the Act of 1861, which corresponds to s. 477 of the Act of 1882.

<sup>2</sup> See *Reg. v. Kashmiri Lal*, 1 All. 625.

<sup>3</sup> *Reg. v. Seshayya*, 13 Mad. 24.

<sup>4</sup> See them, *ante*, §§ 697, 699.

<sup>5</sup> See it, *ante*, § 699.

have committed, if the court by which he was first tried was not competent to try the offence with which he is subsequently charged.

“*Explanation.*—The dismissal of a complaint, the stopping of proceedings under s. 249, the discharge of the accused, or any entry made upon a charge under s. 273, is not an acquittal for the purposes of this section.

### *Illustrations.*

“(a) A is tried upon a charge of theft as a servant, and acquitted. He cannot afterwards, while the acquittal remains in force, be charged with theft as a servant, or, upon the same facts, with theft simply, or with criminal breach of trust.

“(b) A is tried upon a charge of murder, and acquitted. There is no charge of robbery; but it appears from the facts that A committed robbery at the time when the murder was committed. He may afterwards be charged with, and tried for, robbery.

“(c) A is tried for causing grievous hurt, and convicted. The person injured afterwards dies. A may be tried again for culpable homicide.

“(d) A is charged before the Court of Session, and convicted of the culpable homicide of B. A may not afterwards be tried on the same facts for the murder of B.

“(e) A is charged by a magistrate of the first class with, and convicted by him of, voluntarily causing hurt to B. A may not afterwards be tried for voluntarily causing grievous hurt to B on the same facts, unless the case comes within para. 3 of this section.

“(f) A is charged by a magistrate of the second class with, and convicted by him of, theft of property from the person of B. A may be subsequently charged with, and tried for, robbery on the same facts.

“(g) A, B, and C are charged by a magistrate of the first class with, and convicted by him of, robbing D. A, B, and C may afterwards be charged with, and tried for, dacoity on the same facts.”

§ 730. The first essential to a successful plea of acquittal or conviction is that the case should have been tried; that is, that it should have reached a stage which entitled or required the judge to pronounce a decision upon the guilt or innocence of the accused. Where the case has never been inquired into at all,<sup>1</sup> or has been disposed of in any of the ways pointed out in the above explanation, it has not been tried.<sup>2</sup> The non-appearance of the complainant in a summons case entitles, but does not compel, the magistrate to acquit the accused at once.<sup>3</sup> In a warrant case, the

<sup>1</sup> *Government of Bombay v. Shidappo*, 5 Bom. 405.

<sup>2</sup> *Jagabandhu v. Gobardhan*, 1 B.L.R. A. Cr. 1; *Reg. v. Tika Singh*, All. 251.

<sup>3</sup> Crim. P.C., s. 247.



absence of the complainant in a case which may be compounded only entitles the magistrate to discharge the accused, which does not amount to an acquittal.<sup>1</sup> The withdrawal of the complainant in a summons case, and the compounding of an offence which may be compounded, amount to an acquittal.<sup>2</sup> Under s. 333, the Advocate-General may, at any stage of a trial, inform the court that he will not further prosecute the defendant, and thereupon he shall be discharged; but such discharge shall not amount to an acquittal. This privilege does not extend to any other representative of the Crown. The Calcutta High Court has laid down that "it was not competent to the Government vakeel, after a prisoner had been arraigned and had pleaded Not Guilty, to withdraw that charge. The prisoner was entitled to a trial and a clear verdict of acquittal, if there was no sufficient evidence produced against him."<sup>3</sup>

§ 731. The next essential is that the court should have been one of competent jurisdiction. A sentence which has been passed by a court which had no jurisdiction is a mere nullity. When it has been set aside, it can of course have no efficacy as a bar to any future proceedings.<sup>4</sup> When the sentence has been one of acquittal, it is unnecessary to set it aside.<sup>5</sup> The American courts have held that a conviction also is so completely a nullity, that it need not be set aside before a fresh prosecution is instituted. But if the prisoner was actually suffering punishment under the erroneous conviction, I think it would be necessary to remove it before further proceedings could be had.<sup>6</sup>

Where the court had jurisdiction over the entire subject-matter of the offence, its sentence, while still in force, is a bar to any further prosecution on the same charge, or upon any other charge which would be established by the same evidence as that on which the former prosecution was based. This principle applies to proceedings under special and local laws, as well as to cases under the Penal Code.<sup>7</sup> It is not in any degree affected by the punishment awarded, or by the want of punishment. A person who was convicted

<sup>1</sup> See 4 Mad. H.C. Rulings 8; *Reg. v. Jogenironath*, 6 Cal. 523.

<sup>2</sup> Crim. P.C., ss. 248, 345.

<sup>3</sup> 5 Suth. Cr. Letter, 4.

<sup>4</sup> *Reg. v. Mulhoora Pershad*, 2 Suth. Cr. 10; *Reg. v. Wahed Ally*, 13 Suth. Cr. 42.

<sup>5</sup> *Reg. v. Husein*, 8 Bom. 307.

<sup>6</sup> See Bishop, §§ 863, 866.

<sup>7</sup> *Reg. v. Gustadji*, 10 Bom. 181.



of an assault by a court of summary jurisdiction, was discharged without any sentence of fine or imprisonment, on giving security for good behaviour. It was held that he could not be convicted on indictment before a superior court for the same assault.<sup>1</sup> Accordingly, a defendant who has been acquitted of an assault under s. 352, cannot, be tried again upon the same complaint and the same facts for causing hurt.<sup>2</sup> Nor can a person acquitted of a breach of trust be tried upon the same facts alleged to be a theft or criminal misappropriation, or *vice versa*. For in all these cases if the facts set up in the second indictment had been proved in the first a conviction would have resulted (*ante*, § 697). And similarly, a summary conviction under a statute for injuring a person by negligent conduct on a highway, was held to be an answer to an indictment for the same act treated as an assault.<sup>3</sup> So where a man was charged with theft and mischief in respect of certain branches cut from a tree claimed by the prosecutor, and was acquitted of the charge of mischief on the ground that he had a good title to the tree as against the prosecutor, but no finding was recorded as to the theft, it was held that no further proceedings could be taken on that charge. It is evident that the facts alleged on the charge of mischief would have been equally good evidence as to the theft, and that both charges were equally negatived by the finding as to the title.<sup>4</sup>

Where a prisoner was convicted upon one indictment under s. 50 of the Post Office Act, XVII. of 1854,<sup>5</sup> for fraudulently secreting a post-letter, and then was convicted upon a second indictment under the same section for fraudulently making away with the same letter, the first conviction was held to be a bar to the second indictment. Scotland, C.J., said: "In the present case the prisoner might properly have been charged in the first instance with both the criminal acts of fraudulently secreting and making away with the letter; and although either act is punishable under the section as an offence without any evidence of the other, still, as it appears that both acts were connected and formed substantially a part of one and the same criminal transaction, and the evidence with

<sup>1</sup> *Reg. v. Miles*, 24 Q.B.D. 423.

<sup>2</sup> *Kaptan v. Smith*, 7 B.L.R. Appx. xxv.; S.C. 16 Suth. Cr. 3.

<sup>3</sup> *Wemyss v. Hopkins*, L.R., 10 Q.B. 378.

<sup>4</sup> *Reg. v. Erramreddi*, 8 Mad. 296.

<sup>5</sup> Repealed by Act XIV. of 1866.

reference to such acts was as necessary and material on the first charge as it was on the second, the prisoner must be considered to have been tried and in peril in respect of the whole transaction as one offence on the first charge. The evidence as to his making away with the letter was properly a part of the case in support of the first charge, and the strongest proof of it. There was, in fact, no part of the evidence upon which the second conviction took place which was not properly evidence on the first charge.”<sup>1</sup>

§ 732. On the other hand, where there are two completely different offences committed by the same person, one of which is charged and adjudicated upon in one trial, the decision is no bar to a charge for the second offence; though both offences originated from the same motive, formed part of the same series of events, and were proved by the same witnesses, and although the whole of the evidence necessary to prove the second offence had been produced on the former trial for the purpose of proving the first offence. This branch of the law was very fully discussed by Sir B. Peacock, C.J., in a case where the prisoner was accused of having forged pottahs A and B, which bore the same date, and were produced by him in the same suit. He was committed and tried on a charge of forging pottah B only. On the trial both pottahs were produced, evidence was given indiscriminately as to both, and an inference was drawn from the exact similarity of the two signatures, that each must have been traced from a third genuine signature, which was proved to have been in the possession of the prisoner. He was acquitted, and he was then put on his trial for forging pottah A and convicted. A plea of the former acquittal having been overruled, the conviction was supported by the High Court on the ground that the offence of forging pottah A was a completely different offence from that of forging pottah B, and that although the same evidence was used to prove each offence, that evidence, if believed, would prove two offences, not one offence.<sup>2</sup> So there are cases in which the doing of an act constitutes one offence, and if certain consequences follow, a different offence is created.

<sup>1</sup> *Reg. v. Dalapati*, 1 Mad. H.C. 83.

<sup>2</sup> *Reg. v. Dwarkanath Dutt*, 7 Suth. Cr. 15, followed *Reg. v. Mt. Itwarya*, 22 Suth. Cr. 14, where it was held that a charge of murdering J, upon which the prisoner was acquitted, was no bar to a charge for attempting to murder R, upon which she was convicted, though both acts took place at the same time and were proved by the same evidence.

If a man wounds another, and is convicted and punished for the wounding, this is no bar to an indictment for culpable homicide if the injured person dies of the wound.<sup>1</sup> If the accused had been acquitted of the wounding, his acquittal would equally have been no bar to a conviction for the graver offence.<sup>2</sup>

§ 733. An intermediate case between a complete existence and a complete want of jurisdiction, is where certain acts constitute an offence within an inferior jurisdiction, and the same acts, either themselves, or coupled with other circumstances, constitute an offence only cognizable by a higher jurisdiction. Here a conviction or acquittal by a magistrate for the offence which is within his jurisdiction, is no bar to proceedings by a higher tribunal for the offence which was beyond his jurisdiction.<sup>3</sup>

The last clause of section 403 and the *illus.* (*f*) and (*g*) which explain it, are no doubt strictly sound in principle, but would work considerable injustice unless supplemented by other rules. It is evident in *illus.* (*f*) that the theft which is the subject of the first conviction, is the very same theft which is the largest ingredient in the crime which is the subject of the second conviction. So, in *illus.* (*g*) the same robbery which forms the whole of the crime charged in the first trial, is the principal part of the crime charged in the second trial. Suppose, then, that in each pair of cases the presiding officer inflicted the maximum punishment, which was actually suffered, it is plain that a single act of theft or robbery would have received its full penalty twice over. Such injustice would be prevented by providing that where the same set of facts constituted different crimes which fell under different jurisdictions, the offender should only be tried by the court which could take cognizance of the graver offence (*ante*, § 661); or that in such cases as are described in *illus.* (*f*) and (*g*) the punishment inflicted by the second court should always run concurrently with that inflicted by the inferior tribunal.

§ 734. Where a sentence either of acquittal or conviction has been set aside, it ceases of course to have any effect, either in the same or in any future proceeding. In the following case a question arose how far a sentence which

<sup>1</sup> *Reg. v. Morris*, L.R., 1 C.C. 90.

<sup>2</sup> *Reg. v. Panna*, 7 N.W.P. 371.

<sup>3</sup> *Reg. v. Panna*, 7 N.W.P. 371; *Verankutti v. Chiyamu*, 7 Mad. 557.



had been reversed remained in force. The prisoners were tried in circumstances within the meaning of s. 236 of the Criminal Procedure Code (*ante*, § 699), that is to say, for murder and grievous hurt committed in the furtherance of the common object of an unlawful assembly. They were acquitted of murder and convicted of grievous hurt. They appealed to the High Court, which ordered a new trial on the ground of misdirection by the judge. On the new trial they were convicted of culpable homicide not amounting to murder. They then appealed on the ground that on the former charge of murder they might have been convicted of culpable homicide not amounting to murder, and that the acquittal on this charge could not have been set aside by the High Court, as no appeal against it had been made by the Local Government (see *post*, § 783), and that it was therefore still in force. The High Court held that in cases such as are contemplated by s. 236, where the jury acquits upon one view of the case and convicts upon another view, and there is an appeal against the conviction, the whole matter is before the High Court, and that if it orders a new trial, the whole matter is to be tried *de novo*, the acquittal and conviction being equally swept away. It would be different if the accused had been tried for two distinct offences constituted by two distinct acts. If the prisoner was acquitted of murdering A, and convicted of grievous hurt to B, and appealed against his conviction, and a new trial was ordered in respect to it, the acquittal for murder would stand, and be a bar to any future proceedings.<sup>1</sup>

The burthen of proving a plea of previous acquittal or conviction rests upon the accused. The mode of proof is laid down in s. 511 of the Criminal Procedure Code.

<sup>1</sup> *Krishna Dhan Mandal v. Reg.*, 22 Cal. 377.



## CHAPTER XVII.

## EVIDENCE.

- I. Accomplices, §§ 735—740.
- II. Confessions, §§ 741—755.
- III. Examination of Accused, §§ 756—758.
- IV. Dying Declarations, §§ 759, 760.
- V. Character, §§ 761—764.
- VI. Medical Evidence, §§ 765, 766.
- VII. Improper Admission or Rejection of Evidence, § 767.
- VIII. Province of the Judge, §§ 768, 769.

§ 735. In this chapter I do not propose to discuss the law of evidence generally, but only some special questions which arise in criminal trials.

**Accomplices.**—The mere fact that a person has been accused of a crime, and discharged because there was no evidence on which he ought to have been committed, does not incapacitate him from being a witness against those who are ultimately put on their trial.<sup>1</sup> Nor is a person who is actually an offender, and who has been illegally discharged by the police, unable to give evidence against others.<sup>2</sup> Still less, of course, if he had been tried and acquitted. In one case A and B were accused of being concerned in the same offence. A was tried first and acquitted. The Local Government appealed against his acquittal, and pending appeal the magistrate arrested him again. While under arrest, B was put on trial, and A was called and examined against him. The Court disagreed in opinion as to whether the arrest of A was lawful,<sup>3</sup> and whether his evidence was properly taken. Spankie, J., was of opinion that if while under arrest he was treated as an accused person, his evidence was inadmissible.<sup>4</sup> The Criminal Procedure Code, s. 352

<sup>1</sup> *Reg. v. Behary Lal Bose*, 7 Suth. Cr. 44.

<sup>2</sup> *Reg. v. Mona Puna*, 16 Bom., p. 665.

<sup>3</sup> Now see Crim. P.C., s. 427.

<sup>4</sup> *Reg. v. Karim Buksh*, 2 All. 387.

provides that no oath shall be administered to the accused. Section 343 directs that, except as provided by ss. 337 and 338, no influence by means of any promise or threat or otherwise, shall be used to an accused person to induce him to disclose or withhold any matter within his knowledge. Then ss. 237 and 338 provide for the mode in which a pardon may be tendered to an accused person on condition of his making a full disclosure of every thing known to him in relation to the offence. Every person accepting such a pardon shall be examined as a witness. These sections only apply in case of offences triable exclusively by the Court of Session or High Court. Therefore a pardon granted to a person who is accused of an offence not exclusively so triable will be bad, and if a person so pardoned is then examined as a witness in reference to the offence, his evidence is inadmissible against the other persons accused, and he cannot himself be charged with giving false evidence.<sup>1</sup> *A fortiori* the evidence of a person still under accusation, and not pardoned, will be inadmissible in regard to the offence with which he is charged, unless taken under s. 342 (*post*, § 756). Where, however, a prisoner has been induced to give evidence under an illegal offer of pardon, if he has made a full disclosure, the public faith has so far been pledged to him, that he ought not to be prosecuted for any matter so disclosed by him, nor perhaps for any other offence of the same kind which he may accidentally and without any bad design, have omitted from his confession.<sup>2</sup> Where a prisoner made a statement under a promise of pardon, and then absconded, so that no pardon was ever granted, it was held that on his subsequent capture and trial the statement could not be used as evidence against him.<sup>3</sup>

These sections do not authorize the tender of a pardon to a person who has been convicted of the crime in question.<sup>4</sup> There can, however, be no objection to examining such a

<sup>1</sup> *Reg. v. Hanmanta*, 1 Bom. 610, p. 617; *Reg. v. Dala Jiva*, 10 Bom. 190; *Reg. v. Ashgar Ali*, 2 All. 260. See, as to s. 338, *Reg. v. Sadhee Kasal*, 10 Cal. 936; *Reg. v. Kallu*, 7 All. 160. As to tender of a pardon by a magistrate not empowered to do so, see *Crim. P.C.*, s. 529 (*g*).

<sup>2</sup> *Reg. v. Hanmanta*, 1 Bom., p. 618, following *R. v. Rudd*, 1 Cowp. 331; *Reg. v. Ganga Charan*, 11 All. 79. See, as to the proper procedure to be adopted when a pardon is tendered and refused, or cancelled, *Reg. v. Gagulu*, 4 B.L.R. Appx. 50; S.C. 12 Suth. Cr. 80; *Reg. v. Sudra*, 14 All. 336; *Reg. v. Mulna*, *ibid.* 502; *Reg. v. Jagal Chandra*, 22 Cal. 50, at p. 69.

<sup>3</sup> *Reg. v. Radanath Dosadh*, 8 Suth. Cr. 53.

<sup>4</sup> *Per Duthoit, J.*, *Reg. v. Kallu*, 7 All., p. 163.

person as a witness.<sup>1</sup> And such a course is constantly adopted in England.

§ 736. Abettors of a crime are accomplices, and must be looked upon as such, if they are produced as witnesses against the principal offenders. If they are not themselves under any criminal charge, their evidence is admissible without any tender of pardon.<sup>2</sup> Witnesses who admit that they were cognizant of a crime, that they made no attempt to prevent it, and that they did not disclose its commission, are not necessarily accomplices, but their evidence should be treated with suspicion, and only relied on to the same extent as that of accomplices.<sup>3</sup> Spies and informers who, with a view of laying a trap for a suspected person, suggest to him the commission of an offence, and supply him with means for committing it, are themselves abettors of the offence and accomplices. Persons who, believing that an offence is about to be committed, lie in wait till it has been committed for the purpose of apprehending the offender, or who supply marked money for the purpose of furnishing evidence against him, are not accomplices.<sup>4</sup>

§ 737. The earliest and fullest decision on the question as to the admissibility in India of the evidence of an accomplice, will be found in the judgment of Sir B. Peacock, C.J., in a Full Bench ruling in 1866.<sup>5</sup> All the English authorities, and their bearing on the Criminal Procedure Code, were examined, and, in accordance with them, the following principles were laid down: First, as a matter of law, that the uncorroborated evidence of an accomplice was sufficient to support a conviction. Second, as a matter of policy, that it was generally unsafe to rely on such evidence alone, and that juries ought to be advised not to convict on such evidence, unless it was corroborated in some material fact which tends to fix the guilt on the particular person charged. The same law is laid down by the Evidence Act, though, singularly enough, it is necessary to collect it from different parts of the Act. Section 133 provides that "An accomplice shall be a competent witness against an accused person, and a conviction is not illegal merely because it proceeds upon

<sup>1</sup> See Indian Evidence Act, s. 118.

<sup>2</sup> *Reg. v. Maganlal*, 14 Bom. 115; *Reg. v. Imdar Khan*, 8 All. 120.

<sup>3</sup> *Reg. v. Chanda Chandaline*, 24 Suth. Cr. 55; *Ishan Chandra v.*, 21 Cal. 328.

<sup>4</sup> *Reg. v. Javecharam*, 19 Bom. 363.

<sup>5</sup> *Re Filahee Buksh*, 5 Suth. Cr. 80.



the uncorroborated testimony of an accomplice." Section 114 states that "the Court may presume the existence of any fact which it thinks likely to have happened, regard being had to the common course of material events, human conduct, and public and private business, in their relation to the facts of the particular case." Then illus. (b) explains that the Court may presume "that an accomplice is unworthy of credit, unless he is corroborated in material particulars." Then a further Explanation points out, that where the crime is one which involves no moral turpitude, and the person associated in it is of undoubted credibility, no further corroboration is needed. The result is, that the unanimous practice of all the High Courts in India is to act upon the principles practised in England, and affirmed by the Full Bench decision above referred to.<sup>1</sup> The only points which require further consideration are, the nature of the corroboration which is required, and the duty of the Judge in laying down the law.

§ 738. As to the first point, it is to be remembered that the accomplice certainly knows all the facts of the crime, and may very possibly have some motive in accusing an innocent person. It is therefore no corroboration of his evidence against this person to show that he is speaking accurately as to the crime itself. As Baron Alderson said: "It would be a confirmation as much if the accusation were against you and me, as it would be as to those prisoners who are now on their trial. The confirmation which I always advise juries to require is, the confirmation of the accomplice in some fact which goes to fix the guilt on the particular person charged."<sup>2</sup> Recent possession of stolen property would be a corroboration where the gist of the charge was the theft, but would not necessarily be so where the charge was one of murder.<sup>3</sup> Previous statements by the accomplice to the same effect as his sworn evidence, are not corroboration by virtue of s. 157 of the Evidence Act.<sup>4</sup> Where there are several prisoners the accomplice must be corroborated as to

<sup>1</sup> *Reg. v. Ramasami Padiachi*, 1 Mad. 394; *Reg. v. Maganlal*, 14 Bom. 115; *Reg. v. Gobardhan*, 9 All. 528.

<sup>2</sup> *Reg. v. Wilkes*, 7 C. & P., p. 272, cited 5 Suth., p. 83; *Reg. v. Imam*, 3 Bom. H.C. C.C. 57; *Reg. v. Krishnabhat*, 10 Bom. 319; *Reg. v. Mohesh Biswas*, 19 Suth. Cr. 16, at p. 20.

<sup>3</sup> Compare *Reg. v. Ram Saran*, 8 All. 306; *Reg. v. Baldeo*, 8 All. 509.

<sup>4</sup> *Reg. v. Malapa*, 11 Bom. H.C. 196.



each.<sup>1</sup> Where there are several accomplices, the evidence of one is no corroboration of that of the other.<sup>2</sup> Confessions made by one of several prisoners who are being tried jointly for the same offence, though under s. 30 of the Evidence Act they may be taken into consideration by the Court as against the prisoners, are not corroboration of the evidence of a sworn accomplice.<sup>3</sup>

§ 739. The duties of a judge, in cases tried by jury, are laid down in ss. 297 and 298 of the Criminal Procedure Code. He is to sum up the evidence on both sides, and lay down the law by which the jury are to be guided.<sup>4</sup> He may, if he thinks proper, in the course of his summing up, express to the jury his opinion upon any question of fact, or upon any question of mixed law and fact, relevant to the proceeding.<sup>5</sup> Then s. 537 provides that no finding, sentence, or order shall be reversed or altered under Chapter XXVII., or on appeal or revision, on account of any misdirection in any charge to a jury, unless such misdirection has occasioned a failure of justice. Lastly, s. 418 lays down that where the trial was by jury, the appeal shall be on a matter of law only.

§ 740. The application of all these sections to cases where the judge has omitted to direct the jury as to the evidence of accomplices in conformity with the principles above stated, was fully discussed in the case of *Elehee Buksh* already referred to. The rules laid down by Sir B. Peacock have a general and wider bearing. He said :<sup>6</sup> "If a judge, in a criminal trial in the Mofussil, were to tell the jury that in his opinion the evidence was sufficient to justify them in finding the prisoner guilty, in a case in which, if the judge had been trying the case with the aid of assessors, the High Court would, on appeal, have reversed his judgment if upon the same evidence he had convicted the prisoner, I have no doubt that the court ought, on appeal, to set aside a verdict of guilty found by the jury, not-

<sup>1</sup> *Per* Jervis, C.J., *Reg. v. Stubbs*, Deansl. C.C. 555; S.C. 25 L.J. M.C. 16; *per* Alderson, B., *Reg. v. Moores*, 7 C. & P. 270, approved 5 Suth. Cr., p. 84.

<sup>2</sup> *Reg. v. Noakes*, 5 C. & P. 326, approved 5 Suth. Cr., p. 84.

<sup>3</sup> *Reg. v. Malapa*, 11 Bom. H.C. 196; *Reg. v. Budhu Nanku*, 1 Bom. 475; *Reg. v. Jaffir Ali*, 19 Suth. Cr. 57.

<sup>4</sup> See *re Sriram Venkatasami*, 6 Mad. H.C. 120; *Reg. v. Kali Charan*, 6 B.L.R. Appx. 86; *Reg. v. Jhubboo Mahton*, 8 Cal., p. 751.

<sup>5</sup> See *Reg. v. Bustee Khan*, 1 Suth. Cr. 17; *Reg. v. Gunga Bishen*, *ibid.* 26; *Reg. v. Nim Chand*, 20 Suth. Cr. 41; *Reg. v. Rajcoomar Bose*, 10 B.L.R. Appx. 36.

<sup>6</sup> 5 Suth. Cr., pp. 87—89.

withstanding the advice was merely as to the weight of evidence."

"So if a judge, instead of advising a jury not to convict upon the mere uncorroborated evidence of an accomplice, were to advise them to convict upon such evidence, or were to tell them that the uncorroborated evidence of an accomplice given under a pardon was admissible, and that it was for them alone to form their opinion upon it, that a conviction founded upon such evidence would be legal, and that such evidence without corroboration might be acted on with as much safety as that of any other witness, I think the error in the direction would form a good ground of appeal." "So also, I think it would be error in summing up if a judge, after pointing out the danger of acting upon the uncorroborated evidence of an accomplice, were to tell the jury that the evidence of the accomplice was corroborated by evidence of a fact which did not amount to any corroboration at all."

"The Code of Criminal Procedure provides that if a person is convicted on a trial by jury, the appeal shall be admissible only upon a matter of law. But it certainly is not against the principle, or even the letter of the Code, that the Court should have power to set aside a verdict of guilty for an insufficient or defective summing up of the evidence, in a case in which, in their judgment, the verdict is not warranted by the facts." "Ample protection is afforded to prisoners by allowing the High Court to reverse a verdict of guilty for any error of defect in the summing up, whenever the Court is of opinion that a failure of justice has been thereby occasioned."

"It appears to me that, in all cases in which a finding of guilty is set aside upon appeal, the court, if it thinks it necessary, may order a new trial. In some cases it may be necessary; for example, where evidence is improperly rejected, or where, for other reasons, the Appellate Court is unable to form a correct opinion as to the guilt or innocence of the appellants. But when the finding and conviction are objected to upon the ground that the judge did not properly direct the jury as to the degree of weight which ought to be given to the evidence, it appears to me that this court, sitting as an Appellate Court, is not necessarily bound to send the case back for a new trial. If the Court are of opinion that the evidence could not, in any proper view of the case, support a conviction, it would be worse

than useless to send the case for a new trial, in order that the jury might have an opportunity of convicting upon such evidence under a proper summing up.”<sup>1</sup>

Where the judge has properly directed the jury, their verdict cannot be set aside, if they have chosen to convict upon the uncorroborated evidence of an accomplice.<sup>2</sup>

§ 741. **Confessions.**—The law as to confessions is contained in ss. 24—30 of the Evidence Act, and ss. 162—164 of the Criminal Procedure Code.

First, as to the persons to whom confessions may be made, and the mode of recording them. By the Evidence Act:

25. “No confession made to a police officer shall be proved as against a person accused of any offence.” A statement, in the nature of a confession, overheard by a policeman, of whose presence the person making the statement was unaware, is not excluded by this section.<sup>3</sup>

26. “No confession made by any person whilst he is in the custody of a police officer, unless it be made in the immediate presence of a magistrate, shall be proved as against such person. *Explanation.*—In this section ‘magistrate’ does not include the head of a village discharging magisterial functions in the Presidency of Fort St. George, or in Burma or elsewhere, unless such headman is a magistrate exercising the power of a magistrate under the Code of Criminal Procedure, 1882.”<sup>4</sup>

27. “Provided that when any fact is deposed to as discovered in consequence of information received from a person accused of any offence, in the custody of a police officer, so much of such information, whether it amounts to a confession or not, as relates distinctly to the fact thereby discovered, may be proved.”

These provisions are supplemented as follows by the Criminal Procedure Code:—

“No statement, other than a dying declaration, made by any person to a police officer in the course of an investigation under Chapter XIV. shall, if reduced to writing, be

<sup>1</sup> Followed *Reg. v. Nawab Jan*, 8 Suth. Cr. 19; *Reg. v. Bykunt Nath*, 10 Suth. Cr. 17; *Reg. v. Sadhu Mundul*, 21 Suth. Cr. 69; *Reg. v. O'Hara*, 17 Cal. 642; *Reg. v. Imam*, 3 Bom. H.C. C.C. 57; *Reg. v. Arumuga*, 12 Mad. 196; *contra Reg. v. Ganu*, 6 Bom. H.C. C.C. 57, where, however, none of the Calcutta cases which had then been decided was referred to.

<sup>2</sup> *Reg. v. Mohima Chunder*, 15 Suth. Cr. 37.

<sup>3</sup> *Reg. v. Sageena*, 7 Suth. Cr. 56.

<sup>4</sup> Act III. of 1891, s. 3.



signed by the person making it, or shall<sup>1</sup> be used as evidence against the accused. Nothing in this section shall be deemed to affect the provisions of s. 27 of the Indian Evidence Act" (s. 162).

"Any magistrate not being a police officer may record any statement or confession made to him in the course of an investigation under Chapter XIV., or at any time afterwards before the commencement of the inquiry or trial. Such statements shall be recorded in such of the manners hereinafter prescribed for recording evidence as is, in his opinion, best fitted for the circumstances of the case. Such confessions shall be recorded and signed in the manner provided in s. 364, and shall then be forwarded to the magistrate by whom the case is to be inquired into or tried. No magistrate shall record any such confession unless, upon questioning the person making it, he has reason to believe that it was made voluntarily; and when he records such confession he shall make a memorandum at the foot of such record to the following effect:—'I believe that this confession was voluntarily made. It was taken in my presence and hearing, and was read over to the person making it and admitted by him to be correct, and it contains a full and true account of the statement by him.' Signed, etc." (s. 164).

"If any court before which a confession or other statement of an accused person, recorded under ss. 164 or 364, is tendered in evidence, finds that the provisions of such section have not been fully complied with by the magistrate recording the statement, it shall take evidence that such person duly made the statement recorded, and notwithstanding anything contained in the Indian Evidence Act, s. 91, such statement shall be admitted if the error has not injured the accused as to his defence on the merits" (s. 533).

§ 742. The provisions of ss. 25 and 26 of the Evidence Act differ from those of s. 162 of the Criminal Procedure Code, in that the former are limited to confessions, the latter extend to all statements. It constantly happens that a man when charged with an offence makes a statement in which he admits, and explains away, something which tells against him. This is not a confession, but a defence, and does not come within the former Act.<sup>2</sup> It is different where

<sup>1</sup> Act X. of 1886, s. 6.

<sup>2</sup> *Reg. v. Nabadwip Goswami*, 1 B.L.R. O. Cr. 15, p. 20; *Reg. v. Macdonald*, 10 B.L.R. Appx. 2; *Reg. v. Dabee Pershad*, 6 Cal. 530; *Reg. v. Jagrup*, 7 All. 646; *Reg. v. Meher Ali*, 15 Cal. 589; *contra*, *Reg. v. Pandharmath*, 6 Bom. 34.



the statement, though it may not amount to a full confession, contains an admission of criminating facts which would form important evidence against him, and is not offered for the purpose of accounting for other facts.<sup>1</sup> All such statements, if they come within s. 162 of the Criminal Procedure Code, would be excluded. Where the confession is excluded by these sections, the rule is so rigidly enforced, that when the counsel for the defence had elicited part of the statement on cross-examination, Field, J., refused to allow the policeman on re-examination to state another part which criminated the prisoner.<sup>2</sup>

§ 743. Confessions or statements as above described cannot be used against the accused, nor are they evidence for him. Where, however, the person who made the statement is produced as a witness, he may be cross-examined on it, and the writing may be used to refresh the memory of the policeman to whom the statement was made if the person who heard it.<sup>3</sup> Where the confession has been made by a person who is being tried jointly with another, and against the other, it has been held, may prove it as evidence in his favour, although under ss. 25 or 26 of the Evidence Act it could not be used against the person making it. In such a case the jury must be warned not to give any attention to it as regards the latter person.<sup>4</sup>

A village magistrate in Madras is not a police officer within the meaning of the above sections.<sup>5</sup> Any member of the police force, however high his rank, does come within the term.<sup>6</sup>

In order to establish that a person is in the custody of a police officer under s. 26 of the Evidence Act, it is not necessary to show a formal arrest. Where the accused person is in presence of the police, who are investigating a charge in which he is implicated, and his situation is such that he could not depart at his own free will, this is a sufficient custody.<sup>7</sup> Any statement made by a person in custody, and not in the presence of a magistrate, is excluded, whether made to a police officer or to a private person.<sup>8</sup>

<sup>1</sup> *Reg. v. Nana*, 14 Bom. 260; *Reg. v. Javecharam*, 19 Bom. 363.

<sup>2</sup> *Reg. v. Mathews*, 10 Cal. 1022.

<sup>3</sup> *Reg. v. Sitaram Vithal*, 11 Bom. 657; *Reg. v. Uttamchand*, 11 Bom. 11.C. 120; *Reg. v. Taj Khan*, 17 All. 57.

<sup>4</sup> *Reg. v. Pitamber Jina*, 2 Bom. 61.

<sup>5</sup> *Reg. v. Sama Papi*, 7 Mad. 287.

<sup>6</sup> *Per Garth, C.J., Reg. v. Hurribole Chunder*, 1 Cal., p. 215.

<sup>7</sup> *Re Choda Atchenah*, 3 Mad. H.C. 318.

<sup>8</sup> *Per Garth, C.J., 1 Cal., p. 215.*

§ 744. **Discovery resulting from inadmissible Confession.**—Where a statement has been made which would be inadmissible under ss. 25 or 26 of the Evidence Act,<sup>1</sup> or under s. 162 of the Criminal Procedure Code, it is provided by s. 27 that so much of any information given in that statement as relates to any fact discovered thereby is admissible. The effect of this section was very fully explained by West, J., in *Reg. v. Jora Hasji*:<sup>2</sup> “Whatever be the nature of the fact discovered, that fact must, in all cases, be relevant to the case, and the connection between it and the statement made must have been such, that that statement constituted the information through which the discovery was made, in order to render the statement admissible. Other statements connected with the one thus made evidence, and so mediately, but not necessarily or directly, connected with the fact discovered, are not to be admitted, as this would rather be an evasion than a fulfilment of the law, which is designed to guard persons accused of offences against unfair practices on the part of the police. For instance, a man says, ‘You will find a stick at such and such a place. I killed Rama with it.’ A policeman in such a case may be allowed to say he went to the place indicated and found the stick, but any statement as to the confession of murder would be inadmissible. If, instead of ‘You will find,’ the prisoner has said, ‘I placed a sword or knife in such a spot,’ where it was found, that too, though it involves an admission of a particular act on the prisoner’s part, is admissible, because it is the information which has directly led to the discovery, and is thus distinctly, and independently of any other statement, connected with it. But if, besides this, the prisoner has said what induced him to put the knife or sword where it was found, that part of his statement, as it has not furthered, much less caused the statement, is inadmissible.” As the Madras High Court put it: “The test is, was the fact discovered by reason of the information, and how much of the information was the immediate cause of the act (being?) discovered, and was as such a relevant fact?”<sup>3</sup>

§ 745. In order to let in the information which leads to a

<sup>1</sup> See, as to s. 25, *Reg. v. Babu Lal*, 6 All. 509.

<sup>2</sup> 11 Bom. H.C. 242.

<sup>3</sup> *Reg. v. Commer Sahib*, 12 Mad. 153; per Straight, Offg. C.J., *Reg. v. Babu Lal*, 6 All., at p. 546; per Norris, J., *Adu Shikdar v. Reg.*, 11 Cal., p. 641; per Sargent, C.J., *Reg. v. Nana*, 14 Bom., p. 265. The decision in *Reg. v. Pagaree Shahu*, 19 Suth. Cr. 51, where the whole details of the murder were admitted, is clearly bad law.

discovery, "the fact discovered must be one which, of its own force, independently of the confession, would be admissible in evidence."<sup>1</sup> If a man says, "Ramasami and I murdered the girl. I threw the hatchet into a ditch near the place of the murder, and he took off her anklets and hid them in his back yard," and the hatchet and anklets are found accordingly, these facts would be material, however the discovery was made. Being found in consequence of the statement, evidences, first, that the statement was not concocted; secondly, that it was made by a person who took part in the murder. If the statement was, "You will find the knife with which Ramasami murdered the girl in his hut, and six annas which he took from her in his box," the finding of a knife and six annas would have no bearing upon the murder. The statement might be invented either by the police or by the person making it, and the discovery would add nothing to the credibility of either.

§ 746. Further, the discovery must be made in consequence of the information. Where one of several accused persons gives information from which a discovery is made, and then the others give the same information, the first statement becomes admissible, so far as it relates to the fact discovered, but not the other statements from which nothing resulted.<sup>2</sup> A person who was accused of murder gave up to the police a knife, with which he said he had committed the murder, and then took them to the place where the body had been found, and pointed out the girl's anklets, which were concealed under some leaves. His statements as to both the knife and the anklets were held inadmissible, as both articles were found in consequence of his act in giving them up, not in consequence of his information.<sup>3</sup> A similar decision was given in Bombay, where the accused were charged with stealing some *jwari*. They admitted before the police that they had stolen the *jwari*, and produced a jar in which they had concealed it.<sup>4</sup> A contrary decision was given in a later case, where a prisoner was charged with receiving stolen property. He said he had buried the property in a field, and then took the police to the spot, and himself dug it up. The previous cases were cited, but Sergeant, C.J., said: "Whether the statement made by the

<sup>1</sup> *Re Choda Atchenar*, 3 Mad. H.C. 318; *per* West, J., *Reg. v. Rama Birapa*, 3 Bom., p. 16.

<sup>2</sup> *Reg. v. Ram Churn Chung*, 24 Suth. Cr. 36.

<sup>3</sup> *Reg. v. Pancham*, 4 All. 198.

<sup>4</sup> *Reg. v. Kamalia*, 10 Bom. 595.



accused is of such a detailed description as to enable the police themselves to discover the property, or only of such a nature as to require his assistance in discovering the exact spot where the property is, cannot in our opinion, affect the question. In both cases there is the guarantee afforded by the discovery of the property for the correctness of the accused's statement, which is presumably the ground of the exception to the general rule. The distinction sought to be drawn appears to us, therefore, to be without substance."<sup>1</sup> In the cases of the knife and the *jivari*, it is probable the information was inadmissible on the ground previously stated, viz. that the articles, when found, had no bearing on the charge except through the statement. Apart from this objection, it is difficult to see how it could be said that their discovery did not arise from the information. Except for it, the police would have taken no notice of either.

§ 747. Where it is sought to make a statement admissible under s. 164 of the Criminal Procedure Code, it is not necessary to show that the magistrate before whom it was made had jurisdiction to hold a preliminary inquiry into the offence charged. "The practice of taking prisoners before magistrates not having jurisdiction in the case, for the purpose of getting a confession recorded, is not generally desirable; but such a confession is legally admissible in evidence when duly proved."<sup>2</sup> The confession, however, must be *bonâ fide* made to and recorded by the magistrate. His presence while the confession is being made to the police is not sufficient.<sup>3</sup> If the accused is in custody of the police, the statement, if it amounts to a confession, must be made to a magistrate exercising powers under the Criminal Procedure Code.<sup>4</sup>

§ 748. It seems by no means settled how far the express directions of s. 164 and of s. 364, as to the mode of recording the statement of an accused person, can be set aside under the powers given by s. 533. It has been held not to be a fatal objection that the statement was recorded in narrative form, and not by way of question and answer;<sup>5</sup>

<sup>1</sup> *Reg. v. Nana*, F.B., 14 Bom. 260.

<sup>2</sup> *Per curiam*, *Reg. v. Vahala Jetha*, 11 Bom. H.C. C.C. 56; *Reg. v. Bharna*, 11 Bom. 702.

<sup>3</sup> *Reg. v. Domun Rahar*, 12 Suth. Cr. 82.

<sup>4</sup> See the Amending Act, III. of 1891, s. 3, which overrules *Reg. v. Ramanjiya*, 2 Mad. 5.

<sup>5</sup> *Re Munshi Sheikh*, 8 Cal. 616; *Fekoo Mahto v. Reg.*, 14 Cal. 539.



or that the signature or attestation of the accused was not obtained;<sup>1</sup> or that the memorandum attached to the statement by the magistrate varied from the form given;<sup>2</sup> while the Madras High Court has laid it down generally that evidence might be taken that a confession had been recorded, though the magistrate's procedure had been irregular.<sup>3</sup> Where the certificate attached to a confession was not written on the day on which the confession was recorded, it was held that the confession could not be received in evidence. No point was raised as to whether this was an irregularity which might be remedied under the last clause of s. 346 of the Act of 1872, which corresponds with s. 533 of the Act of 1882.<sup>4</sup> So a total want of the certificate or attestation of the magistrate was held fatal to the admission of the confession.<sup>5</sup> There has been a difference of opinion as to whether the rule which requires the statement to be recorded in the language in which the accused is examined, where it is practicable, can ever be dispensed with. In a Full Bench case in Calcutta, where, however, it was not necessary to decide the point, grave doubts were expressed as to whether such an irregularity would be cured by s. 533.<sup>6</sup> In two other cases it was expressly decided that it could not be so cured;<sup>7</sup> while in later cases the Calcutta Court disagreed with this view, but did not refer the question to a Full Bench, as they considered that they might assume that it was not practicable to take down the statement in the language in which it was given.<sup>8</sup> It is obvious that the same irregularity might, in different cases, have a very different effect as to injuring the accused in his defence on the merits. The principle laid down in the Madras case, "that the provisions of s. 164 are imperative, and that s. 533 will not render the confession admissible, where no attempt at all has been made to conform to its provisions," seems unduly inflexible, and difficult to carry out without absolutely annulling s. 533. .

<sup>1</sup> *Tita Maya v. Reg.*, 8 Cal. 618, n.

<sup>2</sup> *Reg. v. Bhairon Singh*, 8 All. 338.

<sup>3</sup> *Reg. v. Ramanjiya*, 2 Mad. 5.

<sup>4</sup> *Reg. v. Daji Narsu*, 6 Bom. 288.

<sup>5</sup> *Reg. v. Bhikaree*, 15 Suth. 63; *Reg. v. Radhu Jana*, 3 B.L.R. A. Cr. 59.

<sup>6</sup> *Reg. v. Nilmadhub Mitter*, 15 Cal. 595.

<sup>7</sup> *Reg. v. Viran*, 9 Mad. 224; *Jai Narayan Rai v. Reg.*, 17 Cal. 862.

<sup>8</sup> *Lalchand v. Reg.*, 18 Cal. 549; *Reg. v. Sugul Samba*, 21 Cal. 642, at p. 660; *Reg. v. Razai Mia*, 22 Cal. 817; *Reg. v. Moonsai Bibee*, 24 Suth. Cr. 54.

§ 749. The provisions of s. 164 do not apply to the case of confessions taken by the magistrate who is actually investigating the case and examining the witnesses preparatory to commitment. He is to act according to s. 364. The former section applies to a case where some other magistrate takes a confession and forwards it to the magistrate by whom the case is inquired into or tried.<sup>1</sup> Under either section the confession or statement of the accused must be recorded in writing in the manner specified; and if this is not done at all, or if it is done in a manner which does not conform to the law, and cannot be cured by s. 533, then it is wholly inadmissible, and oral evidence of the statement actually made cannot be received.<sup>2</sup>

§ 750. **Inducements to confess.**—Secondly, the law as to the effect of inducements upon the admissibility of confessions is laid down as follows in the Evidence Act and Criminal Procedure Code:—

“A confession made by an accused person is irrelevant in a criminal proceeding, if the making of the confession appears to the Court to have been caused by any inducement, threat, or promise<sup>3</sup> having reference to the charge against the accused person, proceeding from a person in authority, and sufficient, in the opinion of the Court, to give the accused person grounds, which would appear to him reasonable, for supposing that by making it he would gain any advantage or avoid any evil of a temporal nature in reference to the proceedings against him.”<sup>4</sup>

“If such a confession as is referred to in s. 24 is made after the impression caused by any such inducement, threat, or promise has, in the opinion of the Court, been fully removed, it is relevant.”<sup>5</sup>

“If such a confession is otherwise relevant, it does not become irrelevant merely because it was made under a promise of secrecy,<sup>6</sup> or in consequence of a deception practised on the accused person for the purpose of obtaining it,<sup>7</sup> or when he was drunk, or because it was made in answer

<sup>1</sup> *Reg. v. Jetoo*, 23 Suth. Cr. 16; *Reg. v. Anuntram Singh*, 5 Cal. 944.

<sup>2</sup> *Reg. v. Bai Ratan*, 10 Bom. H.C. 166; *Reg. v. Mannoo Tamoola*, 4 Cal. 696; *Reg. v. Viran*, 9 Mad. 224; *Jai Narayan Rai v. Reg.*, 17 Cal. 862.

<sup>3</sup> *Reg. v. Dhuram Dutt*, 8 Suth. Cr. 13; *re Bishoo Manjee*, 9 Suth. Cr. 16.

<sup>4</sup> Act I. of 1872, s. 24.

<sup>6</sup> *Ibid.*, s. 28.

<sup>5</sup> *R. v. Shaw*, 6 C. & P. 372.

<sup>7</sup> *R. v. Derrington*, 2 C. & P. 418.

to questions which he need not have answered, whatever may have been the form of those questions, or because he was not warned that he was not bound to make such confession, and that evidence of it might be given against him.”<sup>1</sup>

“No police officer or person in authority shall offer or make, or cause to be offered or made, any such inducement, threat, or promise as is mentioned in the Indian Evidence Act, 1872, s. 24.

But no police officer or other person shall prevent, by any caution or otherwise, any person from making, in the course of any investigation under this chapter, any statement which he may be disposed to make of his own free will.”<sup>2</sup>

The above rules are substantially the same as those laid down in England.<sup>3</sup> The threat, promise, or inducement relied on as rendering the confession inadmissible must have proceeded from a person in authority, otherwise there can be no reason to suppose that the accused would be influenced to make an untrue statement.<sup>4</sup> As to who is a person in authority, it is said “that all who are engaged in the apprehension, prosecution, or examination of a prisoner are considered as persons of such authority that their inducements will exclude any confession thereby obtained. Thus an inducement held out by the prosecutor, the prosecutor’s wife, or his attorney, or by a constable or other officer, or some person assisting a constable or the prosecutor in the apprehension or detention of the prisoner, or by a magistrate acting in the business, or other magistrate, or magistrate’s clerk, or by a gaoler, or chaplain of a gaol, or by a person having authority over the prisoner, as by the captain of a vessel to one of his crew, or by a master or a mistress to a servant, or by a person having authority in the matter, or by a person in the presence of one in authority with his assent, whether direct or implied, will be sufficient to exclude a confession made in consequence of such inducement.”<sup>5</sup> Where the charge was against a booking-clerk in a railway, the travelling auditor of the company, who found out the defalcation, was held to be a person in authority.<sup>6</sup>

<sup>1</sup> *Ibid.*, s. 29.

<sup>2</sup> *Crim. P.C.*, s. 163.

<sup>3</sup> See as to the English law, 3 Russell, C. & M., bk. vi., ch. 4. Its authority is very high, as it was written by the late judge, Sir Edward Vaughan Williams. See *per* Lord Coleridge, C.J., 7 Q.B.D., p. 51.

<sup>4</sup> *R. v. Gibbons*, 1 C. & P. 97.

<sup>5</sup> 3 Russ. 463, and cases cited.

<sup>6</sup> *Reg. v. Navroji Dadabai*, 9 Bom. H.C. 358.



The wife of a constable is not an authority;<sup>1</sup> nor is a punchayet which is examining a criminal charge with a view to consider whether the person accused ought to be excommunicated.<sup>2</sup>

§ 751. The inducement must have reference to the charge, and must be such as might reasonably induce the person to whom it is addressed to suppose that by making a confession he would gain some advantage, or avoid some evil of a temporal nature, in reference to the proceedings against him, that is, to the criminal proceeding then going on. Therefore, the statement made to a punchayet in the last-named case was held admissible, as the inducement held out referred only to the caste proceeding. In a case where a murder was committed in the course of a mutiny on board ship, the captain compelled the mutineers to give themselves up as prisoners by threatening them with a loaded rifle. One of the sailors while under confinement afterwards made a confession in reference to the murder. Phear, J., held that it was inadmissible. "It was immaterial that the threat was not for the purpose of extorting the confession, but in order to suppress an attempt at mutiny."<sup>3</sup> Spiritual advice to an accused person to confess whatever lay upon his conscience for the good of his soul is not within the Act.<sup>4</sup> Where a deputy magistrate prefaced a confession with the note, "After excluding from my presence the police officers who brought him, I warned the accused that what he would say would go as evidence against him, so he had better tell the truth," Field, J., excluded the confession, saying "that to tell a prisoner that he had better tell the truth is a violation of the provisions of the law. See s. 163 of the Crim. P.C."<sup>5</sup> In an earlier case, Sir Barnes Peacock, C.J., said: "Some cases have gone to the extent of saying that a statement is not admissible if it is obtained by telling the prisoner he had better tell the truth. For my own part, I cannot see any objection to telling every man that he had better tell the truth, but that is very different from telling a man that he had better confess, when you do not know whether he is innocent or guilty."<sup>6</sup> It is evident that the

<sup>1</sup> *Reg. v. Hardwick*, 1 Phill. Ev. 408.

<sup>2</sup> *Reg. v. Mohan Lal*, 4 All. 46.

<sup>3</sup> *Reg. v. Hicks*, 10 B.L.R. Appx. 1, *sed quære*.

<sup>4</sup> *R. v. Gilham*, R. & M. 186.

<sup>5</sup> *Reg. v. Uzeer*, 10 Cal. 775.

<sup>6</sup> *Reg. v. Nabadwip Goswami*, 1 B.L.R. O. Cr., at p. 22.



words "you had better tell the truth" may bear two meanings. Where they are simply an entreaty, however solemnly urged, that the person should tell the truth, they contain no inducement.<sup>1</sup> Where they may be understood to convey a covert menace, or a suggestion of advantage, they would be an inducement.<sup>2</sup> A statement to a person that anything that he may say will be taken down and used for or against him at his trial, or that they would be glad to hear anything he could say in his defence, and send to any person to assist him, is an inducement.<sup>3</sup> There is no inducement in saying, "He need not say anything to criminate himself. What he did say would be taken down and used as evidence against him."<sup>4</sup>

§ 752. In determining whether an inducement has ceased to operate within the meaning of s. 28, "it will be material to consider the nature of such inducement, the time and circumstances under which it was made, the situation of the person making it, the time which has intervened between the inducement and the confession, and whether there has been any caution given, and if so, whether that caution has been given generally, or expressly and specifically with reference to the inducement held out." If a constable has advised a prisoner to confess, and then taken him before a magistrate, who cautions him not to criminate himself, his confession to the magistrate is admissible.<sup>5</sup> So, if a person has been urged to confess in order to escape being taken before the magistrate, any statement made while there is still hope of not being taken is admissible. A statement made after arrest and on the way to the magistrate is admissible, the only motive for confession being removed.<sup>6</sup>

§ 753. Section 24 of the Evidence Act, which makes inadmissible a confession which is otherwise unobjectionable, if it appears to the Court to have been caused by any inducement, seems to throw it upon the party who has made the confession to get rid of it, and this cannot be done by his own unsupported assertions at a subsequent stage of the

<sup>1</sup> *R. v. Wild*, 1 Mood. 452; *Reg. v. Reeve*, L.R., 1 C.C. 362; *Reg. v. Jarvis*, L.R., 1 C.C. 96.

<sup>2</sup> *Reg. v. Garner*, 1 Den. 329; *Reg. v. Baldrey*, 2 Den. 430; S.C. 21 L.J. M.C. 130.

<sup>3</sup> *Reg. v. Drew*, 8 C. & P. 140; *Reg. v. Hornbrook*, 1 Cox, 54.

<sup>4</sup> *Reg. v. Baldrey*, *ub. sup.*

<sup>5</sup> *R. v. Lingate*, cited 3 Russ. 460; see *Reg. v. Navroji Dadabai*, 9 Bom. H.C., at p. 370.

<sup>6</sup> *R. v. Griffiths*, cited 3 Russ. 463.

proceedings.<sup>1</sup> Conversely, where a vitiating influence has been shown, it is for the prosecution to make out that it has been removed. In England there seems to be a conflict of opinion as to whether it is, or is not necessary for the Crown to show, in the first instance, that the confession was voluntary.<sup>2</sup> Practically what happens is this: As soon as a witness begins to prove a confession, the prisoner's counsel interposes, and questions him as to the circumstances under which it was made. If nothing is elicited to throw discredit upon it, the evidence is received, subject to being rejected if undue influence is afterwards shown. If the cross-examination throws any doubt upon the confession, the Crown must remove the doubt before the witness is allowed to state the confession. In all cases it is the duty of the judge to decide upon the facts before him, whether the evidence of the confession is admissible. This is not a question for the jury.<sup>3</sup>

§ 754. **Effect of Confession.**—Thirdly, as to the effect to be given to a confession. The general rule, of course, is, that the confession of one man is wholly inadmissible as against any other. An exception to this rule has been introduced by s. 30 of the Evidence Act.

“When more persons than one are being tried jointly for the same offence, and a confession made by one of such persons affecting himself and some other of such persons is proved, the Court may take into consideration such confession as against such other person as well as against the person who makes such confession.

“*Explanation.*—Offence, as used in this section, includes the abetment of, or attempt to commit the offence.”<sup>4</sup>

See also the Explanation to *illus. (b)* in s. 114, which was stated by Phear, J., to refer to the sworn evidence of accomplices, not to mere confessions under s. 30.<sup>5</sup>

The person whose confession is to be used must be a person who is being tried. Therefore, if he has pleaded guilty, his confession cannot be considered against those

<sup>1</sup> *Reg. v. Bulvant*, 11 Bom. H.C. 137.

<sup>2</sup> *Reg. v. Garner*, 1 Den. 329; *Reg. v. Warringham*, 2 Den. 447.

<sup>3</sup> Crim. P.C., s. 298; *R. v. Nute*, cited 3 Russ. 458. As to using a confession which has been subsequently retracted, see *Reg. v. Gharya*, 19 Bom. 701.

<sup>4</sup> Act III. of 1891, s. 4.

<sup>5</sup> *Reg. v. Sadhu Mundul*, 21 Suth. Cr., p. 71; see also *per Jackson, J.*, 4 Cal., p. 494.

who take their trial.<sup>1</sup> Nor can it be used if from any cause, such as the absence of a legal commitment, the confessing prisoner has to be dismissed from the proceedings.<sup>2</sup> He must be tried jointly with the others, and therefore necessarily at the same time,<sup>3</sup> and for the same offence. Where the offences are distinct, though cognate—as dacoity and receiving goods known to have been taken in a dacoity—s. 30 does not apply.<sup>4</sup> Further, “before a confession of a person jointly tried with the prisoner can be taken into consideration against him, it must appear that that confession implicates the confessing person substantially to the same extent as it implicates the person against whom it is to be used, in the commission of the offence for which the prisoners are being jointly tried. It is this implication of himself by the confessing person which is intended by the Legislature to take the place as it were of the sanction of an oath, or rather which is supposed to serve as some guarantee for the truth of the accusation against the other.”<sup>5</sup> Therefore statements, however criminating, which are intended by the prisoner to exculpate himself, or to reduce his guilt to something lower than that which is alleged against the others and against himself, cannot be taken into consideration against any one but himself.<sup>6</sup> Where, however, “two persons are accused of an offence of the same definition, arising out of a single transaction, the confession of one may be used against the other, though it inculpatates himself through acts separable from those ascribed to his accomplice, and capable, therefore, of constituting a separate offence from that of the accomplice.” As for instance, where A and B were tried jointly for passing off counterfeit coin, and B made a confession that he had done so, but said that A had given him the coins for the purpose, and that he was merely his subordinate agent, the confession was held to be admissible; the Court remarked, however, that “such confession wants in a great measure the intended

<sup>1</sup> *Reg. v. Kalu Patil*, 11 Bom. H.C. 146; *Venkatasami v. Reg.*, 7 Mad. 102; *Reg. v. Pahuji*, 19 Bom. 195; *Reg. v. Pirbhu*, 17 All. 524.

<sup>2</sup> *Reg. v. Jagat Chandra*, 22 Cal. 50, at p. 72.

<sup>3</sup> *Reg. v. Sheikh Buxoo*, 21 Suth. Cr. 65.

<sup>4</sup> *Reg. v. Bala Patel*, 6 Bom. 63; *Deputy Legal Remembrancer v. Karuna*, 22 Cal. 164.

<sup>5</sup> *Per Phear, J., Reg. v. Belat Ali*, 10 B.L.R. 453.

<sup>6</sup> *Reg. v. Ganraj*, 2 All. 444; *Reg. v. Mula*, *ibid.* 646; *Reg. v. Jagrup*, 7 All. 646; *Noor Bux v. Reg.*, 6 Cal. 279; *Reg. v. Daji Narsu*, 6 Bom. 288.



guarantee of truth. It is self-seeking according to the ideas of him who makes it, and cannot be relied on." <sup>1</sup>

§ 755. As regards the use to be made of such confessions, Jackson, J., said: "I think the obvious intention of the Legislature was, that when, as against such person, there is evidence tending to his conviction, the truth or completeness of this evidence being the matter in question, the circumstance of such person being implicated by the confession of one of those who are jointly tried with him, should be taken into consideration as bearing upon the truth or sufficiency of the evidence." <sup>2</sup> The credit to be ascribed to such confessions is even less than should be given to an accomplice, who is sworn and subject to cross-examination. They require corroboration as much as accomplices.<sup>3</sup> A conviction depending merely upon the confession of another prisoner without corroboration would be set aside, as resting on evidence which was legally insufficient,<sup>4</sup> and the corroboration which is required must be such further evidence, whether direct or circumstantial, as would, if believed, be itself sufficient to warrant a conviction.<sup>5</sup> The court which may take the confession into consideration includes the jury as well as the judge.<sup>6</sup>

In two cases the judge adopted the singular course of examining the prisoners at the end of the trial, and requiring all the prisoners except the one under examination to leave the court. He then made use, against each of the prisoners, of the statements elicited behind their back from the others. In each case the High Court held that the proceeding was wholly illegal, and that the statements must be excluded from consideration, except as regards the persons who made them.<sup>7</sup> It seems to me very doubtful whether statements elicited by such a process come within the meaning of s. 30 as confessions.

§ 756. **Examination of Accused.**—There are two well-

<sup>1</sup> *Reg. v. Nur Mahomed*, 6 Bom. 223.

<sup>2</sup> *Reg. v. Chunder Bhattacharjee*, 24 Suth. Cr. 42.

<sup>3</sup> *Reg. v. Jaffir Ali*, 19 Suth. Cr. 57; *Reg. v. Sadhu Mundul*, 21 Suth. Cr., at p. 71; *Reg. v. Naga*, 23 Suth. Cr. 24; *Reg. v. Dosa Jiva*, 10 Bom. 231.

<sup>4</sup> 7 Mad. H.C. Rulings 15; *Reg. v. Ambigara*, 1 Mad. 163; *Reg. v. Bhawani*, 1 All. 664.

<sup>5</sup> *Reg. v. Ashutosh Chuckerbutty*, 4 Cal. 483.

<sup>6</sup> *Ibid.*, *ub. sup.*

<sup>7</sup> *Reg. v. Chandra Nath*, 7 Cal. 65; *Reg. v. Lakshman Bala*, 6 Bom. 124.



known systems of dealing with prisoners, which are directly opposed to each other. In France, the accused is the first and principal witness for the prosecution. Naturally he is an unwilling witness, and accordingly the presiding judge, who conducts his interrogation, cross-examines him, brow-beats him, puts every sort of criminating statement into his mouth, and assumes his guilt throughout in a manner which, to our ideas, is far from edifying. In England, no question can be put to a prisoner, for fear his answer might prejudice his case. The result is that, if in his own interest it is desirable to clear up any difficulty, it is impossible to apply for information to the only person in court who can give it. No doubt he is told at one time that he may cross-examine the witnesses; at another time, that he may say anything he wishes to the jury; but in general this is a mere farce. It hardly ever happens that a prisoner, however innocent, understands the real difficulty of his case, and the mode in which it might be cleared up. If he does show any such perception, he is generally a hardened and habitual offender. The Indian system aims at avoiding the evils of each system, and simply tries to assist justice, which is equally desirous to convict the guilty and to acquit the innocent. This is effected by s. 342 of the Criminal Procedure Code.

“For the purpose of enabling the accused to explain any circumstances appearing in the evidence against him, the Court may, at any stage of any inquiry or trial, without previously warning the accused, put such questions to him as the Court considers necessary, and shall, for the purpose aforesaid, question him generally on the case, after the witnesses for the prosecution have been examined, and before he is called on for his defence. The accused shall not render himself liable to punishment by refusing to answer such questions, or by giving false answers to them; but the Court and the jury (if any) may draw such inference from such refusal or answers as it thinks just.

“The answers given by the accused may be taken into consideration in such inquiry or trial, and put in evidence for or against him in any other inquiry into, or trial for, any other offence which such answers may tend to show he has committed.

“No oath shall be administered to the accused.”

§ 757. It will be seen that the object of this section is not to convict the prisoner out of his own mouth, but to supply

him with the opportunity of putting his own knowledge of the facts at the service of the Court. "The Sessions Court is not to establish a Court of Inquisition, and to force a prisoner to convict himself by making some criminating admissions, after a series of searching questions, the exact effect of which he may not readily comprehend. The real object is to enable a judge to ascertain from time to time from a prisoner, particularly if he is undefended, what explanation he may desire to offer regarding any fact stated by a witness, or, after the close of the case, how he can meet what the judge may consider to be damnatory evidence against him."<sup>1</sup> The examination of the accused cannot be used for the purpose of adding to the evidence against himself or his fellow-prisoners, or of connecting him with matters by which the case against him might be strengthened, or of eliciting facts which might prejudice him with the jury.<sup>2</sup> Still less can it be used for the purpose of ascertaining what witnesses the accused intends to call, or what evidence they will give, or what his defence is.<sup>3</sup>

The examination may take place at any stage of the inquiry or trial; it shall take place at the close of the prosecution; but in either case it is to be an examination limited to the purpose of explaining the evidence, that is, the evidence already given in the trial.<sup>4</sup> It is wholly irregular to commence the trial by an examination: first, because at that stage of the proceedings there has been no evidence given which the prisoner can be called on to explain; and, secondly, because such a course will necessarily prejudice him in the minds of both the judge and the jury.<sup>5</sup>

§ 758. The judge ought to explain to the prisoner, before he commences his examination, what use can be made of either his answers or his silence, and that he need not answer at all if he does not wish. Failure to do so does not, however, in any way affect the admissibility of his answers.<sup>6</sup> The procedure where such an examination takes place before the committing magistrate, is stated in *Reg.*

<sup>1</sup> *Per Prinsep, J., Hossein Buksh v. Reg.*, 6 Cal., p. 102; *re Verabadra Gaud*, 1 Mad. H.C. 199.

<sup>2</sup> *Hurry Churn Chuckerbutty v. Reg.*, 10 Cal., p. 143.

<sup>3</sup> *Reg. v. Hargobind Singh*, 14 All., p. 253.

<sup>4</sup> *Reg. v. Hargobind*, *ub. sup.*

<sup>5</sup> *Hossein Buksh v. Reg.*, *ub. sup.*

<sup>6</sup> *Re Dinoo Roy*, 16 Suth. Cr. 21; *Reg. v. Nabadwip Goswami*, 1 B.L.R. O. Cr., p. 23.

*v. Yakub Khan*.<sup>1</sup> When the evidence for the prosecution does not establish any criminal charge, no such examination should take place.<sup>2</sup>

The word "accused" in s. 342 means a person over whom the magistrate or other court is exercising jurisdiction.<sup>3</sup>

The Bombay High Court appears to have ruled that the examination of an accused person before he is put on his defence is compulsory.<sup>4</sup> On the other hand, the Madras High Court seems to have ruled that no such examination should take place when the prisoner has placed himself absolutely in the hands of his pleader.<sup>5</sup> Probably this rule is not intended to be inflexible; a good deal would depend upon the competence of the defence. Sometimes, too, even the most skilful advocate will shrink from asking a question, the answer to which would be decisive for or against his client. This is the very case in which the judge should give the prisoner the chance of throwing light on the matter, if he chooses to do so.

Where the statement of the accused has been made before the committing magistrate, the magistrate's attestation is *prima facie* evidence that the statement was made, and that the proceedings were regular.<sup>6</sup> The absence of a proper attestation by the magistrate renders the statement inadmissible.<sup>7</sup>

§ 759. Dying Declarations in criminal cases are governed by the Evidence Act, s. 32 (1), which makes admissible "statements, written or verbal, of relevant facts made by a person who is dead, where the statement is made by a person as to the cause of his death, or as to any of the circumstances of the transaction which resulted in his death, in cases in which the cause of that person's death comes into question. Such statements are relevant, whether the person who made them was or was not, at the time when they were made, under expectation of death, and whatever may be the nature

<sup>1</sup> 5 All., at p. 256.

<sup>2</sup> *Reg. v. Shama Sunker Biswas*, 10 Suth. Cr. 25.

<sup>3</sup> *Reg. v. Mona Puna*, 16 Bom. 661.

<sup>4</sup> *Re Bava Chela*, Bom. H.C. Cr. Ruling, 8th Jan., 1886, cited *Sohni*, Crim. P.C., 3rd edit., p. 233.

<sup>5</sup> *Gandi Pataya*, Mad. H.C. Pro., 11th Dec., 1885, Weir, 955.

<sup>6</sup> *Reg. v. Jaga Poley*, 11 Suth. Cr. 39; *Reg. v. Misser Sheikh*, 14 Suth. Cr. 9.

<sup>7</sup> *Reg. v. Mt. Nirani*, 7 Suth. Cr. 49; *Reg. v. Chupput*, 15 Suth. Cr. 83.



of the proceeding in which the cause of his death comes into question."

This definition gets rid of the refinements introduced by English law in consequence of the necessity of proving that the declaration was made under a sense of impending death. The idea that there was anything particularly truthful in such declarations was probably more fanciful than real. Under the Evidence Act they are admitted, with many other classes of hearsay, on the general principle that it is unwise to exclude that which is often the only testimony that can be obtained. The application of such declarations is also enlarged. Under English law, they are only receivable where the death to which they relate is itself the subject of a charge of culpable homicide. Under the Act they are admissible, whatever the nature or purpose of the proceeding may be, whether civil or criminal, provided it is necessary in that proceeding to decide how a particular death was brought about.<sup>1</sup> Where the statement has been made with reference to one charge, it is equally admissible after the death of the declarant for any other, provided the purpose to which it is applied comes within the meaning of the section of the Evidence Act.<sup>2</sup>

§ 760. Where the deceased was questioned shortly before her death as to the circumstances under which she was injured, and, being unable to speak though still conscious, replied by signs, the Allahabad High Court, being satisfied that she understood the questions put to her, and that the meaning of her signs was beyond doubt, held that the questions and signs taken together amounted to a verbal statement within s. 32.<sup>3</sup>

Where the declaration is not taken in presence of the person against whom it is used, so that he might cross-examine the declarant, it is not a deposition, and therefore is not receivable under s. 80 of the Evidence Act merely by proof of the signature of the magistrate by whom it was recorded. It must be proved by some one who heard it, and who can identify the person who made it as the person whose death is the subject of inquiry. The writing in which the statement was recorded at the time can only be used for the purpose of refreshing the memory of the writer, or

<sup>1</sup> See *illus. (a)*; *Reg. v. Bisserunjun*, 6 Suth. Cr. 75; *Reg. v. Ujrail*, 3 N.W.P. 212.

<sup>2</sup> *Reg. v. Rochia Mohato*, 7 Cal. 42.

<sup>3</sup> *Reg. v. Abdullah*, 7 All. 385.



of any other person who is authorized by s. 159 of the Evidence Act to use it with that object.<sup>1</sup> Where in a case of murder tried before assessors, the judge acted on a statement made by the deceased, which was not recorded till after the close of the trial and the discharge of the assessors, this was held to be a material irregularity which was not cured by s. 437 of the Criminal Procedure Code.<sup>2</sup>

§ 761. Character is material in criminal proceedings, first as affecting the witnesses, and secondly as affecting the accused. As regards witnesses, the mode in which their character may be inquired into, by cross-examination or by direct evidence in contradiction of their statements on cross-examination, is fully laid down in the Evidence Act, ss. 146—155. The character of the witness in relation to the charge upon which he is examined will always be relevant under s. 132, where it is suggested that he was himself an accomplice in the crime; both because every particular in regard to the persons connected with a crime is itself relevant, and also because the fact that he is an accomplice, places him among a class of witnesses whom the law requires to be treated in a special manner.<sup>3</sup> It will also be material in case of rape, where it is suggested that the prosecutrix was of generally immoral character.<sup>4</sup>

§ 762. As regards the accused, the law is laid down as follows by ss. 53, 54, and 55 of the Evidence Act, as amended by Act III. of 1891, s. 6.

53. In criminal proceedings, the fact that the person accused is of a good character, is relevant.

54. In criminal proceedings, the fact that the accused person has a bad character is irrelevant, unless evidence has been given that he has a good character, in which case it becomes relevant.

*Explanation 1.*—This section does not apply to cases in which the bad character of any person is itself a fact in issue.

*Explanation 2.*—A previous conviction is relevant as evidence of bad character.

55. *Explanation.*—In ss. 52, 53, 54, and 55, the word “character” includes both reputation and disposition; but,

<sup>1</sup> *Reg. v. Fata Adaji*, 11 Bom. H.C. 247; *Reg. v. Samiruddin*, 8 Cal. 211.

<sup>2</sup> *Reg. v. Ramlal*, 15 All. 136.

<sup>3</sup> See *ante*, § 737.

<sup>4</sup> Evidence Act, s. 154 (4). See the discussion upon this point, *ante*, § 472.

except as provided in s. 54, evidence may be given only of reputation and general disposition, and not of particular general acts by which reputation or disposition were shown.

Under s. 54, as now amended, a previous conviction for any offence is irrelevant, except as evidence of bad character, where such latter evidence is itself relevant. Accordingly, no witness for the prosecution is allowed to state that the accused has a bad character, or has been previously convicted, unless in the few cases in which such evidence bears directly upon the point to be proved. It would be directly relevant when the charge was brought under ss. 400 or 401 of the Penal Code for being a member of a gang of habitual dacoits or thieves, or under s. 413 for being an habitual receiver of stolen goods, or where a previous conviction is proved under s. 75 with a view to the enhancement of punishment. In all other cases, such evidence would be valueless for the purpose of ascertaining the guilt of the accused, and would only create an improper prejudice against him.<sup>1</sup>

§ 763. Evidence of either good or bad character must be confined to general reputation. Proof cannot be given of either good or bad acts, because the acts themselves might be disputed, and the circumstances which led to them might be unknown. The only exception allowed is where an offence has been followed by a conviction, because here the matter has been reduced to certainty. As to what is meant by general reputation, in England it is always taken as meaning the character a man bears among his neighbours or associates generally. A witness to character who begins, as he always does begin, by giving his own opinion, is stopped, and told that he must only say what character the accused bore among those who were acquainted with him generally. The curious result follows, that a witness is not allowed to describe a man's character from his own personal knowledge and experience, but is required to say what people in general think of him, of which he can know nothing. On a trial for an indecent assault, where the defendant had given evidence of good character, a witness called by the prosecution to rebut such evidence was asked, "What is the defendant's general character for decency and morality of conduct." The witness said, "I know nothing of the neigh-

<sup>1</sup> *Reg. v. Gopal Thakoor*, 6 Suth. Cr. 72; *Reg. v. Thakoordass Chootur*, v. Suth. Cr. 7; *Reg. v. Bykunt Nath*, 10 Suth. Cr. 17; *Roshun Doosadh v. Reg.*, 5 Cal. 768.

bourhood's opinion, because I was only a boy at school when I knew him; but my own opinion, and the opinions of my brothers, who were also pupils of his, is, that his character is that of a man capable of the grossest indecency and the most flagrant immorality." The majority of the judges held that the answer was not admissible in evidence. Erle, C.J., and Willes, J., held that the individual opinion of a witness respecting the general character and disposition of the prisoner with reference to the charge is admissible, although such witness knows nothing of the prisoner's general reputation.<sup>1</sup> It is possible that the introduction of the words "general disposition" into the Explanation to s. 55 of the Evidence Act may be in favour of the latter view. It is difficult to see how evidence of the general disposition of a man can be founded on anything but a personal knowledge of that disposition as evidenced, not by particular acts but by general conduct showing that disposition. In England evidence of a general disposition, that is, of a tendency to commit acts of a particular sort, cannot be given.<sup>2</sup>

§ 764. Evidence of general bad character, or of criminal conduct, as rendering it likely that a person would commit acts of the same sort as the one with which he is charged, must not be confounded with similar evidence directed to show that he did commit the particular act, as by supplying a motive for it, or negating the idea that it was accidental or unintentional.<sup>3</sup> A remarkable case of this sort occurred on the trial of Dr. Neill for murder in London in 1892. It appeared that he was in the habit of associating with prostitutes, and offering them medicines to improve their complexion. Several of these women died, with symptoms of poisoning by strychnine. One of them pretended to take the medicine, but threw it away. It was proved that shortly after he inquired about her, and asked if she was dead. He was charged on different indictments for separate murders, but only tried on one, on which he was convicted and hung. At the trial the facts as regards all the girls were proved, for the purpose of showing the deadly character of the drug which he offered to them, and his own knowledge of its

<sup>1</sup> *Reg. v. Rowton*, L. & C. 520; S.C. 34 L.J. M.C. 57.

<sup>2</sup> See Evidence Act, s. 14, *Explanation* and *illus. (o)* and *(p)*; *Reg. v. Rowton*, *ub. sup.*

<sup>3</sup> *Reg. v. Vyapoory Moodelliar*, 6 Cal. 655; see Evidence Act, s. 8, *illus. (a)*, *(c)*, *(i)*; s. 14, *illus. (a)*, *(b)*, *(i)*, *(j)*, *(o)*, *(p)*; s. 15, *illus. (a)*, *(b)*, *(c)*; see also, as to receiving stolen goods, *ante*, § 525; cheating, *ante*, § 548; coining, *ante*, § 573; forgery, *ante*, § 590.



properties. The leading cases on this point were recently examined by the Judicial Committee on an appeal from New South Wales. There the prisoners were charged with the murder of a child which had been given to them with a small premium, under colour of adoption by them. When they received it they were living in George Street, where its dead body was found. At the trial evidence was offered that they had received other children from their mothers on like representations as to willingness to adopt them, and upon payment of a sum, inadequate for the support of the child for more than a very limited time, and that the bodies of infants had been found buried in a similar manner in the gardens of several houses occupied by the prisoners on former occasions and in different streets. The evidence was held admissible as bearing on the question whether the deaths were designed or accidental, and whether the statement that they wished to adopt a child in place of one of their own which they had lost was the genuine reason for taking the child, or only a pretext.<sup>1</sup>

§ 765. **Medical Evidence.**—The Criminal Procedure Code contains the following provisions on this point :

509. The deposition of a civil surgeon or other medical witness, taken and attested by a magistrate in the presence of the accused, may be given in evidence in any inquiry, trial, or other proceeding under this Code, although the deponent is not called as a witness.

The Court may, if it thinks fit, summon and examine such deponent as to the subject-matter of his deposition.

510. Any document purporting to be a report under the hand of any<sup>2</sup> chemical examiner or assistant chemical examiner to Government, upon any matter or thing duly submitted to him for examination or analysis and report in the course of any proceeding under this Code, may be used as evidence in any inquiry, trial, or other proceeding under this Code.

The deposition of a medical witness cannot, under s. 509, be used against any accused person unless it was taken in his presence. Where there are several defendants, it must be shown that each person against whom it is tendered was so present.<sup>3</sup> This is essential. The mere signature of the magistrate cannot be taken as raising a presumption, either under s. 114, *illus. (c)*, or under s. 80 of the Evidence Act, that

<sup>1</sup> *Makin v. Atty.-Gen. of N.S. Wales* (1894), A.C. 57.

<sup>2</sup> Act X. of 1886, s. 14.

<sup>3</sup> *Reg. v. Jhubboo Mahton*, 8 Cal. 739.



the deposition was so taken. It is not the magistrate's duty to take and attest the deposition of a medical witness in presence of the accused, but if he does so, the deposition can be received without calling the witness.<sup>1</sup> When the evidence is unsatisfactory or incomplete upon any point, the judge who tries the case should send for the medical witness, if his attendance can be procured. His presence does not render his former deposition inadmissible. It can still be put in, and used as an examination in chief so far as it goes, subject to the right of the Crown to supplement it by further questions, and of the defence to cross-examine generally upon the whole case.<sup>2</sup>

Under s. 510 the original report must be produced. No copy or extract from or summary of it would be sufficient.<sup>3</sup> Further, it must purport to be a report under the hand of a chemical examiner or assistant chemical examiner to Government, and therefore it must not only be signed by him,<sup>4</sup> but, as I conceive, signed by him in his official capacity, or with some statement showing the capacity of the person who does sign.

§ 766. Independently of these provisions, the evidence of an expert is admissible where it is necessary for the Court to form an opinion upon any matter of science or handwriting; as, for instance, upon the insanity of a prisoner, the cause of a death, whether a woman had been raped, or whether a document was forged, or a threatening letter was in the handwriting of the accused.<sup>5</sup> The opinion of the expert must be given first hand, that is to say, on oath and subject to cross-examination. No certificate or report, other than one under s. 510 of the Criminal Procedure Code, is admissible, though the witness who has given such a certificate or made such a report, may refresh his memory by it.<sup>6</sup> The only exception is when an expert is dead, or from some other reason is incapable of being produced as a witness, in which case his opinions expressed in any treatise commonly

<sup>1</sup> *Reg. v. Riding*, 9 All. 720; *Reg. v. Pohp Singh*, 10 All. 174.

<sup>2</sup> *Reg. v. Jhubboo Mahton*, 8 Cal., at p. 746; *Roghuni Singh v. Reg.*, 9 Cal. 455.

<sup>3</sup> *Re Chintamonee Nye*, 11 Suth. Cr. 2; *Reg. v. Bishumbur Doss*, 15 Suth. Cr. 49.

<sup>4</sup> *Reg. v. Bishumbur Doss*, *ub. sup.*

<sup>5</sup> Evidence Act, s. 45.

<sup>6</sup> *Reg. v. Kaminee Dossee*, 12 Suth. Cr. 25; *Roghuni Singh v. Reg.*, 9 Cal. 455.

offered for sale, may be proved by the production of such treatise.<sup>1</sup>

A medical man who has attended upon a patient during his last illness, or who has made a *post mortem* examination of his body, may prove the nature of the illness or injuries from which he suffered, the manner in which they were produced, and the causes of the death. Where he has had no such personal knowledge, he can only give evidence hypothetically. He may listen to the evidence of those who have personal knowledge, or may have it read to him, and may then be asked, assuming those facts to be true, what was the cause of the death, and could it have been brought about in any of the ways suggested on either side.<sup>2</sup> The same rule was laid down as to the mode of questioning a medical witness in regard to insanity, in the fifth answer of the judges, in *McNaghten's case*.<sup>3</sup>

§ 767. "The improper Admission or Rejection of Evidence shall not be ground of itself for a new trial or reversal of any decision in any case, if it shall appear to the Court, before which such objection is raised, that, independently of the evidence objected to and admitted, there was sufficient evidence to justify the decision, or that, if the rejected evidence had been received, it ought not to have varied the decision."<sup>4</sup> The principles laid down in this section had been acted upon before the passing of the Evidence Act. In 1869, in a case tried before a jury, and appealed against on account of the improper reception of evidence, Melville, J., following the judgment of Sir B. Peacock in *Reg. v. Elahee Buksh*,<sup>5</sup> said: "If the Appellate Court think that the evidence of a jury is founded in part upon the evidence which should not have been admitted, or that the appellant has been prejudiced by some misdirection or omission of proper direction on the part of the judge, the Appellate Court is at liberty to treat the case as if it had been tried by the judge with the aid of assessors, and if it considers that the evidence (after omitting that part of it which should not have been admitted) is sufficient to sustain the verdict, it is at liberty to confirm the conviction. It may happen in some cases that the Appellate Court

<sup>1</sup> Evidence Act, s. 60.

<sup>2</sup> *Roghuni Singh v. Reg.*, 9 Cal., p. 461; *Reg. v. Meher Ali*, 15 Cal. 589.

<sup>3</sup> 12 Cl. & F. 200; *ante*, § 168.

<sup>4</sup> Evidence Act, I. of 1872, s. 167; see also Crim. P.C., s. 537; *ante*, § 739.

<sup>5</sup> 5 Suth. Cr. 80; *ante*, § 740.

will think it desirable to order a new trial, because the evidence on the record is of such a character as to suggest the consideration that its real nature cannot be fairly appreciated except by a court which has the advantage of hearing the evidence given. But in all cases in which it is possible to do so satisfactorily, I think the Appellate Court should form its own conclusions on the evidence, and that it should not, save in exceptional instances, direct a new trial.”<sup>1</sup> Since 1872 it has been decided that s. 167 of the Evidence Act applies to criminal as well as to civil cases, and whether the appeal is being heard under the Civil Procedure Code, or under s. 26 of the Letters Patent.<sup>2</sup> Accordingly, in a case tried by jury where evidence has been improperly received, the High Court will either affirm the conviction, or acquit the prisoner, or direct a new trial.<sup>3</sup>

§ 768. **The Province of the Judge.**—Where a case is conducted before a jury, the provinces of the judge and of the jury are distinct. All questions of law are for the judge. All questions of fact, bearing on the issues to be decided, are for the jury. The judge is bound by s. 297 of the Criminal Procedure Code to direct them to their verdict in all matters of law, and by his summing up to assist them to arrive at a proper verdict in all questions of fact. I have already (*ante*, § 739) referred to s. 297 of the Criminal Procedure Code with reference to the duty of the judge in directing the jury as to the testimony of accomplices. The principles there laid down are of general application. In *Reg. v. Elahee Buksh*, Sir B. Peacock said, in reference to a section corresponding to s. 297: “There can be no doubt that that section requires the judge to sum up properly, and there would be very great danger in holding that there is no remedy by appeal against a verdict of guilty, if it appears clearly to the High Court that a failure of justice has been caused by improper advice upon a question of fact, or by an omission to give that advice which a judge, in the exercise of a sound judicial discretion, ought to give upon questions of fact, or as to the degree of credit to be given to particular witnesses. It appears to me that it amounts to an error of law in the summing up, which, on appeal, is a ground for

<sup>1</sup> *Reg. v. Ramasami Mudeliar*, 5 Bom. H.C. C.C. 47.

<sup>2</sup> *Reg. v. Navroji Dadabhai*, 9 Bom. H.C. 358; *Reg. v. Hurribole Chunder*, 1 Cal. 207.

<sup>3</sup> *Reg. v. Nand Ram*, 9 All. 609; *Reg. v. Pitamber Jina*, 2 Bom. 61; *Reg. v. Pandharinath*, 6 Bom. 34.



setting aside the verdict, subject, however, to the limitation provided by the Code of Criminal Procedure in ss. 439 and 426 (now s. 537), that the Appellate Court is satisfied that the accused person has been prejudiced by the error or defect, and that a failure of justice has been created thereby.”<sup>1</sup> This language was adopted by the Bombay High Court. Sargent, J., said: “There is, doubtless, some difficulty in saying where a prisoner has been prejudiced; and I am inclined to agree with Mr. Justice Louis Jackson, that it would not be safe to lay down any rule, although probably in most cases the ends of justice would be satisfied by considering whether, if the case had been tried by a judge and assessors, the Court would set aside the finding.”<sup>2</sup> So in a Bengal case, Field, J., said: “As to what constitutes murder, I find no direction whatever. It is the duty of a judge to give a direction upon the law to the jury, so far as to make them understand the law as bearing upon the facts; and if he does not give them an explanation of the law sufficiently comprehensive to enable them to decide the particular issue, it is misdirection.”<sup>3</sup> On the other hand, the judge is not to confuse the jury by discussing questions of law with them. They are bound to take the law he gives them. He is to direct, not to argue with them.<sup>4</sup> On matters of fact he is to direct only in the sense of guiding. If he guides them wrongly, or imperfectly—still more, if he does not guide them at all—the conviction is liable to be set aside, and either an acquittal or a new trial ordered.<sup>5</sup>

§ 769. The matters reserved exclusively for the judge are laid down in s. 298 of the Criminal Procedure Code as follows:—

“(a) to decide all questions of law arising in the course of the trial, and specially all questions as to the relevancy of facts which it is proposed to prove, and the admissibility of evidence or the propriety of questions asked by or on behalf of the parties; and, in his discretion, to prevent the production of inadmissible evidence, whether it is or is not objected to by the parties;

<sup>1</sup> 5 Suth. Cr., at p. 87.

<sup>2</sup> *Reg. v. Fetteh Chand*, 5 Bom. H.C. C.C. 83, at p. 93.

<sup>3</sup> *Reg. v. Jhubboo Mahtou*, 8 Cal., at p. 751; *Wafadar Khan v. Reg.*, 21 Cal. 955.

<sup>4</sup> *Reg. v. Nobokisto Ghose*, 8 Suth. Cr. 88.

<sup>5</sup> *Reg. v. Shumshere Beg*, 9 Suth. Cr. 51.



“(b) to decide upon the meaning and construction of all documents given in evidence at the trial;

“(c) to decide upon all matters of fact which it may be necessary to prove in order to enable evidence of particular matters to be given;

“(d) to decide whether any question which arises is for himself or for the jury, and upon this point his decision shall bind the jurors.

“The judge may, if he thinks proper, in the course of his summing up, express to the jury his opinion upon any question of fact, or upon any question of mixed law and fact, relevant to the proceeding.

### *Illustrations.*

“(a) It is proposed to prove a statement made by a person not being a witness in the case, on the ground that circumstances are proved which render evidence of such statement admissible.

“It is for the judge, and not for the jury, to decide whether the existence of those circumstances has been proved.

“(b) It is proposed to give secondary evidence of a document, the original of which is alleged to have been lost or destroyed.

“It is the duty of the judge to decide whether the original has been lost or destroyed.”

Accordingly, it is for the judge to decide whether a confession is inadmissible in consequence of being made under inducement, or has become admissible through the removal of the inducement;<sup>1</sup> whether particular facts amount to corroboration of an accomplice;<sup>2</sup> or whether a particular communication is privileged, as having taken place between mookhtear and client.<sup>3</sup> Probably the most difficult of the judge's duties is to decide between cases where there is some evidence, however slight, which must be left to the jury, and cases where there is no evidence whatever, when he is bound absolutely to withdraw the case from their consideration, and to direct an acquittal.<sup>4</sup>

<sup>1</sup> Evidence Act, ss. 24, 28; *ante*, § 750; *R. v. Hucks*, 1 Stark. 522; *Bartlett v. Smith*, 11 M. & W. 483.

<sup>2</sup> *Reg. v. Karoo*, 6 Suth. Cr. 44; *Reg. v. Nawab Jan*, 8 Suth. Cr. 19.

<sup>3</sup> *Reg. v. Chunder Kant*, 10 Suth. Cr. 14.

<sup>4</sup> *Reg. v. Greedhary Manjee*, 7 Suth. Cr. 39; *Reg. v. Nobokisto Ghose*, 8 Suth. Cr. 88, p. 91. See also, under the head of Negligence, *ante*, § 379; Defamation, §§ 671—673.

## CHAPTER XVIII.

PROCEEDINGS INCIDENTAL TO THE TRIAL OR FOLLOWING  
AFTER IT.

- I. Disposal of Property, §§ 770—772.
- II. Taking Security, §§ 773, 774.
- III. Compensation, §§ 775—779.
- IV. Disagreement between Judge and Jury, § 780.
- V. Appeal, §§ 781—788.
- VI. Revision, §§ 789—797.
- VII. Appeal to the Queen in Council, §§ 798, 799.

§ 770. **The Disposal of Property.**—By s. 517 of the Criminal Procedure Code, “when an inquiry or a trial in any criminal court is concluded, the Court may make such order as it thinks fit for the disposal of any document or other property produced before it regarding which any offence appears to have been committed, or which has been used for the commission of any offence.

“When a High Court or a Court of Session makes such order and cannot through its own officers conveniently deliver the property to the person entitled thereto, such court may direct that the order be carried into effect by the district magistrate. •

“When an order is made under this section in a case in which an appeal lies, such order shall not (except when the property is live-stock or is subject to speedy and natural decay) be carried out until the period allowed for presenting such appeal has passed, or, when such appeal is presented within such period, until such appeal has been disposed of.

“*Explanation.*—In this section the term ‘property’ includes, in the case of property regarding which an offence appears to have been committed, not only such property as has been originally in the possession or under the control of any party, but also any property into or for which the same may have been converted or exchanged, and anything

acquired by such conversion or exchange, whether immediately or otherwise.”<sup>1</sup>

An order under this section can only be made in respect of property which has actually been produced before the Court. It is not sufficient that evidence should have been given about it; as, for instance, about live animals which are not produced.<sup>2</sup> If, however, property of a nature which it was inconvenient or impossible to bring within the precincts of the court, was actually in the custody of its officials, I should think this would satisfy the requirements of the section. It is no matter how the property is produced, whether it was seized by the police, or found upon the prisoner, or voluntarily produced by a witness in the case.<sup>3</sup> The case must be one which has gone so far as to reach an inquiry or a trial before a criminal court. Proceedings which never reach that point do not justify an order under s. 517, though they may lead to action being taken under s. 523.<sup>4</sup> Where there is a simple acquittal of the accused, no offence having been found to be committed in respect of the property, no order under s. 517 is necessary or possible. It is merely the duty of the Court to restore the possession which had been disturbed for the purpose of the trial.<sup>5</sup> Where, however, upon inquiry before a magistrate the accused is not acquitted, but merely discharged on the ground of want of evidence against him, it is competent to the magistrate to make an order under s. 517.<sup>6</sup> It has also been suggested, though not decided, that even though the accused is completely acquitted, a similar order might be made, if it appeared to the Court that an offence different from that which had been charged, had been committed in regard to the property.<sup>7</sup>

§ 771. It will be observed that it is not compulsory upon the court to make an order under s. 517. The mere fact, however, that the person from whose custody the goods are produced is a *bonâ fide* purchaser, is no sufficient reason for

<sup>1</sup> See *per* Ameer Ali, J., 19 Cal., p. 62.

<sup>2</sup> *Rash Mohun Goshamy v. Kali Nath*, 19 Suth. Cr. 3.

<sup>3</sup> *Reg. v. Ramdas*, 12 Bom. H.C. 217.

<sup>4</sup> *Re Annapurnabai*, 1 Bom. 630; *re Anant Ram Chandra*, 10 Bom. 197.

<sup>5</sup> *Re Annapurnabai*, *ub. sup.*; *re Ratanlal*, 17 Bom. 748; *Basuden Surma v. Naziruddin*, 14 Cal. 834.

<sup>6</sup> *Reg. v. Nilambar Baba*, 2 All. 276.

<sup>7</sup> *Reg. v. Ahmed*, 9 Mad. 448.

not returning them to the rightful owner. No seller can give the buyer of goods a better title than he has himself, except in certain specified cases.<sup>1</sup> In regard to money, or currency notes, or negotiable securities, which pass from hand to hand by delivery, which have been taken in the ordinary way of business, or changed for notes or money of another denomination, no such order would be made, where the receiver acted honestly.<sup>2</sup> In the case of a negotiable security which passes by endorsement, the endorsement of the thief is, of course, ineffectual. The holder must show that when it was in the possession of the thief it had already become negotiable; that is, that it had been validly endorsed, so that a person who took it from him would not have to rely on any act of his except the mere delivery. Where such a note bore two endorsements prior to that of the thief, but there was nothing to show that they were written before the theft, nor that they were genuine, the Court declined to presume anything in favour of the thief, and decided that the holder had shown no title.<sup>3</sup>

Section 519 authorizes the court to compensate the innocent purchaser of stolen property out of any money which was taken out of the possession of the thief on his arrest. No part of the fine imposed on the offender can be applied to this purpose.<sup>4</sup>

Where the subject of theft was a cow, which passed through several hands before the trial, and remained upwards of a year with the last holder, it was held that an order to restore the cow was a proper one, but that the calf, which had not been conceived till after the theft, had never been the property of the prosecutor, and could not be claimed by him.<sup>5</sup>

The order of the court after a conviction is conclusive as to the immediate right of possession of the property.<sup>6</sup> I conceive, however, that it would not bar an action by the dispossessed holder to show that he had a better title than the original holder.

§ 772. The appeal allowed by s. 520 against orders passed under ss. 517, 518, and 519, applies to any court which is

<sup>1</sup> Contract Act, IX. of 1872, s. 108, *illus. (a)*.

<sup>2</sup> *Re Collector of Salem*, 7 Mad. H.C. 233; *Reg. v. Jogessur Mochi*, 8 Cal. 379.

<sup>3</sup> *Bank of Bengal v. Mendes*, 5 Cal. 654, at p. 665.

<sup>4</sup> *Payuthini Pramutha, Weir*, 1127.

<sup>5</sup> *Re Vernede*, 10 Mad. 25.

<sup>6</sup> *Reg. v. Tribhovan*, 9 Bom. 131.



a court of appeal, confirmation, reference, or revision, as regards the court which passed the order. It does not require that any appeal should be in fact pending before such court.<sup>1</sup> This section, however, only applies to cases in which the court had jurisdiction under s. 517 to pass the order complained of. Where the circumstances were such that no order could have been made under that section, it is not made appealable by s. 520.<sup>2</sup> The High Court, whether it cancels the appellate or the original order as being without jurisdiction, has no power to direct how the property shall be disposed of. This is a matter for the civil courts.<sup>3</sup>

Where there has been a conviction for obscene or libellous publications, or in respect of noxious food, or adulterated or noxious drugs, the court has power under s. 521 to order the subject-matter to be destroyed. This gets rid of the difficulty which arose in the case of *Reg. v. Indarman*.<sup>4</sup>

Section 522 of the Criminal Procedure Code provides that “whenever, in any criminal court, a person is convicted of an offence attended with criminal force, and it appears to such court that by such criminal force any person has been dispossessed of any immovable property, the court may order such person to be restored to possession.

“No such order shall prejudice any right over such immovable property which any person may be able to show in a civil suit.”

It is essential, under this section, to show that the person to whom the property belonged was, in fact, dispossessed by the accused, and by means of the criminal force of which he is convicted.<sup>5</sup>

§ 773. Taking Security.—“Whenever any person accused of rioting, assault, or other breach of the peace, or of abetting the same, or of assembling armed men, or taking other unlawful measures with the evident intention of committing the same, or any person accused of committing criminal intimidation by threatening injury to person or property, is convicted of such offence before a High Court, a court of session, or the court of a Presidency magistrate, a district

<sup>1</sup> *Reg. v. Jogessur Mochi*, 3 Cal. 379; *Reg. v. Ahmed*, 9 Mad. 488.

<sup>2</sup> *Re Anant Ram Chandra*, 10 Bom. 197.

<sup>3</sup> *Re Annapurnabai*, 1 Bom. 630; *Basuder Surma v. Naziruddin*, 14 Cal. 834.

<sup>4</sup> 3 All. 837.

<sup>5</sup> *Mohunt Lachmi Dass v. Pallat Lal*, 23 Suth. Cr. 54.

magistrate, a sub-divisional magistrate, or a magistrate of the first class,

“and such court is of opinion that it is necessary to require such person to execute a bond for keeping the peace,

“such court may, at the time of passing sentence on such person, order him to execute a bond for a sum proportionate to his means, with or without sureties, for keeping the peace during such period, not exceeding three years, as it thinks fit to fix.

“If the conviction is set aside on appeal or otherwise, the bond so executed shall become void.”<sup>1</sup>

Section 123 provides for imprisonment in default of giving security; s. 124, for release from imprisonment when the continued confinement of the offender is no longer necessary; and s. 125, for cancelling the security bond.

§ 774. The power given by s. 106 may be exercised whenever the offence committed, or the circumstances under which it was committed, point to an intention to commit a breach of the peace; as, for instance, in case of criminal trespass on land, accompanied by force.<sup>2</sup> The person bound over under this section must have been convicted. If he is acquitted under circumstances which lead the judge to think that a breach of the peace may take place hereafter, he cannot be bound over under s. 106, though proceedings may be taken under ss. 107 or 108.<sup>3</sup> Nor can the judge bind over the accused, and also any of the witnesses who appear to have taken part in the offence.<sup>4</sup> The order, if made under s. 106, must be made at the time of passing sentence. If not made then, it can only be made under s. 107 or one of the subsequent sections, and in the manner provided by them.<sup>5</sup> When a conviction of an offence is contemporaneous with an order for taking security for good behaviour, the sentence for the substantive offence is to be first carried out, and the person to be bound then brought up for the purpose of being bound.<sup>6</sup>

No order under this section can be made by any higher court which may take cognizance of the sentence by way of appeal or otherwise. In this respect the Act of 1882 differs

<sup>1</sup> Crim. P.C., s. 106.

<sup>2</sup> *Reg. v. Gendoo Khan*, 7 Suth. Cr. 14; *Reg. v. Jhapoo*, 20 Suth. Cr. 37.

<sup>3</sup> *Sahebdi v. Kuran*, 21 Suth. Cr. 37.

<sup>4</sup> *Reg. v. Kadar Khan*, 5 Mad. 380.

<sup>5</sup> *Re Gobind Sooboodha*, 15 Suth. Cr. 56.

<sup>6</sup> *Per curiam*, *Reg. v. Shona Dagee*, 24 Suth. Cr. 14.

from that of 1872, which contained such a power.<sup>1</sup> And if the substantive sentence is passed by a magistrate who is not competent to take security under s. 106, he cannot submit his sentence to a higher authority, with a view to security being required by such authority.<sup>2</sup>

There is no appeal against an order passed under s. 123, committing to prison a person who fails to give security when required.<sup>3</sup>

§ 775. *Compensation.*—The provisions as to compensation for frivolous or vexatious complaints in s. 250 of the Criminal Procedure Code of 1882 have now been repealed by Act IV. of 1891, which has substituted for them, as s. 560 of the Code, a clause extending to a much wider range of cases.

“560. (1) If, in any case instituted by complaint as defined in this Code, or upon information given to a police officer or to a magistrate, a person is accused before a magistrate of any offence triable by a magistrate, and the magistrate by whom the case is tried discharges or acquits the accused, and is satisfied that the accusation against him was frivolous or vexatious, the magistrate may, in his discretion, by his order of discharge or acquittal, direct the person upon whose complaint or information the accusation was made, to pay to the accused, or to each of the accused, where there are more than one, such compensation, not exceeding fifty rupees, as the magistrate thinks fit:

Provided that, before making any such direction, the magistrate shall—

- (a) record and consider any objection which the complainant or informant may urge against the making of the direction, and,
- (b) if the magistrate directs any compensation to be paid, state in writing, in his order of discharge or acquittal, his reasons for awarding the compensation.

(2) Compensation of which a magistrate has ordered payment under sub-s. (1) shall be recoverable as if it were a fine:

Provided that, if it cannot be recovered, the imprisonment to be awarded shall be simple, and for such term, not exceeding thirty days, as the magistrate directs.

<sup>1</sup> *Aslu v. Reg.*, 16 Cal. 779.

<sup>2</sup> *Mahmudi Sheikh v. Aji Sheikh*, 21 Cal. 622.

<sup>3</sup> *Chand Khan v. Reg.*, 9 Cal. 878.



(3) A complainant or informant who has been ordered, under sub-s. (1), by a magistrate of the second or third class to pay compensation to an accused person, may appeal from the order, in so far as the order relates to the payment of the compensation, as if such complainant or informant had been convicted on a trial held by such magistrate.

(4) Where an order for payment of compensation to an accused person is made in a case which is subject to appeal under sub-s. (3), the compensation shall not be paid to him before the period allowed for the presentation of the appeal has elapsed, or, if an appeal is presented, before the appeal has been decided.

(5) At the time of awarding compensation in any subsequent civil suit relating to the same matter, the court shall take into account any compensation paid or recovered under this section."

§ 776. This section appears to apply to the person who brings an accusation with a view to criminal proceedings being taken against some other person, not to one who in the execution of a legal or moral duty supplies the authorities with information upon which they may act at their discretion. Where compensation had been awarded against a police officer who had charged a carter with an offence under Act V. of 1861, s. 34, cl. 3, the order was declared illegal. The Court said: "Complaint is defined in s. 4 (a), and that definition in express terms excludes the report of a police officer. The operation of s. 560 is restricted to cases instituted 'by complaint as defined in this Code, or upon information given to a police officer or to a magistrate.' It is clear that it will not apply to a case instituted on a police report or on information given by a police officer."<sup>1</sup> So, where a *karkun* of a civil court reported to the court that he had been obstructed in the execution of a decree, on which a report was made by the court to a magistrate, who acquitted the alleged obstructor, and directed the *karkun* to pay compensation, the order was set aside. It was held that the *karkun* was not the complainant, and that the subordinate judge on whose report the magistrate proceeded was acting judicially, and therefore could have had no order made against him.<sup>2</sup>

§ 777. A complaint as defined by the Criminal Procedure

<sup>1</sup> *Ramjeevan v. Durgan Charan*, 21 Cal. 979.

<sup>2</sup> *Re Keshav Lakshman*, 1 Bom. 175; *Anon.* 15 Suth. Civ. 506.



Code, s. 4 (a), is an allegation made orally or in writing to a magistrate, with a view to his taking action under that Code, that some person has committed an offence. An offence, as defined by s. 4 (p), means any act or omission made punishable by any law for the time being in force. Therefore s. 560 applies to accusations under a special or local law.<sup>1</sup> It has been held that it does not apply to a complaint for an illegal seizure of cattle under the Cattle Trespass Act, I. of 1871, ss. 20 and 22, as such a proceeding is not an offence within the meaning of the Criminal Procedure Code.<sup>2</sup> The contrary has been held as regards a charge under s. 24 of the same Act.<sup>3</sup> Nor does it apply to information given to a magistrate under s. 110 of the Criminal Procedure Code that a person is an habitual robber, etc., because this is not an accusation of an offence, but an allegation that the person is a bad character, against whom precaution should be taken.<sup>4</sup>

The magistrate must have tried the case, and must on such trial have satisfied himself that the accusation was frivolous or vexatious. The dismissal of a complaint for default of appearance by the complainant will not justify an order for compensation.<sup>5</sup> It is no objection that an acquittal has taken place after evidence has been offered in support of the charge,<sup>6</sup> nor that the charge was believed as regards some of the defendants, if it was vexatious and frivolous as regards others.<sup>7</sup> No order for compensation can be granted when sanction is given to prosecute for a false charge. Compensation and prosecution are alternative, not cumulative remedies.<sup>8</sup>

§ 778. The order made under s. 560 is merely for payment of compensation not exceeding Rs. 50 to the accused, or to each of them, where there are more than one. If the sum awarded is not paid, it is recoverable as a fine in the manner provided by ss. 386—388 of the Criminal Procedure Code. The Allahabad High Court has laid it down under the Act of 1861 that it is illegal to make it part of the order

<sup>1</sup> *Reg. v. Turner*, 4 N.W.P. 94.

<sup>2</sup> *Pitchi v. Ankappa*, 9 Mad. 102; *Kottalanada v. Muthaya*, *ibid.* 374; *Kala Chand v. Gudadhur*, 13 Cal. 304.

<sup>3</sup> *Number v. Ambu*, 5 Mad. 381.

<sup>4</sup> *Reg. v. Lakhat*, 15 All. 365.

<sup>5</sup> *Ram Churn v. Sheikh Jannu*, 17 Suth. Cr. 6.

<sup>6</sup> *Reg. v. Pandu Valad*, 10 Bom. 199.

<sup>7</sup> *Number v. Ambu*, 5 Mad. 381.

<sup>8</sup> *Shib Nath Chong v. Sarat Chunder*, 22 Cal. 586.

that imprisonment shall follow in default of payment.<sup>1</sup> The High Court of Calcutta intimated the same opinion under the present Act, and said that in any case if the magistrate had power to order imprisonment, it was illegal to make the order until some attempt had been made to levy the amount.<sup>2</sup> In a case where compensation was awarded under s. 22 of the Cattle Trespass Act, I. of 1871, the same court said: "The law prescribes that the compensation may be levied as a fine, but it does not say that imprisonment may be awarded in default of payment; and we are not aware of any provision of law which provides that fines may be levied by means of imprisonment. The ordinary mode of levying fines is laid down in s. 386 of the Criminal Procedure Code."<sup>3</sup>

§ 779. **Allotting Fine as Compensation.**—Sections 545 and 546 of the Criminal Procedure Code provide as follows:—

"Whenever under any law in force for the time being a criminal court imposes a fine, or confirms in appeal, revision, or otherwise, a sentence of fine, or a sentence of which fine forms a part, the Court may, when passing judgment, order the whole or any part of the fine recovered to be applied—(a) in defraying expenses properly incurred in the prosecution; (b) in compensation for the injury caused by the offence committed, where substantial compensation is, in the opinion of the Court, recoverable by civil suit. If the fine is imposed in a case which is subject to appeal, no such payment shall be made before the period allowed for presenting the appeal has elapsed, or, if an appeal be presented, before the decision of the appeal.

"At the time of awarding compensation in any subsequent civil suit relating to the same matter, the Court shall take into account any sum paid or recovered as compensation under s. 545."

When, upon the conviction of some prisoners for stealing bullocks, the judge ordered the fine imposed upon them to be paid over to one of the witnesses as compensation for his having had to return to the prosecutor the bullocks which he had purchased, the order was held to be bad. The sale to the witness was not "the offence complained of" within the meaning of s. 308 of Act X. of 1872.<sup>4</sup>

<sup>1</sup> *Reg. v. Gopal*, 2 N.W.P. 430.

<sup>2</sup> *Ramjeevan v. Durga Charan*, 21 Cal. 979.

<sup>3</sup> *Paryag Rai v. Arju Mian*, 22 Cal. 139; *Shib Nath Chong v. Sarat Chunder*, 22 Cal. 586.

<sup>4</sup> 7 Mad. H.C. Appx. xiii.; S.C. Weir, 332, 2nd edit.

Where two persons were jointly charged in respect of a theft of some bullocks, and it appeared that the first prisoner had stolen the bullocks, and had sold them to the second prisoner, who had bought without a guilty knowledge, and was therefore acquitted, but was deprived of his purchase; it was held by the Madras High Court, that the loss so suffered by the prisoner was not a loss resulting from the theft, which could be compensated under s. 44 of the Crim. P.C. as originally framed.<sup>1</sup> Nor, it seems, would such a case come within the meaning of the amended section. The injury suffered by the purchaser would arise, not from the theft, but from his own act in buying from one who was not the owner of the property he sold.

Under this section it is competent to a magistrate to award the whole, or any part, of a fine imposed upon a police officer as compensation to the prosecutor, notwithstanding the provision contained in s. 12, Act XXIV. of 1859 (Madras Police), that fines imposed upon police officers for misconduct shall be credited to the Police Superannuation Fund.<sup>2</sup>

§ 780. Disagreement between Judge and Jury.—“If the sessions judge<sup>3</sup> disagrees with the verdict of the jurors, or of a majority of the jurors, on all or any of the charges on which the accused has been tried, so completely that he considers it necessary for the ends of justice to submit the case to the High Court, he shall submit the case accordingly, recording the grounds of his opinion, and, where the verdict is one of acquittal, stating the offence which he considers to have been committed. Whenever the judge submits a case under this section, he shall not record judgment of acquittal or conviction on any of the charges on which the accused has been tried, but he may either remand the accused to custody or admit him to bail.”

“In dealing with the case so submitted the High Court may exercise any of the powers which it may exercise on appeal;<sup>4</sup> but it may acquit or convict the accused of any offence of which the jury could have convicted him upon the charge framed and placed before it; and if it convicts

<sup>1</sup> 4 Mad. H.C. Appx. xxviii.; S.C. Weir, 331, 2nd edit.

<sup>2</sup> Rules of the Sudder Court, 28th April, 1862.

<sup>3</sup> A district magistrate exercising his powers under Act III. of 1884, s. 8, cl. 6, has the same powers under this section as the sessions judge (*Reg. v. McCarthy*, 9 All. 420).

<sup>4</sup> See Crim. P.C., s. 423; *post*, §§ 785, 786.



him, may pass such sentence as might have been passed by the Court of Session.”<sup>1</sup>

A mere disapproval of the verdict by the judge, which still admits of his proceeding to pass judgment in accordance with it under s. 306, does not give rise to the powers conferred by s. 307 on the High Court. The judge must submit the case to the High Court in support of his opinion that such a course is necessary for the ends of justice.<sup>2</sup> When he has done so the proceedings have to be completed by the judgment of the High Court. In arriving at such judgment the High Court exercises original powers, which are not curtailed or cut down by the appellate ss. 418 and 423 (d). The whole facts are before it, and it may reverse or affirm the verdict of the jury, either upon questions of law or upon an appreciation of the evidence.<sup>3</sup> The High Court, however, will not deal with the verdict of the jury as if it did not exist, or was no more than the opinion of the assessors in a case on ordinary appeal. Nor on the other hand will they attribute to it the overwhelming weight which is ascribed to it by the English courts in civil cases on an application for a new trial. It is not necessary to show that it is so perverse or unreasonable that no honest men of common sense could arrive at it; or that it was given in defiance of the ruling of the judge on a point of law; or that it was influenced by an erroneous or defective direction or summing up. It is, however, necessary to find that the verdict was clearly and manifestly wrong, not merely that it was not such a verdict as the judges would themselves have given if they had been in the jury box. Each case will be dealt with on its own merits, due weight being given to the conduct of the jury, their unanimity or otherwise, and to any circumstances showing that they were led astray, or acted under mistake or misconception, either of law or fact.<sup>4</sup>

When the jury has found facts which would, under s. 238 of the Criminal Procedure Code, support a conviction for an offence which is not charged, the High Court in dealing under s. 307 with an entire acquittal of the prisoner, may

<sup>1</sup> Crim. P.C., s. 307.

<sup>2</sup> *Reg. v. Bhawani*, 2 Bom. 525; *Reg. v. Chinna Tevan*, 14 Mad. 36.

<sup>3</sup> *Reg. v. McCarthy*, 9 All. 420; *Reg. v. Dada Ana*, 15 Bom. 452.

<sup>4</sup> *Reg. v. Khandirav Bajirav*, 1 Bom. 10; *Reg. v. Dhunum Kaze*, 9 Cal. 53; *Reg. v. Jacquet*, 11 Cal. 85; *Reg. v. Chagan*, 14 Bom. 831; *per Jardine, J.*, p. 342; *Reg. v. Mania Dayal*, 10 Bom. 497; *Reg. v. Dada Ana*, 15 Bom. 452; *per Sargent, C.J.*, at p. 486.



accept the finding of fact, and convict the prisoner of the offence constituted by the facts so found.<sup>1</sup>

§ 781. **Appeal.**—"An appeal may lie on a matter of fact as well as a matter of law, except where the trial was by jury, in which case the appeal shall lie on a matter of law only.

"*Explanation.*—"The alleged severity of a sentence shall for the purposes of this section be deemed to be a matter of law."<sup>2</sup>

**Jury Cases.**—An appeal in a case tried by jury must point out distinctly the question of law which is to be argued. It is not for the court to hunt through the record and find out any illegality that may arise, but it is for the parties who appeal to point out wherein there has been a departure from the law. Unless this be done the appeal will, except under special circumstances, be rejected.<sup>3</sup>

Section 423 of the Criminal Procedure Code, which regulates the powers of the Appellate Court, provides by clause (d) that "nothing herein contained shall authorize the court to alter or reverse the verdict of a jury, unless it is of opinion that such verdict is erroneous owing to a misdirection by the judge, or to a misunderstanding on the part of the jury of the law as laid down by him."

Misdirection in this clause embraces, I imagine, a failure in any of the functions specially allotted to a judge by s. 298 of the Criminal Procedure, *ante*, § 769. Therefore the improper admission or exclusion of evidence,<sup>4</sup> or a conviction where there was no evidence proper to be left to the jury,<sup>5</sup> or a deficient or erroneous direction by the judge,<sup>6</sup> will be ground for appeal. But in the latter case it is not sufficient to show that the language was or might have been misunderstood, if the expressions were such as ought to have been understood by any reasonable man, having regard to what was proved in the case, and what was afterwards said to the jury.<sup>7</sup> No finding, sentence, or order of a court of competent jurisdiction shall be reversed or altered under Chapter XXVII. of the Criminal Procedure Code, or on a retrial or revision on account of any irregularity in the proceedings

<sup>1</sup> *Reg. v. Harai Mirdha*, 3 Cal. 189.

<sup>2</sup> *Crim. P.C.*, s. 418.

<sup>3</sup> *Reg. v. Gopaul Bhereewalla*, 1 *Suth. Cr.* 21.

<sup>4</sup> *Reg. v. Luckhy Narain*, 24 *Suth. Cr.* 18.

<sup>5</sup> *Reg. v. Chand Bagdee*, 7 *Suth. Cr.* 6.

<sup>6</sup> *Reg. v. Elahee Buksh*, 5 *Suth. Cr.* 80; *ante*, §§ 739, 768; *Reg. v. Ramasami Mudeliar*, 5 *Bom. H.C. C.C.* 47; *Lien Tu v. Reg.*, 11 *Cal.* 10.

<sup>7</sup> *Reg. v. Shib Chunder Mitter*, 10 *Cal.* 1079.

before or during trial, or on account of any misdirection in any charge to the jury, unless the matter complained of has caused a failure of justice.<sup>1</sup>

§ 782. In a recent case in Calcutta<sup>2</sup> the High Court reversed the verdict of a jury on appeal, partly because it did not appear distinctly what was the offence of which they convicted the prisoners, and partly because the judge left to them as evidence against all the accused certain statements which were only evidence against some. It was then contended for the Crown, that under s. 537 it would appear upon an examination of the evidence that the conviction was quite right, and that the misdirection had not caused a failure of justice. The Court, however, held that they had no power to examine the evidence for this purpose. "Section 418 of the Code provides that where the trial is by jury, an appeal shall be on a matter of law only. It is quite clear, therefore, that we have no power to try the accused in this appeal on matters of fact." With regard to s. 423 (*d*) they said: "It throws on the Appellate Court the duty, no doubt, of ascertaining whether the process or method which the judge directed the jury to follow, as to the acceptance or discarding of evidence, or as to the view taken of the law, was erroneous on any material point, but not certainly the duty of determining for itself whether the verdict, as a conclusion of fact, was right or wrong." They then cited a decision of the Judicial Committee on an appeal from New South Wales,<sup>3</sup> where, upon the law governing that colony, it was held that if evidence of a material nature was wrongly admitted on a criminal trial, the court could not affirm the judgment, even though it was of opinion that there was sufficient evidence to support the conviction, independently of the evidence wrongly admitted, and that the accused was guilty of the offence with which he was charged. Their Lordships said: "It is obvious that the construction contended for transfers from the jury to the court the determination of the question, whether the evidence—that is to say, what the law regards as evidence—established the guilt of the accused. The result is, that in a case where the accused has the right to have his guilt or innocence tried by a jury, the judgment passed

<sup>1</sup> Crim. P.C., s. 537. See, for decisions on this section, §§ 695, 701, 712, 739, 760, 768.

<sup>2</sup> *Wafadar Khan v. Reg.*, 21 Cal. 955, pp. 973, 976; see also *Womas Chunder v. Chundee Churn*, 7 Cal. 293.

<sup>3</sup> *Makin v. Atty.-Gen. for New South Wales* (1894), A.C. 57.

upon him is made to depend, not on the finding of the jury, but on a decision of the court. The judges are in truth substituted for the jury, the verdict becomes theirs alone, and is arrived at upon a perusal of the evidence, without any opportunity of seeing the demeanour of the witnesses, and weighing the evidence with the assistance which this affords."

This decision of the Judicial Committee is, of course, no direct authority upon the very different procedure in India. There appears to be nothing in New South Wales corresponding to section 167 of the Evidence Act, which provides that the improper admission or rejection of evidence shall not be ground of itself for a new trial or reversal of the decision, if it shall appear to the court before which the objection is raised, that, independently of the evidence objected to and admitted, there was sufficient evidence to justify the decision, or that, if the rejected evidence had been received, it ought not to have varied the decision. The section has been held to apply to criminal cases, and seems to throw upon the superior court the very duty of weighing "what the law regards as evidence," which the court in the Calcutta and Privy Council cases refused to assume. To this extent it has been recognized by several decided cases.<sup>1</sup> Neither this section of the Evidence Act, nor the cases decided upon it, appear to have been referred to in the case under discussion. Nor was a case cited in which it was decided that the improper admission of evidence was a defect or irregularity which might be cured by a section corresponding to the present s. 537.<sup>2</sup> It may probably be, therefore, that the decision in *Wafadar Khan's* case may be held inapplicable to cases within the meaning of s. 167 of the Evidence Act.<sup>3</sup>

§ 783. **Appeal against Acquittal.**—Section 417 of the Criminal Procedure Code provides that "the Local Government may direct the Public Prosecutor to present an appeal to the High Court from an original or appellate order of acquittal passed by any court other than a High Court." No private person can appeal against an acquittal, and what he cannot do directly, he cannot, as a matter of right, do indirectly, by putting the High Court in motion, by way of revision (see *post*, § 795).

<sup>1</sup> See *ante*, § 767.

<sup>2</sup> *Reg. v. Beharee Dosadh*, 7 Suth. Cr. 7. The report does not state whether it was a jury case or not.

<sup>3</sup> This view has been recently taken by the High Court of Bombay *v. Ramchandra*, 19 Bom. 750).



Where the withdrawal of a complaint operates as an acquittal, an appeal will lie by the Government.<sup>1</sup> So also where there is an acquittal upon a graver charge, but a conviction for a minor offence.<sup>2</sup> Where there has been a proper acquittal on the actual charge made, but the Court or jury have failed to convict of the offence really committed, as they are authorized to do under s. 237, an appeal will also lie, but the High Court will exercise its discretion as to whether the circumstances of the case justify them in opening up the proceedings.<sup>3</sup> Where the acquittal has been by the verdict of a jury, an appeal against it by Government must be on some ground of law, which would support an appeal under s. 418.<sup>4</sup> No appeal will lie against a refusal by the judge to add fresh charges, or against any other interlocutory orders made during the trial.<sup>5</sup>

Under s. 417 the appeal must be to the High Court. Accordingly, s. 423, cl. (a), can have no application to any other court.<sup>6</sup>

The words "appellate order of acquittal," include all orders of an Appellate Court by which a conviction is set aside.<sup>7</sup>

Section 417 does not apply to a trial where the same fact, or series of facts, may be regarded as constituting different offences, for any of which the accused may be convicted under s. 236 of the Criminal Procedure Code (*ante*, §§ 699, 702). If in such a case there is an appeal to the High Court against the conviction, and it orders a new trial, such order annuls equally the acquittal upon one view of the case, and the conviction upon another view.<sup>8</sup>

§ 784. As to the mode in which jurisdiction under s. 417 should be exercised, the Allahabad High Court said:<sup>9</sup> "The powers given to the Local Government are of an exceptional and unusual character; and while we fully recognize the necessity for their existence in this country, we are equally

<sup>1</sup> *Luchi Behara v. Nityanund Doss*, 19 Suth. Cr. 55.

<sup>2</sup> *Reg. v. Judoonath Gangooly*, 2 Cal. 273.

<sup>3</sup> *Ex parte The Government Pleader*, 7 Mad. H.C. 339; *Reg. v. Dukaran*, 7 N.W.P. 196.

<sup>4</sup> *Government of Bengal v. Parmeshur Mullick*, 10 Cal. 1029. See as to such grounds, *ante*, § 781.

<sup>5</sup> *Reg. v. Vajiram*, 16 Bom. 414.

<sup>6</sup> *Rangasami v. Narasimhulu*, 7 Mad. 213.

<sup>7</sup> *Government of Bengal v. Gokool Chunder*, 24 Suth. Cr. 41.

<sup>8</sup> *Krishna Dhan Mandal v. Reg.*, 22 Cal. 377; *ante*, § 784.

<sup>9</sup> *Reg. v. Gayadin*, 4 All. 148.



clear that they should be most sparingly enforced ; and, in respect of pure decisions of fact, only in those cases where, through the incompetence, stupidity, or perversity of a subordinate tribunal, such unreasonable or distorted conclusions have been drawn from the evidence as to produce a positive miscarriage of justice. . . . The doing so should be limited to those instances in which the lower court has so obstinately blundered and gone wrong, as to produce a result mischievous at once to the administration of justice and to the interests of the public." On the other hand, in a more recent case, in which the above ruling was relied on, the Calcutta High Court said :<sup>1</sup> " Under the Code of Criminal Procedure the Government have the same right of appeal against an acquittal as the person convicted has to appeal against his conviction and sentence. There is no distinction made in that Code as to the mode of procedure which governs the two sorts of appeals, or as to the principles upon which they are to be decided. Both appeals are governed by the same rules, and are subject to the same limitations ; and it appears to us that we are bound to decide this appeal, and that we have the discretion to refuse to interfere, if we consider that the judgment of the court below is wrong, and that Bibhuti Bhusan should have been convicted. No doubt in all cases of appeals, the judges of a Court of Appeal are naturally very cautious in interfering with the judgment of a judge and assessors before whom the witnesses are examined, both on the ground that a court before whom witnesses are examined has superior advantages in estimating the value of their testimony, and also here on the additional ground that in all criminal cases the accused is entitled to have the advantage of any doubt which may arise in the case ; but after giving the accused every benefit which he can derive from such a decision in his favour, if we are still of opinion that he is guilty of the offence with which he is charged, we think there is no discretion left to us as to whether we should find the prisoner guilty or not."

§ 785. It is probable that in any concrete case the Allahabad and the Calcutta judges would not differ very much in their decision, though the latter judgment is certainly expressed in much more measured language than the former. On the one hand, it is plain that no conflict of opinion as to the weight of evidence can ever arise, except where the

<sup>1</sup> *Reg. v. Bibhuti Bhusan*, 17 Cal. 485.

decision is that of a judge with assessors only, in which case the whole matter is absolutely open to the High Court. On the other hand, it must be remembered that the effect both upon the prisoner and upon public opinion is very different, according as the reversal of an original judgment causes the acquittal of a person who had been found to be guilty, or the conviction of a person who had been found to be innocent. The Appellate Court would hardly take the latter course, merely because they thought that they would have arrived at a different conclusion if the trial had been before themselves; they would probably require a conviction amounting to a moral certainty, not only that the lower court was wrong, but that it had gone wrong; not only that it had arrived at a wrong conclusion, but that it had reached it in some wrong way. It would require a very extreme case to warrant the Government in hanging a man who, after a fair trial in his own district, had been pronounced innocent.

The High Court may, in an appeal from an order of acquittal, reverse such order and direct that further inquiry be made, or that the accused be re-tried or committed for trial, as the case may be, or find him guilty and pass sentence on him according to law.<sup>1</sup>

§ 786. **Appeal from Conviction.**—The Appellate Court may, by s. 423 (b), “in an appeal from a conviction, (1) reverse the finding and sentence, and acquit or discharge the accused, or order him to be re-tried by a court of competent jurisdiction subordinate to such Appellate Court, or committed for trial, or (2) alter the finding, maintaining the sentence, or, with or without altering the finding, reduce the sentence, or (3) with or without such reduction, and with or without altering the finding, alter the nature of the sentence, but not so as to enhance the same; (c) in an appeal from any other order, alter or reverse such order.”

An appellant who has been convicted is not in the same position as he was on his original trial. There is no longer any presumption in favour of his innocence. The doubts which might arise upon the evidence have, for the time, been settled by the sentence against him. He must now satisfy the Court that there is sufficient ground for interfering with the conviction. If on the whole the case for and against him seems evenly balanced, the Appellate Court will in general refuse to disturb the finding of the lower

<sup>1</sup> Crim. P.C., s. 423 (a).

court whose judgment, being arrived at after a personal observation of the witnesses, is entitled to special weight.<sup>1</sup> Where a petition has been admitted under s. 422, it may be finally disposed of under s. 423 without hearing the appellant, if he is neither present in person, nor represented by pleader, and it makes no difference that the appellant is a convict actually in gaol.<sup>2</sup>

§ 787. Where on appeal to the sessions judge against a sentence by a magistrate acting within his jurisdiction, the sessions judge considers that the sentence is inadequate, and ought to be enhanced, the Allahabad High Court held that his only course is to report the case to the High Court under s. 438 (*post*, § 789), with a view to enhancement by it under s. 439. He is not authorized, under s. 423, to annul the order, and direct the case to be committed to himself for trial. The result would be that, by an indirect process, he would be able himself to enhance the sentence which by cl. (b) 3, he is forbidden to do. He can only reverse the finding and sentence, and order a committal to a higher authority, where by some mistake the accused has been tried and sentenced by a magistrate who had no jurisdiction to try the offence. In such a case he can order the accused to be re-tried by any competent authority subordinate to himself, or to be committed for trial by himself if the charge is one which can only be tried by a sessions judge.<sup>3</sup> This decision, however, was disapproved of by the High Court of Bombay. A Presidency magistrate had tried a prisoner who was charged under s. 326 with cutting off his wife's nose, an offence punishable with transportation for life, or imprisonment for ten years. The magistrate sentenced him to two years' imprisonment, which was the heaviest penalty he could inflict. On an application made under s. 435 by the Government to the High Court to quash the sentence as wholly inadequate, and to commit the case for trial by the High Court, it was objected on behalf of the prisoner that the High Court on appeal would have no power to take such a course, and the Allahabad case was cited. The Court held that the construction put upon the section was too narrow. "The words used in s. 423 are clear and unambiguous, and give to the Appellate Court the power to order an accused person to be committed for trial, where it considers that that was the proper procedure to be adopted

<sup>1</sup> *Reg. v. Sajiwan Lal*, 5 All. 386.

<sup>2</sup> *Reg. v. Pohpi*, 13 All. 171.

<sup>3</sup> *Reg. v. Sukha*, 8 All. 14.



in the case." "A magistrate is not to determine every case he is competent to try. He is required by s. 254 to consider whether such punishment as he can inflict is adequate; if not, he can commit the prisoner to a higher court under ss. 210 or 347." The judges therefore considered that under s. 423 an Appellate Court could direct a committal to a higher authority, where the trial by the inferior jurisdiction had failed in one of the ends of justice, viz. the infliction of an adequate punishment upon an offender.<sup>1</sup>

788. Where the sessions judge, when annulling a conviction by a magistrate for want of jurisdiction, has omitted at the same time to order a new trial, he is not precluded by s. 369 from passing such an order subsequently.<sup>2</sup>

It is open to the Appellate Court, under s. 423, to alter the finding by sentencing the accused upon a charge supported by the facts, though different from that for which he was tried. This course, however, will only be right where the accused was substantially tried on a case which is properly represented by the altered finding. It must not be a new case which might have been met by different evidence, or different arguments.<sup>3</sup>

§ 789. Revision.—Upon this subject the Criminal Procedure Code contains the following sections:—

435. "The High Court, or any Court of Session, or District Magistrate, or any subdivisional magistrate empowered by the Local Government in this behalf, may call for and examine the record of any proceeding before any inferior criminal court situate within the local limits of its or his jurisdiction, for the purpose of satisfying itself or himself as to the correctness, legality, or propriety of any finding, sentence, or order recorded or passed, and as to the regularity of any proceedings of such inferior court.

If any subdivisional magistrate, acting under this section, considers that any such finding, sentence, or order, is illegal or improper, or that any such proceedings are irregular, he shall forward the record, with such remarks thereon as he thinks fit, to the district magistrate.

Orders made under ss. 143 and 144 and proceedings under s. 176 are not proceedings within the meaning of this section."

436. "When, on examining the record of any case under s. 435 or otherwise, the Court of Session or District Magistrate

<sup>1</sup> *Reg. v. Abdul Rahman*, 16 Bom. 580.

<sup>2</sup> *Re Rami Reddi*, 3 Mad. 48.

<sup>3</sup> *Reg. v. Imdad Khan*, 3 All. 120.



considers that such case is triable exclusively by the Court of Session, and that an accused person has been improperly discharged by the inferior court, the Court of Session or District Magistrate may cause him to be arrested, and may thereupon, instead of directing a fresh inquiry, order him to be committed for trial upon the matter of which he has been, in the opinion of the Court of Session or District Magistrate, improperly discharged :

Provided as follows—

(a) that the accused has had an opportunity of showing cause to such court or magistrate why the commitment should not be made :

(b) that, if such court or magistrate thinks that the evidence shows that some other offence has been committed by the accused, such court or magistrate may direct the inferior court to inquire into such offence.”

437. “On examining any record, under s. 435 or otherwise, the High Court or Court of Session may direct the District Magistrate by himself or by any of the magistrates subordinate to him to make, and the District Magistrate may himself make, or direct any subordinate magistrate to make, further inquiry into any complaint which has been dismissed under s. 203, or into the case of any accused person who has been discharged.”

438. “The Court of Session or District Magistrate may, if it or he thinks fit, on examining, under s. 435 or otherwise, the record of any proceeding, report for the orders of the High Court the results of such examination, and, when such report contains a recommendation that a sentence be reversed, may order that the execution of such sentence be suspended, and if the accused is in confinement that he be released on bail or on his own bond.”

439. “In the case of any proceeding, the record of which has been called for by itself, or which has been reported for orders, or which otherwise comes to its knowledge, the High Court may, in its discretion, exercise any of the powers conferred on a Court of Appeal by ss. 195, 423, 426, 427, and 428, or on a court by s. 338, and may enhance the sentence, and, when the judges composing the Court of Revision are equally divided in opinion, the case shall be disposed of in manner provided by s. 429.

No order under this section shall be made to the prejudice of the accused unless he has had an opportunity of being heard either personally or by pleader in his own defence.

Where the sentence dealt with under this section has been passed by a magistrate acting otherwise than under s. 34, the court shall not inflict a greater punishment for the offence which, in the opinion of such court, the accused has committed, than might have been inflicted for such offence by a presidency magistrate or a magistrate of the first class.

Nothing in this section applies to an entry made under s. 273, or shall be deemed to authorize a High Court to convert a finding of acquittal into one of conviction."

§ 790. An appeal is a matter of right in all cases in which it is given, but a revision is in the discretion of the court.<sup>1</sup> Hence no party has a right to be heard before a court, either when it is exercising its power of revision, or in order to lay matters before it to induce it to exercise such powers.<sup>2</sup> Where, however, the court proposes to make an order to the prejudice of the accused, that is, an order enhancing the sentence, or altering a conviction against him to one involving a more serious sentence, he is entitled to be heard either personally or by pleader.<sup>3</sup> So the power to report proceedings to the High Court given by s. 438, is discretionary, and should not be exercised unless the referring officer considers it desirable or useful that any error detected by him should be set right.<sup>4</sup> Before making his report the judge should call for explanation from the inferior court, and submit the explanation with the rest of the record to the High Court.<sup>5</sup>

The information upon which the court exercises its powers of revision may be received in any way, either by its own examination of the records, or directly from the Government or a private person. The proper course, however, is to proceed by petition in open court. Publicity is thus secured, and a fuller hearing of the reasons which move the Government in the interests of the public order, or a private party in his own.<sup>6</sup>

§ 791. In s. 435 the words "any inferior criminal court," have been substituted for the words "any court subordinate

<sup>1</sup> *Per* Sir B. Peacock, C.J., 5 Suth. Cr., p. 46.

<sup>2</sup> Crim. P.C., s. 440; *Thandavan v. Periaannah*, 14 Mad. 363.

<sup>3</sup> Crim. P.C., s. 439; *Reg. v. Pohpi*, 13 All., p. 187. As to whether the accused is entitled to be heard before an order is made directing further inquiry under s. 437, see *Nobin Kristo v. Russick Lall*, 10 Cal. 268.

<sup>4</sup> *Nibarun Chunder v. Bhuggobutty Churn*, 20 Suth. Cr. 40.

<sup>5</sup> *Mailamdi Fakir v. Taripulla*, 8 Cal. 644.

<sup>6</sup> *Re Aurokiam*, 2 Mad. 38; *per* Jardine, J., 16 Bom., p. 582.

to such court or magistrate," which were used in s. 295 of the Act of 1872. The reason for the change was to meet the rulings that a district magistrate is not subordinate to the sessions judge; and to provide, nevertheless, that the revisional authority of the latter over the former should remain unquestionable. The High Court can, under s. 435, call for the record of any proceeding before any criminal court within the local limits of its jurisdiction; a Court of Sessions may do so as regards every other criminal court within the sessional district; and the magistrate of the district can do the same as regards every other magistrate's court within his district.<sup>1</sup>

The power to call for the record may be exercised at any stage of the proceedings,<sup>2</sup> and even after the prisoner has served out his sentence.<sup>3</sup> Where there is a right of appeal which has not been exercised, the power of revision still exists, but should be very sparingly exercised, and, save in very exceptional circumstances, not at all in reference to questions of fact.<sup>4</sup> Similarly, in cases where the district court or magistrate has concurrent revisional jurisdiction with the High Court, an application for revision will not be entertained, save on some special ground, unless a previous application shall have been made to the lower court.<sup>5</sup> When a court has once exercised its power of revision, that power is exhausted, and its decision cannot be reviewed by itself.<sup>6</sup>

§ 792. The powers of the High Court as a Court of Revision were stated as follows by Sir B. Peacock in a case under the Criminal Procedure Code of 1861.<sup>7</sup>

"If in a case of child murder the judge were to say 'it is not necessary to try whether death was caused by an act done with the intention of causing death, because if it was so caused, the prisoner was not guilty of murder. I find that the child was under the age of six months, and therefore

<sup>1</sup> *Opendro Nath v. Dulkhini*, 12 Cal. 473; *re Pudmanabha*, 8 Mad. 18; *Reg. v. Laskari*, 7 All. 853; *Reg. v. Pirya Gopal*, 9 Bom. 100, overruling *Nobin Kristo v. Russick Lall*, 10 Cal. 268.

<sup>2</sup> *Vilaetee Khanum v. Meher Ali*, 24 Suth. Cr. 4; *Chandi Pershad v. Abdur Rahman*, 22 Cal. 131.

<sup>3</sup> *Reg. v. Sinha*, 7 All. 135.

<sup>4</sup> *Per Straight*, Offg. C.J., *Reg. v. Ala Baksh*, 6 All. 484.

<sup>5</sup> *Reg. v. Reolah*, 14 Cal. 887; *Reg. v. Chagdu*, 14 Bom. 331, at p. 342. The same rule has been laid down as to the special jurisdiction under the Charter, cl. 15 (*Reg. v. Rajcoomar Singh*, 3 Cal. 573).

<sup>6</sup> *Reg. v. Fox*, 10 Bom. 176; *re Gibbons*, 14 Cal. 42.

<sup>7</sup> *Reg. v. Gora Chand Gopee*, 5 Suth. Cr. 45; S.C. B.L.R., Sup. Vol., 443.



acquit the prisoner ;' in such a case there would be no finding on the facts, and the court, as a Court of Revision, would merely set aside the acquittal and order a new trial. Again, suppose a magistrate, in a case triable by him, should convict of an offence, and the session judge on appeal should, without going into the facts, reverse the decision upon a point of law and order the prisoner to be discharged, stating that, assuming the facts to be as found by the magistrate, the prisoner was not guilty of the offence, this court, if the judge were wrong in point of law, could, as a Court of Revision, reverse his decision and direct him to try the appeal upon its merits. If a judge, on appeal, should uphold the finding of a magistrate on the facts and reverse his decision in point of law, and order the prisoner to be discharged, then, as the acquittal would be merely upon a point of law, this court, as a Court of Revision, might reverse the judgment of acquittal, and order the sentence of the magistrate to stand. The court may act as a Court of Revision, after it has acted as a Court of Appeal, if it finds it necessary to do so, in order to correct an order in law which cannot be set right on appeal. For instance, if a man should be found guilty of a murder and sentenced to seven years' transportation, if a prisoner should appeal on the facts, the court might uphold the finding of guilty of murder on appeal, and afterwards, as a Court of Revision, might set aside the sentence of seven years' transportation, and pass a legal sentence for murder."

§ 793. This statement appears equally to apply to the Act of 1882, except as regards sentences of acquittal. By the Act of 1872, a power of appeal against a sentence of acquittal, at the instance of the Local Government, was for the first time given. And the last clause of s. 439 of the Act of 1882 enacts that a High Court cannot, on revision, convert a finding of acquittal into one of conviction. This does not deprive the High Court of all power of dealing with an acquittal by way of revision; but unless it is necessary to do so in the interests of justice, the High Court will not in general interfere with such sentences, unless on appeal by the Local Government under s. 417.<sup>1</sup> Where the acquittal is on mere questions of facts, the disinclination to do so would be still stronger.<sup>2</sup> The power of the court to deal with acquittals was considered by the Allahabad

<sup>1</sup> *Heerabai v. Framji*, 15 Bom. 349.

<sup>2</sup> *Thandavan v. Periannah*, 14 Mad. 363.



High Court, when the following questions were referred to a Full Bench. 1. Has the Court power under s. 439 to revise an order of acquittal? 2. If it has, in reference to orders of acquittal passed on appeal, what has it power to order to be done? The Full Bench, after contrasting the 1st clause of s. 439, which enables the High Court to exercise on revision all the powers given by s. 423 (a), with the last clause, stated their opinion as follows on the first question: "It appears to us that the presence of these words in the section indicates that, short of determining the questions of fact in the case when revising such orders, as we may do when sitting as a Court of Appeal, all the other powers of the cl. (a) of s. 423, read in conjunction with the 1st paragraph of s. 439, are left unimpaired. We are then of opinion that the High Court has power to revise an order of acquittal made by any of the courts exercising original or appellate jurisdiction subordinate to us." As to the second question, they said: "Clearly the order must be one directing the re-trial of the proceedings wherein the final order has been found to be bad, and has in consequence been reversed." As to the court to which the order for re-trial should be sent, "the Sessions Court of Appeal is the proper tribunal for re-trial of the appeal, or such other court of equal jurisdiction as we might entrust, under s. 526 of the Code, with the trial of the appeal."<sup>1</sup>

§ 794. The High Court has also power in revision to order a prisoner to be committed for trial when he has been improperly discharged,<sup>2</sup> or when he has received an inadequate sentence from a magistrate whose powers did not admit of his imposing a sufficient punishment.<sup>3</sup> It can also quash a commitment which has been improperly made,<sup>4</sup> or an order by a magistrate directing the revival of proceedings against an accused person who had been discharged.<sup>5</sup> Orders sanctioning a prosecution under ss. 195 or 476 of the Criminal Procedure Code for offences referred to in those sections may also be reversed on revision.<sup>6</sup>

The powers of enhancement of sentence which, under s. 280

<sup>1</sup> *Reg. v. Balwant*, 9 All. 139.

<sup>2</sup> *Reg. v. Ram Lal Singh*, 6 All. 40.

<sup>3</sup> *Reg. v. Abdul Rahman*, 16 Bom. 580.

<sup>4</sup> *Reg. v. Lachman Singh*, 2 All. 398.

<sup>5</sup> *Re Mohesh Mistree*, 1 Cal. 282; *re Dijahur Dutt*, 4 Cal. 647.

<sup>6</sup> *Khepu Nath Sikdar v. Grish Chunder*, 16 Cal. 730; *Reg. v. Rachappa*, 13 Bom. 109.

of the Act of 1872, were possessed by a Court of Appeal, are now by s. 423 (b) taken away from such court, and conferred only upon the High Court acting by way of revision. When so acting, the court may not only enhance the sentence, but alter its nature.<sup>1</sup>

§ 795. A different question arises when a private person attempts to set the High Court in motion as a revisional court for the purpose of overruling an acquittal. It is clear that he cannot do so as a matter of right. On the other hand, as the High Court is willing to receive from any quarter the information which may draw its attention to the case, the mere fact that such information comes from a private prosecutor, in the form of a petition properly presented to the court, is no reason why it should not be acted on.<sup>2</sup> Where such a petition was presented under the present Code, the Madras High Court said, "An appeal against an acquittal by way of revision is, in our opinion, not contemplated by the Code, and it should, we think, on public grounds, be discouraged." They therefore, under s. 440, refused to hear the pleader in support of the petition, and dismissed the application.<sup>3</sup> So the Calcutta court refused to act under s. 15 of the charter, when asked to reverse the discharge of a prisoner by a Presidency magistrate.<sup>4</sup>

§ 796. Under s. 297 of the Act of 1872, the High Court was only able to act by way of revision when it appeared to it that there had been "a material error in any judicial proceeding."<sup>5</sup> Under s. 435, the power of calling for a record is conferred to enable a superior authority to satisfy himself as to "the correctness, legality, or propriety of any finding, sentence, or order recorded or passed, and as to the regularity of any proceedings of such inferior court." If ground for interfering appears, a sub-divisional magistrate can only forward the record with his remarks to the district magistrate. The Court of Sessions or district magistrate may take independent action upon the matter in the cases

<sup>1</sup> *Reg. v. Ram Kuria*, 6 All. 622.

<sup>2</sup> *Re Hardeo*, 1 All. 139; *Sukho v. Durga Prasad*, 2 All. 448; *Reg. v. Abdul Rahman*, 16 Bom., at p. 582.

<sup>3</sup> *Thandavan v. Periannah*, 14 Mad. 263.

<sup>4</sup> *Re Poona Churn Pal*, 7 Cal. 447.

<sup>5</sup> As to what was material error, see *Reg. v. Ramkunoo*, 19 Suth. Cr. 28; *re Raghoo Parirah*, *ibid.*; *Sonatun Dass v. Gooroo Churn*, 21 Suth. Cr. 88; *re Juggut Chunder*, 2 Cal. 110; *Reg. v. Ram Narain*, 8 All. 514; *Basiraddi v. Reg.*, 21 Cal. 827.

stated by ss. 436 and 437. In all other cases they must report the matter to the High Court under s. 438, the final disposal resting with that court.

§ 797. Where the High Court is acting by way of revision, it is no longer confined to matters of law, but may deal with the case "on the ground of incorrectness, that is to say, on the ground that it is wrong on the merits."<sup>1</sup> This does not, however, mean that the court will weigh the evidence for and against, exactly as if the case came before them on appeal from a judge and assessors. In Calcutta, Mitter, J., said: "Under s. 435, we generally decline to go into the question of facts, though we have the power to do so. We exercise this power only in such cases where we find that in the interests of justice it should be exercised."<sup>2</sup> This rule is more imperative in cases where there is no appeal, and the discretion reserved to the court will only be exercised where it appears clear that the evidence does not support the charge.<sup>3</sup> In a later case in Bombay, Jardine, J., said:<sup>4</sup> "As a rule, while allowing the suitor to come to our revisional jurisdiction, we have refused to interfere in two great classes of cases: (a) Where, as a rule, the Legislature intended the original or appellate jurisdiction on the facts to be final; (b) where the relief sought might be got from a court of concurrent revisional jurisdiction below. Whether, in dealing with matters of fact, 'very exceptional grounds' exist, 'whether the interests of justice' require exceptional interference, are questions to be determined in reference to the circumstances of each case. It may be a fairly accurate account of the way this court uses its discretion, if we say that we refrain from interfering with the judgment on facts, in like manner as we refrain, under s. 307 of the Criminal Procedure Code, from interfering with the verdict of a jury, that is, where it is not shown to be clearly and manifestly wrong, nor that the court below has used no discretion at all, or in a manner wholly unreasonable." "Where the evidence on the record will sufficiently warrant a conviction, we should not in revision be justified in setting aside the conviction, merely because the view taken of the evidence by the courts below is one that is not sustainable, or because

<sup>1</sup> *Per Wilson, J., Hari Dass Sanyal v. Saritulla*, 15 Cal. 608, p. 618, followed *Ram Brahma v. Chandra Kanta*, 21 Cal. 931, p. 935.

<sup>2</sup> *Nobin Krishna v. Rassick Lall*, 10 Cal. 1047.

<sup>3</sup> *Reg. v. Shekh Saheb*, 8 Bom. 197.

<sup>4</sup> *Reg. v. Chagan*, 14 Bom. 331, p. 342.



some fact which ought to have been found has either not been found, or found incorrectly.”<sup>1</sup>

None of these decisions related to jury trials. As to them, Sir B. Peacock, when dealing with the Code of 1861, said, “As a Court of Revision, the court cannot reverse the verdict of a jury.”<sup>2</sup> The same rule still applies. The powers of a Court of Appeal referred to in s. 439 must be taken as subject to s. 418, which in jury cases limits the appeal to matters of law. A Revision Court can do nothing which an Appellate Court could not do, except enhance the sentence.

§ 798. **Appeal to the Queen in Council.**—The charters of the Supreme Court authorized those courts to grant leave to appeal to the Sovereign in Council against all criminal proceedings conducted before them.<sup>3</sup> A similar power is given by s. 41 of the Letters Patent of 1865. The practice upon this subject was reviewed by Westropp, C.J., in the case of *Reg. v. Pestonji Dinsha*,<sup>4</sup> where he pointed out that in only three instances had leave been granted. In two of them a doubt had arisen as to the jurisdiction of the court to try the case, and in the third, as to its power to grant a new trial in cases of misdemeanor. The only other case I am aware of in which such an application was made under the Letters Patent was that of *McCrea*, in which the Allahabad High Court refused the leave.<sup>5</sup> There is no power to grant leave to appeal against decisions of the Mofussil courts, or of the High Court on appeal from such decisions. On all such cases, as well as in cases where leave to appeal has been refused, a special application for leave to appeal must be made to the Judicial Committee, founded on full copies of the original and appeal judgments, and of all material portions of the evidence on which it may be necessary to rely.

§ 799. As to such applications, the law was laid down as follows in *Reg. v. Bertrand*:—<sup>6</sup>

“It seems undeniable that in all cases, criminal as well as civil, arising in places from which an appeal would lie, and where, either by the terms of a charter or statute, the authority has not been parted with, it is the inherent pre-

<sup>1</sup> *Balmakand Ram v. Ghansam Ram*, 22 Cal. 391, p. 409.

<sup>2</sup> *Reg. v. Gora Chand Gopee*, 5 Suth. Cr., p. 48; *Reg. v. Chunder Kant Chuckerbutty*, 10 Suth. Cr. 14.

<sup>3</sup> 2 M. Dig., pp. 582, 628, 679.

<sup>5</sup> 15 All. 173.

<sup>4</sup> 10 Bom. H.C. 92.

<sup>6</sup> L.R., 1 P.C. 530.



rogative right and, on all proper occasions, the duty of the Queen in Council to exercise an appellate jurisdiction, with a view not only to ensure so far as may be the due administration of justice in the individual case, but also to preserve the due course of procedure generally. The interest of the Crown, duly considered, is at least as great in these respects in criminal as in civil cases; but the exercise of this prerogative is to be regulated by a consideration of circumstances and consequences; and interference by Her Majesty in Council in criminal cases is likely in so many instances to lead to mischief and inconvenience, that in them the Crown will be very slow to entertain an appeal by its officers on behalf of itself or by individuals. The instances of such appeals being entertained are therefore very rare. The result is that any application to be allowed to appeal in a criminal case comes to this Committee labouring under a great preliminary difficulty—a difficulty not always overcome by the mere suggestion of hardship in the circumstances of the case, yet the difficulty is not invincible. It is not necessary, and perhaps it would not be wise to attempt to point out all the grounds which may be available for the purpose; but it may be safely said that when the suggestions, if true, raise questions of great and general importance, and likely to occur often, and also where, if true, they show the due and orderly administration of the law interrupted, or diverted into a new course, which might create a precedent for the future, and also where there is no other means of preventing these consequences, then it will be proper for this Committee to entertain an appeal, if referred to its decision.”

A similar rule was laid down in *Dillet's case*,<sup>1</sup> where it was said: “The rule has been repeatedly laid down, and has been invariably followed, that Her Majesty will not review or interfere with the course of criminal proceedings, unless it be shown that by a disregard of the forms of legal process, or by some violation of the principles of natural justice or otherwise, substantial and grave injustice has been done.”<sup>2</sup>

In *Bertrand's case*, the Privy Council reversed an order of the court of N.S. Wales, which had ordered a new trial in a case of felony. Similarly, in *Reg. v. Burah*,<sup>3</sup> a decision

<sup>1</sup> 12 App. Ca. 459.

<sup>2</sup> Cited and followed in *ex parte Deeming* (1892), A.C. 422; and *ex parte Kops* (1894), A.C. 650.

<sup>3</sup> 5 I.A. 178; S.C. 4 Cal. 172.

of the High Court of Calcutta was reversed, in which it had been held that a decision of the Indian Legislature was *ultra vires*. So, in *Dillet's case*,<sup>1</sup> the Judicial Committee reversed a conviction for perjury, on the ground that the judge, in his charge to the jury, had grossly misrepresented the real issue in a manner most unfair to the prisoner, and had made unsworn statements to the jury of matters alleged to be within his own knowledge, which were neither to be found in the records nor in the evidence. In *Reg. v. Cooke*<sup>2</sup> the Committee reversed a decision of the Canadian Court which had set aside a conviction, on the erroneous view that statements made by a witness on oath could not be lawfully used against him when on trial on a criminal charge. So appeals were admitted in the cases cited in the note, all of which raised questions of the greatest importance as to the jurisdiction of the courts below.<sup>3</sup> In no case will leave to appeal be granted upon objections of a merely technical nature, or unless some clear departure from the requirements of justice is alleged to have taken place.<sup>4</sup> Still less will the Committee re-try a case upon a suggestion that on the weight of evidence the verdict ought to have been the other way.<sup>5</sup> In a recent case from India, in which leave to appeal was sought on the ground that the judge, in charging the jury, had laid down the law erroneously as to what constituted an attempt, the Lord Chancellor, after stating that no such error had in fact been shown, proceeded to say that "It would be contrary to the practice of this Board, and very mischievous, if any countenance were given to the view that an appeal would be allowed in every case in which it could be shown that the learned judge had misdirected the jury."<sup>6</sup>

<sup>1</sup> 12 App. Ca. 459.

<sup>2</sup> L.R., 4 P.C. 599.

<sup>3</sup> *Falkland Islands Co. v. Reg.*, 1 Moo. P.C. 299; *Nga Moung v. Reg.*, 7 M.I.A. 72; *ante*, § 42; *Atty.-Gen. of Hong Kong v. Kwok-A-Sing*, L.R., 5 P.C. 180, *ante*, § 53.

<sup>4</sup> *Reg. v. Riel*, 10 App. Ca. 657.

<sup>5</sup> *Reg. v. Eduljee Byramjee*, 3 M.I.A. 468, 485.

<sup>6</sup> *In re McCrea*, 20 I.A. 90; S.C. 15 All. 310.



# INDEX.

*The figures in black type refer to the sections of the Code in Part I., those in ordinary type to the pages of the work.]*

## ABANDONMENT

*See* INFANT, 3

## ABDUCTION

1. definition of offence, **362**, 168  
force or deceit must operate on person abducted, 645  
in order to murder, **364**, 169  
to confine secretly or wrongfully, **365**, 169
2. of woman with a view to compelling marriage or illicit intercourse, **366**, 169  
does not apply where woman consents, 646  
what offence is then committed, *ib.*  
of person to subject to grievous hurt, slavery, or unnatural lust, **367**, 169  
wrongful confinement or concealment of person abducted, **368**, 170  
what amounts to, 646  
of child under ten to steal from its person, **369**, 170

## ABETMENT

1. in what it consists, **107**, 54, 432
2. by instigation, *ib.*  
by wilful misrepresentation or concealment, **107**, **Exp. 1**, 54, 432  
act abetted must be an offence, 433  
person abetted need not be an offender, **108**, **Exp. 3**, 56, 433  
nor the person who actually commits the offence abetted, **108**, **Exp. 4**, 56, 433  
where instigation countermanded, 434  
by letter, none till read, *ib.*
3. by conspiracy; what it is, 434, 469  
what must be done to carry it out, 55, 435  
acts must be for common purpose, 434  
evidence in support of, 435, 471  
whether giving false evidence is an abetment, 435  
conspirators need not be in direct communication, **108**, **Exp. 5**, 56



**ABETMENT—continued.**

4. by aiding or facilitating offence, 107, **Exp. 2**, 55  
     what amounts to, 437  
     case of master and servant, 438  
     when offence upon one's self may be abetted, *ib.*  
   by illegal omission, 437  
     or abetment of such omission, 108, **Exp. 1**, 55
5. abetment complete, though nothing follows, 108, **Exp. 2**, 55  
     penalty in such case, 115, 116, 117, 60, 61
6. penalty where offence committed, 109, 57, 115, 116, 117, 60, 61  
     must be in consequence of abetment, 109, **Exp.**, 57, 439  
     where abettor is present at committal, 114, 59  
     cannot also be punished as abettor, 441  
     where act done with different intention or knowledge from  
     that of abettor, 110, 58
7. where act done is different from that abetted, 111, 58, 439  
     or is done by mistake, 440  
     where both such acts done, 112, 59, 441
8. of suicide, 305, 308, 150, 624  
     offence against Merchandise Marks Act, 216

**ABSCONDING**

- to avoid service of summons or order, 172, 82
- warrant of magistrate no offence, 82
- what amounts to, 83

**ACCIDENT**

- act done under, when no offence, 80, 42, 361
- where act done is unlawful, 361  
     or a mere statutory offence, 362
- where lawful act carelessly done, 363
- difference between civil and criminal liability for, 361

**ACCOMPLICE**

- who is an, 912, 944
- how far evidence of is receivable, 914
- what is a corroboration of, 915
- duty of judge in charging jury, 916
- result of error in charge, 917

**ACQUITTAL**

*See* **APPEAL**, 2. **PREVIOUS ACQUITTAL**. **REVISION**

**ACT**

- what the word denotes, 33, 11
- when it includes illegal omissions, 32, 11
- offence partly by and partly by omission done by several, liability of  
     each, 34, 35, 37, 38, 11, 12.
- See* **JOINT ACTS**.

**ACTS OF STATE**

1. are not cognizable by any Court, 318  
     except for deciding whether they are such, 319
2. may be rendered such by ratification, *ib.*
3. what acts are  
     all acts of a hostile character, *ib.*  
     acts done in settling conquered country, 320  
     not when under claim of legal title, 321  
     claims to enforce treaty rights as between parties, 322  
     as against subjects affected by them, 323  
     new settlement after rebellion, 324  
     acts done on national emergency, 325

**ADMIRALTY JURISDICTION**

its origin and transfer to Common Law Courts, 255  
 conferred on High Courts by Charter, 263  
 extended to Mofussil Courts, *ib.*  
 supplemented by Merchant Shipping Acts, 264, 273  
 procedure and punishment to be Indian, 264, 265, 288, 290, 291  
 substantive law to be English, 286, 292  
     exception as to territorial waters, 293  
 only applies to offences completed at sea, 270  
 extends as far as ocean-going vessels, 270  
     when concurrent with local courts, 271, 277  
 applies to all British subjects at sea, 272  
     foreigners on British ship, 274  
     when custody is illegal, 275  
     *See* FOREIGNERS.  
     to pirates, 281  
     *See* PIRACY.

**ADULTERATION**

*See* NUISANCE, 5

**ADULTERY**

who is said to commit, 497, 220, 800  
 where marriage leaves woman free, 800  
 marriage not believed to exist, *ib.*  
 evidence of, 801  
 consent or connivance, *ib.*  
     acquiescence after knowledge of, 803  
     to one adultery bars indictment for another, *ib.*  
 second prosecution for, *ib.*  
 wife is not punishable as abettor, 497, 220  
 husband or person in charge for him must complain, 807  
     what amounts to a complaint, *ib.*  
     death does not stop prosecution, *ib.*

**AFFIRMATION**

solemn, when included in word "oath," 51, 14

**AFFRAY**

what constitutes an, 159, 74, 491  
     not when acts done in private place, 491  
     or where public have no right of access, 492  
 punishment for committing, 130, 74  
 assaulting public officer in suppressing an, 152, 72

**AGENT**

of owner or occupier, not giving police notice of riot, 154, 155, 72, 73  
 liability of, if riot, 156, 73

**ALLY OF THE QUEEN**

*See* WAGING WAR, 3.

**ALTERATION**

*See* CHARGE, 2. FORGERY, 1.

**ALTERNATIVE**

punishment where one of several offences found in the, 72, 38  
 charging contradictory statements, 510  
     one of several offences, 875, 877  
 sanction and committal necessary for each, 513, 895  
 where either committed before judge who tries case, 904

**AMENDMENT***See* CHARGE, 2.**AMERICAN**

to be sentenced to penal servitude, 56, 16

**ANIMAL**

what the word denotes, 47, 14

injury to

*See* MISCHIEF, 2.

injury by

*See* NEGLIGENCE, 7.**ANNOYANCE**

by a drunken man, 510, 227

**APPEAL**

1. when it lies, 956

in jury cases only on matter of law, *ib.*must be pointed out by appeal, *ib.*what is such matter, *ib.*misdirection of judge, *ib.*failure of justice resulting, *ib.*

power of Appellate Court to deal with evidence, 957

2. against acquittal, 958

what amounts to, 959

when it will not lie, *ib.*only to High Court, *ib.*effect of ordering new trial, *ib.*discretion in exercising power, *ib.*

3. from conviction, 961

no presumption in favour of innocence, 961

where sentence is inadequate, 962

committal to higher authority, *ib.*

Court may sentence on different charge, 963

4. to Queen in Council, 971

when leave is granted by High Court, *ib.*special application for leave, *ib.**See* ENHANCEMENT. REVISION.**APPREHENSION**

of offender or person charged with offence, wilfully neglecting to aid in,

when bound to do, 187, 94

preventing, by harbouring, etc., 216, 108

public officer voluntarily omitting, 221, 111

if offender is under sentence of court, 222, 112

resisting, of one's self, 224, 113

of another, 225, 114

omission to apprehend by public servant, 225A, 115

resistance to lawful, 225B, 116

**ARMY**

offences relating to the, 131-140, 67-69

**ARREST**

1. by police officers with warrant, 349

2. without warrant, *ib.*, 357

reasonable complaints or suspicion, 351

not bound to state information, *ib.*

property suspected to be stolen, 352

**ARREST—continued.**

3. provisions as to entering houses, 352  
breaking open doors on suspicion, 353
4. resistance to arrest, 354  
when death may be inflicted for, *ib.*  
difference in case of escape, 355
5. by private persons, 356  
upon suspicion of crime not committed, *ib.*  
of innocent person, 357  
for non-cognizable offence, *ib.*
6. warrant necessary for civil process, 358  
power to break open doors, *ib.*  
in search for stranger or his goods, 359
7. justification must depend on facts known at time, 357  
where court had no jurisdiction, 360  
it might have had, *ib.*  
different justification in civil and criminal proceedings, *ib.*

**ARTIFICER**

who is an, 218

**ASSAULT**

1. in what it consists, 351, 165, 580  
words are not, but may explain acts, *ib.*  
threat must appear to be capable of execution, 580  
meaning of force, 349, 164  
criminal force, 350, 164
2. what acts are intentional, 581  
want of consent differs from against will, *ib.*  
when consent negatives charge, 582  
cases of indecent assault, *ib.*  
not aggravated by unforeseen result, 583
3. assault or criminal force otherwise than under provocation, 352, 166, 583  
to outrage female modesty, 354, 167, 583  
with intention to dishonour, 355, 167  
in attempt to steal property worn or carried, 356, 167  
wrongfully to confine person, 357, 167  
on grave and sudden provocation, 358, 168  
on Governor-General, etc., 124, 64  
abetting, by soldier or sailor on superior officer, 134, 68  
on public officer while suppressing riot, 152, 72  
in discharge of his duty, 353, 166  
in taking possession or enforcing a right, 141, 70

**ASSEMBLY**

*See* TURBULENT, UNLAWFUL ASSEMBLY.

**ASSISTANCE**

to public servant, omission to give, 187, 94

**ATMOSPHERE**

making it injurious to health, 273, 134

**ATTEMPT**

1. to commit offence punishable with transportation or imprisonment, 511, 228  
whether it applies to murder, 626  
only to offences under Code, 863  
not punishable with whipping, *ib.*  
or additionally on previous conviction, *ib.*  
conviction for on acquittal of complete offence, *ib.*



**ATTEMPT—continued.**

2. intention or preparation not an offence, 853
  - when act done towards commission, 854
  - offence prevented by matter external to offender, 855
  - one of series of means towards offence, 855-859
    - attempts to commit forgery, 860-862
    - rape, 657
  - proof of intention, 862
    - must continue till attempt complete, 863
3. to wage war against Queen or her ally, 121, 63, 125, 65
  - to restrain or overawe Governor-General, etc., 124, 64
  - to rescue prisoner of State or war, 130, 66
  - to commit suicide, 309, 151, 625
4. to commit murder or culpable homicide, 307, 150, 308, 151
  - what acts are capable of causing death, 625, 628
  - person not guilty of may have committed an offence under s. 511.. 626

**BANKERS**

See BREACH OF TRUST, 3

**BELIEVE**

meaning of "reason to believe," 26, 9

**BIGAMY**

1. what constitutes offence of, 494, 219
  - first marriage legal though voidable, 790
  - still existing, 494, *Excep.*, 219
    - divorce without legal process, 791
  - polygamy when lawful, *ib.*
2. second marriage void from causes other than previous, 792
  - change from monogamous to polygamous religion, 793
  - status of native Christian, *ib.*
    - Englishman domiciled in India, 796
3. proof that first spouse was living, 796
  - presumption as to life, 797
  - absence for seven years, 494, *Excep.*, 219
    - must have been continuous, 798
  - reasonable but mistaken belief of death, 799
4. offence takes place where second marriage performed, *ib.*
  - what court has jurisdiction, *ib.*
  - only on complaint of husband, 800
  - with concealment of previous marriage, 495, 220

**BREACH OF TRUST**

1. what constitutes a criminal, 405, 183
  - punishment for, 406, 184
    - what is a trust, 695, 696
  - may be committed by person interested in property, 695
    - cases of husband and wife, 695
      - married woman, 696
  - what is a breach of trust, 697
    - evidence of it, 698
2. by carrier, wharfinger, or warehouse-keeper, 407, 184
  - by clerk or servant, or person employed as such, 408, 185
    - who is a servant, 699
      - or employed as such, 701
    - property must be entrusted to him in such capacity, 701
      - though not part of his duty, 702
    - received under trust, *ib.*

**BREACH OF TRUST—continued.**

- 3. by public servant, banker, agent, etc. 409, 185
  - must be in discharge of duty, 703
  - directors of Joint Stock Bank are bankers, *ib.*
  - liable for dishonest dividend, 698
  - manager and accountant are not bankers, 703

**BRIBE**

- public servant taking, 161, 75
- person expecting to be a public servant taking, 161, *Exp.*, *ib.*
- no act need be done in consequence of, *ib.*
- taking, for corruptly influencing public servant, 162, 76
  - for personally influencing him, 163, 77
- public officer abetting the taking of a, 162-164, 77
  - obtaining a valuable thing without consideration, etc., 165, 78
- offer of a bribe is abetment of offence, 116, *illus.* (a), 60

**BRITISH INDIA**

- what the words denote, 15, 5

**BRITISH SHIP, 275**

**BRITISH SUBJECT, 268**

- See EUROPEAN BRITISH SUBJECT.

**BURIAL PLACE**

- trespassing on, with intent to insult, etc., 297, 142
- offering indignity to human corpse, *ib.*

**CALENDAR**

- British, "year" or "month" is calculated according to, 49, 14

**CAPACITY**

- false measure of, 265-267, 129, 130

**CANCELLING**

- documents with fraudulent intent, 477, 206

**CAPTAIN**

- of merchant ship. See CORRECTION, 2

**CERTIFICATE**

- issuing or signing a false, 197, 100
- using a false as true, 198, 100

**CHARACTER**

- materiality of, in criminal cases, 936
  - as regards accused, *ib.*
  - previous conviction, *ib.*
  - confined to general reputation, 937
  - evidence of facts showing intention or motive, 938

**CHARGE**

- 1. mode of framing, 864
  - exceptions need not be negatived, 865
  - stating matters of aggravation, *ib.*
  - previous conviction, 866
  - effect of errors in, 867
- 2. alteration and amendment of, 867, 869
  - procedure after, 867, 872
  - powers of Appellate Court, 868
  - limited to facts proved on committal, *ib.*

**CHARGE—continued.**

- power of adding new charge, 869
- effect of irregularity in making, 871
- withdrawal of added charge, 872
- cannot be made after verdict, *ib.*
- 3. convicting on, not actually made, 872
  - two classes of cases, 873
  - where minor form of graver offence charged, 874
- 4. procedure where different offences committed, *ib.*
  - when charge may be withdrawn, 875
  - what offences are distinct, 876
    - of same kind, *ib.*
  - result of misjoinder, 877
  - alternative charge, *ib.*
- 5. procedure where several persons accused, 878
  - offences arising out of same transaction, 878, 879
  - result of misjoinder, *ib.*

**CHEATING**

1. what constitutes offence of 415, 186, 711, 417, 188
  - acts amount to deceiving, 711
    - implied assertions, 712
    - conduct without words, 716
    - praise or depreciation, 713
  - statement of future intention, 715
    - addressed to general public, 716
2. Concealment of facts, 415, *Exp.*, 187
  - must be in breach of duty, 717
  - sales or leases of property, 718
  - latent defects, 719
    - what representation implied by sale, 712, 720
    - actual artifice to conceal, 720
    - express conditions of sale, 721
    - trade custom or fiduciary relation, 722
3. fraudulent intention, 723
  - act done to secure supposed rightful advantage, 724
  - evidenced by previous acts, 726
  - must be to bring about specified results, 727
  - person must have been deceived, *ib.*
    - if not, offence may be charged as an attempt, 728
4. by personation, 416, 187, 723, 727, 419, 188
  - by inducing delivery of property, or destruction of security, 420, 188
  - cases held not to be forgery, but cheating, 752, 753

**CHILD**

See INFANT.

**CHOICE OF EVILS**

- when act done to avoid another is no offence, 81, 43, 364
  - must not be for personal benefit, 364
  - cases of shipwreck, 365
  - killing to save one's own life, 366

**CIRCULATING**

- false rumour to cause mutiny, or alarm, or offence against State, 505, 226

**CLAIM**

See FRAUDULENT CLAIM.

**CLERK**

*See* BREACH OF TRUST, 2. THEFT, 8.

**COHABITATION**

under pretence of marriage, 498, 219, 789

**COIN**

1. and Queen's coin, what it is, 230, 118  
 counterfeiting them, 231, 232, 118, 119  
     what amounts to, 744, 746  
     evidence of, 745  
     abetting such counterfeiting out of India, 236, 120  
 making or selling instruments for counterfeiting them, 233, 234, 119  
     acting in concert with police, 746  
 possession of such instruments, 235, 119  
     what amounts to, 746  
     knowledge of their nature necessary, *ib.*  
     evidence of other acts to prove, 747
2. import or export of either coin, 237, 238, 120  
 passing off coin known to be counterfeit at time of possession, 239, 240, 120  
     not the offence of the coiner, 747  
     what is a fraudulent intention, 748  
 passing off coin known to be counterfeit after time of possession, 241, 121  
     must be delivered as genuine, 748  
 fraudulent possession of, known to be counterfeit when possessed, 242, 243, 121  
     evidence of knowledge, 749
3. frauds on coin by person employed in mint, 244, 121  
 taking coining instruments out of mint, 245, 122  
 making coin light, or altering its composition, 246, 247, 122  
 altering appearance of, to pass as a different coin, 248, 122, 249, 123  
 delivery to another, of light or altered coin, 250, 251, 123  
 possession of such coin known at time of possession to be light or altered, 252, 253, 123, 124  
 passing off such coin as genuine or different, 254, 124
4. Metal Tokens Act, 1889, 124  
 making or issuing copper money without authority, 125  
 possessing such, with intent to issue, *ib.*  
     burthen of proof as to intent, *ib.*  
 importing such without authority, *ib.*  
     what offences to be cognizable, *ib.*

**COMMITTING**

for trial or to confinement, wilfully, contrary to law, 220, 111

**COMMUNICATION MADE IN GOOD FAITH**

not an offence, when made for benefit of person harmed by it, 93, 48  
*See* DEFAMATION, 5.

**COMMUTATION**

of sentence of death, 54, 15  
 transportation for life, 55, 15  
 in other cases, 15

**COMPANY**

is included in word "person," 11, 4  
 may be defamed, 499, *Exp.* 2, 221, 817



**COMPENSATION**

1. for frivolous complaints, 950
  - by whom payable, 951
  - meaning of complaint, *ib.*
  - to what charges it applies, 952
  - case must have been tried, *ib.*
  - how recoverable, *ib.*
2. payable to innocent purchaser of stolen property, 947
  - out of fine to person injured by offence, 953

**COMPLAINT**

- of offence by court, 888
  - by Government, 889
  - who is to investigate, 896
  - previous inquiry as to offence, 897
  - cannot be revoked by higher authority, *ib.*
- by person aggrieved in certain cases, 898
- when prosecutor is allowed to withdraw, 455
  - effect of withdrawal, *ib.*
- appeal against withdrawal, 959
  - See* COMPENSATION, 1.

**COMPOUNDING AN OFFENCE**

- taking gift for, 213, 106, 449
- making gift to induce, 214, 107, 449
- cases in which it is allowed, 452
  - proof of validity of agreement, 454

**COMPULSION**

1. effect of foreign conquest, 400
    - or civil war, 401
  2. by private persons, 94, 48
    - when no excuse, 403
- See* FORCED LABOUR.

**CONCEALING**

- a birth. *See* INFANT, 4.
- a married woman. *See* TAKING AWAY.
- material facts, when it amounts to abetment, 107, *Exp.* 1, 55, 432
  - See* CHEATING, 2. *FACILITATING.*
- design to commit offence punishable with death or transportation for life,
  - if offence committed, 118, 61
  - if offence not committed, 118, 62
- design to commit offence punishable with imprisonment, if offence committed, 120, 63
  - if offence not committed, 120, 63
- by a public servant, of an offence which it is his duty to prevent, 119, 62
- design to wage war against the Queen, 123, 64
- escaped prisoner of State or war, 130, 66
- deserter, 136, 137, 68
- evidence of commission of offence, 201, 101
- property to avoid seizure, etc., 206, 103
- offender to screen him from punishment, 212, 105
- no offence if offender is husband or wife of concealer, 212, *Excep.*, 106
- offence accepting gratification for, 213, 106
  - giving gratification for, 214, 107
- offender who has escaped from custody, or whose apprehension has been ordered, 216, 108
  - no offence, if offender is husband or wife of concealer, 216, *Excep.*, 109
- person who has been abducted or kidnapped, 368, 170

**CONFESSION**

1. what is a, 919
  - rules governing, 918
  - what is custody of police, *ib.*
  - statement made before a magistrate, 923
    - irregularity in recording, *ib.*
  - taken by investigating magistrate, 925
  - effect of when inadmissible, 920
2. facts discovered in consequence of, 918
  - what statement rendered admissible by, 921
  - nature of fact, 922
  - discovery the result of statement, *ib.*
3. inducement to confess, 925
  - by whom made, 926
  - must refer to charge, 927
  - what amounts to, *ib.*
  - which has ceased to operate, 928
  - burthen of proving, *ib.*
  - obtained by fraud, or without warning, 925
4. may be used against other accused, 929
  - if made by one tried with them, *ib.*
  - must substantially implicate him, 930
  - its weight as evidence, 931

**CONNIVANCE**

*See ADULTERY.*

**CONSENT**

1. rules as to, when set up as a defence, 37-92, 44-47
  - to what cases it applies, 37, 44
    - not to causing death or grievous hurt, 393
      - unless improbable or unforeseen, *ib.*
    - contests of skill must be fairly conducted, 394
    - law of prize-fights, 395
2. acts done for benefit of consenting person, 38, 45
  - or of person incapable of consent, 39, 45, 92, 46, 396, 398
    - case of surgical operations, 396, 399
    - benefit must not be pecuniary, 92, *Exp.*, 47, 396
    - dangerous exhibitions, 396
3. nature of consent 90, 46
  - difference between it and submission, 397
  - mistaken belief as to consent, 398
  - case of offences of a sexual nature, 397
  - misconception of facts, 398
  - inadmissible where act consented to is an offence, 91, 46, 397

**CONSPIRACY**

- of a treasonable nature, 121A, 63
- in what it consists, 469
  - not necessary that any act or illegal omission should take place, 121A, *Exp.*, 64
  - must go beyond intention, 470
  - correspondence with foreign State, *ib.*
  - what words and writings are evidence of, 471
    - each liable for acts of others, *ib.*
- 2. when it constitutes an abetment. *See ABETMENT*, 3.

**CONTEMPT**

- of lawful authority.
  - See PUBLIC SERVANT*, 3.

**CONTEMPT OF COURT**

immediate cognizance of, 87  
cannot be tried by court offended, *ib.*  
submission or apology for, 88  
procedure on punishment for, 87

**CONTRADICTORY DEPOSITIONS**

*See FALSE EVIDENCE, 6.*

**CONTRIBUTORY NEGLIGENCE**

not a defence in criminal law, 567, 600

**CONVEYANCE**

*See FRAUDULENT TRANSFER.*

**CONVICT**

for life, murder by, 308, 149  
attempt to murder by, 307, 150

**CONVICTION**

*See PREVIOUS CONVICTION.*

**CO-OPERATION**

by distinct acts, 37, 12

**CORONER**

is a public servant, 7  
language used by, when privileged, 829  
disobedience to summons of, punishable under s. 174..85  
proceedings before, are judicial proceedings, 520

**CORPSE**

offering indignity to human corpse, 297, 142  
is not the subject of property, 667

**CORRECTION**

1. what cases of are lawful, 329  
must be moderate and reasonable, 329, 330
2. children, scholars, and apprentices, 329  
not as regards servants, *ib.*  
or wives, 330  
right of captain of merchant ship, *ib.*

**COSTS**

in prosecution under Merchandise Marks Act, 215

**COUNSEL**

defamation by, in discharge of his duty, 829-831, 833

**COUNTERFEIT**

meaning of term, 28, 9  
*See COIN. FORGERY. STAMP.*

**COURTS OF JUSTICE**

meaning of the term, 20, 6  
*See CONTEMPT. JUDGE. PUBLIC SERVANT.*

**CRIMINAL LAW**

its origin and development, 229  
modern aspect of, 231

**CRIMINAL**

BREACH OF TRUST. FORCE. INTIMIDATION. INSULT. MISAPPROPRI-  
ATION. TRESPASS. *See those Titles.*

**CULPABLE HOMICIDE**

*See* HOMICIDE.

**CUMULATIVE PUNISHMENT**

*See* PUNISHMENT, 2.

**DACOITY**

in what it consists, 391, 179

punishment for, 395, 179

murder committed in act of, 396, 180

deadly weapon used, or death, or grievous hurt attempted in, 397, 180

person armed with deadly weapon attempting, 398, 180

preparing to commit, 399, 180

belonging to gang habitually committing, 400, 181

assembling for purpose of committing, 402, 181

**DEAF AND DUMB**

persons, how dealt with on trial, 390

**DEATH**

what the word denotes, 46, 14

sentences of may be commuted, 54, 15

or suspended, or remitted, 15

right to inflict on resistance to arrest, 354, 356

in cases of escape, 355

causing for self-preservation, 366

**DEFAMATION**

1. in what it consists, 499, 221, 808

form of immaterial, only question is as to meaning, 809-811

use of innuendoes to fix it, 809

evidence to explain, *ib.*

judged by general understanding, 810

2. imputation on deceased person, 499, *Exp.* 1, 221

what intention necessary, 817

on association or class, 499, *Exp.* 2, 221

persons must be capable of being identified, 817

imputation must affect the class, *ib.*

3. truth of, not by itself a defence, 499, *Excep.* 1, 222, 811

wanton attacks on private life, 812

undue circulation, 813

must be pleaded, *ib.*

4. intention to injure, 813

inferred from character of imputation, 814-816

now rebutted, 814-816

5. imputations which are not defamatory, 499, *Excep.* 1-10, 222-224, 818

meaning of privileged communication, 820

extends to agent of party, 821

mutuality of interest, 822

necessary communication, 823

good faith, 824

burthen of proof, 825

6. privilege negatived by express malice, 826

what amounts to, 827

intentional or reckless falsehood, *ib.*

use of extravagant language, 828

previous defamation, 829

must be found as a fact, 827

what evidence of necessary, 828



**DEFAMATION—continued.**

7. cases of absolute privilege where express duty to make statement, 826
  - Parliamentary or judicial proceedings, 829
    - principle of rule, 830
    - protects proceeding, not person, 831
    - whether it exists in India, 832-834
8. public reports, privilege of, 834
  - judicial proceedings, 499, *Excep. 4*, 222
    - principle of privilege, 834
    - must be fair and correct, 835
  - Parliamentary proceedings, 835
  - quasi-judicial and official proceedings, 836
9. cases of fair comment, 837
  - matter must be of public interest, 838
  - facts asserted must be true, 839
  - criticism must be fair, 840
10. publication of, what it is, 841
  - not to person defamed, *ib.*
  - by one of several acting together, 842
  - liability for, by person acting in ignorance, 842-844
  - jurisdiction in respect of, 844
  - evidence of, *ib.*
11. province of judge and jury, 845
  - where no question of privilege, *ib.*
  - where privilege alleged, 846
  - in case of fair comment, 847
12. punishment for, 500, 225
  - printing or engraving matter believed to be defamatory, 501, 225
  - selling matter known to be defamatory, 502, 225

**DEFENCE**

*See* PRIVATE DEFENCE.

**DEPREDAATION**

on territories in alliance or at peace with the Queen, 126, 127, 65

**DESERTION**

abetting, of soldier or sailor, 135, 68  
 harbouring deserter, 136, 68  
 concealing deserter on board merchant vessel, 137, 68

**DESTRUCTION**

of document, 204, 102

**DETAINING**

a married woman.  
*See* TAKING AWAY.

**DISAFFECTION**

1. language intended to excite against the Government, 124A, 65, 473
  - definition of sedition, 473
  - difference between disaffection and disapprobation, 124A, *Exp.*, 65, 474
2. offence consists in intention, 475
  - inferred from meaning of language, *ib.*
  - evidence admissible to explain, *ib.*
3. truth of language no defence, 476
  - evidence of inadmissible, 475, 477
4. publisher liable as well as writer, 477
  - what is publication, 477, 479
  - how far knowledge of contents necessary, 477

**DISAGREEMENT**

between judge and jury; procedure on, 954  
mere disapproval is not, 955  
power of court in dealing with, *ib.*

**DISAPPEARANCE OF EVIDENCE**

causing, to screen offender, 201, 101  
crime must have been committed, 526  
matter concealed must have been evidence, 527  
offender must not be principal criminal, *ib.*  
proof of knowledge and intention, 526

**DISHONESTLY**

definition of the word, 24, 9  
in case of theft, robbery, etc., 675, 717, 757

**DISHONOUR**

assault, or using criminal force, with intent to, 355, 167  
or to outrage modesty of a woman, 354, *ib.*

**DISOBEDIENCE**

1. to lawful order of public servant, 188, 95, 493
  - for removal of nuisances, 494, 559
  - maintenance of possession, 494
  - preservation of the peace, 497, 498
  - processions and music in streets, 495
2. illegality of order when immaterial, *ib.*
  - cannot be set aside by civil court, *ib.*
  - no offence when order *ultra vires*, 496
  - or depends on certain anticipated evils, 497
  - or creates permanent deprivation of right, *ib.*
  - when order limited in duration, *ib.*
  - how far interference with civil right justifiable, 499
3. order should justify itself, 500
  - and show persons to whom it extends, 501
  - must have come to knowledge of accused, *ib.*
  - legal evidence of its existence, 500
4. offence consists in consequence of disobedience, 502
  - intention immaterial, *ib.*
  - specific consequences must be alleged, *ib.*
  - breach of orders of civil court, *ib.*

**DISPOSAL OF PROPERTY**

1. connected with commission of offence, 945
  - meaning of property, *ib.*
  - must have been produced, 946
  - proof of commission of offence, *ib.*
  - produced by *bona fide* purchaser, *ib.*
  - compensation to, 947
  - passing by delivery, *ib.*
2. order conclusive as to right of possession, *ib.*
  - appeal against order, *ib.*
  - power to destroy, 948
  - restitution of immovable property, *ib.*

**DIVORCE**

courts of domicile have full jurisdiction over, 785  
foreign courts have none over temporary residents, 786  
doctrine of matrimonial domicile, 787  
effect of Indian, considered, 789

**DOCUMENT**

- what the word denotes, 20, *Exp.* 1, 10, 514
- public servant framing incorrect, 167, 79
- not producing or delivering up, 176, 86
  - case of privileged documents, 86
- destruction of, to prevent production in court, 204, 102
  - See* FORGERY, 1.

**DRIVING**

- rash or negligent, 279, 135, 567
- when death caused by, 596

**DRUGS**

- See* NUISANCE, 5.

**DRUNKENNESS**

- See* INTOXICATION.

**DUELLING, 611****DWELLING**

- See* HOUSE TRESPASS, 1.

**DYING DECLARATIONS**

- when admissible, 934
  - for what purpose, 935
  - what is a verbal statement, *ib.*
  - proof of; in absence of accused, *ib.*

**ENHANCEMENT**

- of punishment, on revision, 968
  - not on appeal, 961
- inadequate sentence may be reported to High Court for, 962
  - or re-committed to higher authority, *ib.*

**ENTICING**

- Minors. *See* KIDNAPPING, 1.
- Married woman. *See* TAKING AWAY.

**ESCAPE**

- public servant allowing, of prisoner of State or war, 128-129, 66
- aiding of prisoner of State or war, 130, & *Expl.*, 66
- if he has escaped from custody, or his apprehension has been ordered, 216, 108
- public servant intentionally suffering, of person accused, 221, 111
- public servant intentionally suffering, of person under sentence, 222, 112
- public servant suffering, in cases not otherwise provided for, 225A, 115
- negligently suffering, of person charged or convicted, 223, 113
- making or attempting to make, from lawful custody, 224, 113
  - punishment to be in addition to that of original offence, 224 and *Expl.*, 113
- place of trial for, 114
- mode of sentencing in case of, 114
- in cases not otherwise provided for, 225B, 116
- is not an obstruction of a public servant, 94
  - See* RESCUE. RETURN FROM TRANSPORTATION.

**EUROPEAN**

- is to be sentenced to penal servitude, 56, 16

**EUROPEAN—BRITISH SUBJECTS**

- who are such, 268, 880
  - See* JURISDICTION, 5.

**EVIDENCE**

of origin in cases under Merchandise Marks Act, 215  
 improper admission or rejection of, 941  
 in cases tried by jury, 956  
*See* ACCOMPLICES. CHARACTER. DISAPPEARANCE OF EVIDENCE. DYING  
 DECLARATIONS. EXPERTS. FALSE EVIDENCE. MEDICAL EVIDENCE.  
 INTENTION, 2.

**EXAMINATION OF ACCUSED**

procedure on taking, 932  
 object and limits of, *ib.*  
 when it may take place, 933  
 cautioning accused, *ib.*  
 whether compulsory, 934  
 mode of attesting, *ib.*

**EXCEPTIONS**

need not be negatived in charge, 865  
 existence of must be proved by accused, *ib.*  
 general, 76-106, 41-54  
*See* SPECIFIC TITLES.

**EXPERTS**

who are, 784  
 proof of foreign law by, 785  
 admissibility of evidence of, 940  
 medical, as to death, 941  
 insanity, 374

**EXPLOSIVES**

negligence with respect to, 286, 156  
 causing *hurt* by use of, 324, 155  
     *grievous hurt* by use of, 326, 156  
 using, to cause mischief, 436, 193  
     to injure a decked vessel of more than 20 tons, 437, 438, 193

**EXPOSING**

*See* INFANT, 3.

**EXTORTION**

1. definition of the offence, 383, 176
  - not limited to movable property, 685
  - excludes claim of right, *ib.*
  - meaning of injury, 44, 14, 685
  - what amount of fear necessary, 686
  - what threats of injury sufficient, 687
    - criminal accusations, 686
  - where property is taken but not delivered by prosecutor, 687
  - delivery must be due to threat, 688
2. punishment for 384, 176
  - putting in fear of injury to commit, 385, 176
  - committing by fear of death or grievous hurt, 386, 177
  - attempting to commit by same means, 387, 177
  - committing by fear of criminal accusation, 388, 177, 686
  - attempting to commit by same means, 389, 177
- 3 when it is robbery, 390, 178
  - causing hurt for purpose of, 327, 156
    - grievous hurt*, 328, 157



**EXTRADITION**

under Act XXI. of 1879, 248

by treaty with Portugal, 249

France, 250

Mysore, 262

rule as to political offences, 251

what are such, 250

facts alleged must constitute offence against harbouring State, 251

general terms limited to recognized crimes, *ib.*

subjects of harbouring State not given up, 249, 250, 253

effect of provision that accused should only be tried for offence for which he is claimed, 252

procedure on demand upon India, 253

upon Mysore, 262

mode of proving documents, 253

**EXTRA-TERRITORIAL JURISDICTION**

*See* JURISDICTION.

**FACILITATING COMMISSION OF OFFENCES**

1. by concealing or making false representation as to design, 118, 61, 120, 63

where offender is public servant whose duty it is to prevent, 119, 62

where offence is waging war against Queen, 123, 64

2. Meaning of illegal omission, 442

statutory obligation to inform, 443

*See* FALSE INFORMATION.

**FALSE CHARGE**

1. instituting criminal proceedings or making false charge of an offence, without just cause, 211, 105

offences are different, 544

2. false charge need not be to a magistrate, 544

nor be believed or acted upon, *ib.*

must be to some one with criminal authority, 546

false answer on examination is not, *ib.*

of cognizable offence to police said to be a criminal proceeding, 545

3. knowledge of falsity essential, 546

evidence to show belief, 547

mere rashness insufficient, *ib.*

4. intention to cause injury, 548

not established by groundlessness of charge, *ib.*

may be inferred from it, *ib.*

immaterial if charge true, *ib.*

5. disposal of charge in favour of complainant, 549

refusal to hear evidence, 550

province of judge and jury as to evidence, 549

**FALSE EVIDENCE**

1. elements of offence of giving, 191, 96, 503

meaning of evidence, 503

2. who is legally bound to state truth, 504

what is included in word "oath," *ib.*

who may affirm, *ib.*

oath omitted or wrongly administered, *ib.*

cases of children, *ib.*

how proved or presumed, *ib.*

when designedly omitted, 505

**FALSE EVIDENCE—continued.**

3. legality of oath, 505
  - want of jurisdiction to inquire, 506
  - or to administer oath, *ib.*
  - in what jurisdiction consists, *ib.*
4. statements required by law to be true, 507
  - mere voluntary statements, 508
  - certain certificates, 197, 100, 508
  - declarations receivable as evidence, 199, 100
  - what statements are such, 508
5. falsity of evidence, 509
  - must be known to be false, *ib.*
  - expression of belief, 191, **Exp. 2**, 97, 510
6. contradictory depositions, 510
  - when mere production of sufficient, 511
  - how charged, 512
    - each, if false, must be punishable, *ib.*
    - sanction for prosecution of each, 513
7. What is a fabrication of, 192, 97, 513
  - what is a false statement, or a document, 514
  - must be intended for use as evidence, *ib.*
  - and be admissible as such, *ib.*
  - proceeding before public servant, 515
8. intention to cause erroneous opinion, *ib.*
  - what is a point material to result, *ib.*
  - cases in which materiality is not essential, 517
    - want of may negative knowledge of falsity, *ib.*
  - whether intention subsequent to fabrication sufficient, 525
9. giving or fabricating, for judicial proceeding, 193, 98
  - what is a judicial proceeding, 518
  - actual use of fabricated evidence not required, 517
  - several false statements in same deposition only one offence, 521
10. Proof of alleged false statement, *ib.*
  - when taken in language different from that of witness, 522
  - only one witness necessary, 523
  - of facts which make statement evidence, *ib.*
11. using as true false or fabricated evidence, 196, 100
  - or false declaration receivable as evidence, 200, 100
  - proof of guilty knowledge, 524
  - fabrication may have been intended for a different purpose, 525
12. false statement on oath to public servant, 181, 91
  - what facts must be proved, 526
  - conviction improper, if evidence given in a judicial proceeding, *ib.*

*See FALSE INFORMATION.*

**FALSE INFORMATION**

1. to public servant by person legally bound to afford it, 177, 88
  - nature of obligation, 89
  - where it relates to offence or apprehension of offender, 177, 89, 90
2. to public servant to cause change of conduct, 182 (a), 91, 541
  - does not involve intention to injure any one, 542
3. to cause use of his power to injure or annoy any one, 182 (b), 91
  - intention is essence of offence, 541
  - no actual result required, 543
  - person injured may prosecute, *ib.*
  - refusal to examine truth of charge, 550
4. for purpose of screening an offender, 201, 101
  - or in respect of an offence committed, 203, 101
  - proof of actual offence necessary, 526, 528
  - and knowledge of it, *ib.*

**FALSE INFORMATION—continued.**

offender must be different from person screened, 527  
 intention when material, 526, 528

*See* CIRCULATING.

**FALSIFICATION**

of accounts by clerk, officer, or servant, 477A, 207

**FIGHT**

*See* HOMICIDE 8, 9. PRIVATE DEFENCE, 4.

**FINDING**

*See* MISAPPROPRIATION.

**FINE**

1. when unlimited must not be excessive, 63, 21
- when it must be imposed, 21
- in case of joint offenders, *ib.*
- imprisonment in default of, 64, 21
  - only awarded for offences under Penal Code, 22
  - nature and duration of, 65-67, 22, 23
  - effect of complete or partial payment, 68, 69, 23
  - period during which it may be levied, 70, 24
    - imprisonment not satisfaction, 24
    - mode of enforcing fine, 25
- may be allotted by way of compensation, 953

**FIRE**

negligence, etc., as to, 285, 136  
   any combustible matter, 285, 136  
 using, to cause mischief, 435, 436, 193  
   to injure a docked vessel of more than twenty tons, 438, 193  
*See* EXPLOSIVE SUBSTANCE. MISCHIEF.

**FOOD**

adulteration of, 272, 131  
 selling, etc., adulterated, 273, 131  
   noxious and unfit, 273, 131

**FORCE**

in what it consists, 349, 164  
 criminal, meaning of, 350, 164  
*See* ASSAULT.

**FORCED LABOUR**

unlawfully compelling to, 374, 171  
 what constitutes offence, 649

**FOREIGN CONQUEST**

its effect upon laws, 400

**FOREIGN GOVERNMENT**

justification under its orders, 327

**FOREIGN LAW**

mode of proving, 784

**FOREIGNERS**

punishable for acts committed in India, 274, 336, 458  
   or on British ship, 274  
     unless for acts lawfully done to effect escape, 275  
   not for acts done on foreign ship, 277  
     unless within British territory, *ib.*

**FOREIGNERS—continued.**

- nor for offences on foreign ships within territorial waters, 278
  - unless with leave of Government, 279
  - or under local legislation, 298
- exemption of foreign ships of war, 279
  - to what persons it extends, 280
  - right of asylum upon, *ib.*
  - commission conclusive as to public character, *ib.*
- pirates of all nations liable to captors, 281
  - jurisdiction over cannot be transferred, 284
- belligerents only punishable by military law, 283, 459
  - otherwise when without national authority, 459
- their ignorance of law no defence, 336
- nor existence of hostilities with their nation, 459

**FORFEITURE OF PROPERTY**

- effect of sentence of, 61, 19
- its operation on rights of sons, 20
- when it may be added to penalty, 62, 21
- for waging war against Government, 121, 122, 63, 64
- of property connected with depredation on allied State, 126, 127, 65
- under Merchandise Marks Act, 9, 214

**FORGERY**

1. who is said to commit, 463, 200, 749
  - what is a document, 29, 10
    - need not be legal evidence, 750
  - making a false document, 464, 200, 750
    - when authorized signature may be, 750
    - or genuine signature, 464, cl. 3, 201, Exp. 1, 202, 750
      - where matter intended is omitted, 751
    - difference between false statement and false deed, *ib.*
  - signing with name of fictitious person, 464, Exp. 2, 203, 752
    - where no credit given to name, 752
  - claiming genuine signature as his own, 753
  - fabricating false copy, *ib.*
    - mode of charging offence, *ib.*
2. fraudulent intention, what necessary, 463, 200
  - need not aim at any particular person, 753
  - fraud must be possible if successful, *ib.*
  - where no injury intended or possible, 754
    - merely personal security desired, 755
  - meaning of "claim" and "property," 757
  - difference between "dishonestly" and "fraudulently," *ib.*
3. publication unnecessary where fraud intended, 758
  - several persons joining in, *ib.*
4. using as genuine a forged document, 471, 205
  - what is a forged document, 470, 204
  - must have been sent before use, 758
  - what is a using, 759
  - where using is fraudulent, *ib.*
  - evidence of guilty knowledge, 760
    - other similar acts, *ib.*
5. possessing forged documents when an offence, 474, 205, 475, 476, 206
  - fraudulent intention necessary, 761
  - evidence of, *ib.*
6. punishment for simple, 465, 203
  - of record of court, register, certificate or authority to sue, etc., 466, 203
  - valuable security, will, authority to adopt, transfer, or receive money, 467, 203



**FORGERY—continued.**

- for purpose of cheating, 468, 204
  - harming reputation, 469, 204.
- making seal, plate, or instrument, for committing a, 472, 473, 205
  - possessing such seal, etc., *ib.*
- counterfeiting marks of authentication in order to commit, 476, 206
  - possessing material so authenticated, *ib.*
- falsification of accounts by clerk, officer, or servant, 477A, 207

**FRAUDULENT**

meaning of the word, 25, 9, 757

**FRAUDULENT CLAIM**

- accepting or making to prevent judicial seizure of property, 207, 103, 528
- suffering decree or execution without just cause, 208, 104
- making false claim in court, 209, 104
- obtaining decree or execution for unfounded demand, 210, 104

**FRAUDULENT GIFTS**

See FRAUDULENT TRANSFERS, 2.

**FRAUDULENT PREFERENCE**

See FRAUDULENT TRANSFERS, 2-4.

**FRAUDULENT TRANSFERS**

1. to prevent judicial seizure, 206, 103
  - what amounts to fraud, 528
    - 13 Eliz. c. 5 adopted in India, 529
    - bona fides*, not inconvenience to creditors is the test, *ib.*
    - fraud not negated by value given, 531
      - decisions in India, 532
      - other transfers evidence of intention, 533
2. in case of gift inferred from result on solvency, *ib.*
  - voluntary conveyance to avoid forfeiture, 535
    - if *bona fide* for value, *ib.*
  - mere preference of one creditor no offence, *ib.*
    - proper remedy, 536
3. to prevent distribution of property among creditors, 421, 189
  - refers to proceedings in insolvency, 537
    - elements in fraud, 538
4. fraudulent preference, what it is, *ib.*
  - what circumstances negative it, 539
  - inadequacy of consideration, 540
5. to prevent demand by creditor being enforced, 422, 189
  - containing false statement as to consideration or person taking benefit, 423, 189
    - benami* transaction not an offence, 540
6. dishonest removal or concealment of property, 424, 189, 541
  - or release of claim, *ib.*
    - one partner may commit in fraud of the others, 541

**GENDER, 8, 4****GENERAL EXCEPTIONS**

See EXCEPTIONS.

**GESTURE**

- making, to wound religious feelings, 298, 143
- when it may amount to an assault, 351, 165

**GOOD FAITH**

- meaning of, 52, 14
- in reference to judicial acts, 345
  - claim of right, 671, 729, 733
  - defamation, 824, 832

**GOODS**

- meaning of, in Merchandise Marks Act, 208

**GOVERNMENT**

- meaning of, 16, 17, 5
  - illegal orders of confer no immunity on agent, 296
  - direct remedy against in England by Petition of Right, 298
    - in India by action against Secretary of State, 299
  - cannot dispense with operation of laws, 296
    - nor refuse legal assistance, 297
  - heads of, exempt from Indian jurisdiction for public acts, 301-303
  - orders of foreign, no justification beyond its own limits, 327
    - legality of commission issued by, cannot be questioned, 280, 328
    - See MARTIAL LAW. ACTS OF STATE.

**GOVERNMENT STAMP**

- counterfeiting a, 255 and Exp., 126
- possessing instrument or material used for counterfeiting a, 256, 126
- making or selling, etc., instrument for counterfeiting a, 257, 126
- selling, etc., a counterfeit, 258, 126
- possessing a counterfeit, 259, 126
- using as genuine one known to be counterfeit, 260, 127
- where a, has been used, effacing writing with intent to cause loss to Government, 261, 127
- removing a, from a writing, etc., with intent, etc., 261, 127
- using one known to have been used before, with intent, etc., 262, 127
- erasure of mark upon, denoting that it has been used before, with intent, etc., 263, 128
- making or possessing fictitious, 263A, 128

**GOVERNOR-GENERAL**

- assault on, with intent to compel or restrain exercise of any lawful power, 124, 64
- attempt to overawe or restrain by unlawful assembly, 124, 64
- exempt from jurisdiction of High Courts, 301
- forbidden to trade, 80

**GOVERNOR OF A PRESIDENCY**

- exempt from jurisdiction except for treason or felony, 303
- assault on, with intent to compel or restrain exercise of lawful power, 124, 64
- attempt to overawe by unlawful assembly, etc., 124, 64
- forbidden to trade, 80

**GRATIFICATION**

- meaning of the word, 161 and Exp., 75
- public servant taking a, improperly, 161 and Exp., 75
- accepting, etc., for *corruptly* influencing a public servant, 162, 76
- for using *personal influence* with public servant, 163, 77
  - abetment by public servant of the taking or giving of a, 164, 77
- public servant taking, etc., a thing without adequate consideration for it, 165, 78
- sanction necessary for prosecutions, 889

**GRATIFICATION—continued.**

accepting, etc., to screen offender, or abandon prosecution, **213**, 106  
 giving, etc., in consideration of screening offender, etc., **214**, 107  
 taking to help in recovery of property, **215**, 107

**GRIEVOUS HURT**

*See* **HURT**.

**HABITUALLY RECEIVING**

stolen property, **413**, 166

**HARBOURING**

escaped prisoner of State or war, **130**, 66  
 a deserter from Army or Navy, **136**, 68  
   unless by wife of her husband, **136**, **Excep.**, 68  
 person hired for unlawful assembly, **157**, 74  
   believed to have committed an offence, to screen him from punishment, **212**, 105  
   includes certain acts committed out of India, *ib.*  
   unless by husband or wife of harbourer, **212**, **Excep.**, 106  
   offence must have been committed, 447  
   guilt of person harboured believed, 448  
     penalty affected by result of crime, 447  
 person escaped from custody for offence, or whose apprehension is ordered, **216**, 108  
 robbers or dacoits, **216A**, 109  
   though offence committed out of India, *ib.*  
     unless by husband or wife of harbourer, *ib.*  
 meaning of word "harbour" in ss. 212, 216, and 216A, **216B**, 109, 446  
   must be personal assistance to offender, 448  
     and done with specific intent, 449  
     mere omissions are not, *ib.*

**HOMICIDE**

1. when an infant becomes a human being, 586  
   what acts amount to the killing of an infant, 587
2. what amounts to causing death, 588  
   by several acts or persons, *ib.*  
   by acts affecting the mind, *ib.*  
   by illegal omissions, 589  
     must be breach of legal obligation, 590  
     and direct cause of death, 592  
   by voluntary acts to escape harm, *ib.*  
   acts accelerating death, **299**, **Exp.** 1, 145, 593  
     when consented to, **300**, **Excep.** 5, 148  
   disease resulting from injuries, **299**, **Exp.** 2, 145, 593  
     want of, or erroneous treatment, 593  
     improper treatment, 594  
   no limit as to time of death, *ib.*
3. culpable homicide, definition of, **299**, 145  
   differs from manslaughter, 586  
   distinction between it and murder, **300**, 146, 595  
   presumption as to knowledge or intention, 597  
   acts likely to cause death, 598  
   death resulting unexpectedly, 598, 623  
   carelessness or neglect of duty, 597  
   obedience to orders of superior, *ib.*  
   contributory negligence no defence, 600

**HOMICIDE—continued.**

4. proof of intention or knowledge, 600  
death, 617  
identification of corpse, *ib.*  
cause of death, 618
5. culpable homicide is not murder if it falls within certain exceptions, 300, 146  
burthen of proof as to their existence, 602
6. provocation, 300, *Excep.* 1, 147  
may be given by words, 602  
what amount of sufficient, 603  
loss of self-control necessary, 605  
must not be sought or provoked, *Prov.* 1, 147, 605  
or given by lawful act, *Prov.* 2, 147, 606  
or by exercise of self-defence, *Prov.* 3, 147, 607  
is a question of fact, 300, *Exp.*, 147  
its sufficiency a question of law, 607
7. acts exceeding right of self-defence, 300, *Excep.* 2, 148, 608  
or powers of public servant, 300, *Excep.* 3, 148, 608  
must be done towards execution of his duty, 609
8. acts committed in sudden fight, 300, *Excep.* 4, 148  
passion must be cause of act, 609  
and resulting from fight, 610  
undue advantage or cruelty, *ib.*  
first blow immaterial, 300, *Exp.*, 148
9. risk of death consented to by adult, 300, *Excep.* 5, 148, 611  
applies to cases of duelling, 611  
conflicting cases as to faction-fights, 612  
illegal operations, 616
10. offence committed where person not intended to be hurt is killed, 300, *Excep.* 1, 147, 301, 149, 616  
punishment for murder, 302, 149  
by a person transported for life, 303, 149  
for culpable homicide not murder, 304, 149  
attempting to commit murder or culpable homicide, 307, 150, 308, 151, 625

**HOUSEBREAKING**

See *HOUSE-TRESPASS*, 3, 4, 5.

**HOUSE-TRESPASS**

1. when criminal trespass becomes, 442, 194  
what is a human dwelling, 740  
residence, 741  
premises included in it, *ib.*  
who is the owner, 742  
place for custody of property, *ib.*
2. punishment for simple, 443, 197  
in order to commit offence punishable with death, 449, 197  
with transportation for life, 450, 197  
imprisonment, 451, 197  
after preparation for causing assault, hurt, or restraint, 452, 197
3. lurking house-trespass, 443, 194  
by night, 444, 192  
housebreaking, 445, 195, 743  
by night, 446, 196
4. punishment for lurking, or housebreaking, 453, 198  
lurking or housebreaking in order to commit an offence or theft, 454, 198



**HOUSE-TRESPASS—continued.**

- having made preparation for causing assault, hurt, or restraint, 455, 198
- 5. lurking by night, or housebreaking by night with same intents, 456, 198, 457, 458, 199
  - attempting to cause death or grievous hurt while committing, 459, 199
  - punishment of person acting jointly with such offender, 460, 199
  - death or grievous hurt need not have been contemplated, or the common object, 743

**HURT**

1. who is said to cause it, 319, 154
  - voluntarily causing*, what it is, 321, 154, 584
  - does not involve premeditation, 584
  - punishment for, 323, 155
  - cases in which it is lawful, 328
  - by using dangerous weapons, etc., 324, 155
  - when done for extortion, or to force a person to do an illegal act, 327, 156
    - or to extort confession, 330, 158
    - or to obtain restoration of property, 330, 158
    - or to deter public servant from doing his duty, 332, 159
  - when done on grave and sudden provocation, 334, 159, 585
    - which must proceed from person hurt, 334, 159, 585
  - when caused by act showing want of regard for human life, 337, 160
- administering drug with intent to cause, 328, 157
2. *grievous*, what is, 320, 154
  - voluntarily causing grievous*, what is, 322, 155, 584
  - when death ensues. not always culpable homicide, 585
  - punishment for, 325, 156
  - by dangerous weapons, etc., 326, 156
  - while committing dacoity or robbery, 327, 180
  - when done to extort property or to force to do an illegal act, 329, 157
  - to extort confession or to compel restoration of property, 331, 158
  - to public servant to deter him from doing his duty, 333, 159
  - when done on provocation. etc., 335, 159
  - must proceed from person hurt, 585
  - by an act showing want of regard for the safety of others, 338, 160

**HUSBAND AND WIFE**

- wife not excused by marital influence, 331
- nor precluded from criminal remedies against husband, *ib.*
- may commit theft from each other, 678-681
  - or criminal breach of trust, 695
- liability of wife for criminal breach of trust in regard to strangers, 696
  - for receiving stolen property, 709
- See ADULTERY. BIGAMY. HARBOURING. RAPE. TAKING AWAY.

**IGNORANCE**

See KNOWLEDGE. MISTAKE.

**ILLEGAL**

meaning of word, 43, 14

**ILLICIT INTERCOURSE**

See ABDUCTION. ADULTERY. TAKING AWAY.

## IMPRISONMENT

- two kinds of, 53, 15
- how imposed, 60, 18
- when transportation may be awarded in place of, 59, 16
- commences from date of sentence, 18
- period of how calculated, *ib.*
- place of how changed, *ib.*
  - in case of juvenile offenders, *ib.*

## INFANTS

1. when acts of are not an offence, 32, 33, 43, 367
    - presumption as to maturity after seven, 367
    - imprisonment of juvenile offender, 368
    - right of correction in case of, 329
    - parental control over, 638
  2. acts done to cause death of, before or after birth, 315, 153
    - death of quick unborn, caused by act which could result in culpable homicide, 316, 153, 632
  3. parent of under twelve, exposing or abandoning it, 317, 153
    - or person having care of, 317, 633
      - when death results from act, *ib.*
      - what acts amount to abandonment, 633
  4. secret disposal of dead body of, to conceal birth, 316, 153, 634
    - must be more than a *fœtus*, 634
    - what act amounts to concealment, 635
    - evidence on charge, 636
- See* KIDNAPPING. MISCARRIAGE, 1.

## INFECTION

*See* NUISANCE, 4.

## INFORMATION

- obligation to furnish in reference to crimes, 442
- See* FALSE INFORMATION.

## INJURY

- what the word denotes, 44, 14

## INNOCENCE, PRESUMPTION OF

1. meaning of the rule, 232
  - when the presumption ceases, *ib.*
2. rule as to the benefit of the doubt, 234
  - nature of the doubt, 235
3. onus of proving sometimes thrown by statute on accused, 486, 210, 212, 213
  - lies on appellant after conviction, 961

## INSANITY

1. early definitions of, 370
  - now understood to be a disease, 368
  - different views of legal responsibility, *ib.*
  - first discussed in McNaghten's case, 370
    - answers of judges, 372
    - these adopted in India, 34, 44, 375
2. doctrine of uncontrollable impulse, 376
  - not admitted by English law, *ib.*
  - practical objections to it, 377
3. two grounds of exemption under Code, *ib.*
  - knowledge of nature of act; what it means, 378
    - that act is wrong or contrary to law, 374
    - may co-exist with complete insanity, 378

**INSANITY—continued.**

- generally applies to delusions, 379
- rule which governs them, 374, 379
- this assumes a certain margin of sanity, 380, 383
- 4. medical view of monomania, 380
  - Hadfield's case, 381
- 5. proof of insanity lies on accused, 384
  - case of lucid intervals, *ib.*
  - medical evidence as to, *ib.*
  - ordinary tests of, 386
- 6. set up where no previous evidence of, 385
  - generally due to other causes, *ib.*
  - cannot be inferred from crime itself, 386
  - running amuck, 388
- 7. incapacity for trial on account of, 389
  - acquittal on ground of, 390
  - removal of insane person from India, *ib.*

**INSOLVENT COURT**

officers of forbidden to trade, 81

**INSUBORDINATION**

abetting act of by soldier or sailor, 138, 139, 68, 69

**INSULT**

- to public servant sitting in judicial proceeding, 228, 117
- intentional, to provoke breach of peace or committal of offence, 504, 226
  - actual effect immaterial, 851
- to female modesty, 509, 227
  - depends on intention and probability of result, 852
  - what is an intrusion on privacy, *ib.*

**INTENTION**

- 1. different meanings of word, 237, 815
    - differs from motive, 238
    - is involved in act done voluntarily, 39, 13
  - 2. assumed where consequences known, or believed to be likely to result, 39, 13, 597
    - or where they are natural or necessary consequences, 238, 729, 814, 815
    - must be proved where act is itself indifferent, 80
    - or where specific intent is essence of offence, 163, 197, 199, 392, 482, 467, 481, 488, 526, 600, 727, 729, 733, 862
    - evidence of other transactions when admissible to prove, 533, 708, 726, 760, 829
- See INTOXICATION, 2. DISAFFECTION, 2.

**INTIMIDATION**

- 1. offence of criminal, 503, 225, 847<sup>\*</sup>
    - meaning of injury, 848, 849
    - excommunication or exclusion from caste, 848
    - harm arising from strikes, 848-850
    - who is a person interested in another, 850
    - threat may be indirect, *ib.*
  - 2. punishment for, 506, 226
    - committing anonymously, 507, 226
    - by threatening Divine displeasure, 506, 227
      - must arise from act of offender, 850
      - excommunication or exclusion from caste, 851
- See COMPULSION. EXTORTION.

# **INTOXICATION**

1. when it constitutes an excuse, 35, 44, 391  
diseased state induced by constant, 391
2. what degree of knowledge assumed, where voluntary intoxication, 36, 44, 391  
rule as to intention, 392  
specific state of mind, 392
3. misconduct by person in state of, 510, 227

# **INTRUSION**

- on privacy of female, 509, 227, 852

# **IRREGULARITY**

- when immaterial or cured; in framing charge, 867  
exercise of jurisdiction, 342, 887  
recording statements of accused, 923  
examination of prisoner, 933  
admitting or rejecting evidence, 941, 956  
misdirection by judge, 956

# **JOINDER**

- See CHARGE, 4, 5.

# **JOINT ACTS**

1. liability of person who does one of several acts which make up single offence, 37, 12, 429  
each person may commit a different offence, 38, 12, 430
2. union of several persons to effect a criminal purpose, 34, 11, 430  
liability limited by common purpose, 430  
inferred from preparation, 431  
not from mere presence without opposition, *ib.*  
where special intention necessary, must be proved as to each, 432
3. liability for acts of any member of an unlawful assembly, 146, 149, 150, 71  
of persons engaged in robbery, 394, 179  
in dacoity, 396, 180  
in housebreaking, 460, 199  
in forgery, 758  
in defamation, 842

# **JUDGE**

1. meaning of the word, 19, 5, 339  
every is a public servant, 21, 6  
of Supreme Court forbidden to trade, 81
2. protected against civil suits for acts done within jurisdiction, 338  
though jurisdiction not believed in, 345  
though done maliciously and corruptly, 339  
what acts are within jurisdiction, 341, 343  
when jurisdiction is limited, 341  
not in England for acts done without jurisdiction, 338  
otherwise in India if jurisdiction believed, 345  
what sort of belief necessary, *ib.*
3. when his act is no offence, 77, 42, 338  
depends on his acting judicially, 347  
how far irregular proceedings made valid, *ib.*  
whether existence of jurisdiction necessary, 346  
immunity extends to all judicial acts, 347  
charges of defamation, 829
4. criminal proceedings in England against superior judges, 342, 829



**JUDGE—continued**

- justices of the peace, 343, 829
- quasi-judicial persons, 830
- 5. acts done under authority of, 78, 42
  - See* MINISTERIAL OFFICER.
- 6. province of judge and jury in dealing with evidence, 549, 916, 943
  - in cases of negligence, 566
  - provocation, 607
  - defamation, 845
  - accomplices, 916
  - result of error in summing up, 942, 956
  - not a ground for appeal to the Queen, 973
- 7. disqualified by interest, 898
  - who is not deemed to have an interest, *ib.*
  - pecuniary interest, 899
  - facts causing bias, 900
  - connection with case as prosecutor, *ib.*
  - summoned to give evidence, 902
  - decree only voidable not void, 903
- 8. cannot try for offence committed before himself, *ib.*
  - disability is personal, 904
  - limited to judge acting in same capacity, *ib.*
  - alternative offences, *ib.*
  - See* DISAGREEMENT.

**JUDICIAL PROCEEDING**

*See* FALSE EVIDENCE, 9.

**JURISDICTION**

- 1. dependent on specified facts, 506
  - not affected by wrong finding, *ib.*
  - or by irregular arrest, 507
  - assumed in favour of superior courts, 408
  - facts limiting must be brought to notice, 341
  - irregular exercise of when cured, 887
- 2. of Indian courts *prima facie* local, 256, 883
  - none over offences by foreigner out of India, 269, 886
  - continuing offences, 883, 884
  - act done in one place operating in another, *ib.*
  - which is an offence by relation to another, *ib.*
  - where locality of offence uncertain, 884
  - offence committed on journey, *ib.*
  - founded on custody of accused, 885
  - extraordinary of High Court, *ib.*
- 3. offences committed out of India on land
  - by European British subject in allied States, 256
  - native British subject everywhere, *ib.*
  - where death happens or is caused within charter of East Indian Co., 266
  - committed in Mysore, 259
  - against Slave Trade Act, 263, 648
- 4. offences committed at sea
  - under Admiralty jurisdiction, 263
  - Merchant Shipping Act, 264
  - persons on board British ship, 264, 265, 273
  - British subject on foreign ship to which he does not belong, 264, 273
  - who is a British subject, 268
  - what is a British ship, 275
  - privilege of trial before High Court, 268

**JURISDICTION—continued.**

- against Slave Trade Act, 263, 648
  - in territorial waters, 278
    - conferred by Territorial Waters Act, 279
    - created by local legislature, 293
  - 5. *as regards persons*
    - European British subjects, 880
      - privilege of must be asserted, 341, 882
      - how forfeited, 882
    - unlawful detention of, *ib.*
    - foreigners liable for offences in India, 336, 458
      - on British ship, 274
      - or any ship within Indian district, 277
      - or under Territorial Waters Act, 278, 279
    - exemption of ships of war, 279
    - pirates *jure gentium*, 281
  - 6. over East India Co., 298
    - Secretary of State for India, 299
    - heads of Government and High Court judges how far exempted from, 301
  - 7. improper to assume by charging minor form of grave offence, 436, 526  
543, 834, 874
- See* ADMIRALTY JURISDICTION. BIGAMY, 4. DIVORCE. PIRACY.

**KIDNAPPING**

1. two kinds of, 359, 168
  - from British India, 360, 168
    - lawful guardianship, 361, 168
    - result of mistake as to age, 637
    - as to mental capacity, *ib.*
2. who is a lawful guardian, 361, *Exp.*, 168, 638
  - legal right not essential, 638
  - illegitimate children or orphans, 639
  - rights of mother, *ib.*
  - when minor is in keeping of, 640
3. taking or enticing; consent of minor immaterial, *ib.*
  - or unlawful purpose, 641
  - what amounts to, *ib.*
  - temporary possession sufficient, 642
4. presumption as to want of guardian's consent, *ib.*
  - consent of person with limited charge, 643
  - effect of mistake or ignorance as to, *ib.*
5. abetting offence of, 644<sup>o</sup>
  - jurisdiction over foreigners committing, 645
6. punishment for, in ordinary cases, 363, 169
  - where person is kidnapped to be murdered, 364, *ib.*
  - to be wrongfully confined, 365, *ib.*
  - where a woman is kidnapped that she may be compelled to marry, etc., 366, *ib.*
  - where in order to subject person to grievous hurt, slavery, etc., 367, *ib.*
  - concealing or confining kidnapped person, 368, 170
  - child to steal from its person, 369,

**KNOWLEDGE**

- of natural or necessary consequences of act assumed, 391, 597
- when necessary as regards particular facts, 239, 391
- in case of statutory offences, depends on the objects of the statute, 239-241

**KNOWLEDGE—continued.**

when ignorance must be proved, 241  
 how far assumed in voluntary intoxication, 35, 44, 391  
 of contents of seditious publication, 477  
 evidence of other similar offences to prove guilty  
*See* RECEIVING, 4. COIN, 1, 2. FORGERY, 4.

**LABOUR**

*See* FORCED LABOUR.

**LAW APPLICABLE TO OFFENCES****1. Penal Code**

only repeals so far as it provides a law, 2, 2, 247  
 certain laws not affected by it, 5, 5  
 applies to India and regions specially declared, 1, 1  
 to offences committed since 1 Jan., 1862, 2, 2  
     by servants of Queen in allied States, 4, 2  
     European British subjects in same States, 256  
     native Indian subjects wherever committed, *ib.*  
     persons triable under act of Governor-General in  
     Council for offences out of India, 3, 2  
     on sea within Indian districts, 271, 285

**2. English law**

to offences under Admiralty jurisdiction, 286  
     Merchant Shipping Acts, 288-292  
     territorial waters, 293  
 procedure is Indian, 288, 290  
 punishment in conformity with Indian law, 265, 291

**LAWFUL GUARDIAN**

*See* KIDNAPPING, 2.

**LEGAL REMUNERATION**

meaning of term, 161, *Exp.*, 75

**LEGALLY BOUND**

meaning of term, 43, 14

**LENGTH**

false measure of, 265-267, 129, 130  
*See* MEASURE.

**LIABILITY**

of one for acts done by another, 34, 11, 111-114, 58, 59, 146-149, 71

**LIEUTENANT-GOVERNOR**

assault on, 124, 64  
 attempt to overawe, 124, 64

**LIFE**

what the word denotes, 45, 14  
*See* HOMICIDE. HURT.

**LIGHT**

exhibiting a false, 281, 135

**LIGHT-HOUSE**

destroying or removing, etc., 433, 192

**LIMIT OF PUNISHMENT**

when offence is made up of several offences, 71, 31

**LIMITATION**

period of, where charge is against Merchandise Marks Act, 215

**LOCAL LAW**

meaning of the term, 41, 13  
the word "offence" extended to certain breaches of, 40, 13  
no "local law" is repealed or affected by the Penal Code, 5, 3  
abetment may be committed in respect of, 57  
breach of, may also be an offence under Code, 5  
appeal against sentences under, *ib.*

**LOSS**

*See* WRONGFUL LOSS.

**LOST PROPERTY**

finder of, when punishable for misappropriating, 403, *Expl.* 2, 182  
*See* MISAPPROPRIATION.

**LOTTERY**

what is a, 140  
keeping a, 294A, 140

**LUNACY**

*See* INSANITY.

**LURKING HOUSE-TRESPASS**

CRIMINAL TRESPASS.

**MACHINERY**

negligent conduct as to, in possession or charge of offender, 287, 137

**MAN**

meaning of the term, 10, 4

**MARRIAGE**

1. laws governing Indian, 771  
good by law where celebrated is good everywhere, 772  
marriage of necessity, *ib.*  
rule limited to a Christian marriage, 773  
meaning of term, 774  
what are absolutely invalid, 775  
by Englishwoman with Muhammadan, 776  
invalid by law of domicile, *ib.*  
must affect both parties, 778  
mere ceremonial not affected, 779  
with deceased wife's sister, *ib.*
2. burthen of proof as to, 781  
when presumed in civil cases, *ib.*  
absolute proof in criminal cases, *ib.*  
what amount of sufficient, 782  
matters of form presumed, 784  
evidence of legal celebration, *ib.*  
proof of foreign law, *ib.*  
in India, 785
3. cohabiting with woman under pretence of, 493, 219, 789  
going through invalid ceremony of, 496, 220  
*See* ADULTERY. BIGAMY.

**MARTIAL LAW**

administered to military forces, 309  
not applicable to other persons, 309, 312, 313  
or to non-military offences, 310  
is the test in cases to which it applies, *ib.*



**MARTIAL LAW—continued.**

- substitution of for ordinary law at periods of emergency, 310
  - may be effected by Legislature, *ib.*
  - how far authorities protected by legislative powers, 316
  - or condoned by Indemnity Act, 317, 326
  - only covers *bond fide* acts, 318
- can Government *proprio motu* proclaim it? 311-317, 325
  - Irish Rebellion, 311
  - Ceylon Rebellion, 313
  - Jamaica Riots, 315
  - Indian Mutiny, 317
- its effect on rights of citizens in case of invasion, 325

**MASCULINE**

- includes feminine, 8, 4

**MASTER**

1. not criminally liable for acts of servant, 242
  - unless resulting from misconduct of master, 243
  - or criminal negligence, *ib.*
- authority to conduct lawful business assumed to be in lawful way, 244, 478
  - unless consent or connivance proved, *ib.*
- effect of his order on criminality of servant, 307, 599
2. when bound to manage property or business in particular way is responsible for acts of delegate, 243-246, 478
  - cases of nuisance, 244
  - statutory offences, 244-246
  - owners of land, 154, 155, 72, 73
- civil liability of, 242
  - does not apply to Government officers, 298
3. abetting acts of servant, 438
  - obligation to exercise care towards servant, 578
  - rights of to chastise apprentice, 329

**MEASURE**

- using a false, 264, 265, 129
  - is evidence of fraudulent intent, 129
- possessing, making, or selling with fraudulent intent, 266, 270, 130

**MEDICAL EVIDENCE**

- special provisions relating to, 939
- when deposition of admissible, *ib.*
- effect of report by, 940
- See EXPERT.

**MEDICAL MAN**

- death caused by mistake of, 593, 622

**MEMBER OF COUNCIL**

- exemption of, from jurisdiction of High Court, 301
- assault on, 124, 64
- attempt to overawe, 124, 64
- forbidden to trade, 80

**MENS REA**

- meaning and origin of doctrine, 236
- inapplicable to Penal Code, 237

**MERCHANDISE MARKS ACT, 207**

1. general scope of, 762
  - trade-mark, what it is, 478, 208, 762
    - when right to is exclusive, 763
    - colourable imitation of, 764
    - how right to lost, 765
    - does not protect article, 763
  - trade name, what is, 765
  - property mark, what is, 479, 209
2. what is using false trade mark, 480, 209
  - property mark, 481, 209
  - penalty for using or counterfeiting either, 482, 483, 209
  - counterfeiting mark used by public servant, 484, 209
  - making or possessing instrument for counterfeiting trade or property mark, or possessing false trade or property mark, 485, 210
  - selling, exposing, or possessing goods bearing false trade or property mark, 486, 210
  - making or using false mark to deceive public servant, 487, 488, 210, 211
  - tampering with property mark, 489, 211
3. meaning of trade description. Act iv. of 1889, s. 2 (2), 208
  - false trade description, *ib.* (3), 208
  - applying trade description, *ib.* 5, 212
    - false trade description, *ib.* 4, 211
  - need not be physically attached, 766
  - applying trade name in a false trade description, 765
4. applying false trade description with fraudulent intent. Act iv. of 1889, s. 6, 212
  - selling, exposing, or possessing goods with false trade description, *ib.* 7, 213
5. fraudulent intent, in what it consists, 764
  - must be made out, 767, 769
  - when assumed, 767, 768, 769
  - when accused is bound to negative, 482, 209, 486, 210, 487, 488, 211; Act iv. of 1889, s. 6, 212
  - unintentional breaches of law. Act iv. of 1889, s. 8, 213
  - acts done by servant in good faith, *ib.* s. 18, 215
6. forfeiture of goods, *ib.* 9, 214
  - evidence of origin, *ib.* 13, 215
  - costs, *ib.* 14, 215
  - limitation of prosecution, *ib.* 15, 215
  - abetment of offence out of India, *ib.* 22, 216

**METAL TOKENS ACT**

*See* COIN, 4.

**MINISTERIAL OFFICER**

1. protected against suit for acts done in execution of judicial warrant, 345
  - though issued without jurisdiction, 345, 348
2. when such acts no offence, 78, 42
  - must have believed in jurisdiction, *ib.*
  - grounds of belief may vary according to position of officer, 348
  - always protected where jurisdiction, 348
3. liable for illegality of his own acts, 349
  - See* ARREST. PRIVATE DEFENCE.

**MINOR**

selling or buying, for prostitution, 372, 373, 170, 171  
*See* PROSTITUTION.

**MINT**

- person employed in, causing coin to be of wrong weight or composition, 244, 121
- unlawfully taking a coining instrument from, 245, 122

**MISAPPROPRIATION**

- punishment for offence of dishonest, 403, 181
- differs from theft or cheating, 691
  - cases of clerk or servant, 692
- for a time only is sufficient, 403, Exp. 1, 182
- when a finder of property commits, 403, Exp. 2, 182, 693
  - article must be property, 692
  - when it is though lost, *ib.*
  - where no owner claims, 694
  - when no effort to discover owner, 693
  - naming owner in charge, 694
- only applies to movable property, 183
- of property possessed by deceased person at death, 404, 183

**MISCARRIAGE**

1. what constitutes offence of causing, 312, 152, 630
  - woman herself may commit, 312, Exp., 152
  - meaning of "with child," 629
    - "quick with child," *ib.*
  - when attempt fails, 630
    - where means for are supplied, but not applied, 632
2. causing without consent of woman, 313, 152
  - where death results, 314, 152
  - act must be done by accused, 632
    - knowledge of consequences not essential, 314, Exp., 152
    - if known may be murder, 632

**MISCHIEF**

1. what constitutes offence, 425, 190, 728
  - intention to cause specified result, 729
    - when presumed, *ib.*
  - act done in supposed exercise of right, *ib.*
  - must affect property, *ib.*
    - what injury to it sufficient, 730
    - may be by joint owner, *ib.*
    - indirect results of act, 731
2. punishment for, when simple, 426, 191
  - if damage done amounts to Rs. 50, 427, *ib.*
  - by killing, maiming, etc., an animal within Rs. 10, 428, *ib.*
  - by killing, maiming, etc., an elephant, camel, horse, mule, buffalo, bull, or cow, or ox, 429, *ib.*
    - any other animal worth more than Rs. 50, 429, *ib.*
  - by diminishing supply of water, etc., 430, 192
  - by injuring public work, bridge, navigable river, etc., 431, *ib.*
  - by causing inundation, or obstructing drainage, 432, *ib.*
  - by destroying, or moving, etc., light-house, sea-mark, etc., 433, *ib.*
  - by destroying, etc., land-mark fixed by public servant, 434, 193
  - by using fire or explosive substance with intent, etc., 435, *ib.*
    - with intent to destroy a house, etc., 436, *ib.*
  - committed on a decked vessel of 20 tons burden, 437, *ib.*
    - if by fire or explosive substance, 438, *ib.*
  - running vessel ashore to commit theft or misappropriation, 439, 194
  - committed with preparation for causing death or hurt, or wrongful restraint, 440, *ib.*
  - with respect to a will, or valuable security, 477, 206

**MISFORTUNE**

*See* ACCIDENT.

**MISJOINDER**

*See* CHARGE, 4, 5.

**MISTAKE OF FACT**

when act done by reason of not an offence, 76, 79, 41, 42

general principle, 331

rules deduced from Prince's case, 332-335

in statutory offences, excuse depends on frame of statute, 335

*See* KNOWLEDGE.

right of private defence against person acting under, 98, 50

**MISTAKE OF LAW**

in general no defence, 76, 79, 41, 42, 336

even in case of foreigners, 336

unless it affects mental state when material to charge, 337

cases of new statute, unknown or not promulgated, 336, 337

**MONOMANIA**

*See* INSANITY.

**MONTH**

meaning of the word, and how calculated, 49, 14

**MORALS**

offences against public, 292-294, 138, 139

*See* OBSCENITY.

**MOTIVE**

differs from intention, 238

immaterial when act done is either legal or illegal, *ib.*

important where offence involves special state of mind, *ib.*

**MOVABLE PROPERTY**

what the term includes, 22, 8

in case of theft, 378, *Exp.* 1, 173, 667-669

**MUNICIPAL COMMISSIONER**

is a public servant, 21, *Illus.*, 8

liability of for neglect of duty, 574

**MURDER**

*See* ATTEMPT. HOMICIDE, 3, 5, 10.

**MUTINY**

abetting the commission of, 131, 67

where the mutiny is committed in consequence, 132, 67

abetting assault on superior officer, 133, 67

if assault is committed in consequence, 134, 68

abetting desertion, 135, 68

harbouring deserter, 136, 68

in a merchant vessel, 137, 68

abetting act of insubordination, 138, 68

circulating rumours, etc., with intent to excite, 505, 226

**MUTINY ACT**

whether Naval or Military, not repealed or affected by the Penal Code, 5, 3

persons subject to not liable under Code for offences against Military Law, 189, 69



**MYSORE**

- European British subjects cannot be tried in, 259
- may be arrested by police, 260
- can only be committed by Justice of Peace who is a European British subject, 261
- for trial in Madras High Court, *ib.*
- who are public servants in, 262
- extradition to India, *ib.*

**NAME**

- includes abbreviation under Merchandise Marks Act, 208

**NATIVE INDIAN SUBJECTS**

- who are, 257
- See JURISDICTION, 3.

**NAVIGATION**

- of a vessel, rash or negligent, showing want of regard for human life, etc., 280, 135
- carrying passengers in unsafe vessel, 282, 135
- obstructing public line of, 283, 135
- injuring by mischief, 431, 192
- endangering by removing lights, buoys, etc., 433, 192
- exhibiting false lights, buoys, 281, 135
- See MISCHIEF.

**NAVY**

- offences relating to, 131-140, 67-69

**NEGLIGENCE**

1. punishable apart from injury resulting, 564
  - what constitutes it in law, *ib.*
  - where it is the act of a servant, 565
  - must be made out affirmatively, *ib.*
  - when it may be assumed, *ib.*
  - where evidence equally balanced, 566
  - province of judge and jury, *ib.*
2. doctrine of contributory, 567
  - its application to criminal law, 567, 600
  - must appear to have naturally led to injury charged, 565
  - injury includes property, 136, 567
3. rash or careless riding or driving, 279, 135, 567
  - navigation of vessel, 280, 135
  - exhibiting false light, mark, or buoy, 281, 135
  - conveying for hire in unseaworthy vessel, 282, 135
  - knowledge is an essential, 567
  - what is unseaworthiness, 568
4. obstructing highway or navigation, 283, 135
  - injury to individual sufficient, 568
  - temporary obstruction, when allowable, *ib.*
  - actual obstruction must be found, 569
    - must be natural result of act, *ib.*
  - lawful but unusual use of property, 570
  - injury resulting from *vis major*, 571
  - permission to pass does not make a highway, 572
  - duty attaching to proprietor, *ib.*
5. liability of occupant of property, 573
  - landlord, *ib.*
  - municipalities liable in respect of highways, 574

**NEGLIGENCE—continued.**

- when for nonfeasance, 574
  - effect of loss of possession, 575
  - 6. in regard to poison, 284, 136
    - fire or combustibles, 285, 136
    - explosives, 286, 136
    - machinery, 287, 137
    - pulling down or repairing buildings, 288, 137
  - 7. in respect of animals in possession, 289, 137
    - knowledge of its dangerous nature, 576
    - facts known to servants, *ib.*
    - untamed animals, 577
    - injury to trespassers, *ib.*
      - servants, 578
- See RASH OR NEGLIGENT ACT.*

**NUISANCE**

- difference between public and private, 551
    - proper remedy for each, *ib.*
  - elements of a public, 268, 130, 552
    - brothels and gambling houses, 552
    - prostitution, 553
    - sentimental grievances, 554
  - 2. what amounts to an injury to the public, 553
    - smells and noise, 556
    - lawfulness of act immaterial, 558
    - or lapse of time. or benefit to public, *ib.*
    - acts authorized by statute, 558, 568
  - 3. summary powers of removal, 559
    - procedure to enforce, 560
    - powers of municipalities, 561
      - continuance of, after lawful order to discontinue, 291, 137, 494
  - 4. spreading infectious and dangerous disease, 269, 130, 561
    - doing so malignantly, 270, 131, 561
    - duties of persons in charge of infectious patients, 562
    - cases of venereal disease, *ib.*
  - 5. disobeying quarantine law, 271, 131
    - adulterating food or drink for sale, 272, 131
    - sale of noxious food or drink, 273, 131
    - sale of adulterated drugs, 275, 133
      - one drug as a different drug, 276, 134
      - what is adulteration, 131, 133
        - food or drink, 132
      - proof of charge, *ib.*
  - 6. fouling water of public spring or reservoir, 277, 134
    - making atmosphere noxious to health, 278, 134
    - punishment for any, not otherwise provided for, 290, 137
- See NEGLIGENCE.*

**NUMBER**

- defined, 9, 4

**OATH**

- what the word means and includes, 51, 14
  - refusing to take an, 178, 90
  - making false statements on, to public servant, 181, 91
- See FALSE EVIDENCE.*

**OBSCENITY**

- importing, printing, selling obscene matter, 292, 138

**OBSCENITY—continued.**

- possessing such matter for sale, 293, 139
  - may be destroyed by order of court, *ib.*
- singing obscene songs or doing obscene acts, *ib.*
  - what is a public place, *ib.*
  - mode of framing charge and conviction for, 140

**OBSTRUCTING**

- public servant in discharge of his duty, 188, 93
- the taking of property by authority of public servant, 183, 92
- the sale of property by public servant, 184, 92
- apprehension of one's self, 224, 113
  - of another, 225, 114
- a public way or line of navigation, 283, 431, 135, 192

**OCCUPIER**

- of land not giving police notice of riot, etc., 154, 72
- of land for whose benefit a riot is committed, liability of, 155, 73
  - his agents—liability of in such cases, 156, 73
- liability of, for nuisance on land, 244, 573

**OMISSION**

- what the word denotes, 33, 11
- illegal, when included in the word "act," 32, 11
- offence caused partly by omission, and partly by act, 36, 11
- constituting an abetment, 107, 108, 55
- to give information when illegal, 118-120, 61-63, 176, 88
- to assist a public servant, 187, 94
- death caused by illegal, 221, 222, 111, 112
  - See* HOMICIDE.

**ORDERS**

- of officer or superior, when a justification, 307, 599
- of husband, no justification, 331
- of Government, 296, 326
  - See* ACT OF STATE. MARTIAL LAW.

**OWNER.**

- See* OCCUPIER.

**PARDON**

- when it may be granted, 913
- effect of disclosure under illegal offer of, *ib.*
  - ~~may be~~ or when none granted, *ib.*
- accused person cannot be examined without, *ib.*
  - unless convicted, *ib.*

**PARENT**

- may chastise child, 329
- right to custody of child, 638

**PARTY**

- defamation by, in judicial proceeding, 829-832

**PEACE**

- provoking to breach of the, 504, 226, 851
  - See* SECURITY. TURBULENT ASSEMBLY.

**PENAL CODE**

- See* LAW APPLICABLE TO OFFENCES, 1.

**PENAL SERVITUDE**

in case of Europeans and Americans takes the place of transportation, 56, 16

**PERSON**

meaning of the word, 11, 4.

**PERSONATING**

a soldier, 140, 69  
any public servant, 170, 171, 82  
another, for the purpose of a suit, 205, 102  
a juror or assessor, 229, 117  
See CHEATING.

**PIRACY JURE GENTIUM**

in what it consists, 281  
differs from piracy by municipal law, 282, 283  
belligerent acts of regularly commissioned vessel are not, 283  
attack by privateer on friendly State is, *ib.*  
is punishable by captors wherever committed, 281  
jurisdiction over cannot be transferred, 284  
piracy by municipal law gives no jurisdiction over foreigners, 284  
only triable by High Courts, 285

**POISON**

negligence with respect to, 284, 136  
administering with intent to hurt, 328, 157

**POSSESSION**

when a person is said to have, 27, 9  
See THEFT, 2, 7. RECEIVING, 2, 3, 4. TRESPASS, 2. COINING, 1.

**PRESIDENCY**

meaning of the word, 18, 5

**PREVIOUS ACQUITTAL OR CONVICTION**

when it bars new trial, 905  
case must have been tried, 906  
by competent court, 907  
bars fresh charge on same evidence, *ib.*  
unless offences are distinct, 909  
trial of minor offence by court without jurisdiction over graver, 910  
effect of reversing sentence, 911

**PREVIOUS CONVICTION**

effect of increasing punishment, 75, 39  
must have been under Penal Code, 40  
for attempt or abetment not sufficient, *ib.*  
when to be resorted to, *ib.*  
mode of charging, 40, 866  
and trying, 41

**PRISONER**

suffering or aiding escape of, 128-130, 66

**PRIVATE DEFENCE**

1. act done in exercise of, no offence, 96, 50  
general principles of, 403, 413  
cases to which it extends, 97, 50  
though crime attempted by one who is personally exempt from offence, 98, 50, 413  
or where necessary risk of harm to innocent person, 106, 54



**PRIVATE DEFENCE—continued.**

2. defence of the person, when killing justifiable, 100, 52  
     wrongful confinement, 414  
     when harm short of death justifiable, 101, 52  
     unnecessary amount of, criminal, 94, cl. 4, 31, 415  
     commencement and end of right, 102, 52, 421
3. defence of property, when killing justifiable, 103, 53  
     not where unnecessary, 94, cl. 4, 31, 417  
     when harm short of death justifiable, 104, 53, 417  
     commencement and end of right, 105, 53, 422
4. act must be, or be reasonably supposed to be an offence, 413, 420, 426  
     case of quarrel, 427  
     trespasses which are not criminal, 418
5. case of acts done or ordered by public servant, 99, cl. 1, 2, 51, 404  
     when official character unknown, 99, Exp., 51, 405  
     where acts are unlawful, 405
6. resistance to authority of law, 406  
     where process is lawful but irregular, 406  
     what authority is competent, 407  
     rule as to jurisdiction, 408, 409  
     where warrant on its face illegal, 408  
     non-description or wrong description, 409, 411  
     illegal execution of good warrant, 410  
     arrest of wrong person, 411  
     want of jurisdiction to order act, 412  
     arrest by officer without warrant, *ib.*  
     where warrant unnecessary, 411
7. meaning of voluntarily causing death, etc., 420  
     when amount of violence excessive, *ib.*
8. where protection of law available, 99, cl. 3, 51, 404
9. acts done in defence of others, 97, 50, 423  
     in resistance to public servant, 424  
     in excess of right are not murder, 300, Excep. 2, 148, 608

**PRIVILEGED COMMUNICATION***See* DEFAMATION.**PROPERTY***See* DISPOSAL OF PROPERTY. THEFT, 2.**PROPERTY MARK***See* MERCHANDISE MARKS.**PROSTITUTION**

- when it is or is not a nuisance, 552, 553
- selling or disposing of minor for purpose of, 372, 170
- buying or obtaining possession of minor for such purpose, 373, 171  
     special intent essential, 650  
     a complete possession necessary, 651  
     whether intervention of third party an element in offence, *ib.*  
     or innocence of minor, *ib.*
- assisting voluntary prostitute, 652
- cases of dancing girls, 653

**PROVOCATION***See* HOMICIDE, 6. ASSAULT, 3.**PUBLIC**

what the word includes, 12, 4

**PUBLIC JUSTICE**

offences against, 191-229, 96-117

**PUBLIC PLACE**

what is a, 139

**PUBLIC SERVANT**

1. who is or is not a, 21, 6, 544

2. offences by a—

abetting an offence which it was his duty to prevent, 116, 60

concealing existence of design to commit such offence, 119, 62

allowing prisoner of State or of war to escape, voluntarily, 128, 66  
negligently, 129, 66

one who is, or expects to be, taking a gratification, etc., im-  
properly, 161, 75

abetting the giving of bribes or gratifications, 164, 77

accepting valuable thing for inadequate consideration, 165, 78

disobeying direction of law, with a view to injure any one,  
166, 79

framing incorrect document, 167, 79, 218, 110

unlawfully engaging in trade, 168, 80

buying or bidding for property, 169, 81

disobeying directions of law to save offender or his property, 217,  
109

making order, etc., contrary to law, 219, 111

keeping person in confinement illegally, 220, 111

omitting to apprehend, or suffering escape of person accused,  
221, 111

omitting to apprehend, or suffering escape of person sentenced,

negligently allowing escape of person in confinement, 223, 113

culpable homicide by, in exercise of powers, 300, *Excep. 3*, 148,  
608

criminal breach of trust, 409, 185

3. offences against a—

personating or wearing garb of, 170, 171, 82

contempt of the lawful authority of, 172-190, 82-96

absconding to avoid service of summons, 172, 82

preventing service of summons, 173, 83

noncompliance with summons or order, 174, 84

non-production or delivery of document, 175, 86

omission by one legally bound to furnish information, 176, 88  
regarding offence committed, 202, 101

furnishing false information, 177, 88

regarding offence committed, 203, 101

to cause misuse of power to the injury of another, 182, 91

refusing to be sworn by, 178, 90

to answer question of, 179, 90

to sign statement before, 180, 91

resisting the taking of property, 183, 92

or its sale, 184, 92

illegal purchase of or bid for property at public sale, 185, 93

omitting to assist, 187, 94

disobedience to duly promulgated order, 188, 95

obstructing in discharge of duty, 186, 93

threat of injury to, 189, 95

in order to prevent application for protection by,  
190, 96

**PUBLIC SERVANT—continued.**

- causing hurt or grievous hurt to deter him from doing his duty, 332, 333, 159
- assaulting, etc., for same object, 353, 166
- insulting, or interrupting during judicial proceeding, 228, 117
- destroying, etc., landmark fixed by, 484, 193
- counterfeiting mark used by, 484, 209
- falsely marking receptacle for goods to deceive, 487, 210
- making use of such false mark, 488, 211
- 4. resistance to acts of—  
See PRIVATE DEFENCE, 5, 6, 9.

**PUNISHMENT**

- 1. when to be under Penal Code, 2, 3, 4, 2
- different kinds of, 53, 15
- power to commute or remit, 54, 55, 15
- fractional terms of, how calculated, 57, 16
- 2. where one offence comprises several, 71, 31
- of the same sort, 32
- of different sorts, or of same sort affecting different persons, 33
- where same facts come under different definitions, 35
- where compound offence includes minor offences, *ib.*
- 3. to be consecutive, on single conviction for several offences, 32
- or when offence committed by person already under sentence, *ib.*
- limitation of amount when inflicted by magistrate, *ib.*
- when cumulative, separate sentences should be given, *ib.*
- when conviction is in the alternative, 72, 38
- after previous conviction, 75, 39
- See DEATH. FINE. FORFEITURE. IMPRISONMENT. PENAL SERVITUDE. TRANSPORTATION. WHIPPING.

**QUARANTINE**

- disobeying rule of, 271, 131

**QUEEN**

- meaning of the word, 13, 4
- servant of the, 14, 4

**QUESTION**

- refusing to answer a, put by public servant, when an offence, 179, 90

**RAPE**

- 1. in what the offence consists, 375, 171 c
- punishment for, 376, 172
- where act is done "against will" of woman, 654
- offender must have reason to believe it was, 655
- when "without consent," *ib.* e
- consent under deception, *ib.*
- age of, raised to twelve, 656
- when husband may commit, 375, Excep., 171
- or abet, 656
- 2. what amount of penetration sufficient, *ib.*
- presumption against in cases of boy, *ib.*
- he may abet or attempt, *ib.*
- when incomplete act punishable as attempt, 657
- 3. charge of to be treated with caution, 658
- evidence of prosecutrix how tested, *ib.*
- her character when admissible, 659
- complaints and statements by her, 660

**RAPE—continued.**

- evidence of medical indications, 661–663
  - marks of violence or resistance, 662
  - dying declarations, 664
- cases of mistaken charge of, *ib.*

**RASH OR NEGLIGENT ACT**

- causing death by, not amounting to culpable homicide, 304A, 150, 619
  - excludes cases of intentional injury, 620
    - death from diseased spleen, 623
  - includes unforeseen results of act, 621
    - mistaken medical practice, 622
- endangering life or safety, 336, 338, 160

**REASON TO BELIEVE**

- meaning of, 26, 9

**RECEIVING**

- property taken from ally of Government, 127, 65

**RECEIVING STOLEN PROPERTY**

1. what constitutes offence of, 411, 185, 703
  - what is stolen property, 410, 185
    - must be the same, not its equivalent, 703
    - ceases to be on reaching a legal owner, 704
      - transfer by thief, *ib.*
    - offence committed by innocent agent, *ib.*
2. proof of actual thief unnecessary, 705
  - criminal possession essential, *ib.*
  - evidence of, *ib.*
3. what is a receiving, 705
  - may be joint possession with thief, 706
  - benefit of receiver unnecessary, *ib.*
  - may be by ratification, *ib.*
  - what is a retaining, *ib.*
4. guilty knowledge, 411, 185, 707
  - evidence of, 707
    - other acts of a similar kind, *ib.*
    - possession, 708
    - case of husband and wife, 709
5. where property was obtained by dacoity, or from a dacoit, 412, 186, 709
  - habitually receiving stolen property, 413, *ib.*
  - assisting in concealing or disposing of stolen property, 414, 186, 711
    - joinder of above offences, 710
6. where receivers may be tried, 884

**RECORD**

- public servant framing incorrect, to injure another, 167, 79
- See FORGERY.*

**REFORMATORY**

- juvenile offenders may be committed to, 18

**REFUSAL**

- to take oath when lawfully required, 178, 90
  - relationship no excuse, 90
  - summary penalty for, *ib.*
- to answer questions, 179, 90
- to sign statement, 180, 91



**RELEASE**

fraudulent, of any demand, or claim, 421, 422, 424, 189

**RELIGION**

offences against, 295-298, 141-143

**REMISSION**

of punishment, 54, 55, 15  
violating condition of, 227, 117

**REMOVAL**

to transportation is ordered by Local Government, 16  
from one jail to another, 18

**REPORT**

circulating false, to incite to mutiny, 505, 226  
*See* DEFAMATION.

**REPUTATION**

*See* DEFAMATION. FORGERY.

**RESCUE**

of prisoner of State or of war, 130, 66  
of any person from lawful custody for offence, 225, 114  
in cases not otherwise provided for, 225B, 116  
*See* ESCAPE. HARBOURING.

**RESISTING**

apprehension of himself for an offence, 224, 113  
another, 225, 114  
the taking of property by a public servant, 183, 92  
a public servant in discharge of his duty, 353, 166

**RESTITUTION OF STOLEN PROPERTY**

corrupt agreement to help in, 215, 107, 453  
what constitutes the offence, 456  
actual restitution immaterial, *ib.*  
offering rewards for, *ib.*

**RETURN**

from transportation, unlawful, 226, 116

**REVISION**

by Appellate Court of its own accord, 963  
High Court on report, 964  
powers of High Court, 964, 966  
inferior Appellate Court, 963  
enhancing punishment, 964, 965  
is in discretion of Court, 965  
no one can apply for as of right, 965, 969  
materials for consideration, *ib.*  
exercised at any stage, 966  
application should be to first court capable of, *ib.*  
how sentence of acquittal dealt with, 967  
ordering or quashing committal, 968  
grounds on which courts may act, 963  
in dealing with verdict, 971

**REWARD**

taking for recovery of stolen property, 216, 107  
*See* RESTITUTION.

## RIGHT

- acts done under belief of, when not an offence—
  - unlawful assembly, 483
  - theft, extortion, robbery, 671, 685, 691
  - mischiefs, 729
  - trespass, 733
- no excuse for unlawful assembly, 483

## RIOTING

1. when unlawful assembly is guilty of, 146, 71
    - force or violence must be for common object, 489
    - crime committed in course of, separately punishable, 490
  2. punishment for, 147, 71
    - when armed with deadly weapons, 148, 71
    - each person in a riot, guilty of offence committed by any other, 148, 71
    - assaulting, etc., public officer suppressing riot, 152, 72
    - provoking a, 153, 72
    - not giving the police notice of, 154, 72
    - person on whose behalf it takes place, his liability, 155, 73
      - liability of his agent or manager, 156, 73
    - hiring persons to take part in, 150, 71
    - being hired to take part in, 158, 74
    - harbouring such persons, 157, 74
- See AFFRAY, TURBULENT. UNLAWFUL ASSEMBLY.*

## RIOTOUS ASSEMBLIES

- right of summary suppression of, 303
  - under Criminal Procedure Code, 308
- when firing upon is justifiable, 305
- similar rules in case of rebellion, 310

## ROBBERY

1. when theft or extortion becomes, 390, 178, 689
  - when a person is said to be present, *ib.*
  - difference between each form of, 689
    - what violence or threat sufficient, *ib.*
    - must be for specified purpose, 690
    - momentary possession necessary, *ib.*
  - negated by claim of right, 691
2. punishment for committing, 392, 179
  - attempt to commit, 393, 179
  - causing hurt in act of, 394, 179
  - using deadly weapon, or attempting to cause death or grievous hurt, 397, 180
  - being armed with deadly weapon, 398, 180
  - belonging to gang of habitual robbers, 401, 181
3. when it becomes dacoity, 391, 179
  - See DACOITY.*

## SANCTION FOR PROSECUTION

1. for certain offences against the State, 888, 889
  - acts in suppression of unlawful assemblies, 888
    - contempt of authority of public servant, *ib.*
  - certain offences against public justice, *ib.*
  - forgery, *ib.*
  - charges against judges and public servants, 889
2. is a condition precedent, 890
  - nature and object of, 891

**SANCTION FOR PROSECUTION—continued.**

- only where proceeding was in court, 891
- in regard to parties or public servants, 892
- 3. what courts may grant, *ib.*
  - order of subordination, 893
  - necessity for inquiry, *ib.*
    - where case was compromised, 894
    - right to go beyond record, *ib.*
- 4. form of, 895
  - does not lapse by death of petitioner, *ib.*
  - no limitation for application, *ib.*
  - duration of, and appeal in respect to, 896
- 5. in case of judges and public servants, 897
  - who may grant, 898
  - limitation on must be followed, *ib.*

**SCREENING AN OFFENDER**

- giving false information for purpose of, 201, 101
  - accepting consideration for, 213, 106
  - offering consideration for, 214, 107
    - there must have been an offence, 450, 526
    - quære* whether person screened must have been the offender? 450
      - not punishable where offence might have been compounded, 214, *Excep.*, 107
- See* COMPOUNDING.

**SECRETING**

- documents with fraudulent intent, 477, 206

**SECTION**

- what the word denotes, 50, 14

**SECURITY**

- to keep the peace, power to require, 948
- person must have been convicted, 949
- only original court can demand, *ib.*
- no appeal against committal to prison, 950

**SEDUCTION**

- abducting or kidnapping a woman with a view to, 366, 169
- concealing person so abducted, 368, 170

**SELF-PRESERVATION**

- how far an excuse, 364
- See* PRIVATE DEFENCE.

**SERVANT**

- of Queen, who commits offence in Foreign State, 4, 2
    - meaning of the term, 14, 14
  - possession of, in possession of the master, when, 27, 9
  - theft by, of master's property, 381, 175
  - criminal breach of trust by, 408, 185
  - who is a servant, 699
  - when excused in respect of offences under Merchandise Marks Act, 215
- See* PUBLIC SERVANT. MASTER.

**SERVICE**

- breach of contract of, during voyage or journey, 490, 216
- immaterial with whom contract was made, 490, *ib.*
- to attend on, etc., helpless persons, 491, 217

**SERVICE—continued.**

does not include servants hired by the month, 218  
 whether charge negatived by *bond fide* belief of right to quit service, 218  
 contract in writing to serve at a distant place to which servant is or is to  
 be conveyed at master's expense, 492, 217  
 meaning of artificer, workman, or labourer, 218  
 whether renewed offence is punishable, *ib.*

**SLAVERY**

kidnapping or abducting to subject any one to, 367, 169  
 buying or disposing of any one as a slave, 370, 170  
 habitually dealing in slaves, 371, 170  
     in what the offence consists, 647  
 operation of Act V. of 1843..648  
 jurisdiction over offences under Slave Trade Act, 263, 648

**SLIGHT HARM**

act causing, not an offence, 95, 49

**SOLDIER**

is subject to general law in civil matters, 305  
 not protected by orders which are plainly illegal, 307  
     otherwise where reasonably supposed to be lawful, 308  
 wearing dress of, when not being a, 140, 69

**SOLEMN AFFIRMATION**

substituted by law for an oath is included in the term "oath," 51, 14

**SOLITARY CONFINEMENT, 73, 74, 39**

*See IMPRISONMENT.*

**SOVEREIGN**

of the United Kingdom denoted in the Code by the word "Queen," 13, 4

**SPECIAL LAW**

meaning of the term, 41, 13  
 offence extended to breach of, in certain cases, 40, 13  
 no "special" is repealed or affected by the Penal Code, 5, 3  
 breach of, may be also an offence under Code 3  
 appeal against sentences under, 3  
 abetting breach of, punishable under Code, 57

**STAMP**

offences as to, 255-263, 126-128

**STATE OFFENCES**

may be committed by resident foreigner, 458  
     though of a hostile nation, 459  
     or by unauthorized invader, *ib.*  
         not by regular belligerent, *ib.*  
     or by British subject in foreign service. 460  
         how allegiance may be cast off, 461  
 what are, 121-130, 63-66  
*See WAGING WAR. CONSPIRACY.*

**STATUTE**

acts authorized by, 558, 568

**STOLEN PROPERTY**

taking or offering reward for return of, 215, 107  
 definition of the term, 410, 185  
 dishonestly receiving, 411, 412, 185, 186



**STOLEN PROPERTY—continued.**

- habitually dealing in, 413, 186
- assisting in concealing, or disposing of, 414, 186
- may be restored to the owner, 945
- repayment may be made to innocent purchaser of, 947
- See RECEIVING STOLEN PROPERTY.*

**SUICIDE**

- taking part in, of adult, 300, *Excep. 5*, 148, 435
  - of person under age or incapable of giving consent, is murder, *ib.*
- abetting of, by child or person incapable of consent, 305, 150, 435
  - by any person, 306, 150, 435
- attempting to commit, 309, 151, 625

**TAKING AWAY**

1. a married woman, 498, 220
  - elements of the offence, 804
  - her consent or incitement immaterial, *ib.*
    - also where charge is of enticing, 803
  - accused must take part in it, *ib.*
    - allowing her to remain is not, *ib.*
  - concealing and detaining, *ib.*
2. must be from husband or some one in charge for him, 806
  - absence of husband immaterial, *ib.*
  - house need not be his, *ib.*
  - husband, or person in charge for him, must complain, 807
    - what is a complaint, *ib.*
    - prosecution not ended by his death, *ib.*
  - See KIDNAPPING. ABDUCTION.*

**TENANT**

- liability of, for nuisance on land, 573

**THEFT**

1. when a person is said to commit, 378, 172
  - what is movable property, 22, 8
  - when things attached to earth become, 378, *Exp. 1, 2*, 173, 666
  - value immaterial, 667
2. thing must be the subject of property, *ib.*
  - and in actual possession, 668
    - when animals, etc., are possessed, *ib.*
    - property lost or mislaid, *ib.*
      - entrusted to another, 669
    - person from whom taken need not be owner, 670
3. meaning of dishonest intention, 24, 9, 670, 675
  - acts done under claim of right, 671
    - right must justify act, *ib.*
  - personal benefit unnecessary, 672
    - or improper motive, 673
  - whether temporary detention sufficient, *ib.*
4. must be without consent, 676
  - what amounts to consent, 378, *Exp. 5*, 173
  - offering facilities to detect crime, 676
  - consent obtained by fraud, *ib.*
  - unconcealed taking, 677
5. what is a moving, 378, *Exp. 2-4*, 173, 678
6. whether husband and wife can commit from each other, 678-681
7. evidence of, from actual possession, 682, 684
  - where possession is recent, 683
    - must be exclusive, *ib.*

**THEFT—continued.**

- identification of property, 683
  - where species only is the same, 683, 684
  - or actual loss not proved, 684
- 8. by clerk or servant, 381, 175
  - when property is in possession of master, 681
  - who is a servant, 699
    - service need not be exclusive, 701
    - employed as clerk or servant, *ib.*
- 9. in a building, tent, etc., 380, 175
  - after making preparation to cause death, etc., 382, 175
  - when it is robbery, 390, 178
  - belonging to gang of persons associated for, 401, 181

**THREATS**

- acts done under, when no offence, 94, and *Exp.*, 48
- of injury to public servant, 189, 95
  - to restrain any person from applying to public servant for protection, 190, 96
- See* COMPULSION. EXTORTION. INTIMIDATION.

**THUG**

- who comes under the denomination, 310, 151
- punishment for being under a, 311, 152

**TITLE**

- bonâ fide* claim of—
- See* RIGHT.

**TRADE**

- public servant unlawfully engaging in, 168, 80
- who are forbidden to, 80
- description, mark, or name—
- See* MERCHANDISE MARKS.

**TRANSPORTATION**

- sentence of, may be commuted, or suspended, or remitted, 55, 15
- may be awarded in place of seven years' imprisonment, 59, 16
  - several sentences cannot be joined to make up seven years, 17
  - limit of transportation in lieu of imprisonment, *ib.*
- cannot be awarded in default of fine, *ib.*
  - nor by magistrate who cannot imprison for seven years, *ib.*
- cannot be inflicted on European or American, 56, 16
- prisoners sentenced to, how dealt with until transported, 58, 16
- place of, and mode of removal, how specified, 16
- unlawful return from, 226, 116
  - convict must have reached penal settlement, 116

**TRESPASS**

- 1. what constitutes criminal, 441, 194, 447, 196
  - unlawful entry or remaining, 732
  - offence varies according to intention, 733
    - evidence of each, *ib.*
  - acts done under claim of right, *ib.*
  - meaning of "intimidate," "insult," "annoy," 734
    - what is an offence, 735
- 2. what possession is sufficient, *ib.*
  - burial-ground, or footpath, 736, 737
  - obtained by trespasser, 737, 739
  - retaken by owner, 738, 740
- See* HOUSE-TRESPASS.

**TRUST**

*See* BREACH OF TRUST.

**TURBULENT ASSEMBLY**

member of, who refuses to disperse after lawful command, punishable  
151, 72  
if assembly already unlawful. 151, *Exp.*, 72  
what meeting likely to disturb peace, 491  
disturbance must arise from its own acts, *ib.*  
how notice to disperse given, 490  
how enforced, *ib.*

**UNLAWFUL ASSEMBLY**

1. what constitutes an, 141, 69, 480  
intention, not result, is the test of. 480  
originally lawful may become an, 141, *Exp.*, 70  
how any one becomes a member of an, 142, 70, 480
2. common object of, must be alleged and proved, 481  
evidence admissible, *ib.*
3. overawing Legislature, etc., 141, cl. 1, 69  
when public meetings are illegal, 481
4. resisting the law, 141, cl. 2, 69, 482  
when person aggrieved may, 482  
right of others to assist him, *ib.*
5. committing mischief or other offence, 141, cl. 3, 69  
not where act done under belief of right, 483
6. violently enforcing right, 141, cl. 4, 70  
existence of right immaterial, 483  
what degree of force necessary, 485  
case of tenant holding over, *ib.*  
whether resistance to aggression is unlawful, 486
7. exercise of unlawful compulsion, 141, cl. 5, 70  
what conduct amounts to, 488  
*See* RIOTING. *TURBULENT ASSEMBLY.*

**UNNATURAL OFFENCES**

nature of and punishment, 377, 172  
evidence of, must be specific, 172  
threats of charging with, 686

**VALUABLE SECURITY**

what the term denotes, 30, 10  
procuring the making, alteration, or destruction of, by cheating, 420, 188  
*See* FORGERY.

**VESSEL**

what the term denotes, 48, 14  
*See* MISCHIEF, 2. NEGLIGENCE, 3.

**VOLUNTARILY**

meaning of the word, 39, 13, 420, 584

**WAGING WAR**

1. against the Queen, 121, 63  
meaning of the term, 461

**WAGING WAR—continued.**

- whether identical with levying war under Treason Act, 463
- construction of that Act, *ib.*
  - Lord George Gordon's case, 465
  - Frost's case, 466
- specific intention necessary, 467
- 2. treasonable conspiracy, 121A, 63
  - See CONSPIRACY.*
- 3. preparing for, 122, 64
  - facilitating, by concealing design for, 123, 64
  - against allied Asiatic States, 125, 65
  - committing depredation on any friendly power, 126, 65
  - receiving property taken by war or depredation, 127, 65

**WATER**

- corrupting or defiling public spring or reservoir, 277, 134

**WEIGHT**

- false, using a, 264, 265, 129
  - is evidence of fraudulent intent, 129
- being in possession of, with knowledge and intent, etc., 266, 130
- making or selling, with knowledge, etc., 267, 130

**WHIPPING**

- is made a punishment under Penal Code, 15
- when inflicted in lieu of other punishment, 25
- when in lieu of or in addition to other punishment, 26
- when in addition to other punishment, *ib.*
- liability of juvenile offenders to, 28
- where several convictions on same day, *ib.*
- meaning of previous conviction, 29
- what magistrates may inflict, *ib.*
- what persons not punishable with, 31
- how inflicted on juvenile offenders, 30
- offender must be fit to endure, *ib.*
  - when to be stopped, 31
  - punishment in lieu of, when incapable of execution, *ib.*
- suspension of sentence of, 30
- attempts are not punishable with, 863

**WIFE**

- See HUSBAND AND WIFE.*

**WILL**

- what the term denotes, 31, 11
  - See FORGERY.*

**WITHDRAWAL**

- of charge by private person, 455
  - public prosecutor, *ib.*
- effect of in each case, *ib.*

**WITNESS**

- defamation by, in judicial proceeding, 829, 830, 833, 834
  - See FALSE EVIDENCE. REFUSAL.*

**WOMAN**

- meaning of the word, 10, 4
- referred to in Penal Code, though "he" and its derivatives are used, 8, 4



**WORSHIP**

injuring or defiling places of, with intent, etc., 295, 141  
 religious, disturbing assembly performing, 296, 142

**WRONGFUL CONFINEMENT**

what it is, 339, 340, 160-162  
 belief in legality no excuse, 161  
 when private person liable for official act, *ib.*  
 justification of, by captain of ship, 380  
 punishment for, in ordinary cases, 342, 162  
     where confinement is for three or more days, 343, 162  
     where for ten or more days, 344, 162  
     when confinement subsequent to issue of writ for liberation,  
     345, 162  
     where confinement is secret, 346, 163  
     where it is for purpose of extorting, etc., 347, 163  
 punishment for, where it is for purpose of extorting a confession, etc.,  
 assault in attempt wrongfully to confine, 357, 167

**WRONGFUL DETENTION**

effect and meaning of, 23, 8

**WRONGFUL GAIN**

meaning of the term, 23, 8

**LOSS**

what the term means, 23, 8  
*See CHEATING. MISCHIEF.*

**WRONGFUL RESTRAINT**

definition of the term, 339, 160  
 when it amounts to wrongful confinement, 340, 161  
 punishment for, 341, 162

**WRONGFUL RETENTION**

and meaning of, 23, 8

**YEAR**

what the word means, 49, 14

